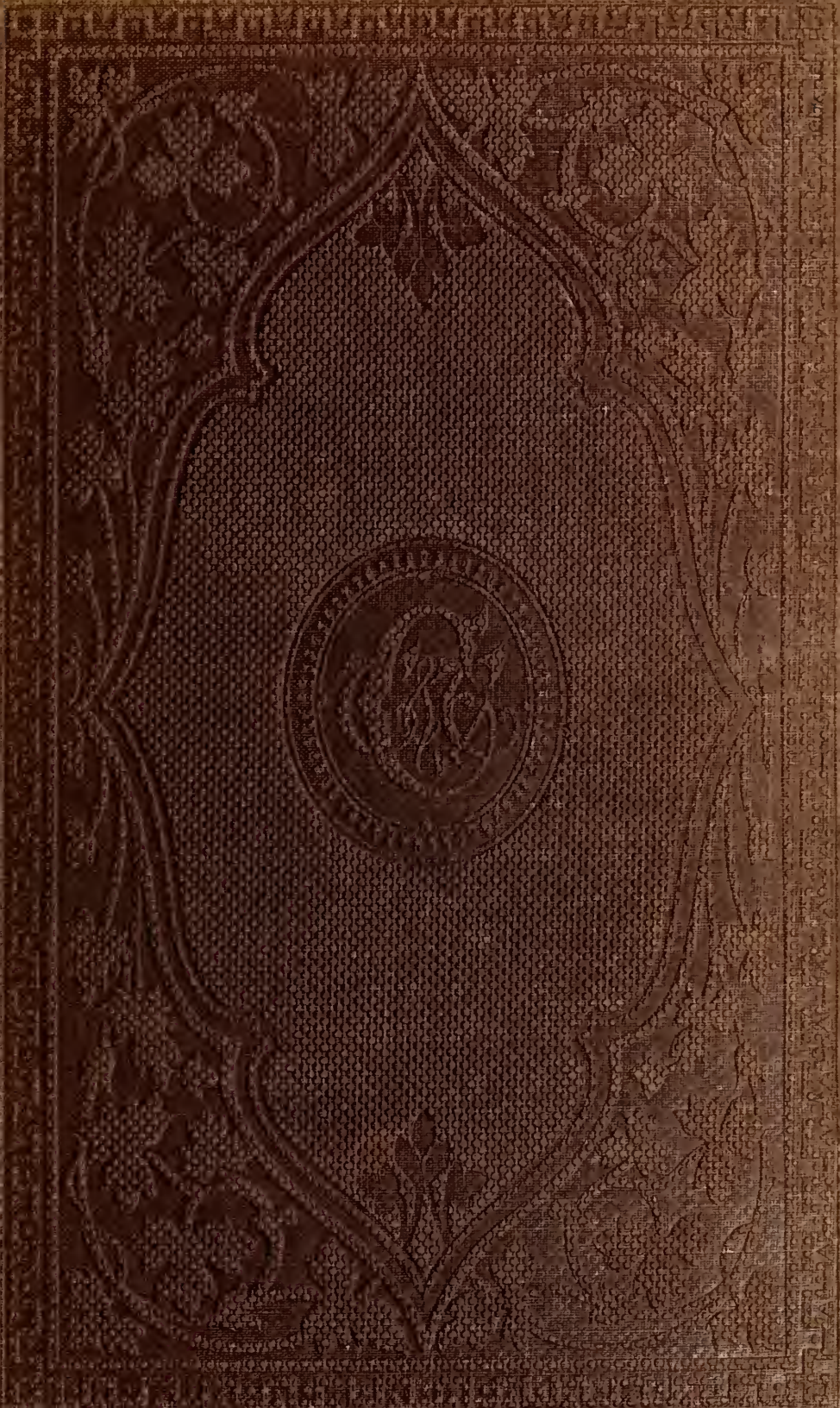


Ex Libris
C. K. OGDEN

THE LIBRARY
OF
THE UNIVERSITY
OF CALIFORNIA
LOS ANGELES

THE

WORKS

OF

JOHN OWEN, D.D.

EDITED BY

THE REV. WILLIAM H. GOOLD, D.D.,

EDINBURGH.

VOL. XVI.

EDINBURGH:

T. & T. CLARK, 38, GEORGE STREET.

LONDON: HAMILTON, ADAMS, AND CO. DUBLIN: JOHN ROBERTSON

MDCCCLXII.

MURRAY AND GIBB, PRINTERS, EDINBURGH.

BV
3315
.B7
1852
v.16

CONTENTS OF VOL. XVI.

THE TRUE NATURE OF A GOSPEL CHURCH.

	Page
Prefatory Note by the Editor,	2
The Preface to the Reader,	3
Chap.	
I.—The subject-matter of the church,	11
II.—Of the formal cause of a particular church,	25
III.—Of the polity, rule, or discipline, of the church in general,	30
IV.—The officers of the church,	42
V.—The especial duty of pastors of churches,	74
VI.—Of the office of teachers in the church, or an inquiry into the state, condition, and work, of those called teachers in the Scripture,	97
VII.—Of the rule of the church, or of ruling elders,	106
VIII.—The nature of church polity or rule, with the duty of elders,	130
IX.—Of deacons,	143
X.—Of excommunication,	151
XI.—Of the communion of churches,	183

A LETTER CONCERNING EXCOMMUNICATION.

Prefatory Note by the Editor,	210
A Letter concerning the matter of the present Excommunications,	211

OF THE ADMINISTRATION OF CHURCH CENSURES.

Prefatory Note by the Editor,	210
A Discourse concerning the Administration of Church Censures,	223

AN ANSWER UNTO TWO QUESTIONS.

Prefatory Note by the Editor,	240
Question First,	241
Question Second,	245
Twelve Arguments, &c.	248

1889684

OF MARRYING AFTER DIVORCE.

PAGE
PREFATORY NOTE BY THE EDITOR, ... 240
Of Marrying after Divorce in case of Adultery, ... 254

OF INFANT BAPTISM AND DIPPING.

PREFATORY NOTE BY THE EDITOR, ... 240
Of Infant Baptism, ... 258
A Vindication of two passages in Irenæus against the exceptions of Mr Tombs, 263
Of Dipping, ... 266

REFLECTIONS ON A SLANDEROUS LIBEL.

PREFATORY NOTE BY THE EDITOR, ... 270
Reflections on a Slanderous Libel 271

[THREE TREATISES CONCERNING THE SCRIPTURES.]

PREFATORY NOTE BY THE EDITOR, ... 282
The Epistle Dedicatory, ... 283

OF THE DIVINE ORIGINAL OF THE SCRIPTURES.

PREFATORY NOTE BY THE EDITOR, ... 296

CHAP.
I.—The divine original of the Scripture the sole foundation of its authority—The original of the Old Testament—The peculiar manner of the revelation of the word—The written word, as written, preserved by the providence of God—Cappellus' opinion about various lections considered—The Scripture not ἰδίας ἐπιλύσεως—The true meaning of that expression—Entirely from God, to the least tittle—Of the Scriptures of the New Testament, and their peculiar prerogative, ... 297
II.—The main question proposed to consideration—How we may know assuredly the Scripture to be the word of God—The Scripture to be received by divine faith—The authority of God the foundation—The way whereby that authority is evidenced or made known—The various ways of God's revealing himself and his mind—1. By his works; 2. By the light of nature; 3. By his word—All of these evince themselves to be from him, his word especially, ... 306
III.—Arguments of two sorts—Inartificial arguments, by way of testimony to the truth—To whom these arguments are valid—Of διστινωστία—The rejection of a plea of διστινωστία, wherein it consists—Of miracles, their efficacy to beget faith compared with the word, ... 313
IV.—Innate arguments in the Scripture of its divine original and authority—Its self-evidencing efficacy—All *light* manifests itself—The Scripture light—Spiritual light evidential—Consectaries from the premises laid down—What the self-evidencing light of the Scripture peculiarly is—*Power* self-evidencing—The Scripture the power of God, and powerful—How this power exerts itself—The whole question resolved, ... 318
V.—Of the testimony of the Spirit—Traditions—Miracles. 325
VI.—Consequential considerations, for the confirmation of the divine authority of the Scripture, ... 337

INTEGRITY AND PURITY OF THE HEBREW AND GREEK TEXT.

CHAP. PAGE

PREFATORY NOTE BY THE EDITOR, ... 345

I.—The occasion of this discourse—The danger of supposing corruptions in the originals of the Scripture—The great usefulness of the Biblia Polyglotta—The grounds of the ensuing animadversions—The assertions proposed to be vindicated laid down—Their weight and importance—Sundry principles in the Prolegomena, prejudicial to the truth contended for, laid down—Those principles formerly asserted by others—Reasons of the opposition made to them, ... 347

II.—Of the purity of the originals—The αὐτόγραφα of the Scripture lost—That of Moses, how and how long preserved—Of the book found by Hilkiah—Of the αὐτόγραφα of the New Testament—Of the first copies of the originals—The scribes of those copies not διόπνευστοι—What is ascribed to them—The great and incomparable care of the scribes of it—The whole word of God, in every tittle of it, preserved entire in the copies of the original extant—Heads of arguments to that purpose—What various lections are granted in the original of the Old and New Testaments—Sundry considerations concerning them, manifesting them to be of no importance—That the Jews have not corrupted the text—The most probable instances considered, 353

III.—Of various lections in the Greek copies of the New Testament, . . . 362

IV.—General premises—Opinions prejudicial to the authority of the originals in the Prolegomena enumerated—The just consequences of these premises—Others engaged in these opinions—Of Cappellus—Of Origen, Ximenes, Arias Montanus' editions of the Bible, ... 367

V.—The original of the points proposed to consideration in particular—The importance of the points to the right understanding of the Scripture—The testimony of Morinus, Junius, Johannes Isaac, Cevallerius, and others—The use made by the Papists of the opinion of the novelty of the points—The importance of the points further manifested—The extreme danger of making the Hebrew punctuation arbitrary—That danger evinced by instance—No relief against that danger on the grounds of the opinion considered—The authors of the Hebrew punctuation according to the Prolegomena; who and what—Morinus' folly—The improbability of this pretence—The state of the Jews, the supposed inventors of the points, after the destruction of the temple—Two attempts made by them to restore their religion: the first under Barchochab, with its issue; the second under R. Judah, with its issue—The rise and foundation of the Talmuds—The state of the Jews upon and after the writing of the Talmuds—Their rancour against Christ—Who the Tiberian Masoretes were, that are the supposed authors of the Hebrew punctuation; their description—That figment rejected—The late testimony of Dr Lightfoot to this purpose—The rise of the opinion of the novelty of the points—Of Elias Levita—The value of his testimony in this case—Of the validity of the testimony of the Jewish Rabbins—Some considerations about the antiquity of the points: the first, from the nature of the punctuation itself, in reference unto grammatical rules; [the second,] from the Chaldee paraphrase, and integrity of the Scripture as now pointed, ... 370

VI.—Arguments for the novelty of the Hebrew points proposed to consideration—The argument from the Samaritan letters considered and answered—Of the copy of the law preserved in the synagogues without points—The testimony of Elias Levita and Aben Ezra considered—Of the silence of the Mishna, Talmud, and Gemara, about the points—Of the Keri and Ketib—Of the number of the points—Of the ancient translations, Greek, Chaldee, Syriac—Of Jerome—The new argument of Morinus in this cause—The conclusion, about the necessity of the points, ... 383

VII.—Of the קְרֵי וּכְתִיב, their nature and original—The difference is in the consonants—Morinus' vain charge on Arias Montanus—The senses of both consistent—Of the great congregation—The spring and rise of these various readings—The judgment of the Prolegomena about them—Their order given twice over in the Appendix—The rise assigned to them considered—Of Cappellus, his opinion, and the danger of it. . . 401

CHAP. PAGE

VIII.—Of gathering various lections by the help of translations—The proper use and benefit of translations—Their new pretended use—The state of the originals on this new pretence—Of the remedy tendered to the relief of that state—No copies of old differing in the least from those we now enjoy, inferred from the testimony of our Saviour—No testimony, new or old, to that purpose—Requisites unto good translations—Of the translations in the Biblia Polyglotta—Of the Arabic—Of the Syriac—Of the Samaritan Pentateuch—Of the Chaldee Paraphrase—Of the Vulgar Latin—Of the Septuagint—Of the translations of the New Testament—Of the Persian—Of the Ethiopian—The value of these translations as to the work in hand—Of the supposition of gross corruption in the originals—Of various lections out of Grotius—Of the Appendix in general, . . 406

PRO SACRIS SCRIPTURIS EXERCITATIONES ADVERSUS FANATICOS.

PREFATORY NOTE BY THE EDITOR, ... 424
Ad lectorem admonitio, ... 426
Questio I.—An sacra Scriptura sit ac vere dicatur verbum Dei? . . 427
Exercit. II.—De Scripturarum interpretatione, ... 437
Exercit. III.—De perfectione Scripturæ, ... 452
Exercit. IV.—De lumine interno, ... 466

POEMA.

PREFATORY NOTE BY THE EDITOR, ... 477
Dedication, ... 477
Ad Protectorem, ... 478

ORATIONES VI.

PREFATORY NOTE BY THE EDITOR 480
Oratio I. 481
Oratio II. 484
Oratio III. 492
Oratio IV. 499
Oratio V. 507
Oratio VI. 513

INDICES.

I.—Index to the Life of Owen, ... 517
II.—Index to the Notes by the Editor, ... 520
III.—Index to the Works of Owen, according to the arrangement of the volumes in the present edition, ... 529
IV.—Index to the Works of Owen in their alphabetical order—List of Owen's Prefaces to Works of other Authors, ... 531
V.—Index to Principal Subjects and Occasional Topics, ... 533
VI.—Index to the Principal Words and Phrases in other Languages Cited or Explained:—1. Hebrew, Chaldee, or Rabbinical; 2. Greek; 3. Latin, . 578
VII.—Index to Passages of Scripture Explained, ... 584
VIII.—Index of References to Authors, Opinions, Councils, and Sayings, . 590

THE TRUE NATURE

OF

A GOSPEL CHURCH AND ITS GOVERNMENT.

[THE SECOND PART.]

WHEREIN THESE FOLLOWING PARTICULARS ARE DISTINCTLY HANDLED:—

I. THE SUBJECT-MATTER OF THE CHURCH.
II. THE FORMAL CAUSE OF A PARTICULAR CHURCH.
III. OF THE POLITY, RULE, OR DISCIPLINE OF THE CHURCH IN GENERAL.
IV. THE OFFICERS OF THE CHURCH.
V. THE DUTY OF PASTORS OF CHURCHES.
VI. THE OFFICE OF TEACHERS IN THE CHURCH.
VII. OF THE RULE OF THE CHURCH, OR OF RULING ELDERS.
VIII. THE NATURE OF CHURCH POLITY OR RULE, WITH THE DUTY OF ELDERS.
IX. OF DEACONS.
X. OF EXCOMMUNICATION.
XI. OF THE COMMUNION OF CHURCHES.

M.DC.LXXXIX.

PREFATORY NOTE.

On the ground of some statements in the following treatise, which was published in 1689, it has been gravely argued that the author returned to the Presbyterianism of his early days before he died. In the "Inquiry concerning Evangelical Churches," (see vol. xv.), which forms the first part of this work, Owen states that he would "neither examine nor oppose the opinion" in favour of "a national church-state, arising from an association of the officers of particular churches, in several degrees, which they call *classical* and *provincial*."—P. 262. He declares, in his answer to Stillingfleet, that had the Presbyterian government been established at the Restoration "without a rigorous imposition of every thing supposed by any to belong thereto," Presbyterians and Independents "would have been both to blame" if they had continued in a state of separation from each other. "If it shall be asked, then," he proceeds, "why they did not formerly agree in the Assembly? I answer,—(1.) I was none of them, and cannot tell; (2.) They did agree in my judgment well enough, if they could have thought so; and further I am not concerned in the difference."—P. 433. The author of the anonymous memoir prefixed to Marshall's edition of his Sermons remarks, "He was of so healing a temper, that I heard him say before a person of quality and others, that he could readily join with Presbytery as it was exercised in Scotland." In his MSS. Analecta, under date 1716, the historian Wodrow records the following statement:—"Mr George Redpath told me two or three years ago, when in Edinburgh, that he visited Dr Owen on his deathbed, and Presbytery and Episcopacy came to be discoursed of; and the Doctor said how he had seen his mistake as to the Independent way, and declared to him a day or two before his death, that, after his utmost search into the Scriptures and antiquity, he was now satisfied that Presbytery was the way Christ had appointed in his new testament church." If we add, that on the subject of the ruling elder (see chapter vii. of the following treatise) the views of Owen are in perfect harmony with Presbyterianism, and that, under certain qualifications, he contends for the lawfulness and authority of synods, we exhaust the evidence that in his last days he was more of a Presbyterian than an Independent.

Mr Orme admits that "he seems to contend for a distinct office of ruling elder, or for elders who are called to rule and not to teach;" but he argues that it was a view which could not be reconciled with his other sentiments, and that it differs from the Presbyterian scheme, according to which pastor and elder "are offices so distinct that the ministers alone are considered as mere pastors, and the elders as mere laymen." But Presbyterians really do not hold that elders are laymen, or that there is any difference in respect of *office* between the minister and ruling elder, although their functions vary, *rule* being common to both, while *teaching* is the duty of the pastor; and on this point Owen was no more chargeable with inconsistency as an Independent than other eminent men of the same denomination,—Thomas Hooker, Cotton Mather, and Timothy Dwight, —who contend for the office of the ruling elder. Some Presbyterians would homologate implicitly the exposition which our author gives of the nature and objects of synodical action; but here his agreement with Presbyterian principles is, on the whole, not so clear and decided as in the case of the ruling elder. He objects to synods determining articles of faith, and issuing orders and decrees on their own authority; but asserts their "authority" to "declare the mind of God from the Scripture in doctrine, or give counsel as unto practice." There is nothing in this view from which Presbyterians would dissent.

That he should differ from both parties on some points is not surprising when we mark how carefully he has thought out his own views from Scripture, giving a freshness and originality of colouring to his treatises on church-government which render them to the present day peculiarly interesting and worthy of consultation. It is only, however, by a process of torture to which no man's language should be subjected that Owen can be claimed as a Presbyterian. We may gladly accept his decision on some points,—not as confirming Presbyterianism so much as affording room for the hope that, on matters of polity, evangelical churches may yet be united in common action and under the same forms. But the opinions of Owen can only be understood by reading the former part of this treatise in connection with this which follows, and "which," says Chauncey, "he esteemed as his legacy to the church of Christ." In the latter part there is no recantation of the principle so copiously urged in the former, that "the visible church-state which Christ hath instituted under the new testament consists in an especial society or congregation of professed believers;" and that for two hundred years after Christ there is no mention "of any other organical, visibly professing church, but only that which is parochial or congregational." That Owen might deem it possible to accomplish and secure all the ends of congregational duty under the system of Presbytery may be true; but that, in regard to the spirit and substance of the ecclesiastical system for which he pleaded, he was a Congregationalist, it would be hardihood to question. To the story of Redpath must be opposed the assertion of Chauncey, by whom this treatise was edited, that it was corrected by Owen immediately before his death. Had he undergone a change of view so complete as is represented, he was not the man to quit the world in a spirit of dishonourable reticence, but would have frankly avowed to what extent his previous convictions had been modified or abandoned.

Edmund Elys, son of a clergyman in Devonshire, author of some Latin productions in prose and poetry, replied to this work in 1690, by the publication of "Animadversions upon some passages in a book entitled 'The True Nature of a Gospel Church, etc.'"—Ed.

THE PREFACE TO THE READER.

The church of Christ, according as it is represented unto us, or described by the Holy Spirit of God, in the Old and New Testament, hath but a twofold consideration,—as catholic and mystical, or as visible and organized in particular congregations. The catholic church is the whole mystical body of Christ, consisting of all the elect which are purchased and redeemed by his blood, whether already called or uncalled, militant or triumphant; and this is the church that God gave him to be head unto, which is his body and his fulness, and, by union with him, Christ mystical, Eph. i. 22, 23; and this is that πανήγυρις (the only word most fully expressing the catholic church used in Scripture), "the church of the first-born, whose names are written in heaven," Heb. xii. 23, that is, in the Lamb's book of life; and they shall all appear one day gathered together to their Head, in the perfection and fulness of the New Jerusalem state, where they will make a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing, but holy and without blemish. The day of grace which the saints have passed in the respective ages of the church was but the day of its espousals, wherein the bride hath made herself ready; but then will be her full married state unto Christ, then will be the perfection not only of every particular member of Christ, but of the whole body of Christ, called "a perfect man," and "the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ," to which we are called, edifying and building up by the ministry and ordinances of Christ, whilst we are "in via," in our passage unto this country, a city with a more durable fixed foundation, which we seek.

In order, therefore, unto the completing this great and mystical body, Christ hath his particular visible churches and assemblies in this world; wherein he hath ordained ordinances and appointed officers for the forementioned glorious ends and purposes.

There is no other sort of visible church of Christ organized, the subject of the aforesaid institutions spoken of, but a particular church or congregation (either in the Old or New Testament), where all the members thereof do ordinarily meet together in one place to hold communion one with another in some one or more great ordinances of Christ. The first churches were economic, when the worship of God was solemnly performed in the large families of the antediluvian and post-diluvian patriarchs, where, no doubt, all frequently assembled to the sacrifices as then offered, and other parts of worship then in use.

After the descent of a numerous progeny from Abraham's loins, God takes them to himself in one visible body, a national but congregational church, into which he forms them four hundred and thirty years after the promise, in the wilderness; and although all Abraham's natural posterity, according to the external part of the promise made to him, were taken into visible church fellowship, so that it became a national church, yet it was such a national church always, in the wilderness and in the Holy Land, as was congregational, for it was but one congregation during the tabernacle or temple state, first or second. They were always bound to assemble at the tabernacle or temple thrice at least every year; hence the tabernacle was still called "The tabernacle of the congregation." They were to have but one

altar for burnt-offerings and sacrifices; what others were at any time elsewhere, called "high places," were condemned by God as sin.

Lastly, When Christ had divorced this people, abolished their Mosaical constitution by breaking their staff of *beauty* and their staff of *bands*, he erects his gospel church, calls in disciples by his ministry, forms them into a body, furnisheth them with officers and ordinances, and after he had suffered, rose again, and continued here forty days,—in which time he frequently appeared to them and acquainted them with his will,—ascends unto his Father, sends his Spirit in a plentiful manner at Pentecost, whereby most of them were furnished with all necessary miraculous gifts, to the promoting the glory and interest of Christ among Jews and Gentiles.

Hence the whole evangelical ministry was first placed in the church of Jerusalem (so far as extraordinary, or such a part of it as was [not] to descend to churches of after ages); neither were they placed as abiding or standing officers in any other church, as we find. In this church they acted as the elders thereof; and from this church they were, it is very likely, solemnly sent, by fasting and prayer, to the exercise of their apostolic function in preaching, healing, and working miracles, gathering churches, and settling officers in them, even so as Paul and Barnabas were sent forth by the church of Antioch.

Their distinguishing apostolic office and charge (from which the evangelist differed but little) was to take care of all the churches,—not to sit down as standing pastors to all or any particular congregation, but at the first planting to gather, to direct, and confirm them, in practice of their doctrine, fellowship, breaking of bread, and in prayer. Wherefore this apostolic care committed to them proves nothing either of the catholic authority claimed by an œcumenic pastor, or that charge of many congregations claimed by diocesan bishops.

Whence it is most evident that all church-officers, so far as they had any pastoral or episcopal office, were given to a particular congregation as the πρῶτον δεικτικόν. We read of no pastors of many congregations, nor of any church made up of many congregations, to which officers were annexed, nor of any representative church, as some would have.

That apostolic power did descend to successors we utterly deny, it being not derivable; for none after them could say they had been eye-witnesses of our Lord before or after his resurrection, none since so qualified by an extraordinary measure of the Spirit for preaching and working miracles, and none but the pope challenges such an extensive care for and power over all churches. That which descends from them to the ordinary ministry is a commission to preach and baptize: and why not to head, it being always, in the commission that Christ gave, a pastoral relation or presbytership which was included in their apostleship, and exercised toward the church of Jerusalem? Such presbytership John and Peter both had. Hence there remains no other successors "jure" to the apostles but ordinary pastors and teachers.

These are relative officers, and are always in and to some particular congregations; we know of no catholic visible church that any pastors are ordained to. 1. The Scripture speaks of no church as catholic visible. 2. The thing itself is but a chimera of some men's brains, it is not "in rerum natura;" for if a catholic visible church be all the churches that I see at a time, I am not capable of seeing many more than what can assemble in one place. And if it be meant of all the churches actually in being, how are they visible to me? where can they be seen in one place? I may as well call all the cities and corporations in the world the catholic visible city or corporation, which all rational men would call nonsense. Besides, if all organized churches could be got together, it is not catholic in respect of saints militant, much less of triumphant; for many are no church members that are Christ's members, and many visible members are no true members

of Christ Jesus. Where is any such church capable of communion in all ordinances in one place? and the Scripture speaks of no other organized visible church.

Again: to a catholic visible church constituted should be a catholic visible pastor or pastors; for as the church is, such is the pastor and officers. To the mystical church Christ is the mystical head and pastor; he is called "The chief Pastor," 1 Pet. v. 4; and "The Shepherd of our souls," chap. ii. 25. Hence the uncalled are his sheep, as John x. 16. But to all visible churches Christ hath appointed a visible pastor or pastors; and where is the pastor of the catholic visible church? he is not to be found, unless it suffice us to take him from Rome. To say that all individual pastors are pastors to the catholic church is either to say that they are invested with as much pastoral power and charge in one church as in another, and then they are indefinite pastors, and therefore all pastors have mutual power in each other's churches; and so John may come into Thomas' church and exercise all parts of jurisdiction there, and Thomas into John's; or a minister to the catholic church hath an universal catholic power over the catholic church,—if so, the power and charge which every ordinary pastor hath is apostolic; or, lastly, he is invested with an arbitrary power, at least as to the taking up a particular charge where he pleaseth, with a "non obstante" to the suffrages of the people, for if he hath an office whereby he is equally related to all churches, it is at his liberty, by virtue of this office, to take [himself] where he pleaseth.

But every church-officer under Christ is a visible relate, and the correlate must be such, whence the church must be visible to which he is an officer. It is absurd to say a man is a visible husband to an invisible wife; the relate and correlate must be "ejusdem naturæ." It is true, Christ is related to the church as mystical head, but it is in respect of the church in its mystical nature, for Christ hath substituted no mystical officers in his church.

There is a great deal of difference between the mystical and external visible church, though the latter is founded upon it and for the sake of it. It is founded upon it as taking its true spiritual original from it, deriving vital spirits from it by a mystical union to and communion with Christ and his members;—and it is for the sake of it; all external visible assemblies, ministers, ordinances, are for the sake of the mystical body of Christ, for calling in the elect, and the edifying of them to that full measure of stature they are designed unto.

But the different consideration lies in these things,—

That the mystical church doth never fail, neither is diminished by any shocks of temptation or suffering that, in their visible profession, any of them undergo; whereas visible churches are often broken, scattered, yea, unchurched, and many members fail of the grace of God by final apostasy. Likewise Christ's mystical church is many times preserved in that state only, or mostly, when Christ hath not a visible organized church, according to institution, to be found on the face of the earth. So it was with his church often under the old testament dispensation: as in Egypt; in the days of the judges, when the ark was carried away by the Philistines; in the days of Manasseh and other wicked kings; and especially in Babylon. In such times the faithful ones were preserved without the true sacrifices, the teaching priest, and the law. So hath it been in the days of the new testament, in divers places, under the draconic heathen persecutions, and afterward in the wilderness state of the church, under the antichristian usurpations and false worship. Which mystical state is the place prepared of God to hide the seed of the woman in from the dragon's rage for the space of one thousand two hundred and sixty days.

Again: unto this mystical church is only essentially necessary a mystical union unto the Lord Jesus Christ, by the gift of the Father, acceptation and covenant-undertaking of the Son: the powerful and efficacious work of the Spirit of the

Father and the Son working true saving faith in the Lord Jesus Christ, and sincere love to him and all his true members; whereby, as they have a firm and unshaken union, so they have a spiritual communion, though without those desirable enjoyments of external church privileges and means of grace which they are providentially often hindered from, visible churches being but Christ's tents and tabernacles, which he sometimes setteth up and sometimes takes down and removes at his pleasure, as he sees best for his glory in the world.

But of these he hath a special regard, as to their foundation, matter, constitution, and order. He gives forth an exact pattern from mount Zion, as of that typical tabernacle from mount Sinai of old.

1. The foundation part of a visible church is the credible profession of faith and holiness, wherein the Lord Jesus Christ is the corner-stone, Eph. ii. 20; Matt. xvi. 18. This profession is the foundation, but not the church itself. It is not articles of faith, or profession of them in particular individual persons, that make an organized visible church. We are the "household of faith, built upon the foundation," etc. 2. It is men and women, not doctrine, that are the matter of a church, and these professing the faith and practising holiness. The members of churches are always called in the New Testament, "saints, faithful, believers." They were such that were added to the churches. Neither is every believer so, as such, but as a professing believer; for a man must appear to be fit matter of a visible church before he can challenge church privileges or they can be allowed him. 3. It is not many professing believers that make a particular church; for though they are fit matter for a church, yet they have not the form of a church without a mutual agreement and combination (explicit, or at least implicit), whereby they become, by virtue of Christ's charter, a spiritual corporation, and are called a "city, household, house," being united together by joints and bands, not only by internal bonds of the Spirit, but external. The bonds of union must be visible, as the house is by profession.

This is a society that Christ hath given power to, to choose a pastor and other officers of Christ's institution, and enjoy all ordinances, the word, sacraments, and prayer, as Christ hath appointed.

Hence a visible church must needs be a separate congregation; separation is a proper and inseparable adjunct thereof. The apostle speaks of church-membership, 2 Cor. vi. 14, "Be not unequally yoked together," ἑτεροζυγοῦντες, yoked with those of another kind (the ploughing with an ox and ass together being forbidden under the law), "with unbelievers," ἀπίστοις,—that is, visible unbelievers of any sort or kind: "for what participation, μετοχὴ, hath righteousness with unrighteousness? what κοινωνία, communion or fellowship, hath light with darkness?" Verse 15, "Τίς δὲ συμφώνησις, What harmony hath Christ with Belial?" men of corrupt lives and conversation; "or what part μερὶς πιστῷ μετὰ ἀπίστου, hath a believer," that is, a visible believer, "with an unbeliever?" It ought not to be rendered "infidel," but it was done by our translators to put a blind upon this place as to its true intention, and to countenance parish communion; for why did they not here, verse 14, and everywhere else, render ἄπιστος, "an infidel?" Verse 16, "Τίς δὲ συγκατάθεσις ναῷ Θεοῦ μετὰ εἰδώλων, What consistency hath the temple of God," that is, the gospel church, "with idols?" etc. I take this place to be a full proof of what is before spoken,—that a gospel church is a company of faithful professing people, walking together by mutual consent or confederation to the Lord Jesus Christ and one to another, in subjection to and practice of all his gospel precepts and commands, whereby they are separate from all persons and things manifestly contrary or disagreeing thereunto.

Hence, as it is separate from all such impurities as are without, so Christ hath furnished it with sufficient power and means to keep itself pure, and therefore hath provided ordinances and ministers for that end and purpose; for the great

end of church-edification cannot be obtained without purity be also maintained in doctrine and fellowship.

Purity cannot be maintained without order. A disorderly society will corrupt within itself; for by disorder it is divided. By divisions the joints and bands are broken, not only of love and affection, but of visible conjunction; so that, roots of bitterness and sensual separation arising, many are defiled.

It is true, there may be a kind of peace and agreement in a society that is a stranger to gospel order; when men agree together to walk according to a false rule, or in a supine and negligent observation of the true rule. There may be a common connivance at each one to walk as he listeth; but this is not order, but disorder by consent. Besides, a church may, for the most part, walk in order when there are breaches and divisions. Some do agree to walk according to the rule, when others will deviate from it. It is orderly to endeavour to reduce those that walk not orderly, though such just undertakings seem sometimes grounds of disturbance and causes of convulsion in the whole body, threatening even its breaking in pieces; but yet this must be done to preserve the whole.

The word translated "order," Col. ii. 5, τάξις, is a military word; it is the order of soldiers in a band, keeping rank and file, where every one keeps his place, follows his leader, observes the word of command, and his right-hand man. Hence the apostle joys to see their close order and steadfastness in the faith, their firmness, valour, and resolution, in fighting the good fight of faith; and the order in so doing, not only in watching as single professors, but in marching orderly together, as an army with banners. There is nothing more comely than a church walking in order; when every one keeps his place, knows and practiseth his duty according to the rule, each submitting to the other in the performance of duty; when the elders know their places, and the people theirs. Christ hath been more faithful than Moses, and therefore hath not left his churches without sufficient rules to walk by.

That order may be in a church of Christ, the rules of the gospel must be known, and that by officers and people. They that are altogether ignorant of the rule, or negligent in attending it, or doubtful, and therefore always contending about it, will never walk according to it. Hence it is the great duty of ministers to study order well, and acquaint the people with it. It is greatly to be bewailed that so few divines bend their studies that way. They content themselves only with studying and preaching the truths that concern faith in the Lord Jesus, and the mere moral part of holiness; but as to gospel churches or instituted worship, they generally in their doctrine and practice let it alone, and administer sacraments as indefinitely as they preach, and care not to stand related to one people more than another, any further than maintained by them. Likewise many good people are as great strangers to gospel churches and order, and, as their ministers, have a great averseness to both, and look upon it as schism and faction. And this is the great reason of the readiness of both to comply with rules of men for making churches (canons established by human laws), being carried away (if they would speak the truth) by corrupt, Erastian principles, that Christ hath left the church to be altogether guided and governed by laws of magistratic sanction. Reformation from the gross, idolatrous part of antichristianism was engaged in with some heroic courage and resolution; but the coldness and indifference of Protestants to any farther progress almost ever since is not a little to be lamented. Many think it enough that the foundation of the house is laid in purity of doctrine (and it is well if that were not rather written in the books than preached in pulpits at this day), but how little do they care to set their hands to building the house! Sure a great matter it is, from that spiritual slothfulness that many are fallen under, as likewise from being ready to sink under the great discouragements laid before them by the adversaries of Judah, when they find the children of the spiritual captivity

are about to build a gospel church unto the Lord. And how long hath this great work ceased? And will the Lord's ministers and people yet say, "The time is not come, the time that the LORD's house should be built?" Is it time to build our own houses, and not the house of the Lord? Surely it is time to build; for we understand by books the number of years whereof the word of the Lord came to Daniel the prophet, and to John the beloved disciple and new testament prophet, that he would accomplish twelve hundred and sixty years in the desolation of our Jerusalem and the court which is without the temple, namely, the generality of visible professors, and the external part of worship, which hath been so long trod down by Gentilism. Wherefore, "Consider your ways. Go up to the mountain, and bring wood, and build the house; and I will take pleasure in it, and I will be glorified, saith the LORD," Hag. i. 8. Men, it may be, have thought they have got, or at least saved, by not troubling themselves with the care, charge, and trouble of gathering churches and walking in gospel order; but God saith, "Ye looked for much, and, lo, it came to little; and when ye brought it home, I did blow upon it. Why? saith the LORD of hosts. Because of mine house that is waste, and ye run every man unto his own house," verse 9. I doubt not but the time is nigh at hand that the gospel temple must be built with greater splendour and glory than ever Solomon's or Zerubbabel's was; and though it seems to be a great mountain of difficulties, yet it shall become a plain before Him that is exalted far above all principalities and powers; and as he hath laid the foundation thereof in the oppressed state of his people, so his hands shall finish it, and bring forth the headstone thereof with shouting in the New Jerusalem state, crying now, "Grace, grace," but then, "Glory, glory to it."

This hastening glory we should endeavour to meet and fetch in by earnest prayers and faithful endeavours to promote the great work of our day. The pattern is of late years given forth with much clearness by models such as God hath set up in this latter age in the wilderness, and sheltered by "cloud and smoke by day, and the shining of a flaming fire by night; for upon all the glory hath been a defence," yea, and it hath been "a tabernacle for a shadow in the daytime from the heat, and for a place of refuge, and for a covert from the storm and from the rain." Neither have we been left to act by the examples or traditions of men. We have had a full manifestation of the revealed mind and will of Christ, with the greatest evidence and conviction, God having in these latter times raised up many most eminent instruments for direction and encouragement unto his people, which he furnished accordingly with great qualifications to this end and purpose, that the true original, nature, institution, and order, of evangelical churches might be known, distinguished, prized, and adhered to, by all that know the name of Christ, and would be followers of him as his disciples, in obedience to all his revealed mind and will; amongst which faithful and renowned servants of Christ the late author of this most useful and practical treatise hath approved himself to be one of the chief. I need say nothing of his steadfast piety, universal learning, indefatigable labours, in incessant vindication of the doctrines of the gospel (of greatest weight) against all oppositions made thereto by men of corrupt minds. His surviving works will always be bespeaking his honourable remembrance amongst all impartial lovers of the truth. They that were acquainted with him, knew how much the state and standing of the churches of Christ under the late sufferings and strugglings for reformation were laid to heart by him, and therefore how he put forth his utmost strength to assist, aid, comfort, and support the sinking spirits of the poor saints and people of God, even wearied out with long and repeated persecutions. It is to be observed that this ensuing treatise was occasioned by one of the last and most vigorous assaults made upon separate and congregational churches by a pen dipped in the gall of that persecuting spirit under which God's people groaned throughout this land. He then wrote an elaborate account

of evangelical churches, their original, institution, etc., with a vindication of them from the charges laid in against them by the author of "The Unreasonableness of Separation." This he lived to print, and promised to handle the subject more particularly; which is here performed. He lived to finish it under his great bodily infirmities, whereby he saw himself hastening to the end of his race; yet so great was his love to Christ, that whilst he had life and breath he drew not back his hand from his service. This work he finished, with others, through the gracious support and assistance of divine power, and corrected the copy before his departure. So that, reader, thou mayst be assured that what thou hast here was his (errata of the press only excepted), and likewise that it ought to be esteemed as his legacy to the church of Christ, being a great part of his dying labours; and therefore it is most uncharitable to suppose that the things here wrote were penned with any other design than to advance the glory and interest of Christ in the world, and that they were not matters of great weight on his own spirit. And upon the perusal that I have had of these papers, I cannot but recommend them to all diligent inquirers after the true nature, way, order, and practice, of evangelical churches, as a true and faithful account, according to what understanding the professors thereof, for the most part, have had and practised. Whoever is otherwise minded, he hath the liberty of his own light and conscience. Lastly, whereas many serious professors of the faith of the Lord Jesus, it may be well grounded in the main saving truths of the gospel, are yet much to seek of these necessary truths for want of good information therein, and therefore walk not up to all the revealed mind of Christ, as they sincerely desire, let such, with unprejudiced minds, read and consider what is here offered to them, and receive nothing upon human authority, follow no man in judgment or practice any farther than he is a follower of Christ. And this is all the request of him that is a lover of all them that love the Lord Jesus Christ. J. C.[1]

[1] The initials probably of Isaac Chauncey. See vol. v. p. 404, and vol. vii. p. 503.

THE TRUE NATURE OF A GOSPEL CHURCH AND ITS GOVERNMENT.

CHAPTER I.

The subject-matter of the church.

THE church may be considered either as unto its *essence*, constitution, and being, or as unto its *power* and *order*, when it is organized. As unto its essence and being, its constituent parts are its *matter* and *form*. These we must inquire into.

By the matter of the church, we understand the persons whereof the church doth consist, with their qualifications; and by its form, the reason, cause, and way of that kind of relation among them which gives them the being of a church, and therewithal an interest in all that belongs unto a church, either privilege or power, as such.

Our first inquiry being concerning what sort of persons our Lord Jesus Christ requireth and admitteth to be the visible subjects of his kingdom, we are to be regulated in our determination by respect unto his honour, glory, and the holiness of his rule. To reckon such persons to be subjects of Christ, members of his body, such as he requires and owns (for others are not so), who would not be tolerated, at least not approved, in a well-governed kingdom or commonwealth of the world, is highly dishonourable unto him, Ps. xv. 1–5, xxiv. 3, 4, xciii. 5; 2 Cor. viii. 23; Eph. v. 27. But it is so come to pass, that let men be never so notoriously and flagitiously wicked, until they become pests of the earth, yet are they esteemed to belong to the church of Christ; and not only so, but it is thought little less than schism to forbid them the communion of the church in all its sacred privileges. Howbeit, the Scripture doth in general represent the kingdom or church of Christ to consist of persons called *saints*, separated from the world, with many other things of an alike nature, as we shall see immediately. And if the honour of Christ were of such weight with us as it ought to be,—if we understood aright the nature and ends of his kingdom, and that the peculiar glory of it above all the kingdoms in the world consists in the holiness of its subjects, such a holiness as the world in its wisdom knoweth not,

—we would duly consider whom we avow to belong thereunto. Those who know aught of these things will not profess that persons openly profane, vicious, sensual, wicked, and ignorant, are approved and owned of Christ as the subjects of his kingdom, or that it is his will that we should receive them into the communion of the church, 2 Tim. iii. 1–5. But an old opinion of the unlawfulness of separation from a church on the account of the mixture of wicked men in it is made a scare-crow to frighten men from attempting the reformation of the greatest evils, and a covert for the composing churches of such members only.

Some things, therefore, are to be premised unto what shall be offered unto the right stating of this inquiry; as,—

1. That if there be no more required of any, as unto *personal qualifications*, in a visible, uncontrollable profession, to constitute them subjects of Christ's kingdom and members of his church, Ezek. xxii. 26, but what is required by the most righteous and severe laws of men to constitute a good subject or citizen, the distinction between his visible kingdom and the kingdoms of the world, as unto the principal causes of it, is utterly lost. Now, all negative qualifications, as, that men are not oppressors, drunkards, revilers, swearers, adulterers, etc., are required hereunto; but yet it is so fallen out that generally more is required to constitute such a citizen as shall represent the righteous laws he liveth under than to constitute a member of the church of Christ.

2. That whereas *regeneration* is expressly required in the gospel to give a right and privilege unto an entrance into the church or kingdom of Christ, John iii. 3, Tit. iii. 3–5, whereby that kingdom of his is distinguished from all other kingdoms in and of the world, unto an interest wherein never any such thing was required, it must of necessity be something better, more excellent and sublime, than any thing the laws and polities of men pretend unto or prescribe. Wherefore it cannot consist in any outward rite, easy to be observed by the worst and vilest of men. Besides, the Scripture gives us a description of it in opposition unto its consisting in any such rite, 1 Pet. iii. 21; and many things required unto good citizens are far better than the mere observation of such a rite.

3. Of this regeneration baptism is the symbol, the sign, the expression, and representation, John iii. 5; Acts ii. 38; 1 Pet. iii. 21. Wherefore, unto those who are in a due manner partakers of it, it giveth all the external rights and privileges which belong unto them that are regenerate, until they come unto such seasons wherein the personal performance of those duties whereon the continuation of the estate of visible regeneration doth depend is required of them. Herein if they fail, they lose all privilege and benefit by their baptism.

So speaks the apostle in the case of circumcision under the law: Rom. ii. 25, "For circumcision verily profiteth, if thou keep the law; but if thou be a breaker of the law, thy circumcision is made uncircumcision." It is so in the case of baptism. Verily it profiteth, if a man stand unto the terms of the covenant which is tendered therein between God and his soul, for it will give him a right unto all the outward privileges of a regenerate state; but if he do not, as in the sight of God, his baptism is no baptism, as unto the real communication of grace and acceptance with him, Phil. iii. 18, 19; Tit. i. 15, 16. So, in the sight of the church, it is no baptism, as unto a participation of the external rights and privileges of a regenerate state.

4. God alone is judge concerning this regeneration, as unto its *internal, real principle and state* in the souls of men, Acts xv. 8, Rev. ii. 23, whereon the participation of all the spiritual advantages of the covenant of grace doth depend. The church is judge of its evidences and fruits in their external demonstration, as unto a participation of *the outward privileges of a regenerate state,* and no farther, Acts viii. 13. And we shall hereon briefly declare what belongs unto the forming of a right judgment herein, and who are to be esteemed fit members of any gospel church-state, or have a right so to be:—

1. Such as from whom we are obliged to *withdraw* or *withhold communion* can be no part of the matter constituent of a church, or are not meet members for the first constitution of it, 1 Cor. vi. 9–11; Phil. iii. 18, 19; 2 Thess. iii. 6; 2 Tim. iii. 5; Rom. ix. 6, 7; Tit. i. 16. But such are all habitual sinners, those who, having prevalent habits and inclinations unto sins of any kind unmortified, do walk according unto them. Such are profane swearers, drunkards, fornicators, covetous, oppressors, and the like, "who shall not inherit the kingdom of God," 1 Cor. vi. 9–11; Phil. iii. 18, 19; 2 Thess. iii. 6; 2 Tim. iii. 5. As a man living and dying in any known sin, that is, habitually, without repentance, cannot be saved, so a man known to live in sin cannot regularly be received into any church. To compose churches of habitual sinners, and that either as unto sins of commission or sins of omission, is not to erect temples to Christ, but chapels unto the devil.

2. Such as, being in the fellowship of the church, are to be *admonished of any scandalous sin,* which if they repent not of they are to be cast out of the church, are not meet members for the original constitution of a church, Matt. xviii. 15–18; 1 Cor. v. 11. This is the state of them who abide obstinate in any known sin, whereby they have given offence unto others, without a professed repentance thereof, although they have not lived in it habitually.

3. They are to be such as *visibly answer* the description given of

gospel churches in the Scripture, so as the titles assigned therein unto the members of such churches may on good grounds be appropriated unto them. To compose churches of such persons as do not visibly answer the character given of what they were of old, and what they were always to be by virtue of the law of Christ or gospel constitution, is not church edification but destruction. And those who look on the things spoken of all church-members of old, as that they were saints by calling, lively stones in the house of God, justified and sanctified, separated from the world, etc., as those which were in them, and did indeed belong unto them, but even deride the necessity of the same things in present church-members, or the application of them unto those who are so, are themselves no small part of that woful degeneracy which Christian religion is fallen under. Let it then be considered what is spoken of the church of the Jews in their dedication unto God, as unto their typical holiness, with the application of it unto Christian churches in real holiness, 1 Pet. ii. 5, 9, with the description given of them constantly in the Scripture, as faithful, holy, believing, as the house of God, as his temple wherein he dwells by his Spirit, as the body of Christ united and compacted by the communication of the Spirit unto them, as also what is said concerning their ways, walkings, and duties, and it will be uncontrollably evident of what sort our church-members ought to be. Nor are those of any other sort able to discharge the duties which are incumbent on all church-members, nor to use the privileges they are intrusted withal. Wherefore, I say, to suppose churches regularly to consist of such persons, for the greater part of them, as no way answer the description given of church-members in their original institution, nor capable to discharge the duties prescribed unto them, but giving evidence of habits and actions inconsistent therewithal, is not only to disturb all church-order, but utterly to overthrow the ends and being of churches. Nor is there any thing more scandalous unto Christian religion than what Bellarmine affirms to be the judgment of the Papists, in opposition unto all others, namely, "That no internal virtue or grace is required unto the constitution of a church in its members," De Eccles. lib. iii. cap. ii.

4. They must be such as do *make an open profession of the subjection of their souls and consciences unto the authority of Christ in the gospel, and their readiness to yield obedience unto all his commands,* Rom. x. 10; 2 Cor. viii. 5, ix. 13; Matt. x. 32, 33; Luke ix. 26; 2 Tim. ii. 12; Rom. xv. 9; John xii. 42; 1 John iv. 2, 3, 15 This, I suppose, will not be denied; for not only doth the Scripture make this profession necessary unto the participation of any benefit or privilege of the gospel, but the nature of the things themselves requires indispensably that so it should be: for nothing can be

more unreasonable than that men should be taken into the privileges attending obedience unto the laws and commands of Christ, without avowing or professing that obedience. Wherefore our inquiry is only [about] what is required unto such a profession as may render men meet to be members of a church, and give them a right thereunto; for to suppose such a confession of Christian religion to be compliant with the gospel which is made by many who openly live in sin, "being disobedient, and unto every good work reprobate," is to renounce the gospel itself. Christ is not the high priest of such a profession. I shall therefore declare briefly what is necessary unto this profession, that all may know what it is which is required unto the entrance of any into our churches, wherein our practice hath been sufficiently traduced:—

(1.) There is required unto it *a competent knowledge* of the doctrines and mystery of the gospel, especially concerning *the person and offices of Christ.* The confession hereof was the ground whereon he granted the keys of the kingdom of heaven, or all church-power, unto believers, Matt. xvi. 15–19. The first instruction which he gave unto his apostles was that they should teach men, by the preaching of the gospel, in the knowledge of the truth revealed by him. The knowledge required in the members of the Judaical church, that they might be translated into the Christian, was principally, if not solely, that of his person, and the acknowledgment of him to be the true Messiah, the Son of God; for as on their unbelief thereof their eternal ruin did depend, as he told them, "If ye believe not that I am he, ye shall die in your sins," so the confession of him was sufficient on their part unto their admission into the gospel church-state. And the reasons of it are apparent. With others, an instruction in all the mysteries of religion, especially in those that are fundamental, is necessary unto the profession we inquire after. So Justin Martyr tells us what pains they took in those primitive times to instruct those in the mysteries of religion who, upon a general conviction of its truth, were willing to adhere unto the profession of it. And what was their judgment herein is sufficiently known from the keeping a multitude in the state of catechumens before they would admit them into the fellowship of the church. They are not therefore to be blamed, they do but discharge their duty, who refuse to receive into church-communion such as are ignorant of the fundamental doctrines and mysteries of the gospel, or if they have learned any thing of them from a form of words, yet really understand nothing of them. The promiscuous driving of all sorts of persons who have been baptized in their infancy unto a participation of all church-privileges is a profanation of the holy institutions of Christ. This knowledge, therefore, belonging unto profession is itself to be professed.

(2.) There is required unto it a *professed subjection of soul and conscience unto the authority of Christ in the church*, Matt. xxviii. 18–20; 2 Cor. viii. 5. This in general is performed by all that are baptized when they are adult, as being by their own actual consent baptized in the name of Christ; and it is required of all them who are baptized in their infancy, when they are able with faith and understanding to profess their consent unto and abiding in that covenant whereinto they were initiated.

(3.) An instruction in and consent unto *the doctrine of self-denial and bearing of the cross*, in a particular manner; for this is made indispensably necessary by our Saviour himself unto all that will be his disciples, Matt. x. 37–39; Mark viii. 34, 38; Luke ix. 23; Phil. iii. 18; Acts iv. 10, 11, 20, xxiv. 14. And it hath been a great disadvantage unto the glory of Christian religion that men have not been more and better instructed therein. It is commonly thought that whoever will may be a Christian at an easy rate,—it will cost him nothing. But the gospel gives us another account of these things; for it not only warns us that reproaches, hatred, sufferings of all sorts, ofttimes to death itself, are the common lot of all its professors who will live godly in Christ Jesus, but also requires that at our initiation into the profession of it, we consider aright the dread of them all, and engage cheerfully to undergo them. Hence, in the primitive times, whilst all sorts of miseries were continually presented unto them who embraced the Christian religion, their willing engagement to undergo them who were converted was a firm evidence of the sincerity of their faith, as it ought to be unto us also in times of difficulty and persecution. Some may suppose that the faith and confession of this doctrine of self-denial and readiness for the cross is of use only in time of persecution, and so doth not belong unto them who have continually the countenance and favour of public authority. I say, it is, at least as they judge, well for them; with others it is not so, whose outward state makes the public avowing of this duty indispensably necessary unto them. And I may add it as my own thoughts (though they are not my own alone), that notwithstanding all the countenance that is given unto any church by the public magistracy, yet whilst we are in this world, those who will faithfully discharge their duty, as ministers of the gospel especially, shall have need to be prepared for sufferings. To escape sufferings, and enjoy worldly advantages by sinful compliances, or bearing with men in their sins, is no gospel direction.

(4.) *Conviction and confession of sin, with the way of deliverance by Jesus Christ*, is that "answer of a good conscience" that is required in the baptism of them that are adult, 1 Pet. iii. 21.

(5.) Unto this profession is required *the constant performance of all known duties of religion*, both of piety in the public and private

worship of God, as also of charity with respect unto others, Matt. xxviii. 19, 20. "Show me thy faith by thy works," James ii. 18.

(6.) A careful *abstinence from all known sins,* giving scandal or offence either unto the world or unto the church of God, 1 Cor. x. 32; Phil. i. 10.

And the gospel requires that this confession be made ("with the mouth confession is made unto salvation") against,—(1.) Fear; (2.) Shame; (3.) The course of the world; (4.) The opposition of all enemies whatever.

Hence it appears that there are none excluded from an entrance into the church-state but such as are either,—(1.) *Grossly ignorant;* or, (2.) *Persecutors* or reproachers of those that are good, or of the ways of God wherein they walk; or, (3.) *Idolaters;* or, (4.) Men *scandalous in their lives,* in the commission of sins or omission of duties, through vicious habits or inclinations; or, (5.) Such as would partake of gospel privileges and ordinances, yet openly avow that *they will not submit unto the law and commands of Christ* in the gospel; concerning whom and the like the Scripture rule is peremptory, "From such turn away."

And herein we are remote from exceeding the example and care of the primitive churches; yea, there are but few, if any, that arrive unto it. Their endeavour was to preach unto all they could, and they rejoiced in the multitudes that came to hear the word; but if any did essay to join themselves unto the church, their diligence in their examination and instruction, their severe inquiries into their conversation, their disposing of them for a long time into a state of expectation for their trial, before their admittance, were remarkable; and some of the ancients complain that the promiscuous admittance of all sorts of persons that would profess the Christian religion into church-membership, which took place afterward, ruined all the beauty, order, and discipline of the church.

The things ascribed unto those who are to be esteemed the proper subject-matter of a visible church are such as, in the judgment of charity, entitle them unto all the appellations of "saints, called, sanctified,"—that is, visibly and by profession,—which are given unto the members of all the churches in the New Testament, and which must be answered in those who are admitted into that privilege, if we do not wholly neglect our only patterns. By these things, although they should any of them not be real living members of the mystical body of Christ, unto whom he is a head of spiritual and vital influence, yet are they meet members of that body of Christ unto which he is a head of rule and government, as also meet to be esteemed subjects of his kingdom; and none are excluded but such as concerning whom rules are given either to withdraw from them or to cast them out of church-society, or are expressly excluded by

God himself from any share in the privileges of his covenant, Ps. l. 16, 17.

Divines of all sorts do dispute, from the Scripture and the testimonies of the ancients, that hypocrites and persons unregenerate may be true members of visible churches; and it is a matter very easy to be proved, nor do I know any by whom it is denied: but the only question is, that whereas, undoubtedly, *profession* is necessary unto all church-communion, whether, if men do profess themselves hypocrites in state and unregenerate in mind, that profession do sufficiently qualify them for church-communion; and whereas there is a double profession, one by *words*, the other by *works*, as the apostle declares, Tit. i. 16, whether the latter be not as interpretative of the mind and state of men as the former. Other contest we have with none in this matter.

Bellarmine, De Eccles. lib. iii. cap. ii., gives an account out of Augustine, and that truly, from Brevis. Collat. Col. 3, of the state of the church. "It doth," saith he, "consist of a soul and body. The soul is the internal graces of the Spirit; the body is the profession of them, with the sacraments. All true believers making profession belong to the soul and body of the church. Some (as believing catechumens) belong to the soul, but not to the body; others are of the body, but not of the soul,—namely, such as have no internal grace or true faith,—and they are like the hair, or the nails, or evil humours in the body." And thereunto adds, that his definition of the church compriseth this last sort only; which is all one as if we should define a man to be a thing constituted and made up of hair, nails, and ill humours: and let others take heed that they have no such churches.

There is nothing more certain in matter of fact than that evangelical churches, at their first constitution, were made up and did consist of such members as we have described, and no others; nor is there one word in the whole Scripture intimating any concession or permission of Christ to receive into his church those who are not so qualified. Others have nothing to plead for themselves but possession; which, being "malæ fidei," ill obtained and ill continued, will afford them no real advantage when the time of trial shall come. Wherefore it is certain that such they ought to be. No man, as I suppose, is come unto that profligate sense of spiritual things as to deny that the members of the church ought to be *visibly holy:* for if so, they may affirm that all the promises and privileges made and granted to the church do belong unto them who visibly live and die in their sins; which is to overthrow the gospel. And if they ought so to be, and were so at first, when they are not so *openly* and *visibly*, there is a declension from the original constitution of churches, and a sinful deviation in them from the rule of Christ.

This original constitution of churches, with respect unto their members, was, for the substance of it, as we observed, preferred in the primitive times, whilst persecution from without was continued and discipline preserved within. I have in part declared before what great care and circumspection the church then used in the admission of any into their fellowship and order, and what trial they were to undergo before they were received; and it is known also with what severe discipline they watched over the faith, walking, conversation, and manners of all their members. Indeed, such was their care and diligence herein that there is scarce left, in some churches at present, the least resemblance or appearance of what was their state and manner of rule. Wherefore some think it meet to ascend no higher in the imitation of the primitive churches than the times of the Christian emperors, when all things began to rush into the fatal apostasy, which I shall here speak a little farther unto; for,—

Upon the Roman emperors' embracing Christian religion, whereby not only outward peace and tranquillity was secured unto the church, but the profession of Christian religion was countenanced, encouraged, honoured, and rewarded, the rule, care, and diligence of the churches, about the admission of members, were in a great measure relinquished and forsaken. The rulers of the church began to think that the glory of it consisted in its *numbers*, finding both their own power, veneration, and revenue increased thereby. In a short time, the inhabitants of whole cities and provinces, upon a bare, outward profession, were admitted into churches. And then began *the outward court*,—that is, all that which belongs unto the outward worship and order of the church,—to be trampled on by the Gentiles, not kept any more to the measure of Scripture rule, which thenceforth was applied only to the temple of God and them that worshipped therein: for this corruption of the church, as to the matter of it, was the occasion and means of introducing all that corruption in doctrine, worship, order, and rule, which ensued, and ended in the great apostasy; for whatever belonged unto any of these things, especially those that consist in practice, were accommodated unto the state of the members of the churches. And such they were as stood in need of superstitious rites to be mixed with their worship, as not understanding the power and glory of that which is spiritual; such as no interest in church-order could be committed unto, seeing they were not qualified to bear any share in it; such as stood in need of a rule over them with grandeur and power, like unto that among the Gentiles. Wherefore, the accommodation of all church concerns unto the state and condition of such corrupt members as churches were filled with, and at length made up of, proved the ruin of the church in all its order and beauty.

But so it fell out, that in the protestant reformation of the church

very little regard was had thereunto. Those great and worthy persons who were called unto that work did set themselves principally, yea, solely, for the most part, against the false doctrine and idolatrous worship of the church of Rome, as judging that if they were removed and taken away, the people, by the efficacy of truth and order of worship, would be retrieved from the evil of their ways, and primitive holiness be again reduced among them; for they thought it was the doctrine and worship of that church which had filled the people with darkness and corrupted their conversations. Nor did they absolutely judge amiss therein: for although they were themselves at first introduced in compliance with the ignorance and wickedness of the people, yet they were suited to promote them as well as to countenance them; which they did effectually. Hence it came to pass that the reformation of the church, as unto the matter of it, or the purity and holiness of its members, was not in the least attempted, until Calvin set up his discipline at Geneva; which hath filled the world with clamours against him from that day to this. In most other places, churches, in the matter of them, continued the same as they were in the Papacy, and in many places as bad in their lives as when they were Papists.

But this method was designed, in the holy, wise providence of God for the good and advantage of the church, in a progressive reformation, as it had made a gradual progress into its decay; for had the reformers, in the first place, set themselves to remove out of the church such as were unmeet for its communion, or to have gathered out of them such as were meet members of the church, according to its original institution, it would, through the paucity of the number of those who could have complied with the design, have greatly obstructed, if not utterly defeated, their endeavour for the reformation of doctrine and worship. This was that which, in the preaching of the gospel and the profession of it, God hath since made effectual, in these nations especially, and in other places, to turn multitudes "from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto himself, translating them into the kingdom of his dear Son." Hereby way is made for a necessary addition unto the work of reformation, if not to the closing of it, which could not at first be attained unto nor well attempted,—namely, the reduction of churches, as unto their matter, or the members of them, unto the primitive institution.

The sum of what is designed in this discourse is this only:—We desire no more to constitute church-members, and we can desire no less, than what, in the judgment of charity, may comply with the union that is between Christ the head and the church, 1 Cor. xii. 27, Eph. ii. 22, 1 Cor. iii. 16, 17, 2 Cor. viii. 5, 1 Thess. i. 1, 2, etc.; than may, in the same judgment, answer the way of the beginning and increase of the church, according unto the will of God, who adds unto

the church such as shall be saved, Acts ii. 47, the rule of our receiving of them being because he hath received them, Rom. xiv. 1–3; than may answer that profession of faith which was the foundation of the church, which was not what flesh and blood, but what God himself revealed, Matt. xvi. 16, 17, and not such as have a form of godliness, but deny the power thereof, 2 Tim. iii. 5. We acknowledge that many church-members are not what they ought to be, but that many hypocrites may be among them; that the judgment which is passed on the confession and profession of them that are to be admitted into churches is *charitative*, proceeding on evidence of moral probability, not determining the reality of the things themselves; that there are sundry measures of light, knowledge, experience, and abilities and readiness of mind, in those that are to be admitted, all whose circumstances are duly to be considered, with indulgence unto their weakness; and if the Scripture will allow us any further latitude, we are ready to embrace it.

Our present inquiry yet remaining on these considerations is, What is our duty *in point of communion* with such churches as are made up or composed of members *visibly unholy*, or such as comply not with the qualifications that are, by the rules of the gospel, indispensably required to give unto any a regular entrance into the church, with a participation of its privileges; for it is in vain to expect that such churches will reform themselves by any act, duty, or power of their own, seeing the generality of them are justly supposed averse from and enemies unto any such work. I answer, therefore,—

1. It must be remembered that *communion with particular churches is to be regulated absolutely by edification.* No man is or can be obliged to abide in or confine himself unto the communion of any particular church any longer than it is for his edification. And this liberty is allowed unto all persons by the church of England; for allow a man to be born in such a parish, to be baptized in it, and there educated, yet if at any time he judge that the ministry of the parish is not useful unto his edification, he may withdraw from the communion in that parish by the removal of his habitation, it may be to the next door. Wherefore,—

2. If the corruption of a church, as to the matter of it, be such as that,—

(1.) It is *inconsistent* with and overthroweth all that communion that ought to be among the members of the same church, in love without dissimulation (whereof we shall treat afterward);

(2.) If the *scandals* and *offences* which must of necessity abound in such churches be really obstructive of edification;

(3.) If the *ways and walking* of the generality of their members be dishonourable unto the gospel and the profession of it, giving no representation of the holiness of Christ or his doctrine;

(4.) If such churches *do not, can not, will not* reform themselves: then,—

It is the duty of every man who takes care of his own present edification and the future salvation of his soul *peaceably to withdraw from the communion of such churches,* and to join in such others where all the ends of church-societies may in some measure be obtained. Men may not only do so, because all obligation unto the use of means for the attaining of such an end doth cease when the means are not suited thereunto, but obstructive of its attainment, but also because the giving of a testimony hereby against the declension from the rule of Christ in the institution of churches, and the dishonour that by this means is inflicted on the gospel, is necessary unto all that desire to acquit themselves as loyal subjects unto their Lord and King. And it cannot be questioned, by any who understand the nature, use, and end of evangelical churches, but that a relinquishment of the rule of the gospel in any of them, as unto the practice of holiness, is as just a cause of withdrawing communion from them as their forsaking the same rule in doctrine and worship.

It may be some will judge that sundry inconveniencies will ensue on this assertion, when any have a mind to practise according unto it; but when the matter of fact supposed is such as is capable of an uncontrollable evidence, no inconvenience can ensue on the practice directed unto, any way to be compared unto the mischief of obliging believers to abide always in such societies, to the ruin of their souls.

Two things may be yet inquired into, that relate unto this part of the state of evangelical churches; as,—

1. Whether a church may not, ought not, to *take under its conduct,* inspection, and rule, such as are not yet meet to be received into full communion, such as are the children and servants of those who are complete members of the church? *Ans.* No doubt the church, in its officers, may and ought so to do, and it is a great evil when it is neglected. For,—(1.) They are to take care of *parents* and *masters* as such, and as unto the discharge of their duty in their families; which without an inspection into the condition of their *children* and *servants,* they cannot do. (2.) *Households* were constantly reckoned unto the church when the heads of the families were entered into covenant, Luke xix. 9; Acts xvi. 15; Rom. xvi. 10, 11; 1 Cor. i. 16; 2 Tim. iv. 19. (3.) *Children* do belong unto and have an interest in their *parents' covenant;* not only in the promise of it, which gives them right unto baptism, but in the profession of it in the church covenant, which gives them a right unto all the privileges of the church whereof they are capable, until they voluntarily relinquish their claim unto them. (4.) *Baptizing the children of church members,* giving them thereby an admission into the visible catholic church, puts an obligation on the officers of the church to take care,

what in them lieth, that they may be kept and preserved meet members of it, by a due watch over them and instruction of them. (5.) Though neither the church nor its privileges be continued and preserved, as of old, by *carnal generation*, yet, because of the nature of the dispensation of God's covenant, wherein he hath promised to be a God unto believers and their seed, the advantage of the means of a gracious education in such families, and of conversion and edification in the ministry of the church, ordinarily the continuation of the church is to depend on the addition of members out of the families already incorporated in it. The church is not to be like the kingdom of the Mamalukes, wherein there was no regard unto natural successors, but it was continually made up of strangers and foreigners incorporated into it; nor like the beginning of the Roman commonwealth, which, consisting of men only, was like to have been the matter of one age alone.

The duty of the church towards this sort of persons consists,—(1.) In *prayer* for them; (2.) *Catechetical instruction* of them according unto their capacities; (3.) *Advice* to their parents concerning them; (4.) *Visiting* of them in the families whereunto they do belong; (5.) *Encouragement* of them, or *admonition*, according as there is occasion; (6.) *Direction* [of them] for a due preparation unto the joining themselves unto the church in full communion; (7.) *Exclusion* of them from a claim unto the participation of the especial privileges of the church, where they render themselves visibly unmeet for them and unworthy of them.

The neglect of this duty brings inconceivable prejudice unto churches, and if continued in will prove their ruin; for they are not to be preserved, propagated, and continued, at the easy rate of a constant supply by the carnal baptized posterity of those who do at any time, justly or unjustly, belong unto them, but they are to prepare a meet supply of members by all the spiritual means whose administration they are intrusted withal. And, besides, one end of churches is to preserve the covenant of God in the families once graciously taken thereinto. The neglect, therefore, herein is carefully to be watched against. And it doth arise,—(1.) From an *ignorance* of the duty in most that are concerned in it. (2.) From the *paucity* of officers in most churches, both teaching and ruling, who are to attend unto it. (3.) The *want of a teacher or catechist* in every church, who should attend only unto the instruction of this sort of persons. (4.) *Want of a sense of their duty* in parents and masters,—[1.] In not valuing aright the *great privilege* of having their children and servants under the inspection, care, and blessing of the church; [2.] In not *instilling* into them a sense of it, with the duties that are expected from them on the account of their relation unto the church; [3.] In not *bringing them* duly into the church assem-

blies; [4.] In not *preparing* and disposing them unto an actual entrance into full communion with the church; [5.] In not *advising* with the elders of the church about them; and, [6.] Especially by an *indulgence* unto that loose and careless kind of education, in conformity unto the world, which generally prevails. Hence it is that most of them, on various accounts and occasions, drop off here and there from the communion of the church and all relation thereunto, without the least respect unto them or inquiry after them, churches being supplied by such as are occasionally converted in them.

Where churches are complete in the kind and number of their officers, sufficient to attend unto all the duties and occasions of them; where whole families, in the conjunction of the heads of them unto the church, are dedicated unto God, according unto the several capacities of those whereof they do consist; where the design of the church is to provide for its own successive continuation, in the preservation of the interest of God's covenant in the families taken thereinto; where parents esteem themselves accountable unto God and the church as unto the relation of their children thereunto,—there is provision for church-order, usefulness, and beauty, beyond what is usually to be observed.

2. The especial duty of the church in *admission of members* in the time of great persecution may be a little inquired into. And,—(1.) It is evident that, in the *apostolical* and *primitive* times, the churches were exceeding careful not to admit into their society such as by whom they might be betrayed unto the rage of their persecuting adversaries; yet, notwithstanding all their care, they could seldom avoid it, but that when persecution grew severe some or other would fall from them, either out of fear, with the power of temptation, or by a discovery of their latent hypocrisy and unbelief, unto their great trial and distress. However, they were not so scrupulous herein, with respect unto their own safety, as to exclude such as gave a tolerable account of their sincerity, but, in the discharge of their duty, committed themselves unto the care of Jesus Christ. And this is the rule whereby we ought to walk on such occasions. Wherefore, (2.) On supposition of the establishment of idolatry and persecution here, or in any place, as it was of old, under first the pagan, and afterward the antichristian tyranny, the church is obliged to receive into its care and communion all such as,—[1.] *Flee from idols*, and are ready to confirm their testimony against them with suffering; [2.] *Make profession of the truth* of the gospel of the doctrine of Christ, especially as unto his person and offices; are, [3.] Free from *scandalous sins;* and, [4.] Are *willing to give up themselves* unto the rule of Christ in the church, and a subjection unto all his ordinances and institutions therein: for in such a season, these things are so full an indication of sincerity as that, in the judg-

ment of charity, they render men meet to be members of the visible church. And if any of this sort of persons, through the severity of the church in their non-admission of them, should be cast on a conjunction in superstitious and idolatrous worship, or be otherwise exposed unto temptations and discouragements prejudicial unto their souls, I know not how such a church can answer the refusal of them unto the great and universal Pastor of the whole flock.

CHAPTER II.

Of the formal cause of a particular church.

THE way or means whereby such persons as are described in the foregoing chapter may become a church, or enter into a church-state, is by *mutual confederation* or solemn agreement for the performance of all the duties which the Lord Christ hath prescribed unto his disciples in such churches, and in order to the exercise of the power wherewith they are intrusted according unto the rule of the word.

For the most part, the churches that are in the world at present know not *how they came so to be*, continuing only in that state which they have received by tradition from their fathers. Few there are who think that any act or duty of their own is required to instate them in church order and relation. And it is acknowledged that there is a difference between the continuation of a church and its first erection; yet that that continuation may be regular, it is required that its first congregating (for the church is a congregation) was so, as also that the force and efficacy of it be still continued. Wherefore the causes of that first gathering must be inquired into.

The churches mentioned in the New Testament, planted or gathered by the apostles, were particular churches, as hath been proved. These churches did consist each of them of many members; who were so members of one of them as that they were not members of another. The saints of the church of Corinth were not members of the church at Philippi. And the inquiry is, how those believers in one place and the other became to be a church, and that distinct from all others? The Scripture affirms in general that *they gave up themselves unto the Lord and unto the apostles*, who guided them in these affairs, by the will of God, 2 Cor. viii. 5; and that other believers were added unto the church, Acts ii. 47.

That it is the will and command of our Lord Jesus Christ that all his disciples should be joined in such societies, for the duties and ends of them prescribed and limited by himself, hath been proved sufficiently before. All that are discipled by the word are to be taught to do and observe all his commands, Matt. xxviii. 19, 20.

This could *originally* be no otherwise done but by their own *actual, express, voluntary consent.* There are sundry things which concur as remote causes, *or pre-requisite conditions,* unto this conjunction of believers in a particular church, and without which it cannot be; such are baptism, profession of the Christian faith, convenient cohabitation, resorting to the preaching of the word in the same place: but neither any of these distinctly or separately, nor all of them in conjunction, are or can be the constitutive form of a particular church; for it is evident that they may all be, and yet no such church-state ensue. They cannot all together engage unto those duties nor communicate those powers which appertain unto this state.

Were there no other order in particular churches, no other discipline to be exercised in them, nor rule over them, no other duties, no other ends assigned unto them, but what are generally owned and practised in parochial assemblies, the preaching of the word within such a precinct of cohabitation, determined by civil authority, might constitute a church. But if a church be such a society as is intrusted in itself with sundry powers and privileges depending on sundry duties prescribed unto it; if it constitute new relations between persons that neither naturally nor morally were before so related, as marriage doth between husband and wife; if it require new mutual duties and give new mutual rights among themselves, not required of them either as unto their matter or as unto their manner before,—it is vain to imagine that this state can arise from or have any other formal cause but the joint consent and virtual confederation of those concerned unto these ends: for there is none of them can have any other foundation; they are all of them resolved into the wills of men, bringing themselves under an obligation unto them by their voluntary consent. I say, unto the wills of men, as their formal cause; the supreme efficient cause of them all being the will, law, and constitution of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Thus it is in all societies, in all relations that are not merely natural (such as between parents and children, wherein the necessity of powers and mutual duties is predetermined by a superior law, even that of nature), wherein powers, privileges, and mutual duties, are established, as belonging unto that society. Nor, after its first institution, can any one be incorporated into it, but by his own consent and engagement to observe the laws of it: nor, if the nature and duties of churches were acknowledged, could there be any contest in this matter; for the things ensuing are clear and evident:—

1. The Lord Christ, by his authority, hath appointed and *instituted this church-state,* as that there should be such churches; as we have proved before.

2. That, by his word or law, he hath *granted powers and pri-*

vileges unto this church, and prescribed duties unto all belonging unto it; wherein they can have no concernment who are not incorporated into such a church.

3. That therefore he doth *require* and *command* all his disciples to join themselves in such church-relations as we have proved, warranting them so to do by his word and command. Wherefore,—

4. This *joining of themselves*, whereon depend all their interest in church powers and privileges, all their obligation unto church duties, is a *voluntary act* of the obedience of faith unto the authority of Christ; nor can it be any thing else.

5. Herein do they *give themselves unto the Lord* and to *one another*, by their officers, in a peculiar manner, according to the will of God, 2 Cor. viii. 5.

6. To "give ourselves unto the Lord,"—that is, unto the Lord Jesus Christ,—is expressly *to engage to do and observe all that he hath appointed and commanded* in the church, as that phrase everywhere signifieth in the Scripture; as also "joining ourselves unto God," which is the same.

7. This resignation of ourselves unto the will, power, and authority of Christ, with an express engagement made unto him of doing and observing all his commands, hath *the nature of a covenant on our part;* and it hath so on his, by virtue of the promise of his especial presence annexed unto this engagement on our part, Matt. xxviii. 18–20.

8. For whereas there are three things required unto a covenant between God and man,—(1.) That it be of *God's appointment* and institution; (2.) That upon a prescription of duties there be a *solemn engagement* unto their performance on the part of men; (3.) That there be *especial promises of God* annexed thereunto, in which consists the matter of confederation, whereof mutual express restipulation is the form,—they all concur herein.

9. This covenant which we intend is not the covenant of grace absolutely considered; nor are all the duties belonging unto that covenant prescribed in it, but the principal of them, as faith, repentance, and the like, are presupposed unto it; nor hath it annexed unto it all the promises and privileges of the new covenant absolutely considered: but it is that which is prescribed as a *gospel duty in the covenant of grace*, whereunto do belong all the duties of evangelical worship, all the powers and privileges of the church, by virtue of *the especial promise* of the peculiar presence of Christ in such a church.

10. Whereas, therefore, in the constitution of a church, believers do give up themselves unto the Lord, and are bound solemnly to engage themselves *to do and observe all the things which Christ hath commanded* to be done and observed in that state, whereon he hath promised to be present with them and among them in an espe-

cial manner,—which presence of his doth interest them in all the rights, powers, and privileges of the church,—their so doing hath the nature of a divine covenant included in it; which is the formal cause of their church-state and being.

11. Besides, as we have proved before, there are many *mutual duties* required of all which join in church-societies, and powers to be exercised and submitted unto, whereunto none can be obliged without their own consent. They must give up themselves unto one another, by the will of God; that is, they must agree, consent, and engage among themselves, to observe all those mutual duties, to use all those privileges, and to exercise all those powers, which the Lord Christ hath prescribed and granted unto his church. See Jer. l. 4, 5.

12. This completes the *confederation intended*, which is the formal cause of the church, and without which, either expressly or virtually performed, there can be no church-state.

13. Indeed, herein most men deceive themselves, and think they do not that, and that it ought to be done, and dispute against it as unlawful or unnecessary, which for the substance of it they do themselves, and would condemn themselves in their own consciences if they did it not. For unto what end do they join themselves unto parochial churches and assemblies? to what end do they require all professors of the protestant religion so to do, declaring it to be their duty by penalties annexed unto its neglect? Is it not that they might yield obedience unto Christ in their so doing? is it not to profess that they will do and observe all whatsoever he commands them? is it not to do it in that society, in those assemblies, whereunto they do belong? is there not therein virtually a mutual agreement and engagement among them unto all those ends? It must be so with them who do not in all things in religion fight uncertainly, as men beating the air.

14. Now, whereas these things are, in themselves and for the substance of them, known gospel duties, which all believers are indispensably obliged unto, the *more express our engagement* is concerning them, the more do we glorify Christ in our profession, and the greater sense of our duty will abide on our consciences, and the greater encouragement be given unto the performance of mutual duties, as also the more evident will the warranty be for the exercise of church-power. Yet do I not deny the being of churches unto those societies wherein these things are virtually only observed, especially in churches of some continuance, wherein there is at least an implicit consent unto the first covenant constitution.

15. The Lord Christ having instituted and appointed officers, rulers, or leaders, in his church (as we shall see in the next place), to look unto the discharge of all church-duties among the members

of it, to administer and dispense all its privileges, and to exercise all its authority, *the consent and engagement insisted on* is expressly required unto the constitution of this order and the preservation of it; for without this no believer can be brought into that relation unto another as his pastor, guide, overseer, ruler, unto the ends mentioned, wherein he must be subject unto him, [and] partake of all ordinances of divine worship administered by him with authority, in obedience unto the will of Christ. "They gave their own selves to us," saith the apostle, "by the will of God."

16. Wherefore *the formal cause of a church* consisteth in an obediential act of believers, in such numbers as may be useful unto the ends of church-edification, jointly giving up themselves unto the Lord Jesus Christ, to do and observe all his commands, resting on the promise of his especial presence thereon, giving and communicating, by his law, all the rights, powers, and privileges of his church unto them; and in a mutual agreement among themselves jointly to perform all the duties required of them in that state, with an especial subjection unto the spiritual authority of rules and rulers appointed by Christ in that state.

17. There is nothing herein which any man who hath a conscientious sense of his duty, in *a professed subjection unto the gospel*, can question, for the substance of it, whether it be according to the mind of Christ or no; and whereas the nature and essential properties of a divine covenant are contained in it, as such it is a foundation of any church-state.

18. Thus under the old testament, when God would take the posterity of Abraham into a *new, peculiar church-state*, he did it by a *solemn covenant*. Herein, as he prescribed all the duties of his worship to them, and made them many blessed promises of his presence, with powers and privileges innumerable, so the people solemnly covenanted and engaged with him that they would do and observe all that he had commanded them; whereby they coalesced into that church-state which abode unto the time of reformation. This covenant is at large declared, Exod. xxiv.: for the covenant which God made there with the people, and they with him, was not the covenant of grace under a legal dispensation, for that was established unto the seed of Abraham four hundred years before, in the promise with the seal of circumcision; nor was it the covenant of works under a gospel dispensation, for God never renewed that covenant under any consideration whatever; but it was a peculiar covenant which God then made with them, and had not made with their fathers, Deut. v. 2, 3, whereby they were raised and erected into a church-state, wherein they were intrusted with all the privileges and enjoined all the duties which God had annexed thereunto. This covenant was the sole formal cause of their church-

state, which they are charged so often to have broken, and which they so often solemnly renewed unto God.

19. This was that covenant which was to be *abolished*, whereon the church-state that was built thereon was utterly taken away; for hereon the Hebrews ceased to be the peculiar church of God, because the covenant whereby they were made so was abolished and taken away, as the apostle disputes at large, Heb. vii.–ix. The covenant of grace in the promise will still continue unto the true seed of Abraham, Acts ii. 38, 39; but the church-covenant was utterly taken away.

20. Upon the removal, therefore, of this covenant, and the church-state founded thereon, all duties of worship and church-privileges were also taken away (the things substituted in their room being totally of another kind). But the covenant of grace, as made with Abraham, being continued and transferred unto the gospel worshippers, *the sign or token of it* given unto him is changed, and another substituted in the room thereof. But whereas the privileges of this church-covenant were in themselves carnal only, and no way spiritual but as they were typical, and the duties prescribed in it were burdensome, yea, a yoke intolerable, the apostle declares in the same place that the new church-state, whereinto we are called by the gospel, hath no duties belonging unto it but such as are spiritual and easy, but withal hath such holy and eminent privileges as the church could no way enjoy by virtue of the first church-covenant, nor could believers be made partakers of them before that covenant was abolished. Wherefore,—

21. The same way for the erection of a church-state for the participation of the more excellent privileges of the gospel, and performance of the duties of it, for the substance of it, must still be continued; for the constitution of such a society as a church is, intrusted with powers and privileges by a covenant or mutual consent, with an engagement unto the performance of the duties belonging unto it, hath its foundation in the light of nature, so far as it hath any thing in common with other voluntary relations and societies, was instituted by God himself as the way and means of erecting the church-state of the old testament, and consisteth in the performance of such duties as are expressly required of all believers.

CHAPTER III.

Of the polity, rule, or discipline of the church in general.

I. The things last treated of concern the essence of the church, or *the essential constituent parts of it*, according unto the appoint-

ment of Christ. It remains, in the next place, that we should treat of it as it is *organical*, or a body corporate, a spiritually *political* society, for the exercise of the powers wherewith it is intrusted by Christ, and the due performance of the duties which he requires. Now, whereas it is brought into this estate by the setting, fixing, or placing *officers* in it, method would require that we should first treat of them, their nature, names, power, and the ways of coming unto their *offices;* but whereas all things concerning them are founded in the grant of power unto the church itself, and the institution of polity and rule therein by Jesus Christ, I shall first treat somewhat thereof in general.

That which we intend, on various considerations and in divers respects, is called the power or authority, the polity, the rule, the government, and the discipline of the church. The *formal nature* of it is its authority or power; its *polity* is skill and wisdom to act that power unto its proper ends; its *rule* is the actual exercise of that power, according unto that skill and wisdom; its *government* is the exercise and application of that authority, according unto that skill, towards those that are its proper objects; and it is called its *discipline* principally with respect unto its end. Yet is it not material whether these things are thus accurately distinguished; the same thing is intended in them all, which I shall call *the rule of the church.*

II. The rule of the church is, in general, *the exercise of the power or authority of Jesus Christ, given unto it, according unto the laws and directions prescribed by himself, unto its edification.* This power in *actu primo*, or fundamentally, is in the church itself; in *actu secundo*, or its exercise, in them that are especially called thereunto. Whether that which is now called the rule of the church by some, being a plain secular dominion, have any affinity hereunto, is justly doubted. That it is in itself the acting of the authority of Christ, wherein the power of men is ministerial only, is evident: for,—1. All this authority in and over the church is vested in him alone; 2. It is over the souls and consciences of men only, which no authority can reach but his, and that as it is his; whereof we shall treat more afterward.

The sole end of the ministerial exercise of this power and rule, by virtue thereof, unto the church, is the edification of itself, Rom. xv. 1–3; 2 Cor. x. 8, xiii. 10; Eph. iv. 14, 15.

III. This is the especial nature and especial end of all power granted by Jesus Christ unto the church, namely, *a ministry unto edification*, in opposition unto all the ends whereunto it hath been abused; for it hath been so unto the usurpation of a dominion over the persons and consciences of the disciples of Christ, accompanied with secular grandeur, wealth, and power. The Lord Christ never

made a grant of any authority for any such ends, yea, they are expressly forbidden by him, Luke xxii. 25, 26; Matt. xx. 25–28, "Jesus called his disciples unto him, and said, Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them. But it shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister; and whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant: even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister."

All the pleas of the Romanists are utterly insufficient to secure their papal domination from this sword of the mouth of the Lord Jesus; for whereas their utmost pretence and defence consists in this, that it is not dominion and power absolutely that is forbidden, but the unlawful, tyrannical, oppressive exercise of power, such as was in use among the princes of the Gentiles, never was there any dominion in the world, no, not among the Gentiles, more cruel, oppressive, and bloody than that of the pope's hath been. But it is evident that our Lord Jesus Christ doth not in the least reflect on the rule or government of the kings and princes of the Gentiles, which was good and gracious; yea, he speaks of them in an especial manner whom their subjects, for their moderate and equal rule, with their usefulness unto their countries, called εὐεργέται, or "benefactors." Their rule, as unto the kind and administration of it in the kingdoms of the world, he approves of. And such a power or pre-eminence it was,—namely, good and just in itself, not tyrannical and oppressive,—that the two disciples desired in his kingdom; which gave occasion unto this declaration of the nature of his kingdom and the rule thereof. For in this power or dominion two things may be considered:—1. The exercise of it over the persons, goods, and lives of men, by courts, coercive jurisdictions, processes of law, and external force in punishments; 2. The state, grandeur, pre-eminence, wealth, exaltation above others, which are necessary unto the maintenance of their authority and power. Both these, in the least participation of them, in the least degree whatever, are forbidden by our Saviour to be admitted in his kingdom, or to have any place therein, on what pretence soever. He will have nothing of lordship, domination, pre-eminence in lordly power, in his church. No courts, no coercive jurisdictions, no exercise of any human authority, doth he allow therein; for by these means do the princes of the Gentiles, those that are the benefactors of their countries, rule among them. And this is most evident from what, in opposition hereunto, he prescribes unto his own disciples, the greatest, the best in office, grace, and gifts, namely, a ministry only to be discharged in the way of service. How well this great command and direction of our Lord Jesus Christ hath been, and is, complied withal by those who have taken on them to be rulers in the church is sufficiently known.

Wherefore there is no rule of the church but what is *ministerial*, consisting in an *authoritative declaration* and application of the commands and will of Christ unto the souls of men; wherein those who exercise it are servants unto the church for its edification, for Jesus' sake, 2 Cor. iv. 5.

It hence follows that the introduction of human authority into the rule of the church of Christ, in any kind, destroyeth the nature of it, and makes his kingdom to be of this world, and some of his disciples to be, in their measure, like the princes of the Gentiles; nor is it, ofttimes, from themselves that they are not more like them than they are. The church is the house of Christ, his family, his kingdom. To act any power, in its rule, which is not his, which derives not from him, which is not communicated by his legal grant; or to act any power by ways, processes, rules, and laws, not of his appointment,—is an invasion of his right and dominion. It can no otherwise be, if the church be his family, his house, his kingdom; for what father would endure that any power should be exercised in his family, as to the disposal of his children and estate, but his own? what earthly prince will bear with such an intrusion into his rights and dominion? Foreign papal power is severely excluded here in England, because it intrenches on the rights of the crown, by the exercise of an authority and jurisdiction not derived from the king, according unto the law of the land; and we should do well to take care that at the same time we do not encroach upon the dominion of Christ by the exercise of an authority not derived from him, or by laws and rules not enacted by him, but more foreign unto his kingdom than the canon law or the pope's rule is unto the laws of this nation, lest we fall under the statute of præmunire, Matt. xx. 25–28. The power of rule in the church, then, is nothing but a right to yield obedience unto the commands of Christ, in such a way, by such rules, and for such ends, as wherein and whereby his authority is to be acted.

The persons concerned in this rule of the church, both those that rule and those that are to be ruled, as unto all their civil and political concerns in this world, are subject unto the civil government of the kingdoms and places wherein they inhabit, and there are sundry things which concern the outward state and condition of the church that are at the disposal of the governors of this world; but whereas the power to be exercised in the church is merely spiritual as unto its objects, which are the consciences of men, and as unto its ends, which are the tendency of their souls unto God, their spiritual obedience in Christ, and eternal life, it is a frenzy to dream of any other power or authority in this rule but that of Christ alone.

To sum up this discourse: If the rulers of the church, the greatest of them, have only a ministerial power committed unto them, and are precisely limited thereunto; if in the exercise thereof they are

servants of the church unto its edification; if all lordly domination, in an exaltation above the church or the members of it in dignity and authority of this world, and the exercise of power by external, coercive jurisdiction, be forbidden unto them; if the whole power and rule of the church be spiritual and not carnal, mighty through God and not through the laws of men, and be to be exercised by spiritual means for spiritual ends only,—it is apparent how it hath been lost in or cast out of the world, for the introduction of a lordly domination, a secular, coercive jurisdiction, with laws and powers no way derived from Christ, in the room thereof. Neither is it possible for any man alive to reconcile the present government of some churches, either as unto the officers who have the administration of that rule, or the rules and laws whereby they act and proceed, or the powers which they exercise, or the jurisdiction which they claim, or the manner of their proceeding in its administration, unto any tolerable consistency with the principles, rules, and laws of the government of the church given by Christ himself. And this alone is a sufficient reason why those who endeavour to preserve their loyalty entire unto Jesus Christ should, in their own practice, seek after the reduction of the rule of the church unto his commands and appointments. In the public disposals of nations we have no concernment.

IV. Whereas, therefore, there is a power and authority for its rule unto edification given and committed by the Lord Christ unto his church, I shall proceed to inquire *how this power is communicated*, what it is, and to whom it is granted; which shall be declared in the ensuing observations:—

1. There was an *extraordinary church-power* committed by the Lord Jesus Christ unto his apostles, who in their own persons were the first and only subject of it. It was *not granted unto the church*, by it to be communicated unto them, according unto any rules prescribed thereunto; for their office, as it was apostolical, was antecedent unto the existence of any gospel church-state, properly so called, neither had any church the least concurrence or influence into their call or mission. Howbeit, when there was a church-state, the churches being called and gathered by their ministry, they were given unto the church, and placed in the church for the exercise of all office with power, unto their edification, according to the rules and laws of their constitution, Acts i. 14, 15, etc., vi. 1–4; 1 Cor. iii. 22, xii. 28; Eph. iv. 11–15.

2. This power is *ceased in the church*. It is so, not by virtue of any law or constitution of Christ, but by a cessation of those actings whence it did flow and whereon it did depend. For unto this apostolical office and power there were required,—(1.) An immediate *personal call* from Christ himself; (2.) A *commission equally extensive unto all nations*, for their conversion, and *unto all churches*

equally, for their edification; (3.) An *authority in all churches*, comprehensive of all that power which is, in the ordinary constitution of them, distributed among many; (4.) A *collation of extraordinary gifts*, as of infallibility in teaching, of working miracles, speaking with tongues, and the like. Whereas, therefore, all these things do cease, and the Lord Christ doth not act in the same manner towards any, this office and power doth absolutely cease. For any to pretend themselves to be successors unto these apostles, as some with a strange confidence and impertinency have done, is to plead that they are personally and immediately called by Christ unto their office, that they have authority with respect unto all nations and all churches, and are endued with a spirit of infallibility and a power of working miracles; whereof outward pomp and ostentation are no sufficient evidences: and certainly when some of them consider one another, and talk of being the apostles' successors, it is but "Aruspex aruspicem."[1]

3. Least of all, in the ordinary state of the church, and the continuation thereof, hath the Lord Christ appointed a *vicar*, or rather, as is pretended, a successor, with a plenitude of all church-power, to be by him parcelled out unto others. This is that which hath overthrown all church rule and order, introducing Luciferian pride and antichristian tyranny in their room. And whereas the only way of Christ's acting his authority over the churches, and of communicating authority unto them, to be acted by them in his name, is by his word and Spirit, which he hath given to continue in his church unto that end unto the consummation of all things, the pope of Rome placing himself in his stead for these ends, doth thereby "sit in the temple of God, and show himself to be God." But this is sufficiently confuted among all sober Christians; and those who embrace it may be left to contend with the Mohammedans, who affirm that Jesus left John the Baptist to be his successor, as Ali succeeded unto Mohammed.

4. All those by whom the ordinary rule of the church is to be exercised unto its edification are, as unto their office and power, *given unto the church*, set or placed in it, not as "lords of their faith, but as helpers of their joy," 1 Cor. ii. 3, iii. 21–23; 2 Cor. i. 24; Eph. iv. 11–15; 1 Pet. v. 1, 2: for the church is the spouse of Christ, the Lamb's wife, and, by virtue of that relation, the enfeoffment into this power is her due and dowry. All particular persons are but her servants for Christ's sake; for though some of them be stewards, and set over all their fellow-servants, yet he hath not given them the trust of power to rule his spouse at their own will, and to grant what they please unto her.

[1] An allusion to a saying of Cicero respecting soothsayers: "Mirabile videtur quòd non rideat aruspex cùm aruspicem viderit."—De Nat. Deor. lib. i. cap. xxvi.; and De Divina. lib. ii. cap. xxiv.—Ed.

5. But as this *whole church-power* is committed unto the whole church by Christ, so all that are called unto the peculiar exercise of any part of it, by virtue of office-authority, do receive that authority from him by the only way of the communication of it,—namely, by his word and Spirit, through the ministry of the church; whereof we shall treat afterward.

V. These things being thus premised in general concerning church-power, we must treat yet particularly of the communication of it from Christ, and of its distribution as unto its residence in the church:—

1. Every *individual believer* hath *power* or right given unto him, upon his believing, to become a son of God, John i. 12. Hereby, as such, he hath a right and title radically and originally unto, with an interest in, all church-privileges, to be actually possessed and used according to the rules by him prescribed; for he that is a son of God hath a right unto all the privileges and advantages of the family of God, as well as he is obliged unto all the duties of it. Herein lies the foundation of all right unto church-power; for both it and all that belongs unto it are a part of the purchased inheritance, whereunto right is granted by adoption. Wherefore the first, original grant of all church power and privileges is made unto believers as such. Theirs it is, with these two limitations:—(1.) That as such only they cannot exercise any church-power but upon their due observation of all rules and duties given unto this end; such are *joint confession and confederation.* (2.) That each individual do actually participate therein, according to the especial rules of the church, which peculiarly respects *women* that do believe.

2. Wherever there are "two or three" of these believers (the smallest number), *right or power* is granted unto them actually to meet together in the name of Christ for their mutual edification; whereunto he hath promised his presence among them, Matt. xviii. 19, 20. To meet and to do any thing in the name of Christ, as to exhort, instruct, and admonish one another, or to pray together, as verse 19, there is an especial right or power required thereunto. This is granted by Jesus Christ unto the least number of consenting believers. And this is a second preparation unto the communication of church-power. Unto the former faith only is required; unto this, profession, with mutual consent unto and agreement in the evangelical duties mentioned, are to be added.

3. Where the *number* of believers is increased so as that they are sufficient, as unto their number, to observe and perform all church-duties in the way and manner prescribed for their performance, they have right and power granted unto them to make a *joint solemn confession of their faith,* especially as unto the person of Christ and his mediation, Matt. xvi. 16–18; as also to give up themselves unto him and to one another, in a holy agreement or confederation to do

and observe all things whatever that he hath commanded. Hereon, by virtue of his laws in his institutions and commands, he gives them power to do all things in their order which he grants unto his church, and instates them in all the rights and privileges thereof. These believers, I say, thus congregated into a church-state, have immediately, by virtue thereof, power to take care that all things be done among them as by the Lord Christ they are commanded to be done in and by his church.

This, therefore, is the church *essential* and *homogeneal*, unto which the Lord Christ hath granted all that church-power which we inquire after, made it the seat of all ordinances of his worship, and the tabernacle wherein he will dwell; nor, since the ceasing of extraordinary officers, is there any other way possible for the congregating of any church than what doth virtually include the things we have mentioned.

4. But yet this church-state is not complete, nor are the ends of its institution attainable in this state, for the Lord Christ hath appointed such things in and unto it which in this state it cannot observe; for he hath given authority unto his church, to be exercised both in its rule and in the administration of his solemn ordinances of worship. The things before mentioned are all of them acts of right and power, but not of authority.

5. Wherefore the Lord Christ hath ordained *offices*, and appointed officers to be established in the church, Eph. iv. 11–15. Unto these is all church authority granted; for all authority is an act of office-power, which is that which gives unto what is performed by the officers of the church the formal nature of authority.

6. Therefore unto the church, in the state before described, right and power is granted by Christ to *call*, *choose*, *appoint*, and *set apart*, *persons* made meet for the work of the offices appointed by him, in the ways and by the means appointed by him. Nor is there any other way whereby ordinary officers may be fixed in the church, as we have proved before, and shall farther confirm afterward.

That which hereon we must inquire into is, How, or by what means, or by what acts of his sovereign power, the Lord Christ doth communicate *office-power*, and therewith the office itself, unto any persons, whereon their authority is directly from him; and what are the acts or duties of the church in the collation of this authority.

The *acts* of Christ herein may be reduced unto these heads:—

1. He hath instituted and appointed the offices themselves, and made a *grant* of them unto the church, for its edification; as also, he hath determined and limited the powers and duties of the officers. It is not in the power of any, or of all the churches in the world, to appoint any office or officer in the church that Christ hath not appointed; and where there are any such, they can have no church-authority,

properly so called, for that entirely ariseth from, and is resolved into, the institution of the office by Christ himself. And hence, in the first place, all the authority of officers in the church proceeds from the authority of Christ in the institution of the office itself; for that which gives being unto any thing gives it also its essential properties.

2. By virtue of his relation unto the church as its head, of his kingly power over it and care of it, whereon the continuation and edification of the church in this world do depend, wherever he hath a church called, he furnisheth some persons with such gifts, abilities, and endowments as are necessary to the discharge of such offices, in the powers, works, and duties of them; for it is most unquestionably evident, both in the nature of the thing itself and in his institution, that there are some especial abilities and qualifications required to the discharge of every church-office. Wherefore, where the Lord Christ doth not communicate of these abilities in such a measure as by virtue of them church-order may be observed, church-power exercised, and all church-ordinances administered according to his mind, unto the edification of the church, it is no more in the power of men to constitute officers than to erect and create an office in the church, Eph. iv. 11–15; 1 Cor. xii. 4–10, etc.; Rom. xii. 6–8.

This collation of spiritual gifts and abilities for office by Jesus Christ unto any doth not immediately constitute all those, or any of them, officers in the church, on whom they are collated, without the observation of that method and order which he hath appointed in the church for the communication of office-power; yet is it so pre-requisite thereunto, that no person not made partaker of them in the measure before mentioned can, by virtue of any outward rite, order, or power, be really vested in the ministry.

3. This communication of office-power on the part of Christ consists in his institution and appointment of the *way and means* whereby persons gifted and qualified by himself ought to be actually admitted into their offices, so as to administer the powers and perform the duties of them; for the way of their call and ordination, whereof we shall speak afterward, is efficacious unto this end of communicating office-power merely from his institution and appointment of it, and what is not so can have no causal influence into the communication of this power For although sundry things belonging hereunto are directed by the light of nature, as it is that where one man is set over others in power and authority, which before he had no natural right unto, it should be by their own consent and choice; and some things are of a moral nature, as that especial prayer be used in and about affairs that need especial divine assistance and favour; and there may be some circumstances of outward actions herein not to be determined but by the rule of reason on the present posture of occasions,—yet nothing hath any causal influence into the

communication of office-power but what is of the institution and appointment of Christ. By virtue hereof, all that are called unto this office do derive all their power and authority from him alone.

4. He hath hereon given *commands* unto the whole church to *submit themselves* unto the authority of these officers in the discharge of their office, who are so appointed, so prepared or qualified, so called by himself, and to obey them in all things, according unto the limitations which himself also hath given unto the power and authority of such officers; for they who are called unto rule and authority in the church by virtue of their office are not thereon admitted unto an unlimited power, to be exercised at their pleasure in a lordly or despotical manner, but their power is stated, bounded, limited, and confined, as to the objects of it, its acts, its manner of administration, its ends, and as unto all things wherein it is concerned. The swelling over these banks by ambition, the breaking up of these bounds by pride and love of domination, by the introduction of a power over the persons of men in their outward concerns, exercised in a legal, coercive, lordly manner, are sufficient to make a forfeiture of all church-power in them who are guilty of them. But after that some men saw it fit to transgress the bounds of power and authority prescribed and limited unto them by the Lord Christ,—which was really exclusive of lordship, dominion, and all elation above their brethren, leaving them servants to the church for Christ's sake,—they began to prescribe bounds unto themselves, such as were suited unto their interest, which they called rules or canons, and never left enlarging them at their pleasure until they instated the most absolute tyranny in and over the church that ever was in the world.

By these ways and means doth the Lord Christ communicate office-power unto them that are called thereunto; whereon they become not the officers or ministers of men, no, not of the church, as unto the actings and exercise of their authority, but only as the good and edification of the church is the end of it, but the officers and ministers of Christ himself.

It is hence evident, that, in the communication of church-power in office unto any persons called thereunto, the work and duty of the church consists formally in acts of obedience unto the commands of Christ. Hence it doth not give unto such officers a power or authority that was formally and actually in the body of the community by virtue of any grant or law of Christ, so as that they should receive and act the power of the church by virtue of a delegation from them; but only they design, choose, and set apart the individual persons, who thereon are intrusted with office-power by Christ himself, according as was before declared. This is the power and right given unto the church, essentially considered, with respect unto their officers,—namely, to design, call, choose, and set apart, the per-

sons, by the ways of Christ's appointment, unto those offices whereunto, by his laws, he hath annexed church power and authority.

We need not, therefore, trouble ourselves with the disputes about the first subject of church-power, or any part of it; for it is a certain rule, that, *in the performance of all duties which the Lord Christ requires, either of the whole church or of any in the church, especially of the officers, they are the first subject of the power needful unto such duties who are immediately called unto them.* Hereby all things come to be done in the name and authority of Christ; for the power of the church is nothing but a right to perform church-duties in obedience unto the commands of Christ and according unto his mind. Wherefore all church-power is originally given unto the church essentially considered, which hath a double exercise;—first, in the call or choosing of officers; secondly, in their voluntary acting with them and under them in all duties of rule. 1. All authority in the church is committed by Christ unto the officers or rulers of it, as unto all acts and duties whereunto office-power is required; and, 2. Every individual person hath the liberty of his own judgment as unto his own consent or dissent in what he is himself concerned.

That this power, under the name of "the keys of the kingdom of heaven," was originally granted unto the whole professing church of believers, and that it is utterly impossible it should reside in any other, who is subject unto death, or if so, be renewed upon any occasional intermission, is so fully proved by all Protestant writers against the Papists that it needs not on this occasion be again insisted on.

VI. These things have been spoken concerning the polity of the church in general, as it is taken *objectively* for the constitution of its state and the laws of its rule. We are in the next place to consider it *subjectively*, as it is *a power or faculty of the minds of men unto whom the rule of the church is committed;* and in this sense it is the wisdom or understanding of the officers of the church to exercise the government in it appointed by Jesus Christ, or to rule it according to his laws and constitutions. Or,

This wisdom is a spiritual gift, 1 Cor. xii. 8, whereby the officers of the church are enabled to make a due application of all the rules and laws of Christ, unto the edification of the church and all the members of it.

Unto the attaining of this wisdom are required,—1. *Fervent prayer* for it, James i. 5. 2. *Diligent study* of the Scripture, to find out and understand the rules given by Christ unto this purpose, Ezra vii. 10; 2 Tim. ii. 1, 15. 3. *Humble waiting on God* for the revelation of all that it is to be exercised about, Ezek. xliii. 11. 4. A *conscientious exercise* of the skill which they have received; talents traded with duly will increase. 5. A continual *sense of the account*

which is to be given of the discharge of this great trust, being called to rule in the house of God, Heb. xiii. 17.

How much this wisdom hath been neglected in church-government, yea, how much it is despised in the world, is evident unto all. It is skill in the canon law, in the proceedings of vexatious courts, with the learning, subtilty, and arts, which are required thereunto, that is looked on as the only skill to be exercised in the government of the church. Without this a man is esteemed no way meet to be employed in any part of the church-government; and according as any do arrive unto a dexterity in this polity, they are esteemed eminently useful. But these things belong not at all unto the government of the church appointed by Christ; nor can any sober man think in his conscience that so they do. What is the use of this art and trade as unto political ends we inquire not. Nor is the true wisdom required unto this end, with the means of attaining of it, more despised, more neglected, by any sort of men in the world, than by those whose pretences unto ecclesiastical rule and authority would make it most necessary unto them.

Two things follow on the supposition laid down:—

1. That the wisdom intended is not promised unto *all the members of the church in general*, nor are they required to seek for it by the ways and means of attaining it before laid down, but respect is had herein only unto the officers of the church. Hereon dependeth the equity of the obedience of the people unto their rulers; for wisdom for rule is peculiarly granted unto them, and their duty it is to seek after it in a peculiar manner. Wherefore those who, on every occasion, are ready to advance their own wisdom and understanding in the affairs and proceedings of the church against the wisdom of the officers of it are proud and disorderly.

I speak not this to give any countenance unto the outcries of some, that all sorts of men will suppose themselves wiser than their rulers, and to know what belongs unto the government of the church better than they; whereas the government which they exercise belongs not at all unto the rule of the church, determined and limited in the Scripture, as the meanest Christian can easily discern; nor is it pretended by themselves so to do: for they say that the Lord Christ hath prescribed nothing herein, but left it unto the will and wisdom of the church to order all things as they see necessary, which church they are. Wherefore, if that will please them, it shall be granted, that in skill for the management of ecclesiastical affairs according to the canon law, with such other rules of the same kind as they have framed, and in the legal proceedings of ecclesiastical courts, as they are called, there are none of the people that are equal unto them or will contend with them.

2. It hence also follows that those *who are called unto rule in the*

church of Christ should diligently endeavour the attaining of and increasing in this wisdom, giving evidence thereof on all occasions, that the church may safely acquiesce in their rule. But hereunto so many things do belong as cannot in this place be meetly treated of; somewhat that appertains to them shall afterward be considered.

CHAPTER IV.

The officers of the church.

THE church is considered either as it is essential, with respect unto its nature and being, or as it is organical, with respect unto its order.

The constituent causes and parts of the church, as unto its essence and being, are its institution, matter, and form, whereof we have treated.

Its order as it is organical is founded in that communication of power unto it from Christ which was insisted on in the foregoing chapter.

The organizing of a church is the placing or implanting in it those officers which the Lord Jesus Christ hath appointed to act and exercise his authority therein. For the rule and government of the church are the exertion of the authority of Christ in the hands of them unto whom it is committed, that is, the officers of it; not that all officers are called to rule, but that none are called to rule that are not so.

The officers of the church in general are of two sorts, "bishops and deacons," Phil. i. 1; and their work is distributed into "prophecy and ministry," Rom. xii. 6, 7.

The bishops or elders are of two sorts:—1. Such as have authority to *teach* and administer the sacraments, which is commonly called the *power of order;* and also of *ruling*, which is called a power of jurisdiction, corruptly: and, 2. Some have only *power for rule;* of which sort there are some in all the churches in the world.

Those of the first sort are distinguished into *pastors* and *teachers.*

The distinction between the elders themselves is not like that between elders and deacons, which is as unto the whole kind or nature of the office, but only with respect unto work and order, whereof we shall treat distinctly.

The first sort of officers in the church are bishops or elders, concerning whom there have been mighty contentions in the late ages of the church. The principles we have hitherto proceeded on discharge us from any especial interest or concernment in this controversy; for if there be no church of divine or apostolical constitution, none in

being in the second or third century, but only a particular congregation, the foundation of that contest, which is about pre-eminence and power in the same person over many churches, falls to the ground.

Indeed, strife about power, superiority, and jurisdiction over one another, amongst those who pretend to be ministers of the gospel, is full of scandal. It started early in the church, was extinguished by the Lord Christ in his apostles, rebuked by the apostles in all others, Matt. xviii. 1–4, xxiii. 8–11; Luke xxii. 24–26; 1 Pet. v. 1–5; 2 John 9, 10; yet, through the pride, ambition, and avarice of men, it hath grown to be the stain and shame of the church in most ages: for neither the sense of the authority of Christ forbidding such ambitious designings, nor the proposal of his own example in this particular case, nor the experience of their own insufficiency for the least part of the work of the gospel ministry, have been able to restrain the minds of men from coveting after and contending for a prerogative in church-power over others; for though this ambition, and all the fruits or rewards of it, are laid under a severe interdict by our Lord Jesus Christ, yet when men (like Achan) saw "the wedge of gold and the goodly Babylonish garment" that they thought to be in power, domination, and wealth, they coveted them and took them, to the great disturbance of the church of God.

If men would but a little seriously consider what there is in that care of souls, even of all them over whom they pretend church power, rule, or jurisdiction, and what it is to give an account concerning them before the judgment-seat of Christ, it may be it would abate of their earnestness in contending for the enlargement of their cures.

The claim of episcopacy, as consisting in a rank of persons distinct from the office of presbyters, is managed with great variety. It is not agreed whether they are distinct in order above them, or only as unto a certain degree among them of the same order. It is not determined what doth constitute that pretended distinct order, nor wherein that degree of pre-eminence in the same order doth consist, nor what basis it stands upon. It is not agreed whether this order of bishops hath any church-power appropriated unto it, so as to be acted singly by themselves alone, without the concurrence of the presbyters, or how far that concurrence is necessary in all acts of church order or power. There are no bounds or limits of the dioceses which they claim the rule in and over, as churches whereunto they are peculiarly related, derived either from divine institution or tradition, or general rules of reason respecting both or either of them, or from the consideration of gifts and abilities, or any thing else wherein church-order or edification is concerned. Those who plead for diocesan episcopacy will not proceed any farther but only that there is, and ought to be, a superiority in bishops over presbyters in order or degree; but whether this must be over pres-

byters in one church only, or in many distinct churches,—whether it must be such as not only hinders them utterly from the discharge of any of the duties of the pastoral office towards the most of them whom they esteem their flocks, and necessitates them unto a rule by unscriptural church officers, laws, and power,—they suppose doth not belong unto their cause, whereas, indeed, the weight and moment of it doth lie in and depend on these things. Innumerable other uncertainties, differences, and variances there are about this singular episcopacy, which we are not at present concerned to inquire into, nor shall I insist on any of those which have been already mentioned.

But yet, because it is necessary unto the clearing of the evangelical pastoral office, which is now under consideration, unto what hath been pleaded before about the non-institution of any churches beyond particular congregations, which is utterly exclusive of all pretences of the present episcopacy, I shall briefly, as in a diversion, add the arguments which undeniably prove that in the whole New Testament bishops and presbyters, or elders, are every way the same persons, in the same office, have the same function, without distinction in order or degree; which also, as unto the Scripture, the most learned advocates of prelacy begin to grant:—

1. The apostle describing what ought to be the qualifications of *presbyters* or elders, gives this reason of it, Because a *bishop* must be so: Tit. i. 5–9, "Ordain elders in every city, if any be blameless," etc., "for a bishop must be blameless." He that would prove of what sort a presbyter, that is to be ordained so, ought to be, [and] gives this reason for it, that "such a bishop ought to be," intends the same person and office by presbyter and bishop, or there is no congruity of speech or consequence of reason in what he asserts. To suppose that the apostle doth not intend the same persons and the same office by "presbyters" and "bishops," in the same place, is to destroy his argument and render the context of his discourse unintelligible. He that will say, "If you make a justice of peace or a constable, he must be magnanimous, liberal, full of clemency and courage, for so a king ought to be," will not be thought to argue very wisely; yet such is the argument here, if by "elders" and "bishops" distinct orders and offices are intended.

2. There were *many bishops* in one city, in one particular church: Phil. i. 1, "To all the saints in Christ Jesus which are at Philippi, with the bishops and deacons." That the church then at Philippi was one particular church or congregation was proved before. But to have many bishops in the same church, whereas the nature of the episcopacy pleaded for consists in the superiority of one over the presbyters of many churches, is absolutely inconsistent. Such bishops whereof there may be many in the same church, of the same order, equal in power and dignity with respect unto office, will easily be granted;

but then they are presbyters as well as bishops. There will, I fear, be no end of this contest, because of the prejudices and interests of some; but that the identity of bishops and presbyters should be more plainly expressed can neither be expected nor desired.

3. The apostle, being at Miletus, sent to Ephesus for the elders of the church to come unto him; that is, the elders of the church at Ephesus, as hath been elsewhere undeniably demonstrated, Acts xx. 17, 18: unto these elders he says, "Take heed unto yourselves, and to all the flock over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you bishops, to feed the church of God," verse 28. If "elders" and "bishops" be not the same persons, having the same office, the same function, and the same duties, and the same names, it is impossible, so far as I understand, how it should be expressed: for these *elders* are they whom the Holy Ghost made *bishops*, they were many of them in the same church, their duty it was to attend unto the flock and to feed the church, which comprise all the duties, the whole function of elders and bishops; which must therefore be the same. This plain testimony can no way be evaded by pretences and conjectures, unwritten and uncertain; the only answer unto it is, "It was indeed so then, but it was otherwise afterward;" which some now betake themselves unto. But these elders were either elders only, and not bishops; or bishops only, and not elders; or the same persons were elders and bishops, as is plainly affirmed in the words. The last is that which we plead. If the first be asserted, then was there no bishop then at Ephesus, for these elders had the whole oversight of the flock; if the second, then were there no elders at all, which is no good exposition of those words, that "Paul called unto him the elders of the church."

4. The apostle Peter writes unto the "*elders" of the churches* that they should "feed the flock," ἐπισκοποῦντες, "taking the oversight," or exercising the office and function of bishops over it; and that not as "lords," but as "ensamples" of humility, obedience, and holiness, to the whole flock, 1 Pet. v. 1–3. Those on whom it is incumbent to feed the flock and to superintend it, as those who in the first place are accountable unto Jesus Christ, are bishops, and such as have no other bishop over them, unto whom this charge should be principally committed; but such, according unto this apostle, are the elders of the church: therefore these elders and bishops are the same. And such were the ἡγούμενοι, the guides of the church at Jerusalem, whom the members of it were bound to obey, as those that did watch for and were to give an account of their souls, Heb. xiii. 17.

5. The substance of these and all other instances or testimonies of the same kind is this: Those whose names are the same, equally common and applicable unto them all, whose function is the same, whose qualifications and characters are the same, whose duties, account, and reward are the same, concerning whom there is in no one

place of Scripture the least mention of inequality, disparity, or preference in office among them, they are essentially and every way the same. That thus it is with the elders and bishops in the Scripture cannot modestly be denied.

I do acknowledge, that where a church is greatly increased, so as that there is a necessity of *many elders* in it for its instruction and rule, decency and order do require that one of them do, in the management of all church-affairs, preside, to guide and direct the way and manner thereof: so the presbyters at Alexandria did choose one from among themselves that should have the pre-eminence of a president among them. Whether the person that is so to preside be directed unto by being first converted, or first ordained, or on the account of age, or of gifts and abilities, whether he continue for a season only, and then another be deputed unto the same work, or for his life, are things in themselves indifferent, to be determined according unto the general rules of reason and order, with respect unto the edification of the church.

I shall never oppose this *order*, but rather desire to see it in practice,—namely, that particular churches were of such an extent as necessarily to require *many elders*, both teaching and ruling, for their instruction and government; for the better observation of order and decency in the public assemblies; for the fuller representation of the authority committed by Jesus Christ unto the officers of his church; for the occasional instruction of the members in lesser assemblies, which, as unto some ends, may be stated also; with the due attendance unto all other means of edification, as watching, inspecting, warning, admonishing, exhorting, and the like: and that among these elders one should be chosen by themselves, with the consent of the church, not into a new order, not into a degree of authority above his brethren, but only unto his part of the common work in a peculiar manner, which requires some kind of precedency. Hereby no new officer, no new order of officers, no new degree of power or authority, is constituted in the church; only the work and duty of it is cast into such an order as the very light of nature doth require.

But there is not any intimation in the Scripture of the least imparity or inequality, in order, degree, or authority, among officers of the same sort, whether extraordinary or ordinary. The apostles were all equal; so were the evangelists, so were elders or bishops, and so were deacons also. The Scripture knows no more of an archbishop, such as all diocesan bishops are, nor of an archdeacon, than of an archapostle, or of an archevangelist, or an archprophet. Howbeit it is evident that in all their assemblies they had one who did preside in the manner before described; which seems, among the apostles, to have been the prerogative of Peter.

The brethren also of the church may be so multiplied as that the

constant meeting of them all in one place may not be absolutely best for their edification; howbeit, that on all the solemn occasions of the church whereunto their consent was necessary, they did of old, and ought still, to meet in the same place, for advice, consultation, and consent, was proved before. This is so fully expressed and exemplified in the two great churches of Jerusalem and Antioch, Acts xv., that it cannot be gainsaid. When Paul and Barnabas, sent by the "brethren" or church at Antioch, verses 1–3, were come to Jerusalem, they were received by "the church," as the brethren are called, in distinction from the "apostles and elders," verse 4. So when the apostles and elders assembled to consider of the case proposed unto them, the whole "multitude" of the church, that is, the brethren, assembled with them, verses 6, 12; neither were they mute persons, mere auditors and spectators in the assembly, but they concurred both in the debate and determination of the question, insomuch that they are expressly joined with the apostles and elders in the advice given, verses 22, 23. And when Paul and Barnabas returned unto Antioch, the "multitude," unto whom the letter of the church at Jerusalem was directed, came together about it, verses 23, 30. Unless this be observed, the primitive church-state is overthrown. But I shall return from this digression.

The first officer or elder of the church is the *pastor*. A pastor is the elder that feeds and rules the flock, 1 Pet. v. 2; that is, who is its teacher and its bishop: Ποιμάνατε, ἐπισκοποῦντες, "Feed, taking the oversight."

It is not my present design or work to give a full account of the qualifications required in persons to be called unto this office, nor of their duty and work, with the qualities or virtues to be exercised therein; it would require a large discourse to handle them practically, and it hath been done by others. It were to be wished that what is of this kind expressed in the rule, and which the nature of the office doth indispensably require, were more exemplified in practice than it is. But some things relating unto this officer and his office, that are needful to be well stated, I shall treat concerning.

The name of a *pastor* or *shepherd* is metaphorical. It is a denomination suited unto his work, denoting the same office and person with a bishop or elder, spoken of absolutely, without limitation unto either teaching or ruling; and it seems to be used or applied unto this office because it is more comprehensive of and instructive in all the duties that belong unto it than any other name whatever, nay, than all of them put together. The grounds and reasons of this metaphor, or whence the church is called a flock, and whence God termeth himself the shepherd of the flock; whence the sheep of this flock are committed unto Christ, whereon he becomes "the good shepherd that lays down his life for the sheep," and the prince of

shepherds; what is the interest of men in a participation of this office, and what their duty thereon,—are things well worth the consideration of them who are called unto it. "Hirelings," yea, "wolves" and "dumb dogs," do in many places take on themselves to be shepherds of the flock, by whom it is devoured and destroyed, Acts xx. 18, 19, etc.; 1 Pet. v. 2–4; Cant. i. 7; Jer. xiii. 17, xxiii. 2; Ezek. xxxiv. 3; Gen. xlix. 24; Ps. xxiii. 1, lxxx. 1; John x. 11, 14–16; Heb. xiii. 20; 1 Pet. ii. 25, v. 4.

Whereas, therefore, this name or appellation is taken from and includes in it *love, care, tenderness, watchfulness,* in all the duties of going before, preserving, feeding, defending the flock, the sheep and the lambs, the strong, the weak, and the diseased, with accountableness, as servants, unto the chief Shepherd, it was generally disused in the church, and those of bishops or overseers, guides, presidents, elders, which seem to include more of honour and authority, were retained in common use; though one of them at last, namely, that of bishops, with some elating compositions and adjuncts of power, obtained the pre-eminence. Out of the corruption of these compositions and additions, in archbishops, metropolitans, patriarchs, and the like, brake forth the cockatrice of the church,—that is, the pope.

But this name is by the Holy Ghost appropriated unto the principal ministers of Christ in his church, Eph. iv. 11; and under that name they were promised unto the church of old, Jer. iii. 15. And the work of these pastors is to feed the flock committed to their charge, as it is constantly required of them, Acts xx. 28; 1 Pet. v. 2.

Of pastoral feeding there are two parts:—1. *Teaching* or instruction; 2. *Rule* or discipline. Unto these two heads may all the acts and duties of a shepherd toward his flock be reduced; and both are intended in the term of "feeding," 1 Chron. xi. 2, xvii. 6; Jer. xxiii. 2; Mic. v. 4, vii. 14; Zech. xi. 7; Acts xx. 28; John xxi. 15–17; 1 Pet. v. 2, etc. Wherefore he who is the pastor is the bishop, the elder, the teacher of the church.

These works of teaching and ruling may be distinct in several officers, namely, teachers and rulers; but to divide them in the same office of pastors, that some pastors should feed by teaching only, but have no right to rule by virtue of their office, and some should attend in exercise unto rule only, not esteeming themselves obliged to labour continually in feeding the flock, is almost to overthrow this office of Christ's designation, and to set up two in the room of it, of men's own projection.

Of the call of men unto this office so many things have been spoken and written by others at large that I shall only insist, and that very briefly, on some things which are either of the most important consideration or have been omitted by others; as,—

1. Unto the *call* of any person unto this office of a pastor in the church there are certain *qualifications* previously required in him, disposing and making him fit for that office. The outward call is an act of the church, as we shall show immediately; but therein is required an obediential acting of him also who is called. Neither of these can be regular, neither can the church act according to rule and order, nor the person called act in such a due obedience, unless there are in him some previous indications of the mind of God, designing the person to be called by such qualifications as may render him meet and able for the discharge of his office and work; for ordinary vocation is not a collation of gracious spiritual abilities, suiting and making men meet for the pastoral office, but it is the communication of right and power for the regular use and exercise of gifts and abilities received antecedently unto that call, unto the edification of the church, wherein the office itself doth consist. And if we would know what these qualifications and endowments are, for the substance of them, we may learn them in their great example and pattern, our Lord Jesus Christ himself. Our Lord Jesus Christ, being the good Shepherd, whose the sheep are, the Shepherd and Bishop of our souls, the chief Shepherd, did design, in the undertaking and exercise of his pastoral office, to give a type and example unto all those who are to be called unto the same office under him; and if there be not a conformity unto him herein, no man can assure his own conscience or the church of God that he is or can be lawfully called unto this office.

The qualifications of Christ unto, and the gracious qualities of his mind and soul in, the discharge of his pastoral office, may be referred unto five heads:—

(1.) That *furniture with spiritual gifts and abilities* by the communication of the Holy Ghost unto him in an unmeasurable fulness, whereby he was fitted for the discharge of his office. This is expressed with respect unto his undertaking of it, Isa. xi. 2, 3, lxi. 1–3; Luke iv. 14. Herein was he "anointed with the oil of gladness above his fellows," Heb. i. 9. But this unction of the Spirit is, in a certain measure, required in all who are called, or to be called, unto the pastoral office, Eph. iv. 7. That there are spiritual powers, gifts, and abilities, required unto the gospel ministry, I have at large declared in another treatise, as also what they are; and where there are none of those spiritual abilities which are necessary unto the edification of the church in the administration of gospel ordinances, as in prayer, preaching, and the like, no outward call or order can constitute any man an evangelical pastor. As unto particular persons, I will not contend as unto an absolute nullity in the office by reason of their deficiency in spiritual gifts, unless it be gross, and such as renders them utterly useless unto the edification of the church. I only say,

that no man can in an orderly way and manner be called or set apart unto this office in whom there are not some indications of God's designation of him thereunto by his furniture with spiritual gifts, of knowledge, wisdom, understanding, and utterance for prayer and preaching, with other ministerial duties, in some competent measure.

(2.) *Compassion and love* to the flock were gloriously eminent in this "great Shepherd of the sheep." After other evidences hereof, he gave them that signal confirmation in laying down his life for them. This testimony of his love he insists upon himself, John x. And herein also his example ought to lie continually before the eyes of them who are called unto the pastoral office. Their entrance should be accompanied with love to the souls of men; and if the discharge of their office be not animated with love unto their flocks, wolves, or hirelings, or thieves, they may be, but shepherds they are not. Neither is the glory of the gospel ministry more lost or defaced in any thing, or by any means, than by the evidence that is given among the most of an inconformity unto Jesus Christ in their love unto the flock. Alas! it is scarce once thought of amongst the most of them who, in various degrees, take upon them the pastoral office. Where are the fruits of it? what evidence is given of it in any kind? It is well if some, instead of laying down their lives for them, do not by innumerable ways destroy their souls.

(3.) There is and was in this great Shepherd a *continual watchfulness over the whole flock*, to keep it, to preserve it, to feed, to lead, and cherish it, to purify and cleanse it, until it be presented unspotted unto God. He doth never slumber nor sleep; he watereth his vineyard every moment; he keeps it night and day, that none may hurt it; he loseth nothing of what is committed to him. See Isa. xl. 11. I speak not distinctly of previous qualifications unto an outward call only, but with a mixture of those qualities and duties which are required in the discharge of this office; and herein also is the Lord Christ to be our example. And hereunto do belong,—[1.] *Constant prayer* for the flock; [2.] *Diligence* in the dispensation of the word with wisdom, as unto times, seasons, the state of the flock in general, their light, knowledge, ways, walking, ignorance, temptations, trials, defections, weaknesses of all sorts, growth, and decays, etc.; [3.] Personal admonition, exhortation, consolation, instruction, as their particular cases do require; [4.] All with a design to keep them from evil, and to present them without blame before Christ Jesus at the great day. But these and things of the like nature presenting themselves with some earnestness unto my mind, I shall at present discharge myself of the thoughts of them, hoping for a more convenient place and season to give them a larger treatment; and somewhat yet further shall be spoken of them in the next chapter.

(4.) *Zeal for the glory of God,* in his whole ministry and in all the ends of it, had its continual residence in the holy soul of the great Shepherd. Hence it is declared in an expression intimating that it was *inexpressible:* "The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up," John ii. 17. This also must accompany the discharge of the pastoral office, or it will find no acceptance with him; and the want of it is one of those things which hath filled the world with a dead, faithless, fruitless ministry.

(5.) As he was absolutely in himself "holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners," so a conformity unto him in these things, and that in *some degree of eminency* above others, is required in them who are called unto this office.

2. Again; none can or may *take this office upon him,* or discharge the duties of it, which are peculiarly its own, with authority, but he who is called and set apart thereunto according to the mind of Jesus Christ. The continuation of all church order and power, of the regular administration of all sacred ordinances, yea, of the very being of the church as it is organical, depends on this assertion. Some deny the continuation of the office itself, and of those duties which are peculiar unto it, as the administration of the sacraments; some judge that persons neither called nor set apart unto this office may discharge all the duties and the whole work of it; some, that a temporary delegation of power unto any by the church is all the warranty necessary for the undertaking and discharge of this office. Many have been the contests about these things, occasioned by the ignorance and disorderly affections of some persons. I shall briefly represent the truth herein, with the grounds of it, and proceed to the consideration of the call itself, which is so necessary:—

(1.) Christ himself, in his own person and by his own authority, was *the author of this office.* He gave it, appointed it, erected it in the church, by virtue of his sovereign power and authority, Eph. iv. 11, 12; 1 Cor. xii. 28. As he gave, appointed, ordained, an extraordinary office of apostleship, so he ordained, appointed, and gave, the ordinary office of pastorship or teaching. They have both the same divine original.

(2.) He appointed this *office for continuance,* or to abide in the church unto the consummation of all things, Eph. iv. 13, Matt. xxviii. 19, 20; and therefore he took order by his apostles that, for the continuation of this office, pastors, elders, or bishops, should be called and ordained unto the care and discharge of it in all churches; which was done by them accordingly, Acts xiv. 22, 23, xx. 28, 1 Tim. iii. 1–7, Tit. i. 5–9: wherein he gave rule unto all churches unto the end of the world, and prescribed them their duty.

(3.) On this office and the discharge of it he hath laid the whole weight of *the order, rule, and edification of his church,* in his name

and by virtue of his authority, Acts xx. 28; Col. iv. 17; 1 Tim. iii. 15; 1 Pet. v. 1–4; Rev. ii. 1–5, etc. Hereon a double necessity of the continuation of this office doth depend,—first, That which ariseth from the *precept* or command of it, which made it necessary to the church on the account of the obedience which it owes to Christ; and, secondly, From its being the principal *ordinary means* of all the ends of Christ in and towards his church. Wherefore, although he can himself feed his church in the wilderness, when it is deprived of all outward instituted means of edification, yet where this office fails through its neglect, there is nothing but disorder, confusion, and destruction, will ensue thereon; no promise of feeding or edification.

(4.) The Lord Christ hath given *commands* unto the church for obedience unto those who enjoy and exercise this office among them. Now, all these commands are needless and superfluous, nor can any obedience be yielded unto the Lord Christ in their observance, unless there be a continuation of this office. And the church loseth as much in grace and privilege as it loseth in commands; for in obedience unto the commands of Christ doth grace in its exercise consist, 1 Tim. v. 17; Heb. xiii. 7, 17.

(5.) This office is accompanied with *power* and *authority*, which none can take or assume to themselves. All power and authority, whether in things spiritual or temporal, which is not either founded in the law of nature or collated by divine ordination, is usurpation and tyranny; no man can of himself take either sword. To invade an office which includes power and authority over others is to disturb all right, natural, divine, and civil. That such an authority is included in this office is evident,—[1.] From the *names* ascribed unto them in whom it is vested; as pastors, bishops, elders, rulers, all of them requiring it. [2.] From the *work* prescribed unto them, which is feeding by rule and teaching. [3.] From the execution of church-power in *discipline*, or the exercise of the keys of the kingdom of heaven committed unto them. [4.] From the commands given for *obedience* unto them, which respect authority. [5.] From their appointment to be *the means and instruments* of exerting the authority of Christ in the church, which can be done no other way.

(6.) Christ hath appointed *a standing rule of the calling of men unto this office*, as we shall see immediately; but if men may enter upon it and discharge it without any such call, that rule, with the way of the call prescribed, is altogether in vain; and there can be no greater affront unto the authority of Christ in his church than to act in it in neglect of or in opposition unto the rule that he hath appointed for the exercise of power in it.

(7.) There is *an accountable trust* committed unto those who undertake this office. The whole flock, the ministry itself, the truths

of the gospel, as to the preservation of them, all are committed to them, Col. iv. 17; 1 Tim. vi. 20; 2 Tim. ii. 2, 16, 23; Acts xx. 28; 1 Pet. v. 1–4; Heb. xiii. 17, "They that must give account." Nothing can be more wicked or foolish than for a man to intrude himself into a trust which is not committed unto him. They are branded as profligately wicked who attempt any such thing among men, which cannot be done without falsification; and what shall he be esteemed who intrudes himself into the highest trust that any creature is capable of in the name of Christ, and takes upon him to give an account of its discharge at the last day, without any divine call or warranty?

(8.) There are, unto the discharge of this office, *especial promises* granted and annexed of present assistances and future eternal rewards, Matt. xxviii. 19, 20; 1 Pet. v. 4. Either these promises belong unto them who take this office on themselves without any call, or they do not. If they do not, then have they neither any especial assistance in their work nor can expect any reward of their labours. If it be said they have an interest in them, then the worst of men may obtain the benefit of divine promises without any divine designation.

(9.) The general force of *the rule,* Heb. v. 4, includes a prohibition of undertaking any sacred office without a divine call; and so the instances of such prohibitions under the old testament, as unto the duties annexed unto an office, as in the case of Uzziah invading the priesthood, 2 Chron. xxvi. 16–21; or of taking a ministerial office without call or mission, as Jer. xxvii. 9, 10, 14, 15, having respect unto the order of God's institutions, may be pleaded in this case.

(10.) Whoever, therefore, takes upon him the pastoral office without a lawful outward call, *doth take unto himself power and authority* without any divine warranty, which is a foundation of all disorder and confusion; interests himself in an accountable trust no way committed unto him; hath no promise of assistance in or reward for his work, but engageth in that which is destructive of all church-order, and consequently of the very being of the church itself.

(11.) Yet there are *three things* that are to be annexed unto this assertion, by way of limitation; as,—[1.] Many things performed by virtue of *office,* in a way of authority, may be performed by others not called to office, in a way of *charity.* Such are the moral duties of exhorting, admonishing, comforting, instructing, and praying with and for one another. [2.] *Spiritual gifts* may be exercised unto the edification of others without office-power, where order and opportunity do require it. But the constant exercise of spiritual gifts in preaching, with a refusal of undertaking a ministerial office, or without design so to do upon a lawful call, cannot be approved. [3.] The *rules* proposed concern only ordinary cases, and the ordinary state

of the church; extraordinary cases are accompanied with a warranty in themselves for extraordinary actings and duties.

(12.) The *call* of persons unto the pastoral office is an act and duty of the church. It is not an act of the political magistrate, not of the pope, not of any single prelate, but of the whole church, unto whom the Lord Christ hath committed the keys of the kingdom of heaven. And, indeed, although there be great differences about the nature and manner of the call of men unto this office, yet none who understands aught of these things can deny but that it is an act and duty of the church, which the church alone is empowered by Christ to put forth and exert. But this will more fully appear in the consideration of the nature and manner of this call of men unto the pastoral office, and the actings of the church therein.

The call of persons unto the pastoral office in the church consists of two parts,—first, *Election;* secondly, *Ordination,* as it is commonly called, or sacred separation by fasting and prayer. As unto the former, four things must be inquired into:—I. What is *previous* unto it, or preparatory for it; II. *Wherein* it doth consist; III. Its *necessity,* or the demonstration of its truth and institution; IV. What influence it hath into *the communication of pastoral office-power* unto a pastor so chosen.

I. That which is previous unto it is the *meetness* of the person for his office and work that is to be chosen. It can never be the duty of the church to call or choose an unmeet, an unqualified, an unprepared person unto this office. No pretended necessity, no outward motives, can enable or warrant it so to do; nor can it by any outward act, whatever the rule or solemnity of it be, communicate ministerial authority unto persons utterly unqualified for and incapable of the discharge of the pastoral office according to the rule of the Scripture. And this has been one great means of debasing the ministry and of almost ruining the church itself, either by the neglect of those who suppose themselves intrusted with the whole power of ordination, or by impositions on them by secular power and patrons of livings, as they are called, with the stated regulation of their proceedings herein by a defective law, whence there hath not been a due regard unto the antecedent preparatory qualifications of those who are called unto the ministry.

Two ways is the meetness of any one made known and to be judged of:—1. By *an evidence* given of the qualifications in him before mentioned. The church is not to call or choose any one to office who is not known unto them, of whose frame of spirit and walking they have not had some experience; not a novice, or one lately come unto them. He must be one who by his ways and walking hath obtained a good report, even among them that are without, so far as he is known, unless they be enemies or scoffers;

and one that hath in some good measure evidenced his faith, love, and obedience unto Jesus Christ in the church. This is the chief trust that the Lord Christ hath committed unto his churches; and if they are negligent herein, or if at all adventures they will impose an officer in his house upon him without satisfaction of his meetness upon due inquiry, it is a great dishonour unto him and provocation of him. Herein principally are churches made the overseers of their own purity and edification. To deny them an ability of a right judgment herein, or a liberty for the use and exercise of it, is error and tyranny. But that flock which Christ purchased and purified with his own blood is thought by some to be little better than a herd of brute beasts. Where there is a defect of this personal knowledge, from want of opportunity, it may be supplied by testimonies of unquestionable authority. 2. By *a trial of his gifts for edification.* These are those spiritual endowments which the Lord Christ grants and the Holy Spirit works in the minds of men, for this very end that the church may be profited by them, 1 Cor. xii. 7–11. And we must at present take it for granted that every true church of Christ, that is so in the matter and form of it, is able to judge in some competent measure what gifts of men are suited unto their own edification. But yet, in making a judgment hereof, one *directive means* is the advice of other elders and churches; which they are obliged to make use of by virtue of the communion of churches, and for the avoidance of offence in their walk in that communion.

II. As to *the nature of this election*, call, or choice of a person known, tried, and judged meetly qualified for the pastoral office, it is an act of the whole church; that is, of the fraternity with their elders, if they have any; for a pastor may be chosen unto a church which hath other teachers, elders, or officers, already instated in it. In this case their concurrence in the choice intended is necessary, by way of common suffrage, not of authority or office-power; for election is not an act of authority, but of liberty and power, wherein the whole church in the fraternity is equal. If there be no officers stated in the church before, as it was with the churches in the primitive times, on the first ordination of elders among them, this election belongs unto the fraternity.

III. That, therefore, which we have now to prove is this, that it is the mind and will of Jesus Christ that meet persons should be called unto the pastoral office (or any other office in the church) *by the election and choice of the church* itself whereunto they are called, antecedently unto a sacred, solemn separation unto their respective offices; for under the old testament there were three ways whereby men were called unto office in the church:—1. They were so extraordinarily and immediately, by the *nomination and designation of God* himself: so Aaron was called unto the priesthood; and others

afterward, as Samuel, to be prophets. 2. By *a law of carnal generation:* so all the priests of the posterity of Aaron succeeded into the office of the priesthood without any other call. 3. By the *choice of the people,* which was the call of all the ordinary elders and rulers of the church: Deut. i. 13, הָבוּ לָכֶם, "Give to yourselves." It was required of the people that they should in the first place make a judgment on their qualifications for the office whereunto they were called. Men known unto them for wise, understanding, righteous, walking in the fear of God, they were to look out, and then to present them unto Moses, for their separation unto office; which is election. It is true that, Exod. xviii. 25, it is said that Moses chose the elders; but it is frequent in the Scripture that where any thing is done by many, where one is chief, that is ascribed indifferently either to the many or to the chief director. So is it said, "Israel sent messengers," Num. xxi. 21. Moses, speaking of the same thing, says, "I sent messengers," Deut. ii. 26. So, 1 Chron. xix. 19, "They made peace with David and became his servants;" which is, 2 Sam. x. 19, "They made peace with Israel and served them." See also 2 Kings xi. 12, with 2 Chron. xxiii. 11; as also 1 Chron. xvi. 1, with 2 Sam. vi. 17; and the same may be observed in other places. Wherefore the people chose these elders under the conduct and guidance of Moses: which directs us unto the right interpretation of Acts xiv. 23, whereof we shall speak immediately.

The first of these ways was repeated in the foundation of *the evangelical church.* Christ himself was called unto his office by the Father, through the unction of the Spirit, Isa. lxi. 1–3, Heb. v. 5; and he himself called the apostles and evangelists, in whom that call ceased. The second, ordinary way, by the privilege of natural generation of the stock of the priests, was utterly abolished. The third way only remained for the ordinary continuation of the church,—namely, by the choice and election of the church itself, with solemn separation and dedication by officers extraordinary or ordinary.

The first instance of the choice of a church-officer had a mixture in it of the first and last ways, in *the case of Matthias.* As he was able to be a church-officer, he had the choice and consent of the church; as he was to be an apostle or an extraordinary officer, there was an immediate divine disposition of him into his office;—the latter, to give him apostolical authority; the former, to make him a precedent of the future actings of the church in the call of their officers.

I say, this being the *first example* and pattern of the calling of any person unto office in the Christian church-state, wherein there was an interposition of the ordinary actings of men, is established as a rule and precedent, not to be changed, altered, or departed from, in any age of the church whatever. It is so as unto what was of common right and equity, which belonged unto the whole church. And

I cannot but wonder how men durst ever reject and disannul this divine example and rule. It will not avail them to say that it is only a matter of fact, and not a precept or institution, that is recorded; for,—1. It is a *fact* left on record in the holy Scripture for our instruction and direction. 2. It is an *example* of the apostles and the whole church proposed unto us; which, in all things not otherwise determined, hath the force of an institution. 3. If there were no more in it but this, that we have a matter of common right determined and applied by the wisdom of the apostles and the entire church of believers at that time in the world, it were an impiety to depart from it, unless in case of the utmost necessity.

Whereas what is here recorded was in the call of an apostle, it strengthens the argument which hence we plead; for if in the extraordinary call of an apostle it was the mind of Christ that the fraternity or multitude should have the liberty of their suffrage, how much more is it certainly his mind, that in the ordinary call of their own peculiar officers, in whom, under him, the concernment is their own only, this right should be continued unto them!

The order of the proceeding of the church herein is distinctly declared; for,—1. The number of the church at that time,—that is, of the men,—was about an hundred and twenty, Acts i. 15. 2. They were assembled all together in one place, so as that Peter stood up in the midst of them, verse 15. 3. Peter, in the name of the rest of the apostles, declares unto them the necessity of choosing one to be substituted in the room of Judas, verses 16–22. 4. He limits the choice of him unto the especial qualification of being a meet witness of the resurrection of Christ, or unto those who constantly accompanied him with themselves from the baptism of John; that is, from his being baptized by him, whereon he began his public ministry. 5. Among these they were left at their liberty to nominate any two, who were to be left unto the lot for a determination whether of them God designed unto the office. 6. Hereon the whole multitude ἔστησαν δύο, "appointed two;" that is, the ἄνδρες ἀδελφοί, the "men and brethren," unto whom Peter spoke, verse 16, did so. 7. The same persons, to promote the work, "prayed and gave forth their lots," verses 24–26. 8. Συγκατεψηφίσθη Ματθίας,—Matthias was, by the common suffrage of the whole church, reckoned unto the number of the apostles.

I say not that these things were done by the disciples in distinction from Peter and the rest of the apostles, but in conjunction with them. Peter did nothing without them, nor did they any thing without him.

The exceptions of Bellarmine and others against this testimony, that it was a grant and a condescension in Peter, and not a declaration of the right of the church, that it was an extraordinary case, that the determination of the whole was by lot, are of no validity.

The pretended concession of Peter is a figment; the case was so extraordinary as to include in it all ordinary cases, for the substance of them; and although the ultimate determination of the individual person (which was necessary unto his apostleship) was immediately divine, by lot, yet here is all granted unto the people, in their choosing and appointing two, in their praying, in their casting lots, in their voluntary approbatory suffrage, that is desired.

This blessed example, given us by the wisdom of the apostles, yea, of the Spirit of God in them, being eminently suited unto the nature of the thing itself, as we shall see immediately, and compliant with all other directions and apostolical examples in the like case, is rather to be followed than the practice of some degenerate churches, who, to cover the turpitude of their acting in deserting this example and rule, do make use of a mock show and pretence of that which really they deny, reject, and oppose.

The second example we have of the practice of the apostles in this case, whereby the preceding rule is confirmed, is given us Acts vi., in *the election of the deacons.* Had there ensued, after the choice of Matthias, an instance of a diverse practice, by an exclusion of the consent of the people, the former might have been evaded as that which was absolutely extraordinary, and not obliging unto the church: but this was the very next instance of the call of any church-officer, and it was the first appointment of any ordinary officers in the Christian church; for, it falling out in the very year of Christ's ascension, there is no mention of any ordinary elders, distinct from the apostles, ordained in that church; for all the apostles themselves yet abiding there for the most part of this time, making only some occasional excursions unto other places, were able to take care of the rule of the church and the preaching of the word. They are, indeed, mentioned as those who were well known in the church not long afterward, chap. xi. 30; but the first instance of the call of ordinary teaching elders or pastors is not recorded. That of deacons is so by reason of the occasion of it; and we may observe concerning it unto our purpose,—

1. That the institution of the office itself was of apostolical authority, and that fulness of church-power wherewith they were furnished by Jesus Christ.

2. That they did not exert that authority but upon such reasons of it as were satisfactory to the church; which they declare, chap. vi. 2.

3. That the action is ascribed to the twelve in general, without naming any person who spake for the rest; which renders the pretence of the Romanists from the former place, where Peter is said to have spoken unto the disciples,—whereon they would have the actings of the church which ensued thereon to have been by his concession and grant, not of their own right,—altogether vain; for the rest of the apostles were as much interested and concerned in what

was then spoken by Peter as they were at this time, when the whole is ascribed unto the twelve.

4. That the church was greatly multiplied [at] that time, on the account of the conversion unto the faith recorded in the foregoing chapter. It is probable, indeed, that many, yea, the most of them, were returned unto their own habitations; for the next year there were churches in all Judea, Galilee, and Samaria, chap. ix. 31. And Peter went about "throughout all quarters," to visit the saints that dwelt in them, verse 32, of whose conversion we read nothing but that which fell out at Jerusalem at Pentecost; but a great multitude they were, chap. vi. 1, 2.

5. This whole multitude of the church,—that is, the "brethren," verse 3,—assembled in one place, being congregated by the apostles, verse 2; who would not ordain any thing, wherein they were concerned, without their own consent.

6. They judged on the whole matter proposed unto them, and gave their approbation thereof, before they entered upon the practice of it: Verse 5, "The saying pleased the whole multitude."

7. The qualifications of the persons to be chosen unto the office intended are declared by the apostles: Verse 3, "Of honest report, full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom."

8. These qualities the multitude were to judge upon; and so, absolutely, of the meetness of any for this office.

9. The choice is wholly committed and left unto them by the apostles, as that which of right did belong unto them, "Look ye out among you;" which they made use of, choosing them unto the office by their common suffrage, verse 5.

10. Having thus chosen them, they presented them as their chosen officers unto the apostles, to be by them set apart unto the exercise of their office by prayer and imposition of hands, verse 6.

It is impossible there should be a more evident, convincing instance and example of the free choice of ecclesiastical officers by the multitude or fraternity of the church than is given us herein. Nor was there any ground or reason why this order and process should be observed, why the apostles would not themselves nominate and appoint persons whom they saw and knew meet for this office to receive it, but that it was the right and liberty of the people, according to the mind of Christ, to choose their own officers, which they would not abridge nor infringe.

So was it then, *οὕτω καὶ νῦν γίνεσθαι ἔδει*, saith Chrysostom on the place, "and so it ought now to be;" but the usage began then to decline. It were well if some would consider how the apostles at that time treated that multitude of the people, which is so much now despised, and utterly excluded from all concern in church affairs but what consists in servile subjection; but they have, in this pattern and

precedent for the future ordering of the calling of meet persons to office in the church, their interest, power, and privilege secured unto them, so as that they can never justly be deprived of it. And if there were nothing herein but only a record of the wisdom of the apostles in managing church affairs, it is marvellous to me that any who would be thought to succeed them in any part of their trust and office should dare to depart from the example set before them by the Holy Ghost in them, preferring their own ways and inventions above it. I shall ever judge that there is more safety in a strict adherence unto this apostolical practice and example than in a compliance with all the canons of councils or churches afterward.

The only objection usually insisted on,—that is, by Bellarmine and those that follow him,—is, "That this being the election of deacons to manage *the alms of the church*, that is, somewhat of their temporals, nothing can thence be concluded unto the right or way of calling bishops, pastors, or elders, who are to take care of the souls of the people. They may, indeed, be able to judge of the fitness of them who are to be intrusted with their purses, or what they are willing to give out of them; but it doth not thence follow that they are able to judge of the fitness of those who are to be their spiritual pastors, nor to have the choice of them."

Nothing can be weaker than this pretence or evasion; for,—(1.) The question is concerning *the calling of persons* unto office in the church in general, whereof we have here a rule whereunto no exception is any way entered. (2.) This cannot be fairly pleaded by them *who appoint deacons to preach, baptize, and officiate publicly* in all holy things, excepting only the administration of the eucharist. (3.) If the people are meet and able to judge of them who are of "honest report, full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom," which is here required of them, they are able to judge who are meet to be their pastors. (4.) The argument holds strongly on the other side, namely, that if it be right and equal, if it be of divine appointment and apostolical practice, that the people should choose those who were to collect and distribute their charitable benevolence because of their concernment therein, much more are they to enjoy the same liberty, right, and privilege, in the choice of their pastors, unto whom they commit the care of their souls, and submit themselves unto their authority in the Lord.

Thirdly. Accordingly they did use the same liberty in the choice of *their elders:* Acts xiv. 23, Χειροτονήσαντες αὐτοῖς πρεσβυτέρους κατ' ἐκκλησίαν, προσευξάμενοι μετὰ νηστειῶν,—that is, say Erasmus, Vatablus, Beza, all our old English translations, appointing, ordaining, creating elders by *election, or the suffrage of the disciples*, having prayed with fasting. The whole order of the sacred separation of persons qualified unto the office of the ministry,—that is, to be bishops, elders, or pas-

tors,—is here clearly represented; for,—1. They were *chosen by the people*, the apostles who were present, namely, Paul and Barnabas, presiding in the action, directing of it and confirming that by their consent with them. 2. *A time of prayer and fasting* was appointed for the action or discharge of the duty of the church herein. 3. When they were so *chosen*, the apostles present *solemnly prayed*, whereby their ordination was completed. And those who would have χειροτονία here mentioned to be χειροθεσία, or an authoritative imposition of hands, wherein this ordination did consist, do say there is an ὑστερολογία in the words,—that is, they feign a disorder in them to serve their own hypothesis; for they suppose that their complete ordination was effected before there was any prayer with fasting, for by imposition of hands in their judgment ordination is completed: so Bellarmine and à Lapide on the place, with those that follow them. But first to pervert the true signification of the word, and then to give countenance unto that wresting of it by assigning a disorder unto the words of the whole sentence, and that such a disorder as makes, in their judgment, a false representation of the matter of fact related, is a way of the interpretation of Scripture which will serve any turn. 4. This was done in *every church*, or in every congregation, as Tindal renders the word, namely, in all the particular congregations that were gathered in those parts; for that collection and constitution did always precede the election and ordination of their officers, as is plain in this place, as also Tit. i. 5. So far is it from truth that the being of churches dependeth on the successive ordination of their officers, that the church, essentially considered, is always antecedent unto their being and call.

But because it is some men's interest to entangle things plain and clear enough in themselves, I shall consider the objection unto this reddition of the words. The whole of it lies against the signification, use, and application of χειροτονήσαντες. Now, although we do not here argue merely from the signification of the word, but from the representation of the matter of fact made in the context, yet I shall observe some things sufficient for the removal of that objection; as,—

1. The native signification of χειροτονέω, by virtue of its composition, is to "lift up" or "stretch forth the hands," or a hand. And hereunto the LXX. have respect, Isa. lviii. 9, where they render שְׁלַח אֶצְבַּע, "the putting forth of the finger," which is used in an ill sense, by χειροτονία. Χειροτονεῖν is the same with τὰς χεῖρας αἴρειν, nor is it ever used in any other signification.

2. The first constant use of it in things political or civil, and so consequently ecclesiastical, is to choose, elect, design, or create any person an officer, magistrate, or ruler, by suffrage or common consent of those concerned. And this was usually done with making bare the hand and arm with lifting up, as Aristophanes witnesseth:—

——"Ομως δὲ χειροτονητίον
'Εξωμισάσαις τὸν ἕτερον βραχίονα.—Eccles. 266.

He is a great stranger unto these things who knoweth not that among the Greeks, especially the Athenians, from whom the use of this word is borrowed or taken, χειροτονία was an act ὅλης τῆς ἐκκλησίας, "of the whole assembly" of the people in the choice of their officers and magistrates. Χειροτονέω is "by common suffrage to decree and determine of any thing, law, or order;" and when applied unto persons, it signifies their choice and designation to office. So is it used in the first sense by Demosthenes, Orat. De Corona, οὐ'. 'Ο δῆμος τὰς ἐμὰς γνώμας περὶ σωτηρίας τῆς πόλεως ἐχειρότονει,—"The people confirmed my sayings by their suffrage;" and in the other, Philip. 1, Οὔτε βουλῆς, οὔτε δήμου χειροτονήσαντος αὐτόν,[1]—"Neither the senate nor the people choosing him to his office." So is the passive verb used, "to be created by suffrages." Χειροτονία was the act of choosing; whose effect was ψήφισμα, the determining vote or suffrage. "Porrexerunt manus: psephisma natum est," saith Cicero, speaking of the manner of the Greeks, Pro Flacco, 7. And when there was a division in choice, it was determined by the greater suffrage: Thucyd. lib. iii. cap. xlix., Καὶ ἐγένοντο ἐν τῇ χειροτονίᾳ ἀγχώμαλοι· ἐκράτησε δὲ ἡ τοῦ Διοδότου. As many instances of this nature may be produced as there are reports of calling men unto magistracy by election in the Greek historians; and all the further compositions of the word do signify to choose, confirm, or to abrogate, by common suffrage.

3. The word is but once more used in the New Testament, 2 Cor. viii. 19, where it plainly signifies election and choice of a person to an employment: Χειροτονηθεὶς ὑπὸ τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν συνέκδημος ἡμῶν·—"He was chosen of the churches to travel with us."

4. It is acknowledged that after this was the common use of the word, it was applied to signify the thing itself, and not the manner of doing it. Hence it is used sometimes for the obtaining or collation of authority, or dignity, or magistracy, any manner of way, though not by election: "to appoint," "to create." But this was, by an abusive application of the word, to express the thing itself intended without regard unto its signification and proper use. Why such a use of it should be here admitted no reason can be given; for in all other places on such occasions, the apostles did admit and direct the churches to use their liberty in their choice. So Acts xv. 22, "The apostles and elders, with the whole church, sent chosen men of their own company to Antioch," such as they chose by common suffrage for

[1] This passage is not in the first Philippic, though in that speech χειροτονέω occurs frequently in the sense referred to. Owen seems to have found this sentence in Stephens, who does not specify where it actually occurs in Demosthenes. The following expressions, however, are to be found in it, and are sufficient authority for the statement of our author: Οὐκ ἐχειροτονεῖτε δὲ ἐξ ὑμῶν αὐτῶν δέκα ταξιάρχους. . . . . Εἰς τὴν ἀγορὰν χειροτονεῖτε τοὺς ταξιάρχους.—Ed.

that end; so again, verse 25. "Whomsoever ye shall approve, them will I send," 1 Cor. xvi. 3: the church chose them, the apostle sent them. "Who was chosen of the churches to travel with us," 2 Cor. viii. 19. "Look ye out among you," Acts vi. 3. If on all these and the like occasions, the apostles did guide and direct the people in their right and use of their liberty, as unto the election of persons unto offices and employments when the churches themselves were concerned, what reason is there to depart from the proper and usual signification of the word in this place, denoting nothing but what was the common practice of the apostles on the like occasions?

5. That which alone is objected hereunto, by Bellarmine and others who follow him and borrow their whole [argument] in this case from him, namely, that χειροτονήσαντες, grammatically agreeing with and regulated by Paul and Barnabas, denotes their act, and not any act of the people, is of no force; for,—(1.) Paul and Barnabas did preside in the whole action, helping, ordering, and disposing of the people in the discharge of their duty, as is meet to be done by some on all the like occasions; and therefore it is truly said of them that "they appointed elders by the suffrage of the people." (2.) I have showed instances before out of the Scripture, that when a thing is done by the people, it is usual to ascribe it unto him or them who were chief therein, as elsewhere the same thing is ascribed unto the whole people.

The same authors contend that the liberty of choosing their own officers or elders, such as it was, was granted unto them or permitted by way of *condescension for a season*, and not made use of by virtue of any right in them thereunto. But this permission is a mere imagination. It was according to the mind of Christ that the churches should choose their own elders, or it was not. If it were not, the apostles would not have permitted it; and if it were, they ought to ordain it and practise according to it, as they did. Nor is such a constant apostolical practice, proposed for the direction of the church in all ages, to be ascribed unto such an original as condescension and permission: yea, it is evident that it arose from the most fundamental principles of the constitution and nature of the gospel churches, and was only a regular pursuit and practice of them; for,—

First, The calling of bishops, pastors, or elders, is an act of *the power of the keys* of the kingdom of heaven. But these keys are originally and properly given unto the whole church, unto the elders of it only ministerially, and as unto exercise. Pastors are eyes to the church. But God and nature design, in the first place, light to the whole body, to the whole person; thereunto it is granted both subjectively and finally, but actually it is peculiarly seated in the eye. So is it in the grant of church-power; it is given to the whole church, though to be exercised only by its elders.

That the grant of the keys unto Peter was in the person and as

the representative of the whole confessing church is the known judgment of Austin and a multitude of divines that follow him: so he fully expresseth himself, Tractat. 124. in Johan.: "Peter the apostle bare, in a general figure, the person of the church; for as unto what belonged unto himself, he was by nature one man, by grace one Christian, and of special, more abounding grace one and the chief apostle. But when it was said unto him, 'I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven,' etc., He signified the whole church," etc. Again: "The church, which is founded in Christ, received from him, in (the person of) Peter, the keys of the kingdom of heaven, which is the power of binding and loosing."

Unto whom these keys are granted, they, according to their distinct interests in that grant, have the right and power of calling their bishops, pastors, or elders; for in the exercise of that trust and power it doth consist. But this is made unto the whole church; and as there are in a church already constituted several sorts of persons, as some are elders, others are of the people only, this right resideth in them and is acted by them according to their respective capacities, as limited by the light of nature and divine institution; which is, that the election of them should belong unto the body of the people, and their authoritative designation or ordination unto the elders. And when in any place the supreme magistrate is a member or part of the church, he hath also his peculiar right herein.

That the power of the keys is thus granted originally and fundamentally unto the whole church is undeniably confirmed by two arguments:—

1. The church itself is the wife, the spouse, the bride, the queen of the husband and king of the church, Christ Jesus, Ps. xlv. 9; John iii. 29; Rev. xxi. 9, xxii. 17; Matt. xxv. 1, 5, 6. Other wife Christ hath none; nor hath the church any other husband. Now, to whom should the keys of the house be committed but unto the bride? There is, I confess, another who claims the keys to be his own; but withal he makes himself the head and husband of the church, proclaiming himself not only to be an adulterer with that harlot which he calleth the church, but a tyrant also, in that, pretending to be her husband, he will not trust her with the keys of his house, which Christ hath done with his spouse. And whereas, by the canon law, every bishop is the husband or spouse of his diocesan church, for the most part they commit an open rape upon the people, taking them without their consent; at least they are not chosen by them, which yet is essential unto a lawful marriage. And the bride of Christ comes no otherwise so to be but by the voluntary choice of him to be her husband. For the officers or rulers of the church, they do belong unto it as hers, 1 Cor. iii. 21, 22, and as stewards in the house, chap. iv. 1; the servants of the church for Jesus' sake, 2 Cor. iv. 5.

If the Lord Christ have the keys of the kingdom of heaven, that is, of "his own house," Heb. iii. 6; if the church itself be the spouse of Christ, the mother of the family, the bride, the Lamb's wife, Rev. xxi. 9; and if all the officers of the church be but stewards and servants in the house and unto the family; if the Lord Christ do make a grant of these keys unto any, whereon the disposal of all things in this house and family doth depend, the question is, whether he hath originally granted them unto his holy spouse, to dispose of according unto her judgment and duty, or unto any servants in the house, to dispose of her and all her concernments at their pleasure?

2. The power of the keys as unto binding and loosing, and consequently as unto all other acts thence proceeding, is expressly granted unto the whole church: Matt. xviii. 17, 18, "If he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican. Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven." What church it is that is here intended we have proved before, and that the church is intrusted with the power of binding and loosing; and what is the part of the body of the people herein the apostle declares, 1 Cor. v. 4, 5; 2 Cor. ii. 6.

Secondly, This right, exemplified in *apostolical practice*, is comprehended in the commands given unto the church or body of the people with respect unto teachers and rulers of all sorts: for unto them it is in a multitude of places given in charge that they should discern and try false prophets, flee from them, try spirits, or such as pretend spiritual gifts or offices, reject them who preach false doctrine, to give testimony unto them that are to be in office, with sundry other things of the like nature; which all of them do suppose, or cannot be discharged without, a right in them to choose the worthy and reject the unworthy, as Cyprian speaks. See Matt. vii. 15–20; John v. 39; Gal. ii. 9; 1 Thess. v. 21; 1 John iv. 1; 2 John 10, 11.

What is objected hereunto from the unfitness and disability of the people to make a right judgment concerning them who are to be their pastors and rulers labours with a threefold weakness: for,— 1. It reflects dishonour upon the *wisdom* of Christ, in commanding them the observance and discharge of such duties as they are no way meet for. 2. It proceeds upon a supposition of *that degenerate state* of churches in their members, as to light, knowledge, wisdom, and holiness, which they are for the most part fallen into; which must not be allowed to have the force of argument in it, when it is to be lamented and ought to be reformed. 3. It supposeth that there is no *supply of assistance* provided for the people in the discharge of their duty, to guide and direct them therein; which is otherwise, seeing the elders of the church wherein any such election

is made, and those of other churches in communion with that church, are, by the common advice and declaration of their judgment, to be assistant unto them.

Thirdly, The church is a *voluntary society.* Persons otherwise absolutely free, as unto all the rules, laws, and ends of such a society, do of their own wills and free choice coalesce into it. This is the original of all churches, as hath been declared. "They first gave their own selves to the Lord, and unto us by the will of God," 2 Cor. viii. 5. Herein neither by prescription, nor tradition, nor succession, hath any one more power or authority than another, but they are all equal. It is gathered into this society merely by the authority of Christ; and where it is so collected, it hath neither right, power, privilege, rules, nor bonds, as such, but what are given, prescribed, and limited, by the institution and laws of Christ. Moreover, it abides and continues on the same grounds and principles as whereon it was collected, namely, the wills of the members of it, subjected unto the commands of Christ. This is as necessary unto its present continuance in all its members as it was in its first plantation. It is not like the political societies of the world, which, being first established by force or consent, bring a necessity on all that are born in them and under them to comply with their rule and laws. For men may, and in many cases ought to submit unto the disposal of temporal things in a way, it may be, not convenient for them, which they judge not well of, and which in many things is not unto their advantage; and this may be just and equal, because the special good which every one would aim at, being not absolutely so, may be outbalanced by a general good, nor alterable[1] but by the prejudice of that which is good in particular. But with reference unto things spiritual and eternal it is not so. No man can by any previous law be concluded as unto his interest in such things; nor is there any general good to be attained by the loss of any of them. None, therefore, can coalesce in such a society, or adhere unto it, or be any way belonging unto it, but by his own free choice and consent. And it is inquired, how it is possible that any rule, authority, power, or office, should arise or be erected in such a society? We speak of that which is ordinary; for He by whom this church-state is erected and appointed may and did appoint in it and over it extraordinary officers for a season. And we do suppose that as he hath, by his divine authority, instituted and appointed that such societies shall be, he hath made grant of privileges and powers to them proper and sufficient for this end; as also, that he hath given laws and rules, by the observance whereof they may be made partakers of those privileges and powers, with a right unto their exercise.

On these suppositions, in a society absolutely *voluntary*, among

[1] Not attainable?—Ed.

those who in their conjunction into it by their own consent are every way *equal*, there can but three things be required unto the actual constitution of rule and office among them:—

And the first is, That there be some among them that are *fitted and qualified* for the discharge of such an office in a peculiar manner above others. This is previous unto all government, beyond that which is purely natural and necessary: "Principio rerum, gentium nationumque imperium penes reges erat; quos ad fastigium hujus majestatis, non ambitio popularis, sed spectata inter bonos moderatio provehebat," Just., lib. i. cap. i. So it was in the world, so it was in the church: "Præsident probati quique seniores, honorem istum non pretio, sed testimonio adepti," Tertul. This preparation and furniture of some persons with abilities and meet qualifications for office and work in the church the Lord Christ hath taken on himself, and doth and will effect it in all generations. Without this there can be neither office, nor rule, nor order in the church.

Secondly, Whereas there is a new relation to be made or created between a pastor, bishop, or elder, and the church, which was not before between them (a bishop and a church, a pastor and a flock, are *relata*), it must be introduced at the same time by the *mutual voluntary acts* of one another, or of each party; for one of the *relata* can, as such, have no being or existence without the other. Now, this can no otherwise be but by the consent and voluntary subjection of the church unto persons so antecedently qualified for office, according to the law and will of Christ; for it cannot be done by the delegation of power and authority from any other superior or equal unto them that do receive it. Neither the nature of this power, which is incapable of such a delegation, nor the relation unto Christ of all those who are pastors of the church, will admit of an interposition of authority by way of delegation of power from themselves in other men; which would make them their ministers and not Christ's. Nor is it consistent with the nature of such a voluntary society. This, therefore, can no way be done but by free choice, election, consent, or approbation. It cannot, I say, be so regularly. How far an irregularity herein may vitiate the whole call of a minister we do not now inquire.

Now, this choice or election doth not communicate a power from them that choose unto them that are chosen, as though such a power as that whereunto they are called should be formally inherent in the choosers antecedent unto such choice; for this would make those that are chosen to be their ministers only, and to act all things in their name and by virtue of authority derived from them. It is only an instrumental, ministerial means to instate them in that power and authority which is given unto such officers by the constitution and laws of Christ, whose ministers thereon they are. These gifts,

offices, and officers, being granted by Christ unto the churches, Eph. iv. 11, 12, wherever there is a church called according to his mind, they do, in and by their choice of them, "submit themselves unto them in the Lord," according unto all the powers and duties wherewith they are by him intrusted and whereunto they are called.

Thirdly, It is required that persons so chosen, so submitted unto, be [al]so *solemnly separated, dedicated unto, and confirmed in their office by fasting and prayer.* As this is consonant unto the light of nature, which directs unto a solemnity in the susception of public officers,—whence proceeds the coronation of kings, which gives them not their title, but solemnly proclaims it, which on many accounts is unto the advantage of government,—so it is prescribed unto the church in this case by especial institution. But hereof I shall speak further immediately.

This order of calling men unto the pastoral office, namely, by their previous qualifications for the ministry, whereby a general designation of the persons to be called is made by Christ himself, the *orderly choice or election* of them in a voluntary subjection unto them in the Lord, according to the mind of Christ, by the church itself, followed with solemn ordination, or setting apart unto the office and discharge of it by prayer with fasting, all in obedience unto the commands and institution of Christ, whereunto the communication of office-power and privilege is by law-constitution annexed, is suited unto the light of reason in all such cases, the nature of gospel societies in order or churches, the ends of the ministry, the power committed by Christ unto the church, and confirmed by apostolical practice and example.

Herein we rest, without any further dispute, or limiting the formal cause of the communication of office-power unto any one act or duty of the church, or of the bishops or elders of it. All the three things mentioned are essential thereunto; and when any of them are utterly neglected,—where they are neither formally nor virtually,—there is no lawful, regular call unto the ministry according to the mind of Christ.

This order was a long time observed in the ancient church inviolate, and the footsteps of it may be traced through all ages of the church, although it first gradually decayed, then was perverted and corrupted, until it issued (as in the Roman church) in a pageant and show, instead of the reality of the things themselves: for the trial and approbation of spiritual endowments, previously necessary unto the call of any, was left unto the pedantic examination of the bishop's domestics, who knew nothing of them in themselves; the election and approbation of the people was turned into a mock show in the sight of God and men, a deacon calling out that if any had objections against him who was to be ordained, they should come forth and speak, whereunto another cries out of a corner, by compact,

"He is learned and worthy;" and ordination was esteemed to consist only in the outward sign of imposition of hands, with some other ceremonies annexed thereunto, whereby, without any other consideration, there ensued a flux of power from the ordainers unto the ordained!

But from the beginning it was not so. And some few instances of the right of the people, and the exercise of it in the choice of their own pastors, may be touched on in our passage:—

CLEMENS, Epist. ad Corinth., affirms that the apostles themselves appointed approved persons unto the office of the ministry, *συνευδοκησάσης τῆς ἐκκλησίας πάσης*, "by (or with) the consent (or choice) of the whole church." *Συνευδοκεῖν* is "to enact by common consent:" which makes it somewhat strange that a learned man should think that the right of the people in election is excluded in this very place by Clemens, from what is assigned unto the apostles in ordination.

IGNATIUS, Epist. ad Philadelph., cap. x., *Πρέπον ἐστὶν ὑμῖν, ὡς ἐκκλησίᾳ Θεοῦ, χειροτονῆσαι ἐπίσκοπον*, writing to the fraternity of the church,—"It becomes you, as a church of God, to choose or (ordain) a bishop."

TERTULLIAN, Apol., "Præsident probati quique seniores, honorem istum non pretio, sed testimonio adepti,"—"The elders came unto their honour (or office) by the testimony of the people;" that is, by their suffrage in their election.

ORIGEN, in the close of his last book against Celsus, discoursing expressly of the calling and constitution of churches or cities of God, speaking of the elders and rulers of them, affirms that they are *ἐκλεγόμενοι*, "chosen to their office," by the churches which they do rule.

The testimony given by CYPRIAN in sundry places unto this right of the people, especially in Epist. lxvii., unto the elders and people of some churches in Spain, is so known, so frequently urged, and excepted against to so little purpose, as that it is no way needful to insist again upon it. Some few things I shall only observe concerning and out of that epistle; as,—

1. It was not a simple epistle of his own more ordinary occasions, but a determination upon a weighty question, made by a synod of bishops or elders, in whose name, as well as that of Cyprian, it was written and sent unto the churches who had craved their advice.

2. He doth not only assert the right of the people to choose worthy persons to be their bishops, and reject those that are unworthy, but also industriously proves it so to be their right by divine institution and appointment.

3. He declares it to be the sin of the people, if they neglect the use and exercise of their right and power in rejecting and withdrawing themselves from the communion of unworthy pastors, and choosing others in their room.

4. He affirms that this was the practice not only of the churches

of Africa, but of those in most of the other provinces of the empire. Some passages in his discourse, wherein all these things are asserted, I shall transcribe, in the order wherein they lie in the epistle:—

"Nec sibi plebs blandiatur, quasi immunis esse a contagio delicti possit cum sacerdote peccatore communicans, et ad injustum et illicitum præpositi sui episcopatum consensum suum commodans. . . . . Propter quod plebs obsequens præceptis Dominicis et Deum metuens, a peccatore præposito separare se debet, nec se ad sacrilegi sacerdotis sacrificia miscere; quando ipsa maxime habeat potestatem vel eligendi dignos sacerdotes vel indignos recusandi, quod et ipsum videmus de divina authoritate descendere;"—"For this cause the people, obedient to the commands of our Lord and fearing God, ought to separate themselves from a wicked bishop, nor mix themselves with the worship of a sacrilegious priest; for they principally have the power of choosing the worthy priests and rejecting the unworthy, which comes from divine authority (or appointment)," as he proves from the Old and New Testament. Nothing can be spoken more fully representing the truth which we plead for. He assigns unto the people a right and power of separating from unworthy pastors, of rejecting or deposing them, and that granted to them by divine authority.

And this power of election in the people he proves from the apostolical practice before insisted on: "Quod postea secundum divina magisteria observatur in Actis Apostolorum, quando in ordinando in locum Judæ apostolo, Petrus ad plebem loquitur. 'Surrexit,' inquit, 'Petrus in medio discentium, fuit autem turba hominum forte centum viginti.' Nec hoc in episcoporum tantum et sacerdotum, sed in diaconorum ordinationibus observasse apostolos animadvertimus de quo et ipso in actis eorum scriptum est. 'Et convocarunt,' inquit, 'illi duodecim totam plebem discipulorum, et dixerunt eis,'" etc.; —"According unto the divine commands, the same course was observed in the Acts of the Apostles;" whereof he gives instances in the election of Matthias, Acts i., and of the deacons, chap. vi.

And afterward, speaking of ordination "de universæ fraternitatis suffragio," "by the suffrage of the whole brotherhood of the church," he says, "Diligenter de traditione divina, et apostolica observatione servandum est et tenendum apud nos quoque et fere per universas provincias tenetur;"—"According to which divine tradition and apostolical practice, this custom is to be preserved and kept amongst us also, as it is almost through all the provinces."

Those who are not moved with his authority, yet I think have reason to believe him in a matter of fact of what was done everywhere, or almost everywhere, in his own days; and they may take time to answer his reasons when they can, which comprise the substance of all that we plead in this case.

But the testimonies in following ages given unto this right and power of the people in choosing their own church-officers, bishops and others, recorded in the decrees of councils, the writings of the learned men in them, the rescripts of popes, and constitutions of emperors, are so fully and faithfully collected by Blondellus, in the third part of his apology for the judgment of Jerome about episcopacy, as that nothing can be added unto his diligence, nor is there any need of further confirmation of the truth in this behalf.

The pretence also of Bellarmine, and others who follow him and borrow their conceits from him, that this liberty of the people in choosing their own bishops and pastors was granted unto them at first by way of indulgence or connivance, and that, being abused by them and turned into disorder, it was gradually taken from them, until it issued in that shameful mocking of God and man which is in use in the Roman church, when, at the ordination of a bishop or priest, one deacon makes a demand, "Whether the person to be ordained be approved by the people," and another answers out of a corner, "That the people approve him," has been so confuted by protestant writers of all sorts, that it is needless to insist any longer on them.

Indeed, the concessions that are made, that this ancient practice of the church in the people's choosing their own officers (which to deny is all one as to deny that the sun gives light at noon-day), is, as unto its right, by various degrees transferred unto popes, patrons, and bishops, with a representation in a mere pageantry of the people's liberty to make objections against them that are to be ordained, are as fair a concession of the gradual apostasy of churches from their original order and constitution as need be desired.

This power and right which we assign unto the people is not to act itself only in a subsequent consent unto one that is ordained, in the acceptance of him to be their bishop or pastor. How far that may salve the defect and disorder of the omission of previous election, and so preserve the essence of the ministerial call, I do not now inquire. But that which we plead for is the power and right of election, to be exercised previously unto the solemn ordination or setting apart of any unto the pastoral office, communicative of office-power in its own kind unto the person chosen.

This is part of that contest which for sundry ages filled most countries of Europe with broils and disorders; neither is there yet an end put unto it. But in this present discourse we are not in the least concerned in these things; for our inquiry is, what state and order of church-affairs is declared and represented to us in the Scripture; and therein there is not the least intimation of any of those things from whence this controversy did arise and whereon it doth depend. Secular endowments, jurisdictions, investiture, rights of

presentation, and the like, with respect unto the evangelical pastoral office and its exercise in any place, which are the subjects of these contests, are foreign unto all things that are directed in the Scriptures concerning them, nor can be reduced unto any thing that belongs unto them. Wherefore, whether this "jus patronatus" be consistent with gospel institutions; whether it may be continued with respect unto lands, tithes, and benefices; or how it may be reconciled unto the right of the people in the choice of their own ecclesiastical officers, from the different acts, objects, and ends required unto the one and the other,—are things not of our present consideration.

And this we affirm to be agreeable unto natural reason and equity, to the nature of churches in their institution and ends, to all authority and office-power in the church necessary unto its edification, with the security of the consciences of the officers themselves and the preservation of due respect and obedience unto them, and constituted by the institution of Christ himself in his apostles and the practice of the primitive church. Wherefore, the utter despoiling of the church, of the disciples, of those gathered in church-societies by his authority and command, of this right and liberty, may be esteemed a sacrilege of a higher nature than sundry other things which are reproached as criminal under that name.

And if any shall yet further appear to justify this deprivation of the right laid claim unto, and the exclusion of the people from their ancient possession, with sobriety of argument and reason, the whole cause may be yet further debated, from principles of natural light and equity, from maxims of law and policy, from the necessity of the ends of church-order and power, from the moral impossibility of any other way of the conveyance of ecclesiastical office-power, as well as from evangelical institution and the practice of the first churches.

It will be objected, I know, that the restoration of this liberty unto the people will overthrow that *jus patronatus*, or right of presenting unto livings and preferments which is established by law in this nation, and so, under a pretence of restoring unto the people their right in common, destroy other men's undoubted rights in their own enclosures.

IV. But this election of the church doth not actually and immediately instate the person chosen in the office whereunto he is chosen, nor give actual right unto its exercise. It is required, moreover, that he be solemnly set apart unto his office in and by the church with fasting and prayer. That there should be some kind of peculiar prayer in the dedication of any unto the office of the ministry is a notion that could never be obliterated in the minds of men concerned in these things, nor cast out of their practice. Of what sort they have been amongst many we do not now inquire. But there hath been less regard unto the other duty, namely, that these prayers should

be accompanied with fasting; but this also is necessary by virtue of apostolical example, Acts xiv. 23.

The conduct of this work belongs unto *the elders or officers of the church* wherein any one is to be so ordained. It did belong unto extraordinary officers whilst they were continued in the church, and upon the cessation of their office it is devolved on the ordinary stated officers of the church. It is so, I say, in case there be any such officer before fixed in the church whereunto any one is to be only ordained; and in case there be none, the assistance of pastors or elders of other churches may and ought to be desired unto the conduct and regulation of the duty.

It is needless to inquire what is the authoritative influence of this ordination into the communication of office or office-power, whilst it is acknowledged to be indispensably necessary, and to belong essentially unto the call unto office; for when sundry duties, as these of election and ordination, are required unto the same end, by virtue of divine institution, it is not for me to determine what is the peculiar efficacy of the one or the other, seeing neither of them without the other hath any at all.

Hereunto is added, as an external adjunct, imposition of hands, significant of the persons so called to office in and unto the church; for although it will be difficultly proved that the use of this ceremony was designed unto continuance, after a cessation of the communication of the extraordinary gifts of the Holy Ghost, whereof it was the sign and outward means in extraordinary officers, yet we do freely grant it unto the ordinary officers of the church, provided that there be no apprehension of its being the sole authoritative conveyance of a successive flux of office-power, which is destructive of the whole nature of the institution.

And this may at present suffice, as unto the call of meet persons unto the pastoral office; and, consequently, any other office in the church. The things following are essentially necessary unto it, so as that authority and right to feed and rule in the church in the name of Christ, as an officer of his house, may be given unto any one thereby, by virtue of his law and the charter granted by him unto the church itself. The first is, That antecedently unto any actings of the church towards such a person with respect unto office, he be furnished by the Lord Christ himself with *graces*, and *gifts*, and *abilities*, for the discharge of the office whereunto he is to be called. This divine designation of the person to be called rests on the kingly office and care of Christ towards his church. Where this is wholly wanting, it is not in the power of any church under heaven, by virtue of any outward order or act, to communicate pastoral or ministerial power unto any person whatever. Secondly, There is to be *an exploration or trial of those gifts* and abilities as unto their

accommodation unto the edification of that church whereunto any person is to be ordained a pastor or minister. But although the right of judging herein doth belong unto and reside in the church itself (for who else is able to judge for them, or is intrusted so to do?), yet is it their wisdom and duty to desire the assistance and guidance of those who are approved in the discharge of their office in other churches. Thirdly, The *first act of power committed* unto the church by Jesus Christ, for the constitution of ordinary officers in it, is that election of a person qualified and tried unto his office which we have now vindicated. Fourthly, There is required hereunto the *solemn ordination*, inauguration, dedication, or setting apart, of the person so chosen, by the presbytery of the church, with fasting and prayer and the outward sign of the imposition of hands.

This is that order which the rule of the Scripture, the example of the first churches, and the nature of the things themselves, direct unto; and although I will not say that a defect in any of these, especially if it be from unavoidable hinderances, doth disannul the call of a person to the pastoral office, yet I must say that where they are not all duly attended unto, the institution of Christ is neglected, and the order of the church infringed. Wherefore,—

The plea of the communication of all authority for office, and of office itself, solely by a *flux of power from the first ordainers*, through the hands of their pretended successors in all ages, under all the innumerable miscarriages whereunto they are subject, and have actually fallen into, without any respect unto the consent or call of the churches, by rules, laws, and orders foreign to the Scripture, is contrary to the whole nature of evangelical churches and all the ends of their institution, as shall be manifested, if it be needful.

CHAPTER V.

The especial duty of pastors of churches.

We have declared the way whereby pastors are given unto and instated in the church; that which should ensue is an account of their work and duty in the discharge of their office: but this hath been the subject of many large discourses, both among the ancient writers of the church and of late; I shall therefore only touch on some things that are of most necessary consideration:—

1. The first and principal duty of a pastor is *to feed the flock* by diligent preaching of the word. It is a promise relating to the new testament, that God would give unto his church "pastors according to his own heart, which should feed them with knowledge and understanding," Jer. iii. 15. This is by teaching or preaching the word, and

no otherwise. This feeding is of the essence of the office of a pastor, as unto the exercise of it; so that he who doth not, or can not, or will not feed the flock is no pastor, whatever outward call or work he may have in the church. The care of preaching the gospel was committed to Peter, and in him unto all true pastors of the church, under the name of "feeding," John xxi. 15–17. According to the example of the apostles, they are to free themselves from all encumbrances, that they may give themselves wholly unto the word and prayer, Acts vi. 1–4. Their work is "to labour in the word and doctrine," 1 Tim. v. 17; and thereby to "feed the flock over which the Holy Ghost hath made them overseers," Acts xx. 28: and it is that which is everywhere given them in charge.

This work and duty, therefore, as was said, is essential unto the office of a pastor. A man is a pastor unto them whom he feeds by pastoral teaching, and to no more; and he that doth not so feed is no pastor. Nor is it required only that he preach now and then at his leisure, but that he lay aside all other employments, though lawful, all other duties in the church, as unto such a constant attendance on them as would divert him from this work, that he give himself unto it,—that he be in these things labouring to the utmost of his ability. Without this no man will be able to give a comfortable account of the pastoral office at the last day.

There is, indeed, no more required of any man than God giveth him ability for. Weakness, sickness, bodily infirmities, may disenable men from the actual discharge of this duty in that assiduity and frequency which are required in ordinary cases; and some may, through age or other incapacitating distempers, be utterly disabled for it,—in which case it is their duty to lay down and take a dismission from their office, or, if their disability be but partial, provide a suitable supply, that the edification of the church be not prejudiced; —but for men to pretend themselves pastors of the church, and to be unable for, or negligent of, this work and duty, is to live in open defiance of the commands of Christ.

We have lived to see and hear of reproachful scorn and contempt cast upon laborious preaching,—that is, "labouring in the word and doctrine,"—and all manner of discouragements given unto it, with endeavours for its suppression in sundry instances; yea, some have proceeded so far as to declare that the work of preaching is unnecessary in the church, so to reduce all religion to the reading and rule of the liturgy. The next attempt, so far as I know, may be to exclude Christ himself out of their religion; which the denial of a necessity of preaching the gospel makes an entrance into, yea, a good progress towards.

Sundry things are required unto this work and duty of pastoral preaching; as,—(1.) *Spiritual wisdom* and understanding in the

mysteries of the gospel, that they may declare unto the church "all the counsel of God" and "the unsearchable riches of Christ:" see Acts xx. 27; 1 Cor. ii. 4–7; Eph. iii. 8–11. The generality of the church, especially those who are grown in knowledge and experience, have a spiritual insight into these things, and the apostle prays that all believers may have so, Eph. i. 15–19; and if those that instruct them, or should do so, have not some degree of eminency herein, they cannot be useful to lead them on to perfection. And the little care hereof or concernment herein is that which in our days hath rendered the ministry of many fruitless and useless. (2.) *Experience of the power of the truth* which they preach in and upon their own souls. Without this they will themselves be lifeless and heartless in their own work, and their labour for the most part will be unprofitable towards others. It is, to such men, attended unto as a task for their advantage, or as that which carries some satisfaction in it from ostentation and supposed reputation wherewith it is accompanied. But a man preacheth that sermon only well unto others which preacheth itself in his own soul. And he that doth not feed on and thrive in the digestion of the food which he provides for others will scarce make it savoury unto them; yea, he knows not but the food he hath provided may be poison, unless he have really tasted of it himself. If the word do not dwell with power *in* us, it will not pass with power *from* us. And no man lives in a more woful condition than those who really believe not themselves what they persuade others to believe continually. The want of this experience of the power of gospel truth on their own souls is that which gives us so many lifeless, sapless orations, quaint in words and dead as to power, instead of preaching the gospel in the demonstration of the Spirit. And let any say what they please, it is evident that some men's preaching, as well as others' not-preaching, hath lost the credit of their ministry. (3.) *Skill to divide the word aright*, 2 Tim. ii. 15; and this consists in a practical wisdom, upon a diligent attendance unto the word of truth, to find out what is real, substantial, and meet food for the souls of the hearers,—to give unto all sorts of persons in the church that which is their proper portion. And this requires, (4.) A *prudent and diligent consideration of the state of the flock* over which any man is set, as unto their strength or weakness, their growth or defect in knowledge (the measure of their attainments requiring either milk or strong meat), their temptations and duties, their spiritual decays or thrivings; and that not only in general, but, as near as may be, with respect unto all the individual members of the church. Without a due regard unto these things, men preach at random, uncertainly fighting, like those that beat the air. Preaching sermons not designed for the advantage of them to whom they are preached; insisting on general doctrines not

levelled to the condition of the auditory; speaking what men can, without consideration of what they ought,—are things that will make men weary of preaching, when their minds are not influenced with outward advantages, as much as make others weary in hearing of them. And, (5.) All these, in the whole discharge of their duty, are to be constantly accompanied with the evidence of *zeal for the glory of God* and *compassion for the souls of men.* Where these are not in vigorous exercise in the minds and souls of them that preach the word, giving a demonstration of themselves unto the consciences of them that hear, the quickening form, the life and soul of preaching, is lost.

All these things seem common, obvious, and universally acknowledged; but the ruin of the ministry of the most for the want of them, or from notable defects in them, is or may be no less evidently known. And the very naming of them (which is all at present which I design) is sufficient to evidence how great a necessity there is incumbent on all pastors of churches to give themselves unto the word and prayer, to labour in the word and doctrine, to be continually intent on this work, to engage all the faculties of their souls, to stir up all their graces and gifts, unto constant exercise in the discharge of their duty; for "who is sufficient for these things?" And as the consideration of them is sufficient to stir up all ministers unto fervent prayer for supplies of divine aid and assistance for that work which in their own strength they can no way answer, so is it enough to warn them of the avoidance of all things that would give them a diversion or avocation from the constant attendance unto the discharge of it.

When men undertake the pastoral office, and either judge it not their duty to preach, or are not able so to do, or attempt it only at some solemn seasons, or attend unto it as a task required of them, without that wisdom, skill, diligence, care, prudence, zeal, and compassion, which are required thereunto, the glory and use of the ministry will be utterly destroyed.

2. The second duty of a pastor towards his flock is *continual fervent prayer for them,* James v. 16; John xvii. 20; Exod. xxxii. 11; Deut. ix. 18; Lev. xvi. 24; 1 Sam. xii. 23; 2 Cor. xiii. 7, 9; Eph. i. 15–19, iii. 14; Phil. i. 4; Col. i. 3; 2 Thess. i. 11. "We will give ourselves continually to prayer," Acts vi. 4. Without this, no man can or doth preach to them as he ought, nor perform any other duty of his pastoral office. From hence may any man take the best measure of the discharge of his duty towards his flock. He that doth constantly, diligently, fervently, pray for them, will have a testimony in himself of his own sincerity in the discharge of all other pastoral duties, nor can he voluntarily omit or neglect any of them. And as for those who are negligent herein, be their pains, labour, and travail in other

duties never so great, they may be influenced from other reasons, and so give no evidence of sincerity in the discharge of their office. In this constant prayer for the church, which is so incumbent on all pastors as that whatever is done without it is of no esteem in the sight of Jesus Christ, respect is to be had,—(1.) Unto *the success of the word,* unto all the blessed ends of it, among them. These are no less than the improvement and strengthening of all their graces, the direction of all their duties, their edification in faith and love, with the entire conduct of their souls in the life of God, unto the enjoyment of him. To preach the word, therefore, and not to follow it with constant and fervent prayer for its success, is to disbelieve its use, neglect its end, and to cast away the seed of the gospel at random. (2.) Unto *the temptations that the church is generally exposed unto.* These greatly vary, according unto the outward circumstances of things. The temptations in general that accompany a state of outward peace and tranquillity are of another nature than those that attend a time of trouble, persecution, distress, and poverty; and so it is as unto other occasions and circumstances. These the pastors of churches ought diligently to consider, looking on them as the means and ways whereby churches have been ruined, and the souls of many lost for ever. With respect unto them, therefore, ought their prayers for the church to be fervent. (3.) Unto *the especial state and condition of all the members,* so far as it is known unto them. There may be of them who are spiritually sick and diseased, tempted, afflicted, bemisted, wandering out of the way, surprised in sins and miscarriages, disconsolate and troubled in spirit in a peculiar manner. The remembrance of them all ought to abide with them, and to be continually called over in their daily pastoral supplications. (4.) Unto *the presence of Christ in the assemblies of the church,* with all the blessed evidences and testimonies of it. This is that alone which gives life and power unto all church assemblies, without which all outward order and forms of divine worship in them are but a dead carcase. Now, this presence of Christ in the assemblies of his church is by his Spirit, accompanying all ordinances of worship with a gracious, divine efficacy, evidencing itself by blessed operations on the minds and hearts of the congregation. This are pastors of churches continually to pray for; and *they* will do so who understand that all the success of their labours, and all the acceptance of the church with God in their duties, do depend hereon. (5.) To *their preservation in faith,* love, and fruitfulness, with all the duties that belong unto them, etc.

It were much to be desired that all those who take upon them this pastoral office did well consider and understand how great and necessary a part of their work and duty doth consist in their continual fervent prayer for their flocks; for besides that it is the only

instituted way whereby they may, by virtue of their office, bless their congregations, so will they find their hearts and minds, in and by the discharge of it, more and more filled with love, and engaged with diligence unto all other duties of their office, and excited unto the exercise of all grace towards the whole church on all occasions. And where any are negligent herein, there is no duty which they perform towards the church but it is influenced with false considerations, and will not hold weight in the balance of the sanctuary.

3. *The administration of the seals of the covenant* is committed unto them, as the stewards of the house of Christ; for unto them the authoritative dispensation of the word is committed, whereunto the administration of the seals is annexed; for their principal end is the peculiar confirmation and application of the word preached. And herein there are three things that they are to attend unto:— (1.) The *times* and seasons of their administration unto the church's edification, especially that of the Lord's supper, whose frequency is enjoined. It is the duty of pastors to consider all the necessary circumstances of their administration, as unto time, place, frequency, order, and decency. (2.) To keep *severely* unto the institution of Christ, as unto the way and manner of their administration. The gradual introduction of uninstituted rites and ceremonies into the church celebration of the ordinance of the Lord's supper ended at length in the idolatry of the mass. Herein, then, alone, and not in bowing, cringing, and vestments, lies the glory and beauty of these administrations, namely, that they are compliant with and expressive of the institution of Christ, nor is any thing done in them but in express obedience unto his authority. "I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you," saith the apostle in this case, 1 Cor. xi. 23. (3.) To take care that these holy things be administered *only unto those who are meet and worthy*, according unto the rule of the gospel. Those who impose on pastors the promiscuous administration of these divine ordinances, or the application of the seals unto all without difference, do deprive them of one-half of their ministerial office and duty.

But here it is inquired by some, "Whether, in case a church have no pastor at present, or a teaching elder with pastoral power, it may not delegate and appoint the administration of these especial ordinances unto some member of the church at this or that season, who is meetly qualified for the outward administration of them?" which, for the sake of some, I shall examine.

No church is complete in order *without teaching officers*, Eph. iv. 11, 12; 1 Cor. xii. 27, 28.

A church not complete in order cannot be complete in administrations, because the power of administrations depends upon the power of order proportionably; that is, the power of the church depends

upon the being of the church. Hence the first duty of a church without officers is to obtain them, according to rule. And to endeavour to complete administrations without an antecedent completing of order is contrary unto the mind of Christ, Acts xiv. 23; Tit. i. 5, "That thou shouldest set in order the things that are wanting, and ordain elders in every church." The practice therefore proposed is irregular, and contrary to the mind of Christ.

The order of the church is twofold,—as *essential*, and as *organical*. The order of the church as essential, with its power thence arising, is, —first, For its preservation; secondly, For its perfection. (1.) For its preservation in admission and exclusion of members; (2.) For its perfection in the election of officers.

No part of this power, which belongs to the church as essentially considered, can be delegated, but must be acted by the whole church. They cannot delegate power to some to admit members, so as it should not be an act of the whole church. They cannot delegate power to any to elect officers, nor any thing else which belongs to them as a church essentially. The reason is, things that belong unto the essence of any thing belong unto it formally as such, and so cannot be transferred.

The church, therefore, cannot delegate the power and authority inquired after, should it be supposed to belong to the power of order as the church is essentially considered; which yet it doth not.

If the church may delegate or substitute others for the discharge of all ordinances whatsoever without elders or pastors, then it may perfect the saints and complete the work of the ministry without them, which is contrary to Eph. iv. 11, 12; and, secondly, it would render the ministry only convenient, and not absolutely necessary to the church, which is contrary to the institution of it.

A particular church, in order as organical, is the adequate subject of all ordinances, and not as essential; because as essential it never doth nor can enjoy all ordinances, namely, the ministry in particular, whereby it is constituted organical. Yet, on this supposition, the church, as essentially considered, is the sole adequate subject of all ordinances.

Though the church be the only subject, it is not the only object of gospel ordinances, but that is various. For instance,—

(1.) The *preaching of the word:* its first object is the *world*, for conversion; its next, *professors*, for edification.

(2.) *Baptism:* its only object is neither the *world* nor the *members of a particular church*, but *professors*, with those that are reckoned to them by God's appointment,—that is, their infant seed.

(3.) The *supper:* its object is a *particular church only*, which is acknowledged, and may be proved by the institution, one special end of it, and the necessity of discipline thereon depending.

Ordinances, whereof the church is the only subject and the only object, cannot be administered authoritatively but by officers only,—(1.) Because none but Christ's stewards have authority in and towards his house as such, 1 Cor. iv. 1; 1 Tim. iii. 15; Matt. xxiv. 45; (2.) Because it is an act of office-authority to represent Christ to the whole church, and to feed the whole flock thereby, Acts xx. 28; 1 Pet. v. 2.

There are no footsteps of any such practice among the churches of God who walked in order, neither in the Scripture nor in all antiquity.

But it is objected, by those who allow this practice, "That if the church may appoint or send a person forth to preach, or appoint a brother to preach unto themselves, then they may appoint him to administer the ordinance of the supper."

Ans. Here is a mistake in the supposition. The church,—that is, the body of it,—cannot send out any brother authoritatively to preach. Two things are required thereunto, collation of gifts and communication of office; neither of which the church, under that consideration, can do to one that is sent forth. But where God gives gifts by his Spirit and a call by his providence, the church only complies therewith, not in communicating authority to the person, but in praying for a blessing upon his work.

The same is the case in desiring a brother to teach among them. The duty is moral in its own nature; the gifts and call are from God alone; the occasion of his exercise is only administered by the church.

It is further added, by the same persons, "That if a brother, or one who is a disciple only, may baptize, then he may also administer the Lord's supper, being desired of the church."

Ans. The supposition is not granted nor proved; but there is yet a difference between these ordinances,—the object of the one being professors, as such, at large; the object of the other being professors, as members of a particular church. But to return,—

4. It is incumbent on them *to preserve the truth or doctrine of the gospel* received and professed in the church, and to defend it against all opposition. This is one principal end of the ministry, one principal means of the preservation of the faith once delivered unto the saints. This is committed in an especial manner unto the pastors of the churches, as the apostle frequently and emphatically repeats the charge of it unto Timothy, and in him unto all to whom the dispensation of the word is committed, 1 Epist. i. 3, 4, iv. 6, 7, 16, vi. 20; 2 Epist. i. 14, ii. 25, iii. 14–17. The same he giveth in charge unto the elders of the church of Ephesus, Acts xx. 28–31. What he says of himself, that the "glorious gospel of the blessed God was committed unto his trust," 1 Tim. i. 11, is true of all pastors of churches, according to their measure and call; and they should all

aim at the account which he gives of his ministry herein: "I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith," 2 Tim. iv. 7. The church is the "pillar and ground of the truth;" and it is so principally in its ministry. And the sinful neglect of this duty is that which was the cause of most of the pernicious heresies and errors that have infested and ruined the church. Those whose duty it was to preserve the doctrine of the gospel entire in the public profession of it have, many of them, "spoken perverse things, to draw away disciples after them." Bishops, presbyters, public teachers, have been the ringleaders in heresies. Wherefore this duty, especially at this time, when the fundamental truths of the gospel are on all sides impugned, from all sorts of adversaries, is in an especial manner to be attended unto.

Sundry things are required hereunto; as,—(1.) *A clear, sound, comprehensive knowledge of the entire doctrine of the gospel,* attained by all means useful and commonly prescribed unto that end, especially by diligent study of the Scripture, with fervent prayer for illumination and understanding. Men cannot preserve that for others which they are ignorant of themselves. Truth may be lost by weakness as well as by wickedness. And the defect herein, in many, is deplorable. (2.) *Love of the truth* which they have so learned and comprehended. Unless we look on truth as a pearl, as that which is valued at any rate, bought with any price, as that which is better than all the world, we shall not endeavour its preservation with that diligence which is required. Some are ready to part with truth at an easy rate, or to grow indifferent about it; whereof we have multitudes of examples in the days wherein we live. It were easy to give instances of sundry important evangelical truths, which our forefathers in the faith contended for with all earnestness, and were ready to seal with their blood, which are now utterly disregarded and opposed, by some who pretend to succeed them in their profession. If ministers have not a sense of that power of truth in their own souls, and a taste of its goodness, the discharge of this duty is not to be expected from them. (3.) *A conscientious care and fear of giving countenance or encouragement unto novel opinions,* especially such as oppose any truth of whose power and efficacy experience hath been had among them that believe. Vain curiosity, boldness in conjectures, and readiness to vent their own conceits, have caused no small trouble and damage unto the church. (4.) *Learning and ability of mind to discern and disprove the oppositions of the adversaries* of the truth, and thereby to stop their mouths and convince gainsayers. (5.) *The solid confirmation of the most important truths* of the gospel, and whereinto all others are resolved, in their teaching and ministry. Men may and do ofttimes prejudice, yea, betray the truth, by the weakness of their pleas for it. (6.) *A diligent watch*

over their own flocks against the craft of seducers from without, or the springing up of any bitter root of error among themselves. (7.) *A concurrent assistance with the elders and messengers* of other churches with whom they are in communion, in the declaration of the faith which they all profess; whereof we must treat afterward more at large.

It is evident what learning, labour, study, pains, ability, and exercise of the rational faculties, are ordinarily required unto the right discharge of these duties; and where men may be useful to the church in other things, but are defective in these, it becomes them to walk and act both circumspectly and humbly, frequently desiring and adhering unto the advices of them whom God hath intrusted with more talents and greater abilities.

5. It belongs unto their charge and office diligently to *labour for the conversion of souls unto God.* The ordinary means of conversion is left unto the church, and its duty it is to attend unto it; yea, one of the principal ends of the institution and preservation of churches is the conversion of souls, and when there are no more to be converted, there shall be no more church on the earth. To enlarge the kingdom of Christ, to diffuse the light and savour of the gospel, to be subservient unto the calling of the elect, or gathering all the sheep of Christ into his fold, are things that God designs by his churches in this world. Now, the principal instrumental cause of all these is the preaching of the word; and this is committed unto the pastors of the churches. It is true, men may be, and often are, converted unto God by their occasional dispensation of the word who are not called unto office; for it is the gospel itself that is the "power of God unto salvation," by whomsoever it is administered, and it hath been effectual unto that end even in the necessary occasional teaching of women: but it is so, frequently, in the exercise of spiritual gifts by them who are not stated officers of the church, 1 Cor. xiv. 24, 25; Phil. i. 14, 15, 18; 1 Pet. iv. 10, 11. But yet this hinders not but that the administration of the glorious gospel of the blessed God, as unto all the ends of it, is committed unto the pastors of the church. And the first object of the preaching of the gospel is the *world,* or the men of it, for their conversion; and it is so in the preaching of all them unto whom that work is committed by Christ. The work of the apostles and evangelists had this order in it:—First, they were to make disciples of men, by the preaching of the gospel unto conversion; and this was their principal work, as Paul testifieth, 1 Cor. i. 17: and herein were they gloriously instrumental in laying the foundation of the kingdom of Christ all the world over. The second part of their work was to teach them that were converted, or made disciples, to do and observe all that he did command them. In the pursuit of this part of their commission, they gathered

the disciples of Christ into churches, under ordinary officers of their own. And although the work of these ordinary officers, pastors and teachers, be of the same nature with theirs, yet the method of it is changed in them; for their first ordinary work is to conduct and teach all the disciples of Christ to do and observe all things appointed by him,—that is, to preach unto and watch over the particular flocks unto whom they do relate. But they are not hereby discharged from an interest in the other part of the work,—in preaching the word unto the conversion of souls. They are not, indeed, bound unto the method of the apostles and evangelists; yea, they are, by virtue of their office, ordinarily excluded from it. After a man is called to be a pastor of a particular church, it is not his duty to leave that church, and go up and down to preach for the conversion of strangers. It is not, I say, *ordinarily* so; for many cases may fall out wherein the edification of any particular church is to give way unto the glory of Christ with respect unto the calling of all the members of the church catholic. But in the discharge of the pastoral office there are many occasions of preaching the word unto the conversion of souls; as,—(1.) When any that are unconverted *do come into the assemblies of the church*, and are there wrought upon by the power of the word; whereof we have experience every day. To suppose that a man, at the same time, and in the same place, preaching unto one congregation, should preach to some of them, namely, those that are of the church whereunto he relates, as a minister, with ministerial authority, and to others only by virtue of a spiritual gift which he hath received, is that which no man can distinguish in his own conscience; nor is there any colour of rule or reason for it: for though pastors, with respect unto their whole office and all the duties of it, whereof many can have the church only for their object, are ministers in office unto the church, and so ministers of the church, yet are they ministers of Christ also; and by him it is, and not by the church, that the preaching of the gospel is committed unto them. And it is so committed as that, by virtue of their office, they are to use it unto all its ends, in his way and method; whereof the conversion of sinners is one. And for a man to conceive of himself in a double capacity, whilst he is preaching to the same congregation, is that which no man's experience can reach unto. (2.) *In occasional preaching* in other places, whereunto a pastor of a church may be called and directed by divine providence; for although we have no concernment in the figment of an indelible character accompanying sacred orders, yet we do not think that the pastoral office is such a thing as a man must leave behind him every time he goes from home, or that it is in his own power, or in the power of all men in the world, to divest him of it, unless he be dismissed or deposed from it by Christ himself, through the rule of his word. Wherever a true minister preacheth, he preacheth as a minis-

ter, for as such the administration of the gospel is committed unto him, as unto all the ends of it, whereof the chief, as was said, is the conversion of souls; yea, of such weight it is that the conveniency and edification of particular churches ought to give place unto it. When, therefore, there are great opportunities and providential calls for the preaching of the gospel unto the conversion of souls, and, the harvest being great, there are not labourers sufficient for it, it is lawful, yea, it is the duty of pastors of particular churches to leave their constant attendance on their pastoral charge in those churches, at least for a season, to apply themselves unto the more public preaching of the word unto the conversion of the souls of men. Nor will any particular church be unwilling hereunto which understands that even the whole end of particular churches is but the edification of the church catholic, and that their good and advantage is to give place unto that of the glory of Christ in the whole. The good shepherd will leave the ninety and nine sheep, to seek after one that wanders; and we may certainly leave a few for a season, to seek after a great multitude of wanderers, when we are called thereunto by divine providence: and I could heartily wish that we might have a trial of it at this time.

The ministers who have been most celebrated, and that deservedly, in the last ages, in this and the neighbour nations, have been such as whose ministry God made eminently successful unto the conversion of souls. To affirm that they did not do their work as ministers, and by virtue of their ministerial office, is to cast away the crown and destroy the principal glory of the ministry. For my own part, if I did not think myself bound to preach as a minister, and as a minister authorized in all places and on all occasions, when I am called thereunto, I think I should never preach much more in this world. Nor do I know at all what rule they walk by who continue public constant preaching for many years, and yet neither desire nor design to be called unto any pastoral office in the church. But I must not here insist on the debate of these things.

6. It belongs unto them, on the account of their pastoral office, to be *ready, willing, and able, to comfort, relieve, and refresh, those that are tempted,* tossed, wearied with fears and grounds of disconsolation, in times of trial and desertion. "The tongue of the learned" is required in them, "that they should know how to speak a word in season to him that is weary." One excellent qualification of our Lord Jesus Christ, in the discharge of his priestly office now in heaven, is, that he is touched with a sense of our infirmities, and knows how to succour them that are tempted. His whole flock in this world are a company of tempted ones; his own life on the earth he calls "the time of his temptation;" and those who have the charge of his flock under him ought to have a sense of their infirmities, and endeavour in an especial manner to succour them that are tempted.

But amongst them there are some always that are cast under darkness and disconsolations in a peculiar manner: some at the entrance of their conversion unto God, whilst they have a deep sense of the terror of the Lord, the sharpness of conviction, and the uncertainty of their condition; some are relapsed into sin or omissions of duties; some under great, sore, and lasting afflictions; some upon pressing, urgent, particular *occasions;* some on sovereign, divine *desertions;* some through the *buffetings of Satan* and the injection of blasphemous thoughts into their minds, with many other occasions of an alike nature. Now, the troubles, disconsolations, dejections, and fears, that arise in the minds of persons in these exercises and temptations are various, oftentimes urged and fortified with subtile arguings and fair pretences, perplexing the souls of men almost to despair and death. It belongs unto the office and duty of pastors,—

(1.) To be able *rightly to understand the various cases that will occur of this kind,* from such principles and grounds of truth and experience as will bear a just confidence in a prudent application unto the relief of them concerned; [to have] "the tongue of the learned, to know how to speak a word in season to him that is weary." It will not be done by a collection and determination of cases, which yet is useful in its place; for hardly shall we meet with two cases of this kind that will exactly be determined by the same rule, all manner of circumstances giving them variety: but a skill, understanding, and experience, in the whole nature of the work of the Spirit of God on the souls of men, of the conflict that is between the flesh and the Spirit, of the methods and wiles of Satan, of the wiles of principalities and powers or wicked spirits in high places, of the nature, and effects, and ends of divine desertions, with wisdom to make application out of such principles, or fit medicines and remedies unto every sore and distemper, are required hereunto. These things are by some despised, by some neglected, by some looked after only in stated cases of conscience, in which work it is known that some have horribly debauched their own consciences and [those of] others, to the scandal and ruin of religion, so far as they have prevailed. But not to dispute how far such helps as books written on cases of conscience may be useful herein,—which they may be greatly unto those who know how to use them aright,—the proper ways whereby pastors and teachers must obtain this skill and understanding are, by diligent study of the Scriptures, meditation thereon, fervent prayer, experience of spiritual things, and temptations in their own souls, with a prudent observation of the manner of God's dealing with others, and the ways of the opposition made to the work of his grace in them. Without these things, all pretences unto this ability and duty of the pastoral office are vain; whence it is that the whole work of it is much neglected.

(2.) To be ready and willing to *attend unto the especial cases that may be brought unto them*, and not to look on them as unnecessary diversions, whereas a due application unto them is a principal part of their office and duty. To discountenance, to discourage any from seeking relief in perplexities of this nature, to carry it towards them with a seeming moroseness and unconcernedness, is to turn that which is lame out of the way, to push the diseased, and not at all to express the care of Christ towards his flock, Isa. xl. 11. Yea, it is their duty to hearken after them who may be so exercised, to seek them out, and to give them their counsel and direction on all occasions.

(3.) To *bear patiently and tenderly with the weakness*, ignorance, dulness, slowness to believe and receive satisfaction, yea, it may be, impertinencies, in them that are so tempted. These things will abound amongst them, partly from their natural infirmities, many being weak, and perhaps froward, but especially from the nature of their temptations, which are suited to disorder and disquiet their minds, to fill them with perplexed thoughts, and to make them jealous of every thing wherein they are spiritually concerned; and if much patience, meekness, and condescension, be not exercised towards them, they are quickly turned out of the way.

In the discharge of the whole pastoral office, there is not any thing or duty that is of more importance, nor wherein the Lord Jesus Christ is more concerned, nor more eminently suited unto the nature of the office itself, than this is. But whereas it is a work or duty which, because of the reasons mentioned, must be accompanied with the exercise of humility, patience, self-denial, and spiritual wisdom, with experience, with wearisome diversions from other occasions, those who had got of old the conduct of the souls of men into their management turned this whole part of their office and duty into an engine they called "auricular confession;" whereby they wrested the consciences of Christians to the promotion of their own ease, wealth, authority, and ofttimes to worse ends.

7. A *compassionate suffering* with all the members of the church in all their trials and troubles, whether internal or external, belongs unto them in the discharge of their office; nor is there any thing that renders them more like unto Jesus Christ, whom to represent unto the church is their principal duty. The view and consideration, by faith, of the glory of Christ in his compassion with his suffering members, is the principal spring of consolation unto the church in all its distresses. And the same spirit, the same mind herein, ought, according to their measure, to be in all that have the pastoral office committed unto them. So the apostle expresseth it in himself, "Who is weak, and I am not weak? who is offended, and I burn not?" 2 Cor. xi. 29. And unless this compassion and goodness do run through the discharge of their whole office, men cannot be said

to be evangelical shepherds, nor the sheep said in any sense to be their own. For those who pretend unto the pastoral office to live, it may be, in wealth and pleasure, regardless of the sufferings and temptations of their flock, or of the poor of it, or related unto such churches as wherein it is impossible that they should so much as be acquainted with the state of the greatest part of them, is not answerable unto the institution of their office, nor to the design of Christ therein.

8. *Care of the poor* and *visitation of the sick* are parts of this duty, commonly known, though commonly neglected.

9. *The principal care of the rule of the church* is incumbent on the pastors of it. This is the second general head of the power and duty of this office, whereunto many things in particular do belong. But because I shall treat afterward of the rule of the church by itself distinctly, I shall not here insist upon it.

10. There is *a communion to be observed among all the churches of the same faith and profession in any nation.* Wherein it doth consist, and what is required thereunto, shall be afterward declared. The principal care hereof, unto the edification of the churches, is incumbent on the pastors of them. Whether it be exercised by letters of mutual advice, of congratulation or consolation, or in testimony of communion with those who are called to office in them, or whether it be by convening in synods for consultation of their joint concernments (which things made up a great part of the primitive ecclesiastical polity), their duty it is to attend unto it and to take care of it.

11. That wherewith I shall close these few instances of the pastoral charge and duty is that without which all the rest will neither be useful unto men nor be accepted with the great shepherd, Christ Jesus; and that is, *a humble, holy, exemplary conversation, in all godliness and honesty.* The rules and precepts of the Scripture, the examples of Christ and his apostles, with that of the bishops or pastors of the primitive churches, and the nature of the thing itself, with the religion which we do profess, do undeniably prove this duty to be necessary and indispensable in a gospel ministry. It were an easy thing to fill up a volume with ancient examples unto this purpose, with testimonies of the Scripture and first writers among Christians, with examples of public and private miscarriages herein, with evident demonstration that the ruin of Christian religion in most nations where it hath been professed, and so of the nations themselves, hath proceeded from the ambition, pride, luxury, uncleanness, profaneness, and otherwise vicious conversations, of those who have been called the "clergy." And in daily observation, it is a thing written with the beams of the sun, that whatever else be done in churches, if the pastors of them, or those who are so esteemed, are not exemplary in gospel obedience and holiness, religion will not be carried on and

improved among the people. If persons light or profane in their habits, garbs, and converse, corrupt in their communication, unsavoury and barren as unto spiritual discourse; if such as are covetous, oppressive, and contentious; such as are negligent in holy duties in their own families, and so cannot stir up others unto diligence therein; much more, if such as are openly sensual, vicious, and debauched,—are admitted into this office, we may take our leave of all the glory and power of religion among the people committed unto their charge.

To handle this property or adjunct of the pastoral office, it were necessary distinctly to consider and explain all the qualifications assigned by the apostle as necessary unto bishops or elders, evidenced as previously necessary unto the orderly call of them unto this office, 1 Tim. iii. 2–7, Tit. ii. 6–9; which is a work not consistent with my present design to engage in.

These are some instances of the things wherein the office-duty of pastors of the church doth consist. They are but *some* of them, and these only proposed, not pursued and pressed with the consideration of all those particular duties, with the manner of their performance, way of management, motives and enforcements, defects and causes of them; which would require a large discourse. These may suffice unto our present purpose; and we may derive from them the ensuing brief considerations:—

1. A due meditation and view of these things, as proposed in the Scripture, is enough to make the wisest, the best of men, and the most diligent in the discharge of the pastoral office, to cry out with the apostle, "Who is sufficient for these things?" This will make them look well to their call and entrance into this office, as that alone which will bear them out and justify them in the susception of it; for no sense of insufficiency can utterly discourage any in the undertaking of a work which he is assured that the Lord Christ calls him unto, for where he calls to a duty, he gives competent strength for the performance of it. And when we say, under a deep sense of our own weakness, "Who is sufficient for these things?" he doth say, "My grace is sufficient for you."

2. Although all the things mentioned do plainly, evidently, and undeniably, belong unto the discharge of the pastoral office, yet, in point of fact, we find, by the success, that they are very little considered by the most that seek after it. And the present ruin of religion, as unto its power, beauty, and glory, in all places, ariseth principally from this cause, that multitudes of those who undertake this office are neither in any measure fit for it, nor do either conscientiously attend unto or diligently perform the duties that belong unto it. It ever was and ever will be true in general, "Like priest, like people."

3. Whereas the account which is to be given of this office and

the discharge of it at the last day unto Jesus Christ, the consideration whereof had a mighty influence upon the apostles themselves and all the primitive pastors of the churches, is frequently proposed unto us, and many warnings given us thereon in the Scripture, yet it is apparent they are but few who take it into due consideration. In the great day of Christ's visitation, he will proceed on such articles as those here laid down, and others expressed in the Scripture, and not at all on those which are now inquired upon in our episcopal visitations. And if they may be minded of their true interest and concern, whilst they possess the places they hold in the church, without offence, I would advise them to conform their inquiries, in their visitations, unto those which they cannot but know the Lord Christ will make in the great day of his visitation, which doth approach. This I think but reasonable. In the meantime, for those who desire to give up their account with joy and confidence, and not with grief and confusion, it is their wisdom and duty continually to bear in mind what it is that the Lord Christ requires of them in the discharge of their office. To take benefices, to perform legal duties, by themselves or others, is not fully compliant with what pastors of churches are called unto.

4. It is manifest also from hence how inconsistent it is with this office, and the due discharge of it, for any one man to undertake the relation of a pastor unto more churches than one, especially if far distant from one another. An evil this is like that of *mathematical prognostications at Rome,—always condemned and always retained.* But one view of the duties incumbent on each pastor, and of whose diligent performance he is to give an account at the last day, will discard this practice from all approbation in the minds of them that are sober. However, it is as good to have ten churches at once, as, having but one, never to discharge the duty of a pastor towards it.

5. All churches may do well to consider the weight and burden that lies upon their pastors and teachers in the discharge of their office, that they may be constant in fervent prayers and supplications for them; as also to provide, what lies in them, that they may be without trouble and care about the things of this life.

6. "There being so many duties necessary unto the discharge of this office, and those of such various sorts and kinds as to require various gifts and abilities unto their due performance, it seems very difficult to find a concurrence of them in any one person in any considerable degree, so that it is hard to conceive how the office itself should be duly discharged." I answer,—(1.) The end both of the office and of the discharge of it is the due edification of the church; this, therefore, gives them their measure. Where that is attained, the office is duly discharged, though the gifts whereby men are enabled thereunto be not eminent. (2.) Where a man is called

unto this office, and applieth himself sincerely unto the due discharge of it, if he be evidently defective with respect to any especial duty or duties of it, that defect is to be supplied by calling any other unto his assistance in office who is qualified to make that supply unto the edification of the church. And the like must be said concerning such pastors as, through age or bodily weakness, are disabled from attendance unto any part of their duty; for still the edification of the church is that which, in all these things, is in the first place to be provided for.

7. It may be inquired what is the state of those churches, and what relation with respect unto communion we ought to have unto them, whose pastors are evidently defective in or neglective of these things, so as that they are not in any competent measure attended unto; and we may, in particular, instance in the first and last of the pastoral duties before insisted on. Suppose a man be no way able to preach the word unto the edification of them that are pleaded to be his flock, or, having an ability, yet doth not, will not, give himself unto the word and prayer, or will not labour in the word and doctrine, unto the great prejudice of edification; and suppose the same person be openly defective as unto an exemplary conversation, and on the contrary layeth the stumbling-block of his own sins and follies before the eyes of others,—what shall we judge of his ministry, and of the state of that church whereof he is a constituent part as its ruler? I answer:—

(1.) I do not believe it is in the power of any church really to confer the pastoral office, by virtue of any ordination whatever, unto any who are openly and evidently destitute of all those previous qualifications which the Scripture requireth in them who are to be called unto this office. There is, indeed, a latitude to be allowed in judging of them in times of necessity and great penury of able teachers, so that persons in holy ministry design the glory of God and the edification of the church according to their ability; but otherwise there is a nullity in the pretended office.

(2.) Where any such are admitted, through ignorance or mistake, or the usurpation of undue power over churches in imposing ministers on them, there is not an absolute nullity in their administrations until they are discovered and convicted by the rule and law of Christ. But if, on evidence hereof, the people will voluntarily adhere unto them, they are partakers of their sins, and do what in them lies to unchurch themselves.

(3.) Where such persons are, by any means, placed as pastors in or over any churches, and there is no way for their removal or reformation, it is lawful unto, it is the duty of every one who takes care of his own edification and salvation to withdraw from the communion of such churches, and to join with such as wherein edification is bet-

ter provided for; for whereas this is the sole end of churches, of all their offices, officers, and administrations, it is the highest folly to imagine that any disciple of Christ can be or is obliged, by his authority, to abide in the communion of such churches, without seeking relief in the ways of his appointment, wherein that end is utterly overthrown.

(4.) Where the generality of churches, in any kind of association, are headed by pastors defective in these things, in the matter declared, there all public church-reformation is morally impossible, and it is the duty of private men to take care of their own souls, let churches and churchmen say what they please.

Some few things may yet be inquired into with reference unto the office of a pastor in the church; as,—

1. *Whether a man may be ordained a pastor or a minister without relation unto any particular church, so as to be invested with office-power thereby?*

It is usually said that a man may be ordained a minister unto or of the catholic church, or to convert infidels, although he be not related unto any particular flock or congregation.

I shall not at present discuss sundry things about the power and way of ordination which influence this controversy, but only speak briefly unto the thing itself. And,—

(1.) It is granted that a man *endowed with spiritual gifts* for the preaching of the gospel may be set apart *by fasting and prayer* unto that work, when he may be orderly called unto it in the providence of God; for,—[1.] Such an one hath a call unto it materially in the gifts which he hath received, warranting him unto the exercise of them for the edification of others as he hath occasion, 1 Pet. iv. 10, 11; 1 Cor. xiv. 12. Setting apart unto an important work by prayer is a moral duty, and useful in church-affairs in an especial manner, Acts xiii. 1–3. [2.] *A public testimony* unto the approbation of a person undertaking the work of preaching is necessary,—1*st*. Unto the *communion of churches*, that he may be received in any of them as is occasion; of which sort were the letters of recommendation in the primitive church, 1 Cor. xvi. 3; 2 Cor. iii. 1; 3 John 9; —2*dly*. Unto *the safety of them* amongst whom he may exercise his gifts, that they be not imposed on by false teachers or seducers. Nor would the primitive church allow, nor is it allowable in the communion of churches, that any person not so testified unto, not so sent and warranted, should undertake constantly to preach the gospel.

(2.) Such persons, so *set apart and sent*, may be esteemed ministers in the general notion of the word, and may be useful in the calling and planting of churches, wherein they may be instated in the pastoral office. This was originally the work of evangelists,

which office being ceased in the church (as shall be proved elsewhere), the work may be supplied by persons of this sort.

(3.) No church whatever hath power to *ordain* men ministers *for the conversion of infidels.* Since the cessation of extraordinary officers and offices, the care of that work is devolved merely on the providence of God, being left without the verge of church-institutions. God alone can send and warrant men for the undertaking of that work; nor can any man know or be satisfied in a call unto that work without some previous guidance of divine providence leading him thereunto. It is, indeed, the duty of all the ordinary ministers of the church to diffuse the knowledge of Christ and the gospel unto the heathen and infidels, among whom, or near unto whom, their habitation is cast, and they have all manner of divine warranty for their so doing, as many worthy persons have done effectually in New England; and it is the duty of every true Christian who may be cast among them by the providence of God to instruct them according unto his ability in the knowledge of the truth: but it is not in the power of any church, or any sort of ordinary officers, to ordain a person unto the office of the ministry for the conversion of the heathen antecedently unto any designation by divine providence thereunto.

(4.) No man can be properly or completely ordained unto the ministry, but he is ordained unto a determinate office, as a bishop, an elder, a pastor. But this no man can be but he who is ordained in and unto a particular church; for the contrary practice,—

[1.] Would be contrary to the constant practice of the apostles, *who ordained no ordinary officers* but in and unto particular churches, which were to be their proper charge and care, Acts xiv. 23; Tit. i. 5. Nor is there mention of any ordinary officers in the whole Scripture but such as were fixed in the particular churches whereunto they did relate, Acts xx. 28; Phil. i. 1; Rev. ii., iii.; nor was any such practice known or heard of in the primitive church: yea,—

[2.] It was *absolutely forbidden in the ancient church,* and all such ordinations declared null, so as not to communicate office-power or give any ministerial authority. So it is expressly in the first canon of the council of Chalcedon, and the council decrees, "That all imposition of hands in such cases is invalid and of no effect." Yea, so exact and careful were they in this matter, that if any one, for any just cause, as he judged himself, did leave his particular church or charge, they would not allow him the name or title of a bishop, or to officiate occasionally in that church, or anywhere else. This is evident in the case of Eustathius, a bishop of Pamphylia. The good man finding the discharge of his office very troublesome, by reason of secular businesses that it was encumbered withal, and

much opposition with reproach that befell him from the church itself, of his own accord laid down and resigned his charge, the church choosing one Theodorus in his room. But afterward he desired that, though he had left his charge, he might retain the name, title, and honour of a bishop. For this end he made a petition unto the council of Ephesus; who, as themselves express it, in mere commiseration unto the old man, condescended unto his desire as unto the name and title, but not as unto any office-power, which, they judged, related absolutely unto a particular charge, Epist. Conc. Ephes. 1, ad Synod. in Pamphyl.

[3.] Such ordination wants an *essential constitutive cause*, and part of the collation of office-power, which is the election of the people; and is therefore invalid. See what hath been proved before unto that purpose.

[4.] A bishop, an elder, a pastor, being terms of relation, to make any one so without relation unto a church, a people, a flock, is to make him a father who hath no child, or a husband who hath no wife, a *relate* without a *correlate*, which is impossible, and implies a contradiction.

[5.] It is inconsistent with the whole *nature* and *end* of the pastoral office. Whoever is duly called, set apart, or ordained unto that office, he doth therein and thereby take on himself the discharge of all the duties belonging thereunto, and is obliged to attend diligently unto them. If, then, we will take a view of what hath been proved before to belong unto this office, we shall find that not the least part, scarce any thing of it, can be undertaken and discharged by such as are ordained absolutely without relation unto particular churches. For any to take upon them to commit an office unto others, and not at the same time charge them with all the duties of that office and their immediate attendance on them, or for any to accept of an office and office-power not knowing when or where to exert the power or perform the duties of it, is irregular. In particular, ruling is an essential part of the pastoral office, which they cannot attend unto who have none to be ruled by them.

2. *May a pastor remove from one congregation unto another?*

This is a thing also which the ancient church made great provision against; for when some churches were increased in members, reputation, privileges, and wealth, above others, it grew an ordinary practice for the bishops to design and endeavour their own removal from a less unto a greater benefice. This is so severely interdicted in the councils of Nice and Chalcedon as that they would not allow that a man might be a bishop or presbyter in any other place but only in the church wherein he was originally ordained; and, therefore, if any did so remove themselves, decreed that they should be sent home again, and there abide, or cease to be church-officers,

Conc. Nicæ. can. 15, 16; Chalced., can. 5, 20. Pluralities, as they are called, and open contending for ecclesiastical promotions, benefices, and dignities, were then either unknown or openly condemned.

Yet it cannot be denied but that there may be just causes of the removal of a pastor from one congregation unto another; for whereas the end of all particular churches is to promote the edification of the catholic church in general, where, in any especial instance, such a removal is useful unto that end, it is equal it should be allowed. Cases of this nature may arise from the consideration of persons, places, times, and many other circumstances that I cannot insist on in particular. But that such removals may be without offence, it is required that they be made,—(1.) With the free consent of the churches concerned; (2.) With the advice of other churches, or their elders, with whom they walk in communion. And of examples of this kind, or of the removal of bishops or pastors from one church to another in an orderly manner, by advice and counsel, for the good of the whole church, there are many instances in the primitive times. Such was that of Gregory Nazianzen, removed from Casima to Constantinople; though I acknowledge it had no good success.

3. *May a pastor voluntarily, or of his own accord, resign and lay down his office, and remain in a private capacity?*

This also was judged inconvenient, if not unlawful, by the first synod of Ephesus, in the case of Eustathius. He was, as it appears, an aged man, one that loved his own peace and quietness, and who could not well bear the oppositions and reproaches which he met withal from the church, or some in it, and thereon solemnly, upon his own judgment, without advice, laid down and renounced his office in the church; who thereupon chose a good man in his room. Yet did the synod condemn this practice, and that not without weighty reasons, whereby they confirmed their judgment.

But yet no general rule can be established in this case; nor was the judgment or practice of the primitive church precise herein. Clemens, in his epistle to the church of Corinth, expressly adviseth those on whose occasion there was disturbance and divisions in the church to lay down their office and withdraw from it. Gregory Nazianzen did the same at Constantinople; and protested openly that although he were himself innocent and free from blame, as he truly was, and one of the greatest men of his age, yet he would depart or be cast out, rather than they should not have peace among them; which he did accordingly, Orat. 52, et Vit. Greg. Nazian. And afterward a synod at Constantinople, under Photius, concluded that in some cases it is lawful, can. 5. Wherefore,—

(1.) It seems not to be lawful so to do merely on the account of *weakness for work* and labour, though occasioned by age, sickness, or bodily distemper: for no man is any way obliged to do more than

he is able with the regular preservation of his life; and the church is obliged to be satisfied with the conscientious discharge of what abilities a pastor hath, otherwise providing for itself in what is wanting.

(2.) It is not lawful merely on a *weariness of and despondency under* opposition and reproaches, which a pastor is called and obliged to undergo for the good and edification of the flock, and not to faint in the warfare whereto he is called.

These two were the reasons of Eustathius at Perga, which were disallowed in the council at Ephesus. But,—

(3.) It is lawful in *such an incurable decay of intellectual abilities* as whereon a man can discharge no duty of the pastoral office unto the edification of the church.

(4.) It is lawful in case of *incurable divisions* in the church, constantly obstructing its edification, and which cannot be removed whilst such a one continues in his office, though he be no way the cause of them. This is the case wherein Clemens gives advice, and whereof Gregory gave an example in his own practice.

But this case and its determination will hold only where the divisions are incurable by any other ways and means; for if those who cause such divisions may be cast out of the church, or the church may withdraw communion from them, or if there be divisions in fixed parties and principles, opinions or practices, they may separate into distinct communions. In such cases this remedy, by the pastor's laying down his office, is not to be made use of; otherwise all things are to be done for edification.

(5.) It may be lawful where the church is *wholly negligent in its duty*, and persists in that negligence, after admonition, in providing, according to their abilities, for the outward necessity of their pastor and his family. But this case cannot be determined without the consideration of many particular circumstances.

(6.) Where all or many of these causes concur, so as that a man cannot cheerfully and comfortably go on in the discharge of his office, especially if he be pressed *in point of conscience*, through the church's noncompliance with their duty with respect unto any of the institutions of Christ, and if the edification of the church, which is at present obstructed, may be provided for, in their own judgment, after a due manner, there is no such grievous yoke laid by the Lord Christ on the necks of any of his servants but that such a person may peaceably lay down his office in such a church, and either abide in a private station, or take the care of another church, wherein he may discharge his office (being yet of ability) unto his own comfort and their edification.

CHAPTER VI.

Of the office of teachers in the church, or an inquiry into the state, condition, and work of those called teachers in the Scripture.

THE Lord Christ hath given unto his church "pastors and teachers," Eph. iv. 11. He hath "set in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers," 1 Cor. xii. 28. In the church that was at Antioch there were "prophets and teachers," Acts xiii. 1; and their work is both described and assigned unto them, as we shall see afterward.

But the thoughts of learned men about those who in the Scripture are called teachers are very various, nor is the determination of their state and condition easy or obvious, as we shall find in our inquiry.

If there were originally a distinct office of teachers in the church, it was lost for many ages; but yet there was always a shadow or appearance of it retained, first in public catechists, and then in doctors or professors of theology in the schools belonging unto any church. But this, as unto the title of *doctor* or teacher, is but a late invention; for the occasion of it rose about the year of Christ 1135. Lotharius the emperor having found in Italy a copy of the Roman civil law, and being greatly taken with it, he ordained that it should be publicly read and expounded in the schools. This he began, by the direction of Imerius his chancellor, at Bononia; and to give encouragement unto this employment, they ordained that those who were the public professors of it should be solemnly created doctors; of whom Bulgarus Hugolinus, with others, were the first. Not long after, this rite of creating doctors was borrowed of the lawyers by divines who publicly taught divinity in their schools; and this imitation first took place in Bononia, Paris, and Oxford. But this name is since grown a title of honour to sundry sorts of persons, whether unto any good use or purpose or no I know not; but it is in use, and not worth contending about, especially if, as unto some of them, it be fairly reconcilable unto that of our Saviour, Matt. xxiii. 8.

But the custom of having in the church teachers that did publicly explain and vindicate the principles of religion is far more ancient, and of known usage in the primitive churches. Such was the practice of the church of Alexandria in their school, wherein the famous Pantænus, Origen, and Clemens, were teachers; an imitation whereof has been continued in all ages of the church.

And, indeed, the continuation of such a peculiar work and employment, to be discharged in manner of an office, is an evidence that originally there was such a distinct office in the church; for although in the Roman church they had instituted sundry orders of sacred officers, borrowed from the Jews or Gentiles, which have no resem-

blance unto any thing mentioned in the Scripture, yet sundry things abused and corrupted by them in church-officers took their occasional rise from what is so mentioned.

There are four opinions concerning those who are called by this name in the New Testament:—

1. Some say that no office at all is denoted by it, it being only a general appellation of those that taught others, whether constantly or occasionally. Such were the prophets in the church of Corinth, that spake occasionally and in their turns, 1 Cor. xiv.; which is that which all might do who had ability for it, verses 5, 24, 25.

2. Some say it is only another name for the same office with that of a pastor, and so not [intended] to denote any distinct office; of which mind Jerome seems to be, Eph. iv.

3. Others allow that it was a distinct office, whereunto some were called and set apart in the church, but it was only to teach (and that in a peculiar manner) the principles of religion, but had no interest in the rule of the church or the administration of the sacred mysteries. So the pastor in the church was to rule, and teach, and administer the sacred mysteries; the teacher to teach or instruct only, but not to rule nor dispense the sacraments; and the ruling elder to rule only, and neither to teach nor administer sacraments;—which hath the appearance of order, both useful and beautiful.

4. Some judge that it was a *distinct office*, but of the same nature and kind with that of the pastor, endowed with all the same powers, but differenced from it with respect unto gifts and a peculiar kind of work allotted unto it. But this opinion hath this seeming disadvantage, that the difference between them is so small as not to be sufficient to give a distinct denomination of officers or to constitute a distinct office; and, it may be, such a distinction in gifts will seldom appear, so that the church may be guided thereby in the choice of meet persons unto distinct offices.

But Scripture testimony and rule must take place, and I shall briefly examine all these opinions.

The FIRST is, That this is *not the name of any officer, nor is a teacher, as such, any officer in the church*, but it is used only as a general name for any that teach, on any account, the doctrine of the gospel. I do not, indeed, know of any who have in particular contended for this opinion, but I observe that very many expositors take no further notice of them but as such. This seems to me to be most remote from the truth.

It is true, that in the first churches not only some, but all who had received spiritual light in the gifts of knowledge and utterance, did teach and instruct others as they had opportunity, 1 Pet. iv. 8–11. Hence the heathen philosophers, as Celsus in particular, objected to the Christians of old that they suffered sutlers, and weavers, and

cobblers, to teach among them; which they who knew that Paul himself, their great apostle, wrought at a trade not much better, were not offended at. Of this sort were the disciples mentioned Acts viii. 4; so was Aquila, chap. xviii. 26, and the many prophets in the church of Corinth, 1 Cor. xiv. 29. But,—

1. The name διδάσκαλος is not used in the New Testament but for a teacher with authority. The apostle John tells us that διδάσκαλος is the same with ῥαββουνί, chap. xx. 16, or as it is written, ῥαββονί,[1] Mark x. 51; which, in their mixed dialect, was the same with rabbi. And רַב, רַבִּי, and רַבָּא, were then in use for the Hebrew מוֹרֶה: of which see Job xxxvi. 22; Isa. xxx. 20. Now, the constant signification of these words is "a master in teaching," "a teacher with authority;" nor is διδάσκαλος used in the New Testament but for such a one. And therefore those who are called teachers were such as were set apart unto the office of teaching, and not such as were so called from an occasional work or duty.

2. Teachers are numbered among the officers which Christ hath given unto and set in the church, Eph. iv. 11; 1 Cor. xii. 28: so that originally church-officers were intended by them is beyond contradiction.

3. They are mentioned as those who, with others, did preside in the church, and join in the public ministrations of it, Acts xiii. 1, 2.

4. They are charged to attend unto the work of teaching; which none can be but they whose office it is to teach, Rom. xii. 7.

It is therefore undeniable that there is such an office as that of a teacher mentioned in the Scripture.

The SECOND opinion is, That *although a teacher be a church-officer, yet no distinct office is intended in that denomination.* It is, say they, only another name for a pastor, the office being one and the same, the same persons being both pastors and teachers, or called by these several names, as they have other titles also ascribed unto them.

So it is fallen out, and so it is usual in things of this nature, that men run into extremes; truth pleaseth them not. In the first deviation of the church from its primitive institution, there were introduced sundry offices to the church that were not of divine institution, borrowed partly of the Jews and partly of the Gentiles; which issued in the seven orders of the church of Rome. They did not utterly reject any that were of a divine original, but retained some kind of figure, shadow, or image of them; but they brought in others that were merely of their own invention. In the rejection of this exorbitancy, some are apt to run into the other extreme; they will deny and reject some of them that have a divine warranty for their original.

[1] So given in the textus receptus. Critical editions of the New Testament now give ῥαββουνί.—ED.

Howbeit they are not many nor burdensome; yea, they are all such as without the continuation of them, the edification of the church cannot be carried on in a due manner: for unto the beauty and order of the church, in its rule and worship, it is required not only that there be many officers in each church, but also that they be of sundry sorts; all harmony in things natural, political, and ecclesiastical, arising from variety with proportion. And he that shall with calmness and without prejudice consider the whole work that is to be done in churches, with the end of their institution, will be able to understand the necessity of pastors, teachers, ruling-elders, and deacons, for those ends, and no other. And this I hope I shall demonstrate in the consideration of these respective offices, with the duties that belong unto them, as I have considered one of them already. Wherefore, as unto the opinion under present consideration, I say,—

1. In the primitive church, about the end of the second century, before there was the least attempt to introduce new officers into the church, there were persons called unto the office and work of public teaching who were not pastors, nor called unto the administration of other ordinances. Those of this sort in the church of Alexandria were, by reason of their extraordinary abilities, quickly of great fame and renown. Their constant work was, publicly unto all comers, believers and unbelievers, to explain and teach the principles of Christian religion, defending and vindicating it from the opposition of its heathen adversaries, whether atheists or philosophers. This had never been so exactly practised in the church if it had not derived from divine institution. And of this sort is the ὁ κατηχῶν, "the catechist," intended by the apostle, Gal. vi. 6; for it is such a one as constantly labours in the work of preaching, and hath those who depend upon his ministry therein, οἱ κατηχούμενοι, those that are taught or catechised by him; for hence alone it is that maintenance is due unto him for his work: "Let the catechised communicate unto the catechist," the taught unto the teacher, "in all good things." And it is not the pastor of the church that he intends; for he speaks of him in the same case in another manner, and nowhere only with respect unto teaching alone.

2. There is a plain distinction between the offices of a pastor and a teacher: Eph. iv. 11, "Some pastors and teachers." This is one of the instances wherein men try their wits in putting in exceptions unto plain Scripture testimonies, as some or other do in all other cases; which if it may be allowed, we shall have nothing left us certain in the whole book of God. The apostle enumerates distinctly all the teaching officers of the church, both extraordinary and ordinary. "It is granted that there is a difference between apostles, prophets, and evangelists; but there is none," say some, "between pastors and teachers," which are also named distinctly. Why so?

"Because there is an interposition of the article τούς between those of the former sort, and not between 'pastors and teachers;'"—a very weak consideration to control the evidence of the design of the apostle in the words. We are not to prescribe unto him how he shall express himself. But this I know, that the discretive and copulative conjunction καί, "and," between "pastors" and "teachers," doth no less distinguish them the one from the other than the τοὺς μέν and τοὺς δέ before made use of; and this I shall confirm from the words themselves:—

(1.) The apostle doth not say "pastors *or* teachers," which, in congruity of speech, should have been done if the same persons and the same office were intended; and the discretive particle in the close of such an enumeration of things distinct as that in this place is of the same force with the other notes of distinction before used.

(2.) After he hath named *pastors* he nameth *teachers*, with a note of distinction. This must either contain the addition of a new office, or be an interpretation of what went before, as if he had said, "Pastors, that is, teachers." If it be the latter, then the name of teachers must be added as that which was better known than that of pastors, and more expressive of the office intended (it is declared who are meant by pastors in calling them teachers), or else the addition of the word is merely superfluous. But this is quite otherwise, the name of pastor being more known as unto the indigitation of office power and care, and more appropriated thereunto, than that of teacher, which is both a common name, not absolutely appropriated unto office, and respective of one part of the pastoral office and duty only.

(3.) No instance can be given, in any place where there is an *enumeration of church-officers*, either by their names, as 1 Cor. xii. 28, or by their work, as Rom. xii. 6–8, or by the offices themselves, as Phil. i. 1, of the same officer, at the same time, being expressed under various names; which, indeed, must needs introduce confusion into such an enumeration. It is true, the same officers are in the Scriptures called by several names, as pastors, bishops, presbyters; but if it had been said anywhere that there were in the church bishops *and* presbyters, it must be acknowledged that they were distinct officers, as bishops and deacons are, Phil. i. 1.

(4.) The words in their first notion are *not synonymous;* for all pastors are teachers, but all teachers are not pastors: and therefore the latter cannot be exegetical of the former.

3. As these teachers are so called and named in contradistinction unto pastors in the same place, so they have *distinct office-works* and duties assigned unto them in the same place also: Rom. xii. 7, 8, "He that teacheth on teaching, he that exhorteth on exhortation." If they have especial works to attend unto distinctly by virtue of their offices, then are their offices distinct also; for from one there is an

especial obligation unto one sort of duties, and to another sort from the other.

4. These teachers are set in the church as in a distinct office from that of prophets, "secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers," 1 Cor. xii. 28. And so they are mentioned distinctly in the church of Antioch, Acts xiii. 1, "There were in the church that was at Antioch certain prophets and teachers." But in both places pastors are comprised under the name of prophets, exhortation being an especial branch of prophesy, Rom. xii. 6–8.

5. There is a peculiar *institution of maintenance* for these teachers, which argues a distinct office, Gal. vi. 6.

From all these considerations it appears that the teachers mentioned in the Scripture were officers in the church distinct from pastors: for they are distinguished from them,—(1.) By their *name*, declarative of the especial nature of their office; (2.) By their *peculiar work* which they are to attend unto, in teaching by virtue of office; (3.) By their *distinct placing* in the church as peculiar officers in it, distinct from prophets or pastors; (4.) By the *especial constitution* of their necessary maintenance; (5.) By the *necessity of their work*, to be distinctly carried on in the church. Which may suffice for the removal of the second opinion.

The THIRD is, that teachers are *a distinct office* in the church, but such whose office, work, and power, is confined unto *teaching only*, so as that they have no interest in rule or the administration of the sacraments. And,—

1. I acknowledge that this seems to have been the way and practice of the churches after the apostles; for they had ordinarily catechists and teachers in assemblies like schools, that were not called unto the whole work of the ministry.

2. The name of a teacher, neither in its native signification nor in its ordinary application, as expressive of the work of this office, doth extend itself beyond or signify any thing but the mere power and duty of teaching. It is otherwise as unto the names of pastors, bishops or overseers, elders; which, as unto the two former, their constant use in the Scripture, suited unto their signification, include the whole work of the ministry, and the latter is a name of dignity and rule. Upon the proposal of church-officers under these names, the whole of office-power and duty is apprehended as included in them. But the name of a teacher, especially as significant of that of rabbi among the Jews, carries along with it a confinement unto an especial work or duty.

3. I do judge it lawful for any church, from the nature of the thing itself, Scripture, general rules and directions, to choose, call, and set apart, meet persons unto the office, work, and duty of teachers, without an interest in the rule of the church, or the administration

of the holy ordinances of worship. The same thing is practised by many, for the substance of it, though not in due order; and, it may be, the practice hereof, duly observed, would lead us unto the original institution of this office. But,—

4. Whereas a teacher, merely as such, hath no right unto rule or the administration of ordinances, no more than the doctors among the Jews had right to offer sacrifices in the temple, yet he who is called to be a teacher may also at the same time be called to be an elder, and a teaching elder hath the power of all holy administrations committed to him.

5. But he that is called to be a teacher in a peculiar manner, although he be an elder also, is to attend peculiarly unto that part of his work from whence he receiveth his denomination.

And so I shall at present dismiss this third opinion unto further consideration, if there be any occasion for it.

The FOURTH opinion I rather embrace than any of the others, namely, upon a supposition that a teacher is a distinct officer in the church, his office is *of the same kind with that of the pastor*, though distinguished from it as unto degrees, both materially and formally; for,—

1. They are joined with pastors in the same order, as their associates in office, Eph. iv. 11: so they are with prophets, and set in the church as they are, 1 Cor. xii. 28; Acts xiii. 1.

2. They have a peculiar work, of the same general nature with that of pastors, assigned unto them, Rom. xii. 7. Being to teach or preach the gospel by virtue of office, they have the same office for substance with the pastors.

3. They are said λειτουργῆσαι in the church, Acts xiii. 1, 2, which compriseth all sacred administrations.

Wherefore, upon the consideration of all that is spoken in the Scripture concerning church-teachers, with the various conjectures of all sorts of writers about them, I shall conclude my own thoughts in some few observations, and then inquire into the state of the church with reference unto these "pastors and teachers." And I say,—

1. There *may be teachers* in a church called only unto the work of teaching, without any further interest in rule or right unto the administration of the sacraments. Such they seem to be who are mentioned, Gal. vi. 6. They are there called peculiarly κατηχοῦντες, "catechists;" and παιδαγωγοί, "instructors of those that are young" in the rudiments of religion, 1 Cor. iv. 15. And such there were in the primitive churches; some whereof were eminent, famous, and useful. And this was very necessary in those days when the churches were great and numerous; for whereas the whole rule of the church, and the administration of all ordinances in it, are originally committed unto the pastor, as belonging entirely unto his office, the discharge

of it in all its parts, unto the edification of the church, especially when it is numerous, being impossible for any one man, or it may be more, in the same office, where all are obliged unto an especial attendance on one part of it, namely, the word and prayer, it pleased the Lord Christ to appoint such as, in distinct offices, should be associated with them for the discharge of sundry parts of their duty. So were deacons ordained to take care of the poor and the outward concerns of the church, without any interest in rule or right to teach. So were, as we shall prove, elders ordained to assist and help in rule, without any call to preach or administer the sacraments. And so were teachers appointed to instruct the church and others in the truth, who had no right to rule or the administration of other ordinances. And thus, although the whole duty of the edification of the church be still incumbent on the pastors, yet being supplied with assistance to all the parts of it, it may be comfortably discharged by them. And if this order were observed in all churches, not only many inconveniencies would be prevented, but the order and edification of the church greatly promoted.

2. He who is *peculiarly called to be a teacher*, with reference unto a distinction from a pastor, may yet at the same time be called to *be an elder also;* that is, to be a teaching elder. And where there is in any officer a concurrence of both these,—a right unto rule as an elder and power to teach or preach the gospel,—there is the same office and office-power, for the substance of it, as there is in the pastor.

3. On the foregoing supposition, there yet remains *a distinction between the office of a pastor and teacher;*—which, as far as light may be taken from their names and distinct ascriptions unto them, consists materially in the different gifts which those to be called unto office have received, which the church in their call ought to have respect unto; and formally in the peculiar exercise of those gifts in the discharge of their office, according unto the assignation of their especial work unto them, which themselves are to attend unto.

Upon what hath been before discoursed concerning the office of pastors and teachers, it may be inquired whether there may be many of them in a particular church, or whether there ought only to be of one of each sort? And I say,—

1. Take teachers in the third sense, for those who are only so, and have no further interest in office-power, and there is no doubt but that there may be as many of them in any church as are necessary unto its edification, and ought so to be. And a due observation of this institution would prevent the inconvenience of men's preaching constantly who are in no office of the church; for although I do grant that those who have once been regularly and solemnly set apart or ordained unto the ministry have the right of constant preaching in-

herent in them, and the duty of it incumbent on them, though they may be separated from those churches wherein and unto whom they were peculiarly ordained, yet for men to give themselves up constantly unto the work of teaching by preaching the gospel who never were set apart by the church thereunto, I know not that it can be justified.

2. If there be but one sort of elders mentioned in the Scripture, it is out of all question that there may be many pastors in the same church; for there were many elders in every church, Acts xiv. 23, xx. 17, 28; Phil. i. 1; Tit. i. 5: but if there are sundry sorts of elders mentioned in the Scripture, as pastors who peculiarly feed the flock, those teaching elders of whom we have spoken, and those rulers concerning whom we shall treat in the next place, then no determination of this inquiry can be taken from the multiplication of them in any church.

3. It is certain that the order very early observed in the church was one pastor, ὁ προεστώς, "præses," quickly called "episcopus," by way of distinction, with many elders assisting in rule and teaching, and deacons ministering in the things of this life, whereby the order of the church was preserved and its authority represented; yet I will not deny but that in each particular church there may be many pastors with an equality of power, if the edification of the church do require it.

4. It was the alteration of the state of the church from its primitive constitution, and deviation from its first order, by an occasional coalescency of many churches into one, by a new form of churches never appointed by Christ, which came not in until after the end of the second century, that gave occasion to corrupt this order into an episcopal pre-eminence, which degenerated more and more into confusion under the name of *order*. And the absolute equality of many pastors in one and the same church is liable unto many inconveniencies if not diligently watched against.

5. Wherefore let the state of the church be preserved and kept unto its original constitution, which is congregational, and no other, and I do judge that the order of the officers which was so early in the primitive church,—namely, of one pastor or bishop in one church, assisted in rule and all holy administrations with many elders teaching or ruling only,—doth not so overthrow church-order as to render its rule or discipline useless.

6. But whereas there is no difference in the Scripture, as unto office or power, intimated between bishops and presbyters, as we have proved, when there are many teaching elders in any church, an equality in office and power is to be preserved. But yet this takes not off from the due preference of the pastoral office, nor from the necessity of precedence for the observation of order in all church assem-

blies, nor from the consideration of the peculiar advantages which gifts, age, abilities, prudence, and experience, which may belong unto some, according to rule, may give.

CHAPTER VII.

Of the rule of the church, or of ruling elders.

1. THE rule and government of the church, or *the execution of the authority of Christ* therein, is in the hand of the elders. All elders in office have rule, and none have rule in the church but elders. As such, rule doth belong unto them. The apostles, by virtue of their especial office, were intrusted with all church-power; but therefore they were elders also, 1 Pet. v. 1; 2 John 1; 3 John 1. See Acts xxi. 18; 1 Tim. v. 17. There are some of them, on other accounts, called "bishops, pastors, teachers, ministers, guides;" but what belongs unto any of them in point of rule, or what interest they have therein, it belongs unto them as elders, and not otherwise, Acts xx. 17, 28.

So under the old testament, where the word doth not signify a difference in age, but is used in a moral sense, elders are the same with rulers or governors, whether in offices civil or ecclesiastical; especially the rulers of the church were constantly called its elders. And the use of the word, with the abuse of the power or office intended by it, is traduced to signify men in authority ("seniores, aldermanni") in all places.

2. Church-power, acted in its rule, is called "The keys of the kingdom of heaven," by an expression derived from the keys that were a sign of office-power in the families of kings, Isa. xxii. 22; and it is used by our Saviour himself to denote the communication of church-power unto others, which is absolutely and universally vested in himself, under the name of "The key of David," Rev. iii. 7; Matt. xvi. 19.

3. These keys are usually referred unto two heads,—namely, the one of *order*, the other of *jurisdiction*.

4. By the "key of order," the *spiritual right, power, and authority of bishops* or pastors to preach the word, to administer the sacraments, and doctrinally to bind and loose the consciences of men, are intended.

5. By "jurisdiction," *the rule, government, or discipline of the church is designed;* though it was never so called or esteemed in the Scripture, or the primitive church until the whole nature of church rule or discipline was depraved and changed. Therefore, neither the word, nor any thing that is signified by it or which it is applied unto, ought to be admitted unto any consideration in the things that

belong unto the church or its rule, it being expressive of and directing unto that corrupt administration of things ecclesiastical, according unto the canon law, by which all church rule and order is destroyed. I do therefore at once dismiss all disputes about it, as of things foreign to the gospel and Christian religion; I mean as unto the institutions of Christ in his church. The civil jurisdiction of supreme magistrates about the externals of religion is of another consideration; but that these keys do include the twofold distinct powers of teaching and rule, of doctrine and discipline, is freely granted.

6. In the church of England (as in that of Rome) there is a peculiar distribution made of these keys. Unto some,—that is, unto one special sort or order of men,—they are both granted, *both the key of order and of jurisdiction;* which is unto diocesan bishops, with some others, under various canonical restrictions and limitations, as deans and archdeacons. Unto some is granted *the key of order only,* without the least interest in jurisdiction or rule by virtue of their office; which are the parochial ministers, or mere presbyters, without any additional title or power, as of commissary surrogates, or the like. And unto a third sort there is granted *the key of rule or jurisdiction almost plenipotent,* who have no share in the key of order,—that is, were never ordained, separated, dedicated unto any office in the church,—such as are the chancellors, etc.

7. These chancellors are the *only lay elders* that I know anywhere in any church; that is, persons intrusted with the rule of the church and the disposition of its censures, who are not ordained unto any church-office, but in all other things continue in the order of the laity or the people. All church-rulers by institution are elders; to be an elder of the church and a ruler in it is all one: wherefore these persons being rulers in the church, and yet thus continuing in the order of the people, are lay elders; whom I wonder how so many of the church came so seriously to oppose, seeing this order of men is owned by none but themselves. The truth is, and it must be acknowledged, that there is no known church in the world (I mean, whose order is known unto us, and is of any public consideration) but they do dispose the rule of the church, in part, into the hands of persons who have not the power of authoritative preaching of the word and administration of the sacraments committed unto them; for even those who place the whole external rule of the church in the civil magistrate do it as they judge him an officer of the church, intrusted by Christ with church-power. And those who deny any such officers as are usually called "ruling elders" in the reformed churches to be of divine institution, yet maintain that it is very necessary that there should be such officers in the church, either appointed by the magistrate or chosen by the people, and that with cogent arguments. See Imp. Sum. Pot. circ. sacra.

8. But this distribution mentioned of church-power is *unscriptural*, nor is there any footsteps of it in *antiquity*. It is so as unto the two latter branches of it. That any one should have the power of order to preach the word, to administer the seals, to bind and loose the conscience doctrinally, or ministerially to bind and loose in the court of conscience, and yet by the virtue of that office which gives him this power not to have a right and power of rule or discipline, to bind and loose in the court of the church, is that which neither the Scripture nor any example of the primitive church doth give countenance unto. And as by this means those are abridged and deprived of their power to whom it is granted by the institution and law of Christ (as it is with all elders duly called unto their office), so in the third branch there is a grant of church-power unto such as by the law of Christ are excluded from any interest therein; the enormity of which constitution I shall not at present insist upon.

But inquiry must be made what the Scripture directs unto herein. And,—

1. There is *a work and duty of rule in the church* distinct from the work and duty of pastoral feeding by the preaching of the word and administration of the sacraments. All agree herein, unless it be Erastus and those that follow him, who seem to oppose it; but their arguments lie not against rule in general, which were brutish, but only a rule by external jurisdiction in the elders of the church. So they grant the general assertion of the necessity of rule, for who can deny it? only they contend about the subject of power required thereunto. A spiritual rule, by virtue of mutual voluntary confederation, for the preservation of peace, purity, and order in the church, few of that opinion deny, at least it is not that which they do oppose; for to deny all rule and discipline in the church, with all administration of censures, in the exercise of a spiritual power internally inherent in the church, is to deny the church to be a spiritual political society, overthrow its nature, and frustrate its institution, in direct opposition unto the Scripture. That there is such a rule in the Christian church, see Acts xx. 28; Rom. xii. 8; 1 Cor. xii. 28; 1 Tim. iii. 5, v. 17; Heb. xiii. 7, 17; Rev. ii., iii.

2. *Different and distinct gifts* are required unto the discharge of these *distinct works and duties*. This belongs unto the harmony of the dispensation of the gospel. Gifts are bestowed to answer all duties prescribed. Hence they are the first foundation of all power, work, and duty in the church: "Unto every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ;" that is, ability for duty according to the measure wherein Christ is pleased to grant it, Eph. iv. 7. "There are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit; . . . . . but the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal," 1 Cor. xii. 4, 7–10. "Having then gifts differing according

to the grace that is given to us," etc., Rom. xii. 6–8. "As every man hath received the gift, so minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God," 1 Pet. iv. 10. Hence are they called "The powers of the world to come," Heb. vi. 4, 5. Wherefore, differing gifts are the first foundation of differing offices and duties.

3. That *differing gifts* are required unto the different works of *pastoral teaching* on the one hand, and *practical rule* on the other, is evident,—(1.) From *the light of reason*, and the nature of the works themselves being so different; and, (2.) From *experience*. Some men are fitted by gifts for the dispensation of the word and doctrine in a way of pastoral feeding who have no useful ability for the work of rule, and some are fitted for rule who have no gifts for the discharge of the pastoral work in preaching; yea, it is very seldom that both these sorts of gifts do concur in any eminency in the same person, or without some notable defect. Those who are ready to assume all things unto themselves are, for the most part, fit for nothing at all. And hence it is that most of those who esteem both these works to belong principally unto themselves do almost totally decline the one, or that of pastoral preaching, under a pretence of attending unto the other, that is, rule, in a very preposterous way; for they omit that which is incomparably the greater and more worthy for that which is less and inferior unto it, although it should be attended unto in a due manner.

But this, and sundry other things of the like nature, proceed from the corruption of that traditional notion, which is true in itself and continued among all sorts of Christians, namely, that there ought to be some on whom the rule of the church is in an especial manner incumbent, and whose principal work it is to attend thereunto; for the great depravations of all church-government proceed from the corruption and abuse of this notion, which in itself and its original is true and sacred. Herein also, "Malum habitat in alieno fundo;" there is no corruption in church order or rule but is corruptly derived from or set up as an image of some divine institution.

4. The work of rule, as distinct from teaching, is in general to *watch over the walking or conversation of the members of the church with authority*, exhorting, comforting, admonishing, reproving, encouraging, directing of them, as occasion shall require. The gifts necessary hereunto are diligence, wisdom, courage, and gravity; as we shall see afterward. The pastoral work is principally to "declare the whole counsel of God," to "divide the word aright," or to "labour in the word and doctrine," both as unto the general dispensation and particular application of it, in all seasons and on all occasions. Hereunto spiritual wisdom, knowledge, sound judgment, experience, and utterance, are required, all to be improved by continual

study of the word and prayer. But this difference of gifts unto these distinct works doth not of itself constitute distinct offices, because the same persons may be meetly furnished with those of both sorts.

5. Yet distinct works and duties, though some were furnished with gifts for both, were a ground, in the wisdom of the Holy Ghost, *for distinct offices* in the church, where one sort of them was as much as those of one office could ordinarily attend unto, Acts vi. 2–4. Ministration unto the poor of the church for the supply of their temporal necessities is an ordinance of Christ. For the administration hereof the apostles were furnished with gifts and wisdom above all others; but yet, because there was another part of their work and duty superior hereunto, and of greater necessity unto the propagation of the gospel and edification of the church,—namely, a diligent attendance unto the word and prayer,—the wisdom of the Holy Ghost in them thought meet to erect a new office in the church for the discharge of that part of the ministerial duty, which was to be attended unto, yet not so as to be any obstruction unto the other. I do not observe this as if it were lawful for any others after them to do the same,—namely, upon a supposition of an especial work to erect an especial office. Only, I would demonstrate from hence the equity and reasonable ground of that institution, which we shall afterward evince.

6. *The work of the ministry in prayer and preaching of the word,* or labour in the word and doctrine, whereunto the administration of the seals of the covenant is annexed, with all the duties that belong unto the especial application of these things (before insisted on) unto the flock, are ordinarily sufficient *to take up the whole man,* and the utmost of their endowments who are called unto the pastoral office in the church. The very nature of the work in itself is such as that the apostle, giving a short description of it, adds, as an intimation of its greatness and excellency, " Who is sufficient for these things?" 2 Cor. ii. 16. And the manner of its performance adds unto its weight; for,—not to mention that intension of mind, in the exercise of faith, love, zeal, and compassion, which is required of them in the discharge of their whole office,—the diligent consideration of the state of the flock, so as to provide spiritual food convenient for them, with a constant attendance unto the issues and effects of the word in the consciences and lives of men, is enough, for the most part, to take up their whole time and strength.

It is gross ignorance or negligence that occasioneth any to be otherwise minded. As the work of the ministry is generally discharged, as consisting only in a weekly provision of sermons and the performance of some stated offices by reading, men may have time and liberty enough to attend unto other occasions; but in such persons we are not at present concerned. Our rule is plain, 1 Tim. iv. 12–16.

7. It doth not hence follow that those who are called unto the ministry of the word, as pastors and teachers, who are elders also, are *divested of the right of rule in the church,* or discharged from the exercise of it, because others not called unto their office are appointed to be assistant unto them, that is, *helps in the government;* for the right and duty of rule is inseparable from the office of elders, which all bishops or pastors are. The right is still in them, and the exercise of it, consistently with their more excellent work, is required of them. So was it in the first institution of the sanhedrim in the church of Israel, Exod. xviii. 17–23. Moses had before the sole rule and government of the people. In the addition that was made of an eldership for his assistance, there was no diminution of his right or the exercise of it according to his precedent power. And the apostles, in the constitution of elders in every church, derogated nothing from their own authority, nor discharged themselves of their care. So when they appointed deacons to take care of supplies for the poor, they did not forego their own right nor the exercise of their duty, as their other work would permit them, Gal. ii. 9, 10; and in particular, the apostle Paul manifested his concernment herein in the care he took about a collection for the poor in all churches.

8. As we observed at the entrance of this chapter, *the whole work of the church,* as unto authoritative teaching and rule, is committed unto the *elders;* for authoritative teaching and ruling is teaching and ruling by virtue of office, and this office whereunto they do belong is that of elders, as it is undeniably attested, Acts xx. 17, etc. All that belongs unto the care, inspection, oversight, rule, and instruction of the church, is committed unto the elders of it expressly; for "elders" is a name derived from the Jews, denoting them that have authority in the church. The first signification of the word, in all languages, respects age. Elders are old men, well stricken in years; unto whom respect and reverence is due by the law of nature and Scripture command, unless they forfeit their privilege by levity or wickedness,—which they often do. Now, ancient men were originally judged, if not the only, yet the most meet for rule, and were before others constantly called thereunto. Hence the name of "elders" was appropriated unto them who did preside and rule over others in any kind.

Only, it may be observed that there is in the Scripture no mention of rulers that are called elders, but such as are in a subordinate power and authority only. Those who were in supreme, absolute power, as kings and princes, are never called "elders;" but elders by office were such only as had ministerial power under others. Wherefore, the highest officers in the Christian church being called elders, even the apostles themselves, and Peter in particular, 1 Epist. v. 1, 2, it is evident that they have only a ministerial power; and so

it is declared, verse 4. The pope would now scarce take it well to be esteemed only an elder of the church of Rome, unless it be in the same sense wherein the Turkish monarch is called the Grand Seignior. But those who would be in the church above elders have no office in it, whatever usurpation they may make over it.

9. To the complete constitution of any particular church, or the perfection of its organical state, it is required that there be *many elders* in it, at least more than one. In this proposition lies the next foundation of the truth which we plead for; and therefore it must be distinctly considered. I do not determine what their number ought to be, nor is it determinable, as unto all churches; for the light of nature sufficiently directs that it is to be proportioned unto the work and end designed. Where a church is numerous, there is a necessity of increasing their number proportionably unto their work. In the days of Cyprian there were in the church of Carthage ten or twelve of them, that are mentioned by name; and at the same time there were a great many in the church of Rome, under Cornelius. Where the churches are small, the number of elders may be so also; for no office is appointed in the church for pomp or show, but for labour only, and so many are necessary in each office as are able to discharge the work which is allotted unto them. But that church, be it small or great, is not complete in its state, is defective, which hath not more elders than one, which hath not so many as are sufficient for their work.

10. The government of the church, in the judgment and practice of some, is absolutely *democratical or popular*. They judge that all church power or authority is seated and settled in the community of the brethren, or body of the people; and they look on elders or ministers only as servants of the church, not only materially in the duties they perform, and finally for their edification, serving for the good of the church in the things of the church, but formally also, as acting the authority of the church by a mere delegation, and not any of their own received directly from Christ by virtue of his law and institution. Hence they do occasionally appoint persons among themselves, not called unto, not vested with any office, to administer the supper of the Lord, or any other solemn office of worship. On this principle and supposition I see no necessity for any elders at all, though usually they do confer this office on some with solemnity. But as among them there is no direct necessity of any elders for rule, so we treat not at present concerning them.

11. Some place the government of many particular churches in a *diocesan bishop*, with those that act under him and by his authority, according unto the rule of the canon law and the civil constitution of the land. These are so far from judging it necessary that

there should be many elders for rule in every particular church, as that they allow no rule in them at all, but only assert a rule over them. But a church where there is no rule in itself, to be exercised in the name of Christ by its own rulers, officers, guides, immediately presiding in it, is unknown to Scripture and antiquity. Wherefore with these we deal not in this discourse, nor have any apprehension that the power of presenting men, for any pretended disorder, unto the bishop's or chancellor's court is any part of church power or rule.

12. Others place the rule of particular churches, especially in cases of greatest moment, in an *association, conjunction, or combination of all the elders* of them in one society; which is commonly called a *classis*. So in all acts of rule there will be a conjunct acting of many elders. And no doubt it is the best provision that can be made, on a supposition of the continuance of the present parochial distribution. But those also of this judgment who have most weighed and considered the nature of these things, do assert the necessity of many elders in every particular church; which is the common judgment and practice of the reformed churches in all places.

13. And some there are who begin to maintain that there is no need of any more but *one pastor, bishop, or elder* in a particular church, which hath its rule in itself, other elders for rule being unnecessary. This is a novel opinion, contradictory to the sense and practice of the church in all ages; and I shall prove the contrary.

(1.) The pattern of the first churches constituted by the apostles, which it is our duty to imitate and follow as our rule, constantly expresseth and declares that *many elders* were appointed by them in every church, Acts xi. 30, xiv. 23, xv. 2, 4, 6, 22, xvi. 4, xx. 17, etc.; 1 Tim. v. 17; Phil. i. 1; Tit. i. 5; 1 Pet. v. 1. There is no mention in the Scripture, no mention in antiquity, of any church wherein there were not more elders than one; nor doth that church answer the original pattern where it is otherwise.

(2.) Where there is but one elder in a church, there cannot be an *eldership* or *presbytery*, as there cannot be a senate where there is but one senator; which is contrary unto 1 Tim. iv. 14.

(3.) The *continuation* of every church in its original state and constitution is, since the ceasing of extraordinary offices and powers, committed to the care and power of the church itself. Hereunto the calling and ordaining of ordinary officers, pastors, rulers, elders, teachers, do belong; and therein, as we have proved, both the election of the people, submitting themselves unto them in the Lord, and the solemn setting of them apart by imposition of hands, do concur. But if there be but one elder only in a church, upon his death or removal, this imposition of hands must either be left unto the people, or be supplied by elders of other churches, or be wholly

omitted; all which are irregular: and that church-order is defective which wants the symbol of authoritative ordination.

(4.) It is difficult, if not impossible, on a supposition of one elder only in a church, to preserve the rule of the church from being *prelatical* or *popular*. There is nothing more frequently objected unto those who dissent from diocesan bishops, than that they would every one be bishops in their own parishes and unto their own people. All such pretences are excluded on our principles, of the liberty of the people, of the necessity of many elders in the same church in an equality of power, and the communion of other churches in association; but practically, where there is but one elder, one of the extremes can hardly be avoided. If he rule by himself, without the previous advice, in some cases, as well as the subsequent consent of the church, it hath an eye of unwarrantable prelacy in it. If every thing be to be originally transacted, disposed, ordered by the whole society, the authority of the elder will quickly be insignificant, and he will be little more, in point of rule, than any other brother of the society. But all these inconveniencies are prevented by the fixing of many elders in each church, which may maintain the authority of the presbytery, and free the church from the despotical rule of any Diotrephes. But in case there be but one in any church, unless he have wisdom to maintain the authority of the eldership in his own person and actings, there is no rule, but confusion.

(5.) The nature of the work whereunto they are called requires that, in every church consisting of any considerable number of members, there should be *more elders than one* (when God first appointed rule in the church under the old testament, he assigned unto every ten persons or families a distinct ruler, Deut. i. 15); for the elders are to take care of the walk or conversation of all the members of the church, that it be according unto the rule of the gospel. This rule is eminent, as unto the holiness that it requires, above all other rules of moral conversation whatever; and there is, in all the members of the church, great accuracy and circumspection required in their walking after it and according unto it. The order also and decency which is required in all church-assemblies stands in need of exact care and inspection. That all these things can be attended unto and discharged in a due manner in any church, by one elder, is for them only to suppose who know nothing of them. And although there may be an appearance for a season of all these things in such churches, yet, there being not therein a due compliance with the wisdom and institution of Christ, they have no present beauty, nor will be of any long continuance.

These considerations, as also those that follow, may seem jejune and contemptible unto such as have another frame of church rule and order drawn in their minds and interests. A government vested

in some few persons, with titles of pre-eminence, and legal power, exercised in courts with coercive jurisdiction, by the methods and processes of canons of their own framing, is that which they suppose doth better become the grandeur of church-rulers and the state of the church than these creeping elders with their congregations. But whereas our present inquiry after these things is only in and out of the Scripture, wherein there is neither shadow nor appearance of any of these practices, I beg their pardon if at present I consider them not.

We shall now make application of these things unto our present purpose. I say, then,—1. Whereas there is a *work of rule* in the church distinct from that of *pastoral feeding*; and, 2. Whereas this work is to be attended unto with *diligence*, which includes the whole duty of him that attends unto it; and, 3. Whereas the *ministry of the word and prayer*, with all those duties that accompany it, is *a full employment* for any man, and so, consequently, his principal and proper work, which it is unlawful for him to be remiss in by attending on another with diligence; and, 4. Whereas there ought to be *many elders* in every church, that both the works of *teaching* and *ruling* may be constantly attended unto; and, 5. Whereas, in the wisdom of the Holy Ghost, *distinct works* did require *distinct offices* for their discharge (all which we have proved already), our inquiry hereon is,—

Whether the same Holy Spirit hath not distinguished this office of elders into these two sorts,—namely, those who are called unto teaching and rule also, and those who are called unto rule only? which we affirm.

The testimonies whereby the truth of this assertion is confirmed are generally known and pleaded. I shall insist on some of them only, beginning with that which is of uncontrollable evidence, if it had any thing to conflict withal but prejudices and interest; and this is 1 Tim. v. 17: Οἱ καλῶς προεστῶτες πρεσβύτεροι διπλῆς τιμῆς ἀξιούσθωσαν, μάλιστα οἱ κοπιῶντες ἐν λόγῳ καὶ διδασκαλίᾳ. Προΐστημι, or προΐσταμαι, is "præsum, præsideo," to preside, to rule: "Præsident probati seniores," Tertul. And the bishop or pastor in Justin Martyr is ὁ προεστώς. So is the word constantly used in the New Testament: Rom. xii. 8, Ὁ προϊστάμενος,—"That **ruleth**;" 1 Thess. v. 12, Προϊσταμένους ὑμῶν,—"That are over you," that is, in place of rule; 1 Tim. iii. 4, 5, 12, it is applied unto family rule and government; as it is also unto care and diligence about good works, Tit. iii. 8, 14. Προστασία is the whole presidency in the church, with respect unto its rule. Translators agree in the reading of these words: so the Hebrew of Munster, זִקְנֵי־הָעֵדָה אֲשֶׁר מֵיטִיבִים לְנַהֵג,—"The elders of the congregation who well discharge their rule or conduct;" so the Syriac, קַשִּׁישָׁא אִילֵּין,—"Those elders;" "Qui bene præsunt presby-

teri," Vulg. Lat.; "Seniori che governano bene," Ital. All agree that it is the governors and government of the church in general that are here intended. Μάλιστα is the word most controverted; all translators esteem it distinctive: Heb. וְעֶלֶה, "eminently;" Syr. יַתִּירָאִית, "chiefly, principally;" "maxime;" οἱ κοπιῶντες· הַיְגִעִים,—"who labour painfully," labour to weariness, travail in the word and doctrine.

"*The elders*, or presbyters in office, elders of the church, *that rule well*, or discharge their presidency for rule in due manner, are to *be counted worthy*, or ought to be reputed worthy, *of double honour, especially those* of them *who labour* or are engaged *in* the great labour and travail of *the word and doctrine.*"

And some things may be observed in general concerning these words:—

1. This testimony relates directly unto the *rules and principles* before laid down, directing unto the practice of them. According unto the analogy of those principles these words are to be interpreted; and unless they are overthrown, it is to no purpose to put in exceptions against the sense of this or that word. The interpretation of them is to be suited unto the analogy of the things which they relate unto. If we consider not what is spoken here in consent with other scriptures treating of the same matter, we depart from all sober rules of interpretation.

2. On this supposition, the words of the text have a *plain and obvious signification*, which at first view presents itself unto the common sense and understanding of all men; and where there is nothing contrary unto any other divine testimony or evident reason, such a sense is constantly to be embraced. There is nothing here of any spiritual mystery, but only a direction concerning outward order in the church. In such cases the literal sense of the words, rationally apprehended, is all that we are concerned in. But on the first proposal of this text, "That the elders that rule well are worthy of double honour, especially those who labour in the word and doctrine," a rational man who is unprejudiced, who never heard of the controversy about ruling elders, can hardly avoid an apprehension that there are two sorts of elders, some that labour in the word and doctrine, and some who do not so do. The truth is, it was interest and prejudice that first caused some learned men to strain their wits to find out evasions from the evidence of this testimony. Being so found out, some others of meaner abilities have been entangled by them; for there is not one new argument advanced in this cause, not one exception given in unto the sense of the place which we plead for, but what was long since coined by Papists and Prelatists, and managed with better colours than some now are able to lay on them who pretend unto the same judgment.

3. This is the substance of the truth in the text:—There are

elders in the church; there are or ought to be so in every church. With these elders *the whole rule of the church* is intrusted; all these, and only they, do rule in it. Of these elders there are *two sorts;* for a description is given of one sort *distinctive* from the other, and *comparative* with it. The first sort doth *rule* and also *labour in the word and doctrine.* That these works are distinct and different was before declared; yet as distinct works they are not incompatible, but are committed unto the same person. They are so unto them who are not elders only, but moreover pastors or teachers. Unto pastors and teachers, as such, there belongs no rule; although by the institution of Christ the right of rule be inseparable from their office, for all that are rightfully called thereunto are elders also, which gives them an interest in rule. They are elders, with the addition of pastoral or teaching authority. But there are elders which are not pastors or teachers; for there are some who rule well, but labour not in the word and doctrine,—that is, who are not pastors or teachers.

Elders that rule well, but labour not in the word and doctrine, are ruling elders only; and such are they in the text.

The most learned of our protestant adversaries in this case are Erastus, Bilson, Saravia, Downham, Scultetus, Mede, Grotius, Hammond; who agree not at all among themselves about the sense of the words: for,—

1. Their whole design and endeavour is to *put in exceptions* against the obvious sense and interpretation of the words, not fixing on any determinate exposition of it themselves, such as they will abide by in opposition unto any other sense of the place. Now, this is a most sophistical way of arguing upon testimonies, and suited only to make controversies endless. Whose wit is so barren as not to be able to raise one exception or other against the plainest and most evident testimony? So the Socinians deal with us in all the testimonies we produce to prove the deity or satisfaction of Christ. They suppose it enough to evade their force if they can but pretend that the words are capable of another sense, although they will not abide by it that this or that is their sense; for if they would do so, when that is overthrown, the truth would be established. But every testimony of the Scripture hath one determinate sense. When this is contended about, it is equal that those at difference do express their apprehensions of the mind of the Holy Spirit in the words which they will abide by. When this is done, let it be examined and tried whether of the two senses pretended unto doth best comply with the signification and use of the words, the context or scope of the place, other Scripture testimonies, and the analogy of faith. No such rule is attended unto in this case by our adversaries. They think it enough to oppose our sense of the words, but will not fix upon any of their own, which if it be disproved, ours ought to take place. And hence,—

2. They *do not in the least agree among themselves,* scarce any two of them, on what is the most probable sense of the words, nor are any of them singly well resolved what application to make of them, nor unto what persons, but only propose things as their *conjecture.* But of very many opinions or conjectures that are advanced in this case, all of them but one are accompanied with the modesty of granting that divers sorts of elders are here intended; which, without more than ordinary confidence, cannot be denied. But,—

Some, by "elders that rule well," do understand *bishops that are diocesans;* and by "those that labour in the word and doctrine," ordinary preaching presbyters; which plainly gives them the advantage of pre-eminence, reverence, and maintenance, above the others!

Some, by "elders that rule well," understand *ordinary bishops and presbyters;* and by "those that labour in the word and doctrine," evangelists; so carrying the text out of the present concernment of the church. Deacons are esteemed by some to have an interest in the rule of the church, and so to be intended in the first place, and preaching ministers in the latter.

Some speak of *two sorts of elders,* both of the same order, or ministers; some that preach the word and administer the sacraments; and others that are employed about inferior offices, as reading and the like: which is the conceit of Scultetus.

Mr Mede weighs most of these conjectures, and at length prefers one of his own before them all,—namely, that by "elders that rule well" *civil magistrates* are intended, and by "those that labour in the word and doctrine" the ministers of the gospel.

But some, discerning the weakness and improbability of all these conjectures, and how easily they may be disproved, betake themselves unto a direct denial of that which seems to be plainly asserted in the text, namely, that there are two sorts of elders here intended and described; which they countenance themselves in by exception unto the application of some terms in the text, which we shall immediately consider.

Grotius, as was before intimated, disputes against the divine institution of such temporary, lay-elders as are made use of in sundry of the reformed churches: but when he hath done, he affirms that it is highly necessary that such conjunct associates in rule from among the people should be in every church; which he proves by sundry arguments. And these he would have either nominated by the magistrate or chosen by the people.

Wherefore, omitting all contests about the forementioned conceits, or any other of the like nature, I shall propose one argument from these words, and vindicate it from the exceptions of those of the latter sort.

Preaching elders, although they rule well, are not worthy of double honour, unless they labour in the word and doctrine;

But there are elders who rule well that are worthy of double honour, though they do not labour in the word and doctrine:

Therefore there are elders that rule well who are not teaching or preaching elders,—that is, who are ruling elders only.

The proposition is evident in its own light, from the very terms of it; for to preach is to "labour in the word and doctrine." Preaching or teaching elders, that do not labour in the word and doctrine, are preaching or teaching elders that do not preach or teach. And to say that preachers, whose office and duty it is to preach, are worthy of that double honour which is due on the account of preaching, though they do not preach, is uncouth and irrational. It is contrary to the Scripture and the light of nature, as implying a contradiction, that a man whose office it is to teach and preach should be esteemed worthy of double honour on the account of his office, who doth not as an officer teach or preach.

The assumption consists upon the matter in the very words of the apostle; for he who says, "The elders who rule well are worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the word and doctrine," saith there are, or may be, elders who rule well who do not labour in the word and doctrine,—that is, who are not obliged so to do.

The argument from these words may be otherwise framed, but this contains the plain sense of this testimony.

Sundry things are excepted unto this testimony and our application of it. Those which are of any weight consist in a contest about two words in the text, μάλιστα and κοπιῶντες. Some place their confidence of evasion in one of them, and some in another, the argument from both being inconsistent. If that sense of one of these words which is pleaded as a relief against this testimony be embraced, that which unto the same purpose is pretended to be the sense of the other must be rejected. Such shifts doth an opposition unto the truth put men to.

Some say that μάλιστα, "especially," is not *distinctive*, but *descriptive* only; that is, it doth not distinguish one sort of elders from another, but only describes that single sort of them by an adjunct of their office, whereof the apostle speaks. The meaning of it, they say, is, *as much as*, or *seeing that*: "The elders that rule well are worthy of double honour, seeing that they also labour," or "especially considering that they labour," etc.

That this is the sense of the word, that it is thus to be interpreted, must be proved from the authority of ancient translations, or the use of it in other places of the New Testament, or from its precise signification and application in other authors learned in this language, or that it is enforced from the context or matter treated of.

But none of these can be pretended.

1. The rendering of the word in *old translations* we have be-

fore considered. They agree in "maxime illi qui," which is distinctive.

2. The use of it in *other places of the New Testament* is constantly distinctive, whether applied to things or persons: Acts xx. 38, Ὀδυνώμενοι μάλιστα ἐπὶ τῷ λόγῳ,—"Sorrowing chiefly at the word" of seeing his face no more. Their sorrow herein was distinct from all their other trouble. Gal. vi. 10, "Let us do good unto all, μάλιστα δὲ πρὸς τοὺς οἰκείους τῆς πίστεως,"—"but chiefly," especially, "unto the household of faith." It puts a distinction between the household of faith and all others, by virtue of their especial privilege; which is the direct use of the word in that place of the same apostle, Phil. iv. 22, "All the saints salute you, μάλιστα δὲ οἱ ἐκ τῆς Καίσαρος οἰκίας,"—"especially they that are of Cæsar's house." Two sorts of saints are plainly expressed,—first, such as were so in general; such as were so also, but under this especial privilege and circumstance, that they were of Cæsar's house, which the others were not. So it is here with respect unto elders: all "rule well," but some moreover "labour in the word and doctrine." 1 Tim. v. 8, Εἰ δέ τις τῶν ἰδίων, καὶ μάλιστα τῶν οἰκείων οὐ προνοεῖ·—"If a man provide not for his own, especially those of his own house," especially children or servants, which live in his own house, and are thereby distinguished from others of a more remote relation. 2 Tim. iv. 13, "Bring the books, μάλιστα τὰς μεμβράνας,"—"especially the parchments;" not because they are parchments, but among the books, the parchments in particular and in an especial manner. 2 Pet. ii. 9, 10, "The Lord knoweth how to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished, μάλιστα δὲ τοὺς ὀπίσω σαρκός," etc.,—"especially those that walk after the flesh," who shall be singled out to exemplary punishment. It is but once more used in the New Testament, namely, Acts xxvi. 3, where it includes a distinction in the thing under consideration.

Whereas this is the constant use of the word in the Scripture (being principally used by this apostle in his writings), wherein it is distinctive and comparative of the things and persons that respect is had unto, it is to no purpose to pretend that it is here used in another sense or is otherwise applied, unless they can prove from the context that there is a necessity of their peculiar interpretation of it.

3. The use of the word in *other authors* is concurrent with that of it in the Scripture: Herodian, lib. ii. cap. xxviii., Φιλέορτοι δὲ φύσει Σύροι· ὧν μάλιστα οἱ τὴν Ἀντιόχειαν κατοικοῦντες, κ.τ.λ.—"The Syrians are naturally lovers of festivals, especially they that dwell at Antioch." It is the same phrase of speech with that here used; for all they that dwelt at Antioch were Syrians, but all the Syrians dwelt not at Antioch. There is a distinction and distribution made of the Syrians into two sorts,—such as were Syrians only, and such as, being Syrians,

dwelt at Antioch, the metropolis of the country. If a man should say that all Englishmen were stout and courageous, especially the Londoners, he would both affirm the Londoners to be Englishmen and distinguish them from the rest of their countrymen. So, all that labour in the word and doctrine are elders. But all elders do not labour in the word and doctrine, nor is it their duty so to do; these we call "ruling elders," and, as I judge, rightly.

4. The sense which the words will give, being so interpreted as that a distinction of elders is not made in them, is absurd, the subject and predicate of the proposition being terms convertible. It must be so if the proposition be not allowed to have a distinction in it. "One sort of elders only," it is said, "is here intended." I ask who they are, and of what sort? It is said, "The same with pastors and teachers, or ministers of the gospel;" for if the one sort of elders intended be of another sort, we obtain what we plead for as fully as if two sorts were allowed. Who, then, are these elders, these pastors and teachers, these ministers of the church? are they not those who labour in the word and doctrine? "Yes," it will be said, "it is they, and no other." Then this is the sense of the words, "Those who labour in the word and doctrine, that rule well, are worthy of double honour, especially if they labour in the word and doctrine;" for if there be but one sort of elders, then "elders" and "those that labour in the word and doctrine" are terms convertible. But "elders" and "labour in the word and doctrine" are subject and predicate in this proposition.

Wherefore there are few of any learning or judgment that make use of this evasion; but, allowing a distinction to be made, they say that it is as to work and employment, and not as unto office,—those who, in the discharge of their office as elders, do so labour as is intended and included in the word κοπιῶντες, which denotes a peculiar kind of work in the ministry. Yea, say some, "This word denotes the work of an evangelist, who was not confined unto any one place, but travelled up and down the world to preach the gospel." And those of this mind do allow that two sorts of elders are intended in the words. Let us see whether they have any better success in this their conjecture than the others had in the former answer.

1. I grant that κοπιᾶν, the word here used, signifies to *labour with pains* and diligence, "ad ultimum virium, usque ad fatigationem,"—unto the utmost of men's strength, and unto weariness. But,—

2. So to labour in the word and doctrine is *the duty of all pastors and teachers*, and whosoever doth not so labour is negligent in his office, and worthy of severe blame instead of double honour: for,—

(1.) Κόπος, whence is κοπιάω, is the labour of a minister, and so of any minister in his work of teaching and preaching the gospel: 1 Cor. iii. 8, Ἕκαστος δὲ τὸν ἴδιον μισθὸν λήψεται κατὰ τὸν ἴδιον κόπον·—'Every one" (that is, every one employed in the ministry, whether

to plant or to water, to convert men or to edify the church) "shall receive his own reward, according to his own labour." He that doth not strive, κοπιᾶν, in the ministry, shall never receive a reward κατὰ τὸν ἴδιον κόπον, according to his own labour, and so is not worthy of double honour.

(2.) It is a general word, used to express the work of any in the service of God; whereon it is applied unto the prophets and teachers under the old testament: John iv. 38, "I sent you to reap that whereon ye bestowed no labour: ἄλλοι κεκοπιάκασι, καὶ ὑμεῖς εἰς τὸν κόπον αὐτῶν εἰσεληλύθατε,"—"others have laboured, and ye have entered into their labours;" that is, of the prophets and John the Baptist. Yea, it is so unto the labour that women may take in the serving of the church: Rom. xvi. 6, "Salute Mary, ἥτις πολλὰ ἐκοπίασε," —"who laboured much;" which is more than simply κοπιᾶν. Verse 12, "Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, τὰς κοπιώσας ἐν Κυρίῳ,"—"who labour in the Lord. Salute the beloved Persis, ἥτις πολλὰ ἐκοπίασεν ἐν Κυρίῳ,"—"who laboured much in the Lord." So wide from truth is it that this word should signify a labour peculiar to some sorts of ministers, which all are not in common obliged unto.

3. If the labour of evangelists, or of them who travelled up and down to preach the word, be intended, then it is so either because this is the *proper signification* of the word, or because it is *constantly used elsewhere* to express that kind of labour; but the contrary unto both of these is evident from all places wherein it is used. So is it expressly applied to fixed elders, 1 Thess. v. 12, "We exhort you, brethren, to know τοὺς κοπιῶντας ἐν ὑμῖν,"—"them that labour among you," who are the rulers and instructors.

It is therefore evident that this word expresseth no more but what is the ordinary, indispensable duty of every teaching elder, pastor, or minister; and if it be so, then those elders,—that is, pastors or teachers,—that do not perform and discharge it are not worthy of double honour, nor would the apostle give any countenance unto them who were any way remiss or negligent, in comparison of others, in the discharge of their duty. See 1 Thess. v. 12.

There are, therefore, *two sorts of duties* confessedly here mentioned and commanded;—the first is, *ruling well;* the other, *labouring in the word and doctrine.* Suppose that both these, ruling and teaching, are committed to one sort of persons only, having one and the same office absolutely, then are some commended who do not discharge their whole duty, at least not comparatively unto others; which is a vain imagination. That both of them are committed unto one sort of elders, and one of them only unto another, each discharging its duty with respect unto its work, and so both worthy of honour, is the mind of the apostle.

[To] that which is objected from the following verse, namely, "That

maintenance belongs unto this double honour, and so, consequently, that if there be elders that are employed in the work of rule only, maintenance is due unto them from the church," I answer, It is so, no doubt, if,—1. The church be *able* to make them an allowance; 2. If their work be such as to take up *the whole or the greatest part of their industry;* and, 3. If they *stand in need of it;*—without which considerations it may be dispensed withal, not only in them, but in teaching elders also.

Our next testimony is from the same apostle: Rom. xii. 6–8, "Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophecy, let us prophesy according to the proportion of faith; or ministry, let us wait on our ministry: or he that teacheth, on teaching; or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that giveth, let him do it with simplicity; he that ruleth, with diligence; he that showeth mercy, with cheerfulness."

Our argument from hence is this: There is in the church ὁ προϊστάμενος, "one that ruleth." Προΐστημι is "to rule with authority by virtue of office;" whence is προεστώς and προϊστάμενος, one that presides over others with authority. For the discharge of their office, there is χάρισμα διάφορον, a "differing peculiar gift," bestowed on some: Ἔχοντες χαρίσματα διάφορα, verse 6. And there is the especial manner prescribed for the discharge of this especial office, by virtue of that especial gift; ἐν σπουδῇ, it is to be done with peculiar "diligence." And this ruler is distinguished from "him that exhorteth" and "him that teacheth," with whose especial work, as such, he hath nothing to do; even as they are distinguished from those who "give" and "show mercy;"—that is, there is an elder by office in the church, whose work and duty it is to rule, not to exhort nor teach ministerially; which is our ruling elder.

It is answered, "That the apostle doth not treat in this place of offices, functions, or distinct officers, but of differing gifts in all the members of the church, which they are to exercise according as their different nature doth require."

Sundry things I shall return hereunto, which will both explain the context and vindicate our argument:—

1. Those with whom we have to do principally allow no exercise of spiritual gifts in the church but by virtue of office. Wherefore, a distinct exercise of them is here placed in distinct officers, one, as we shall see, being expressly distinguished from another.

2. Give such a probable enumeration of the distinct offices in the church, which they assert, namely, of archbishops, bishops, presbyters, and chancellors, etc., and we shall yield the cause.

3. Gifts alone do no more, give no other warranty nor authority, but only render men meet for their exercise as they are called, and as occasion doth require. If a man hath received a gift of

teaching, but is not called to office, he is not obliged nor warranted thereby to attend on public teaching, nor is it required of him in a way of duty, nor given in charge unto him, as here it is.

4. There is in one "rule" required "with diligence." He is ὁ προϊστάμενος, a "ruler;" and it is required of him that he attend unto his work with diligence. And there are but two things required unto the confirmation of our thesis,—(1.) That this rule is an act of *office-power;* (2.) That he unto whom it is ascribed is *distinguished from them unto whom the pastoral and other offices in the church are committed.*

For the first, it is evident that rule is an act of office or of office-power: for it requires,—[1.] An especial *relation;* there is so between him that ruleth and them that are ruled; and this is the relation of office, or all confusion will ensue. [2.] Especial *prelation.* He that rules is over, is above them that are ruled: "Obey them that are over you in the Lord." This, in the church, cannot be in any but by virtue of office. [3.] Especial *authority.* All lawful rule is an act of authority; and there is no authority in the church but by virtue of office. Secondly, That this officer is distinct from all others in the church we shall immediately demonstrate, when we have a little farther cleared the context. Wherefore,—

5. It is confessed that respect is had unto gifts,—"Having differing gifts," verse 6,—as all office-power in the church is founded in them, Eph. iv. 7, 8, 11, 12. But gifts absolutely, with reference unto common use, are not intended, as in some other places; but they are spoken of with respect unto offices or functions, and the communication of them unto officers for the discharge of their office. This is evident from the text and context, with the whole design of the place; for,—

(1.) The analysis of the place directs unto this interpretation. Three sorts of duties are prescribed unto the church in this chapter, —[1.] Such as are *universal,* belonging absolutely unto all and every one that appertains unto it; which are declared, Rom. xii. 1, 2. [2.] Such as are *peculiar* unto some, by virtue of that especial place which they have in the church, verses 3–8. This can be nothing but office. [3.] Such as are *general* or common, with respect unto occasions, from verse 8 to the end of the chapter. Hence the same duty is doubly prescribed,—to some in way of especial office, to others in the way of a gracious duty in general. So here, "He that giveth, let him do it with simplicity," verse 8, is the same duty or work, for the substance of it, with "Distributing to the necessity of saints," verse 13. And the apostle doth not repeat his charge of the same duty, in so few words, as required in the same manner and of the same persons; but in the first place, he speaks of the manner of its performance by virtue of office, and in the latter of its discharge, as to the sub-

stance of it, as a grace in all believers. The design of the apostle lies plain in the analysis of this discourse.

(2.) The context makes the same truth evident; for,—

[1.] The whole ordinary public work of the church is distributed into προφητεία and διακονία,—"prophecy and ministry;" for the extraordinary gift of prophecy is not here intended, but only that of the interpretation of the Scripture, whose rule is the "analogy of faith:" Εἴτε προφητείαν, κατὰ τὴν ἀναλογίαν τῆς πίστεως. It is such prophecy as is to be regulated by the Scripture itself, which gives the "proportion of faith." And there is not any thing in any or both of these, prophecy and ministry, but it belongs unto office in the church; neither is there any thing belonging unto office in the church but may be reduced unto one of these, as they are all of them here by the apostle.

[2.] The gifts spoken of are, in general, referred unto all them who are intended. Now, these are either the whole church and all the members of it, or all the officers of the church only. Hence it is expressed in the plural number, Ἔχοντες χαρίσματα, "We having;" that is, all we that are concerned herein. This cannot be "all of the church," for all the church have not received the gifts of prophecy and ministry; nor can any distinction be made of who doth receive them and who doth not but with respect unto office. And therefore,—

[3.] In the distribution which ensues of prophecy into exhorting and teaching, and of ministry into showing mercy, rule, and giving, having stated these gifts in general, in the officers in general, making distinct application of them unto distinct officers, he speaks in the singular number: Ὁ διδάσκων, ὁ παρακαλῶν, ὁ προϊστάμενος·—"He that teacheth, he that exhorteth, he that ruleth."

6. It is, then, evident that *offices* are intended, and it is no less evident that distinct offices are so, which was to be proved in the second place: for,—(1.) The distributive particle εἴτε, and the indicative article ὁ, prefixed unto each office in particular, do show them [to be] distinct, so far as words can do it. As by the particle εἴτε, "whether," they are distinguished in their nature, whether they be of this or that kind; so by the article prefixed to each of them in exercise, they are distinguished in their subjects. (2.) The operations, works, and effects ascribed unto these gifts, require distinct offices and functions in their exercise. And if the distribution be made unto all promiscuously, without respect unto distinct offices, it were the only way to bring confusion into the church, whereas, indeed, here is an accurate order in all church-administrations represented to us. And it is further evident that distinct offices are intended,—(1.) From the comparison made unto the members of the body, verse 4, "All members have not the same office;" the eye hath one, the ear hath

another. (2.) Each of the duties mentioned and given in charge is sufficient for a distinct officer, as is declared Acts vi. 1–4.

7. In particular, "He that ruleth" is a distinct officer,—an officer, because rule is an act of office or office-power; and he is expressly distinguished from all others. But say some, "'He that ruleth' is he that doth so, be who he will,—that is, the pastor or teacher, the teaching elder." But the contrary is evident:—(1.) He that says, "He that exhorteth," and then adds, "He that ruleth," having distinguished before between prophecy, whereunto exhortation doth belong, and ministry, whereof rule is a part, and prefixing the prepositive indicative article to each of them, doth as plainly put a difference between them as can be done by words. (2.) Rule is the principal work of him that ruleth, for he is to attend unto it ἐν σπουδῇ, "with diligence,"—that is, such as is peculiar unto rule, in contradistinction unto what is principally required in other administrations. But rule is not the principal work of the pastor, requiring constant and continual attendance; for his labour in the word and doctrine is ordinarily sufficient for the utmost of his diligence and abilities.

8. We have, therefore, in this context, a beautiful order of things in and of the church,—all the duties of it, with respect unto its edification, derived from distinct differing spiritual gifts, exercised in and by distinct officers unto their peculiar ends, the distinction that is in the nature of those gifts, their use and end, being provided for in distinct subjects. The mind of no one man, at least ordinarily, is meet to be the seat and subject of all those differing gifts in any eminent degree. The person of no man being sufficient, meet, or able, to exercise them in a way of office towards the whole church, especially, "those who labour in the word and doctrine" being obliged to "give themselves wholly thereunto," and those that "rule" to attend thereto with "diligence," so many distinct works, duties, and operations, with the qualifications required in their discharge, being inconsistent in the same subject, all things are here distributed into their proper order and tendency unto the edification of the church. Every distinct gift, required to be exercised in a peculiar manner, unto the public edification of the church, is distributed unto peculiar officers, unto whom an especial work is assigned, to be discharged by virtue of the gifts received, unto the edification of the whole body. No man alive is able to fix on any thing which is necessary unto the edification of the church that is not contained in these distributions, under some of the heads of them; nor can any man find out any thing in these assignations of distinct duties unto distinct offices that is superfluous, redundant, or not directly necessary unto the edification of the whole, with all the parts and members of it; nor do I know any wise and sober man, who knows any thing how the duties enjoined are to be performed, with what care, diligence, circumspec-

tion, prayer, and wisdom, suited unto the nature, ends, and objects of them who can ever imagine that they can all of them belong unto one and the same office, or be discharged by one and the same person.

Let men advance any other church-order in the room of that here declared; so suited unto the principles of natural light, operations and duties of diverse natures, being distributed and assigned to such distinct gifts, acted in distinct offices, as renders those unto whom they are prescribed meet and able for them; so correspondent to all institutions, rules, and examples of church-order in other places of Scripture; so suited unto the edification of the church, wherein nothing which is necessary thereunto is omitted, nor any thing added above what is necessary,—and it shall be cheerfully embraced.

The truth is, the ground of the different interpretations and applications of this [text and] context of the apostle ariseth merely from the prejudicate apprehensions that men have concerning the state of the church and its rule; for if the state of it be national or diocesan, if the rule of it be by arbitrary rules and canons, from an authority exerting itself in courts ecclesiastical, legal or illegal, the order of things here described by the apostle doth no way belong nor can be accommodated thereunto. To suppose that we have a full description and account in these words of all the offices and officers of the church, of their duty and authority, of all they have to do, and the manner how they are to do it, is altogether unreasonable and senseless, unto them who have another idea of church affairs and rule conceived in their minds, or received by tradition, and rivetted by interest. And, on the other hand, those who know little or nothing of what belongs unto the due edification of the church beyond preaching the word and reaping the advantage that is obtained thereby, cannot see any necessity of the distribution of these several works and duties unto several officers, but suppose all may be done well enough by one or two in the same office. Wherefore, it will be necessary that we treat briefly of the nature of the rule of the church in particular, and of what is required thereunto; which shall be done in the close of this discourse.

9. The *exceptions* which are usually put in unto this testimony have not the least countenance from the text or context, or the matter treated of, nor confirmation from any other divine testimony. It is therefore in vain to contend about them, being such as any man may multiply at his pleasure on the like occasion; and they are used by those who, on other considerations, are not willing that things should be as they are here declared to be by the apostle. Yet we may take a brief specimen of them. Some say it is *gifts absolutely*, without respect unto distinct offices, that the apostle treats of; which hath been disproved from the text and context before. Some say that rule is

included in the pastoral office, so as that the pastor only is here intended. But,—(1.) *Rule* is not his principal work, which he is to attend unto in a peculiar manner, with diligence above other parts of his duty. (2.) The *care of the poor of the flock* belongs also to the pastoral office, yet is there another officer appointed to attend unto it in a peculiar manner, Acts vi. 1–6. (3.) "He that ruleth" is in this place expressly distinguished from "him that exhorteth" and "him that teacheth." Some say that "He that ruleth" is he that ruleth his family; but this is disproved by the analysis of the chapter before declared; and this duty, which is common unto all that have families, and confined unto their families, is ill placed among those public duties which are designed unto the edification of the whole church. It is objected that "He that ruleth" is here placed after "Him that giveth,"—that is, the deacon; I say, then, it cannot be the pastor that is intended, if we may prescribe methods of expressing himself unto the apostle. But he useth his liberty, and doth not oblige himself unto any order in the annumeration of the offices of the church. See 1 Cor. xii. 8–10, 28. And some other exceptions are insisted on of the same nature and importance, which indeed deserve not our consideration.

10. There is the same evidence given unto the truth argued for in another testimony of the same apostle: 1 Cor. xii. 28, "God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues." I shall not insist on this testimony and its vindication in particular, seeing many things would be required thereunto which have been treated of already. Some things may be briefly observed concerning it. That there is here an annumeration of officers and offices in the church, both extraordinary, for that season, and ordinary, for continuance, is beyond exception. Unto them is added the present exercise of some extraordinary gifts, as "miracles, healings, tongues." That by "helps" the deacons of the church are intended, most do agree, because their original institution was as helpers in the affairs of the church. "Governments" are governors or rulers, the abstract for the concrete,—that is, such as are distinct from "teachers;" such hath God placed in the church, and such there ought to be. But it is said "That gifts, not offices, are intended,—the gift of government, or gift for government." If so, then these gifts are either ordinary or extraordinary. If ordinary, how come they to be reckoned among "miracles, healings, and tongues"? if extraordinary, what extraordinary gifts for government were then given distinct from those of the apostles, and what instance is anywhere given of them in the Scripture? Again: if God hath given gifts for government to abide in the church, distinct from those given unto teachers, and unto other persons than the teachers, then is there a

distinct office of rule or government in the church; which is all we plead for.

11. The original order of these things is plain in the Scripture. The apostles had all church-power and church-office in themselves, with authority to exercise all acts of them everywhere on all occasions: but considering the nature of the church, with that of the rule appointed by the Lord Christ in it or over it, they did not, they would not, ordinarily exercise their power by themselves or in their own persons alone; and therefore, when the first church consisted of a small number, the apostles acted all things in it by the consent of the whole multitude, or the fraternity, as we have proved from Acts i. 15–26. And when the number of believers increased, so as that the apostles themselves could not in their own persons attend unto all the duties that were to be performed towards the church by virtue of office, they added, by the direction of the Holy Ghost, the office of the deacons, for the especial discharge of the duty which the church oweth unto its poor members. Whereas, therefore, it is evident that the apostles could no more personally attend unto the rule of the church, with all that belongs thereunto, without an intrenchment on that labour in the word and prayer which was incumbent on them, than they could attend unto the relief of the poor, they appointed elders to help and assist in that part of office-work, as the deacons did in the other.

These elders are first mentioned Acts xi. 30, where they are spoken of as those which were well known, and had now been of some time in the church. Afterward they are still mentioned in conjunction with the apostles, and in distinction from the church itself, Acts xv. 2, 4, 6, 22, xvi. 4, xxi. 18. Now, the apostles themselves were teaching elders,—that is, such as had the work of teaching and rule committed to them, 1 Pet. v. 1; 2 John 1,—and these elders are constantly distinguished from them; which makes it evident that they were not teaching elders: and therefore, in all the mention that is made of them, the work of teaching or preaching is nowhere ascribed unto them, which, at Jerusalem, the apostles reserved to themselves, Acts vi. 2–4; but they are everywhere introduced as joining with the apostles in the rule of the church, and that in distinction from the church itself, or the brethren of it. Yea, it is altogether improbable that whilst the apostles were at Jerusalem, giving themselves wholly unto the word and prayer, they should appoint in the same church many more *teaching elders*, though it is plain that the elders intended were *many*.

I shall add, for a close of all, that there is no sort of churches in being but are of this persuasion, that there ought to be rulers in the church that are not in "sacred orders," as some call them, or have no interest in the pastoral or ministerial office, as unto the dispensation

of the word and administration of the sacraments; for as the government of the Roman church is in the hands of such persons in a great measure, so in the church of England much of the rule of it is managed by chancellors, officials, commissaries, and the like officers, who are absolutely laymen, and not at all in their holy orders. Some would place the rule of the church in the civil magistrate, who is the only ruling elder, as they suppose. But the generality of all Protestant churches throughout the world, both Lutheran and Reformed, do, both in their judgment and practice, assert the necessity of the ruling elders which we plead for; and their office lies at the foundation of all their order and discipline, which they cannot forego without extreme confusion, yea, without the ruin of their churches. And although some among us, considering particular churches only as small societies, may think there is no need of any such office or officers for rule in them, yet when such churches consist of some thousands, without any opportunity of distributing themselves into several congregations, as at Charenton in France, it is a weak imagination that the rule of Christ can be observed in them by two or three ministers alone. Hence, in the primitive times, we have instances of ten, twenty, yea, forty elders, in a particular church; wherein they had respect unto the institution under the old testament, whereby each ten families were to have a peculiar ruler. However, it is certain that there is such a reformation in all sorts of churches, that there ought to be some attending unto rule that are not called to labour in the word and doctrine.

CHAPTER VIII.

The nature of church polity or rule, with the duty of elders.

HAVING declared *who are the rulers of the church,* something must be added concerning the rule itself which is to be exercised therein. Hereof I have treated before in general; that which I now design is what in particular respects them who are called unto rule only, whereunto some considerations must be premised:—

1. There is power, authority, and rule, granted unto and residing in some persons of the church, and not in the body of the fraternity or community of the people. How far the government of the church may be denominated democratical from the necessary consent of the people unto the principal acts of it in its exercise, I shall not determine; but whereas this consent, and the liberty of it, are absolutely necessary, according to the law of obedience unto Christ, which is prescribed unto the church, requiring that all they do in compliance therewith be voluntary, as unto the manner of its exercise, being in

dutiful compliance with the guidance of the rule, it changeth not the state of the government. And therefore, where any thing is acted and disposed in the church by suffrage, or the plurality of voices, the vote of the fraternity is not determining and authoritative, but only declarative of consent and obedience. It is so in all acts of rule where the church is organical or in complete order.

2. That there is such an authority and rule instituted by Christ in his church is not liable unto dispute. Where there are "bishops, pastors, elders, guides, rulers, stewards," instituted, given, granted, called, ordained; and some to be ruled, "sheep, lambs, brethren," obliged by command to "obey them, follow them, submit unto them in the Lord, regard them as over them,"—there is rule and authority in some persons, and that committed unto them by Jesus Christ; but all these things are frequently repeated in the Scripture. And when, in the practical part or exercise of rule, due respect is not had unto their authority, there is nothing but confusion and disorder. When the people judge that the power of the keys is committed unto them as such only, and in them doth the right of their use and exercise reside; that their elders have no interest in the disposing of church-affairs or in acts of church-power, but only their own suffrages, or what they can obtain by reasoning; and think there is no duty incumbent on them to acquiesce in their authority in any thing (an evil apt to grow in churches),—it overthrows all that beautiful order which Jesus Christ hath ordained. And if any shall take advantage of this complaint, that where the people have their due liberty granted unto them, they are apt to *assume that power* unto themselves which belongs not unto them, an evil attended with troublesome impertinencies and disorder, tending unto anarchy, let them remember, on the other hand, how, upon the confinement of power and authority unto the guides, bishops, or rulers of the church, they have changed the nature of church-power, and enlarged their usurpation, until the whole rule of the church issued in absolute tyranny. Wherefore, no fear of consequents that may ensue and arise from the darkness, ignorance, weakness, lusts, corruptions, or secular interests of men, ought to entice us unto the least alteration of the rule by any prudential provisions of our own.

3. This authority in the rulers of the church is neither *autocratical* or sovereign, nor *nomothetical* or legislative, nor *despotical* or absolute, but *organical* and ministerial only. The endless controversies which have sprung out of the mystery of iniquity, about an autocratical and monarchical government in the church, about power to make laws to bind the consciences of men, yea, to kill and destroy them, with the whole manner of the execution of this power, we are not concerned in. A pretence of any such power in the church is destructive of the kingly office of Christ, contrary to ex-

press commands of Scripture, and condemned by the apostles, Isa. xxxiii. 22; James iv. 12; Matt. xvii. 5, xxiii. 8–11; Luke xxii. 25, 26; 2 Cor. i. 24; 1 Cor. iii. 21–23; 2 Cor. iv. 5; 1 Pet. v. 1–3.

4. As the rule of the church, in those by whom it is exercised, is merely *ministerial*, with respect unto the authority of Christ, his law, and the liberty of the church, wherewith he hath made it free, so in its nature it is *spiritual*, purely and only; so the apostle affirms expressly, 2 Cor. x. 4–6. For its *object* is spiritual,—namely, the souls and consciences of men, whereunto it extends, which no other human power doth; nor doth it reach those other concerns of men that are subject unto any political power. Its *end* is spiritual, —namely, the glory of God, in the guidance and direction of the minds and souls of men to live unto him, and come to the enjoyment of him. The *law* of it is spiritual, even the word, command, and direction of Christ himself alone. *The acts and exercise of it*, in binding and loosing, in remitting and retaining sin, in opening and shutting the kingdom of heaven, are all spiritual merely and only. Neither can there be an instance given of any thing belonging unto the rule of the church that is of another nature; yea, it is sufficient eternally to exclude any power or exercise of it, any act of rule or government, from any interest in church-affairs, that it can be proved to be carnal, political, despotical, of external operation, or not entirely spiritual.

5. The change of this government of the church fell out and was introduced gradually, upon an advantage taken from the unmeetness of the people to be laid under this spiritual rule; for the greatest part of them that made up Christian churches being become ignorant and carnal, that rule which consists in a spiritual influence on the consciences of men was no way able to retain them within the bounds of outward obedience, which was at last only aimed at. There was therefore another kind of rule and government judged necessary, to retain them in any order or decorum. And it must be acknowledged that where the members of the church are not in some degree spiritual, a rule that is merely spiritual will be of no great use unto them. But principally this change was introduced by those that were in possession of the rule itself, and that on two grounds:—(1.) Their *unskilfulness* in the management of this spiritual rule, or weariness of the duties which are required thereunto,—this made them willing to desert it,—with that perpetual labour and exercise of all sorts of graces which are required in it, and to embrace another more easy and more suited unto their inclinations. (2.) A *desire of the secular advantages* of profit, honour, and veneration, which tendered themselves unto them in another kind of rule. By these means was the original government of the church, which was of divine institution, utterly lost,

and a worldly domination introduced in the room thereof. But the brief delineation given of it before, with what shall now be added, will demonstrate sufficiently that all those disputes and contests which are in the world between the church of Rome and others about church power and rule are utterly foreign unto Christian religion.

I shall therefore briefly inquire into these three things:—1. What is the *skill* and *polity* that are required unto the exercise or administration of the government of the church; 2. What is the sole *law* and *rule* of it; 3. What are the *acts and duties* of it, what it is conversant about, especially those wherein the office of ruling elders doth take place:—

1. The *polity* of church-government, subjectively considered, is generally supposed to consist,—(1.) In a skill, learning, or understanding in the civil, and especially the canon law, with the additional canons accommodating that law unto the present state of things of the nation, to be interpreted according unto the general rules of it. (2.) Knowledge of and acquaintance with the constitution, power, jurisdiction, and practice, of some law-courts, which being, in their original, grant of power, manner of proceeding, pleas and censures, merely secular, are yet called ecclesiastical or spiritual. (3.) A good discretion to understand aright the extent of their power, with the bounds and limits of it; that on the one hand they let none escape whom they can reach by the discipline of their courts, and on the other not intrench so far on the civil power and the jurisdiction of other courts, according to the law of the land, as to bring themselves into charge or trouble. (4.) An acquaintance with the table of fees, that they may neither lose their own profit nor give advantage unto others to question them for taking more than their due. But in these things we are not at present concerned.

The skill, then, of the officers of the church for the government of it is a spiritual wisdom and understanding in the law of Christ for that end, with an ability to make application of it in all requisite instances, unto the edification of the whole church and all its members, through a ministerial exercise of the authority of Christ himself, and a due representation of his holiness, love, care, compassion, and tenderness, towards his church.

(1.) The sole *rule and measure* of the government of the church being the law of Christ,—that is, the intimation and declaration of his mind and will, in his institutions, commands, prohibitions, and promises,—an *understanding* herein, with wisdom from that understanding, is, and must be, the whole of the skill inquired after. How this wisdom is bestowed as a spiritual gift, how it is to be acquired in a way of duty, by prayer, meditation, and study of the word, hath been intimated before, and shall fully be declared in our discourse

of Spiritual Gifts.[1] All decrees and decretals, canons and glosses, come properly in this matter under one title of them, namely, extravagant. The utmost knowledge of them and skill in them will contribute nothing unto this wisdom; neither are any sort of men more strangers unto it or unacquainted with it than they are, for the most part, who are eminently cunning in such laws and the jurisdiction of ecclesiastical courts. But wisdom in the knowledge of the will of Christ as revealed in the Scripture is that alone which is of use in the government of the church.

(2.) A part of this wisdom consisteth in an *ability of mind to make application of the law of Christ*, in all requisite instances, unto the edification of the church in general and all the members of it respectively. This wisdom is not notional only, but practical. It consists not in a speculative comprehension of the sense of the rule, or of the mind of Christ therein only, though that be required in the first place; but in an ability of mind to make application of it, whereunto diligence, care, watchfulness, and spiritual courage, are required. Some are to be admonished, some to be rebuked sharply, some to be cut off; in which and the like cases a spirit of government acting itself in diligence, boldness, and courage, is necessary. And this is one reason why the Lord Christ hath appointed many elders in each church, and those of several sorts; for it is seldom that any one man is qualified for the whole work of rule. Some may have a good understanding in the law of the church's government, yet, through a natural tenderness and an insuperable kind of modesty, not be so ready and prompt for that part of this discipline which consists in reproofs and severity of censures. Some may not have so great an ability for the indagation of the sense of the law as others have, who yet, upon the knowledge of it being discovered unto them, have readiness and boldness in Christ to apply it as occasion doth require. All elders, therefore, in their variety of gifts, are to be helpful to each other in the common work which they are called unto. But such as are utterly destitute of these gifts are not called unto this work, nor to any part of it.

(3.) The power that is exercised herein is *the power and authority of Christ, committed unto the elders:* "Our authority, which the Lord hath given us for edification, and not for destruction," 2 Cor. x. 8. It is granted unto the rulers of the church, not formally to reside in them, as the power of a king is in his own person, but ministerially and instrumentally only; for it must be the authority of Christ himself, whereby the consciences of men are spiritually affected with reference unto spiritual ends,—whereby they are bound or loosed in heaven and earth, have their sins remitted or retained. And the consideration hereof is that alone which gives a due regard

[1] See vol. iv. of the author's works.

unto the ministry of the church, in the discharge of their office, among them that desire to commend their consciences unto the Lord Christ in what they do.

(4.) The especial design of the rule of the church in its government is, *to represent the holiness, love, compassion, care, and authority of Christ towards his church.* This is the great end of rule in the church, and of all the discipline which is to be exercised by virtue thereof. Whilst this is not attended unto, when the officers and rulers of the church do not endeavour, in all the actings of their power and office, to set forth these virtues of Christ, to exemplify that impression of them which he hath left in his laws and rule, with the divine testimonies which he gave of them in his own person, they utterly deviate from the principal end of all rule in the church. For men to act herein in a way of domination, with a visible elation of mind and spirit above their brethren; with anger, wrath, and passion; by rules, order, and laws of their own devising, without the least consideration of what the Lord Christ requires, and what is the frame of his heart towards all his disciples,—is to reflect the highest dishonour imaginable upon Christ himself. He who comes into the courts of the king in Westminster Hall, when filled with judges, grave, learned, and righteous, must ordinarily be allowed to judge of the king himself, his wisdom, justice, moderation, and clemency, by the law which they proceed upon and their manner of the administration of it. But God forbid that Christians should make a judgment concerning the holiness, wisdom, love, and compassion of Christ by the representation which, as is pretended, is made of him and them in some courts wherein church rule and discipline is administered! When any had offended of old, their censure by the church was called *the bewailing of them*, 2 Cor. xii. 21; and that because of the sorrow, pity, and compassion whereby, in that censure, they evidenced the compassion of the Lord Christ towards the souls of sinners. This is scarce answered by those pecuniary mulcts and other penalties, which, with indignation and contempt, are inflicted on such as are made offenders, whether they will or no. Certainly, those who love the Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity, and have a due honour for the gospel, will, at one time or another, begin to think meet that this stain of our religion should be washed away.

2. The rule and law of the exercise of power in the elders of the church is *the holy Scripture only.* The Lord Christ is the only lawgiver of the church; all his laws unto this end are recorded in the Scripture; no other law is effectual, can oblige or operate upon the objects or unto the ends of church-rule. If the church make a thousand rules, or canons, or laws for government, neither any of them, nor all of them in general, have any the least power to oblige men unto obedience or compliance with them, but only so far as vir-

tually or materially they contain what is of the law of Christ, and derive force from thence: as the judges in our courts of justice are bound to judge and determine in all cases out of and according to *the law of the land;* and when they do not, their sentence is of no validity, but may and ought to be reversed. But if, wilfully or of choice, they should introduce laws or rules not legally established in this nation, judging according unto them, it would render them highly criminal and punishable. It is no otherwise in the kingdom of Christ and the rule thereof. It is by his law alone that rule is to be exercised in it. There is nothing left unto the elders of the church but the application of his laws and the general rules of them unto particular cases and occasions. To make, to bring, to execute, any other rules, laws, or canons, in the government of his church, is to usurp on his kingly dominion, whereunto all legislative power in the church is appropriate. Nor is it possible that any thing can fall out in the church, that any thing can be required in the rule of it, nor can any instance be given of any such thing, wherein, for the ends of church-rule, there is, or can be, any more left unto the rulers of it but only the application and execution of the laws of Christ. Unto this application, to be made in a due manner, the wisdom and skill before described is requisite, and that alone. Where there are other laws, rules, or canons of the government of the church, and where the administration of them is directed by laws civil or political, there is a skill in them required unto that administration, as all will confess. So is the wisdom we before described, and that alone, necessary unto that rule of the church which the Lord Christ hath ordained; the instrument and means whereof is his word and law alone.

3. The matter of this rule about which it is conversant, and so the acts and duties of it, may be reduced unto three heads:—

(1.) The *admission and exclusion of members.* Both these are acts of church power and authority, which are to be exercised by the elders only, in a church that is organical and complete in its officers. There is that in them both which is founded in and warranted from the light and law of nature and rules of equity. Every righteous voluntary society, coalescing therein rightfully, upon known laws and rules for the regulation of it unto certain ends, hath naturally a power inherent in it, and inseparable from it, to receive into its incorporation such as, being meet for it, do voluntarily offer themselves thereunto; as also to reject or withhold the privileges of the society from such as refuse to be regulated by the laws of the society. This power is inherent in the church essentially considered, antecedently unto the instating of officers in it. By virtue of their mutual confederation, they may receive into the privileges of the society those that are meet, and withdraw the same privileges from those that are unworthy. But in these actings of the church, essentially considered,

there is no exercise of the power of the keys as unto authoritative rule but what is merely doctrinal. There is in what it doth a declaration of the mind of Christ as unto the state of the persons whom they do receive or reject. But unto the church as organical, as there are elders or rulers instated in it according unto the mind of Christ, there is a peculiar authority committed for those acts of the admission and exclusion of members. Unto this end is the key of rule committed unto the elders of the church, to be applied with the consent of the whole society, as we shall see afterward.

(2.) The *direction* of the church, in all the members of it, unto the observance of the rule and law of Christ in all things, unto his glory and their own edification. And all these things may be reduced unto these four heads:—[1.] Mutual, intense, peculiar love among themselves, to be exercised continually in all the duties of it. [2.] Personal holiness, in gracious moral obedience. [3.] Usefulness towards the members of the same church, towards other churches, and all men absolutely, as occasion and opportunity do require. [4.] The due performance of all those duties which all the members of the church owe mutually unto each other, by virtue of that place and order which they hold and possess in the body. About these things is church-rule to be exercised; for they all belong unto the preservation of its being and the attainment of its ends.

(3.) Hereunto also belongs the *disposal of the outward concernments* of the church in its assemblies, and in the management of all that is performed in them, that "all things may be done decently and in order." The disposal of times, seasons, places, the way and manner of managing all things in church-assemblies, the regulation of speeches and actions, the appointment of seasons for extraordinary duties, according unto the general rules of the word and the reason of things from present circumstances, are acts of rule, whose right resides in the elders of the church.

These things being premised, we may consider what is the work and duty of that sort of elders which we have proved to be placed by Christ for rule in the church; for considering that which hath been spoken before concerning the pastoral office, or the duty of teaching elders of the church, and what hath now been added concerning its rule in general, I cannot but admire that any one man should have such a confidence in his own abilities as to suppose himself meet and able for the discharge of the duties of both sorts in the least church of Christ that can well be supposed. Yea, supposing more teaching elders in every church than one, yet if they are all and every one of them equally bound to give themselves unto the word and prayer, so as not to be diverted from that work by any inferior duties, if they are obliged to labour in the word and doctrine to the utmost of their strength continually, it will appear

at length to be necessary that there should be some whose peculiar office and duty is to attend unto rule with diligence. And the work of these elders consists in the things ensuing:—

1. They are joined unto the *teaching elders* in all acts and duties of church-power for the rule and government of the church; such are those before declared. This is plain in the text, 1 Tim. v. 17. Both sorts of elders are joined and do concur in the same rule and all the acts of it, one sort of them labouring also in the word and doctrine. Of both sorts is the presbytery or eldership composed, wherein resides all church-authority. And in this conjunction, those of both sorts are every way equal, determining all acts of rule by their common suffrage. This gives order, with a necessary representation of authority, unto the church in its government.

2. They are, in particular, to attend unto all things wherein *the rule or discipline* of the church is concerned, with a due care that the commands of Christ be duly observed by and among all the members of the church. This is the substance of the rule which Christ hath appointed, whatever be pretended unto the contrary. Whatever is set up in the world in opposition unto it or inconsistent with it, under the name of the government of the church, is foreign unto the gospel. Church-rule is a due care and provision that the institutions, laws, commands, and appointments of Jesus Christ be duly observed, and nothing else. And hereof, as unto the duty of the elders, we may give some instances; as,—

(1.) To *watch diligently* over the ways, walking, and conversation of all the members of the church, to see that it be blameless, without offence, useful, exemplary, and in all things answering the holiness of the commands of Christ, the honour of the gospel, and the profession which in the world they make thereof; and upon the observation which they so make, in the watch wherein they are placed, to instruct, admonish, charge, exhort, encourage, comfort, as they see cause. And this are they to attend unto with courage and diligence.

(2.) To watch against all risings or appearances of such *differences* and divisions, on the account of things ecclesiastical or civil, as unto their names, rights, and proprieties in the world, as are contrary unto that love which the Lord Christ requireth in a peculiar and eminent manner to be found amongst his disciples. This he calls his own "new commandment," with respect unto his authority requiring it, his example first illustrating it in the world, and the peculiar fruits and effects of it which he revealed and taught. Wherefore, the due observance of this law of love, in itself and all its fruits, with the prevention, removal, or condemnation, of all that is contrary unto it, is that in which the rule of the church doth principally consist. And, considering the weakness, the passions, the temptations of men, the

mutual provocations and exasperations that are apt to fall out even among the best, the influence that earthly occasions are apt to have upon their minds, the frowardness sometimes of men's natural tempers, the attendance unto this one duty or part of rule requires the utmost diligence of them that are called unto it; and it is merely either the want of acquaintance with the nature of that law and its fruits which the Lord Christ requires among his disciples, or an undervaluation of the worth and glory of it in the church, or inadvertency unto the causes of its decays and of breaches made in it, or ignorance of the care and duties that are necessary unto its preservation, that induces men to judge that the work of an especial office is not required hereunto.

(3.) Their duty is to *warn all the members of the church* of their especial church-duties, that they be not found negligent or wanting in them. There are *especial duties* required respectively of all church-members, according unto the distinct talents, whether in things spiritual or temporal, which they have received. Some are rich, and some are poor; some are old, and some are young; some are in peace, some in trouble; some have received more spiritual gifts than others and have more opportunities for their exercise. It belongs unto the rule of the church that all be admonished, instructed, and exhorted to attend unto their respective duties, not only publicly in the *preaching of the word*, but *personally* as occasion doth require, according to the observation which those in rule do make of their forwardness or remissness in them. In particular, and in the way of instance, men are to be warned that they contribute unto the necessities of the poor and other occasions of the church, according unto the ability that God in his providence hath intrusted them withal, and to admonish them that are defective herein, in order to their recovery unto the discharge of this duty in such a measure as there may be an equality in the church, 2 Cor. viii. 14. And all other duties of an alike nature are they to attend unto.

(4.) They are to watch against the beginnings of any *church-disorders*, such as those that infested the church of Corinth, or any of the like sort, with remissness as unto [attending] the assemblies of the church and the duties of them, which some are subject unto, as the apostle intimates, Heb. x. 25. On the constancy and diligence of the elders in this part of their work and duty, the very being and order of the church do greatly depend. The want hereof hath opened a door unto all the troubles, divisions, and schisms, that in all ages have invaded and perplexed the churches of Christ from within themselves; and from thence also have decays in faith, love, and order insensibly prevailed in many, to the dishonour of Christ and the danger of their own souls. First one grows remiss in attending unto the assemblies of the church, and then another, first to one degree, then to another,

until the whole lump be infected. A diligent watch over these things, as to the beginnings of them, in all the members of the church, will either heal and recover them that offend, or it will warn others, and keep the church from being either corrupted or defiled, Heb. iii. 12, xii. 15.

(5.) It belongs unto them also to *visit the sick*, especially such as whose inward or outward conditions do expose them unto more than ordinary trials in their sickness; that is, the poor, the afflicted, the tempted in any kind. This in general is a moral duty, a work of mercy; but it is moreover a peculiar church-duty by virtue of institution. And one end of the institution of churches is, that the disciples of Christ may have all that spiritual and temporal relief which is needful for them and useful to them in their troubles and distresses. And if this duty were diligently attended unto by the officers of the church, it would add much unto the glory and beauty of our order, and be an abiding reserve with relief in the minds of them whose outward condition exposeth them to straits and sorrows in such a season.

I add hereunto, as a duty of the same nature, *the visitation of those who suffer under restraint and imprisonment* upon the account of their profession, adherence unto church-assemblies, or the discharge of any pastoral or office duties in them. This is a case wherewith we are not unacquainted, nor are like so to be. Some look on this as the duty of all the members of the church who yet enjoy their liberty; and so it is as their opportunities and abilities will allow them, provided the discharge of it be useful unto those whom they visit, and inoffensive unto others. But this duty diligently attended unto by the elders, representing therein the care and love of the whole church, yea, of Christ himself unto his prisoners, is a great spring of relief and comfort unto them. And by the elders may the church be acquainted what yet is required of them in a way of duty on their account. The care of the primitive churches herein was most eminent.

(6.) It belongs unto them and their office to *advise with and give direction unto the deacons* of the church as unto the making provision and distribution of the charity of the church for the relief of the poor. The office of the deacons is principally executive, as we shall see afterward. Inquisition into the state of the poor, with all their circumstances, with the warning of all the members of the church unto liberality for their supply, belongs unto the elders.

(7.) When the state of the church is such, through suffering, persecution, and affliction, that *the poor be multiplied among them*, so as that the church itself is not able to provide for their relief in a due manner, if any *supply* be sent unto them from the love and bounty of other churches, it is to be deposited *with these elders*, and

disposed according to their advice, with that of the teachers of the church, Acts xi. 30.

(8.) It is also their duty, according to the advantage which they have, by their peculiar inspection of all the members of the church, their ways and their walking, *to acquaint the pastors*, or teaching-elders of the church, *with the state of the flock;* which may be of singular use unto them for their direction in the present work of the ministry. He who makes it not his business to know the state of the church which he ministers unto in the word and doctrine, as to their knowledge, their judgment and understanding, their temptations and occasions, and applies not himself in his ministry to search out what is necessary and useful unto their edification, he fights uncertainly in his whole work, as a man beating the air. But whereas their obligation to attend unto the word and prayer confines them much unto a retirement for the greatest part of their time, they cannot by themselves obtain that acquaintance with the whole flock but that others may greatly assist therein from their daily inspection, converse, and observation.

(9.) And it is their duty to *meet and consult with the teaching-elders* about such things of importance as are to be proposed in and unto the church, for its consent and compliance. Hence nothing crude or indigested, nothing unsuited to the sense and duty of the church, will at any time be proposed therein, so as to give occasion unto contests or janglings, disputes contrary unto order or decency, but all things may be preserved in a due regard unto the gravity and authority of the rulers.

(10.) To take care of the *due liberties* of the church, that they be not imposed on by any Diotrephes, in office or without it.

(11.) It is incumbent on them, in times of difficulties and persecution, to *consult together with the other elders* concerning all those things which concern the present duty of the church from time to time, and their preservation from violence, according unto the will of Christ.

(12.) Whereas there may be, and ofttimes is, but one teaching-elder, pastor, or teacher in a church, upon his death or removal it is the work and duty of these elders *to preserve the church in peace and unity*, to take care of the continuation of its assemblies, to prevent irregularities in any persons or parties among them, and to go before, to direct and guide the church in the call and choice of some other meet person or persons in the room of the deceased or removed.

These few instances have I given of the work and duty of ruling-elders. They are all of them such as deserve a greater enlargement in their declaration and confirmation than I can here afford unto them, and sundry things of the like nature, especially with respect unto communion with other churches and synods; but what hath

been spoken is sufficient unto my present purpose. And to manifest that it is so, I shall add the ensuing observations:—

1. All the things insisted on do undoubtedly and unquestionably belong unto the rule and order appointed by Christ in his church. There is no one of them that is liable unto any just exception from them by whom all church-order is despised. Wherefore, where there is a defect in them, or any of them, the church itself is defective as unto its own edification; and where this defect is great in many of them, there can be no beauty, no glory, no order in any church, but only an outward show and appearance of them. And that all these things do belong unto the duty of these elders, there needs no other proof or confirmation but that they all undoubtedly and unquestionably belong unto that rule and order which the Lord Christ hath appointed in his church, and which the Scripture testifieth unto both in general and particular; for all the things which belong unto the rule of the church are committed to the care of the rulers of the church.

2. It is a vain apprehension, to suppose that one or two teaching officers in a church, who are obliged to "give themselves unto the word and prayer," to "labour" with all their might "in the word and doctrine," to "preach in season and out of season,"—that is, at all times, on all opportunities, as they are able,—to convince gainsayers, by word and writing pleading for the truth, to assist and guide the consciences of all under their temptations and desertions, with sundry other duties, in part spoken to before, should be able to take care of, and attend with diligence unto, those things that do evidently belong unto the rule of the church. And hence it is that churches at this day do live on the preaching of the word, the proper work of their pastors, which they greatly value, and are very little sensible of the wisdom, goodness, love, and care of Christ, in the institution of this rule in the church, nor are partakers of the benefits of it unto their edification. And the supply which many have had hitherto herein, by persons either unacquainted with their duty, or insensible of their own authority, or cold, if not negligent, in their work, doth not answer the end of their institution. And hence it is that the authority of government and the benefit of it are ready to be lost in most churches. And it is both vainly and presumptuously pleaded, to give countenance unto a neglect of their order, that some churches do walk in love and peace, and are edified without it, supplying some defects by the prudent aid of some members of them; for it is nothing but a preference of our own wisdom unto the wisdom and authority of Christ, or at best an unwillingness to make a venture on the warranty of his rule, for fear of some disadvantages that may ensue thereon.

3. Whereas sundry of the duties before mentioned are, as unto the substance of them, required of *the members of the church* in their

several stations, without any especial obligation to attend unto them with diligence, to look after them, or power to exercise any authority in the discharge of them, to leave them from under the office-care of the elders is to let confusion and disorder into the church, and gradually to remove the whole advantage of the discipline of Christ; as it is come to pass in many churches already.

It is therefore evident, that neither the purity, nor the order, nor the beauty or glory of the churches of Christ, nor the representation of his own majesty and authority in the government of them, can be long preserved without a multiplication of elders in them, according to the proportion of their respective members, for their rule and guidance. And for want hereof have churches, of old and of late, either degenerated into anarchy and confusion, their self-rule being managed with vain disputes and janglings, unto their division and ruin, or else given up themselves unto the domination of some prelatical teachers, to rule them at their pleasure, which proved the bane and poison of all the primitive churches; and they will and must do so in the neglect of this order for the future.

CHAPTER IX.

Of deacons.

THE original institution, nature, and use, of the office of *deacons* in the church, are so well known as that we need not much insist upon them; nor shall I treat of the name, which is common unto any kind of ministry, civil or sacred, but speak of it as it is appropriated unto that especial work for which this office was ordained.

The remote foundation of it lieth in that of our Saviour, "The poor always ye have with you," John xii. 8. He doth not only foretell that such there should be in the church, but recommends the care of them who should be so unto the church: for he maketh use of the words of the law, Deut. xv. 11, "The poor shall never cease out of the land; therefore I command thee, saying, Thou shalt open thine hand wide unto thy brother, to thy poor, and to thy needy." This legal institution, founded in the law of nature, doth the Lord Christ by his authority transfer and translate unto the use of gospel churches among his disciples.

And it may be observed, that at the same instant hypocrisy and avarice began to attempt their advantage on the consideration of this provision for the poor, which they afterward effected unto their safety; for, on the pretence hereof, Judas immediately condemned an eminent duty towards the person of Christ, as containing a cost in it, which might have been better laid out in provision for the poor. The ointment poured on our Saviour he thought might have been "sold

for three hundred pence" (it may be about forty or fifty pounds[1]), "and given to the poor." But "this he said, not that he cared for the poor, but because he was a thief, and had the bag," out of which he could have made a good prey unto himself, John xii. 6. And it may be observed, that although Judas maliciously began this murmuring, yet at last some of the other disciples were too credulous of his insinuation, seeing the other evangelists ascribe it to them also. But the same pretence, on the same grounds, in following ages, was turned unto the greatest advantage of hypocrisy and covetousness that ever was in the world: for under this pretence of providing for the poor, the thieves who had got the bag,—that is, the ruling part of the clergy, with the priests, friars, and monks, who served them,—allowed men in the neglect of the greatest and most important duties of religion towards Christ himself, so as that they would give all that they had to the poor; not that they cared for the poor, but because they were thieves, and had the bag; by which means they possessed themselves of the greatest part of the wealth of the nations professing Christian religion. This was their compliance with the command of Christ, which they equally made use of in other things.

This foundation of their office was further raised by the preaching of the gospel among the poor. Many of them who first received it were of that state and condition, as the Scripture everywhere testifieth: "The poor are evangelized," Matt. xi. 5; "God hath chosen the poor," James ii. 5. And so it was in the first ages of the church, when the provision for them was one of the most eminent graces and duties of the church in those days. And this way became the original propagation of the gospel; for it was made manifest thereby that the doctrine and profession of it were not a matter of worldly design or advantage. God also declared therein of how little esteem with him the riches of this world are. And also provision was made for the exercise of the grace of the rich in their supply; the only way whereby they may glorify God with their substance. And it were well if all churches, and all the members of them, would wisely consider how eminent is this grace, how excellent is this duty, of making provision for the poor,—how much the glory of Christ and honour of the gospel are concerned herein; for whereas, for the most part, it is looked on as an ordinary work, to be performed transiently and cursorily, scarce deserving any of the time which is allotted unto the church's public service and duties, it is indeed one of the most eminent duties of Christian societies, wherein the principal exercise of the second evangelical grace, namely, love, doth consist.

The care of making provision for the poor being made in the

[1] It is difficult to explain this estimate by our author of the value of three hundred denarii. According to the received valuation of Roman money, the sum could not have exceeded £9, 7s. 6d. of our money.—Ed.

church an institution of Christ, was naturally incumbent on them who were *the first, only officers of the church;* that is, the *apostles.* This is plain from the occasion of the institution of the office of the deacons, Acts vi. 1–6. The whole work and care of the church being in their hands, it was impossible that they should attend unto the whole, and all the parts of it in any manner. Whereas, therefore, they gave themselves, according to their duty, mostly unto those parts of their work which were incomparably more excellent and necessary than the other,—namely, preaching of the word and prayer,—there was such a defect in this other part, of ministration unto the poor, as must unavoidably accompany the actings of human nature, not able to apply itself constantly unto things of diverse natures at the same time. And hereon those who were concerned quickly, as the manner of all is, expressed their resentment of a neglect in somewhat an undue order; there was "a murmuring" about it, verse 1. The apostles hereon declared that the principal part of the work of the ministry in the church, namely, the word and prayer, was sufficient for them constantly to attend unto. Afterward, indeed, men began to think that they could do *all* in the church themselves; but it was when they began to do *nothing* in a due manner. And whereas the apostles chose as their duty the work of prayer and preaching, as that which they would and ought entirely to give up themselves unto, and for the sake of that work would deposit the care of other things in other hands, they are a strange kind of successors unto them who lay aside that work, which they determined to belong unto them principally and in the first place, to apply themselves unto any thing else whatever.

Yet did not the apostles hereon utterly forego the care of providing for the poor, which being originally committed unto them by Jesus Christ, they would not divest themselves wholly of it; but, by the direction of the Holy Ghost, they provided such assistance in the work as that for the future it might require no more of their time or pains but what they should spare from their principal employment. And the same care is still incumbent on the ordinary pastors and elders of the churches, so far as the execution of it doth not interfere with their principal work and duty; from which those who understand it aright can spare but little of their time and strength.

Hereon the apostles, by the authority of Christ and direction of the Holy Spirit, under whose infallible guidance they were in all the general concernments of the church, instituted the office of deacons, for the discharge of this necessary and important duty in the church, which they could not attend unto themselves. And whereas the Lord Christ had in an especial manner committed the care of the poor unto the disciples, there was now a declaration of his mind and will in what way and by what means he would have them provided for.

And it was *the institution of a new office*, and not a present supply in *a work of business*, which they designed; for the limitation of an especial ecclesiastical work, with the designation of persons unto that work, with authority for the discharge of it, set over this business, with a separation unto it, do completely constitute an office, nor is there any thing more required thereunto.

But whereas there are three things that concur and are required unto the ministration unto the poor of the church,—1. The love, charity, bounty, and benevolence of the members of the church, in contribution unto that ministration; 2. The care and oversight of the discharge of it; and, 3. The actual exercise and application of it,—the last only belongs unto the office of the deacons, and neither of the first is discharged by the institution of it: for the first is both a duty of the light and law of nature, and in its moral part enforced by many especial commands of Christ, so as that nothing can absolve men from their obligation thereunto. The office and work of the deacons is to excite, direct, and help them, in the exercise of that grace and discharge of the duty therein incumbent on them. Nor is any man, by the intrusting a due proportion of his good things in the hands of the deacons for its distribution, absolved thereby from his own personal discharge of it also; for it being a moral duty, required in the law of nature, it receiveth peculiar obligations unto a present exercise by such circumstances as nature and providence do suggest. The care also of the whole work is, as was said, still incumbent on the pastors and elders of the church; only the ordinary execution is committed unto the deacons.

Nor was this a *temporary institution*, for that season, and so the officers appointed *extraordinary*, but it was to abide in the church throughout all generations; for,—1. The *work itself*, as a distinct work of ministry in the church, was never to cease; it was to abide for ever: "The poor ye shall have always with you." 2. The *reason of its institution* is perpetual, namely, that the pastors of the churches are not sufficient in themselves to attend unto the whole work of praying, preaching, and this ministration. 3. They are afterward, not only in this church at Jerusalem, but in all the churches of the Gentiles, reckoned among the *fixed officers* of the church, Phil. i. 1. And, 4. Direction is given for their *continuation* in all churches, with a prescription of the qualifications of the persons to be chosen and called unto this office, 1 Tim. iii. 8–10, 12, 13. 5. The way of their call is directed, and an *office* committed unto them: "Let them be first proved, then let them use the office of a deacon." 6. A *promise of acceptance* is annexed unto the diligent discharge of this office, verse 13.

Hence those who afterward utterly perverted all church-order, taking out of the hands and care of the deacons that work which

was committed to them by the Holy Ghost in the apostles, and for which end alone their office was instituted in the church, assigning other work unto them, whereunto they are not called nor appointed, yet thought meet to continue the name and the pretence of such an office, because of the evident institution of it unto a continuation. And whereas, when all things were swelling with pride and ambition in the church, no sort of its officers contenting themselves with their primitive institution, but striving by various degrees to somewhat in name and thing that was high and aloft, there arose from the name of this office the meteor of an archdeacon, with strange power and authority, never heard of in the church for many ages, this belongs unto the mystery of iniquity, whereunto neither the Scripture nor the practice of the primitive churches doth give the least countenance. But some think it not inconvenient even to sport themselves in matters of church order and constitution.

This office of deacons is an office of service, which gives not any authority or power in the rule of the church; but being an office, it gives authority with respect unto the special work of it, under a general notion of authority; that is, a right to attend unto it in a peculiar manner, and to perform the things that belong thereunto. But this right is confined unto the particular church whereunto they do belong. Of the members of that church are they to make their collections, and unto the members of that church are they to administer. Extraordinary collections from or for other churches are to be made and disposed by the elders, Acts xi. 30.

Whereas the reason of the institution of this office was, in general, to free the pastors of the churches who labour in the word and doctrine from avocations by outward things, such as wherein the church is concerned, it belongs unto the deacons not only to take care of and provide for the poor, but to manage all other affairs of the church of the same kind; such as are providing for the place of the church-assemblies, of the elements for the sacraments, of collecting, keeping, and disposing of the stock of the church for the maintenance of its officers and incidences, especially in the time of trouble or persecution. Hereon are they obliged to attend the elders on all occasions, to perform the duty of the church towards them, and receive directions from them. This was the constant practice of the church in the primitive times, until the avarice and ambition of the superior clergy enclosed all alms and donations unto themselves; the beginning and progress whereof is excellently described and traced by Paulus Sarpius in his treatise of matters beneficiary.

That maintenance of the poor which they are to distribute is to be collected by the voluntary contributions of the church, to be made ordinarily every first day of the week, and as occasion shall require in an extraordinary manner, 1 Cor. xvi. 1, 2. And this contribu-

tion of the church ought to be,—1. In a way of *bounty*, not sparingly, 2 Cor. ix. 5–7; 2. In a way of *equality*, as unto men's abilities, chap. viii. 13, 14; 3. With respect unto *present successes* and thriving in affairs, whereof a portion is due to God, "As God hath prospered him," 1 Cor. xvi. 2; 4. With *willingness* and freedom, 2 Cor. viii. 12. Wherefore it belongs unto the deacons, in the discharge of their office,—1. To acquaint the church with the present necessity of the poor; 2. To stir up the particular members of it unto a free contribution, according unto their ability; 3. To admonish those that are negligent herein, who give not according to their proportion, and to acquaint the elders of the church with those who persist in a neglect of their duty.

The consideration of the state of the poor, unto whom the contributions of the church are to be administered, belongs unto the discharge of this office; as,—1. That they are *poor indeed*, and do not pretend themselves so to be for advantage; 2. What are the *degrees* of their poverty, with respect unto their relations and circumstances, that they may have suitable supplies; 3. That in other things they walk according unto rule; 4. In particular, that they *work and labour* according to their ability, for he that will not labour must not eat at the public charge; 5. To comfort, counsel, and exhort them unto *patience*, submission, contentment with their condition, and thankfulness: all which might be enlarged and confirmed, but that they are obvious.

The qualifications of persons to be called unto this office are distinctly laid down by the apostle, 1 Tim. iii. 8–13. Upon the trial, knowledge, and approbation of them, with respect unto these qualifications, their call to this office consists,—1. In the *choice* of the church; 2. In a *separation* unto it by prayer and imposition of hands, Acts vi. 3, 5, 6. And the adjuncts of their ministration are, —1. *Mercy*, to represent the tenderness of Christ towards the poor of the flock, Rom. xii. 8. 2. *Cheerfulness*, to relieve the spirits of them that receive against thoughts of being troublesome and burdensome to others. 3. *Diligence* and faithfulness, by which they "purchase to themselves a good degree, and great boldness in the faith which is in Christ Jesus."

It remains only that we inquire into some few things relating unto this office and those that are called unto it; as,—

1. What is the meaning of the apostle where he affirms that the deacons, in the discharge of their office, *βαθμὸν ἑαυτοῖς καλὸν περιποιοῦνται*, 1 Tim. iii. 13, "purchase (or procure) to themselves a good degree." *Βαθμός* is "a step, a degree, a seat a little exalted;" and metaphorically it is applied to denote dignity and authority. This good degree, which deacons may obtain, is, in the judgment of most, the office of presbytery. This they shall be promoted unto in the

church; from deacons they shall be made presbyters. I cannot comply with this interpretation of the words: for,—(1.) The office of presbytery is called καλὸν ἔργον, "a good work," nowhere καλὸς βαθμός, "a good degree." (2.) The difference between a deacon and a presbyter is not in degree but in order. A deacon made a presbyter is not advanced unto a farther degree in his own order, but leaves it for another. (3.) The diligent discharge of the work of a deacon is not a due preparation for the office of the presbytery, but a hinderance of it: for it lies wholly in the providing and disposal of earthly things, in a serving of the tables of the church, and those private, of the poor; but preparation for the ministry consists in a man's giving himself unto study, prayer, and meditation.

I shall only give my conjecture on the words. The apostle seems to me to have respect unto church-order, with decency therein, in both these expressions, "Purchase to themselves a good degree," and, "Great confidence in the faith." Βαθμός is of the same signification with βαθμίς, which is a seat raised in an assembly, to hear or speak. So saith the schol. on Soph. Œd. Tyr. 142: Ὁ τόπος ἔνθα ἡ ἐκκλησία ἐγίνετο, βαθμίσιν ἦν κύκλῳ διειλημμένος, ἄλλαις ἐπ' ἄλλαις· ἔνθα οἱ συνελθόντες πάντες καθήμενοι ἀνεμποδίστως ἠκροῶντο τοῦ ἱσταμένου ἐν μέσῳ· —"The place where the assembly (or church) met was divided round about with seats in degrees, some above others, where all that met might without trouble hear him that stood in the midst as they sat." And countenance is given hereunto by what is observed concerning the custom of sitting in the Jewish synagogues. So Ambrose: "Traditio est synagogæ, ut sedentes disputarent, seniores dignitate in cathedris, subsequentes in subselliis, novissimi in pavimento;"—"It is the tradition (or order) of the synagogue, that the elders in dignity (or office) should discourse sitting in chairs, the next order on forms (or benches), and the last on the floor." So speaks Philo before him: Εἰς ἱεροὺς ἀφικνούμενοι τόπους καθ' ἡλικίας ἐν τάξεσιν ὑπὸ πρεσβυτέροις νέοι καθίζονται·—"When we meet in sacred places," places of divine worship, "the younger sort, according to their quality, sit in orders under the elders." And this James the apostle hath respect unto, in the primitive assemblies of the Christian Jews; for, reproving their partiality in accepting of men's persons, preferring the rich immoderately before the poor, he instanceth in their disposing of them unto seats in their assemblies. They said unto the rich man, "Σὺ κάθου ὧδε καλῶς," "Sit thou here in a good place,"—that is, in βάθμῳ καλῷ, "in the best degree,"—and to the poor, "Stand thou there," on the floor, or "Sit at my footstool," without respect unto those other qualifications whereby they were to be distinguished. Wherefore, the apostle having respect unto church-assemblies, and the order to be observed in them, the καλὸς βαθμός here intended may signify no more but a place of some eminency in the church-assemblies, which is due

unto such deacons, where with boldness and confidence they may assist in the management of the affairs of the church, which belongs unto the profession of the faith which is in Christ Jesus.

If any shall rather think that both of the expressions do signify an increase in gifts and grace, which is a certain consequence of men's faithful discharge of their office in the church, wherein many deacons of old were eminent unto martyrdom, I shall not contend against it.

2. Whereas there are qualifications expressly required in the wives of deacons, as that they should be "grave, not slanderers, sober, faithful in all things," 1 Tim. iii. 11, which are to be considered before their call to office, supposing that any of them do fall from the faith, as becoming Papists, Socinians, or Quakers, [it is asked] whether their husbands may be continued in their office?

Ans. 1. He who in his own person faithfully dischargeth his office may be continued therein, yea, though his wife should be actually excommunicated out of the church. Every one of us must give an account of himself unto the Lord. He rejects us not for what we cannot remedy. The sinning person shall bear his own judgment. 2. Such an one ought to take care, by virtue of his *authority* as a husband, that as little offence as possible may be given to the church by his wife, when she loseth the qualification of not being a slanderer, which is inseparable from such apostates.

3. May a deacon be dismissed from his office wholly, after he hath been solemnly set apart unto it by prayer?

Ans. 1. The very end of the office being only the convenience of the church and its accommodation, the continuation of men in this office is to be regulated by them; and if the church at any time stand not in need of the ministry of this or that person, they may, upon his desire, discharge him of his office. 2. Things may so fall out with men as unto their outward circumstances, with respect unto either their persons in bodily distempers and infirmities, or their condition in the world, as that they are not able any longer to attend unto the due discharge of this office; in which case they ought to be released. 3. A man may be solemnly set apart unto a work and duty by prayer for a limited season, suppose for a year only; wherefore this doth not hinder but that a man may, on just reasons, be dismissed at any time from his office, though he be so set apart unto it. 4. A deacon, by unfaithfulness and other offences, may forfeit his office and be justly excluded from it, losing all his right unto it and interest in it; and therefore, on just reasons, may be dismissed wholly from it. 5. For any one to desert his office, through frowardness, covetousness, sloth, or negligence, is an offence and scandal which the church ought to take notice of. 6. He who desires a dismission from his office ought to give an account of his desires and the reasons of them unto the church, that the ministry

which he held may be duly supplied, and love continued between him and the church.

4. How many deacons may there be in one congregation?

Ans. As many as they stand in need of for the ends of that ministry, and they may be at all times increased as the state of the church doth require; and it is meet that there should always be so many as that none of the poor be neglected in the daily ministration, nor the work be made burdensome unto themselves.

5. What is the duty of the deacons towards the elders of the church?

Ans. Whereas the care of the whole church, in all its concernments, is principally committed unto the pastors, teachers, and ruling elders, it is the duty of the deacons, in the discharge of their office,—1. To acquaint them from time to time with the state of the church, and especially of the poor, so far as it falls under their inspection; 2. To seek and take their advice in matters of greater importance relating unto their office; 3. To be assisting unto them in all the outward concerns of the church.

6. May deacons preach the word and baptize authoritatively by virtue of their office?

Ans. 1. The deacons, whose office is instituted, Acts vi., and whose qualifications are fixed, 1 Tim. iii., have no call unto or ministerial power in these things. The limitation of their office, work, and power is so express as will not admit of any debate. 2. Persons once called unto this office might of old in an extraordinary manner, may at present in an ordinary way, be called unto the preaching of the word; but they were not then, they cannot be now, authorized thereunto by virtue of this office. 3. If a *new office* be erected under the name of deacons, it is in the will of them by whom it is erected to assign what power unto it they please.

CHAPTER X.

Of excommunication.

THE power of the church towards its members (for it hath nothing to do with them that are without) may be referred unto three heads:—1. The *admission* of members into its society; 2. The *rule* and edification of them that belong unto it; 3. The *exclusion* out of its society of such as obstinately refuse to live and walk according unto the laws and rules of it. And these things belong essentially and inseparably unto every free society, and are comprehensive of all church-power whatever.

The second of these hath been treated of in the discourse concern-

ing church offices and rule; and all that belongs unto the first of them is fully declared in the chapters of the essential constituent parts of gospel churches, namely, their matter and form. The third must be now spoken unto, which is the power of excommunication.

There is nothing in Christian religion about which the contest of opinions hath been more fierce than this of excommunication, most of them proceeding evidently from false assumptions and secular interests; and no greater instance can be given of what the serpentine wits of men, engaged by the desire of domination and wealth, and assisted by opportunities, may attain unto. For whereas, as we shall see immediately, there is nothing more plain, simple, and more exposed unto the common understanding of all Christians, yea of all mankind, than is this institution of Christ, both as unto its nature, form, and manner of administration; nothing more wholesome nor useful unto the souls of men; nothing more remote from giving the least disturbance or prejudice to civil society, to magistrates or rulers, unto the personal or political rights or concernments of any one individual in the world;—it hath been metamorphosed into a hideous monster, an engine of priestly domination and tyranny, for the deposition or assassination of kings and princes, the wasting of nations with bloody wars, the terror of the souls of men, and the destruction of their lives, with all their earthly concerns, unto the erection of a tyrannical empire, no less pernicious unto the Christian world than those of the Saracens or the Turks. He is a stranger unto all that hath passed in the world for nearly a thousand years who knows not the truth of these things. And to this very day, the greatest part of them that are called Christians are so supinely ignorant and doting, or so infatuated and blinded by their prejudices and corrupt interests, as to suppose or to say that if the pope of Rome do excommunicate kings or princes, they may be lawfully deposed from their rule, and in some cases killed; and that other persons, being rightly excommunicated, according unto certain laws, rules, and processes, that some have framed, ought to be fined, punished, imprisoned, and so destroyed! And about these things there are many disputes and contests, when, if men were awakened out of their lethargy, they would be laughed at as the most ridiculous and contemptible mormos that ever appeared in the world; though they are no laughing matter at present unto them that are concerned in them.

Supposing, then, ecclesiastical excommunication (as I at present suppose, and shall immediately prove it) to be an appointment of our Lord Jesus Christ, these things are plain and evident concerning it, not capable of any modest contradiction:—1. That there is no divine evangelical institution that is more suited unto the light of nature, the rules of common equity, and principles of *unseared consciences*, as unto the nature, efficacy, and rule of it, than this is

2. That the *way* of the administration and exercise of the power and acts of it is so determined, described, and limited in the Scripture and the light of nature, as that there can be no gross error or mistake about it but what proceeds from secular interests, pride, ambition, covetousness, or other vicious habits and inclinations of the minds of men. 3. That the whole *authority* of it, its sentence, power, and efficacy, are merely spiritual, with respect unto the souls and consciences of men only; and that to extend it, directly or indirectly, immediately or by consequences, unto the temporal hurt, evil, or damage of any, in their lives, liberties, estates, natural or legal privileges, is opposite unto and destructive of the whole government of Christ in and over his church. All these things will fully appear in the account which we shall give of it.

It is therefore evident, as was intimated, that nothing in Christian practice hath been or is more abused, corrupted, or perverted, than this of excommunication hath been and is. The residence of the supreme power of it, to be exercised towards and over all Christians, rulers and subjects, in the pope of Rome, or in other single persons absolutely, over less or greater distributions of them; the administration of it by citations, processes, pleadings, and contentions, in wrangling law-courts, according unto arbitrary canons and constitutions, whose original is either known or unknown; the application of it unto the hurt, damage, evil, or loss of men, in their temporal concerns,—are utterly and openly foreign unto the gospel, and expressly contrary unto what the Lord Christ hath appointed therein. It would require a whole volume to declare the horrible abuses both in point of right and in matter of fact, with the pernicious consequences that have issued thereon, which the corruption of this divine institution hath produced: but to make a declaration hereof doth not belong to my present design; besides, it hath in some good measure been done by others. In brief, it is so come to pass that it is made a mere political engine of an external, forcible government of the persons of men, unto the ends of the interests of some who have got a pretence of its power; administered by such ways and means as wherein the consciences of men, neither of those by whom it is administered nor of those unto whom it is applied, are any way concerned, with respect unto the authority of any institution of Jesus Christ.

From an observation hereof, and a desire to vindicate as well Christian religion from such a scandalous abuse as mankind from bondage to such a monstrous fiction as is the present power and exercise of it, some have fallen into another extreme, denying that there is any such thing as excommunication appointed or approved by the gospel. But this neither is nor ever will be a way to reduce religion, nor any thing in it, unto its primitive order and purity To

deny the being of any thing because it hath been abused, when there could have been no abuse of it but upon a supposition of its being, is not a rational way to reprove and convince that abuse. And when those who have corrupted this institution find the insufficiency of the arguments produced to prove that there never was any such institution, it makes them secure in the practice of their own abuses of it; for they imagine that there is nothing incumbent on them, to justify their present possession and exercise of the power of excommunication, but that excommunication itself is appointed in the church by Christ: whereas the true consideration of this appointment is the only means to divest them of their power and practice; for the most effectual course to discharge and disprove all corruptions in the agenda or practicals of religion, as the sacraments, public worship, rule, and the like, is to propose and declare the things themselves in their original simplicity and purity, as appointed by Christ and recorded in the Scriptures. A real view of them in such a proposal will divest the minds of men, not corrupted and hardened by prejudice and interest, of those erroneous conceptions of them that, from some kind of tradition, they have been prepossessed withal; and this I shall now attempt in this particular of excommunication.

There hath been great inquiry about the nature and exercise of this ordinance under the old testament, with the account given of it by the later Jews; for the right and power of it in general belongs unto a church as such,—every church, and not to that which is purely evangelical only. This I shall not inquire into; it hath been sifted to the bran already, and intermixed with many rabbinical conjectures and mistakes. In general, there is nothing more certain than that there was a double removal of persons by church-authority from the communion of the whole congregation in divine worship,—the one for a season, the other for ever; whereof I have given instances elsewhere. But I intend only the consideration of what belongs unto churches under the new testament. And to this end we may observe,—

1. That all *lawful societies*, constituted such by voluntary confederation, according unto peculiar laws and rules of their own choice, unto especial duties and ends, have a right and power, by the light of nature, to receive into their society those that are willing and meet, engaging themselves to observe the rules, laws, and ends of the society, and to expel them out of it who wilfully deviate from those rules. This is the life and form of every lawful society or community of men in the world, without which they can neither coalesce nor subsist. But it is required hereunto,—

(1.) That those who so enter into such a society have *right or power so to do.* And many things are required unto this end; as,—[1.] That those who enter into such a society be "sui juris," *have a*

lawful right to dispose of themselves as unto all the duties and ends of such a society. Hence children, servants, subjects, have no power in themselves to enter into such societies without the interposition of and obligation from a power superior unto that of parents, masters, or princes,—namely, that of God himself. [2.] That the rules, laws, and ends of the society be *lawful*, good, and useful, unto themselves and others; for there may be a confederation in and for evil, which is a combination that gives no right nor power over one another, or towards others that enter into it. [3.] That it contains nothing that is *prejudicial* unto others, in things divine or human. [4.] Nor obliges unto the *omission* or neglect of any duty that men, by virtue of any relations, natural, moral, or political, do owe unto others. [5.] Nor is *hurtful* unto themselves, in their lives, liberties, names, reputation, usefulness in the world, or any thing else, unto whose preservation they are obliged by the law of nature. [6.] Nor are nor can be such persons obliged to forsake *the conduct of themselves*, in things divine and human, by the light of their own consciences, by an engagement of blind obedience unto others; which would render every society unlawful by the law of God and light of nature. [7.] Least of all have any persons right or power to oblige themselves in such societies unto things *evil, sinful, superstitious, or idolatrous.*

These things are plain and evident in themselves, and every way sufficient to divest all the religious societies and fraternities that are erected in the church of Rome of all that right and power which belong unto lawful societies, constituted by voluntary confederation. And if any thing inconsistent with these principles of natural light be pretended in churches, it divests them of all power, as to the exercise of it, by virtue of any compact or confederation whatsoever.

(2.) It is required that a society by *voluntary consent* vested with the right and power mentioned do neither give nor take away any right, privilege, or advantage, to or from any members of the society which belongs unto them *naturally* or *politically;* but their power is confined unto those things alone wherein men may be benefited and advantaged by the society. And this is the foundation of all political societies. Men for the sake and benefit of them may and ought to forego many particular advantages, which without them they might make unto themselves; but they cannot forego any of those rights which, in their several relations, are inseparably annexed unto them by the law of nature, nor give power over themselves in such things unto the society. So is it with churches: the power of expulsion out of their society extends only unto the benefits and advantages which the society, as such, doth afford and communicate. Now, these are only things spiritual, if churches be an institution of Him whose kingdom is not of this world. The power, then, that is in churches,

by virtue of their being what they are, extends not itself unto any outward concernments of men, as unto their lives, liberties, natural or political privileges, estates, or possessions; unless we shall say that men hold and possess these things by virtue of their relation unto the church, which is to overthrow all natural and human right in the world. "De facto," men are now compelled, whether they will or no, to be esteemed to be of this or that church, and to be dealt withal accordingly; but if they had not been divested of their natural liberty, they know not how, without their own consent, and should be taught that by entering into a church, they must come under a new tenure of their lives, liberties, and estates, at the will of the lords of the society, according to the customs of their courts, there would not be so many wise men in churches as now there are thought to be.

But this is the true state of things in the church of Rome, and among others also. Christians are esteemed to be of them, and belong unto them, whether they will or no. Immediately hereon all the rights, liberties, privileges, and possessions which they enjoy by the law of God and nature, and by the just laws and constitutions of men in the civil governments under which they live, come to depend upon and be subject unto the especial laws and rules of the society which they are adjudged to belong unto; for upon expulsion out of that society by excommunication, according unto the laws and rules which it hath framed unto itself, all their rights and titles, and liberties and enjoyments, are forfeited and exposed to ruin. Some, indeed, do earnestly and learnedly contend that the pope of Rome hath not power to excommunicate sovereign kings and princes, and that if he do, they make no forfeiture of life or dignity thereby; and there are good reasons why they do so. But, in the meantime, they deal with other poor men after the same manner; for if a poor man be excommunicated, immediately he loseth the free tenure of his goods, liberty, and life, by the law of the church and the land, and is committed to the jail without bail or mainprise.[1] So that, by this artifice, all men hold their natural and civil rights by the rules of the church-society whereto they are supposed to belong. And as this utterly overthrows the foundation of all that [right of] property according to the laws of the land, which is so much talked of and valued, so indeed it would be destructive of all order and liberty, but that the church is wise enough not to employ this engine unto great men and men in power, who may yet deserve excommunication as well as some of their poor neighbours, if the gospel be thought to give the rule of it; but those that are poor, helpless, and friendless, shall, in the pursuit of this excommunication, be driven from their houses, cast into pri-

[1] A term of English law, signifying the deliverance of a prisoner on security for his appearance on a future day.—Ed.

sons, and kept there until they and their families starve and perish. And it is apparent that we are beholden unto the greatness, authority, and wealth of many, whom the ecclesiastical courts care not to conflict withal, that the whole nation is not actually brought under this new tenure of their lives, liberties, and estates, which, on this presumption, they are obnoxious unto.

And all this evil ariseth from the neglect and contempt of this fundamental rule of all societies, apparent unto all in the light of nature itself,—namely, *That they have no power in or over any thing, right, privilege, or advantage, but what men are made partakers of by virtue of such societies, their rules and laws, whereunto they are obliged.* But of this sort are not the lives, the liberties, the houses and possessions of men, with respect unto the church. They receive them not from the church, and a man would certainly think that the church could not take them away.

Yea, we live and subsist in order upon the good nature and wisdom of men who judge it best neither to exert their power nor act their principles in this matter: for whereas they esteem all the inhabitants of the land to belong unto their church, if they should in the first place excommunicate all that ought to be excommunicated by the rule and law of the gospel, and then all that ought to be so according to their own laws and canons,—both which a man would think they were obliged in point of conscience unto,—and in pursuit of their sentence send out the "capias" for them all, I very much question whether any of them would go to prison or no, and then in what a fine case would this government be! and if they should all go to jail, I am persuaded the king would be in an ill state to defend his realms against his enemies.

(3.) Every society hath this power towards those who are incorporated in it *by their own consent*, and not towards others; for whence should they have such a power, or who should commit it unto them? Nor can any be cast out from those privileges which they never had an interest in nor a right unto. The apostle's rule holds in this case, especially with respect unto churches, "What have we to do to judge them that are without?" And as unto the exercise of this power, they are all to be esteemed to be without who are not rightly incorporated into that particular church by which they may be ejected out of it. A power of excommunication at random, towards all that those who exercise it can extend force unto, hath no foundation either in the light of nature or authority of the Scripture; and it would be ridiculous in any corporation to disfranchise such as never belonged unto it, who were never members of it.

(4.) The only reason or cause for the expulsion of any person out of such a society is *a wilful deviation from the rules and laws of*

the society, whose observance he had engaged unto upon his entrance into it. Nothing else can be required, unto the preservation of a man's interest in any right or privilege, but what he took upon himself to perform in his admittance into it. And if the great rule of every church-society be, "That men observe and do whatsoever the Lord Christ hath commanded," none can be justly ejected out of that society but upon a wilful disobedience unto his commands. And therefore the casting of men out of church-communion on light and trivial occasions, or for any reasons or causes whatever but such as essentially belong unto the rules and laws whereon the church doth originally coalesce into a society, is contrary unto natural light and the reason of the things themselves.

Thus far, I say, is every lawful confederate society enabled and warranted, by the light of nature, to remove from its communion, and from a participation in its rights and privileges, any of its number who will not walk according to the rules and principles of its coalescency and constitution. Whereas, therefore, the rule of the constitution of the church is, "That men walk together in holy obedience unto the commands of Christ, and in the observance of all his institutions, without giving offence unto one another or those that are without by any sinful miscarriage, and do abide in the profession of the truth," if any one shall wilfully and obstinately transgress in any of these things, it is the right and duty, and in the power, of the church to remove him from its society.

2. But this is not the entire nor the next immediate ground, reason, or warranty, of ecclesiastical excommunication; for this natural equity will not extend itself unto cases that are in things spiritual and supernatural, nor will the actings of the church thereon reach unto the consciences of men for the proper ends of excommunication. Wherefore it was necessary that it should have a peculiar institution in the church by the authority of Jesus Christ; for,—

(1.) The church is such a society as no men have right or power either to enter into themselves or to exclude others from but *by virtue of the authority of Christ.* No warranty from the light of nature, nor from the laws of men, nor their own voluntary confederation, can enable any to constitute a church-society, unless they do all things expressly in obedience unto the authority of Christ; for his church is his kingdom, his house, which none can constitute or build but himself. Wherefore it is necessary that the power of admission into and exclusion from the church do arise from his grant and institution; nor is it in the power of any men in the world to admit into or exclude from this society but by virtue thereof.

(2.) *Excommunication* is an act of authority, as we shall see afterward. But no authority can be exercised in the church towards any person whatever but by virtue of the institution of Christ; for the

authority itself, however ministerially exercised by others, is his alone, and he exerts it not but in the ways of his own appointment. So, in particular, the apostle directs that excommunication be exerted "in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ;" that is, in and by his authority, 1 Cor. v. 4.

(3.) The *privileges* from which men are excluded by excommunication are not such as they have any natural or civil right unto (as hath been proved), but merely such as are granted unto the church by Jesus Christ; and men cannot, by virtue of any agreement among themselves, without a warranty from him by his institution, expel others from the privileges which are merely of his grant and donation. He alone, therefore, hath given and granted this power unto the church, namely, of excluding any, by the rules and ways of his appointment, from the privileges of his grant; which is the peculiar power of excommunication inquired after.

(4.) There is such an *efficacy* assigned unto excommunication, in binding the consciences of men, in retaining their sins, in the destruction or mortification of the flesh, in the healing and recovery of sinners, as nothing but the authority of a divine institution can give unto it. By virtue of natural light and mutual consent, men may free themselves from the company and society of those who will not walk with them according to rules of communion agreed upon among them, but they cannot reach the minds and consciences of others with any of these effects.

(5.) That excommunication is an express ordinance of our Lord Jesus Christ in his churches is fully declared in the Scripture; for,—

[1.] The power of it is contained in the authority given by Christ unto the church, under the name of "The keys of the kingdom of heaven;" for the power expressed therein is not merely *doctrinal* and declarative, as is the preaching of the gospel,—the consequent whereof, upon the faith or unbelief of them that hear it, is the remitting or retaining of their sins in heaven and earth,—but it is *disciplinary* also, as it is appropriated unto the house, whose keys are committed unto the stewards of it. And seeing the design of Christ was, to have his church holy, unblamable, and without offence in the world, that therein he might make a representation of his own holiness and the holiness of his rule; and whereas those of whom it is constituted are liable and subject unto sins scandalous and offensive, reflecting dishonour on himself and the church, in being the occasion of sinning unto others,—that design would not have been accomplished had he not given this authority unto his church to cast out and separate from itself all that do by their sins so give offence. And the neglect of the exercise of this authority in a due manner was the principal means whereby the glory, honour, and usefulness of the churches in the world were at length utterly lost.

[2.] It hath a direct institution: Matt. xviii. 15–20, "If thy brother shall trespass," etc., "tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as a heathen man and a publican. Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven," etc. After all the learned and unlearned contests that have been about this place, the sense of it is plain and obvious unto such as whose minds are not clouded with prejudices about such churches and such excommunications as are utterly foreign unto the Scripture. But that by "trespasses" in this place, sins against God, giving scandal or offence, are intended, hath been proved before; as also, that by "church" a particular Christian congregation is intended. This church hath the cognizance of the scandalous offences of its members committed unto it, when brought before it in the due order described. Hereon it makes a determination, designing in the first place the recovery of the person offending from his sin, by his hearing of its counsel and advice; but, in case of obstinacy, it is to remove him from its communion, leaving him in the outward condition of a "heathen man and a publican:" so is he to be esteemed by them that were offended with his sin; and that because of the authority of the church binding him in heaven and earth unto the punishment due unto his sin, unless he doth repent. The rejection of an offending brother out of the society of the church, leaving him, as unto all the privileges of the church, in the state of a heathen, declaring him liable unto the displeasure of Christ and everlasting punishment, without repentance, is the excommunication we plead for; and the power of it, with its exercise, is here plainly granted by Christ and ordained in the church.

[3.] According unto this institution was the practice of the apostles, whereof we have several instances. I might insist on the excommunication of Simon the magician, a baptized professor, by Peter, who declared him to have "neither part nor lot" in the church, upon the discovery of his wickedness, Acts viii. 13, 20–23; yet because it was the single act of one apostle, and so may be esteemed extraordinary, I shall omit it. However, that fact of the apostle is sufficiently declarative of what is to be done in the church in like cases; and which if it be not done, it cannot be preserved in its purity, according unto the mind of Christ. But that which was directed by the apostle Paul to be done towards the incestuous person in the church of Corinth is express, 1 Cor. v. 1–7:—1*st*. He declares the sin whereof the person charged was guilty, with the ignominy and scandal of it, verse 1. 2*dly*. He blames the church that they had not been affected with the guilt and scandal of it, so as to have proceeded to his removal or expulsion out of the church, that he might be "taken away" or cut off from them, verse 2. 3*dly*. He declares his own

judgment in the case,—that he ought to be so taken away or removed; which yet was not actually effected by that judgment and sentence of his, verse 3. *4thly.* He declares the causes of this excision:—(1*st.*) The *supreme efficient cause* of it is the power or authority of the Lord Jesus Christ instituting this ordinance in his church, giving right and power unto it for its administration in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, and with his power; (2*dly.*) The *declarative cause* of the equity of this sentence, which was the spirit of the apostle, or the authoritative declaration of his judgment in the case, "With my spirit;" (3*dly.*) The *instrumental, ministerial cause* of it, which is the church, "Do it 'in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, when ye are gathered together,'" verse 4; "and thereby 'purge out the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump,'" verse 7; whence the punishment of this sentence is said to be "inflicted by many," 2 Cor. ii. 6; that is, all those who, on his repentance, were obliged to forgive and comfort him,—that is, the whole church, verse 7. *5thly.* The nature of the sentence is, the "delivering of such an one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus," 1 Cor. v. 5; not the destruction of his body by death, but through the "mortification of the flesh," whereby he was shortly afterward recovered and restored unto his former condition.

The whole of what we plead for is here exemplified; as,—[1.] The *cause* of excommunication, which is a scandalous sin unrepented of. [2.] The *preparation* for its execution, which is the church's sense of the sin and scandal, with humiliation for it. [3.] The *warranty* of it, which is the institution of Christ, wherein his authority is engaged. [4.] The *manner* and form of it, by an act of authority, with the consent of the whole church. [5.] The *effect* of it, in a total separation from the privileges of the church. [6.] The *end* of it,—1*st.* With respect unto the *church*, its purging and vindication; 2*dly.* With respect unto the *person excommunicated*, his repentance, reformation, and salvation.

It is usually replied hereunto, "That this was an extraordinary act of apostolical power, and so not to be drawn by us into example; for he himself both determines the case and asserteth his presence in spirit,—that is, by his authority,—to be necessary unto what was done. Besides, it was a delivery of the man to Satan,—that is, into his power,—to be afflicted and cruciated by him, to be terrified in his mind and punished in his body to the destruction of the flesh, that is, unto death. Such was the delivery of a man to Satan by the apostle, mentioned here and 1 Tim. i. 19, 20, in the judgment of many of the ancients. But there is no such power in any church at present to deliver an offender unto Satan, nor any appearing effects of such a pretence. Wherefore this is a matter which belongs not unto churches at present."

I answer,—1. What the apostles did in any church, whether present or absent, by their own authority, did not prejudice the right of the churches themselves, nor their power, acted in subordination unto them and their guidance. So it is evident in this place, that, notwithstanding the exerting of any apostolical power intimated, the church itself is charged with its duty, and directed to exercise its authority in the rejection of the offender. 2. There is nothing extraordinary in the case:—(1.) It is not so that a member of a church should fall into a scandalous sin, unto the dishonour of Christ and the church, giving offence unto persons of all sorts. (2.) It is an ordinary rule, founded in the light of nature, confirmed here and elsewhere by express divine commands, that such an one be rejected from the society and communion of the church, until he give satisfaction by repentance and reformation. (3.) It is that without which the church cannot be preserved in its purity, nor its being be continued, as both reason and experience do manifest. (4.) The judgment both of the fact and right was left unto the church itself; whence it was afterward highly commended by the apostle for the diligent discharge of its duty herein, 2 Cor. ii. 6–8. In brief, it is such a divine order that is here prescribed as without the observance whereof no church can long subsist. (5.) There is no difficulty in the other part of the objection, about the delivery unto Satan; for,—[1.] It cannot be proved that hereon the offender was delivered so into the power of Satan, to be cruciated, agitated, and at length killed, as some imagine; nor can any instance of any such thing be given in the Scripture or antiquity, though there be many of them who, upon their rejection out of the church, were enraged unto an opposition against it, as it was with Simon Magus, Marcion, and others. [2.] Yea, it is evident that there was no such thing included in their delivery unto Satan as is pretended: for the design and end of it was the man's humiliation, recovery, and salvation, as is expressly affirmed in the text; and this effect it actually had, for the man was healed and restored. Wherefore this delivery unto Satan is an ordinance of Christ for the exciting of saving grace in the souls of men, adapted unto the case of falling by scandalous sins, peculiarly effectual, above any other gospel ordinance. Now, this cannot be such a delivery unto Satan as that pretended, which can have no other end but destruction and death. [3.] This delivery unto Satan is no more but the casting of a man out of the visible kingdom of Christ, so giving him up, as unto his outward condition, into the state of heathens and publicans, which belonged unto the kingdom of Satan; for he who, by the authority of Christ himself, according unto his law and institution, is not only debarred from a participation of all the privileges of the gospel, but also visibly and regularly divested of all present right to them and interest in them, he belongs unto the visible kingdom of Satan.

The gathering of men into the church by conversion is the "turning of them from the power of Satan unto God," Acts xxvi. 18; a "delivery from the power of darkness,"—that is, the kingdom of Satan, —and a translation into the kingdom of Christ, Col. i. 13. Wherefore, after a man hath, by faith and his conjunction unto a visible church, been translated into the kingdom of Christ, his just rejection out of it is the re-delivery of him into the visible kingdom of Satan; which is all that is here intended. And this is an act suited unto the end whereunto it is designed; for a man hereby is not taken out of his own power and the conduct of his own mind, not acted or agitated by the devil, but is left unto the sedate consideration of his present state and condition. And this, if there be any spark of ingenuous grace left in him, will be effectually operative, by shame, grief, and fear, unto his humiliation, especially understanding that the design of Christ and his church herein is only his repentance and restoration.

Here is, therefore, in this instance, an everlasting rule given unto the church in all ages, the ordinary occurrence of the like cases requiring an ordinary power for relief in them; without which the church cannot be preserved. That it is the duty of the church, enjoined unto it by the Lord Jesus Christ, and that necessary unto its glory, its own honour, and edification, to reject scandalous offenders out of its communion, is evidently declared in this place; and to suppose that to be the duty of the church which it hath no power and authority to discharge (seeing without them it cannot be discharged) is a wild imagination.

The *duty of the church* herein, with such other particular duties as suppose the institution hereof, are in many places directed and enjoined. It is so in that insisted on, 1 Cor. v. The foundation of the whole discourse and practice of the apostle there recorded lies in this, that *churches ought to cut off from among them scandalous offenders*, and that to the end they may preserve themselves pure; and that this they ought to do in the name of Christ, and by virtue of his authority, verses 2–5, 7. And this is the whole of that excommunication which we plead for. The manner of its administration we shall consider afterward. 2 Cor. ii. 6–8, the apostle commends the church for what they had done in the excommunication of the incestuous person, calling it a punishment inflicted on him by them, verse 6. He gives also an account of the effect of this sentence against him; which was his humiliation and repentance, verse 7: and hereon he gives direction for his restoration, by an act of the church forgiving him and confirming their love unto him. Men may fancy to themselves strange notions of excommunication, with reference unto its power, the residence of that power, its effects, extent, and ends; and so either, on the one hand, erect it into an engine of arbi-

trary domination over the church and all the members of it, or deny, on the other, that there is any such institution of Christ in force in his churches: but we can be taught nothing more plainly of the mind of Christ than that he hath given power unto his church to cast out of their communion obstinate, scandalous offenders, and to restore them again upon their repentance, enjoining it unto them as their duty. And it is an evidence of a woful degeneracy in churches from their primitive institution, when the sentence is so administered as that it hath an effect by virtue of human laws or the outward concerns of men, but no influence on their consciences unto humiliation and repentance; which is the principal end of its appointment. The apostle treats of the same matter, Gal. v. 7–12. He speaks of those false teachers who opposed and overthrew, what lay in them, the fundamental doctrine of the gospel. These at that time were in great power and reputation in the churches of the Galatians, which they had corrupted with their false opinions, so that the apostle doth not directly enjoin their immediate excision; yet he declares what they did deserve, and what was the duty of the church towards them when freed from their delusions: Verse 12, "I would they were even cut off that trouble you." Men have exercised their minds in curious conjectures about the sense of these words, altogether in vain and needlessly. The curiosity of some of the best of the ancients, applying it unto a forcible eunuchism, is extremely fond. No other excision is intended but that which was *from the church*, and to be done by the church, in obedience unto the truth. Neither the subject-matter treated of, the nature of the crime condemned, nor the state of the church or design of the apostle, will admit of any other exposition. 2 Thess. iii. 6, the apostle gives command unto the brethren of the church, and that "in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ," to "withdraw from every brother that walketh disorderly." What it is to "walk disorderly" he declares immediately,—namely, to live in an open disobedience unto any of the commands of Christ, and "not after the tradition which he received of us;" that is, the doctrine of the gospel which he had delivered unto them. This withdrawing is as unto church-communion; which cannot be done but upon some act of the church depriving him of the right of it: for if every member of the church should be left unto his own judgment and practice herein, it would bring all things into confusion. And therefore, verse 14, he requires that a note be set on such a person by the church,—that is, a sentence be denounced against him,—before the duty of withdrawing from him by the brethren be incumbent on them. See to the same purpose Tit. iii. 10, 11; 1 Tim. v. 20; Rev. ii. 2, 14, 15, 20, 21.

It is therefore evident that this censure, judgment, spiritual punishment, is an institution of Christ, for whose administration he hath

given authority unto his church, as that which is necessary unto its edification, with its preservation in honour, purity, and order.

There have been many disputes about it, as unto its order and kinds. Some suppose that there are two sorts of excommunication,—the one they call the "lesser," and the other the "greater;" some, three sorts, as it is supposed there were among the Jews. There is no mention in the Scripture of any more sorts but one, or of any degrees herein. *A segregation from all participation in church-order*, worship, and privileges, is the only excommunication spoken of in the Scripture. But whereas an offending person may cause great disorder in a church, and give great scandal unto the members of it, before he can be regularly cut off or expelled the society, some do judge that there should *a suspension of him from the Lord's table at least* precede total or complete excommunication in case of impenitency; and it ought in some cases so to be. But this suspension is not properly an especial institution, but only an act of prudence in church-rule, to avoid offence and scandal. And no men question but that this is lawful unto, yea, the duty of the rulers of the church, to require any one to forbear for a season from the use of his privilege in the participation of the supper of the Lord, in case of scandal and offence which would be taken at it and ensue thereon. And if any person shall refuse a submission unto them in this act of rule, the church hath no way for its relief but to proceed unto *the total removal* of such a person from their whole communion; for the edification of the whole church must not be obstructed by the refractoriness of any one among them.

This excommunication, as we have proved before, is *an act of church-authority* exerted in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ; and if so, then it is an act of the officers of the church,—namely, so far as it is authoritative,—for there is no authority in the church, properly so called, but what resides in the officers of it. There is an office in the church which is merely ministerial, without any formal authority,—that is, of the deacons; but there is no authority in exercise but what is in the elders and rulers of the church. And there are two reasons which prove that the power of excommunication, as to the authoritative exercise of it, is in the elders of the church:—1. Because the apostles, by virtue of their office-power in every church, did join in *the authoritative excommunication*, as is plain in the case insisted on, 1 Cor. v.; and there is no office-power now remaining but what is in the elders of the church. 2. It is *an act of rule;* but all rule, properly so called, is in the hands of rulers only. We may add hereunto, that the care of the preservation of the church in its purity, of the vindication of its honour, of the edification of all its members, of the correction and salvation of offenders, is principally incumbent on them, or committed unto them, as

we have declared; as also, that they are best able to judge when and for what the sentence ought to be denounced against any, which requires their best skill in the wisdom of spiritual rule. And therefore the omission of the exercise of it, when it was necessary, is charged as a neglect on the angels or rulers of the churches, as the due execution of it is commended in them; and therefore unto them it doth belong, with respect unto their office, and is thereon an office-act or an act of authority.

Howbeit, it cannot be denied but that the interest, yea, the power of the whole church, in the fraternity of it, is greatly to be considered herein; for indeed wherever the apostle treats of it, he doth not anywhere recommend it unto *the officers of the church* in a peculiar manner, but unto the whole church or the brethren therein. This is evident in the places before quoted. Wherefore the whole church is concerned herein, both in point of duty, interest, and power:— 1. In point of duty; for by virtue of *the mutual watch* of all the members of the church over each other, and of the care incumbent on every one of them, for the good, the honour, the reputation, and edification of the whole, it is their duty, jointly and severally, to endeavour the purging out from among them of every thing that is contrary unto these ends. And they who are not concerned in these things are dead and useless members of the church. 2. In *interest* they have also a concernment therein. They are to look that no root of bitterness spring up amongst them, lest themselves be at length defiled thereby. It is usually said that the good are not defiled by holding communion with them that are wicked in a participation of holy ordinances; and there is some truth in what is said, with reference unto wicked, undiscovered hypocrites, or such as are not scandalously flagitious: but to promote this persuasion, so as to beget an opinion in church-members that they are no way concerned in the scandalous sins and lives of those with whom they walk in all duties of spiritual communion, openly avowing themselves members of the same body with them, is a diabolical engine, invented to countenance churches in horrible security, unto their ruin. But yet, besides that defilement which may be contracted in a joint participation of the same ordinances with such persons, there are other ways, almost innumerable, whereby their example, if passed by without animadversion, may be pernicious unto their faith, love, and obedience. Wherefore they are obliged in point of spiritual interest, as they take care of their own souls, to concur in the ejection out of the church of obstinate offenders. 3. In point of *power;* for the execution of this sentence is committed unto and rests in the body of the church. According as they concur and practise, so it is put in execution or suspended; for it is they who must withdraw communion from them, or the sentence is of no use or validity. This

punishment must be inflicted by the "many;" who also are to restore him who is so rebuked. Wherefore, excommunication without the consent of the church is a mere nullity.

But if any one shall say that excommunication is not an act of authority or of office, but of power residing in the community, resulting from their common suffrage, guided and directed by the officers or elders of the church, I shall again take up this inquiry immediately, and speak unto it more distinctly, lest what is here spoken should not be sufficient unto the satisfaction of any.

Our next inquiry is concerning the *objects* of this church-censure, or who they are that ought to be excommunicated. And,—

1. They must be *members of that church* by which the sentence is to be denounced against them; and this, as we have proved before, they cannot be without their *own consent.* One church cannot excommunicate the members of another. They are unto them, as unto this matter, "without," and they have no power to judge them. The foundation of the right to proceed against any herein is in their own voluntary engagement to observe and keep the rules and laws of the society whereunto they are admitted. The offence is given unto that church in the first place, if not only; and it is an act of that church for its own edification. And there is a nullity in the sentence which is ordained, decreed, or denounced, by any who are not officers of that church in particular wherein the sin is committed.

2. These church-members that may be justly excommunicated are of two sorts:—[1]

(1.) Such as continue *obstinate* in the practice of any *scandalous sin* after private and public admonition. The process from the first offence in admonition is so stated, in ordinary cases, Matt. xviii. 15–20, that there is no need further to declare it. The time that is to be allotted unto the several degrees of it shall be spoken unto afterward. And unto a right judgment of obstinacy in any scandalous sin, it is required,—[1.] That the sin, considered in itself, be such as is *owned to be such by all,* without doubting, dispute, or hesitation. It must be some sin that is judged and condemned in the light of nature or in the express testimony of Scripture; yea, such as the Holy Ghost witnesseth, that, continued in without repentance, it is inconsistent with salvation. If the thing itself to be animadverted on be dubious, or disputable whether it be a sin or no, especially such a sin, either from the nature of the fact, or the qualifications of the person offending, or from other circumstances, so as that the guilty person is not

[1] Strangely enough, our author mentions only one sort, and omits to specify the other. Perhaps he intended by the second sort members, whose conduct, though not grossly and obstinately scandalous, was so contumacious in resisting the authority of the church, that their continued enjoyment of church-membership would have been subversive of all peace and order. See a preceding paragraph, which appears to imply as much, p. 165.—Ed.

self-condemned, nor are others fully satisfied in their minds about the nature of it, there is no room for excommunication in such case. And if it be once allowed to be applied towards any sins but such as are evident to be so (as the apostle says, "The works of the flesh are manifest") in the light of nature and express testimony of Scripture, not only will the administration of it be made difficult, a matter of dispute, unfit for the determination of the body of the church, but it will leave it unto the wills of men to prostitute it unto litigious brawls, quarrels, and differences, wherein interest and partiality may take place; which is to profane this divine institution. But confine it, as it ought to be, unto such sins as are condemned in the light of nature or by express testimony of Scripture, as inconsistent with salvation by Jesus Christ, if persisted in, and all things that belong unto the administration of it will be plain and easy.

From the neglect of this rule proceeded that horrible confusion and disorder, in excommunication and the administration of it, which for sundry ages prevailed in the world; for as it was mostly applied unto things holy, just, and good, or the performance of such gospel duties as men owed to Christ and their own souls, so being exercised with respect unto irregularities that are made such merely by the arbitrary constitutions and laws of men, and that in cases frivolous, trifling, and of no importance, it was found necessary to be managed in and by such courts, such processes, such forms of law, such pleadings and intricacies of craft, such a burden of cost and charge, as it is uncertain whether it ought to be more bewailed or derided.

[2.] It is required hereunto that *the matter of fact* as unto the relation of the sin unto the particular offender be *confessed*, or *not denied*, or *clearly proved*. How far this is to extend, and what ground of procedure there may be in reports or fame concurring with leading circumstances, we shall inquire afterward. And although in such cases of public fame, a good testimony, from those of credit and repute in the church, given unto the supposed guilty person is of use, and sufficient, in some cases, singly to oppose unto public reports, yet to require a man to purge himself by others from any feigned scandalous imputation is an unwarrantable tyranny.

[3.] It is also required that the previous process, in and by private and public admonition, and that repeated, with *patient waiting* for the success of each of them, be duly premised. Whether this extend itself unto all causes of excommunication shall be afterward inquired into. Ordinarily it is so necessary unto the conviction of the mind and conscience of the offender, and to leave him without either provocation from the church or excuse in himself, so suited to be expressive of the grace and patience of Christ toward sinners, so requisite unto the satisfaction of the church itself in their procedure, as that the omission of it will probably render the sentence useless and

ineffectual. A crying out, "I admonish a first, a second, a third time," and so, to excommunication, is a very absurd observation of a divine institution.

[4.] It is required that *the case* of the person to be censured, as unto his profession of repentance on the one hand, or obstinacy on the other, be judged and determined by the whole church in love and compassion. There are few who are so profligately wicked but that, when the sin wherewith they are charged is evidently such in the light of nature and Scripture, and when it is justly proved against them, they will make some profession of sorrow and repentance. Whether this be sufficient, as in most cases it is, to suspend the present proceeding of the church, or quite to lay it aside, is left unto the judgment of the church itself, upon consideration of present circumstances and what is necessary unto its own edification. Only, this rule must be continually observed, that the least appearance of haste or undue precipitation herein is to be avoided in all these cases, as the bane of church rule and order.

Again; the manner of its administration according to the mind of Christ may be considered. And hereunto are required,—1. *Prayer*, without which it can no way be administered in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ. The administration of any solemn ordinance of the gospel without prayer is a horrible profanation of it; and the neglect or contempt hereof, in any who take upon them to excommunicate others, is an open proclamation of the nullity of their act and sentence. And the observation of the administration of it without any due reverence of God, without solemn invocation of the name of Christ, thereby engaging his presence and authority in what they do, is that principally which hath set the consciences of all mankind at liberty from any concernment in this ecclesiastical censure, and whence those that administer it expect no other success of what they do but what they can give it by outward force: and where this fails, excommunication is quickly laid aside; as it was when the pope threatened the cantons of the Swiss, that if they complied not with some of his impositions, he would excommunicate them; whereon they sent him word "They would not be excommunicated;" which ended the matter. Wherefore, when our Lord Jesus Christ gives unto his church the power of binding and loosing, directing them in the exercise of that power, he directs them to ask assistance by prayer when they are gathered together, Matt. xviii. 18–20: and the apostle directs the church of Corinth that they should proceed unto this sentence when they were gathered together in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, 1 Cor. v. 4; which could not be without calling on his name. In brief, without prayer, neither is the ordinance itself sanctified unto the church, nor are any meet to administer it, nor is the authority of Christ either owned or engaged,

nor divine assistance obtained, neither is what is done any more excommunication than any rash curse is; so that many [such] proceed inordinately out of the mouths of men.

And the prayer required herein is of three sorts:—(1.) That which is previous, for guidance and direction in a matter of so great weight and importance. It is no small thing to fall into mistakes when men act in the name of Christ, and so engage his authority in what he will not own; and the best of men, the best of churches, are liable unto such mistakes, when they are not under the guidance of the Holy Spirit, which is to be obtained by prayer only. (2.) In or together with the administration of it, that what is done on earth may be ratified in heaven, by the approbation of Christ, and be made effectual unto its proper end. (3.) It must be followed with the prayer of the church unto the same purpose; all with respect unto the humiliation, repentance, healing, and recovery, of the offender.

2. It is to be accompanied with *lamentation* or mourning. So the apostle, reproving the church of Corinth for the omission of it when it was necessary, tells them that they had not "mourned," that the offender might be taken away from among them, 1 Cor. v. 2. It is not to be done without mourning. And himself calls the execution of this sentence, from this adjunct, his bewailing of them: "I shall bewail many that have sinned already," 2 Cor. xii. 21 Compassion for the person offending, with respect unto that dangerous condition whereinto he hath cast himself, the excision of a member of the same body, with whom they have had communion in the most holy mysteries of divine worship and sat down at the table of the Lord, with a due sense of the dishonour of the gospel by his fall, ought to ingenerate this mourning or lamentation in the minds of them who are concerned in the execution of the sentence; nor is it advisable for any church to proceed thereunto before they are so affected.

3. It is to be accompanied with a *due sense of the future judgment of Christ;* for we herein judge for Christ in the matters of his house and kingdom. And woe to them who dare pronounce this sentence without a persuasion, on good grounds, that it is the sentence of Christ himself! And there is a representation also in it of the future judgment, when Christ will eternally cut off and separate from himself all hypocrites and impenitent sinners. This is well expressed by Tertullian: "Ibidem etiam exhortationes, castigationes et censura divina" (speaking of the assemblies of the church), "nam et judicatur magno cum pondere, ut apud certos de Dei conspectu; summumque futuri judicii præjudicium est, si quis ita deliquerit ut a communicatione orationis et conventus, et omnis sancti commercii relegetur," Apol. cap. xxxix. Were this duty observed, it would be a preservative against that intermixture of corrupt affections and corrupt ends

which often impose themselves on the minds of men in the exercise of this power.

Lastly, The *nature and end* of this judgment or sentence being *corrective*, not *vindictive*,—for healing, not destruction,—what is the duty of the church and those principally concerned in the pursuit of it, to render it effectual, is plainly evident. Of what use a "significabit" and "capias"[1] may be in this case I know not; they belong not unto Christian religion,—much less do fire and fagot do so. Prayer for the person cut off, admonition as occasion is offered, compassion in his distressed estate (which is so much the more deplorable if he know it not), forbearance from common converse, with readiness for the restoration of love in all the fruits of it, contain the principal duties of the church and all the members of it towards them that are justly excommunicated.

What further belongeth unto this head of church rule or order shall be spoken unto in the resolution of some cases or inquiries, wherein some things only mentioned already shall be more fully explained.

I have made some inquiry before whether excommunication be an act of authority and jurisdiction in the officers of the church, or an act of power in the fraternity of the church; but, for the sake of some by whom it is desired, I shall a little more distinctly inquire after the truth herein, though I shall alter nothing of what was before laid down. And,—

1. It is certain, it hath been proved, and I now take it for granted, that the Lord *Christ hath given this power unto the church.* Wherefore, in the exercise of this power, both the officers and members of the church are to act according unto their respective interests; for that exercise of power in the church towards any which is not an act of obedience unto Christ in them that exercise it, is in itself null. There is, therefore, no distinction or distribution of power in the church, but by the interposition of especial duty.

2. The institution of Christ with respect unto a church as it is a *peculiar society*, for its *especial ends*, doth not deprive it of its natural right as it is a society. There is in every community, by voluntary confederation, a natural right and power to expel those from its society who will not be ruled by the laws of its constitution. And if the church should, by the institution of a power new as unto the way, manner, and ends of its exercise, be deprived of its original, radical power, with respect unto the general end of its own preservation, it would not be a gainer by that institution. It may be easily understood that the Lord Christ should, in particular, appoint the way and manner of the exercise of this power, or administration of this sentence, committing the care thereof unto the officers of the

[1] *Significabit, Capias.* The first words of certain legal writs issued to prosecute the sentences of the church, and maintain its authority.—Ed.

church; but it cannot be well understood that thereby he should deprive the church of its right, and forbid them their duty in preserving their society entire and pure. Neither can it be in so an especial manner committed unto any, as that upon their neglect, whereby those who by the law and rule of Christ ought to be cast out of the church's communion are continued in it, unto its sin and defilement, the church itself should be free from guilt. Wherefore the apostle expressly chargeth the whole church of Corinth with sin and neglect of duty, in that the incestuous person was not put away from among them. This could not be, if so be the power of it were so in the hands of a few of the officers that the church had no right to act in it; for none can incur guilt merely by the defect of others in discharge of their duty.

3. The church, *essentially* considered, is before its ordinary officers; for the apostles ordained officers in every church. But the church in that state hath power to put away from among them and their communion an obstinate offender: they have it as they are a society by voluntary confederation. Wherein this comes short of authoritative excommunication will immediately appear.

4. Where a church is complete and *organized* with its stated rulers, as the church of Corinth was, yet rules, instructions, and commands, are given expressly unto the fraternity or community of the church, for their duty and acting in the administration of this sentence, and the cutting off of an offender, 1 Cor. v. 1–7; 2 Cor. ii. 7, 8; yea, the ἐπιτιμία, or infliction of the sentence, is ascribed unto them, verse 6. All these things do suppose a right and duty thereon to act according to their interest in excommunication to reside in the whole church. Wherefore,—

5. There are *some acts* belonging hereunto that the church itself, in the body of the fraternity, cannot be excluded from without destroying the nature of the sentence itself and rendering it ineffectual. Such are, the previous cognizance of the cause, without which they cannot be blamed for any neglect about it; preparatory duties unto its execution, in prayer, mourning, and admonition, which are expressly prescribed unto them; and a testification of their consent unto it by their common suffrage. Without these things excommunication is but a name with a noise; it belongs not unto the order appointed by Christ in his church.

6. Hence arise the *duties* of the church towards an excommunicated person that are consequential unto his exclusion from among them. Such are, praying for him, as one noted by the church and under the discipline of Christ; avoiding communion with him in public and private, that he may be ashamed, and the like;—all which arise from their own voluntary actings in his exclusion, and such as without a judgment of the cause they cannot be obliged unto.

7. Yet, on the other side, unto the formal completeness of this sentence, an *authoritative act of office-power* is required: for,—(1.) There is in it such an act of *rule* as is in the hands of the elders only; (2.) The *executive* power of the keys in binding and loosing, so far as it compriseth authority to be acted in the name of Christ, is intrusted with them only.

8. Wherefore I shall say no more, in answer unto this inquiry, but that *excommunication* is an act of church-power in its officers and brethren, acting according unto their respective rights, interests, and duties, particularly prescribed unto them. The officers of the church act in it as officers, with authority; the brethren, or the body of the church, with power, yet so as that the officers are no way excluded from their power, consent, and suffrage, in the acting of the church, but have the same interest therein with all the other members of the church;—but the community of the church have no interest in those authoritative actings of the officers which are peculiar unto them. Where either of these is wanting, the whole duty is vitiated, and the sense of the sentence rendered ineffectual.

First. It is inquired, *Whether excommunication, justly deserved, may and ought to be omitted in case of trouble or danger that may ensue unto the church thereon?*

It is usually granted that so it may and ought to be; which seems in general to have been the judgment of Austin.

The troubles and dangers intended are threefold:—1. From the *thing* itself; 2. From the *persons* to be excommunicated; 3. From the *church*.

1. "Trouble may arise from the *thing* itself; for there being an exercise of authority or jurisdiction in it over the persons of men not granted from the civil magistrate by the law of the land, those that execute it may be liable unto penalties ordained in such cases.

2. "The *persons* to be excommunicated may be great, and of great interest in the world, so as that if they receive a provocation hereby, they may occasion or stir up persecution against the church, as it hath often fallen out.

3. "The *church* itself may be divided on these considerations, so as that lasting differences may be occasioned among them, which the omission of the sentence might prevent."

For answer hereunto, some things must be premised; as,—

1. Here is no supposition of any thing sinful or morally evil in the church, its officers or any of its members, by refusing to omit the pronouncing of this sentence. Whether there be any sin in giving occasion unto the troubles mentioned, to be avoided by an omission of duty, is now to be inquired into.

2. We must suppose,—(1.) That the *cause* of excommunication be clear and evident, both as unto the merit of the fact and the due

application of it unto the person concerned, so as that no rational indifferent man shall be able to say that it is meet that such a one should be continued a member of such a society; as it ought to be wherever excommunication is administered. (2.) That *sufficient time* and space for repentance, and for giving satisfaction unto the church (whereof afterward), hath been allowed unto the person after admonition. (3.) That the church doth *really suffer in honour* and reputation by tolerating such a scandalous offender among them.

I answer, on these suppositions, I see no just reason to countenance the omission of the execution of this sentence, or to acquit the church from the guilt of sin in so doing; for,—

1. The first pretence of *danger* is vain. There is not the least shadow of jurisdiction in this act of the church. There is nothing in it that toucheth any thing which is under the protection and conservation of human laws. It reacheth not the persons of men in their lives, or liberties, or estates, or the least secular privileges that they do enjoy; it doth not expose them to the power or censures of others, nor prejudge them as unto office or advantage of life. There is, therefore, no concernment of the law of the land herein,—no more than in a parent's disinheriting a rebellious child.

2. As unto *danger of persecution* by the means of the person provoked, I say,—(1.) The same may be pleaded as unto all other duties of obedience unto Jesus Christ wherewith the world is provoked, and so the whole profession of the church should give place to the fear of persecution. To testify against sin in the way of Christ's appointment is a case of confession. (2.) The apostles were not deterred by this consideration from the excommunication of Simon Magus, the seducing Jews, Hymeneus and Alexander, with others. (3.) The Lord Christ commendeth or reproveth his churches, according as they were strict in the observation of this duty or neglective of it, notwithstanding the fear of persecution thereon, Rev. ii., iii. And,—(4.) He will take that care of his church, in all their obedience unto him, as shall turn all the consequences thereof unto their advantage.

3. As unto danger of *differences in the church* there is nothing to be said, but that if rule, order, love, and duty, will not prevent such differences, there is no way appointed of Christ for that end; and if they are sufficient for it (as they are abundantly), they must bear their own blame who occasion such differences.

SECONDLY. But it may be said, *What if such an offender as justly deserves to be excommunicated, and is under admonition in order thereunto in case of impenitency, should voluntarily withdraw himself from and leave the communion of the church, is there any necessity to proceed against him by excommunication?*

Ans. 1. Some say it is enough if it be declared in the church that such a one hath cut off himself from the church, and is there-

fore no longer under their watch or care, but is left unto himself and the world. And this is sufficient with them who own no act of office-power or authority in excommunication, but esteem it only a noted cessation of communion; which destroys a principal branch of the power of the keys. Wherefore,—

2. Where the offence is plain, open, scandalous, persisted in,—where admonition is despised or not complied with,—it is the duty of the church to denounce the sentence of excommunication against such a person notwithstanding his voluntary departure; for,—

(1.) No man is to make an *advantage* unto himself, or to be freed from any disadvantage, censure, or spiritual penalty, by his own sin, such as is the voluntary relinquishment of the church by a person under admonition for scandalous offences.

(2.) It is necessary unto the church, both as unto the discharge of its duty and the *vindication of its honour*, as also from the benefit and edification it will receive by those duties of humiliation, mourning, and prayer, which are necessary unto the execution of this sentence.

(3.) It is necessary for *the good and benefit of him* who so deserves to be excommunicated; for,—[1.] The end of the institution of the ordinance is his correction, not his destruction; and may be effectual unto his repentance and recovery. [2.] It is to be followed with sharp admonition and prayer; which in due time may reach the most profligate sinner.

(4.) It becomes not the *wisdom and order* of any society intrusted with authority for its own preservation, as the church is by Christ himself, to suffer persons obnoxious unto censure by the fundamental rules of that society to cast off all respect unto it, to break their order and relation, without animadverting thereon, according to the authority wherewith they are intrusted. To do otherwise is to expose their order unto contempt, and proclaim a diffidence in their own authority for the spiritual punishment of offenders.

(5.) One end of the appointment of the power and sentence of excommunication in the church, is to give testimony unto *the future final judgment* of Christ against impenitent sinners, which none of them can run away from nor escape.

A THIRD inquiry may be, *Whether, in case of any great and scandalous sin, the church may proceed unto excommunication without any previous admonition?*

Ans. 1. Persons may be *falsely accused of* and charged with great sins, the greatest of sins, as well as those of a lesser degree, and that both by particular testimonies and public reports, as it was with the Lord Christ himself; which daily experience confirms. Wherefore all haste and precipitation, like that of David in judging the case of Mephibosheth, is carefully to be avoided, though they are pressed under the pretences of the greatness and notoriety of the sin.

2. There is no *individual actual sin* but is capable of great aggravation or alleviation from its circumstances. These the church is to inquire into, and to obtain a full knowledge of them, that all things being duly weighed, they may be affected with the sin in a due manner, or after a godly sort; which is essential unto the right administration of this ordinance.

3. This cannot be done without *personal conference* with the offender, who is to be allowed to speak for himself. This conference, in case guilt be discovered, cannot but have in it the nature of an admonition, whereon the church is to proceed, as in the case of previous solemn admonition, in the order and according to the rule which shall be immediately declared.

FOURTHLY. *Whether, on the first knowledge of an offence or scandalous sin, if it be known unto the church that the offending party is penitent, and willing to declare his humiliation and repentance for the satisfaction of the church, the church may proceed unto his excommunication, in case the sin be great and notorious?*

Ans. 1. It is certain that, in an orderly progress, as unto more private sins, a compliance by repentance with the first or second admonition doth put a stop unto all further ecclesiastical procedure.

2. But whereas the inquiry is made concerning sins either in their own nature or in their circumstances great and of disreputation unto the church, I answer,—

If repentance be evidenced unto the consciences of the rulers of the church to be sincere, and proportionable unto the offence in its outward demonstration, according unto the rule of the gospel, so as that they are obliged to judge in charity that the person sinning is pardoned and accepted with Christ, as all sincerely penitent sinners undoubtedly are, the church cannot proceed unto the excommunication of such an offender; for,—

(1.) It would be publicly to *reject them* whom they acknowledge that *Christ doth receive.* This nothing can warrant them to do; yea, so to do is to set up themselves against Christ, or at least to make use of his authority against his mind and will. Yea, such a sentence would destroy itself; for it is a declaration that Christ doth disapprove them whom he doth approve.

(2.) Their so doing would make *a misrepresentation of the gospel,* and of the Lord Christ therein; for whereas the principal design of the gospel, and of the representation that is made therein of Christ Jesus, is to evidence that all sincerely penitent sinners, that repent according unto the rule of it, are and shall be pardoned and accepted, by the rejection of such a person in the face of his sincere repentance, there is an open contradiction thereunto. Especially it would give an undue sense of the heart, mind, and will of Christ towards repenting sinners, such as may be dangerous unto the faith of

believers, so far as the execution of this sentence is doctrinal; for such it is, and declarative of the mind of Christ according unto the judgment of the church. The image, therefore, of this excommunication which is set up in some churches, wherein the sentence of it is denounced without any regard unto the mind of Christ, as unto his acceptance or disapprobation of those whom they excommunicate, is a teacher of lies.

(3.) Such a procedure is *contrary unto the nature and end of this sentence;* for it is corrective and instructive, not properly punishing and vindictive. The sole end of it, with respect whereunto it hath its efficacy from divine institution, is the humiliation, repentance, and recovery, of the sinner; and if this be attained before, the infliction of this sentence is contrary to the nature and end of it.

It will be said "That it hath another end also,—namely, the preservation of the purity of the church, and the vindication of its honour and reputation, wherein it suffers by the scandalous offences of any of its members." Whereunto I say,—(1.) No church is or can be made impure by them whom Christ hath purged, as he doth all those who are truly penitent; (2.) It is no dishonour unto any church to have sinners in it who have evidenced sincere repentance; (3.) The present offence and scandal may be provided against by an act of rectorial prudence, in causing the offending person to abstain from the Lord's table for a season.

Fifthly. It is inquired, *Whether such as voluntarily, causelessly, and disorderly, do leave the communion of any church whereof they are members, though not guilty of any scandalous immoralities, may and ought to be excommunicated?*

Ans. 1. Where persons are esteemed members of churches by *external causes, without their own consent,* or by parochial cohabitation, they may remove from one church unto another by the removal of their habitation, according unto their own discretion; for such cohabitation being the only *formal cause* of any relation to such a church in particular, upon the ceasing of that cause, the relation ceaseth of its own accord.

2. Where persons are members of churches by *mutual confederation* or express personal consent, causeless departure from them is an evil liable unto many aggravations.

3. But whereas the principal end of all particular churches is *edification,* there may be many just and sufficient reasons why a person may remove himself from *the constant communion of one church* unto that of another; and of these reasons he himself is judge, on whom it is incumbent to take care of his own edification above all other things. Nor ought the church to deny unto any such persons their liberty, desired peaceably and according unto order.

4. It was declared before that where any persons guilty of, and

under admonition for, any *scandalous sin* do withdraw from the communion of any church, their so doing is no impediment unto a further procedure against them.

5. Whereas there are amongst us churches, or those which are so esteemed in the consciences of men, so far differing in principles and practices as that they have not entire communion with one another in all parts of divine worship, it may be inquired, *Whether, if a man leave a church of one sort to join with one of another, as suppose he leave a select congregation to join in a parochial church constantly and totally, he may be justly excommunicated for so doing without the consent of the church whereunto he did belong?*

Ans. 1. It is certain, on the one hand, that if any man leave the communion of parochial assemblies to join himself unto a select congregation, those who have power over those parishes will make no question whether they shall excommunicate him or no in their way. But,—

2. Supposing persons so departing from particular congregations,—(1.) To be free from *scandalous sins*; (2.) That they depart quietly, without attempting disorder or confusion in the church; (3.) That they do *actually join themselves* unto the communion of some church, whose constitution, principles, and worship, they do approve, whereby their visible profession is preserved,—the church may not justly proceed unto their excommunication; it may suffice to declare that such persons have, of their own accord, forsaken the communion of the church, are no more under its watch and care, neither is the church further obliged towards them, but as unto Christian duties in general.

6. As for those whose departure is, as voluntary and causeless, so accompanied with other evils, such as are revilings, reproaches, and false accusations (as is usual in such cases), they may be proceeded against as obstinate offenders.

The SIXTH inquiry is, *What time is to be given after solemn admonition, before actual excommunication?*

Ans. 1. The manner of some, to run over the words, "I admonish you a first, second, and third time," so immediately to make way for the sentence of excommunication, is that wherein men are greatly to be pitied, for their ignorance of the nature of those things which they take on themselves to act, order, and dispose of,—that we ascribe it not unto worse and more evil causes.

2. The nature of the thing itself requires a considerable season or *space of time* between solemn admonition and excommunication: for the end and design of the former is the repentance and recovery of the offender; nor doth its efficacy thereunto depend on or consist in the actual giving of it, but it is as other moral causes, which may work gradually upon occasional advantages. Want of light, some present exasperation and temptation, may seem to frustrate a present

admonition, when they do but suspend its present efficacy, which it may afterward obtain on the conscience of the offender.

3. It being a *church-admonition* that is intended, it is the duty of the church to abide in prayer and waiting for the fruit of it, according to the appointment of Christ; and herein the case may possibly require some long time to be spent.

4. No present *appearance of obstinacy* or impenitence under admonition (which is usually pleaded) should cause an immediate procedure unto excommunication; for,—(1.) It is contrary unto the *distinct institution* of the one and the other, wherein the former is to be allowed its proper season for its use and efficacy. (2.) It doth not represent *the patience and forbearance of Christ towards his church* and all the members of it. (3.) It is not suited unto the rule of that love which "hopeth all things, beareth all things," etc. (4.) All grounds of hope for the recovery of sinners by repentance are to be attended unto, so as to defer the ultimate sentence.

"Nulla unquam de morte hominis cunctatio longa est."—Juv. Sat. vi. 220.

5. If new sins are added, of the same or any other kind, unto former scandals, whilst persons are under admonition, it is an indication of the necessity of a procedure.

SEVENTHLY. It may be further inquired, *Whether a man may be excommunicated for errors in matters of faith, or false opinions about them?*

Ans. 1. The case is so plainly and positively stated, Rev. ii. 2, 6, 14, 15, 20, 1 Tim. i. 19, 20, Tit. iii. 10, 11, and other places, that it needs no further determination. Wherefore,—

2. If the errors intended are about or against the *fundamental truths* of the gospel, so as that they that hold them cannot "hold the Head," but really make "shipwreck of the faith," no pretended usefulness of such persons, no peaceableness as unto outward deportment, which men guilty of such abominations will frequently cover themselves withal, can countenance the church in forbearing, after due admonition, to cut them off from their communion. The nature of the evil, the danger that is from it unto the whole church, as from a gangrene in any member unto the body, the indignation of Christ expressed against such pernicious doctrines, the opposition of them to the building of the church on the Rock, which in most of them is opposed, do render a church altogether inexcusable who omit their duty herein.

3. *False opinions* in lesser things, when the foundation of faith and Christian practice is not immediately concerned, may be tolerated in a church; and sundry rules are given unto this end in the Scripture, as Rom. xiv. 1–3, etc., Phil. iii. 15, 16. Howbeit, in that low ebb of grace, love, and prudence, which we are come unto, it is best for edification that all persons peaceably dispose themselves

into those societies with which they most agree in principles and opinions, especially such as relate or lead unto practice in any duties of worship. But,—

4. With respect unto such opinions, if men will, as is usual, *wrangle and contend*, to the disturbance of the peace of the church, or hinder it in any duty, with respect unto its own edification, and will neither peaceably abide in the church nor peaceably depart from it, they may and ought to be proceeded against with the censures of the church.

EIGHTHLY. *Whether persons excommunicated out of any church may be admitted unto the hearing of the word in the assemblies of that church?*

Ans. 1. They *may be so*, as also to be present at all duties of moral worship; for so may heathens and unbelievers, 1 Cor. xiv. 23, 24.

2. When persons are under this sentence, the church is in a state of expecting of their recovery and return, and therefore are not to prohibit them any means thereof, such as is preaching of the word.

NINTHLY. *How far extends the rule of the apostle towards persons rejected of the church,* 1 *Cor.* v. 11, "*With such an one no not to eat;*" *as that also,* "*Note that man, and have no company with him, that he may be ashamed,*" 2 *Thess.* iii. 14?

1. To "eat" compriseth all *ordinary converse* in things of this life: "Give us our daily bread." To "note" is either the act of the church setting the mark of its censure and disapprobation on him, or the duty of the members of the church to take notice of him as unto the end of not keeping company with him. Wherefore,—

2. Herein all ordinary converse of *choice*, not made necessary by previous occasions, is forbidden. The rule, I say, forbids,—(1.) All ordinary converse of choice, not that which is occasional; (2.) Converse about earthly, secular things, not that which is spiritual, for such an one may and ought still to be admonished whilst he will hear the word of admonition; (3.) It is such converse as is not made previously necessary by men's mutual engagements in trade and the like, for that is founded on such rules of right and equity, with such obligations in point of truth, as excommunication cannot dissolve.

3. No *suspension* of duties antecedently necessary by virtue of natural or moral relation is allowed or countenanced by this rule; such are those of husband and wife, parents and children, magistrates and subjects, masters and servants, neighbours, relations in propinquity or blood. No duties arising from or belonging unto any of these relations are released, or the obligation unto them weakened, by excommunication. Husbands may not hereon forsake their wives if they are excommunicated, nor wives their husbands; magistrates may not withdraw their protection from any of their subjects because they are excommunicated, much less may subjects withhold their obe-

dience on any pretence of the excommunication of their magistrates as such. And the same is true as unto all other natural or moral relations.

4. The *ends* of this prohibition are,—(1.) To testify our condemnation of the sin and disapprobation of the person guilty of it, who is excommunicated; (2.) The preservation of ourselves from all kinds of participation in his sin; (3.) To make him ashamed of himself, that if he be not utterly profligate and given up unto total apostasy, it may occasion in him thoughts of returning.

TENTHLY. *How ought persons excommunicated to be received into the church upon their repentance?*

Ans. 1. As unto the *internal manner*, with all readiness and cheerfulness, with,—(1.) Meekness, to take from them all discouragement and disconsolation, Gal. vi. 1; (2.) With compassion and all means of relief and consolation, 2 Cor. ii. 7; (3.) With love in all the demonstrations of it, verse 8; (4.) With joy, to represent the heart of Christ towards repenting sinners.

2. The *outward manner* of the restoration of such a person consists in,—(1.) His testification of his repentance unto the satisfaction of the church; (2.) The express consent of the church unto his reception; (3.) His renewed engagement in the covenant of the church, whereby he is re-instated or jointed again in the body in his own proper place;—in all which the elders, by their authority, are to go before the church.

All sorts of persons do now condemn the opinions of the Novatians in refusing the re-admission of lapsed sinners into the church, upon repentance. But there may be an evil observed amongst some leading that way, or unto what is worse; and this is, that they seek not after the recovery of those that are excommunicated, by prayer, admonition, exhortation, in a spirit of meekness and tenderness, but are well satisfied that they have quitted themselves of their society. It is better never to excommunicate any, than so to carry it towards them when they are excommunicated. But there is a sort of men unto whom if a man be once an offender, he shall be so for ever.

ELEVENTHLY. Our last inquiry shall be, *Whether excommunication may be regular and valid when the matter of right is dubious and disputable*,—as many such cases may fall out, especially with respect unto the occasions of life and mutual converse,—*or when the matter of fact is not duly proved by positive witnesses on the one hand, and is denied on the other?*

Ans. 1. The foundation of the *efficacy* of excommunication, next and under its divine institution, lies in the light and conviction of the consciences of them that are to be excommunicated. If these are not affected with a sense of guilt, as in dubious cases they may not be, the sentence will be of no force or efficacy.

2. A case wherein there is a difference in the judgment of *good and wise* men about it is to be esteemed such a dubious case as is exempted from this censure. Nothing is to be admitted here to take place but what is reprovable by natural light and the concurrent judgment of them that fear God.

3. If the case be about such a *right or wrong*, in pretended fraud, over-reaching, or the like, as is determinable by civil laws, the church is no judge in such cases, unless it be by way of arbitration, 1 Cor. vi.

4. If the question be about *doctrines* that are not on points fundamental, so as those who dissent from the church do carry it peaceably and orderly, there can be no procedure unto ecclesiastical censure; but if men will dote on their own opinions, wrangling, contending, and breaking the peace of the church about them, there are other rules given in that case.

5. If the *matter of fact* be to be determined and stated by *witness*, it is absolutely necessary, by virtue of divine institution, that there be two or three concurrent testimonies; one witness is not to be regarded. See Deut. xix. 15; Num. xxxv. 30; Matt. xviii. 16, etc.

Wherefore the ensuing rules or directions are to be observed in the matter of excommunication:—

1. No excommunication is to be allowed in *cases dubious* and disputable, wherein right and wrong are not easily determinable unto all unprejudiced persons that know the will of God in such things; nor is it to be admitted when the matter of fact stands in need of testimony, and is not proved by two witnesses at the least.

2. All *prejudices*, all partiality, all provocations, all haste and precipitation, are most carefully to be avoided in this administration; for the judgment is the Lord's. Wherefore,—

3. We are continually, in all things that *tend unto this sentence*, and eminently in the sentence itself, to charge our consciences with the mind of Christ and what he would do himself in the case, considering his love, grace, mercy, and patience, with instances of his condescension which he gave us in this world.

4. There is also required of us herein a constant remembrance that we also are in the flesh and liable to temptation; which may restrain and keep in awe that forwardness and confidence which some are apt to manifest in such cases. In all these things a watchful eye is to be kept over the methods of Satan, who by all means seeks to pervert this ordinance unto the destruction of men, which is appointed for their edification; and he too often prevails in that design. And if, by the negligence of a church in the management and pursuit of this ordinance, he get advantage to pervert it unto the ruin of any, it is the fault of that church, in that they have not been careful of the honour of Christ therein.

Wherefore,—1. As excommunication by a *cursed noise and clamour*, with bell, book, and candle (such as we have instances of in some papal councils), is a horrible antichristian abomination: so,—

2. It is an undue representation of Christ and his authority, for persons openly guilty of profaneness in sinning to excommunicate them who are blameless in all Christian obedience.

3. All excommunication is evangelically null where there is wanting an evangelical frame of spirit in those by whom it is administered, and there is present an anti-evangelical order in its administration.

4. It is sufficiently evident that, after all the contests and disputes about this excommunication that have been in the world, the noise that it hath made, the horrible abuses that it hath been put unto, the wresting of all church order and rule to give countenance unto a corrupt administration of it, with the needless oppositions that have been made against its institution, there is nothing in it, nothing belongs unto it, nothing is required unto its administration, wherein men's outward interests are at all concerned, and which the smallest number of sincere Christians in any church-society may not perform and discharge unto the glory of Christ and their own edification.

It is the mystery of iniquity that hath traversed these things into such a state and posture as is unintelligible unto spiritual wisdom, unpracticable in the obedience of faith, and ruinous unto all evangelical order and discipline.

CHAPTER XI.

Of the communion of churches.

CHURCHES so appointed and established in order as hath been declared ought to hold communion among themselves, or with each other, as unto all the ends of their institution and order, for these are the same in all; yea, the *general end* of them is in order of nature considered antecedently unto their institution in *particular*. This end is, the edification of the body of Christ in general, or the *church catholic*. The promotion hereof is committed jointly and severally unto all *particular churches*. Wherefore, with respect hereunto, they are obliged unto mutual communion among themselves; which is their consent, endeavour, and conjunction, in and for the promotion of the edification of the catholic church, and therein their own, as they are parts and members of it.

This communion is incumbent on every church with respect unto all other churches of Christ in the world equally. And the duties and acts of it in all of them are of the same kind and nature; for there is no such disparity between them or subordination among

them as should make a difference between the acts of their mutual communion, so as that the acts of some should be acts of authority, and those of others acts of obedience or subjection. Wherever there is a church, whether it be at Rome or Eugubium,[1] in a city or a village, the communion of them all is mutual, the acts of it of the same kind, however one church may have more advantages to be useful and helpful therein than another. And the abuse of those advantages was that which wrought effectually in the beginning of that disorder which at length destroyed the catholic church, with all church-communion whatever: for some churches, especially that of Rome, having many advantages, in gifts, abilities, numbers, and reputation above many, above most churches, for usefulness in their mutual communion, the guides of it insensibly turned and perverted the addresses made unto them, the advices and assistances desired of them in way of communion, or their pretences of such addresses and desires, into a usurpation, first of a primacy of honour, then of order, then of supremacy and jurisdiction, unto the utter overthrow of all church order and communion, and at length of the whole nature of the catholic church, as stated and subsisting in particular churches; as we shall see.

All churches, on their first institution, quickly found themselves indigent and wanting, though not as unto their *being*, power, and order, yet as unto their *well-being*, with their preservation in truth and order upon extraordinary occurrences, as also with respect unto their usefulness and serviceableness unto the general end of furthering the edification of the church catholic. The care hereof, and the making provision for this defect, was committed by our Lord Jesus Christ unto the apostles during their lives, which Paul calls Ἡ μέριμνα πασῶν τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν, 2 Cor. xi. 28, "The care of all the churches;" yet what was only a pressing care and burden unto them was afterward contended for by others as a matter of dignity and power! the pretence of it, in one especially, being turned into a cursed domination, under the style and title of "Servus servorum Dei."

But if a thousand pretences should be made of supplying churches' defects, after the decease of the apostles, by any other order, way, or means besides this of the equal communion of churches among themselves, they will be all found destitute of any countenance from the Scripture, primitive antiquity, the nature, use, and end of churches, yea, of Christian religion itself. Yet the pretence hereof is the sole foundation of all that disposal of churches into several stories of subordination, with an authority and jurisdiction over one another, which now prevails in the world. But there is no place for such imagination, until it be proved either that our Lord Jesus Christ hath not appointed the mutual communion of churches among themselves by

[1] See note, vol. xv. p. 300.—Ed.

their own consent, or that it is not sufficient for the preservation of the union and furtherance of the edification of the church catholic, whereunto it is designed.

Wherefore, our Lord Jesus Christ, in his infinite wisdom, hath constituted his churches in such a state and order as wherein none of them are able of themselves, always and in all instances, to attain all the ends for which they are appointed, with respect unto the edification of the church catholic; and he did it for this end, that whereas the whole catholic church is animated by one spirit, which is the bond of union between all particular churches (as we shall see), every one of them may act the gifts and graces of it unto the preservation and edification of the whole.

Herein then, we acknowledge, lieth the great difference which we have with others about the state of the church of Christ in this world. We do believe that *the mutual communion of particular churches* amongst themselves, in an equality of power and order, though not of gifts and usefulness, is the only way appointed by our Lord Jesus Christ, after the death of the apostles, for the attaining the general end of all particular churches, which is the edification of the church catholic, in faith, love, and peace. Other ways and means have been found out in the world for this end, which we must speak unto immediately. Wherefore it behoveth us to use some diligence in the consideration of the causes, nature, and use, of this communion of churches.

But it must be moreover premised, that whereas this communion of churches is *radically* and *essentially* the same among all churches in the world, yet, as unto the ordinary actual exercise of the duties of it, it is confined and limited by divine providence unto such churches as the natural means of the discharge of such duties may extend unto; that is, unto those which are planted within such *lines of communication*, such precincts or boundaries of places and countries, as may not render the mutual performance of such duties insuperably difficult. Yet is not the world itself so wide but that, all places being made pervious by navigation, this communion of churches may be visibly professed, and in some instances practised, among all churches, "from the rising of the sun, even unto the going down of the same," where the name of Christ is known among the Gentiles; wherein the true nature of the catholic church and its union doth consist, which is utterly overthrown by the most vehement pretences that are made unto it, as those in the church of Rome.

Wherefore such a communion of churches is to be inquired after as from which no true church of Christ is or can be excluded; in whose actual exercise they may and ought all to live, and whereby the general end of all churches, in the edification of the catholic church, may be attained. This is the true and only *catholicism* of

the church; which whosoever departs from, or substitutes any thing else in the room of it under that name, destroys its whole nature, and disturbs the whole ecclesiastical harmony that is of Christ's institution.

However, therefore, we plead for the rights of particular churches, yet our real controversy with most in the world is for the being, union, and communion of the church catholic; which are variously perverted by many, separating it into parties, and confining it to rules, measures, and canons, of their own finding out and establishment: for such things as these belong neither to the internal nor external form of that catholic church whose being in the world we believe, and whose union we are obliged to preserve. And whosoever gives any description of or limitation to the catholic church besides what consists in the communion of particular churches intended, doth utterly overthrow it, and therein an article of our faith.

But this communion of churches cannot be duly apprehended unless we inquire and determine wherein their union doth consist, for *communion* is an *act of union* that receives both its nature and power from it or by virtue of it; for of what nature soever the union of things distinct in themselves be, of the same is the communion that they have among themselves.

In the church of Rome, the *person of the pope*, as he is pope, is the head and centre of all church-union, nor is there allowed any union of particular churches with Christ or among themselves but in and through him. A universal subjection unto him and his authority is the original spring of all church-union among them: and if any one soul fail herein,—if, as unto things of faith and divine worship, he do not depend on the pope and live in subjection unto him,—he is reputed a stranger and foreigner unto the catholic church; yea, they affirm that be a man never so willing for and desirous of an interest in Christ, he cannot have it but by the pope!

The communion of churches congenial and suited unto this union, proceeding from it and exercised by virtue of it, ariseth from a various *contignation of order*, or the erection of one story of church-interest upon another, until we come to the idol placed on the top of this Babel. So is this communion carried on from the obedience and subjection of the lowest rubbish of ecclesiastical order unto diocesans, of them to metropolitans, of them to patriarchs or cardinals, of them to the pope; or an ascent is made from diocesan synods, by provincial and national, to those that are called œcumenical, whose head is the pope.

Yet two things must be further observed, to clear this communion of the Roman Catholic church; as,—1. That there is no ascent of church order or power by a *vital act of communion* from the lower degrees, orders, or consociations, and by them to the pope, as though

he should receive any thing of church-power from them; but all the plenitude of it being originally vested in him, by these several orders and degrees he communicates of it unto all churches, as the life of their conjunction and communion. 2. That no man is so jointed in this order, so compacted in this body, but that he is also personally and immediately subject to the pope, and depends on him as unto his whole profession of religion.

And this is that which constitutes him formally to be what he is,—that is, antichrist; and the church-state arising from its union unto him, holding him as its head, subsisting in a communion by virtue of power received through various orders and constitutions from him, to be antichristian: for he and it are set up in the room of, and in direct opposition unto, the Lord Christ, as the head of the catholic church and the church-state thereon depending. This we have described, Eph. iv. 15, 16: "Speaking the truth in love, may grow up," etc.; as also Col. ii. 19, where there is a rejection of them who belong not unto the church catholic, taken from its relation unto Christ, and the nature of its dependence on him: "Not holding the Head," etc.

When men shall cease to be wilfully blind, or when the powers of the "strong delusion," that begin to abate, shall expire, they will easily see the direct opposition that is between these two heads and two churches, namely, Christ and the pope, the catholic church and that of Rome.

I know well enough all the evasions and distinctions that are invented to countenance this antichristianism: as, "That there is a double head,—one of *internal influence* of grace, which Christ is, and the pope is not; the other of *rule and authority*, which the pope is. But this also is twofold, supreme and remote, and immediate and subordinate; the first is Christ, the latter is the pope. And there is yet further a twofold head of the church,—the one invisible, which is Christ; the other visible, which is the pope."

Not to insist on these gross and horrible figments of a *twofold head of the catholic church*, in any sense, which are foreign to the Scripture, and foreign to antiquity, whereof never one word was heard in the church for six hundred years after Christ, deforming the beautiful spouse of Christ into a monster, we will allow, at present, that the pope is only the immediate, visible, subordinate head of all rule and authority to their church; which is what they plead for. Then I say, that the church whereof he is the head is his body, that it holds him as its head, that it is compacted together by the officers and orders that depend on him and receive all their influence of church power and order from him: which though he communicates not by an internal influence of grace and gifts, (alas, poor wretch!) yet he doth it by officers, offices, orders, and laws; so giving

union and communion unto the whole body by the effectual working of every joint and part of the hierarchy under him, for its union, communion, and edification. This, I say, is the antichrist and the antichristian church-state, as I shall be at any time ready to maintain.

Let any man take a due prospect of this head and this body, as related and united by the bond of their own rules, constitutions, and laws, acting in worldly pomp, splendour, and power, with horrid, bloody cruelties against all that oppose them, and he will not fail of an open view of all the scriptural lineaments of the apostate, antichristian state of the church.

I say again, this assigning of the original of all church order, union, and communion, unto the pope of Rome, investing him therewith as an article of faith, constituting him thereby the head of the church, and the church thereon his body,—as it must be if he be its head, so as that from him all power of order, and for all acts of communion, should be derived, returning all in obedience and subjection unto him,—doth set up a visible, conspicuous, antichristian church-state in opposition unto Christ and the catholic church. But with this sort of men we deal not at present.

There is a pretence unto a union of churches not derived from the papal headship; and this consists in the *canonical subjection of particular churches unto a diocesan bishop,* and of such bishops to metropolitans, which though "de facto" it be at present terminated and stated within the bounds of a nation, yet "de jure" it ought to be extended unto the whole catholic church.

According unto this principle, the union of the catholic church consists in that order whereby particular churches are distributed into deaneries, archdeaconries, exempt peculiars, under officials; dioceses, provinces, under metropolitans; and so by or without patriarchs, to avoid the rock of the Papacy, issuing in a general council, as I suppose. But,—

1. To confine the union and communion of the catholic church hereunto is at present absolutely destructive both of the church and its communion: for all particular churches, when they are by a coalescency extended unto those which are provincial or national, have, both politically and ecclesiastically, such bounds fixed unto them as they cannot pass to carry on communion unto and with the church as catholic, by any acts and duties belonging unto their order; and hereby the union and communion of the church is utterly lost, for the union of the catholic church, as such, doth always equally exist, and the communion of it is always equally in exercise, and can consist in nothing but what doth so exist and is so exercised. Wherever is the catholic church, there is the communion of saints; but nothing of this can be obtained by virtue of this order.

2. We inquire at present after such a union as gives particular churches *communion among themselves*, which this order doth not, but absolutely overthrows it, leaving nothing unto them but subjection to officers set over them, who are not of them, according to rules and laws of their appointment; which is foreign to the Scripture and antiquity.

3. This order itself, the only bond of the pretended union, having *no divine institution*, especially as to its extent unto the whole catholic church, nor any intimation in the Scripture, and being utterly impossible to be put in execution or actual exercise, no man can declare what is the original or centre of it, whence it is deduced, and whereon it rests.

Having removed these pretences out of our way, we may easily discern wherein the union, and consequently the communion, of all particular churches doth consist; and in the due observation whereof all that church-order which the Lord Christ hath appointed and doth accept is preserved.

I say, then, that the true and only union of all particular churches consists in that which gives form, life, and being unto the church catholic, with the addition of what belongs unto them as they are particular; and this is, that they have all one and the same God and Father, one Lord Jesus Christ, one faith and one doctrine of faith, one hope of their calling, or the promised inheritance, one regeneration, one baptism, one bread and wine, and are united unto God and Christ in one Spirit, through the bond of faith and love.

This description, with what is suited thereunto and explanatory of it, is all the account which is given us in the Scripture of the constituting form of the catholic church, and of the union of particular churches among themselves. What church soever fails in the essential parts of this description, or any of them, it is separated from the catholic church, nor hath either union or communion with any true churches of Christ.

Two things concur unto the completing of this union of churches, —1. Their *union* or *relation* unto Christ; 2. That which they have *among themselves.*

1. The Lord Christ himself is the *original and spring* of this union, and every particular church is united unto him as its head; besides which, with or under which, it hath none. This relation of the church unto Christ as its head the apostle expressly affirms to be the foundation and cause of its union, Eph. iv. 15, 16, Col. ii. 19, —the places before quoted. Hereby it is also in God the Father, 2 Thess. i. 1, or hath God as its Father. And unless this union be dissolved, unless a church be disunited from Christ, it cannot be so from the catholic church, nor any true church of Christ in particular, however it may be dealt withal by others in the world.

From Christ, as the head and spring of union, there proceedeth unto all particular churches a bond of union, which is his Holy Spirit, acting itself in them by faith and love, in and by the ways and means and for the ends of his appointment.

This is the kingly, royal, beautiful union of the church: Christ, as the only head of influence and rule, bringing it into a relation unto himself as his body, communicating of his Spirit unto it, governing it by the law of his word, enabling it unto all the duties of faith, love, and holiness.

For unto the completing of this union on the part of the church, these things are required:—(1.) Faith in him, or holding him as the head, in the sincere belief of all things concerning his person, office, and doctrine in the gospel, with whatever belongs thereunto; (2.) Love unto him and all that is his; (3.) That especial holiness whose foundation is repentance and effectual vocation; (4.) The observance of his commands as unto all duties of divine worship. These things are essentially requisite unto this union on the part of the church. The reality and power of them is the internal form of the church, and the profession of them is its external form.

2. There concurreth hereunto an *union among themselves*, I mean all particular churches throughout the world, in whom the church catholic doth act its power and duty. And the relation that is between these churches is that which is termed "relatio æquiparentiæ," wherein neither of the "relata" is the first foundation of it, but they are equal. It doth not arise from the subordination of one unto another, they being all equal as unto what concerns their essence and power. And the bond hereof is that especial love which Christ requireth among all his disciples, acting itself unto all the ends of the edification of the whole body.

Take in the whole, and the union of churches consists in their relation unto God as their Father, and unto Christ as their only immediate head of influence and rule, with a participation of the same Spirit in the same faith and doctrine of truth, the same kind of holiness, the same duties of divine worship, especially the same mysteries of baptism and the supper, the observance of the same rules or commands of Christ in all church-order, with mutual love, effectual unto all the ends of their being and constitution, or the edification of the church catholic.

There may be failures in them or some of them, as unto sundry of these things; there may be differences among them about them, arising from the infirmities, ignorance, and prejudices of them of whom they do consist, the best knowing here but in part; but whilst the substance of them is preserved, the union of all churches, and so of the catholic church, is preserved.

This is that blessed oneness which the Lord Christ prayed for so

earnestly for his disciples,—that they might be one in the Father and the Son, one among themselves, and "made perfect in one," John xvii. 20–23, without any respect unto that horrid image of it which was set up in the latter days of the church, which all men were compelled to bow down unto and worship by the fire of Nebuchadnezzar's furnace. Of any other union there is not the least mention in the Scripture.

This union of the catholic church in all particular churches is always the same, inviolable, unchangeable, comprehending all the churches in the world at all times, not confinable unto any state or party, not interruptible by any external form, nor to be prevailed against by the gates of hell; and all such disputes about a catholic church and its union as can be so much as questionable among them that profess to believe the gospel are in direct opposition unto the prayers and promises of Jesus Christ. Whilst evangelical faith, holiness, obedience unto the commands of Christ, and mutual love, abide in any on the earth, there is the catholic church; and whilst they are professed, that catholic church is visible. Other catholic church upon the earth I believe none, nor any that needs other things unto its constitution.

These things being premised, I proceed unto that which is our present inquiry,—namely, wherein the communion of particular churches among themselves doth consist.

The communion of churches is *their joint actings in the same gospel duties towards God in Christ, with their mutual actings towards each other with respect unto the end of their institution and being, which is the glory of Christ in the edification of the whole catholic church.*

As unto the actings of the FIRST sort, the ground of them is faith, and therein is the first act of the communion of churches. And this communion in faith among all the churches of Christ is fivefold:—

1. *General, in the belief of the same doctrine of truth,* which is according unto godliness, the same articles of faith, and the public profession thereof; so that every one of them is the pillar and ground of the same truth. This the primitive church provided for in creeds and symbols, or confessions of faith, as is known. But as never any one of them was expressly owned by all churches, so in process of time they came to be abused, as expressing the sense of the present church, whether true or false. Hence we have as many Arian creeds yet extant as those that are orthodox. But unto the communion of all particular churches in the world, there is nothing required but a belief of the Scripture to be the word of God, with a professed assent unto all divine revelations therein contained, provided that no error be avowed that is contrary to the principal or fundamental doctrines of it. For although any society of men should

profess the Scripture to be the word of God, and avow an assent unto the revelations made therein, yet, by the conceptions of their minds, and misunderstanding of the sense of the Holy Spirit therein, they may embrace and adhere unto such errors as may cut them off from all communion with the catholic church in faith: such are the denial of the holy Trinity, the incarnation of the Son of God, his divine person or office, the redemption of the church by his blood, the necessity of regeneration by his Spirit, and the like. And they may also add that of their own unto their professed belief as shall exclude them from communion with the catholic church: such are the assertions of traditions as equal with the written word, of another head of the church besides the Lord Christ, of another sacrifice besides what he once offered for all, and the like. But where any are preserved from such heresies on the one hand and the other, there is no more required unto communion with the whole church, as unto faith in general, but only the belief before described.

2. This communion in faith respects the church itself as its *material object;* for it is required hereunto that we believe that the Lord Christ hath had in all ages, and especially hath in that wherein we live, a church on the earth, confined unto no places nor parties of men, no empires nor dominions, nor capable of any confinement; as also, that this church is redeemed, called, sanctified by him; that it is his kingdom, his interest, his concernment in the world; that thereunto, and [unto] all the members of it, all the promises of God do belong and are confined; that this church he will save, preserve, and deliver, from all opposition, so as that "the gates of hell shall not prevail against it," and after death will raise it up and glorify it at the last day. This is the faith of the catholic church concerning itself; which is an ancient, fundamental article of our religion. And if any one deny that there is such a church called out of the world, separated from it, unto which alone, and all the members of it, all the promises of God do appertain, in contradistinction unto all others, or confine it unto a party unto whom these things are not appropriate, he cuts himself off from the communion of the church of Christ.

In the faith hereof all the true churches of Christ throughout the world have a comforting, refreshing communion; which is the spring of many duties in them continually.

3. This communion of churches in faith consists much in the principal fruit of it, namely, *prayer.* So is it stated, Eph. ii. 18, "For through Christ we have access by one Spirit unto the Father." And that therein the communion of the catholic church doth consist the apostle declares in the following verses, 19–22, "Now therefore," etc.; for prayers in all churches having one object, which is God even the Father, God as the Father; proceeding in all from one and

the same Spirit, given unto them as a Spirit of grace and supplications to make intercession for them; and all of them continually offered unto God by the same High Priest, who adds unto it the incense of his own intercession, and by whom they have all an access unto the same throne of grace,—they have all a blessed communion herein continually. And this communion is the more express in that the prayers of all are for all, so as that there is no particular church of Christ in the world,—not any one member of any of them, but they have the prayers of all the churches in the world and of all the members of them every day. And however this communion be invisible unto the eyes of flesh, yet is it glorious and conspicuous unto the eye of faith, and is a part of the glory of Christ the mediator in heaven. This prayer, proceeding from or wrought by one and the same Spirit in them all, equally bestowed on them all by virtue of the promise of Christ, having the same object, even God as a Father, and offered unto him by the same High Priest, together with his own intercession, gives unto all churches a communion far more glorious than what consists in some outward rites and orders of men's devising.

But now if there be any other persons or churches which have any other object of their prayers but God even the Father, and as our Father in Christ, or have any other mediators or intercessors by whom to convey or present their prayers unto God but Christ alone, the only high priest of the church, or do renounce the aid and assistance of the Holy Spirit as a Spirit of grace and supplications, they cut themselves off from all communion with the catholic church herein.

4. The unity of faith in all churches effecteth communion among them in *the administration of the same sacraments of baptism and the supper of the Lord.* These are the same in, unto, and amongst them all; neither do some variations in the outward manner of their administration interrupt that communion. But wherever the continuation of these ordinances is denied, or their nature or use is perverted, or idolatrous worship is annexed unto their administration, there communion with the catholic church is renounced.

5. They have also by faith communion herein, in that *all churches do profess a subjection unto the authority of Christ in all things,* and an obligation upon them to do and observe all whatsoever he hath commanded.

Other instances of the like nature might be given, but these are sufficient to manifest how unscriptural the notion is, that there is no proper communion with or among churches but what consists in a compliance with certain powers, orders, and rites, the pressing whereof under the name of "uniformity" hath cast all thoughts of real, evangelical church-communion into oblivion.

SECONDLY. Churches ordained and constituted in the way and manner, and for the ends, declared in our former discourse on this

subject, and, by virtue of their union unto Christ and among themselves, living constantly, in all places of the world, in the actual exercise of that communion which consists in the performance of the same church-duties towards God in Christ, unto their own continuation, increase, and edification, have also an especial union among themselves, and a mutual communion thence arising.

The bond of this union is love; not the common regulated affection of human nature so called, not merely that power and duty which is engraven on the hearts of men by the law of creation towards all of the same kind and blood with themselves, but an especial grace of the Holy Spirit, acting in the church as the principle and bond of its union unto itself; whence the command of it is called a "new commandment," because in itself, as unto the only example of it, in the person of Christ, the causes and motives unto it, with its peculiar ends and proper exercise, it was absolutely new and evangelical. An explanation of the nature of it belongs not unto this place; although it be a grace and a duty of so much importance,—wherein so much of the life, power, and peculiar glory of Christian religion doth consist,—and is either so utterly lost or hath such vile images of it set up in the world, that it deserves a full consideration; which it may receive in another place.

I say, the Holy Spirit of grace and love being given from Christ, the fountain and centre of all church-union, to dwell in and abide with his church, thereby uniting it unto himself, doth work in it and all the members of it that mutual love which may and doth animate them unto all those mutual acts which are proper unto the relation wherein they stand, by virtue of their union unto Christ their head, as members of the same body one with another.

Herein consists the union of every church in itself, of all churches among themselves, and so of the whole catholic church, their communion consisting in regular acts and duties proceeding from this love, and required by virtue of it.

This account of the union and communion of churches may seem strange unto some, who are enamoured of that image which is set up of them in the world, in canons, constitutions of rites, and outward order, in various subordinations and ceremonies, which are most remote from making any due representation of them.

The church, in its dependence on Christ its head, being by its institution disposed into its proper order for its own edification, or fitly joined together and compacted, this love working effectually in every office, officer, and member, according unto its disposal in the body for the receiving and communicating supplies for edification, gives the whole both its union and communion, all the actings of it being regulated by divine rule and prescription.

Instead hereof, to erect a machine, the spring and centre of whose

motions are unknown (any other, I mean, but external force), compacted by the iron joints and bands of human laws, edifying itself by the power of offices and officers foreign unto the Scripture, acting with weapons that are not spiritual but carnal, and mighty through him whose work it is to cast the members of the church of Christ into prison, as unto an outward conformity, is to forsake the Scripture and follow our own imagination.

The *outward acts* of communion among churches, proceeding from this love, and the obligation that is on them to promote their mutual edification, may be referred unto the two heads of *advice* and *assistance*.

Churches have communion unto their mutual edification by advice in synods or councils; which must in this place be considered.

Synods *are the meetings of divers churches by their messengers or delegates, to consult and determine of such things as are of common concernment unto them all by virtue of this communion which is exercised in them.*

1. The necessity and warranty of such synods ariseth,—(1.) From the *light of nature;* for all societies which have the same original, the same rule, the same interest, the same ends, and which are in themselves mutually concerned in the good or evil of each other, are obliged by the power and conduct of reason to advise in common for their own good on all emergencies that stand in need thereof.

Churches are such societies; they have all one and the same authoritative institution, one and the same rule of order and worship, the same ends, as we have declared, and their entire interest is one and the same. When, therefore, any thing occurs amongst them that is attended with such difficulties as cannot be removed or taken away by any one of them severally, or in whose determination all of them are equally concerned, not to make use herein of common advice and counsel is to forsake that natural light which they are bound to attend unto in all duties of obedience unto God.

(2.) The union of all churches as before described,—in one Head, *by* one Spirit, *through* one faith and worship, *unto* the same ends,—doth so compact them into one *body mystical* as that none of them is or can be complete absolutely without a joint acting with other members of the same body unto the common good of the whole, as occasion doth require. And this joint acting with others in any church can be no otherwise but by common advice and counsel; which natural circumstances render impossible by any means but by their convention in synods by their messengers and delegates: for although there may be some use of letters missive, and was so eminently in the primitive churches, to ask the advice of one another in difficult cases (as the first instance we have of the communion of churches after the days of the apostles is, in the letter of the church of Corinth unto that of Rome, desiring their advice about the composing of a

difference among them, and the answer of the church of Rome thereunto), yet many cases may fall out among them which cannot be reconciled or determined but by present conference; such as that was recorded, Acts xv. No church, therefore, is so independent as that it can always and in all cases observe the duties it owes unto the Lord Christ and the church catholic, by all those powers which it is able to act in itself distinctly, without conjunction with others. And the church that confines its duty unto the acts of its own assemblies cuts itself off from the external communion of the church catholic; nor will it be safe for any man to commit the conduct of his soul to such a church. Wherefore,—

(3.) This *acting in synods* is an institution of Jesus Christ, not in an express command, but in the nature of the thing itself, fortified with *apostolical* example; for having erected such a church-state, and disposed all his churches into such order and mutual relation unto one another as that none of them can be complete or discharge their whole duty without mutual advice and counsel, he hath thereby ordained this way of their communion in synods, no other being possible unto that end. And thereby such conventions are interested in the promise of his presence,—namely, that "where two or three are gathered together in his name, there he will be in the midst of them;" for these assemblies being the necessary effect of his own constitution, in the nature and use of his churches, are or may be in his name, and so enjoy his presence.

(4.) The *end* of all particular churches is the edification of the *church catholic*, unto the glory of God in Christ; and it is evident that in many instances this cannot be attained, yea, that it must be sinfully neglected, unless this way for the preservation and carrying of it on be attended unto. Truth, peace, and love, may be lost among churches, and so the union of the catholic church in them be dissolved, unless this means for their preservation and reparation be made use of. And that particular church which extends not its duty beyond its own assemblies and members is fallen off from the principal end of its institution; and every principle, opinion, or persuasion, that inclines any church to confine its care and duty unto its own edification only, yea, or of those only which agree with it in some peculiar practice, making it neglective of all due means of the edification of the church catholic, is schismatical.

(5.) There is direction hereunto included in the *order* and *method* of church proceedings in case of offence, prescribed unto it by Christ himself. The beginning and rise of it is between two individual persons; thence is it carried unto the cognizance and judgment of two or three others before unconcerned; from them it is to be brought unto the church; and there is no doubt but the church hath power to determine concerning it, as unto its own communion, to continue

the offender in it or reject him from it. This must abide, as unto outward order and the preservation of peace. But no church is infallible in their judgment absolutely in any case; and in many their determinations may be so doubtful as not to affect the conscience of him who is censured. But such a person is not only a member of that particular church, but, by virtue thereof, of the catholic church also. It is necessary, therefore, that he should be heard and judged as unto his interest therein, if he do desire it; and this can no way be done but by such synods as we shall immediately describe.

(6.) Synods are consecrated unto the use of the church in all ages by the example of the apostles in their guidance of the first churches of Jews and Gentiles; which hath the force of a *divine institution*, as being given by them under the infallible conduct of the Holy Ghost, Acts xv.; which we shall speak further unto immediately.

2. Having seen the original of church synods, or their formal cause, we shall consider also their material cause, or the subject-matter to be treated of or determined in them; and this, in general, is every thing wherein churches are obliged to hold communion among themselves when any thing falls out amongst them which otherwise would disturb that communion. And hereof some instances may be given:—

(1.) Churches have mutual communion in *the profession of the same faith.* If any doubts or differences do arise about it, any opinions be advanced contrary unto it, either in any particular church, which they cannot determine among themselves, or among sundry churches, the *last outward means* for the preservation of the rule of faith among them, and of their communion in the condemnation of errors and opinions contrary unto the form of wholesome words, is by these synods or councils. The care hereof is, indeed, in the first place, committed unto the churches themselves, as was at large before declared; but in case, through the subtlety, prevalency, and interest of those by whom damnable doctrines are broached, the church itself whereunto they do belong is not able to rebuke and suppress them, nor to maintain its profession of the truth, or that by suffering such things in one church others are in danger to be infected or defiled, this is the last external refuge that is left for the preservation of the communion of churches in the same faith. We have multiplied examples hereof in the primitive churches, before the degeneracy of these synods into superstition and domination. Such was eminently that gathered at Antioch for the condemnation of the heresies of Paulus Samosatenus, the bishop of that church.

(2.) It is so with respect unto that *order, peace,* and *unity,* wherein every particular church ought to walk in itself and amongst its own members. There were schisms, divisions, strifes, and contentions, in some of the churches that were of apostolical planting and watering; so there were at Antioch, and afterward at Corinth, as also in some of

the churches in Galatia. The duty of remedying and healing these divisions and differences, from what cause soever they arise, is first incumbent on each particular member in every such church. Unto them it is given in charge by the apostle in the first place; and if every one of them do perform their duty in love, an end will be put unto all strife. In case of failure therein, the whole church is charged, in the exercise of its power, authority, and wisdom, to rebuke and compose such differences; but in case it is not able so to do, as it fell out in the church at Antioch, then an assembly of other churches walking in actual communion with that church wherein the difference is arisen, and thereon concerned in their prosperity and edification, by their messengers and delegates, is the last outward means for its composure.

(3.) Where there hath been any *maladministration of discipline*, whereby any members of a church have been injured,—as suppose they are unduly cast out of the church by the power and interest of some Diotrephes, or that any members of the church make a party and faction to depose their elders, as it was in the church at Corinth when the church at Rome gave them advice in the case,—it is necessary, from the communion of churches and the interest the persons injured have in the catholic church, whose edification is the end of all church administrations, that the proceedings of such a church be reviewed by a synod, and a remedy provided in the case. Nor was it the mind of the apostles that they should be left without relief which were unduly cast out of the church by any Diotrephes, nor is there any other ordinary way hereof but only by synods; but this case, I suppose, I shall speak unto afterward.

(4.) The same is the case with respect unto *worship*, as also unto manners and conversation. If it be reported, or known by credible testimony, that any church hath admitted into the exercise of divine worship any thing superstitious or vain, or if the members of it walk like those described by the apostle, Phil. iii. 18, 19, unto the dishonour of the gospel and of the ways of Christ, the church itself not endeavouring its own reformation and repentance, other churches walking in communion therewith, by virtue of their common interest in the glory of Christ and honour of the gospel, after more private ways for its reduction, as opportunity and duty may suggest unto their elders, ought to assemble in a synod for advice, either as to the use of further means for the recovery of such a church, or to withhold communion from it in case of obstinacy in its evil ways. The want of a due attendance unto this part of the communion of churches, with respect unto gospel worship in its purity, and gospel obedience in its power, was a great means of the decay and apostasy of them all. By reason of this negligence, instead of being helpful one to another for their mutual recovery, and the revival of the things that

were ready to die, they gradually infected one another, according as they fell into their decays, and countenanced one another by their examples unto a continuance in such disorders.

The image which, in late ages, was set up hereof, in diocesan and metropolitical visitations, and those of lesser districts, under officers of antichristian names, hath been useful rather unto destruction than edification; but so it hath fallen out in most things concerning church order, worship, and discipline. The power and spirituality of divine institutions being lost, a machine hath been framed to make an appearance and representation of them, to divert the minds of men from inquiring after the primitive institutions of Christ, with an experience of their efficacy.

Considering what we have learned in these later ages, by woful experience, of what hath fallen out formerly amongst all the churches in the world, as unto their degeneracy from gospel worship and holiness, with the abounding of temptations in the days wherein we live, and the spiritual decays that all churches are prone unto, it were not amiss if those churches which do walk in express communion would *frequently meet in synods*, to inquire into the spiritual state of them all, and to give advice for the correction of what is amiss, the due preservation of the purity of worship, the exercise of discipline, but especially of the power, demonstration, and fruit of evangelical obedience.

Hence it is evident what are the *ends* of such synods among the churches of Christ. The general end of them all is to promote the edification of the whole body or church catholic; and that,— (1.) To prevent divisions from differences in judgment and practice, which are contrary thereunto. The first Christian synod was an assembly of the first two churches in the world by their delegates. The first church of the Jews was at Jerusalem, and the first church of the Gentiles was at Antioch; to prevent divisions and to preserve communion between them was the first synod celebrated, Acts xv. (2.) To avoid or cure offences against mutual love among them. (3.) To advance the light of the gospel by a joint confession and agreement in the faith. (4.) To give a concurrent testimony against pernicious heresies or errors, whereby the faith of any is overthrown, or in danger so to be. (5.) To relieve such by advice as may be by any Diotrephes unduly cast out of the church.

What are the ends whereunto they have been used may be seen in the volumes written concerning them, and the numberless laws enacted in them; whereof very little belongs unto the discipline of the gospel or real communion of churches.

3. The *measure or extent* of them ariseth from concernment and convenience. All unprejudiced persons do now acknowledge that the pretence of œcumenical councils, wherein the whole church of Christ on the earth or all particular churches should be represented,

and so obliged to acquiesce in their determinations, is a fond imagination; and it were easy to demonstrate in particular how every one of them which hath in vulgar esteem obtained that title were openly remote from so being. Such councils never were, and, as it is probable, never will nor can be, nor are any way needful unto the edification of the church.

Their due measure and bounds, as was said before, are given them by concernment and convenience; wherein respect also may be had unto the ability of some churches to promote edification above others. Such churches as are, in the same instances, concerned in the causes of them before declared, and may be helpful unto the ends mentioned, are to convene in such synods. And this concernment may be either from some of those causes in themselves, or from that duty which they owe unto other churches which are immediately concerned. So it was in the assistance given by the church at Jerusalem in that case which was peculiar to the church of Antioch.

With this interest or concernment there must be a concurrence of natural, moral, and political conveniences. Some churches are planted at such distances from others that it is naturally impossible that they should ever meet together to advise by their messengers; and some are at such as that they cannot assemble but with such difficulties and hazards as exempt them from the duty of it. And whereas they are placed under different civil governments, and those ofttimes engaged in mutual enmities, and always jealous of the actings of their own subjects in conjunction with them that are not so, they cannot so convene and preserve the outward peace of the churches. Hence the largest of the councils of old that are called "œcumenical" never extended farther than the single Roman empire, when there were innumerable churches planted under the civil jurisdiction of other sovereigns.

Wherefore, in the assembling of churches in synods, respect is to be had unto the convenience of their meeting, that it may be, so far as is possible, without trouble or danger. And this, with respect unto the causes or occasions of them, will determine what churches (which or how many) may be necessary on such occasions to constitute a synod. And it is useful hereunto that the churches which are planted within such a circumference as gives facility or convenience for such conventions should, by virtue of their mutual communion, be in express readiness to convene on all occasions of common concernment.

Again; in the assistance which, in the way of advice and counsel, any one church may stand in need of from others, respect is to be had, in their desire, unto such churches as are reputed and known to have the best ability to give advice in the case; on which account the church at Antioch addressed themselves in a peculiar manner unto the church at Jerusalem, which was far distant from them.

But in all these cases use is to be made of spiritual prudence,

with respect unto all sorts of circumstances; which although some would deny, [such] as the privilege of even matters of fact, and the application of general Scripture rules unto practice, because we require divine institution unto all parts of religious worship, yet we must not decline from using the best we have in the service of Christ and his church, rather than comply with any thing which, in the whole substance of it, is foreign to his institution.

It was the Roman empire under *one monarch*, in its civil distributions for rule and government, which gave the first rise and occasion unto a pretended *visibly ruling catholic church* under one spiritual monarch, distributed into those that were patriarchal, diocesan, metropolitical, and others of inferior kinds; for, retaining the people in their civil distributions, whereinto they were cast according to the polity and interest of the empire, there were ecclesiastical officers assigned unto each distribution, answerable unto the civil officers which were ordained in the polity of the empire. So, in answer unto deputies, exarchs, prefects, governors of provinces and cities, there were found out and erected patriarchs, metropolitans, diocesans, in various allotments of territories and powers, requiring unto their complete state one visible monarchical head, as the empire had;—which was the pope. And whereas the emperors had not only a civil rule and power, but a military also, exercised under them by legates, generals, tribunes, centurions, and the like; so there was raised an ecclesiastical militia, in various orders of monks, friars, and votaries of all sorts, who, under their immediate generals and prefects, did depend absolutely on the sovereign power of the new ecclesiastical monarch. So was the visible professing church moulded and fashioned into an image of the old Roman pagan empire, as it was foretold it should be, Rev xiii. 13–15. And although this image was first framed in compliance with it and for a resemblance of it, yet in process of time it substituted itself entirely in the room of the empire, taking all its power unto itself, and doing all its works.

From this distribution of various sorts of new-framed churches in the Roman empire arose a constitution of synods or councils in subordination one unto another, until, by sundry degrees of ascent, they arrived unto those which they called "general," under the conduct of the pope, whose senate they were.

But these things have no countenance given them by any divine institution, apostolical example, or practice of the first churches, but are a mere product of secular interest working itself in a mystery of iniquity.

Since the dissolution of the Roman empire, nations have been cast into distinct civil governments of their own, whose sovereignty is in themselves, by the event of war and counsels thereon emergent. Unto each of these it is supposed there is a church-state accommodated, as the church of England, the church of Scotland, the church

of France, and the like; whose original and being depend on the first event of war in that [their?] dissolution. Unto these new church-states, whose being, bounds, and limits, are given unto them absolutely by those of the civil government which they belong unto, it is thought meet that ecclesiastical synods should be accommodated; but in what way this is to be done there is not yet an agreement: but it is not my present business to consider the differences that are about it, which are known unto this nation on a dear account. Yet this I shall say, that whereas it is eminently useful unto the edification of the church catholic that all the churches professing the same doctrine of faith, within the limits of the same supreme civil government, should hold constant actual communion among themselves unto the ends of it before mentioned, I see not how it can be any abridgment of the liberty of particular churches, or interfere with any of their rights which they hold by divine institution, if, through more constant lesser synods for advice, there be a communication of their mutual concerns unto those that are greater, until, if occasion require and it be expedient, there be a general assembly of them all, to advise about any thing wherein they are all concerned. But this is granted only with these limitations:—(1.) That the rights of particular churches be preserved in the free election of such as are to be members of all these synods; (2.) That they assume no authority or jurisdiction over churches or persons, in things civil or ecclesiastical; (3.) That none are immediately concerned in this proper synodal power or authority (which what it is we shall inquire) who are not present in them by their own delegates.

As for that kind of synods which some call a *classis*, which is a convention of the elders or officers of sundry parochial churches, distinguished for presential communion ordinarily, in some acts of it, by virtue of their office, and for the exercise of office-power, it is the constitution of a new kind of particular churches by a combination of them into one, whose original distinction is only in the civil limits of their cohabitation; which probably may be done sometimes and in some places unto edification.

4. The persons of whom all sorts of ecclesiastical synods are to consist must be inquired into; and there is nothing of mere human prudential constitution that hath longer obtained in the church than that these should be officers of the churches only. And whereas, after the days of the apostles, we have no record of any synods of more churches than one, until after the distinction was made between bishops and presbyters, they were made up of both sorts of them; but afterward, those who were peculiarly called bishops enclosed this right unto themselves,—on what grounds God knows, there being not one tittle in the Scripture or the light of reason to give them countenance therein.

It must therefore be affirmed, that no persons, by virtue of any office merely, have right to be members of ecclesiastical synods, as such; neither is there either example or reason to give colour unto any such pretence. Further; no office-power is to be exerted in such synods as such, neither conjunctly by all the members of them, nor singly by any of them. Officers of the church, bishops, pastors, elders, may be present in them, ought to be present in them, are meetest for the most part so to be, but merely as such it belongs not unto them. The care, oversight, and rule of the churches whereunto they do belong, the flock among them distinctly, is committed unto them; and for that they are intrusted with power and authority by virtue of their office: but as unto their conjunction in synods, which is a mere act and effect of the communion of churches among themselves, it is not committed unto them in a way of peculiar right by virtue of their office. If it be so, without respect unto the power of the magistrate in calling them, or of the churches in choosing them, then it belongs unto them all; for that which belongs unto *any* of them, as such, by virtue of office, belongs equally unto *all:* and if it belong unto all, then it belongs unto all of one sort only, as, for instance, bishops; or unto all of all sorts, as, for instance, presbyters also. If it be stated in the latter way, then every presbyter, as such, by virtue of his office, hath right and power to be present in all ecclesiastical synods equal with that of the bishops; for although it be supposed that his office is not equal unto theirs, yet it is so also that this right doth equally belong unto his office. If the former be avowed, namely, that this right belongs unto bishops only (such as are pleaded for), by virtue of their office as such, then,—(1.) I desire that any tolerable proof of the confinement of this right unto such an office be produced, either from the Scripture, or reason, or the example of the first churches; which as yet I have never seen. (2.) I fear not to say, that a false presumption hereof was one principal cause and means of introducing tyranny into the churches, and the utter ruin of their liberty.

Concerning the composition that is made herein, that some should convene in ecclesiastical synods by their own personal right and in virtue of their office, and others by a kind of delegation from some of their own order, it being a mere political constitution, which I shall immediately speak unto, it is not here to be taken notice of.

There is nothing, therefore, in Scripture example or the light of natural reason, with the principles of all societies in union or communion, that will lead us any farther than this, that such synods are to be composed and consist of such persons as are chosen and delegated by those churches respectively who do act and exert their communion in such assemblies. So was it in the first example of them, Acts xv. The church of Antioch chose and sent messengers of their own number to advise with the apostles and elders of the church at

Jerusalem, at which consultation the members of that church also were present; and this is the whole of the nature and use of ecclesiastical synods. It is on other accounts that they make up so great a part of the history of the church. For the first three hundred years there were nothing but *voluntary conventions* of the officers or elders, bishops and presbyters, with some others of neighbouring churches, on the occasion of differences or heresies among them. In and from the council of Nice, there were assemblies of bishops and others, called together *by the authority of the Roman emperors*, to advise about matters of faith. In after ages, those which were called in the western parts of the world, in Italy, Germany, France, and England, were of a mixed nature, advising about things civil and political, as well as sacred and religious, especially with respect unto mutual contests between popes and princes. In them the whole nature of ecclesiastical synods was lost and buried, and all religion almost destroyed.

Thus this laudable practice of churches acting their mutual communion by meeting in synods or assemblies, by their delegates or messengers, to advise about things of their common concernment and joint edification, as occasion should require, founded in the light of nature, and countenanced by primitive, apostolical example, was turned, by the designing interests and ambition of men, into the instating of all church-power in such synods, and the usurpation of a power given unto no churches nor all of them together; as might be made evident by instances innumerable.

And whereas they have made such a noise in Christian religion, and have filled so many volumes with their acts and doings, yet some of them who, under the pope, would place all religion in them, do grant and contend that they are a mere human invention; so Bellarmine affirms Pighius to have done in his book De Cœlest. Hierarch. lib. vi. cap. i. But for his part he judgeth that it is more probable that they have a divine original by virtue of that word, "Where two or three are gathered together in my name, there I will be in the midst of them," Matt. xviii. 20, De Concil. lib. i. cap. iii.; which will not bear the least part of the superstructure pretended to be built upon it.

Of these delegates and messengers of the churches, the elders or officers of them, or some of them at least, ought to be the principal; for there is a peculiar care of *public edification* incumbent on them, which they are to exercise on all just occasions. They are justly presumed to know best the state of their own churches, and to be best able to judge of matters under consideration; and they do better represent the churches from whom they are sent than any private brethren can do, and so receive that respect and reverence which is due to the churches themselves; as also, they are most meet to re-

port and recommend the synodal determinations unto their churches; and a contrary practice would quickly introduce confusion.

But yet it is not necessary that they alone should be so sent or delegated by the churches, but [they] may have others joined with them, and had so until prelatical usurpation overturned their liberties. So there were others besides Paul and Barnabas sent from Antioch to Jerusalem; and the brethren of that church, whatever is impudently pretended to the contrary, concurred in the decree and determination there made.

5. That which is termed *the calling of these synods*, is nothing but *the voluntary consent of the churches concerned to meet together* by their delegates and messengers, for the ends before declared.

I no way deny but that a Christian magistrate may convene, by his authority, the bishops, pastors, or ministers, with such others as he shall think meet, within his own territories, yea, and to receive into his convention meet men out of the territories of others, by their consent; to advise among themselves and to give him advice about the concernments of religion and of the church under his dominion, and regulate himself accordingly. It hath been practised with good success, and may be with bad also. And I do deny that churches have power, without the consent and authority of the magistrate, to convene themselves in synods to exercise any exterior jurisdiction that should affect the persons of his subjects any otherwise than by the law of the land is allowed.

But whereas the synods whereof we treat, and which are all that belong unto the church, can take no cognizance of any civil affairs wherein the persons of men are outwardly concerned, have no jurisdiction in any kind, can make no determination but only doctrinal declarations of divine truth, of the same nature with the preaching of the word, there is no more required unto their calling, beyond their own consent, but only that they may meet in external peace by the permission of the magistrate; which when they cannot obtain, they must deport themselves as in case of other duties required of them by the law of Christ.

6. In the last place, I shall speak briefly of *the power and authority of these synods*, in what measures, extent, and numbers soever they are assembled; for although this may be easily collected from what hath been declared concerning their original, nature, causes, use, and ends, yet it may be necessary to be more particularly inquired into, because of the many differences that are about it.

There is a threefold power ascribed unto synods. The first is *declarative*, consisting in an authoritative teaching and declaring the mind of God in the Scripture; the second is *constitutive*, appointing and ordaining things to be believed, or done and observed, by and upon its own authority; and, thirdly, *executive*, in acts of jurisdiction towards persons and churches.

The persons whom the authority pleaded may affect are of two sorts:—(1.) Such as have their *proper representatives* present in such synods, who are directly concerned in its conciliary determinations; (2.) Such as have *no such representatives* in them, who can be no otherwise concerned but in the doctrine, materially considered, declared in them.

Wherefore the ground of any church's receiving, complying with, or obeying the determinations and decrees of synods must be either, —(1.) *The evidence of truth* given unto those determinations by the synod from the Scripture; or, (2.) The *authority of the synod itself*, affecting the minds and consciences of those concerned.

In the first way, wherein the assent and obedience of churches is resolved ultimately into the evidence of truth from the Scripture, upon the judgment which they make thereof, not only the discovery of truth is to be owned, but there is an authoritative proposal of it by virtue of the promised presence of Christ in them, if duly sought and regarded; whence great respect and reverence is due unto them.

The power of a synod for the execution of its decrees respects either, —(1.) The things or doctrines declared, and is recommendatory of them, on its authority from the presence of Christ; or, (2.) Persons, to censure, excommunicate, or punish those who receive them not.

These things being premised, the just power of synods may be positively and negatively declared in the two following assertions:—

(1.) The authority of a synod declaring the mind of God from the Scripture in doctrine, or giving counsel as unto practice synodically, unto them whose proper representatives are present in it, whose decrees and determinations are to be received and submitted unto on the evidence of their truth and necessity, as recommended by the authority of the synod from the promised presence of Christ among them, is suitable unto the mind of Christ and the example given by the apostles, Acts xv.

Hence it is evident that, in and after such synods, it is in the power of churches concerned humbly to consider and weigh,—[1.] The evidences of the presence of Christ in them, from the manner, causes, and ends, of their assembling, and from their deportment therein. [2.] What regard, in their constitutions and determinations, there hath been unto the word of God, and whether in all things it hath had its due pre-eminence. [3.] How all their determinations have been educed from its truth and are confirmed by its authority.

Without a due exercise of judgment with respect unto these things, none can be obliged by any synodical determinations, seeing that, without them and on the want of them, many assemblies of bishops, who have had the outward appearance and title of synods or councils, have been dens of thieves, robbers, idolaters, managing their synodical affairs with fury, wrath, horrible craft, according to their

interests, unto the ruin of the church. Such were the second Ephesine, the second at Nice, and that at Trent, and others not a few.

Hence nothing is more to be feared, especially in a state of the church wherein it is declining in faith, worship, and holiness, than synods, according to the usual way of their calling and convention, where these things are absent, for they have already been the principal means of leading on and justifying all the apostasy which churches have fallen into; for never was there yet synod of that nature which did not confirm all the errors and superstitions which had in common practice entered into the church, and opened a door to a progress in them, nor was ever the pretence of any of them for outward reformation of any use or signification.

(2.) The authority of a synod *determining articles of faith, constituting orders and decrees* for the conscientious observance of things of their own appointment, to be submitted unto and obeyed on the reason of that authority, under the penalty of excommunication, and the trouble by custom and tyranny thereto annexed, or acted in a way of jurisdiction over churches or persons, is a mere human invention, for which nothing can be pleaded but prescription from the fourth century of the church, when the progress of the fatal apostasy became visible.

The proof of both these assertions depends on what was before declared of the nature and use of these synods; for if they are such as we have evinced, no other power or authority can be ascribed unto them but that here allowed. Yet the whole may be further illustrated by some brief considerations of the assembly at Jerusalem in the nature of a synod, recorded Acts xv.

(1.) The *occasion* of it was a difference in the church of Antioch, which they could not compose among themselves, because those who caused the difference pretended authority from the apostles, as is evident, verses 1, 24.

(2.) The *means of its convention* was the desire and voluntary reference of the matter in debate made by the church at Antioch, where the difference was, unto that at Jerusalem, where, as it was pretended, the cause of the difference arose, unto the hazard of their mutual communion, to be consulted of with their own messengers.

(3.) The *persons constituting the synod* were the apostles, elders, and brethren of the church at Jerusalem, and the messengers of that of Antioch, with whom Paul and Barnabas were joined in the same delegation.

(4.) The *matter* in difference was debated, as unto the mind of God concerning it in the *Scripture*, and out of the Scripture. On James' proposal the determination was made.

(5.) There was *nothing imposed anew* on the practice of the churches; only direction is given in one particular instance as unto duty, necessary on many accounts unto the Gentile converts, namely, to abstain

from fornication and from the use of their liberty in such instances of its practice as whereon scandal would ensue; which was the duty of all Christians even before this determination, and is so still in many other instances besides those mentioned in the decree, only it was now declared unto them.

(6.) The *grounds* whereon the synod proposed the reception of and compliance with its decrees were four:—[1.] That what they had determined was the mind of the Holy Ghost: "It pleased the Holy Ghost." This mind they knew either by inspiration, or immediate revelation made unto themselves, or by what was written or recorded in the Scripture, which on all other occasions they alleged as what was the word and spoken by the Holy Ghost; and it is evident that it was this latter way, namely, a discovery of the mind of the Holy Ghost in the Scripture, that is intended. However, it is concluded that nothing be proposed or confirmed in synods but what is well known to be the mind of the Holy Ghost in the Scripture, either by immediate inspiration or by Scripture revelation. [2.] The authority of the assembly, as convened in the name of Christ and by virtue of his presence, whereof we have spoken before: "It pleased the Holy Ghost and us." [3.] That the things which they had determined were "necessary;" that is, antecedently so unto that determination,—namely, the abstaining from the use of their liberty in things indifferent, in case of scandal. [4.] From the duty with respect unto the peace and mutual communion of the Jewish and Gentile churches: "Doing thus," say they, "ye shall do well;" which is all the sanction of their decree, manifesting that it was doctrinal, not authoritative in way of jurisdiction.

(7.) The doctrinal abridgment of the liberty of the Gentile Christians in case of scandal they call the "imposing of no other burden," in opposition unto what they rejected, namely, the imposing a yoke of ceremonies upon them, verse 10: so that the meaning of these words is, that they would lay no burden on them at all, but only advise them unto things necessary for the avoidance of scandal; for it is impious to imagine that the apostles would impose any yoke or lay any burden on the disciples but only the yoke and burden of Christ, as being contrary to their commission, Matt. xxviii. 19, 20.

Hence it will follow that a synod convened in the name of Christ, by the voluntary consent of several churches concerned in mutual communion, may declare and determine of the mind of the Holy Ghost in the Scripture, and decree the observation of things true and necessary, because revealed and appointed in the Scripture; which are to be received, owned, and observed on the evidence of the mind of the Holy Ghost in them, and on the ministerial authority of the synod itself.

I.

A LETTER

CONCERNING

THE MATTER OF THE PRESENT EXCOMMUNICATIONS.

II.

A DISCOURSE

CONCERNING

THE ADMINISTRATION OF CHURCH CENSURES.

PREFATORY NOTES.

I.

No date can be assigned to this letter on the subject of the excommunications. The reader will find an explanation of these cruel processes in a prefatory note to our author's "Word of Advice to the Citizens of London:" see vol. xiii. p. 576. The letter, which is written, especially towards the close, with some point and humour, exposes the prostitution of a gospel ordinance implied in these excommunications by the civil power, and vindicates the character of the Dissenters, against whom they were issued.

II.

The tract on the administration of church censures appeared in the folio volume of "Sermons and Tracts," which was published in 1721, but seems to have been previously given to the world. It is of use in explaining and defending Congregational usages in matters of ecclesiastical discipline.—Ed.

A LETTER

CONCERNING THE MATTER OF THE PRESENT EXCOMMUNICATIONS.

Sir,

You judge aright, that at my last being in London I did consider the unusual hurry of excommunications against those called Dissenters; and, because of the novelty of the proceedings therein, I did, moreover, endeavour my own satisfaction as unto the design, causes, and ends of them; and I find it a thing easily attainable, without difficulty or curiosity of inquiry: for, whereas there is no covering of religion, nor any thing appertaining thereunto, save only a name or title cast upon them, they openly discover themselves of what sort they are, and what they belong unto; and among many other indecencies wherewith they are accompanied, one seemed to me to be very notable, and this is, the collection of whole droves together by summons and citations, then dealing with them in such a clamorous manner as makes a representation of a public market or fair for chaffering about souls. But that, I found, which did principally affect the minds of men was the event which these proceedings do tend unto and will produce; and they generally concluded that they would be highly prejudicial, if not ruinous, unto all trust and trade among the peaceable subjects of the kingdom. For they said that if the commissaries would do as in the old Roman proscriptions in the time of Sylla, and of the triumvirate afterward, and set up the names of all that were to be proceeded against in public tables, to be exposed to the view of all, those concerned might shift for themselves as well as they could, and the residue of mankind might be at liberty to follow their own occasions; but whilst they retain an unreasonable reserve in their own breasts, as unto persons to be ruined by them, so as that they know not whose names, their own or of those with whom they are concerned, they shall see the next day affixed on the church-doors in order unto excommunication, it deprives them of all repose in the law of the land or public justice, and breaks all their measures about the disposal of their affairs. How far this is already come to pass, you, that are in the place, know better than I; but sure I am that the very rumour of it gives a general discomposure unto the minds of men.

Hearing no other discourse of these things, I was somewhat surprised with your letter, wherein you required my thoughts what influence these excommunications may have on the consciences of them who are so excommunicated; for I did not think there would have been any question made about it: but since you are pleased to make the inquiry, I shall, for the satisfaction of my respects unto you (though as unto any other end I judge it needless), give you a brief account of my judgment concerning these proceedings; which is the same, for the substance of it, with that of all sober persons with whom I ever conversed.

Excommunication is the name of a divine institution of Christ, wherein, and in whose due and just administration, the consciences of Christians are, or ought to be, highly concerned; and this, as for other causes, so principally because it is the only sure representation of the future judgment of Christ himself: he did appoint it for this end, that so it might be. Providential dispensations are various, and no certain judgment can be made on them, as unto the final and eternal determination of things and causes: "No man knoweth love or hatred by the things" of that nature "that are before him." But this is ordained by the law of Christ, to be a just representation of his future judgment, with a recognition of the cause which he will proceed upon Therefore it is divinely instructive in what he himself will do in the great day: it is "futuri judicii præjudicium." But he will scarcely be thought well advised who shall send men to Doctors' Commons to learn the way and manner of Christ's judgment of his church, with the causes which he will proceed upon. He himself giveth another account of it, Matt. xxv. 31 unto the end of the chapter. Of what he there declares, there is neither name nor thing found among men of those practices which we treat about. The mentioning of them would be looked on as a sedition against their authority, or else make them ashamed, as a thief when he is found. But for any sort of persons to undertake the administration and execution of the sentence of excommunication against others, not making it their design to represent the judgment of Christ towards impenitent sinners, is to bid defiance to him and his gospel. Wherefore no person whatever, wise or unwise, good or bad, can be concerned in the excommunication in conscience, or on a religious account. I speak not only of them who are forced to suffer by them, but of them also by whom they are administered and denounced; for it is impossible that men should be so far forsaken of all understanding as to imagine that the proceedings therein do belong unto the gospel or Christian religion any otherwise but as a debasement and corruption of it: neither is any man ever the less of the communion of the church of England by these excommunications, though

he may, by force, be debarred from some advantages that belong thereunto. Neither is the communion of any church to be valued from which a man may be really and effectually expelled by such means; for this excommunication is not only null as to the efficacy of its sentence, on the account of its maladministration, but it is not in any sense that which it is called, and which it pretends to be. Idols are called "gods," but we know they are "nothing in the world;" so is this proceeding *called* "excommunication," but *is* no such thing at all. If a man should paint a rat or hedge-hog, and write over it that it is a lion, no man would believe it so to be because of its magnificent title. All that it can pretend unto is a political engine, used to apply the displeasure of some, upon an accidental advantage, unto them whose ruin they design; and therein a satisfaction unto revenge, for discountenancing their supposed interest. That there is any acting in it of the authority of Christ, any representation of his love, care, and tenderness towards his church, any thing that is instructive in his mind or will, any "præludium" of the future judgment, no man, I suppose, does pretend; nor, I am sure, can do so, without reflecting the highest dishonour imaginable on Christ himself and the gospel.

To make these things yet more evident, and to show how remote the present excommunications are from all possibility of affecting the consciences of any, I shall briefly pass through the consideration of those things which principally belong unto them, and whereinto all their efficacy is resolved. And that which first offereth itself is the persons by whom they are administered. The truth is, there is such a variety of scenes in this tragedy, and such different actors in it, —from [the] apparitor with whom it begins, unto the jailer with whom it ends,—that it seems not easy whom to ascribe the animating power and authority that is in it unto; but yet, on a little consideration, the matter is plain enough. The ministers of the parishes wherein the excommunicated persons are supposed to dwell, by whom the sentence of excommunication is rehearsed out of a paper from the court, have no concernment herein; for they know nothing of the causes or reasons of it, nor of the process therein, nor do pretend unto any right for the cognizance of them, nor do, for the most part, know the persons at all on whose qualifications alone the validity or invalidity of the sentence doth depend, nor can give an account to God or man of what is done, as to right and equity: and therefore I no way doubt but that those who are learned and pious among them do hardly bear the yoke of being made such properties[1] in those acts and duties which appertain unto their ministerial function. But it is known who they are who begin the work, and carry on the process of it

[1] Articles and machinery necessary for the stage; used here in a sense equivalent to "puppets."—Ed.

until its final execution; and I shall say no more concerning them but this alone, that how meet soever they may be for the transaction of civil affairs, or for the skilful managing of that work herein which they suppose committed unto them, yet as unto any thing wherein conscience may be affected with the authority of Jesus Christ, they can be of no consideration in it. If any man can but pretend to believe that our Lord Jesus, by an act, grant, law, or institution of his, by any signification of his mind or will, hath committed, or doth commit, the keys of the kingdom of heaven, the power of binding and loosing, of expelling out of and admitting into his church, unto these or such persons, he hath assuredly confidence enough to pretend unto a persuasion of whatever he pleases. They do not believe it themselves, nor among themselves pretend unto any such thing, but only a power to execute their own laws or canons. They do not judge that any personal, moral, or spiritual qualifications are required unto ecclesiastical administrations, which yet to deny is to undermine all religion; without which they may be fit for all church-duties who are no better than that archdeacon of Oxford, who, being charged with immoralities in his conversation, justified himself by the soundness of his faith, affirming that he believed three Gods in one person, and, besides, he believed all that God himself did believe! Let a man out of interest, or fear, or ignorant superstition, strive never so much to affect his conscience with the excommunications of such men, he will never be able to effect it.

But be the personal qualifications of those intended what they please, the question is, how they came by that power and authority herein which they pretend unto? They are chancellors, archdeacons, commissaries, officials, with their court attendants, of whom we speak. I confess these horrid names, with the reports concerning them and their power, are enough to terrify poor harmless men, and make them fear some evil from them. But excommunication is that which no man knows on what grounds to fear from these names, titles, and offices: for that is the name of a divine ordinance instituted by Christ in the gospel, to be administered according to the rule and law thereof; but these names, and those unto whom they do belong, are utterly foreign unto the Scriptures, and, as unto the work, to the practice of the church for a thousand years. What, therefore, is done by them of this kind must of necessity be utterly null, seeing that, as such, they have no place in the church themselves by the authority of Christ. But however it be undeniably evident that they have no relation unto the Scripture, nor can have any authority from Christ by virtue of any law or institution of his, nor countenance given unto them by any practice of the primitive church, yet what they do in this kind being pretended acts of power

and authority, an authority for them must be pleaded by them. But then it may be justly demanded of them what it is, of what nature and kind, how it is communicated unto them, or derived by them from others. This is that which those who are excommunicated by them are principally concerned to inquire into; and which themselves in the first place are obliged to declare and evince. Unless men are satisfied in conscience that those who act against them have just authority so to do, or in what they do, it is utterly impossible they should be concerned in conscience in what is done against them, or be any ways obliged thereby. Here, therefore, they abide until they are satisfied in this just and necessary demand.

But here all things are in confusion; they can declare neither what authority is required unto what they do, nor how they came to possess that which they pretend unto. If it be from Christ, how comes it to operate on the outward concerns of men, their liberties and estates? If it be merely of man, whence do they give the name and pretence of a divine ordinance unto what they do? If any should follow the clue in this labyrinth, it is to be feared that it would lead them into the abyss of papal omnipotency.

As they exercise this power in courts of external jurisdiction and forms of law, they will not deny, I suppose, but that it is from the king. But why do they not, then, act that power in the king's name? for what is not done by his name is not done by his authority. Ministers do not preach nor administer sacraments in the name of the king; for they do it not by his authority or by virtue of authority derived from him: nor do parents govern their children or families in his name, but their own; because authority for it is their own by the law of God and nature. But that exercise of power which externally affects the civil rights and liberties of men must be in the king's name, or the foundations of the government of the nation are shaken.—But I make it not my concernment what name or style they use in their courts. Let it be granted, for their own security, that they have all their power and authority from the king, it must be therewithal granted of what nature it is,—namely, civil, and not spiritual. But why, then, doth what they do not go under the name of a civil order, constitution, or penalty, but of an ordinance or institution of Jesus Christ? Are not these things in their own nature everlastingly distinct? and is not conscience hereby fully absolved from any respect unto it as such an ordinance; which, on this supposition, it neither is nor can be? It is easily discernible how these things tend unto the utter confusion of all things in religion.

If it be said that the power of it, as it is excommunication, is originally seated in the prelates, by virtue of their office, and is communicated unto these sorts of persons by commission, delegation, or

deputation, under their seals, it will yield no relief; for this fiction of the delegation of office-power, or the power of office, unto any, without giving them the office itself whereunto that power belongs, is gross and intolerable. Let it be tried whether the bishops can delegate the power of ministerial preaching the word and administration of the sacraments unto any persons, without giving them the office of the ministry. If excommunication be an act of office-power, authority to administer it cannot be delegated unto any without the office itself whereunto it doth belong; for these things are inseparable. I certainly believe it is the duty and concernment of some men to state proceedings of this nature on better foundations; that the exercise of such solemn duties of Christian religion be not exposed to utter contempt, nor men led, by a discovery of false pretences of divine institutions, to despise the things themselves that are so abused.

It were easy, from many other considerations, to demonstrate the nullity of these men's pretended authority with respect unto excommunication as it is an ordinance of the gospel, in which respect alone the consciences of men are concerned; and as unto their power over the civil rights and interests of men, those troubled by them must shift as well as they can.

But yet further: the manner of the administration of the present excommunications doth evidence their invalidity and nullity. That which they pretend unto, as hath been said, is a divine ordinance, an institution of Jesus Christ; and this declares in general how it ought to be administered by them who have authority for it and are called thereunto: for it hence followeth that it ought to be accompanied with an humble reverence of him and his authority; diligent attendance unto his law and the rule of his word in all things; with solemn, reiterated invocation of his holy name, for his presence, guidance, and assistance. Where these things are neglected in the administration of any divine ordinances, it is nothing but the taking the name of God in vain, and the profanation of his worship. It may be some will despise these considerations; I cannot help it,—they do it at their utmost peril. It is conscience alone which I respect in this discourse;—they who have any such thing will think these things reasonable.

Again: the especial nature of this institution doth require an especial frame of mind in its administration, for it is the cutting off of a member of the same body with them, which cannot be without sense and sorrow (to cut off any one from a church who was never a member of it by his own consent, nor doth judge himself so to be, is ridiculous); hence St Paul calls the execution of this censure, "bewailing," 2 Cor. xii. 21, denominating the whole action from the frame of mind wherewith it ought to be performed. And he that shall dare

to decree or denounce this sentence without sorrow and compassion for the sin and on the person of him that is excommunicated, plays a game with things sacred for his advantage, and shall answer for his presumption.

Besides, as was before observed, it is an instituted representation of the Lord Christ and his judgment in and of the church at the last day. If the consideration hereof be once out of the minds of them by whom it is administered, they must unavoidably err in all that they do,—much more if it be never once in them. But this they ought to take on their souls and consciences, that what they do, Christ himself, if present, would do, and will do the same at the last day; for so he will deal with all impenitent sinners,—he will denounce them accursed, and deliver them to Satan. There is undoubtedly required from hence a reverential care and circumspection in all that is done here. To make a false representation of Christ in these things,—that is, his wisdom, authority, holiness, love, and care towards the church,—is the worst and most deformed image that can be set up. What higher indignity can be offered to his gracious holiness than to act and represent him as furious, proud, passionate, unmerciful, and delighting in the ruin of those that openly profess faith in him and love unto him? God forbid that we should think that he hath any concern in such ways and proceedings!

Whereas, also, the next end of this censure is not destruction, but edification, or the repentance and recovery of lapsed sinners, it ought to be accompanied with continual fervent prayers for this end. This the nature of the thing itself requireth, this the Scripture directs unto, and such was the practice of the primitive church.

If we are Christians, we are concerned in these things as much as we are in the glory of Christ and the salvation of our own souls. If we only make a pretence of religious duties, if we only erect an image of them for our own advantage, we may despise them, but at our peril. How well these things are observed in the present excommunications is notorious. Once to mention them is to deserve a second thunderbolt! An account of them, as to matter of fact, will be given shortly. At present I shall only say, that there is not any transaction of affairs in any kind, amongst men civilized, wherein there is a greater appearance and evidence of turbulent passions, acting themselves in all manner of irregularities, more profaneness of expression, more insolent insultations, more brawling, litigious proceedings, more open mixtures of money demanded in pretended administrations of right and equity, than there are in the public proceedings about them. Shall any Christian suppose that the Holy Spirit of God, on whom alone depends the efficacy of all divine ordinances unto their proper end, will immix his holy opera-

tions in or with this furious exertion of the lusts of men? If this be looked on as the complement of Christian discipline, or the last and utmost actings of the authority of Christ towards men in this world, it must needs be a temptation unto men of atheistical inclinations; certainly greater scandal cannot be given. And it is the interest of some, at least for the preservation of a veneration to their office, to dispose of proceedings in this case in such a way and manner as may administer occasion of consideration unto them concerned, and not so as to be carried on, as at present, with laughter, indignation, and confusion; and if dissenters are to be destroyed, it is desirable that the work were left unto the penal statutes,—which, as now prosecuted and interpreted, are sufficient for it,—rather than that the name of religion and a divine ordinance should, merely for that end, be exposed to contempt.

The last thing that I shall trouble you with at present is, the consideration of the persons against whom the present excommunications are blustered, with the pretended causes of them. These are they whom they call Dissenters; concerning whom we may inquire what they are, and the cause of this pretended ecclesiastical severity towards them. And as unto the first part of the inquiry, they are such as believe and make open profession of all the articles of the Christian faith; they do so as they are declared in the Scripture; nor is the contrary charged on them. There is nothing determined by the ancient councils to belong unto Christian faith which they disbelieve; nor do they own any doctrine condemned by them. They profess an equal interest of consent in the harmony of protestant confessions with any other Protestants whatever. They own the doctrine of the church of England as established by law, in nothing receding from it; nor have they any novel or uncatholic opinion of their own.

It is therefore utterly impossible to separate them from the communion of the catholic church in faith, or to cast them from that Rock whereon they are built thereby.

They do also attend unto divine worship in their own assemblies: and herein they do practise all that is agreed on by all Christians in the world, and nothing else; for they do not only make the Scripture the sole rule of their worship, so as to omit nothing prescribed therein to that purpose, nor to observe any thing prohibited thereby, but their worship is the very same with that of the catholic church in all ages; nothing do they omit that was ever used by it, nothing do they observe that was ever condemned by it. And this must be the principle and measure of catholic union in worship, if ever there be any such thing in the earth; to expect it in any other observances is vain and foolish Offering prayers and praises to God in the name of Jesus Christ, read-

ing the holy Scripture and expounding of it, singing of psalms to God, preaching of the word, with the administration of the sacraments of baptism and the Lord's supper, in a religious observation of the Lord's day unto these ends, all according as God doth enable them by his Spirit, is the sum and substance of the worship of the catholic church, wherein all Christians are agreed. These things the Scripture doth prescribe, and these things the church in all ages hath observed. All differences about this worship, which have filled the world with inhuman contentions, arose from men's arbitrary addition of forms, rites, modes, ceremonies, languages, cringings, adorations, which they would have observed in it; whereof the Scripture is silent and primitive antiquity utterly ignorant. And it may be it will be one day understood, that the due observance of this catholic worship, according as God enableth any thereunto (leaving others at liberty to use such helps unto their devotion as they shall think meet), is the only communion of worship in the church which the Scripture requires, or which is possible to be attained. About the imposition of other things, there ever were, since they were, and ever will be, endless contentions. Wherefore, these dissenters practising nothing in the worship of God but what is approved by all Christians, particularly by the church of England, omitting nothing that either the Scripture or catholic tradition directs unto, they are, notwithstanding this pretended excommunication, secure of communion with the catholic church in evangelical worship.

Moreover, they plead that their conversation is unblamable,—that they are peaceable in the civil government, and useful among their neighbours. If they do evil in these things, let them that prosecute them bear witness of the evil; but if they do well, why are they smitten? If they can be charged with any immoralities, with any disobedience unto the rule and precept of the gospel, those by whom they are thus prosecuted are highly concerned, if not in conscience, yet in honour and interest, to manage the charge against them, that some countenance may be given unto their proceedings: for "the law is not made," as penal, "for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane;" and if it be otherwise with the laws about these excommunications, they neither belong to nor are derived from the law of God.

There are, indeed, great clamours against them that they are schismatics and separatists, and things of the like nature,—that is, that they are dissenters; but in this case the whole force of any inference from hence is built on this supposition, that it is the will of Christ that those who profess faith in him and obedience unto him unblamably should be excluded from an interest in and participation

of those ordinances of divine worship which are of his own institution, if they will not comply with and observe such rites and practices in that worship as are not so, but confessedly of human invention. But no colour of proof can be given hereunto; for it is directly contrary unto express Scripture rule, to the example of the apostolical churches, and unheard of in the world before the branded usurpation of Victor, bishop of Rome. An assertion of it is to prostitute the wisdom, authority, and love of Christ towards his disciples unto the wills of men, oftentimes prepossessed with darkness, ignorance, superstition, and other lusts; as shall be more fully manifested if there be occasion. Let any colour be given unto this supposition from Scripture or antiquity, and the whole cause shall be given up. Yet thus is it, and no otherwise, in the matter of the present excommunications: Persons of all sorts, every way sound in the faith, unreprovable in the catholic worship of the gospel, professing love and obedience unto Jesus Christ, without blame, are excluded,—what lies in them who manage these ordinances of divine worship which the Lord Christ hath appointed and enjoined,—without pretence of any other cause or reason but only their not observance, in that worship, of what he hath not appointed. He that can believe this to be the will of Christ neither knoweth him nor his will, as it is revealed in his word; and the consciences of men are sufficiently secure from being concerned in that wherein such an open defiance is bid unto evangelical precepts and rules, with apostolical examples.

And further to manifest the iniquity of these proceedings, whilst these dissenters are thus dealt withal, all sorts of persons,—ignorant, profane, haters of godliness, and openly wicked in their lives,—are allowed in the full communion of the church, without any disciplinary admonition or control! But as this serves to acquit them from any concernment in what is done against them, so nothing can be invented that tends more directly to harden men in their sins and impenitency; for whilst there is a pretence of church-censures, they will be apt to think that they are sufficiently approved of Christ and the church, seeing their displeasure is no way declared against them. So they are not dissenters, they have reason to judge that they are safe here, and shall be so to eternity! Let them look to themselves who deserve to be excommunicated. Is this the rule of the gospel? Is this the discipline of Christ? Is this the representation of his future judgment? Is this the way and manner of the exercise of his authority in the church, a declaration of what he owns, and what alone he disavows? God forbid that such thoughts should have any countenance given unto them! Ecclesiastical laws have been always looked on as cobwebs that catch the smaller flies, whilst the greater break them at their pleasure; but amongst those lesser, to

spare those that are noxious or poisonous, and to cast the net over the innocent and harmless, is that which the spider gives no pattern of,—nor can imitate.

I shall not mention the avowed end and design of these present excommunications; only I shall say, they are such as [that] many good men tremble to consider the horrible profanation of things sacred which they manifest to be in them.

There are also many other things which evidence the nullity of these proceedings, which may be pleaded if there be occasion. What hath already been spoken is abundantly sufficient to satisfy my engagement unto you, namely, that the consciences of men are not at all concerned in the present excommunications.

It may be it will be said that all this while we have been doing just nothing, or that which is to no purpose at all, as not concerning the present case; for those of whom we treat pretend no power in "foro interiori," or the court of conscience, or unto any thing that should immediately affect it. Their authority is only in "foro exteriori," in the court of the church, which it seems is at Doctors' Commons. Wherefore, by their sentence of excommunication they oblige men only as unto their outward concernments; as unto what concerns conscience, they leave that unto the preachers of the word. It may be it will be so pleaded; but before they quit their hands well of this business, they will understand that excommunication itself is nothing but an especial way of the application of the word unto the consciences of sinners unto their edification, and that which is not so, pretend what it will, is nothing at all. Unto the dispensers of the word, therefore, it doth alone belong. And whereas the apostle tells us that the weapons of our Christian warfare are not carnal, but mighty, through God, to bring into captivity every thought unto the obedience of Christ, they seem herein to say that the weapons of their warfare are carnal, and mighty, through the aid of somebody, to cast men into prison, or to bring their persons into captivity. And, indeed, this outward court of theirs is part of that court without the temple which is trodden down by the Gentiles, and shall not be measured in the restoration of the worship of God; yea, the distinction itself is silly, if any thing be intended by this outward court but only the outward declaration of what is, or is supposed to be, effected in the inward, or the mind and consciences of men. But let it be what it will, those who have neither name, nor place, nor office in the church, by divine institution, who attend not at all in what they do unto any rule of the Scripture, nor can nor do pretend any authority from Christ in and for what they do, are no way to be heeded in this matter, but only as the instruments of external compulsion; which, for the sake of the public peace, is to be submitted unto with quietness and patience.

I find, I confess, by the books with me, sent us weekly into the country, that in this state of things some of the reverend clergy do manifest great compassion towards the dissenters, in writing and publishing many discourses containing persuasives unto and arguments for conformity, whereby they may be freed from their troublesome circumstances;—but I must needs commend their prudence in the choice of the season for this work, as much as their charity in the work itself; for the conformity they press needs no other recommendation at this time, nor need they use any other arguments for it, but only that it is better than being hanged, or kept in perpetual durance, or stifled in prisons, or beggared, they and their families, or being starved in exile. And it hath been always observed, that arguments which march with halberts, bills, staves, sergeants, bailiffs, writs, warrants, and capiases,[1] are very forcible and prevalent.

But I have done, and shall leave it unto others to declare what mischiefs do ensue on these proceedings on civil accounts, and what an inroad is made by them on the government of the kingdom; for a new tenure is erected by them, whereon all men must hold their birthright privileges, especially that which is the root whereon they all do grow,—namely, their personal liberty. They hold them no longer by the law of the land, nor can pretend unto security whilst they forfeit them not by that law: they are all put into the power of chancellors, archdeacons, commissaries, and officials; they may deprive them of them all at their pleasure, against the protection of that law under which they are born, and which hath been looked on as the only rule and measure of the subject's liberties, privileges, and possessions. These things tend not only to the disturbance, but the ruin of all peace and trust among men, and of all good government in the world.

And if they should excommunicate all that by the law of Christ are to be excommunicated on the one hand, and all that are to be so by their own law on the other, and then procure capiases for them all, it is to be feared the king might want subjects to defend his realms against his enemies, unless he should do as they did of old at Rome in great distresses,—open the jails, and arm the prisoners; or it may be the lesser part would at length find it troublesome to keep the greater in prison. But these things concern not you nor me. I beg your excuse, as not knowing whether you will judge this hasty writing too little for the cause or too much for a letter. As it is, accept it from, Sir, your, etc.,

J. O.

[1] See note, p. 171.—Ed.

A DISCOURSE

CONCERNING THE ADMINISTRATION OF CHURCH-CENSURES.

Ques. 1. *May a true church of Christ err or mistake in the administration of church-censures?*

Ans. A true church of Christ may err or mistake in the administration of the censures, or any act of discipline, whereby members of it, who are true members of Christ, may be injured, and sundry other inconveniences may ensue. And this is not unduly supposed:—

1. Because no particular church is absolutely infallible either in doctrine or administrations, especially in such points or things as overthrow not the foundation of faith or worship.

2. Because churches are more obnoxious and liable to error and mistake in their administrations and discipline than in doctrine; for all doctrines of truth are absolutely determined and revealed in the Scripture, so that there is no principle, means, nor cause of mistake about them, but what is only in the minds of men that inquire into them and after them. But the administration of the censures of the church hath respect unto many fallible mediums, requiring testimonies, evidences, and circumstances, which of themselves may lead a church acting in sincerity into many mistakes, especially considering how much in the dark unto us, for the most part, are the principles, causes, and ends of actions, [and] the frames of men's spirits in and after them; all which, in such cases, deserve much consideration.

3. Churches have erred in not administering the censures of the gospel according unto order and their duty, 1 Cor. v. 2.

4. The experience of all ages confirms the truth of this supposition. The first church-censure after the death of the apostles that is remaining on any record was that of the church of Corinth against some of their elders; wherein how they miscarried is evident from the epistle of the church of Rome unto them about that matter.

Corollary. In case any question arise about the administration of any church-censure in a church of Christ, it ought to be very jealous lest it have, in matter or manner, miscarried therein, seeing absolutely they may do so, and seeing there are so many ways and means whereby they may actually be induced into mistakes.

Q. 2. *Is it necessary that such maladministrations be rectified?*

A. It is necessary such maladministrations should be rectified by some way or means of Christ's appointment. And it is so,—

1. First on the part of the censures themselves; and that,—

(1.) Because of their nullity; for they are null, and bind not,—

[1.] "In foro cœli." They bind not in heaven: for the Lord Christ ratifieth nothing in heaven but what is done in his name, by his commission, and according to his word; in some or all of which every maladministration faileth.

[2.] Nor "in foro conscientiæ;" for conscience is not bound, nor will bind, on mere external ecclesiastical authority, where the person is indeed free, and judgeth himself to be so according unto rule.

Only such censures may be said to bind for a season, in some cases, in the church, but that "quoad ordinem exteriorem et mere ecclesiasticum," with respect unto outward order, that the peace of the church be not troubled, until mistakes may be rectified; but not "quoad ordinem internum et mere spiritualem," with reference unto the dependence of the whole church on Christ the head.

(2.) Because of the consequents of them. Disadvantage to the gospel, prejudice to the ways of Christ, and the utter impairing the authority of all church-censures, must needs ensue, if there be no way to rectify such mistakes, or if they are left unrectified; as may easily be manifested.

2. This is also necessary on the part of the church supposed to have erred; for whereas all church-power is for edification, that which is unduly put forth and exercised is rather for destruction, the guilt whereof every church ought to rejoice in being delivered from, especially considering that there is much more evil in *condemning the righteous* than in *acquitting the wicked*, though both of them be an abomination.

3. On the part of the persons unduly or unjustly separated from the church by such censures. This is so evident that it needs no confirmation.

4. On the account of all other churches holding communion with the church which hath (as it is supposed to have) miscarried. The reasons hereof will afterward be made to appear.

Corol. This relief, by what means soever it is to be obtained, is of great use to the churches of Christ, and of great concernment unto their peace and edification.

Q. 3. *How may such* [*mal*]*administrations be rectified?*

A. The rectifying such maladministrations may be (and is ordinarily no otherwise to be expected) by the advice and counsel of other churches, walking in the same fellowship and ordinances of

the gospel with that church so failing, as is supposed; and this to be given upon the hearing and understanding of the whole proceedings of that church in the administration supposed irregular.

This, being the principal thing aimed at, must be further considered. And,—

1. The way or means whereby other churches come to the knowledge of such supposed miscarriages in any church of their communion may be considered. Now, this is either,—

(1.) By public report. So the Israelites took notice of the fact of the Reubenites, and the Gadites, [and the half tribe of Manasseh,] in building an altar; which thereupon they sent to inquire about: they heard say they had done it, Josh. xxii. 11. So the apostle took notice of the miscarriage of the church of Corinth in the case of the incestuous person, 1 Cor. v. 1. And this is a sufficient ground of inquiry, or of desiring an account of any church in such cases.

(2.) By information of particular persons whom they judge holy and faithful. So the apostle took notice of the dissensions in the church of Corinth: they were "declared unto him by them of the house of Chloe," 1 Cor. i. 11.

(3.) By an account given unto them by any church requiring their advice in any case of difficulty, either before or after the administration of censures. So the church at Antioch gave an account of their troubles and differences to the church at Jerusalem, Acts xv.

(4.) By the addresses of the persons injured, or supposing themselves to be so: which to make, whilst they judge themselves innocent, is their indispensable duty, either directly by seeking advice or counsel from them, or by desiring admission into the fellowship of the gospel with them; which they cannot grant without an inquiry into the causes of their separation from any other church or society.

Corol. Where there is a concurrence of the most ways or means of information, there ought to be the more diligence in the inquiry.

Hence it follows, that it is the duty of churches walking in the same order and fellowship of the gospel, upon such information or complaint as before mentioned, of any undue administration of church-censures, especially of excommunication by any church amongst themselves, to inquire by their messengers into the cause and manner of it, to the end that they may give their joint advice and counsel in the matter. And it is the duty of the church complained of or informed against to give them an account of all their proceedings in that case, with their reasons for their procedure, and to hearken unto and consider the advice that shall be offered and given unto them.

2. This will appear sufficiently confirmed if we consider, in order unto a right judgment of the grounds whereon this way and practice is asserted,—

(1.) That this advice of churches in communion to be given and taken is no ordinary or standing ordinance of the church as to its practice, though it be as unto its right, but is only to be made use of in extraordinary cases, and such as should not occur,—although they will; and for this cause it is more sparingly mentioned in the Scripture.

(2.) That it is, and may be fully proved to be, the duty of all churches, by previous advice with other churches in cases of difficulty, to prevent this consequent counsel; which, being after a sentence given, must needs be attended with many difficulties.

(3.) That the practice of the churches as to discipline is no longer recorded in the Scripture than they had the direction and help of the apostles, which supplied all extraordinary emergencies among them; so that many instances of this practice amongst them are not to be expected,—and it is of the care and wisdom of our Lord Jesus that we have any.

(4.) That we must here be content with such arguments and testimonies as we act upon in other ordinances and things belonging to the worship and order of the churches; such as the distribution of elders into teaching and ruling, the administration of the sacraments by officers only, gesture in the sacrament of the supper, observation of the first day of the week, and the like.

These things being premised, the order above expressed is confirmed,—

I. From the light and law of nature, with the unalterable reason of the thing itself. Hence are churches directed unto this order and practice.

There is somewhat that is moral in all ordinances. Some of them are wholly so as to their matter and substance, and founded in the light of nature, being only directed as to their principle, manner, and end, in the gospel. Such is excommunication itself, as might easily be made to appear. And from hence a direction unto duty and an indispensable obligation unto obedience do arise. That which is moral in any ordinance doth no less oblige us to an observation of it than that which is of mere institution; and it obligeth us because it is moral. And the Lord Christ being in all things the Lord of our consciences, what we do therein we do it in obedience unto him.

Now, that the order established is thus grounded and warranted appears by the ensuing rules, taken from the light of nature:—

1. "Quod omnes tangit, ab omnibus tractari debet." All men are to consider that wherein the concernment of all doth lie, according to their respective interests. What is the ground and reason why all the members of a church do consider, determine, give their counsel and consent, in the case of any person being cast out of their

society? It is warranted by virtue of this rule. They all have communion with such a person, and must all withdraw communion from him, and therefore must consider the reason of his excision or cutting off. Now, a church in its censures doth not eject any one from the enjoyment of ordinances numerically only, that is, in that one society; but specifically, that is, from the ordinances of Christ in all churches. Hence it becomes the concernment of other churches, even as many as the person ejected may seek communion from; and therefore it is to be considered by them with respect unto their own duty of walking towards him.

2. "Cujus est judicare, ejus est cognoscere." Whosoever is to judge is to take cognizance of the fact, and the reason of it. This is to be done according to the several interests that men may have in the matter under consideration;—which in some is of jurisdiction, which in this case we admit not of; in others, of counsel and advice. Now, other churches are not allowed in this case to be merely passive and indifferent, but must make a determination in it. This is evident on supposition of the injured person's offering himself to their communion; for they must reject him or receive him. In both they judge, and therein must take cognizance, by hearing the matter from the church, and so on both sides. And unless this be allowed, no church can or ought to expect that any other church will reject from communion any whom they reject, merely because they are rejected, unless they suppose their judgment to be absolutely a rule unto any other churches to walk by in their observation of the commands and institutions of Christ.

3. On the part of the persons supposed to be injured, every man by the law of nature is obliged to undertake "inculpatam sui tutelam," the just defence of his own innocency by all lawful ways and means. And as absolutely the way, means, and measure of this defence are left unto a man's own prudence, so there is a rule given unto it,—Wherever the glory of God or the good of his neighbour is concerned. If either of these suffer by his wrong, he is obliged to vindicate his own innocency, nor is at liberty to suffer false imputations to lie upon him. It is in such cases a man's sin not to do so. And in the case under consideration, this can be done only by an address unto other persons for their assistance, according to their interest. An interest of jurisdiction, in civil courts or in churches, in this case there is none. The interest of private persons herein is of compassion, prayer, and private advice; the interest of churches is a cognizance of the cause, with advice and judgment thereon. And for persons or churches not to give assistance in this case, according to truth and equity, is their sin.

That these are principles of the light of nature and the natural

reason of such things, appears from the general allowance of them so to be, and their constant practice amongst all men walking according to that light and law.

Corol. If churches, as they are assemblies and societies of men in communion for the same end, observe not the indispensable rules of societies, they cannot, as such, be ordinarily preserved in their being and communion.

II. The way and order laid down is directed unto, warranted, and confirmed, by general rules of the Scripture.

1. On the part of the church supposed to err in its administrations. There are sundry general rules which declare it to be their duty to give an account unto other churches of their proceedings therein, and to consider their advice. Some of these may be named, as,—

(1.) That they "give none offence to the church of God," 1 Cor. x. 32. "Give no offence in any thing, that the ministry be not blamed," 2 Cor. vi. 3. Upon a supposition, or information, or complaint of maladministration of any ordinance, offence may be taken, and that, if accompanied (as it may be) with much appearing evidence, justly. And in this case the church hath no way to clear itself from having indeed given offence but by giving an account of their proceedings, and the reason thereof. And without this it cannot be avoided but that offences will be multiplied amongst the churches of Christ, and that to the utter ruin of their mutual communion. Thus when Peter, by the special command and direction of God, went and preached the gospel to the Gentiles, many, not knowing the grounds of his so doing, nor his warrant for it, took offence at it, and charged him with irregular walking, Acts xi. 2, 3. In this case, he doth not defend himself by his apostolical authority and privilege, nor in a few words tell them he had a warrant for what he did; but, to remove all doubts, questions, and causes of offence, he distinctly repeats the whole matter, and all the circumstances of it;—an example of so great importance, that the Holy Ghost thought meet at large to express his account and defence, though the matter of it was set down immediately before, Acts x., xi.

(2.) That they "be ready always to give an answer" (that is, an account) "to every man that asketh them a reason of the hope that is in them" (and, consequently, of their practice suitable thereunto) "with meekness and fear," 1 Pet. iii. 15. This proves it "a minore ad majus;" if they should be ready thus to answer every man, much more many churches of God, and that in and about things of their mutual edification.

(3.) That, in particular, they clear themselves when suffering under any imputation, or being in danger of so doing: "What carefulness it wrought in you, what clearing of yourselves! In all things

ye have approved yourselves to be clear in this matter," 2 Cor. vii. 11. And this on many accounts is the duty of a church in the case proposed. The glory of God, the honour of Christ, their own peace and edification, with the peace and credit of all other churches, require it of them. Nor can this duty be any otherwise performed but by this giving an account of their own proceedings, and receiving the advice of other churches therein. And if this be not done freely, with readiness and submission of mind, there is no way left to preserve the peace and communion of churches. Those who suppose they may in such cases act in a way of jurisdiction and church-power can attain the end by them aimed at, by virtue of the censures which they do administer. But in this way of counsel and advice, unless those who are concerned to give an account of themselves will do it with meekness, gentleness, mutual trust and confidence, suitable unto the conduct of the Spirit of Christ, in obedience unto his institutions, the whole end of it will be in danger to be frustrated.

2. On the part of other churches.

(1.) All churches walking in the same order and fellowship of the gospel are mutually debtors to each other for their good and edification: "Their debtors they are," Rom. xv. 27. And this debt, in this case, can no otherwise be paid but by the way prescribed.

(2.) What the apostles did, might do, and ought to do, towards one another, who were all equal by virtue of their common interest in the same work, *that* one church may do, and ought to do, towards another, or many churches towards one; but one apostle might take cognizance of the ways and walking of another, and withstand, advise, or reprove him, if in any thing he failed, and walked not with a right foot, Gal. ii. 11, 14.

Corol. General rules, containing the grounds and reasons of particular institutions, are sure guidance and direction in and unto their observation.

III. The way and order expressed is warranted by necessity, as that without which the peace of communion and edification of the churches cannot be preserved and carried on; as,—

1. On the part of the church whose administrations are questioned. The persons censured (which is ordinary) may, in their own vindication, or by way of undue reflection, not to be discovered without a just examination, impair their reputation with other churches, or many members of them, whereby they may suffer and be exposed to sundry inconveniences. In this case, a church can have no relief but by reporting the matter unto other churches, so seeking their advice and counsel; whereby they may receive great encouragement, comfort, and boldness in the Lord, if found to have proceeded according unto rule.

2. On the part of other churches. A church may, either causelessly or with just cause, cast out or withdraw communion from such a number of their members as, bearing themselves on their own innocency and right, may continue in a society, and plead that the power, authority, and privilege of the church do abide with them. How, in this case, shall other churches know with which of these societies they may and ought to hold communion, unless they may and ought to examine and consider the causes of the dissension between them? And they may justly, and ought to withhold communion from that party of them, which shall refuse to tender their case unto such consideration.

3. On the part of the persons supposed to be injured, and that either for their restoration or their conviction and humiliation; for,—

(1.) If they are innocent, it is meet that they should be heard (as the Israelites heard the Reubenites), and necessary that they should be restored. Now, it being supposed that the church which hath rejected them will not rescind their own act without new light and evidence,—which, for many reasons, is not likely to spring from among themselves,—this is the only way left for that necessary relief which the Lord Christ requires to be given; for what is our duty towards a person repenting, in reference to his restoration, is certainly our duty towards a person who hath not sinned, when his innocency shall be discovered.

(2.) For their conviction and humiliation, if they be found offenders. Whilst they see not right the regularity of the church's proceedings with them, whilst they are able to justify themselves in their own consciences, and their hearts condemn them not, it is not to be expected that the sentence of excommunication, which works only by the means of men's light and conviction, will have its effect upon them. But when there shall be the concurrence of many churches in the approbation of the censure inflicted on them, which probably will be accompanied with a contribution of new light and conviction, it is a most useful means to bring them to humiliation and repentance. It was an aggravation of the censure inflicted on the incestuous Corinthian that it was given out against him by "many," 2 Cor. ii. 6,—that is, by the common consent of the church; and it will add thereunto when the censure shall be confirmed and approved by the concurrent advice of many churches.

Corol. The Lord Christ having provided all things necessary for the peace and edification of his church in all things that are evidently of that importance, his mind and will is diligently to be inquired after.

IV. This whole order and practice are grounded on especial warrant and approbation, recorded Acts xv.; concerning which we may observe,—

1. That the occasion there mentioned fell out in the providence of God, and the practice upon it was guided by the Holy Ghost, that it might be an example and rule for the churches of Christ in cases of a like concernment unto them in all ages, and so have the force and warranty of an institution: as it was in the case that gave occasion unto deacons, Acts vi.,—a matter of fact, wherein was some disorder, rectified by a practice answering the necessity of the church, became an institution for order in all future ages.

2. That in that synod things were not determined by immediate inspiration, but the truth was searched out, and the mind of the Holy Ghost searched into by reasonings, arguings, and the consideration of Scripture testimonies; whereby they were guided in their conclusion and determination.

3. That the institution and rule given is not in its exercise to be confined to that particular case and instance there mentioned (which to do would overthrow many other rules and observations which we admit), but it is to be extended, in proportion and parity of reason, unto all cases of a like nature: for the reason of any law is the rule of its interpretation; and so it is of any institution. That that which gives offence and trouble unto any church,—that wherein many churches are concerned, that which in any church hinders edification and disturbs the faith or peace of any of its members, whether it be in doctrine or practice, that which is not or cannot be composed in any one church,—should be considered, advised upon, and determined, by more churches holding communion together, and meeting for that purpose by their messengers, is the sense, meaning, design, and importance of this institution.

Corol. To deny an institution of so great necessity to the peace and edification of the churches, will give great countenance unto men who, supposing such defects, are ready to supply them with their own inventions.

V. The order asserted is confirmed by the practice of the first churches, after the decease of the apostles; for when the church of Corinth had, by an undue exercise of discipline, deposed some of their elders, the church of Rome, taking cognizance of it, wrote unto them reproving their rashness, and advised their restoration. And when the church of Antioch was afterward troubled with the pride and false opinions of Paulus Samosatenus, the neighbouring bishops or elders came unto the church, and joined their consent in his deposition.

Some things are, or may be, objected unto this course of proceeding amongst the churches of Christ; which shall therefore be briefly considered and answered.

Objection 1. This way of proceeding will abridge the liberty and

destroy the privileges of particular churches, which ought to be carefully preserved, as the ground and foundation of the whole superstruction of church-order.

Ans. 1. Particular churches have certainly no liberties or privileges that are inconsistent with and do contradict either the light of nature, moral equity, general rules of the Scripture, or the reasons and ends of all institutions, and the edification of the whole body of Christ. And on these, as hath been declared, is this way and course of proceeding grounded.

2. Other churches taking care about their own concernments and duty, according to the will and appointment of Christ,—namely, in considering whom they receive into, and whom they are to deny communion unto, with the causes thereof,—do not, nor can truly, abridge the liberties or privileges of any church whatever; for the duty of many churches will never interfere with the due liberty of any one. And this is all upon the matter that they do in this case; which must be granted them, unless we will say that the actings of one church, and those it may be irregular, shall not only abridge all other churches of their liberty, but hinder them also from performing their duty.

3. I do not see how counsel and advice can abridge the liberty of any church or person. Certainly to guide, direct, and assist any in the acting of their liberty, is not to abridge it, but rather to strengthen it; for liberty acted not according to rule is licentiousness. A man in the use of his liberty may be going to do himself some notable injury; he that shall stop him by counsel and persuasion, with the prevalency and authority of reason, doth not take away his liberty, but guide him aright in the use of it.

4. Wherein is the abridgment pretended? Is a church by this means hindered from the free use and acting of its own judgment, in taking in what members to it seems good, in watching over them according to the rule, in admonishing, reproving, or casting them out, if it find just and sufficient cause so to do? To hinder or obstruct a church in any of these acts or actings, by any authority, sentence, or determination, by any act or acts whatever, is utterly disclaimed: so that this is but a pretence.

5. When a case hath difficulty in it,—and such mostly, if not universally, have all cases wherein there will be found the least appearance of a grievance in the execution of censures, or pretence for seeking redress,—a church hath not liberty, hath no privilege, to secure it from previously seeking the advice of other churches; which is their duty by many rules of Scripture. We must not pretend unbounded liberty against known duty. And as a church doth not seek previous advice from other churches, that they may obtain power to execute

their censures, which they have in themselves, no more doth this following advice any way cut them short in the use or execution of their power, but only direct them. And if a church have not this liberty by rule before censure in difficult cases, as it hath not, no more hath it after a censure, whereby the necessity of advice and counsel may be increased.

Obj. 2. This way of proceeding will erect a jurisdiction or judicature in some churches over others; which is not to be allowed.

So some have spoken, who have not, it may be, duly weighed either what jurisdiction, properly so called, is, or how great an evil it is to cast a reproach upon the right ways of the Lord. In answer I say,—

Ans. 1. Excommunication itself, whatever men may suppose, is no proper act of jurisdiction; for jurisdiction in any sense is an adjunct of office, and the acts of it are acts of office and power. But so is not excommunication; for it is not an authoritative act of the officers of the church, but a judicial sentence of the whole church. Now the whole church is not in office; the whole body is not an eye. What is done, then, by it is no act of office-power, but a declaration of a judgment according to especial institution. And if excommunication itself may be exercised without any jurisdiction, surely that exercise may be consulted and advised about without any pretence thereunto.

2. To constitute a jurisdiction, it is required that there be, first, an office-power stated in them that claim it, and a duty in others on the same account to submit unto them; secondly, an authoritative acting by virtue of that office-power, with an obligation from that authority, formally considered, unto obedience; with sundry other things, which in this matter are utterly disclaimed.

3. A right understanding of the true state of the question, of what is granted and what asserted in this matter, will, with them that love peace and truth, fully obviate such objections as these; for,—

(1.) It is granted that all church power and authority, for the administration of all the ordinances and institutions of the gospel, is intrusted with a particular congregation.

(2.) That there is no judicature, no church assembly, vested with church power and authority, without, above, or beyond a particular church, that should either contribute authority unto such a church for its actings, or authoritatively control it in its actings, to order or change its proceeding in any thing, as by virtue of any authority received unto that purpose.

(3.) That in case any person be not satisfied with the administration of the church whereof he is a member, but finds himself ag-

grieved thereby, he cannot appeal unto any church, or churches, or assemblies of churches, as having power or authority to revoke or disannul the sentence or act of the church wherewith he is offended, either in pretence that the church without their concurrence and consent had not power to pass any such act, or that they have authority to control their acts, or can on any account authoritatively interpose in their administrations.

(4.) It is granted, then, that the power of excommunication, in the preceding acts unto it and full execution of it, is placed in a particular congregation, without respect unto any superior authority but that of Christ and his word. These things are acknowledged. But that it should hence follow, that, in case of supposed maladministration of ordinances, and the complaint of persons pretending to be injured thereby, other churches are not, by virtue of Scripture rules, institution of our Lord Jesus, warrant of the light of nature, on their communion and common interest, to inquire into the matter and take cognizance of it, that no offence be given or taken, that they may know how to discharge aright their duty towards both the church and the persons aggrieved, and give their advice in the common concernment of all the churches, there is no pretence to surmise. And for a church to say that because they have power to do what they do, they will therefore in such things neither desire advice, nor take advice, nor hearken unto counsel, nor give account of their proceedings to them that are or may be offended or that require an account of them, is scarce agreeable to the Spirit of Christ or the rule of his word.

Obj. 3. This is the way to frustrate the sentence of excommunication, and to prevent the due efficacy of it upon the persons censured, yea, to harden them in their sin and offence.

Ans. 1. Concerning whom are these things feared? Were the advice mentioned, and the counsel to be had and given, to be among heathens, enemies of the church or of the ways of Christ, or of the especial way and order of church-fellowship which in this discourse is supposed, such events might be feared: but to pretend to fear that other churches of Christ, walking in the same order and communion with ourselves, and whom we ought to look on in all things as like-minded with ourselves, as to their aim at the glory of God and edification of the church, should, by their counsel and advice, frustrate the end of any ordinance of Christ, is a surmise that ought not to be indulged unto; yea, we have herein cause to admire the wisdom and bless the care of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath provided this help for us, to strengthen and confirm us in the ways of truth and righteousness, or to direct us where we are or may be mistaken.

2. Where excommunication is not administered but in a due man-

ner and for just causes, there will appear little trouble or difficulty in this matter. Let the cause or matter of it be as it ought to be,—such a sin or sins as the mind or conscience of a believer, of an enlightened person, free from open prejudices, will at first view condemn in himself and others, and this or these sins persisted in after due admonition,—and there will indeed be left no pretence of grievance or complaint in those that are censured. But if it be administered in dubious cases, we shall find that this way of counsel is so far from being an obstruction of its efficacy as that it is the only means to render it effectual.

3. No man will complain, or address himself unto the relief declared, if he be convinced in his conscience that he is not injured, but that he is indeed guilty of the crimes charged on him, and that by Scripture rule they are such as deserve that censure. In this case no man will be so foolish or obstinate as to seek for relief; and if he should do so, he can possibly expect nothing but to have his bands made strong. But now suppose that a person be not so convinced, neither before nor after sentence denounced against him, but looks on himself as innocent and injured, either in part or in whole, in matter or manner of proceeding,—what effect can be expected of his excommunication? We are deceived if we look that this ordinance should have any effect upon men but by the conviction of their minds and consciences. It worketh doctrinally only, though peculiarly by virtue of especial institution. And in this case it is evident how this way may further, and that it cannot possibly obstruct, the effects of this censure; as was in part before declared.

4. The address being but once to be made, this is the only way to bind the guilty person, and that without delay, and to give him a sense of his sin, which it is supposed that before he had not.

5. It is our duty not to cast even persons that are excommunicated under new temptations. Now, he that is aggrieved with the sentence denounced against him, and supposeth himself injured (which whilst he doth so he cannot be humbled for his sin), if he suppose he hath no way of relief left unto him,—that is, that his case can no more come under advice or counsel,—he will be exposed unto temptations to irregular ways, and so cast off the yoke which he supposeth grievous and injurious.

Obj. 4. The pattern urged for this course of proceeding, Acts xv., concerneth only doctrines, and not the administration of censures, which was not then or there in question; and therefore in the like case only may the like course be taken.

Ans. 1. The way of mutual counsel and advice amongst churches pleaded for is not built only upon that instance and example, as hath before been evinced. There are many more grounds of it, reasons

for it, and directions about it, than what are or can be comprised in any one particular instance.

2. There is frequently, if not always, some doctrinal mistake in the bottom of all maladministration; for whereas the nature of the sin proceeded against, and the rule proceeded by, ought in the first place to be doctrinally and dogmatically stated, here usually is the beginning of the mistake and error of any church. This, therefore, falls confessedly under that example of Acts xv.

3. Though that assembly made a doctrinal determination of the things in difference, yet the formal reason of the consideration of those things was the offence that was given, and that the churches were troubled: so that the pattern is to be extended unto all things whereby the peace of the church is disturbed.

4. Maladministration may tend to the subversion of the church, and the ruin of the souls of men, no less than false doctrines; as suppose a church should admit known Arians or Socinians into their society, supposing they have liberty so to do, may not other churches both consider the fact, and, unless they alter their proceeding, withhold communion from them? Instances innumerable of the same kind may be given.

Obj. 5. Churches have the sole power of admitting members into their society; by virtue of which admission they are not only received into a participation of the privileges of the church in that particular society whereof they are members, but also into the communion of all other churches of Christ. Now, this is daily practised by churches, without any further inspection into their actions by others. Those admitted are received upon their testimony unto their admission. And why shall not churches have the same trust reposed in them as to the exclusion of any members from them, and expect that their testimony alone to the fact should satisfy for their exclusion from all other churches and their communion?

Ans. 1. The cases, indeed, are parallel, and the power of every church is no less for the exclusion of any of their members than for their admission, nor ought their testimony to be of less weight in the one [case] than in the other.

2. Ordinarily, and where there is no ground of further consideration, the actings of a church of Christ in both these cases are, and ought to be, granted and taken to be according unto rule, so that other churches do acquiesce as to their concernments in the judgment of all the several churches of their communion.

3. There may be mistakes in [the] admission as well as in the exclusion of members; and some there are who do very much scruple complete communion with many churches principally upon this account, that they proceed not on right grounds in their admission of mem-

bers; and such cannot but grant that, on occasion, the grounds of their own admission may and ought to be questioned and examined.

4. No church hath such an absolute power in the admission of members, but that in cases of difficulty, and such as may in their determination one way or other give offence, they are bound to seek and to take the advice of other churches with whom they hold communion.

5. Suppose it be reported or intimated, by any of the ways that were before mentioned, that a church in communion with others had admitted into their society an Arian or Socinian, a seducer or a person of a flagitious life, given to corrupt the manners of others; shall not the other churches of the same communion, to whom the matter is so reported or declared, and who are offended thereat, require an account of that church's proceeding therein, to know whether it be as it is reported or no? And is not that church so represented or reported of obliged to give a full and punctual account of their proceedings, and to receive advice thereupon? Let any consider the instances before given, the nature of the thing itself, the rule of the Scripture in such cases, and determine. The case is directly the same as to excommunication. "But if any man seem to be contentious, we have no such custom, neither the churches of God," 1 Cor. xi. 16.

I.

AN ANSWER UNTO TWO QUESTIONS:

WITH

TWELVE ARGUMENTS AGAINST ANY CONFORMITY TO WORSHIP NOT OF DIVINE INSTITUTION.

Should ye not hear the words which the LORD hath cried by the former prophets?—ZECH. vii. 7.
Happy is he that condemneth not himself in that thing which he alloweth.—ROM. xiv. 22.

II.

OF MARRYING AFTER DIVORCE IN CASE OF ADULTERY.

III.

OF INFANT BAPTISM AND DIPPING.

PREFATORY NOTES.

I.

Mr Orme thus explains the origin and history of the following treatise, which first appeared in the Sermons of Owen, published by Marshall, in 1720:—"About the time of the Doctor's death, a small manuscript was handed about, containing twelve arguments against conformity to worship not of divine institution. The leading object of these arguments is to point out the unlawfulness of those who had separated from the Church of England uniting in its public services, as those services are of a very different nature from the worship which Christ hath appointed. This manuscript occasioned a very violent discussion. It was sent to Baxter, as that which had satisfied many of the impropriety of joining in the liturgy. 'I hastily answered them,' he says, 'but found after that it had been most prudent to have omitted his name; for on that account a swarm of revilers in the city poured out their keenest censures, and three or four wrote against me, whom I answered.' No wonder that Owen's friends were displeased, as he was scarcely in his grave when this attempt was made by Baxter to convict him of no less than forty-two errors in the space of ten pages! It reminds us of the controversy between Erasmus and Natalis Bedda. The latter extracted from the writings of Erasmus two hundred erroneous propositions; who revenged himself in the same way, by calculating that Bedda had been guilty of a hundred and eighty-one lies, three hundred and ten calumnies, and forty-seven blasphemies! Owen's Twelve Arguments are printed in the octavo edition of his Sermons, published in 1720. Baxter's reply is in his 'Defence of Catholic Communion.' The occasional conformity controversy gave a great deal of trouble to the Dissenters, both then and afterwards, to which Baxter's conduct and writings very largely contributed. Owen's tract is one of the best things on the other side."

II. and III.

The tracts on "Marriage," etc., and on "Infant Baptism," etc., were published in the folio volume of "Sermons and Tracts" by Owen, which was printed in 1721.—Ed.

AN ANSWER UNTO TWO QUESTIONS.

QUESTION I.

Whether persons who have engaged unto reformation and another way of divine worship, according to the word of God, as they believe, may lawfully go unto and attend on the use of the Common-prayer book in divine worship?

ANSWER.

1. We suppose herein all that hath been pleaded against that kind of service, as to its matter, form, imposition, use, end, and consequents; which are all of them duly to be considered before the practice inquired after can be allowed. But,—

2. The present question is not about the lawfulness or unlawfulness of forms of prayer in general; nor about the lawfulness of that form or those forms which are prescribed in the Common-prayer book, as unto their matter and manner of composure, absolutely considered; nor yet about the expediency of the whole system of worship limited thereunto: but it respects all these things, and the like, with reference unto the persons described in the inquiry. And as unto the persons intended in the inquiry, we judge this practice unlawful unto them, as contrary unto sundry rules of the Scripture, and wherein it is condemned.

1. It is contrary unto that *general rule* in those cases given us by the apostle, Gal. ii. 18, "If I build again the things which I destroyed, I make myself a transgressor." To "destroy" or dissolve any thing in the worship of God, is to lay it aside and remove it out of that worship, as that which we have no divine obligation unto: so the apostle destroyed the legal ceremonies whereof he there speaks, and no otherwise. To "build again," is to admit into the worship of God as useful unto the edification of the church. And these are contrary, so that if the one be a duty, the other, in the same case, or with respect unto the same things, is a sin. If it were a duty to destroy, it is a sin to build; and if it be a duty to build, it was a sin to destroy. He that doth both makes himself unavoidably a transgressor.

But we have in this sense, as unto ourselves, destroyed this form of worship; that is, we have omitted it, and left it out in the service of the church, as that which we had no divine obligation unto, and as that which was not unto edification. If we now build it again, as it is done in the practice inquired after, we make ourselves transgressors, either by destroying or building.

And there is strength added unto this consideration, in case that we have suffered any thing on the account of the forbearance of it; as the same apostle speaks in the same case, "Have ye suffered so many things in vain? if it be yet in vain," Gal. iii. 4. It is a great folly to lose our own sufferings: "Are ye so foolish?" verse 3.

2. It is contrary unto that *great rule*, "Whatsoever is not of faith is sin," Rom. xiv. 23; for that any thing which a man doth in the worship of God may be of faith, it is necessary that he be convinced or persuaded that it is his duty so to do, Matt. xxviii. 20; Isa. i. 12; Deut. iv. 2.

It is no rule in the worship of God, that we should do what we can, or that we have a liberty to do this or that, which we yet suppose, all circumstances considered, that we are not divinely obliged to do. In all things in general, and in particular duties or instances, we must have an obligation on our consciences from the authority of God that so we ought to do, and that our not doing of it is a neglect of a duty, or it is not of faith. The performance of any thing in the worship of God hath in it the formal nature of a duty, given it by its respect unto divine authority; for a duty to God that is not an act of obedience with respect unto his authority is a contradiction.

Wherefore, no man can (that is, lawfully and without sin) go to and attend on this kind of religious worship but he who judgeth his so doing to be a duty that God requireth of him, and which it would be his sin to omit, every time he goes unto it. God will not accept of any service from us on other terms. Whether this be the judgment of those who make the inquiry as unto what they do, they may do well to consider.

3. It is contrary to the rule delivered, Mal. i. 13, 14, "Ye brought that which was torn, and the lame, and the sick; thus ye brought an offering: should I accept this of your hand? saith the LORD. But cursed be the deceiver, which hath in his flock a male, and voweth, and sacrificeth unto the LORD a corrupt thing: for I am a great King, saith the LORD of hosts." We are obliged, by all divine laws, natural, moral, and positive, to serve God always with our *best*. The obligations hereunto are inseparable from all just conceptions of the divine nature, and our relation thereunto. No man can think aright of God, and that it is his duty to serve him, but must think it to be so with the best that he hath. To offer him any thing when we

have that which is better, or which we judge to be better, is an act of profaneness and not obedience. In all sacrifices the blood and the fat were to be offered unto God. Wherefore, he that attends unto this service doth avow to God that it is the best that he hath; and if it be not so, he is a deceiver.

If it be objected, hereon, that "by virtue of this rule, so understood as that we are always obliged to the use of that which we judge best in the worship of God, we are bound to leave this or that ministry or church, if we judge that the administrations are better amongst others," it is answered, that the rule respects not *degrees*, where the whole administration is according to the mind of God, but different *kinds* of worship, as worshipping by a limited prescribed form and worshipping by the assistance of the Spirit of God are.

4. It is contrary unto that rule, "Let all things be done unto edifying," 1 Cor. xiv. 26. Whatsoever doth not promote edification is excluded out of the worship of the church by virtue of this rule, nor can it be a duty in us to give countenance thereunto or to make use of it. It is said that "prayer is the worship of God; these forms of it are only a determination of the manner of it, or an outward means of that worship." Let it be supposed so; although it be certain that, as prescribed, they are parts of the service. They are therefore means that are a help and furtherance unto edification in prayer, or they are an hinderance of it, or they are of no use or signification one way or the other. If it be said that "they are a help unto edification, and are found so by experience, in the exclusion of any other way of worship," then I ask why they are not constantly used?—why do we at any time, in any place, refuse the aid and help of them unto this great end of all things that are done in the church? But this can be pleaded only by those who contend for the constant use of them in the worship of God, with whom at present we are not concerned. If it be acknowledged that "indeed they are an hinderance unto edification, which is more promoted without them, yet are they not in themselves unlawful," I say, as before, that is not the present question; we inquire only whether the use of them by those who judge them hinderances unto edification be not contrary to the rule mentioned, "Let all things be done unto edifying." For the things of the third sort, that are of no use nor signification at all, they can have no place nor be of any consideration in the worship of God.

5. It is inconsistent with that *sincerity in profession* that is required of us. Our public conjunction with others in acts and duties of religious worship is a part of that profession which we make; and our whole profession is nothing but the declaration of the subjection of our souls unto the authority of Christ, according unto the gospel.

Wherefore, in this conjunction in worship we do profess that it is divinely required of us, and that it is part of that obedience which we owe to Jesus Christ; and if we do not so judge it, we are hypocritical in what we do, or the profession that we make. And to deny that our practice is our profession in the sight of God and men, is to introduce all manner of licentiousness into religion.

6. Such a practice is, in very many instances, contrary unto *the great rule of not giving offence* [1 Cor. x. 32]; for it is unavoidable but that many will be given and taken, and some of them of pernicious consequence unto the souls of men. In particular,—

First, "Woe will be unto the world because of these offences:" for hence our adversaries will take occasion to justify themselves in their most false and injurious charges against dissenters, unto the hardening of them in their ways; as,—(1.) They accuse them as factious and seditious, in that they will not do what they can do, and what, by the present practice, they own to be the mind of God that they should do (or else expressly play the hypocrite), for the sake of peace, order, and obedience unto magistrates. (2.) That they pretend conscience wherein indeed it is not concerned in their own judgment, seeing, on outward considerations which conscience can have no regard unto, they can do what is required. On these apprehensions they will justify themselves in their security, and harden themselves in their sins, it may be to their perdition. Woe be unto them by whom such offences come!

Secondly, By this practice we cast in our suffrage on the part of *persecutors* against the present *sufferers* in the nation; for we justify what is done against them, and condemn them in their sufferings, as having no just cause or warranty for what they do, as we declare by our practice of what they refuse. There is no man who complies in this matter but it is a part of his profession that those who refuse so to do, and are exposed to sufferings thereon, do not suffer according to the will of God, nor do their sufferings redound unto his glory; and no offence or scandal can be of a higher nature.

Thirdly, *Differences and divisions* will on this practice unavoidably arise between churches themselves and members of the same church, which will be attended with innumerable evil consequences, unto the dishonour of the gospel, and, it may be, to the loss of all church-communion.

Fourthly, Many will be induced, on the *example of others*, especially if they be persons of any reputation in the church who shall so practise, to follow them against their own light, having the great weight of the preservation of their liberties and goods lying on the same side; and experience will quickly show what will be the event hereof, either in total apostasy, or that terror of conscience which

they will find no easy relief under, as it hath fallen out with some already. And,—

Fifthly, It is *a justification of our adversaries* in the cause wherein we are engaged,—(1.) In their *church-state;* (2.) In a *reading ministry;* (3.) In their *casting us out* of communion on the present terms; (4.) In their judgment concerning us on the point of *schism;* as might easily be manifested.

Lastly, There is in this practice a visible compliance with the design of the prescription of this form of service unto the sole use of the church in the duties of divine worship. And this, in the nature of the thing itself, is an exclusion of the exercise of the gifts of the Holy Spirit in that worship, which is given and continued by Christ to this very end, that the church may be edified in divine worship and the due performance of it. And whether this answers our loyalty unto Christ in his kingly office ought to be well inquired into.

And we shall hereby, on a mere act of outward force, join with them in church-communion who have cast us out of their communion by the imposition of principles and practices in divine worship no way warranted by the Scripture or authority of Christ, who allow us no church-state among ourselves, nor will join in any one act of church-communion with us! who persecute us even unto death, and will not be satisfied with any compliance without a total renunciation of our principles and practice in the worship of God, and giving away our whole cause about the state of the church and other divine institutions! Besides, we shall seem to be influenced by a respect unto their excommunications; which, as they are managed and administered at present, are not only a high profanation of a sacred ordinance, but suited to expose Christian religion unto scorn and contempt.

QUESTION II.

A second inquiry is, *Whether the persons before mentioned and described may lawfully, and in a consistency with, or without a renunciation of, their former principles and practice, go to and receive the sacrament of the Lord's supper in the parish churches, under their present constitution and administration?*

ANSWER.

It appears that they may not, or cannot so do; for,—

1. *Their so doing would be an ecclesiastical incorporation in the church wherein they do partake;* for a voluntary conjunction in the highest act of communion with any church, according to its order

and institution, warranted by its own authority, is an express incorporation with it, whereby a man is constituted a formal member of it unto all ends and purposes of privilege, right, and duty. The church-state is owned hereby, its authority submitted unto in its right and exercise; nor is it otherwise interpreted of them unto whom they so join themselves. But this is a virtual, yea, an express renunciation of their own present church-state in any other society, and necessitates a relinquishment of their former practice.

It will be said that "a member of one particular church may partake of the sacrament of the Lord's supper in another, without incorporating or becoming a stated member of that church wherein he doth so partake."

It is answered, that he may do so by virtue of that communion which is between the church whereof he is a member and that church wherein he doth so partake; for he is admitted unto that participation by virtue of that communion, and not on his own personal account. If it be otherwise, where any one is received unto the participation of this ordinance, there he is admitted unto entire membership, and is engaged unto all the duties thereunto belonging.

And thus is it in this case; for those unto whom they join themselves herein, if but *occasionally*, do,—(1.) Own no church-state in this nation but their own; (2.) Admit of none unto this sacrament by virtue of their communion with any other church, or any churches not of their own constitution; nor, (3.) Will administer it unto any but those whom they claim to be their own, as living in their parishes, in opposition unto any other church-state whatever.

Wherefore, it is impossible that any man should be a member of one church and communicate in this ordinance with another which condemns that whereof he is [a member] as schismatical, and receiveth him as one belonging unto itself only, but he doth professedly renounce the communion of that church wherein he was, and is by them that receive him esteemed so to do. And no reserves of a contrary judgment or resolution in his own mind will relieve any man, in conscience or reputation, against the testimony of his practical profession.

2. They do hereby *profess a spiritual incorporation with those or that church wherein they do so communicate*,—namely, that they are "one bread and one body" with them, that they all "drink into one Spirit," 1 Cor. x. 17, xii. 13. How they can do this in those places where they judge the generality of them to be profane and ignorant, without sinning against their own light, is not to be understood.

It is said that "no persons, in this or any other ordinance of divine worship, are polluted or made guilty by the sins of others with whom they do communicate." It is answered, that this is not at present

inquired into. That which such persons are charged with is their own sin only, in making a profession of spiritual incorporation, or becoming of one body, one bread with them, and of drinking into the same Spirit with them, when they do not esteem them so to be, in the exercise of love without dissimulation. The neglect also of other express duties, which we owe unto those who stand in that union with us, will necessarily follow hereon. Neither do such persons as so communicate intend to take on themselves an obligation unto all those duties which are required of them towards those with whom they profess themselves to be one spiritual body; which is an open prevarication against Scripture rule.

3. They would *hereby not only justify the whole service of the liturgy, but the ceremonies also enjoined to be used in the administration of the sacrament;* for the rule of the church wherewith they join is that whereby they are to be judged. Any abatement that may be made of them in practice is on both sides an unwarrantable self-deceiving, inconsistent with Christian ingenuity and sincerity. But hereby they do not only condemn all other present dissenters, but all those also of former days and ages, ministers and others, who suffered under deprivation, imprisonment, and banishment, in their testimony against them.

If they shall say they do not approve what is practised by others, though they join in the same worship and duties of it with them, I say this is contrary to the language of their profession, unto Scripture rule, Rom. xiv. 22, and is indefensible in the sight of God and good men, and unworthy of that plain, open, bold sincerity which the gospel requireth in the professors of it.

4. *The posture of kneeling in the receiving of this sacrament is a peculiar act of religious adoration, which hath no divine institution or warranty;* and is therefore at best an act of will-worship, not to be complied withal.

It is said that "kneeling is required not as an act of worship or religious adoration, but only as a posture decent and comely, because the sacrament is delivered with a prayer unto every one." But,—

(1.) That *delivery of it with a prayer unto every one is uninstituted,* without primitive example, contrary to the practice at the first institution of the ordinance, unsuited unto the nature of the communion required, and a disturbance of it.

(2.) He that prays stands, and he that doth not pray kneels, which must be on another consideration; for,—

(3.) Prayer is not the proper exercise of faith in the instant of receiving of this sacrament, as is evident from the nature and use of it.

(4.) The known original of this rite doth render it not only justly to be suspected, but to be avoided.

On these considerations, which might be enlarged, and many others that might be added, it is evident that the practice inquired into, with respect unto the persons at first intended, is unlawful, and includes in it a renunciation of all the principles of that church-communion wherein they are engaged. And whereas some few have judged it not to be so, they ought to rectify their mistake in their future walking.

TWELVE ARGUMENTS

AGAINST ANY CONFORMITY OF MEMBERS OF SEPARATE CHURCHES TO THE NATIONAL CHURCH.

Position.—It is not lawful for us to go to and join in public worship by the Common-prayer, because that worship itself, according to the rule of the gospel, is not lawful.

Some things must be premised to the confirmation of this position; as,—

1. The whole system of *liturgical worship*, with all its inseparable dependencies, are intended; for as such it is established by law, and not in any part of it only, and as such it is required that we receive it and attend unto it. It is not in our power, it is not left to our judgment or liberty, to close with or make use of any part of it, as we shall think fit.

There are in the Mass-book many prayers and praises directed to God only by Jesus Christ; yet it is not lawful for us thereon to go to mass, under a pretence of joining only in such lawful prayers. As we must not affect their drink-offerings of blood, so we must not take up their names into our lips, Ps. xvi. 4; we must have no communion with them.

2. It is to be considered as armed with laws;—first, such as declare and enjoin it as the only true worship of the church; secondly, such as prohibit, condemn, and punish, all other ways of the worship of God in church-assemblies. By our communion and conjunction in it, we justify those laws.

3. This conjunction by communion in the worship of the liturgy is a symbol, pledge, and token of an ecclesiastical incorporation with the church of England in its present constitution. It is so in the law of the land,[1] it is so in the common understanding of all men. And by these rules must our profession and practice be judged, and

[1] In the canon of the church.

not by any reserves of our own, which neither God nor good men will allow of.

4. Wherefore, he that joineth in the worship of the Common-prayer doth, by his practice, make profession that it is the true worship of God, accepted by him, and approved of him, and wholly agreeable to his mind; and to do it with other reserves is hypocrisy, and worse than the thing itself without them. "Happy is he that condemneth not himself in that thing which he alloweth," Rom. xiv. 22.

5. There may be a false worship of the true God as well as a worship of a false god: such was the worship of Jehovah the Lord by the calf in the wilderness, Exod. xxxii. 5, 6; such was the feast unto the LORD ordained by Jeroboam "in the eighth month, on the fifteenth day of the month," the which "he devised of his own heart," 1 Kings xii. 32, 33.

On these suppositions, the proposition laid down is proved by these following arguments:—

FIRST ARGUMENT.—Religious worship not divinely instituted and appointed is false worship, not accepted with God; but the liturgical worship intended is a religious worship not divinely instituted nor appointed: *ergo*, not accepted of God.

The proposition is confirmed by all the divine testimonies wherein all such worship is expressly condemned; that especially where the Lord Christ restraineth all worship to his alone command, Deut. iv. 2, xii. 32; Prov. xxx. 6; Jer. vii. 31; Isa. xxix. 13; Matt. xxviii. 20.

It is answered to the minor proposition, "That the liturgical worship is of Christ's appointment as to the substantials of it, namely, prayers and praises, though not as to its accidentals, not as unto its outward rites and forms, which do not vitiate the whole." But it is replied,—

1. There is nothing accidental in the worship of God; every thing that belongs to it is part of it, Matt. xxiii. 23. Some things are of more use, weight, and importance, than others, but all things that duly belong unto it are parts of it, or of its substance. Outward circumstances are natural and occasional, not accidental parts of worship.

2. Prayers and praises, absolutely considered, are not an institution of Christ; they are a part of natural worship, common to all mankind. His institution respecteth only the internal form of them, and the manner of their performance; but this is that which the liturgy taketh on itself,—namely, to supply and determine the matter, to prescribe the manner, and to limit all the concerns of them to modes and forms of its own; which is to take the work of Christ out of his hands!

3. Outward rites and modes of worship divinely instituted and

determined do become thereby *necessary* parts of divine worship, Lev. i. 1–6; therefore such as are humanly instituted, appointed, and determined, are thereby made parts of worship,—namely, of that which is false, for want of a divine institution.

4. Prayer and praise are not things prescribed and enjoined in and by the liturgy; it is so far from it, that thereby all prayers and praises in church-assemblies, merely as such, are prohibited;—but it is its own forms, ways, and modes, with their determination and limitation alone, that are instituted, prescribed, and enjoined by it; but these things have no divine institution, and therefore are so far false worship.

Second Argument.—That which was in its first contrivance, and hath been in its continuance, an invention or engine to defeat or render useless the promise of Christ unto his church of sending the Holy Spirit in all ages, to enable it unto a due discharge and performance of all divine worship in its assemblies, is unlawful to be complied withal, nor can be admitted in religious worship; but such is the liturgical worship: *ergo*, etc.

That the Lord Jesus Christ did make such a promise, that he doth make it good, that the very being and continuance of the church (without which it is but a dead machine) doth depend thereon, I suppose will not be denied; it hath been sufficiently proved. Hereon the church lived and acted for sundry ages, performing all divine worship in its assemblies by virtue of the gifts and graces of the Holy Spirit, and no otherwise.

When these things were neglected, when the way of attaining them and the exercise of them appeared too difficult to men of carnal minds, this way of worship by a prescribed liturgy was insensibly brought in, to render the promise of Christ and the whole work of the Holy Spirit in the administration of gifts useless; and thereupon two things did follow:—

1. A total neglect of all the gifts of the Holy Spirit in the administration of church worship and ordinances.

2. When a plea for the work of the Holy Spirit began to be revived, it produced all that enmity, hatred, and contempt of and against the Spirit of God himself, and his whole work in the church, which the world is now filled withal. All the reproaches that are daily cast upon the Spirit of prayer, all that contempt and scorn which all duties of religious worship performed by his aid and assistance are entertained withal, arise from hence alone,—namely, from a justification of this devised way of worship as the only true way and means thereof. Take away this, and the wrath and anger of men against the Spirit of God and his work in the worship of the church will be abated, yea, the necessity of them will be evident.

This we cannot comply with, lest we approve of the original design of it, and partake in the sins which proceed from it.

THIRD ARGUMENT.—That in religious worship which derogates from the kingly office of Jesus Christ, so far as it doth so, is false worship.

Unto this office of Christ it inseparably belongs that he be the sole lawgiver of the church in all the worship of God. The rule of his government herein is, "Teach men to observe and do whatsoever I command." But the worship treated about consisteth wholly in the institutions, commands, prescriptions, orders, and rules of men; and on the authority of men alone do all their impositions on the practice of the church depend. What is this but to renounce the kingly office of Christ in the church?

FOURTH ARGUMENT.—That which giveth testimony against the faithfulness of Christ in his house as a Son, and Lord of it, above that of any servant, is not to be complied withal; let all his disciples judge.

Unto this faithfulness of Christ it doth belong to appoint and command all things whatever in the church that belong to the worship of God, as is evident from his comparison with Moses herein, and his preference above him. But the institution and prescription of all things in religious worship, of things never instituted or prescribed by Christ, in the forms and modes of them, ariseth from a supposition of a defect in the wisdom, care, and faithfulness of Christ; whence alone a necessity can arise of prescribing that in religious worship which he hath not prescribed.

FIFTH ARGUMENT.—That which is a means humanly invented for the attaining of an end in divine worship which Christ hath ordained a means for, unto the exclusion of the means so appointed by Christ, is false worship, and not to be complied withal.

The end intended is the edification of the church in the administration of all its holy ordinances. This the Service-book is ordained and appointed by men for, or it hath no end or use at all. But the Lord Christ hath appointed other means for the attaining the end, as is expressly declared, "He hath given gifts unto men, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body," Eph. iv. 8, 12; that is, in all gospel administrations: but the means ordained by Christ,—namely, the exercise of spiritual gifts in gospel administrations, unto the edification of the church,—are excluded, yea, expressly prohibited, in the prescription of this liturgical worship. The pretence of men's liberty to use their gifts in prayer before their sermons, and in preaching, is ridiculed; they are excluded in all the solemn worship of the church.

SIXTH ARGUMENT.—That which hath been and is obstructive of

the edification of the church, if it be in religious worship, it is false worship, for the end of all true worship is edification; but such hath been and is this liturgical worship: for,—

1. It putteth an utter *stop* to the progress of the reformation in this nation, fixing bounds to it that it could never pass.

2. It hath kept multitudes in *ignorance.*

3. It hath countenanced and encouraged *many* in reviling and reproaching the Holy Spirit and his work.

4. It hath set up and warranted an ungifted *ministry.*

5. It hath made great *desolations* in the church:—(1.) In the silencing of faithful and painful ministers; (2.) In the ruin of families innumerable; (3.) In the destruction of souls!

It is not lawful to be participant in these things, yea, the glory of our profession lies in our testimony against them.

Seventh Argument.—That practice whereby we condemn the suffering saints of the present age, rendering them false witnesses for God, and the only blamable cause of their own sufferings, is not to be approved; but such is this practice. And where this is done on a pretence of liberty, without any plea of necessary duty on our part, it is utterly unlawful.

Eighth Argument.—That practice which is accompanied with unavoidable scandal, engaged in only on pretence of liberty, is contrary to the gospel; but such is our joining in the present public worship.

It were endless to reckon up all the scandals which will ensue hereon. That which respecteth our enemies must not be omitted. Will they not think, will they not say, that we have only falsely and hypocritically pretended conscience for what we do, when we can, on outward considerations, comply with that which is required of us? Woe to the world because of such offences!—but woe to them also by whom they are given!

Ninth Argument.—That worship which is unsuited to the spiritual relish of the new creature, which is inconsistent with the conduct of the Spirit of God in prayer, is unlawful; for the nature, use, and benefit of prayer are overthrown hereby in a great measure.

Now, let any one consider what are the promised aids of the Holy Spirit with respect unto the prayers of the church, whether as to the matter of them, or as to the ability for their performance, or as to the manner of it, and he shall find that they are all rejected and excluded by this form of worship, comprising (as is pretended) the whole matter, limiting the whole manner, and giving all the abilities for prayer that are needful or required; and this hath been proved at large.

Tenth Argument.—That which overthrows and dissolves our

church-covenant, as unto the principal end of it, is, as unto us, unlawful.

This end is, the professed joint subjection of our souls and consciences unto the authority of Christ, in the observation of all whatever he commands, and nothing else, in the worship of God. But by this practice this end of the church-covenant is destroyed, and thereby the church-covenant itself is broken, for we do and observe that which Christ hath not commanded; and while some stand unto the terms of the covenant which others relinquish, it will fill the church with confusion and disorder.

Eleventh Argument.—That which contains a virtual renunciation of our church-state, and of the lawfulness of our ministry and ordinances therein, is not to be admitted or allowed.

But this also is done by the practice inquired into, for it is a professed conjunction with them in church communion and worship by whom our church state and ordinances are condemned as null. And this judgment they make of what we do, affirming that we are gross dissemblers if, after such a conjunction with them, we return any more into our own assemblies. In this condemnation we do outwardly and visibly join.

Twelfth Argument.—That which depriveth us of the principal plea for the justification of our separation from the church of England in its present state ought not justly to be received or admitted; but this is certainly done by a supposition of the lawfulness of this worship, and a practice suitable thereunto, as is known to all who are exercised in this case. Many other heads of arguments might be added to the same purpose, if there were occasion.

OF MARRYING AFTER DIVORCE IN CASE OF ADULTERY.

It is confessed by all that adultery is a just and sufficient cause of a divorce betwixt married persons.

This divorce, say some, consists in a dissolution "vinculi matrimonialis," and so removes the marriage relation as that the innocent person divorcing or procuring the divorce is at liberty to marry again.

Others say that it is only a separation "a mensa et thoro," and that on this account it doth not nor ought to dissolve the marriage relation.

I am of the judgment of the former; for,—

First, This divorce "a mensa et thoro" only is no true divorce, but a mere fiction of a divorce, of no use in this case, nor lawful to be made use of, neither by the law of nature nor the law of God; for,—

1. It is, as stated, but a late invention, of no use in the world, nor known in more ancient times: for those of the Roman church who assert it do grant that divorces by the law of nature were "a vinculo," and that so they were also under the old testament; and this fiction they would impose on the grace and state of the gospel, which yet makes indeed no alteration in moral relations and duties, but only directs their performance.

2. It is deduced from a fiction,—namely, that marriage among Christians is a sacrament of that signification as renders it indissolvable; and therefore they would have it to take place only amongst believers, the rest of mankind being left to their natural right and privilege. But this is a fiction, and as such in sundry cases they make use of it.

Secondly, A divorce perpetual "a mensa et thoro" only is no way useful to mankind, but hurtful and noxious; for,—

1. It would constitute a new condition or state of life, wherein it is not possible that a man should either have a wife, or not have a wife lawfully, in one of which estates yet really every man capable of the state of wedlock is and must be, whether he will or no; for a man may, as things may be circumstantiated, be absolutely bound in

conscience not to receive her again who was justly repudiated for adultery, nor can he take another on this divorce. But into this estate God calls no man.

2. It may, and probably will, cast a man under a necessity of sinning: for suppose he hath not the gift of continency, it is the express will of God that he should marry for his relief; yet on this supposition, he sins if he does so, and in that he sins if he doth not so.

Thirdly, It is unlawful; for if the bond of marriage abide, the relation still continues. This relation is the foundation of all mutual duties; and whilst all that continues, none can dispense with or prohibit from the performance of those duties. If a woman do continue in the relation of a wife to a man, she may claim the duties of marriage from him. Separation there may be by consent for a season, or upon other occasions, that may hinder the actual discharge of conjugal duties; but to make an obligation unto such duties void, whilst the relation doth continue, is against the law of nature and the law of God. This divorce, therefore, supposing the relation of man and wife between any, and no mutual duty thence to arise, is unlawful.

Fourthly, The light of nature never directed to this kind of divorce. Marriage is an ordinance of the law of nature; but in the light and reason thereof there is no intimation of any such practice. It still directed that they who might justly put away their wives might marry others. Hence some, as the ancient Grecians, and the Romans afterward, allowed the husband to kill the adulteress. This among the Romans was changed "lege Julia," but the offence [was] still made capital. In the room hereof, afterward, divorce took place purposely to give the innocent person liberty of marriage. So that this kind of divorce is but a fiction.

The first opinion, therefore, is according to truth; for,—

First, That which dissolves the form of marriage and destroys all the forms of marriage doth dissolve the bond of marriage; for take away the form and end of any moral relation, and the relation itself ceaseth. But this is done by adultery, and a divorce ensuing thereon. For the form of marriage consisteth in this, that two become "one flesh," Gen. ii. 24; Matt. xix. 6;—but this is dissolved by adultery; for the adulteress becometh one flesh with the adulterer, 1 Cor. vi. 16, and no longer one flesh in individual society with her husband, and so it absolutely breaks the bond or covenant of marriage. And how can men contend that is a bond which is absolutely broken, or fancy a "vinculum" that doth not bind? and that it absolutely destroys all the forms of marriage will be granted. It therefore dissolves the bond of marriage itself.

Secondly, If the innocent party upon a divorce be not set at liberty, then,—

1. He is deprived of his right by the sin of another; which is against the law of nature;—and so every wicked woman hath it in her power to deprive her husband of his natural right.

2. The divorce in case of adultery, pointed by our Saviour to the innocent person to make use of, is, as all confess, for his liberty, advantage, and relief. But on supposition that he may not marry, it would prove a snare and a yoke unto him; for if hereon he hath not the gift of continency, he is exposed to sin and judgment.

Thirdly, Our blessed Saviour gives express direction in the case, Matt. xix. 9, "Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery." Hence it is evident, and is the plain sense of the words, that he who putteth away his wife for fornication and marrieth another doth not commit adultery. Therefore the bond of marriage in that case is dissolved, and the person that put away his wife is at liberty to marry. While he denies putting away and marrying again for every cause, the exception of fornication allows both putting away and marrying again in that case; for an exception always affirms the contrary unto what is denied in the rule whereunto it is an exception, or denies what is affirmed in it in the case comprised in the exception; for every exception is a particular proposition contradictory to the general rule, so that when the one is affirmative, the other is negative, and on the contrary. The rule here in general is affirmative: He that putteth away his wife and marries another committeth adultery. The exception is negative: But he that putteth away his wife for fornication and marrieth another doth not commit adultery. Or they may be otherwise conceived, so that the general rule shall be negative, and the exception affirmative: It is not lawful to put away a wife and marry another; it is adultery. Then the exception is: It is lawful for a man to put away his wife for fornication, and marry another. And this is the nature of all such exceptions, as I could manifest in instances of all sorts.

It is to no purpose to except that the other evangelists (Mark x. 11, 12, Luke xvi. 18) do not express the exception insisted on; for,—

1. It is twice used by Matthew, chap. v. 32, and chap. xix. 9, and therefore was assuredly used by our Saviour.

2. It is a rule owned by all, that where the same thing is reported by several evangelists, the briefer, short, more imperfect expressions, are to be measured and interpreted by the fuller and larger. And every general rule in any place is to be limited by an exception annexed unto it in any one place whatever; and there is scarce any general rule but admitteth of an exception.

It is more vain to answer that our Saviour speaketh with respect unto the Jews only, and what was or was not allowed among them; for,—

1. In this answer he reduces things to the law of creation and their primitive institution. He declares what was the law of marriage and the nature of that relation antecedent to the law and institution of Moses; and so, reducing things to the law of nature, gives a rule directive to all mankind in this matter.

2. The Pharisees inquired of our Saviour about such a divorce as was absolute, and gave liberty of marriage after it; for they never heard of any other. The pretended separation "a mensa et thoro" only was never heard of in the old testament. Now, if our Saviour doth not answer concerning the same divorce about which they inquired, but another which they knew nothing of, he doth not answer them, but delude them;—they ask after one thing, and he answers another in nothing to their purpose. But this is not to be admitted; it were blasphemy to imagine it. Wherefore, denying the causes of divorce which they allowed, and asserting fornication to be a just cause thereof, he allows, in that case, of that divorce which they inquired about, which was absolute and from the bond of marriage.

Again: the apostle Paul expressly sets the party at liberty to marry who is maliciously and obstinately deserted, affirming that the Christian religion doth not prejudice the natural right and privilege of men in such cases: 1 Cor. vii. 15, "If the unbelieving depart, let him depart. A brother or a sister is not under bondage in such cases." If a person obstinately depart, on pretence of religion or otherwise, and will no more cohabit with a husband or wife, it is known that, by the law of nature and the usage of all nations, the deserted party, because, without his or her default, all the ends of marriage are frustrated, is at liberty to marry. But it may be it is not so among Christians. What shall a brother or a sister that is a Christian do in this case, who is so departed from? Saith the apostle, "They are not in bondage, they are free,—at liberty to marry again."

This is the constant doctrine of all protestant churches in the world; and it hath had place in the government of these nations, for Queen Elizabeth was born during the life of Queen Katharine, from whom her father was divorced.

OF INFANT BAPTISM AND DIPPING.

OF INFANT BAPTISM.

I. The question is not whether professing believers, Jews or Gentiles, not baptized in their infancy, ought to be baptized; for this is by all confessed.

II. Neither is it whether, in such persons, the profession of saving faith and repentance ought not to go before baptism. This we plead for beyond what is the common practice of those who oppose us.

Wherefore, testimonies produced out of authors, ancient or modern, to confirm these things, which consist with the doctrine of infant baptism, are mere tergiversations, that belong not to this cause at all; and so are all arguments produced unto that end out of the Scriptures.

III. The question is not whether all infants are to be baptized or not; for, according to the will of God, some are not to be baptized, even such whose parents are strangers from the covenant. But hence it will follow that some are to be baptized, seeing an exception confirms both rule and right.

IV. The question is only concerning the children or infant seed of professing believers who are themselves baptized. And,—

First, They by whom this is denied can produce no testimony of Scripture wherein their negation is formally or in terms included, nor any one asserting what is inconsistent with the affirmative; for it is weak beneath consideration to suppose that the requiring of the baptism of believers is inconsistent with that of their seed. But this is to be required of them who oppose infant baptism, that they produce such a testimony.

Secondly, No instance can be given from the Old or New Testament since the days of Abraham, none from the approved practice of the primitive church, of any person or persons born of professing, believing parents, who were themselves made partakers of the initial seal of the covenant, being then in infancy and designed to be brought up in the knowledge of God, who were not made partakers with them of the same sign and seal of the covenant.

Thirdly, A spiritual privilege once granted by God unto any cannot be changed, disannulled, or abrogated, without an especial divine

revocation of it, or the substitution of a greater privilege and mercy in the room of it; for,—

1. Who shall disannul what God hath granted? What he hath put together who shall put asunder? To abolish or take away any grant of privilege made by him to the church, without his own express revocation of it, is to deny his sovereign authority.

2. To say a privilege so granted may be revoked, even by God himself, without the substitution of a greater privilege and mercy in the room of it, is contrary to the goodness of God, his love and care unto his church, [and] contrary to his constant course of proceeding with it from the foundation of the world, wherein he went on in the enlargement and increase of its privileges until the coming of Christ. And to suppose it under the gospel is contrary to all his promises, the honour of Christ, and a multitude of express testimonies of Scripture.

Thus was it with the privileges of the temple and the worship of it granted to the Jews; they were not, they could not be, taken away without an express revocation, and the substitution of a more glorious spiritual temple and worship in their room.

But now the spiritual privilege of a right unto and a participation of the initial seal of the covenant was granted by God unto the infant seed of Abraham, Gen. xvii. 10, 12.

This grant, therefore, must stand firm for ever, unless men can prove or produce,—

1. An express revocation of it by God himself; which none can do either directly or indirectly, in terms or any pretence of consequence.

2. An instance of a greater privilege or mercy granted unto them in the room of it; which they do not once pretend unto, but leave the seed of believers, whilst in their infant state, in the same condition with those of pagans and infidels; expressly contrary to God's covenant.

All this contest, therefore, is to deprive the children of believers of a privilege once granted to them by God, never revoked, as to the substance of it, assigning nothing in its room; which is contrary to the goodness, love, and covenant of God, especially derogatory to the honour of Jesus Christ and the gospel.

Fourthly, They that have the thing signified have right unto the sign of it, or those who are partakers of the grace of baptism have a right to the administration of it: so Acts x. 47.

But the children of believers are all of them capable of the grace signified in baptism, and some of them are certainly partakers of it, namely, such as die in their infancy (which is all that can be said of professors): therefore they may and ought to be baptized. For,—

1. Infants are made for and are capable of eternal glory or misery, and must fall, dying infants, into one of these estates for ever.

2. All infants are born in a state of sin, wherein they are spiritually dead and under the curse.

3. Unless they are regenerated or born again, they must all perish inevitably, John iii. 3. Their regeneration is the grace whereof baptism is a sign or token. Wherever this is, there baptism ought to be administered.

Fifthly, God having appointed baptism as the sign and seal of regeneration, unto whom he denies it, he denies the grace signified by it. Why is it the will of God that unbelievers and impenitent sinners should not be baptized? It is because, not granting them the grace, he will not grant them the sign. If, therefore, God denies the sign unto the infant seed of believers, it must be because he denies them the grace of it; and then all the children of believing parents dying in their infancy must, without hope, be eternally damned. I do not say that all must be so who are not baptized, but all must be so whom God would have not baptized.

But this is contrary to the goodness and law [love?] of God, the nature and promises of the covenant, the testimony of Christ reckoning them to the kingdom of God, the faith of godly parents, and the belief of the church in all ages.

It follows hence unavoidably that infants who die in their infancy have the grace of regeneration, and consequently as good a right unto baptism as believers themselves.

Sixthly, All children in their infancy are reckoned unto the covenant of their parents, by virtue of the law of their creation.

For they are all made capable of eternal rewards and punishments, as hath been declared.

But in their own persons they are not capable of doing good or evil.

It is therefore contrary to the justice of God, and the law of the creation of human kind, wherein many die before they can discern between their right hand and their left, to deal with infants any otherwise but in and according to the covenant of their parents; and that he doth so, see Rom. v. 14.

Hence I argue,—

Those who, by God's appointment, and by virtue of the law of their creation, are, and must of necessity be, included in the covenant of their parents, have the same right with them unto the privileges of that covenant, no express exception being put in against them. This right it is in the power of none to deprive them of, unless they can change the law of their creation.

Thus it is with the children of believers with respect unto the

covenant of their parents, whence alone they are said to be holy, 1 Cor. vii. 14.

Seventhly, Christ is "the messenger of the covenant," Mal. iii. 1, —that is, of the covenant of God made with Abraham; and he was the "minister of the circumcision for the truth of God, to confirm the promises made unto the fathers," Rom. xv. 8. This covenant was, that he would be "a God unto Abraham and to his seed."

Now if this be not so under the new testament, then was not Christ a faithful messenger, nor did confirm the truth of God in his promises.

This argument alone will bear the weight of the whole cause against all objections; for,—

1. Children are still in the same covenant with their parents, or the truth of the promises of God to the fathers was not confirmed by Christ.

2. The right unto the covenant, and interest in its promises, wherever it be, gives right unto the administration of its initial seal, that is, to baptism, as Peter expressly declares, Acts ii. 38, 39. Wherefore,—

The right of the infant seed of believers unto baptism, as the initial seal of the covenant, stands on the foundation of the faithfulness of Christ as the messenger of the covenant, and minister of God for the confirmation of the truth of his promises.

In brief, a participation of the seal of the covenant is a spiritual blessing. This the seed of believers was once solemnly invested in by God himself. This privilege he hath nowhere revoked, though he hath changed the outward sign; nor hath he granted unto our children any privilege or mercy in lieu of it now under the gospel, when all grace and privileges are enlarged to the utmost. His covenant promises concerning them, which are multiplied, were confirmed by Christ as a true messenger and minister; he gives the grace of baptism unto many of them, especially those that die in their infancy, owns children to belong unto his kingdom, esteems them disciples, appoints households to be baptized without exception. And who shall now rise up, and withhold water from them?

This argument may be thus further cleared and improved:—

Christ is "the messenger of the covenant," Mal. iii. 1,—that is, the covenant of God with Abraham, Gen. xvii. 7; for,—

1. That covenant was with and unto Christ mystical, Gal. iii. 16; and he was the messenger of no covenant but that which was made with himself and his members.

2. He was sent, or was God's messenger, to perform and accomplish the covenant and oath made with Abraham, Luke i. 72, 73.

3. The end of his message and of his coming was, that those to whom he was sent might be "blessed with faithful Abraham," or that

"the blessing of Abraham," promised in the covenant, "might come upon them," Gal. iii. 9, 14.

To deny this, overthrows the whole relation between the old testament and the new, the veracity of God in his promises, and all the properties of the covenant of grace, mentioned 2 Sam. xxiii. 5.

It was not the covenant of works, neither originally nor essentially, nor the covenant in its legal administration; for he confirmed and sealed that covenant whereof he was the messenger, but these he abolished.

Let it be named what covenant he was the messenger of, if not of this. Occasional additions of temporal promises do not in the least alter the nature of the covenant.

Herein he was the "minister of the circumcision for the truth of God, to confirm the promises made unto the fathers," Rom. xv. 8; that is, undeniably, the covenant made with Abraham, enlarged and explained by following promises. This covenant was, that God would be "a God unto Abraham and to his seed;" which God himself explains to be his infant seed, Gen. xvii. 12,—that is, the infant seed of every one of his posterity who should lay hold on and avouch that covenant as Abraham did, and not else. This the whole church did solemnly for themselves and their posterity; whereon the covenant was confirmed and sealed to them all, Exod. xxiv. 7, 8. And every one was bound to do the same in his own person; which if he did not, he was to be cut off from the congregation, whereby he forfeited all privileges unto himself and his seed.

The covenant, therefore, was not granted in its administrations unto the carnal seed of Abraham as such, but unto his covenanted seed, those who entered into it and professedly stood to its terms.

And the promises made unto the fathers were, that their infant seed, their buds and offspring, should have an equal share in the covenant with them, Isa. xxii. 24, xliv. 3, lxi. 9. "They are the seed of the blessed of the LORD, and their offspring with them," chap. lxv. 23. Not only themselves, who are the believing, professing seed of those who were blessed of the Lord, by a participation of the covenant, Gal. iii. 9, but their offspring also, their buds, their tender little ones, are in the same covenant with them.

To deny, therefore, that the children of believing, professing parents, who have avouched God's covenant, as the church of Israel did, Exod. xxiv. 7, 8, have the same right and interest with their parents in the covenant, is plainly to deny the fidelity of Christ in the discharge of his office.

It may be it will be said, that although children have a right to the covenant, or do belong unto it, yet they have no right to the initial seal of it. This will not suffice; for,—

1. If they have any interest in it, it is either in its grace or in its administration. If they have the former, they have the latter also, as shall be proved at any time. If they have neither, they have no interest in it;—then the truth of the promises of God made unto the fathers was not confirmed by Christ.

2. That unto whom the covenant or promise doth belong, to them belongs the administration of the initial seal of it, is expressly declared by the apostle, Acts ii. 38, 39, be they who they will.

3. The truth of God's promises is not confirmed if the sign and seal of them be denied; for that whereon they believed that God was a God unto their seed as well as unto themselves was this, that he granted the token of the covenant unto their seed as well as unto themselves. If this be taken away by Christ, their faith is overthrown, and the promise itself is not confirmed but weakened, as to the virtue it hath to beget faith and obedience.

Eighthly, Particular testimonies may be pleaded and vindicated, if need be, and the practice of the primitive church.[1]

A VINDICATION OF TWO PASSAGES IN IRENÆUS AGAINST THE EXCEPTIONS OF MR TOMBS.

The passages are these:—

Adversus Hæreses, lib. ii. cap. xxii. sect. 4: "Magister ergo existens, magistri quoque habebat ætatem, non reprobans nec supergrediens hominem, neque solvens suam legem in se humani generis, sed omnem ætatem sanctificans per illam quæ ad ipsum erat similitudinem. Omnes enim venit per semetipsum salvare, omnes, inquam, qui per eum renascuntur in Deum, infantes, et parvulos, et pueros, et juvenes, et seniores. Ideo per omnem venit ætatem; et infantibus infans factus, sanctificans infantes; in parvulis, parvulus, sanctificans hanc ipsam habentes ætatem, simul et exemplum illis pietatis effectus, et justitiæ et subjectionis; in juvenibus juvenis, exemplum juvenibus fiens, et sanctificans Domino; sic et senior in senioribus, ut sit perfectus magister in omnibus, non solum secundum expositionem veritatis, sed et secundum ætatem sanctificans simul et seniores, exemplum ipsis quoque fiens; deinde et usque ad mortem pervenit, ut sit primogenitus ex mortuis, ipse primatum tenens in omnibus, princeps vitæ, prior omnium, et præcedens omnes."

Lib. i. cap. xviii.: "Ὅσοι γάρ εἰσι ταύτης τῆς γνώμης μυσταγωγοί, τοσαῦται καὶ ἀπολυτρώσεις. Ὅτι μὲν εἰς ἐξάρνησιν τοῦ βαπτίσματος τῆς εἰς Θεὸν

[1] See also Dr Owen on the Hebrews, vol. i. Exercitation the sixth, and vol. ii. p. 256; in which place he gives further light into this truth of infant baptism. [This note is appended by the editors of the folio edition of Owen's Sermons and Tracts, published in 1721. The second passage referred to occurs in the exposition of chap. iv. ver. 9.—Ed.]

ἀναγεννήσεως, καὶ πάσης τῆς πίστεως ἀπόθεσιν ὑποβέβληται τὸ εἶδος τοῦ ὑπὸ τοῦ σατανᾶ, ἐλέγχοντες αὐτοὺς ἀπαγγελοῦμεν ἐν τῷ προσήκοντι τόπῳ.

Mr Tombs tells us, "This proves not infant baptism, because though it be granted that in Justin Martyr, and others of the ancients, to be regenerated is to be baptized, yet it doth not appear that Irenæus meant it so in this place, unless it were proved it is so only meant by him and the ancients. Nor doth Irenæus, lib. i. cap. xviii., term baptism 'regeneration;' but saith thus, 'To the denying of baptism of that regeneration which is unto God.' But that indeed the word 'renascuntur,' 'are born again,' is not meant of baptism is proved from the words and the scope of them; for,—

"1. The words are, 'Per eum renascuntur,' 'By him,' that is, Christ, 'are born again.' And it is clear, from the scope of the speech about the fulness of his age, as a perfect master, that 'By him' notes his person according to his human nature. Now, if then, 'By him are born again,' be as much as 'By him are baptized,' this should be Irenæus' assertion, that by Christ himself, in his human body, infants, and little ones, and boys, and young men, and elder men, are baptized unto God. But this speech is most manifestly false; for neither did Christ baptize any at all in his own person, (John iv. 1, 2, 'Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples,') nor did the disciples baptize any infant at all, as may be gathered from the whole New Testament.

"2. The word which Irenæus expresseth whereby persons are born again to God by Christ is applied to the example of his age, as the words and scope show. But he was not in his age an example of every age by his baptism, as if he did by it sanctify every age, for then he should have been baptized in every age; but in respect of the holiness of his human nature, which did remain in each age, and so exemplarily sanctify each age to God, so as that there was no age but was capable of holiness by conformity to his example.

"3. Irenæus' words are, 'Omnes enim venit per semetipsum salvare, omnes, inquam, qui per eum renascuntur in Deum, infantes, et parvulos,' etc. Now, if the meaning were, that Christ came to save all that were baptized by him or by his appointment, then he came to save Simon Magus, or whoever are or have been baptized rightly. But in that sense the proposition is most palpably false; and therefore that sense is not to be attributed to his words.

"4. Christ is by Irenæus said to sanctify as 'a perfect master,—not only according to the exposition of truth, but also as an example to them of piety, justice, and subjection.' But this is to be understood not in respect of his baptism only, but his whole life, in which he was an example; even as an infant, for then he did willingly empty himself,—'Took upon him the form of a servant,' etc., Phil. ii. 7, 8.

"By all which reasons," saith Mr Tombs, "I presume the readers who are willing to see truth will perceive this passage of Irenæus to be wrested by Pedobaptists against its meaning, to prove a use of pedobaptism in his time."

Ans. 1. The phrase of "Renascuntur in Deum" is so constantly used by the ancients for baptism that it may be referred to the conscience of Mr Tombs or any one who hath been conversant in their writings, whether they would not have judged and granted that it was here intended, if mention had not been made of infants and little ones. The ensuing exceptions, therefore, are an endeavour to stifle light in favour of an opinion;—which is not unusual with some.

2. "Per eum" is the same with "Per semetipsum," in the words immediately foregoing; that is, "By himself," in his mediation, grace, and ordinances. And to suppose that if baptism be intended, he must baptize them in his own person, is a mere cavil; for all that are born to God by baptism to this day are so by him.

3. The words, Εἰς ἐξάρνησιν τοῦ βαπτίσματος τῆς εἰς Θεὸν ἀναγεννήσεως, "Unto the denial of the baptism of regeneration unto God," do plainly declare that by "renascuntur" he intends the baptism of regeneration, as being the means and pledge of it, in allusion to that of the apostle, Λούτρον παλιγγενεσίας, Tit. iii. 5.

4. It is remarkable in the words of Irenæus, that in expressing the way and means of the renascency of infants, he mentions nothing of the example of Christ, which he adds unto that of all other ages.

5. The example of Christ is mentioned as one outward means of the regeneration of them who were capable of its use and improvement. Of his being an example of baptism nothing is spoken. Nor was Christ in his own person an example of regeneration unto any; for as he was not baptized in all ages, so he was never regenerated in any, for he needed no regeneration.

6. It is well that it is so positively granted that Christ doth sanctify infants; which, seeing he doth not do so to all universally, must be those of believing parents; which is enough to end this controversy.

7. The meaning of Irenæus is no more but that Christ, passing through all ages, evidenced his design to exclude no age, to communicate his grace unto all sorts and ages; and he mentioneth old men, because his judgment was that Christ was fifty years old when he died.

8. It was the constant opinion of the ancients that Christ came to save all that were baptized; not intending his purpose and intention with respect unto individuals, but his approbation of the state of baptism, and his grant of the means of grace.

OF DIPPING.

Βάπτω, used in these scriptures, Luke xvi. 24, John xiii. 26, Rev. xix. 13, we translate "to dip." It is only "to touch one part of the body." That of Rev. xix. 13 is better rendered, "stained by sprinkling."

In other authors it is "tingo, immergo, lavo," or "abluo;" but in no other author ever signifies "to dip," but only in order to washing, or as the means of washing. It is nowhere used with respect unto the ordinance of baptism.

The Hebrew word, טָבַל, is rendered by the LXX., Gen. xxxvii. 31, by μολύνω, "to stain by sprinkling" or otherwise; mostly by βάπτω. 2 Kings v. 14 they render it by βαπτίζω, and nowhere else. In verse 10, Elisha commands Naaman "to wash;" therefore that in verse 14 is that "he washed." Exod. xii. 22 is, to put the top of the hyssop into blood, to sprinkle it; 1 Sam. xiv. 27, is to take a little honey with the top of a rod. In neither place can dipping or plunging be intended. Lev. iv. 6, 17, ix. 9, and in other places, it is only to touch the blood, so as to sprinkle it.

Βαπτίζω signifies "to wash," and instances out of all authors may be given,—Suidas, Hesychius, Julius Pollux, Phavorinus, and Eustathius.

It is first used in the Scripture, Mark i. 8, John i. 33, and to the same purpose, Acts i. 5. In every place it either signifies "to pour," or the expression is equivocal. "I baptize you with water, but he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost;" which is the accomplishment of that promise, that the Holy Ghost should be poured on them.

For the other places, Mark vii. 3, 4, νίπτω and βαπτίζω are plainly the same, both "to wash." Luke xi. 38 is the same with Mark vii. 3. No one instance can be given in the Scripture wherein βαπτίζω doth necessarily signify either "to dip" or "plunge."

Βαπτίζω may be considered either as to its original, natural sense, or as to its mystical use in the ordinance.

This distinction must be observed concerning many other words in the New Testament, as ἐκκλησία, χειροτονία, and others, which have a peculiar sense in their mystical use.

In this sense, as it expresseth baptism, it denotes "to wash" only, and not "to dip" at all: for so it is expounded, Tit. iii. 5; Eph. v. 26; Heb. x. 22; 1 Pet. iii. 21. And it signifies that communication of the Spirit which is expressed by "pouring out" and "sprinkling," Ezek. xxxvi. 25, and expresseth our being washed in the blood of Christ, Tit. ii. 14; Heb. ix. 14, 19, 23.

Wherefore, in this sense, as the word is applied unto the ordi-

nance, the sense of dipping is utterly excluded. And though as a mere external mode it may be used, provided the person dipped be naked, yet to urge it as necessary overthrows the nature of the sacrament.

For the original and natural signification of it, it signifies "to dip, to plunge, to dye, to wash, to cleanse."

But I say,—1. It doth not signify properly "to dip" or "plunge," for that in Greek is ἐμβάπτω and ἐμβαπτίζω. 2. It nowhere signifies "to dip," but as a mode of and in order to washing. 3. It signifies the "dipping" of a finger, or the least touch of the water, and not plunging the whole. 4. It signifies "to wash," also, in all good authors.

I have not all those quoted to the contrary. In the quotations of them whom I have, if it be intended that they say it signifies "to dip," and not "to wash" or "to dip" only, there is neither truth nor honesty in them by whom they are quoted.

Scapula is one, a common book, and he gives it the sense of "lavo, abluo," "to wash," and "wash away."

Stephanus is another, and he expressly, in sundry places, assigns "lavo" and "abluo" to be also the sense of it.

Aquinas is for dipping of children, provided it be done three times, in honour of the Trinity; but he maintains pouring or sprinkling to be lawful also, affirming that Laurentius, who lived about the time 250, so practised. But he meddles not with the sense of the word, as being too wise to speak of that which he understood not; for he knew no Greek.

In Suidas, the great treasury of the Greek tongue, it is rendered by "madefacio, lavo, abluo, purgo, mundo."

The places in the other authors being not quoted, I cannot give an account of what they say. I have searched some of them in every place wherein they mention baptism, and find no one word to the purpose. I must say, and will make it good, that no honest man who understands the Greek tongue can deny the word to signify "to wash," as well as "to dip."

It must not be denied but that in the primitive times they did use to baptize both grown persons and children oftentimes by dipping, but they affirmed it necessary to dip them stark naked, and that three times; but not one ever denied pouring water to be lawful.

The apostle, Rom. vi. 3–5, is dehorting from sin, exhorting to holiness and new obedience, and gives this argument from the necessity of it and our ability for it,—both taken from our initiation into the virtue of the death and life of Christ, expressed in our baptism,—that by virtue of the death and burial of Christ we should be dead unto sin, sin being slain thereby, and by virtue of the resurrec-

tion of Christ we should be quickened unto newness of life; as Peter declares, 1 Pet. iii. 21. Our being "buried with him," and our being "planted together in the likeness of his death" and "in the likeness of his resurrection," Rom. vi. 4, 5, is the same with "our old man being crucified with him," and the "destroying of the body of sin," verse 6, and our being raised from the dead with him; which is all that is intended in the place.

There is not one word nor one expression that mentions any resemblance between dipping under water and the death and burial of Christ, nor one word that mentions a resemblance between our rising out of the water and the resurrection of Christ. Our being "buried with him by baptism into death," verse 4, is our being "planted together in the likeness of his death," verse 5. Our being "planted together in the likeness of his death" is not our being dipped under water, but "the crucifying of the old man," verse 6. Our being "raised up with Christ from the dead" is not our rising from under the water, but our "walking in newness of life," verse 4, by virtue of the resurrection of Christ, 1 Pet. iii. 21.

That baptism is not a sign of the death, burial, and resurrection of Christ, is clear from hence, because an instituted sign is a sign of gospel grace participated, or to be participated. If dipping be a sign of the burial of Christ, it is not a sign of a gospel grace participated; for it may be where there is none, nor any exhibited.

For the major: If all gospel ordinances are signs and expressions of the communication of the grace of Christ, then baptism is so; but this is the end of all gospel ordinances, or else they have some other end, or are vain and empty shows.

The same individual sign cannot be instituted to signify things of several natures; but the outward burial of Christ, and a participation of the virtue of Christ's death and burial, are things of a diverse nature, and therefore are not signified by one sign.

That interpretation which would enervate the apostle's argument and design, our comfort and duty, is not to be admitted; but this interpretation, that baptism is mentioned here as the sign of Christ's burial, would enervate the apostle's argument and design, our comfort and duty: and therefore it is not to be admitted.

The minor is thus proved: The argument and design of the apostle, as was before declared, is to exhort and encourage unto mortification of sin and new obedience, by virtue of power received from the death and life of Christ, whereof a pledge is given us in our baptism. But this is taken away by this interpretation; for we may be so buried with Christ and planted into the death of Christ by dipping, and yet have no power derived from Christ for the crucifying of sin and for the quickening of us to obedience.

REFLECTIONS

ON

A SLANDEROUS LIBEL AGAINST DR OWEN;

IN

A LETTER TO SIR THOMAS OVERBURY.

PREFATORY NOTE.

In vol. xv., p. 446. a reference will be found to a pamphlet entitled "A Letter to a Friend concerning some of Dr Owen's Principles and Practices." It was written against Dr Owen's "Short Catechism," by the Rev. George Vernon, a rector in Gloucestershire, who had received his education at Oxford University while Owen presided over it. It was full of calumnious charges of blasphemy and perjury. Our author, under the form of a Letter to Sir Thomas Overbury, replies to it in vehement terms,—terms perhaps more vehement than the absurdity of the charges at all required. In those days of slow communication, however, railing accusations, especially coming from one in the position of a rector, were fitted to work considerable mischief; and there was such a lack of all the decencies of controversy in Vernon's lucubrations that he deserved a sharp reprimand. In the hands of Owen, he was but a fly broken on the wheel.

While he was vice-chancellor of Oxford, a story was raised against Owen, that he had spoken contemptuously of the Lord's Prayer, and that he had put on his hat when it was on some occasion repeated at the close of the services in Christ Church. The slander was widely propagated, and Owen published a denial of the story, in English and French, in 1655. Meric Casaubon, nevertheless, published in 1660 a work in defence of the Lord's Prayer, and against their "ungrounded zeal who are so strict for the observation of the Lord's Day and make so light of the Lord's Prayer." Vernon, too, revived the slander, and Owen again gives it an emphatic contradiction in the following Letter; and yet Anthony Wood persists in it!—Ed.

REFLECTIONS ON A SLANDEROUS LIBEL.

Sir,

It is upon your desire, and not in any compliance with my own judgment or inclination, that I have taken a little consideration of a late slanderous libel published against me. I have learned, I bless God, to bear and pass by such reproaches without much trouble to myself or giving the least unto others. My mind and conscience are not at all concerned in them; and so far as my reputation seems to be so, I am very willing to let it go, for I cannot entertain a valuation of their good opinion whose minds are capable of an impression from such virulent calumnies. Besides, I know that there is nothing absolutely new in these things under the sun. Others also have met with the like entertainment in the world in all ages; whose names I shall not mention, to avoid the envy in comparing myself with them. I acknowledge that it is a dictate of the law of nature, that where others do us open wrong, we should do ourselves right so far as we lawfully may; but I know also that it is in the power of every one to forego the prosecution of his own right and the vindication of himself, if thereby there arise no detriment unto others. That which alone in this case may be feared is, lest offence should be taken against my person to the disadvantage of other endeavours wherein I desire to be useful in the world.

But against this also I have the highest security, from that indignation and contempt wherewith this libel is entertained by all persons of ingenuity and sobriety. Not out of any respect, therefore, to myself or my own name (things of little or no consideration in or to the world), nor out of a desire that this paper should ever pass farther than to your own hand and thence to the fire, but to give you some account of this pamphlet, whose author it seems is known unto you, I have both perused it and made some short reflections upon it, which I have herewith sent unto you.

The whole design of this discourse is, "per fas et nefas," to endeavour the defamation of a person who, to his knowledge, never saw the author of it, and is fully assured never gave him the least provocation unto any such attempt; for when I am told who he is, I am as wise and knowing unto all his concernments as I was before.

And yet it is not only my reputation, but, considering my present state and condition, with the nature of his libellous aspersions, my further outward trouble in the world, that he aimeth at; from which he seemeth to be much displeased that I am secured by the righteousness of the government and laws under which I live. Now, however he pleased himself in this attempt, yet there is no man but may give as tolerable an account, by the law of God, the customs of civilized nations, and in the estimation of wise and honest men, of robbing persons on the highway and spoiling them of their goods, as he can do of this undertaking. It is true, some others have of late dealt not much otherwise with me; wherein how far they have satisfied themselves and others time will discover. But yet, according to the present custom and manner of men, they may give some tolerable pretence to what they have done; for they sufficiently declare that they were provoked by me,—though no such thing was intended,—and it is abundantly manifest that they had no other way left them to give countenance unto some fond imaginations, which they have unadvisedly published, but by petulant reviling of him by whom they thought they were detected. And such things have not been unfrequent in the world. But as for this author, one wholly unknown to me, without the compass of any pretence of the least provocation from me, to accommodate the lusts and revenges of others with that unruly evil, a mercenary tongue, full of deadly poison, without the management of any difference, real or pretended, merely to calumniate and load me with false aspersions (as in the issue they will prove), is an instance of such a depraved disposition of mind, such a worthless baseness of soul, such a neglect of all rules of morality and principles of human conversation, such a contempt of Scripture precepts innumerable, as, it may be, can scarcely be paralleled in an age amongst the vilest of men. Something, I confess, of this nature is directed unto in the casuistical divinity or modern policy of the Jesuits: for they have declared it lawful to reproach and calumniate any one who hath done them an injury, or otherwise reflected on the honour of their society; and notable instances of their management of this principle are given us by the ingenious discoverer of their mysteries. But they always require a previous injury or provocation to justify themselves in this filthy kind of revenge. And hereby is our author freed from the suspicion of having been influenced by their suggestions; for he hath gone in a way whereon they never attempted to set a foot before him, and, scorning a villany that hath a precedent, he seems to design himself an example in the art of sycophantry. However, the same author hath directed men unto the best way of returning an answer unto false and calumnious accusations, whatever be their occasion; for he tells us that Valerianus

Magnus, an honest Capuchin friar, being so dealt withal by a Jesuit, made not any defence of his own innocency any further than by adjoining unto all the instances of his charge, "Mentiris impudentissime"! And this you will immediately find to be the substance of that answer which this book deserves; for, setting aside things relating to the former public troubles and disorders in these nations from the venom of all reflections,—from which I am secured by the government, law, and interest of the kingdom, all which in this revival of them are notoriously abused and trampled on,—and there is no one thing charged on me in the whole libel but that, either in the matter or manner of its relation, is notoriously false. The task, I acknowledge, of making this discovery would be grievous and irksome unto me, but that I must not account any thing so which may fall out amongst men in the world, and do remember him who, after he had done some public services, whereof others had the advantage, was forced to defend his own house against thieves and robbers.

The whole discourse is a railing accusation, such as the angel durst not bring against the devil, but such as hath many characters and lineaments upon it of him who was a false accuser and murderer from the beginning; neither is it capable of a distribution into any other parts but those of railing and false accusations. And for the first, seeing he hath manifested his propensity unto it and delight in it, he shall by me be left to the possession of that honour and reputation which he hath acquired thereby. Besides, his way of managery hath rendered it of no consideration: for had it been condited to the present gust of the age, by language, wit, or drollery, it might have found some entertainment in the world; but downright dirty railing is beneath the genius of the times, and by common consent condemned to the bear-garden and Billingsgate. His charges and accusations,—wherein, doubtless, he placed his principal hopes of success, though I much question whether he knew what he aimed at in particular or no,—may in so many instances be called over as to discover unto you with what little regard to Christianity, truth, or honesty, they have been forged and managed by him.

I shall begin with what he calls my *practices*, and then proceed to the *principles* he mentions; which is the best order his confused rhapsody of slanders can be reduced unto, though inverting that which he projected in his title.

I. One of the first charges I meet withal, upon the first head, is page 9, that I "was one of them who promised Cromwell his life upon his last sickness, and assured him that his days should be prolonged." This, I confess, he manageth somewhat faintly and dubiously; the reason whereof I cannot guess at, it being as true as those other tales in the report whereof he pretends to more confidence.

And I have no answer to return but that of the friar before mentioned,—"Mentitur impudentissime;" for I saw him not in his sickness, nor in some long time before. Of the same nature is what he affirms, p. 28, of my being the instrument in "the ruin of his son" Richard; with whose setting up and pulling down I had no more to do than himself. And such are the reasons which he gives for that which never was; for the things he instanceth in were my own choice, against all importunities to the contrary! so that the same answer must be returned again,—"Mentitur impudentissime." Page 10, he charges me that, in writing against the Papists, I reflected upon the authority of the king, as to his power in matters of religion; which he repeats again, p. 34, and calls it "A covert undermining of the just authority of the king." Still the same answer is all that can be given. His majesty's supremacy, as declared and established by law, is asserted and proved in the book he intends, p. 404–406 [vol. xiv. p. 378–392]; nor is there any word in the places quoted by him in his margin that will give the least countenance to this false calumny. Besides, the book was approved by authority, and that by persons of another manner of judgment and learning than this pitiful scribbler, who are all here defamed by him. Page 12, he chargeth me with countenancing an accusation against the reverend Bishop of Chester, then warden of Wadham College; which is a known lie,—and such I believe the bishop, if he be asked, will attest it to be. And so, p. 14, he says, I received a commission from Oliver to carry "gladium ferri;" but "mentitur impudentissime," for I never received commission from any man or company of men in this world, nor to my remembrance did I ever wear a sword in my life. His whole 34th page, had there been any thing of wit or ingenuity in fiction in it, I should have suspected to have been borrowed from Lucian's "Vera Historia," concerning which he affirmed, that he wrote that which he had never seen, nor heard, nor did any one declare unto him; for it is only a confused heap of malicious lies, which all that read and know laugh at with scorn. Such likewise is the ridiculous story he tells, p. 66, of my ordering things so that members of parliament should have a book, which he calls mine, laid in their lodgings by unknown hands; whereof there is not any thing, in substance or circumstance, that can lay the least pretence to truth, but it is an entire part of his industrious attempt to carry the whetstone.[1] The same must be said concerning what he reports of passages between me and the then lord chancellor; which as I have good witness to prove the mistake that fell out between us not to have been occasioned by me, so I much question whether this author was informed of the untruths he reports by Doctor Barlow,

[1] "Whetstone," an ancient reward for the person who told the greatest lie.—Ed.

or whether ever he gave him his consent to use his name publicly for a countenance unto such a defamatory libel. It were endless and useless to cull out the remaining instances of the same kind, whereof I think there is scarce a page free in his book, unless it be taken up with quotations; and I am sure that whosoever will give the least credit unto any of his stories and assertions will do it at the utmost peril of being deceived. And where any thing he aims at hath the least of truth in it, he doth but make it a foundation to build a falsehood upon. Such are his ingenious repetitions of some things I should say fourteen or fifteen years ago in private discourses; which yet, supposing them true, in the terms by him reported, as they are not, contain nothing of immorality, nothing of injury unto or reflection on others. Surely this man must be thought to study the adorning and freedom of conversation, who thus openly traduceth a person for words occasionally and it may be hastily spoken, without the least injury to any or evil in themselves, fourteen or fifteen years after! And these also are such as he hath taken upon mere reports; for I believe he will not say that ever he spake one word with me himself in his life. How any one can safely converse with a man of this spirit and humour I know not.

I shall wholly pass by his malicious wresting and false applications of the passages he hath quoted out of some things published by me: for as for the greatest part of those small perishing treatises, whence he and others have extracted their pretended advantages, it is many years since I saw them,—some of them twenty at the least; nor do I know how they have dealt in repeating their "excerpta," which with so much diligence they have collected; that they are several times wrested and perverted by this malicious scribbler unto things never intended by me, that I do know. One discourse, about Communion with God, I find there is much wrath stirred up against; and yet, upon the severe scrutiny which it hath in several hands undergone, nothing can be found to lay to its charge but one passage concerning some differences about external worship, which they needed not to have put themselves to so much trouble to have found out and declared. But as for this man, he makes such inferences from it and applications of it as are full of malice and poison,—being not inferior in these good qualifications unto any of his other prodigious tales: for from what I speak concerning the purity of instituted worship, he concludes that I judge that all who in the worship of God make use of the Common-prayer are not loyal to Christ, nor have communion with God, nor can promote the interest of the gospel; all which are notoriously false, never thought, never spoken, never written by me. And I do believe that many that have used that book in the public administrations have been as loyal

to Christ, had as much communion with God, and been as zealous to promote the interest of the gospel, as any who have lived in the world these thousand years; for men are accepted with God according to what they have, and not according to what they have not.

The next charge I can meet withal in this confused heap,—which is like the grave, a place of darkness, without any order,—is no less than of perjury; and this principally he doth on such an account as is not at all peculiar to me, but the reproach he manageth is equally cast on the greatest part of the kingdom by this public defamer. And I suppose others do, though I do not, know the prudence of encouraging such a slanderous libeller to cast fire-brands among peaceable subjects, and to revive the remembrance of things which the wisdom, clemency, and righteousness of his majesty, with and by the law of the land, upon the best and most assured principles of piety and policy, have put into oblivion. And it also seems strange to me how bold he and some other scribblers make by their interesting the sacred name of his majesty and his concerns in their impertinent squabblings, as they do on all occasions. But such things are of another cognizance, and there I leave them. What is peculiar to myself in this charge is represented under a double instance:—

1. Of the oath of canonical obedience, which I took and violated; and, 2. Of the university oath.

For the first, although I could easily return an answer unto the thing itself, yet, as to what concerns me, I shall give no other but "Mentitur impudentissime;" I never took any such oath.

And for the other, I doubt not to speak with some confidence that the intention and design of the oath was observed by me with as much conscience and diligence as by any who have since acted in the same capacity wherein I was at that time reflected on. And upon the provocation of this man, whoever he be, I do not fear to say, that, considering the state and condition of affairs at that time in the nation and the university, I do not believe there is any person of learning, ingenuity, or common modesty, who had relation in those days unto that place, but will grant, at least, that notwithstanding some lesser differences from them about things of very small importance, I was not altogether useless to the interests of learning, morality, peace, and the preservation of the place itself; and further I am not concerned in the ingratitude and envy of a few illiterate and malicious persons, as knowing that "Obtrectatio est stultorum thesaurus, quem in linguis gerunt."

But if all these attempts prove successless, there is that yet behind which shall justify the whole charge, or at least the author, in filling up his bill with so many prodigious falsities; and this is my "blas-

pheming the Lord's prayer," which is exaggerated with many tragical expressions and hideous exclamations;—as, indeed, who can lay too heavy a load on so horrid a crime? But how if this should not prove so? how if, by all his outcries, he should but adorn and set forth his own forgeries? This I know, that I do, and ever did, believe that that prayer is part of the canonical Scripture; which I would not willingly blaspheme. I do believe that it was composed by the Lord Jesus Christ himself, and have vindicated it from being thought a collection and composition of such petitions as were then in use among the Jews, as some learned men had, I think unadvisedly, asserted it to be. I do, and ever did, believe it the most perfect form of prayer that ever was composed, and the words of it so disposed by the divine wisdom of our blessed Saviour that it comprehends the substance of all the matter of prayer to God. I do, and did always, believe that it ought to be continually meditated on, that we may learn from thence both what we ought to pray for and in what manner; neither did I ever think a thought or speak a word unsuitable to these assertions. Wherein, then, doth this great blasphemy lie? Unto two heads it must be reduced:—

1. That I judge not that our Lord Jesus Christ, in the giving of this prayer unto his disciples, did prescribe unto them the precise use or repetition of those words, but only taught them what to pray for or how.

Now, although it may be this man doth not, yet all men of any tolerable learning or reading know that this assertion, relating only to the different interpretations of one expression, indeed of one word, in one of the evangelists, hath been owned and allowed by learned men of all parties and persuasions. He may, if he please, consult Grotius, Musculus, and Cornelius à Lapide (to name one of a side), for his information. But,—

2. I have delivered other things concerning the use of it in my book against the Socinians.

Whereunto I shall only say, that he who differs from others in the manner of the use of any thing may have as reverent an esteem of the thing itself as they; and herein I shall not give place unto any man that lives on the earth with respect unto the Lord's prayer. It is true, I have said that there were manifold abuses in the rehearsal of it amongst people ignorant and superstitious; and I did deliver my thoughts, it may be, too freely and severely, against some kind of repetition of it. But as for the ridiculous and impudent charge of blasphemy hence raised by this pitiful calumniator, I am no way concerned in it; no more am I with that lie which hath been now reported to the satiety of its first broachers and promoters,—namely, that I should "put on my hat upon the repetition of it."

It was, as I remember, about fifteen years ago that such a rumour was raised; by I know not whom, nor on what occasion. It was somewhat long before I heard any whisper of it,—as is the manner in such cases. But so soon as I did attain a knowledge that such a slander had been reported and scattered abroad, I did cause to be published, in English and French, a declaration of its notorious falsity, in the year 1655. But so prone are many to give entertainment to false reproaches of them whom on any account they are displeased with, so unwilling to part with a supposed advantage against them, though they know it to have been put into their hand by the mistakes, folly, or malice of others, that the same untruth hath been several times since repeated and republished, without the least taking notice that it was publicly denied, condemned, and the authors of it challenged to give any tolerable account of their report. Only of late one learned person meeting it afresh, where its admittance would have been to his advantage (namely, Mr Durel, in his answer unto the apology of some nonconformists), had the ingenuity to acknowledge the public disclaimure of any such practice so long since made and published, and thereon at least to suspend his assent to the report itself.

I am, sir, quite weary of repeating the instances of this man's notorious falsehoods and unjust accusations; I shall therefore overlook the remainder of them on this head, that I may give you one of his intolerable weakness and ignorance, and this lies in his attempt to find out contradictions between what I have written in several places about toleration and liberty of conscience, p. 67. For because I say that "pernicious errors are to be opposed and extirpated, by means appointed, proper and suitable thereunto," as also that "it is the duty of the magistrate to defend, protect, countenance, and promote, the truth," the man thinks that these things are inconsistent with liberty of conscience, and such a toleration or forbearance as at any time I have pleaded for. But if any man should persuade him to let those things alone which either he hath nothing to do withal or doth not understand, it may be he would accommodate him with a sufficient leisure, and more time than he knows well how to dispose of.

II. His last attempt is upon some sayings which he calls my "principles;" in the representation whereof whether he hath dealt with any greater regard to truth and honesty than are the things we have already passed through shall be briefly considered.

The first, as laid down in the contents prefixed to this sorry chapter, is in these words: "That success in business doth authoricate its cause; and that if God's providence permit a mischief, his will approves it."

There are two parts, you see, of this principle, whereof the first is, "That success will justify a cause in business,"—that is, as I take it, any one; and secondly, "That which God permits, he doth approve." Now, as both parts of this principle are diabolically false, so in their charge on me also; so that I must betake myself again to the example of the friar, and say, "Mentitur impudentissime." A cause is good or bad before it hath success one way or other; and that which hath not its warranty in itself can never obtain any from its success. The rule of the goodness of any public cause is the eternal law of reason, with the just legal rights and interests of men. If these make not a cause good, success will never mend it. But when a cause on these grounds is so indeed, or is really judged such by them that are engaged in it, not to take notice of the providence of God in prospering men in the pursuit of it, is to exclude all thoughts of him and his providence from having any concern in the government of the world. And if I or any other have at any time applied this unto any cause not warranted by the only rule of its justification, it no way reflects on the truth of the principle which I assert, nor gives countenance to the false one which he ascribes unto me. For the latter clause of this pretended principle, "That if God's providence permit a mischief, his will approves it," I suspect there is some other ingredient in it besides lying and malice,—namely, stupid ignorance; for it is mischief in a moral sense that he intends, nothing being the object of God's approbation or disapprobation on any other account. It would therefore seem very strange how any one who hath but so much understanding as to know that this principle would take away all differences between good and evil should provide himself with so much impudence as to charge it on me.

Another principle, in pursuit of the same design, he lays down as mine, p. 46, namely, "That saints may retain their holiness in the act of sinning; and that whatever law they violate, God will not impute it to them as a sin."

There seem to be two parts of this principle also. The first is, "That saints may retain their holiness in the act of sinning." I know not well what he means by this part of his principle; and yet do, for some reasons, suppose him to be more remote from the understanding of it than I am, although the words are his own. If he mean that the act of sinning is not against, or an impeachment of holiness, it is a ridiculous contradiction. If he mean that every actual sin doth not deprive the sinner of all holiness, he is ridiculous himself if he assert that it doth, seeing "there is no man that doeth good, and sinneth not." The framing of the last clause of this principle smells of the same cask, and, as it is charged on me, is false. Whatever law of God any man breaks it is a sin, is so judged of God, and by

him imputed so far unto the sinner as to judge him guilty thereof, whoever he be; but God doth not impute every sin unto believers unto judgment and condemnation. And if he can understand any thing in the books quoted by him, he will find that there is no more in them towards what he reflects upon, but that God will by his grace preserve true believers from falling into such sins as whereby they should totally and finally lose their faith, fall from grace, and be cast out of God's covenant. This principle I own, and despise his impotent, ignorant, and ridiculous defamation of it.

His third principle is about praying by the Spirit, which he chargeth at the highest rate, as that which will destroy all government in the world!

I know well enough whence he hath learned this kind of arguing; but I have no reason to concern myself particularly in this matter. The charge, for aught I know, as here proposed, falls equally on all Christians in the world; for whether men pray by a book or without a book, if they pray not by the Spirit,—that is, by the assistance of the Spirit of God,—they pray not at all. Let, therefore, the Scripture and Christianity answer for themselves; at present in this charge I am not particularly concerned.

Thus, sir, I have complied with your desire unto a perusal of this confused heap of malicious calumnies; which otherwise I had absolutely in silence put off to the judgment of the great day. It may be this author hath scarce yet cast up his account, nor considered what it is to lend his fingers to others to thrust into the fire, which they would not touch themselves; for whilst they do, or may if they please, enjoy their satisfaction in his villany and folly, the guilt and shame of them will return in a cruciating sense upon his own understanding and conscience. When this shall befall him, as it will do assuredly, if he be not utterly profligate, he will find no great relief in wishing that he had been better advised, nor in considering that those who rejoice in the calumny do yet despise the sycophant. —I am, Sir, your, etc.,

J O.

OF THE

DIVINE ORIGINAL, AUTHORITY, SELF-EVIDENCING LIGHT, AND POWER OF THE SCRIPTURES;

WITH AN ANSWER TO THAT INQUIRY, HOW WE KNOW THE SCRIPTURES TO BE THE WORD OF GOD.

ALSO,

A VINDICATION OF THE PURITY AND INTEGRITY OF THE HEBREW AND GREEK TEXTS OF THE OLD AND NEW TESTAMENT;

IN SOME CONSIDERATIONS ON THE PROLEGOMENA AND APPENDIX TO THE LATE "BIBLIA POLYGLOTTA."

WHEREUNTO ARE SUBJOINED

SOME EXERCITATIONS ABOUT THE NATURE AND PERFECTION OF THE SCRIPTURE, THE RIGHT OF INTERPRETATION, INTERNAL LIGHT, REVELATION, ETC.

Ἐρευνᾶτε τὰς γραφάς.—John v. 39.

OXFORD: 1659.

PREFATORY NOTE.

The Epistle Dedicatory to the three following treatises is full of curious information, and deserves to be read, in order to understand our author's true position in his controversy with Brian Walton, the learned editor of the London Polyglott. Surprise has been expressed that under one general title Owen should have included tracts on subjects so different in their nature as the divine origin of Scripture, the purity of the Hebrew and Greek text of Scripture, and the doctrinal errors of the Society of Friends. The last tract, too, was first written, and on the subordinate title prefixed to it bears date 1658, whereas the others belong to the succeeding year. The bond of connection among the treatises is, however, sufficiently plain. In refuting the doctrine of the inward light, as held by the Quakers, he was discriminating his own profound and original views of the self-evidencing power of the Word from a dogma with which they might be confounded; and as in the first treatise he had expressed himself in language rather unguarded and too unqualified, about the providential care of God over every letter and syllable of revelation, he was prompted to question some features in Walton's Polyglott, which had just been published, and in which thousands of various readings were exhibited. These various readings seemed to refute the position he had taken, that the Scriptures had been providentially kept in their original integrity. How far he erred on this point, and to what extent his views have been misapprehended, are discussed in the prefatory note to the "Considerations on the Prolegomena and Appendix to the Biblia Polyglotta."

As this Polyglott was the occasion of the following Epistle and of the tract to which we have just alluded, it may be necessary to glance at its history and character. It appears that Walton issued the description and prospectus of it in 1652, and before the close of that year nearly £4,000 had been raised by subscription for the work. The Council of State promised to advance £1,000, and the paper to be used for it was exempted from duty. In May 1653 the subscriptions had risen to £9,000, and in the autumn of that year the impression was begun. Next year the first volume was completed, containing Prolegomena which are still a treasure of sacred criticism, and have been thrice republished separately, and the Pentateuch in the Hebrew, the Vulgate, the Septuagint, the Syriac, the Targum of Onkelos, the Samaritan, and the Arabic: in 1655 the second volume appeared, comprising the historical books in the same languages and versions, with the exception of the Samaritan: in 1656 the third, comprehending the poetic and prophetic books from Job to Malachi, with the addition of an Ethiopic version of the Book of Psalms: and in 1657 the fourth, containing all the apocryphal books; the fifth, including all the books of the New Testament, in the Greek, Syriac, Persic, Vulgate, Arabic, and Ethiopic; and the sixth, composed of various readings, critical remarks, etc. Walton's assistants in this magnificent work were Ussher, Castell, Hyde, Pococke, Lightfoot, Huish, Samuel Clarke, De Dieu, and others. The terms in which Cromwell is mentioned in the preface are as follow: "Primo autem commemorandi, quorum favore chartam a vectigalibus immunem habuimus, quod quinque abhinc annis a Concilio secretiori primo concessum, postea à SERENISSIMO D. PROTECTORE ejusque Concilio, operis promovendi causâ, benignè confirmatum et continuatum erat." About the time of the Restoration two leaves of the preface were cancelled, the name of Cromwell was expunged from the list of benefactors, and a dedication to Charles II. prefixed, stigmatizing Cromwell as "the great dragon," and insinuating that he wished to extort from Walton the honour of the dedication: "Insidiabatur partui nostro draco ille magnus, et per tyrannidis suæ mancipia hoc agebat, ut in ipso partu opprimeretur, nisi ipsi ut patrono et protectori dicaretur." The change could surely have been effected in a way more honourable to Walton, and without needless reflections on the memory of the Protector, his obligations to whom could not be concealed and should not have been forgotten. He was rewarded in 1660 with the bishopric of Chester; which he enjoyed only for the short space of a year. There are few names on the bright roll of British scholarship and learning to which Biblical literature has been more indebted.—ED.

TO MY REVEREND AND WORTHY FRIENDS,

THE PREBENDS OF CHRIST CHURCH COLLEGE IN OXFORD,

WITH ALL THE STUDENTS IN DIVINITY IN THAT SOCIETY.

THE reason of my inscribing the ensuing pleas for the authority, purity, and perfection of the Scripture, against the pretences of some to the contrary in these days, unto *you*, is, because some of you value and study the Scripture as much as any I know; and it is the earnest desire of my heart that all of you would so do. Now, whereas two things offer themselves unto me, to discourse with you by the way of preface,—namely, the commendation of the Scripture and an exhortation to the study of it, on the one hand; and a discovery of the reproach that is cast upon it, with the various ways and means that are used by some for the lessening and depressing of its authority and excellency, on the other,—the former being to good purpose by one or other almost every day performed, I shall insist at present on the latter only: which also is more suited to discover my aim and intention in the ensuing discourses. Now, herein, as I shall, it may be, seem to exceed that proportion which is due unto a preface to such short discourses as these following, yet I know I shall be more brief than the nature of so great a matter as that proposed to consideration doth require; and, therefore, ἄνευ προοιμίων καὶ παλῶν, I shall fall upon the subject that now lies before me.

Many there have been, and are, who, through the craft of Satan and the prejudice of their own hearts, lying under the power of corrupt and carnal interest, have engaged themselves to decry and disparage that excellency of the Scripture which is proper and peculiar unto it. The several sorts of them are too many particularly to be considered; I shall only pass through them in general, and fix upon such instances by the way as may give evidence to the things insisted on.

Those who in this business are first to be called to an account—whose filth and abominations, given out in gross, others have but parcelled among themselves—are they of the synagogue of Rome. These pretend themselves to be the only keepers and preservers of the Word of God in the world, the only "pillar and ground of truth." Let us, then, a little consider, in the first place, how it hath discharged this trust; for it is but equal that men should be called to an account upon their own principles; and those who, supposing themselves to have a trust reposed in them, do manifest a treacherous mind, would not be one whit better if they had so indeed.

What, then, have these men done in the discharge of their pretended trust? nay, what hath that syagogue left unattempted? yea, what hath it left unfinished that may be needful to convince it of perfidiousness? that says the Scripture was committed to it alone; and would, if it were able, deprive all others of the possession of it, or of their lives. What Scripture, then, was this, or when was this deed of trust made unto them? The oracles of God, they tell us, committed to the Jews under the Old Testament, and all the writings of the New; and that this was done from the first foundation of the church by Peter, and so on to the

finishing of the whole canon. What now have they not done, in adding, detracting, corrupting, forging, aspersing those Scriptures, to falsify their pretended trust? They add more books to them, never indited by the Holy Ghost, as remote from being θεόπνευστα, ὡς οὐρανὸς ἐστ' ἀπὸ γαίης: so denying the self-evidencing power of that Word, which is truly ἐξ οὐρανοῦ, by mixing it with things ἐξ ἀνθρώπων, of a human rise and spring; manifesting themselves to have lost the Spirit of discerning, promised with the Word to abide with the true church of God for ever. (Isa. lix. 21.) They have taken from its fulness and perfection, its sufficiency and excellency, by their Masora, their oral law, or *verbum ἄγραφον*, their unknown, endless, bottomless, boundless treasure of traditions,—that πάνσοφον φάρμακον for all their abominations. The Scripture itself (as they say, committed to them) they plead, to their eternal shame, to be in the *original languages* corrupted, vitiated, interpolated; so that it is no stable rule to guide us throughout in the knowledge of the will of God. The Jews, they say, did it whilst they were busy in burning of Christians. Therefore, in the room of the originals, they have enthroned a translation that was never committed to them,—that came into the world they know neither how, nor when, nor by whom; so that one[1] says of its author, "Si quis percontetur Gallus fuerit an Sarmata, Judæus an Christianus, vir an mulier, nihil habituri sint ejus patroni quod expeditè respondeant." All this to place themselves in the throne of God, and to make the words of a translation authentic from *their* stamp upon them, and not from their relation unto and agreement with the words spoken by God himself. And yet further, as if all this were not enough to manifest what trustees they have been, they have cast off all subjection to the authority of God in his Word, unless it be resolved into their own, denying that any man in the world can know it to be the Word of God unless they tell him so: it is but ink and paper, skin of parchment, a dead letter, a nose of wax, a Lesbian rule,—of no authority unto us at all. O faithful trustees! holy mother church! infallible chair! can wickedness yet make any farther progress? Was it ever heard of, from the foundation of the world, that men should take so much pains as these men have done to prove themselves faithless and treacherous in a trust committed to them? Is not this the sum and substance of volumes that have even filled the world: "The Word of God was committed to us alone, and no others: under our keeping it is corrupted, depraved, vitiated: the copies delivered unto us we have rejected, and taken up one of our own choice: nor let any complain of us;—it was in our power to do worse. This sacred depositum had no κριτήρια, whereby it might be known to be the Word of God; but it is upon our credit alone that it passes in the world or is believed! We have added to it many books upon our own judgment; and yet think it not sufficient for the guidance of men in the worship of God, and the obedience they owe unto him?" Yet do they blush? are they ashamed as a thief when he is taken? nay, do they not boast themselves in their iniquity, and say they are sold to work all these abominations? The time is coming, yea, it is at hand, wherein it shall repent them for ever that they have lifted up themselves against this sacred grant of the wisdom, care, love, and goodness of God!

Sundry other branches there are of the abominations of these men besides those enumerated, all which may be reduced to these three corrupt and bloody fountains:—

1. That the Scripture at best, as given out from God, and as it is to us continued, was and is but a partial revelation of the will of God, the other part of it (which how vast and extensive it is no man knows;—for the Jews have given us their διυπτιώσεις in their Mishna and Gemara; these kept them locked up in the breast or chair of their *holy father*) being reserved in their magazine of traditions.

[1] Erasmus.

2. That the Scripture is not able to evince or manifest itself to be the Word of God, so as to enjoy and exercise any authority in his name over the souls and consciences of men, without an accession of testimony from that combination of politic, worldly-minded men that call themselves the Church of Rome.

3. That the original copies of the Old and New Testaments are so corrupted ("ex ore tuo, serve nequam") that they are not a certain standard and measure of all doctrines, or the touch-stone of all translations.

Now, concerning these things, you will find somewhat offered unto your consideration in the ensuing discourses; wherein I hope, without any great altercation or disputes, to lay down such principles of truth as that their idol imaginations will be found cast to the ground before the sacred ark of the Word of God, and to lie naked without wisdom or power.

It is concerning the last of these only that at present I shall deliver my thoughts unto you; and that because we begin to have a new concernment therein, wherewith I shall afterward acquaint you. Of all the inventions of Satan to draw off the minds of men from the Word of God, this of *decrying the authority of the originals* seems to me the most pernicious. At the beginning of the Reformation, before the council of Trent, the Papists did but faintly, and not without some blushing, defend their Vulgar Latin translation. Some openly preferred the original before it, as Cajetan,[1] Erasmus, Vives,[2] and others; yea, and after the council also, the same was done by Andradius,[3] Ferrarius,[4] Arias Montanus,[5] Masius,[6] and others. For those who understood nothing but Latin amongst them, and scarcely that, whose ignorance was provided for in the council, I suppose it will not be thought meet that in this case we should make any account of them. But the state of things is now altered in the world, and the iniquity which first wrought in a mystery, being now discovered, casts off its vizard and grows bold: "Nihil est audacius istis deprensis." At first the design was managed in private writings. Melchior Canus,[7] Gulielmus Lindanus,[8] Bellarminus,[9] Gregorius de Valentia,[10] Leo Castrius,[11] Huntlæus,[12] Hanstelius,[13] with innumerable others, some on one account, some on another, have pleaded that the originals were corrupted,—some of them with more impudence than others. Leo Castrius, as Pineda observes, raves almost wherever he falls on the mention of the Hebrew text. "Sed is est author,"[14] saith he, "dum in hujusmodi Ebraizationes incidit, vix sui compos; et bono licet zelo, tamen vel ignoratione rerum quarundam, vel vehementiori aliquâ affectione, extra fines veritatis et modestiæ rapitur: et si ex hujusmodi tantum unguibus *Leonem* illum estimaremus, non etiam ex aliis præclaris conatibus, aut murem aut vulpem censeremus, aut canem aut quiddam aliud ignobilius." Yea, Morinus, who seems to be ashamed of nothing, yet shrinks a little at this man's impudence and folly. "Apologetici libros,"[15] saith he, "sex bene longos scripsit, quibus nihil quam Judæorum voluntarias et malignas depravationes demonstrare nititur; zelo sanè pio scripsit Castrius, sed libris Hebraicis ad tantum opus quod moliebatur parum erat instructus." In the steps of this Castrius walks Huntley, a subtle Jesuit, who, in the treatise above cited,[16] ascribes the corruption of the Hebrew Bible to the good providence of God, for the honour of the Vulgar Latin! But these, with their companions, have had their mouths stopped by Reynolds, Whitaker, Junius, Lubbertus, Rivetus, Chamierus, Gerardus, Amesius, Glassius, Alstedius, Amama, and others: so that a man would have thought this

1 Præf. in V. Lib. Mos. 2 In August. de Civit. Dei, lib. xv. cap. 13. 3 Defens. Conc. Trid., lib. iv. 4 Proleg. Biblica. 5 Præf. in Bib. in Lat., et passim. 6 Præf. in Comment. in Josh. 7 Loc. Com., lib. i. cap. 13. 8 De Opt. Gen. Interp., lib. i. 9 Lib. ii. De Verb. Dei. 10 Tom. i. d. 5, q. 3. 11 De Translat. Græ. cum Comment in Esa. 12 Epito. Controv. Contrar., i. c. 8. 13 Dispunctio Calum. Casaub. 14 Pined., lib. v. De Reb. Solom., c. iv. s. 1. 15 Morin. Exercit. de Sincerit. Exerc. i. c. 3. 16 Cap. x. lib. 1.

fire put to the house of God had been sufficiently quenched. But after all the endeavours hitherto used, in the days wherein we live it breaks out in a greater flame; they now print the original itself and defame it, gathering up translations of all sorts, and setting them up in competition with it. When Ximenes put forth the Complutensian Bible, Vatablus his, and Arias Montanus those of the king of Spain, this cockatrice was not hatched, whose fruit is now growing to a fiery flying serpent. It is now but saying, "The ancient Hebrew letters are changed from the Samaritan to the Chaldean; the points or vowels, and accents, are but lately invented, of no authority; without their guidance and direction nothing is certain in the knowledge of that tongue; all that we know of it comes from the translation of the LXX.; the Jews have corrupted the Old Testament; there are innumerable various lections both of the Old and New; there are other copies differing from those we now enjoy that are utterly lost." So that upon the matter there is nothing left unto men but to choose whether they will be Papists or Atheists.

Here that most stupendous fabric that was ever raised by ink and paper, termed well by a learned man, "Magnificentissimum illud, quod post homines natos in lucem prodiit unquam, opus biblicum,"[1]—I mean the Parisian Bibles,—is prefaced by a discourse of its erector, Michael Le Jay, wherein he denies the Hebrew text, prefers the Vulgar Latin before it, and resolves that we are not left to the Word for our rule, but to the Spirit that rules in their church: "Pro certo igitur atque indubitato apud nos esse debet, vulgatam editionem, quæ communi catholicæ ecclesiæ linguâ circumfertur verum esse et genuinum sacræ Scripturæ fontem; hanc consulendam ubique, inde fidei dogmata repetenda; ex quo insuper consentaneum est, vera ac certissima fidei Christianæ autographa in Spiritu ecclesiæ residere, neque ab ejus hostium manibus repetenda.

"Et certè quamcunque pietatis speciem prætexunt, non religione quapiam, aut sincerâ in Scripturam sacram veneratione aguntur, dum eam unicam, quasi ineluctabilem salutis regulam, usurpant, neque spiritûs evangelici veritatem investigare decreverunt; dum, ad autographa curiosius recurrentes, ex quibus, præter perplexa quædam vestigia, vix aliquid superest, vel capitales fidei hostes, vel eos qui ecclesiæ minus faverint, de contextuum interpretatione ac germano sacrorum codicum sensu consulunt. Scilicet non alia est opportunior via à regio illius itinere secedendi, neque in privatarum opinionum placitis blandius possunt acquiescere, quas velut unicas doctrinæ suæ regulas sectari plerumque censuerunt. Apage cæcam animorum libidinem! Non jam in institutionem nostram subsistit litera, sed ecclesiæ spiritus; neque è sacris codicibus hauriendum quidquam, nisi quod illa communicatum esse nobiscum voluerit."[2]

So he, or Morinus in his name. And if this be indeed the true state of things, I suppose he will very hardly convince men of the least usefulness of this great work and undertaking. To usher those Bibles into the world, Morinus puts forth his Exercitations, entitled, "Of the Sincerity of the Hebrew and Greek Texts"—indeed to prove them corrupt and useless. He is now the man amongst them that undertakes to defend this cause; in whose writings whether there be more of Pyrgopolynices or Rabshakeh is uncertain. But dogs that bark loud seldom bite deep; nor do I think many ages have produced a man of more confidence and less judgment. A prudent reader cannot but nauseate at all his leaves, and the man is well laid open by a learned person of his own party.[3] By the way, I cannot but observe, that in the height of his boasting he falls upon his mother church, and embraces her to death. Exercit. i. cap. i. p. 11, that he might vaunt himself to be the first and only discoverer of corruptions in the original of the Old Testament, with the

[1] Edm. Castel. Præf. ad. Animad. Samar. in Bib. Poly. [2] Mich. Le Jay, Præfat. ad opus Bibl.
[3] Simeon de Muis, Assertio Verit. Heb.

causes of them, he falls into a profound contemplation of the guidance of his church, which being ignorant of any such cause of rejecting the originals as he hath now informed her of, yet continued to reject them, and prefer the Vulgar Latin before them. "Hîc admirare lector," saith he, "Dei Spiritum ecclesiæ præsentissimum, illam per obscura, perplexa, et invia quæque, inoffenso pede agentem: quanquam incognita esset Rabbinorum supina negligentia, portentosa ignorantia, fœdaque librorum Judaicorum corruptela, et Hæretici contraria his magnâ verborum pompâ audacter jactarent; adduci tamen non potuit ecclesia, ut versio, quâ solâ per mille ferè et centum annos usa fuerit, ad normam et amussim Hebræi textus iterum recuderetur." But is it so indeed, that their church receives its guidance in a stupid, brutish manner, so as to be fixed obstinately on conclusions without the least acquaintance with the premises? It seems she loved not the originals, but she knew not why; only she was obstinate in this, that she loved them not! If this be the state with their church, that when she hath neither Scripture, nor tradition, nor reason, nor new revelation, she is guided she knows not how, as Socrates was by his demon, or by a secret and inexpressible species of pertinacity and stubbornness falling upon her imagination, I suppose it will be in vain to contend with her any longer. For my own part, I must confess that I shall as soon believe a poor, deluded, fanatical Quaker, pretending to be guided by an infallible Spirit, as their pope with his whole conclave of cardinals, upon the terms here laid down by Morinus.

But, to let these men pass for a season, had this leprosy kept itself within that house which is thoroughly infected, it had been of less importance; it is but a further preparation of it for the fire. But it is now broken forth among Protestants also; with what designs, to what end or purpose, I know not,—θεὸς οἶδε, "God knows," and "the day will manifest." To declare at large how this is come about, "longa esset historia,"—too long for me to dwell upon; some heads of things I shall briefly touch at. It is known to all that the reformation of religion and restoration of good learning were begun and carried on at the same time, and mostly by the same persons. There was, indeed, a triumvirate among the Papists of men excellently skilled in rabbinical learning before the Reformation. Raymundus Martinus, Porchetus de Sylvaticis, and Petrus Galatinus, are the men; of the which the last dedicated his book to Maximilian the emperor, after that Zuinglius and Luther had begun to preach. Upon the matter, these three are but one: great are the disputes whether Galatinus stole his book from Raymundus or Porchetus, saith Morinus, and calls his work "Plagium portentosum, cui vix simile unquam factum est." (Exerc. i. cap. 2.) From Raymundus, saith Scaliger (Epist. ii. 41), mistaking Raymundus Martinus for Raymundus Sebon, but giving the first tidings to the world of that book. From Raymundus also saith Josephus de Voysin, in his prolegomena to the Pugio Fidei; and from him Hornbeck, in his proleg. ad Jud. I shall not interpose in this matter. The method of Galatinus and his style are peculiar to him, but the coincidences of his quotations too many to be ascribed to common accident. That Porchetus took his "Victoria adversus impios Judæos" for the most part from Raymundus, he himself confesseth in his preface. However, certain it is Galatinus had no small opinion of his own skill, and, therefore,—according to the usual way of men who have attained, as they think, to some eminency in any one kind of learning, laying more weight upon it than it is able to bear,—he boldly affirms that the original of the Scripture is corrupted, and not to be restored but by the Talmud; in which one concession he more injures the cause he pleads for against the Jews than he advantageth it by all his books beside. Of his גלי רזיא of Rabbi Hakkadosh there is no more news as yet in the world than what he is pleased to acquaint us withal. At the same time, Erasmus, Reuchlin, Vives, Xantes Pagninus, and others, moved effectually

for the restoration of the Hebrew, Greek, and Latin. But the work principally prospered in the hands of the first reformers, as they were all of them generally skilled in the Hebrew,—some of them, as Capito, Bibliander, Fagius, Munster, to that height and usefulness that they may well be reckoned as the fathers and patriarchs of that learning. At that time lived Elias Levita, the most learned of the Jews of that age, whose grammatical writings were of huge importance in the studying of that tongue. This man, as he was acquainted with many of the first reformers, so he lived particularly with Paulus Fagius, as I have elsewhere declared. Now, in one book which in those days he published, called "Masoreth Hammasoreth," he broached a new opinion, not much heard of, at least not at all received, among the Jews, nor, for aught that yet appears, once mentioned by Christians before, namely, that the points or vowels, and accents, used in the Hebrew Bible were invented by some critical Jew or Masorete, living at Tiberias about five or six hundred years after Christ. No doubt the man's aim was to reduce the world of Christians to a dependence on the ancient Rabbins for the whole sense of the Scripture. "Hinc prima mali labes." Here lies the first breach in this matter. The fraud being not discovered, and this opinion being broached and confirmed by the great and almost only master of the language of that age, some even of the first reformers embraced his fancy. Perhaps Zuinglius had spoken to it before; justly I know not. After a while, the poison of this error beginning to operate, the Papists, waiting on the mouths of the reformers, like the servants of Benhadad on Ahab, to catch at every word that might fall from them to their advantage, began to make use of it. Hence Cochlæus (lib. de Auth. Scripturæ, cap. v.) applauds Luther for saying the Jews had corrupted the Bible with points and distinctions; as well he might, for nothing could be spoken more to the advantage of his cause against him. Wherefore other learned men began to give opposition to this error; so did Munster, Junius, and others, as will be shown in the ensuing discourse. Thus this matter rested for a season. The study of the Hebrew tongue and learning being carried on, it fell at length on him who undoubtedly hath done more real service for the promotion of it than any one man whatever, Jew or Christian; I mean Buxtorfius the elder. His Thesaurus Grammaticus, his Tiberias, or Commentarius Masorethicus, his Lexicons and Concordances, and many other treatises, whereof some are not yet published, evince this to all the world. Even Morinus saith that he is the only man among Christians that ever thoroughly understood the Masora; and Simeon de Muis acknowledgeth his profiting by him and learning from him. Other Jews who undertake to be teachers know nothing but what they learn of him. To omit the testimony of all sorts of learned men, giving him the pre-eminence in this learning, it may suffice that his works praise him. Now, this man, in his Tiberias, or Commentarius Masorethicus, printed with the great Rabbinical Bible of his own correct setting forth at Basil, anno 1620, considereth at large this whole matter of the points, and discovereth the vanity of Elias' pretension about the Tiberian Masoretes. But we must not, it seems, rest here; within a few years after, to make way for another design, which then he had conceived, Ludovicus Cappellus published a discourse in the defence of the opinion of Elias (at least so far as concerned the rise of the punctuation), under the title of "Arcanum Punctationis Revelatum." The book was published by Erpenius, without the name of the author. But the person was sufficiently known; and Rivetus not long after took notice of him, and saith he was his friend, but concealed his name. (Isag. ad Scrip., i. cap. 8.) This new attempt immediately pleaseth some. Among others, our learned professor, Dr Prideaux, reads a public lecture, on the vespers of our Comitia, on that subject; wherein, though he prefaceth his discourse with an observation of the advantage the Papists make of that opinion of the novelty of the points, and the danger of it, yet upon

the matter he falls in wholly with Cappellus, though he names him not. Among the large encomiums of himself and his work, printed by Cappellus in the close of his "Critica Sacra," there are two letters from one Mr Eyre here in England; in one whereof he tells him that without doubt the Doctor read on that subject by the help of his book, as indeed he useth his arguments and quotes his treatise, under the name of "Sud Hanisebhoth Hanaegalah." But that, I say, which seems to me most admirable in the Doctor's discourse is, that whereas he had prefaced it with the weight of the controversy he had in hand, by the advantage the Papists make of the opinion of the novelty of the points, citing their words to that purpose, himself in the body of his Exercitations falls in with them, and speaks the very things which he seemed before to have blamed. And by this means this opinion, tending so greatly to the disparagement of the authority of the originals, is crept in amongst Protestants also. Of the stop put unto its progress by the full and learned answer of Buxtorfius the younger (who alone in this learning, in this age, seems to answer his father's worth) unto Cappellus, in his discourse, "De Punctorum Vocalium Antiquitate," I shall speak more afterward. However, it is not amiss fallen out that the masters of this new persuasion are not at all agreed among themselves. Cappellus would have it easy to understand the Hebrew text, and every word, though not absolutely by itself, yet as it lies in its contexture, though there were no points at all. Morinus would make the language altogether unintelligible on that account. The one saith that the points are a late invention of the Rabbins; and the other, that without them the understanding of the Hebrew is ἐκ τῶν ἀδυνάτων: yet though they look diverse ways, there is a firebrand between them. But we have this brand brought yet nearer to the church's bread-corn in the Prolegomena to the Biblia Polyglotta, lately printed at London. The solemn espousal of this opinion of the Hebrew punctuation in that great work was one chief occasion of the second discourse, as you will find it at large declared in the entrance of it. I dare not mention the desperate consequences that attend this imagination, being affrighted, among other things, by a little treatise lately sent me (upon the occasion of a discourse on this subject) by my worthy and learned friend Dr Ward, entitled "Fides Divina;" wherein its author, whoever he be, from some principles of this nature, and unwary expressions of some learned men amongst us, labours to eject and cast out as useless the whole Scripture or Word of God. I should have immediately returned an answer to that pestilent discourse, but that upon consideration I found all his objections obviated or answered in the ensuing treatises, which were then wholly finished. And this, as I said, was the first way whereby the poison of undervaluing the originals crept in among Protestants themselves.

Now, together with the knowledge of the tongues, the use of that knowledge in critical observations did also increase. The excellent use of this study and employment, with the fruits of it in the explanation of sundry difficulties, with many other advantages, cannot be easily expressed. But as the best things are apt to be most abused, so in particular it hath fallen out with this kind of learning and study. Protestants here also have chiefly managed the business. Beza, Camerarius, Scaliger, Casaubon, Drusius, Gomarus, Ussher, Grotius, Heinsius, Fuller, Dieu, Mede, Cameron, Glassius, Cappellus, Amama, with innumerable others, have excelled in this kind. But the mind of man being exceedingly vainglorious, curious, uncertain, after a door to reputation and renown by this kind of learning was opened in the world, it quickly spread itself over all bounds and limits of sobriety The manifold inconveniences, if not mischiefs, that have ensued on the boldness and curiosity of some in criticising the Scripture, I shall not now insist upon; and of what it might yet grow unto I have often heard the great Ussher expressing his fear. Of the success of Grotius in this way we have

a solid account weekly in the lectures of our learned professor; which I hope he will in due time benefit the public withal. But it is only one or two things that my present design calls upon me to remark.

Among other ways that sundry men have fixed on to exercise their *critical abilities*, one hath been the collecting of various lections both in the Old Testament and New. The first and most honest course fixed on to this purpose was that of consulting various copies, and comparing them among themselves; wherein yet there were sundry miscarriages, as I shall show in the second treatise. This was the work of Erasmus, Stephen, Beza, Arias Montanus, and some others. Some that came after them, finding this province possessed, and no other world of the like nature remaining for them to conquer, fixed upon another way, substituting to the service of their design as pernicious a principle as ever, I think, was fixed on by any learned man since the foundation of the church of Christ, excepting only those of Rome. Now this principle is, that, upon many grounds (which some of them are long in recounting), there are sundry corruptions crept into the originals, which, by their critical faculty, with the use of sundry engines, those especially of the old translations, are to be discovered and removed. And this also receives countenance from those Prolegomena to the Biblia Polyglotta, as will afterward be shown and discussed. Now, this principle being once fixed, and a liberty of criticising on the Scripture, yea, a necessity of it, thence evinced, it is inconceivable what springs of corrections and amendments rise up under their hands. Let me not be thought tedious if I recount some of them to you:—

1. It is known that there is a double consonancy in the Hebrew consonants among themselves,—of some in *figure* that are unlike in *sound*, of some in *sound* that are unlike in *figure*. Of the first sort are ב and כ, ג and נ, י and ו, ו and ז, ז and ן, ד and ר, ם and ס, מ and ט, ה and ח, ח and ת, ע and צ; of the latter are כ and ק, א and ע, ס and ש, ו and ב, צ and ז. Now, this is one principle of our new critics, that the scribes of the Bible were sometimes mistaken by the likeness of the letters in respect of figure, sometimes by their likeness in respect of sound, and so, remembering the words they wrote, oftentimes put one for another; so that whether they used their eyes or their memories, they failed on one hand or another: though the Jews deny any copy amongst them to be written but exactly by pattern, or that it is lawful for a man to write one word in a copy but by pattern, though he could remember the words of the whole Bible. Now, whereas the signification of every word is regulated by its radix, it often falls out that, in the formation and inflection of words, by reason of letters that are defective, there remains but one letter of the radix in them, at least that is pronounced. How frequent this is in this tongue, those who have very little skill in it may guess by only taking a view of Frobenius' Bible, wherein the radical letters are printed in a distinct character from all the prefixes and affixes in their variations. Now, if a man hath a mind to criticise and mend the Bible, it is but taking his word or words that he will fix upon, and try what they will make by the commutation of the letters that are alike in figure and sound. Let him try what כ will do in the place of ב, or the contrary,—which as they are radical or as they are prefixed will sufficiently alter the sense; and so of all the rest mentioned. If by this means any new sense that is tolerable and pleaseth the critic doth emerge, it is but saying the scribe was mistaken in the likeness of the letters or in the affinity of the sound, and then it is no matter though all the copies in the world agree to the contrary, without the least variation. It is evident that this course hath stood Cappellus and Grotius in very good stead; and Simeon de Muis tells us a pretty story of himself to this purpose (Assertio Verit. Heb.) Yea, this is the most eminent spring of the criticisms on the Old Testament that these times afford. A thousand instances might be given to this purpose.

2. But in case this course fail, and no relief be afforded this way, then the *transposition* of letters offers its assistance. Those who know any thing of this language know what alteration in the sense of words may be made by such a way of procedure; frequently words of contrary senses, directly opposite, consist only of the same letters diversely placed. Every lexicon will supply men with instances that need not to be here repeated.

3. The points are taken into consideration; and here bold men may even satisfy their curiosity. That word or those three letters דבר are instanced by Jerome to this purpose. (Hom. ix. 12.) As it may be pointed, it will afford eight several senses: דָּבָר is *verbum*, and דֶּבֶר is *pestis;* as far distant from one another as life and death. Those letters in that order may be read with ⁘ and ⁘ and ⁘ and ⁘ and ⁘ The Jews give instances how by this means men may destroy the world. But,—

4. Suppose that this ground proves barren also, it is but going to an old translation, the Septuagint, or Vulgar Latin, and where any word likes us, to consider what Hebrew word answers unto it, and if it discover an agreement in any one letter, in figure or sound, with the word in that text, then to say that so they read in that copy; yea, rather than fail, be the word as far different from what is read in the Bible as can be imagined, aver it to yield the more convenient sense, and a various lection is found out.

And these are the chief heads and springs of the criticisms on the Old Testament, which, with so great a reputation of learning, men have boldly obtruded on us of late days. It is not imaginable what prejudice the sacred truth of the Scripture, preserved by the infinite love and care of God, hath already suffered hereby; and what it may further suffer, for my part I cannot but tremble to think. Lay but these two principles together—namely, that the points are a late invention of some Judaical Rabbins (on which account there is no reason in the world that we should be bound unto them), and that it is lawful to gather various lections by the help of translations, where there are no diversities in our present copies (which are owned in the Prolegomena to the Biblia Polyglotta),—and for my part I must needs cry out Δὸς ποῦ στῶ, as not seeing any means of being delivered from utter uncertainty in and about all sacred truth. Those who have more wisdom and learning, and are able to look through all the digladiations that are likely to ensue on these principles, I hope will rather take pains to instruct me, and such as I am, than be angry or offended with us that we are not so wise or learned as themselves. In the meantime, I desire those who are shaken in mind by any of the specious pretences of Cappellus and others, to consider the specimen given us of reconciling the difficulties that they lay as the ground of their conjectures, in the Miscellany Notes or Exercitations of the learned Mr Pococke,—as useful and learned a work as is extant in that kind, in so few sheets of paper. The dangerous and causeless attempts of men to rectify our present copies of the Bible, the reader may there also find discovered and confuted.

But we have not as yet done. There is a new invention of Cappellus greatly applauded amongst the men of these opinions. He tells us (Crit. Sacr. lib. vi. cap. 10): "Planum est omnem quæ hodiè est in terrarum orbe linguæ Hebraicæ cognitionem servandam tandem esse et ascribendam Græcæ τῶν LXX. Sacrorum Bibliorum translationi." This is greedily taken up by Morinus (as nothing could be spoken more to his purpose), who also tells us that the learned prefacer to these Biblia Polyglotta is of the same judgment. (Morin. Præfat. ad opusc. Hæbr. Samarit.) Hereupon he informs us, that in the translation of the Pentateuch he went for the meaning of sundry words unto Jerome and the translation of the LXX. But it is not unknown to these learned persons that Jerome, whom one of them makes his rule, tells us over and over, that notwithstanding the transla-

tion of the LXX., he had his knowledge of the Hebrew tongue from the Hebrew itself, and the help of such Hebrews as he hired to his assistance. And [as] for Cappellus, is not that the Helena for which he contends, and in fact the only foundation of his sacred work of criticising on the Scripture, that there was a succession of learned men of the Jews at Tiberias until a hundred years after Jerome, who invented the points of the Hebrew Bible, and that not in an arbitrary manner, but according to the tradition they had received from them who spoke that language in its purity? Shall these men be thought to have had the knowledge of the Hebrew tongue from the translation of the LXX.? Certainly they would not, then, have hated it so, as he informs us they did. But this thing is plainly ridiculous. The language gives us the knowledge of itself. Considering the helps that by Providence have been in all ages and at all times afforded thereunto, ever since the time wherein, Cappellus says, some knew it so well as to invent and affix the present punctuation, there hath been a succession of living or dead masters to further the knowledge of it. And this will not seem strange to them who have given us exact translations of the Persian and Ethiopic pieces of Scripture. In the ἅπαξ λεγόμενα we are a little assisted by the LXX. The chiefest seeming help unto this tongue is from the Arabic.

And thus have I given you a brief account how, by the subtlety of Satan, there are principles crept in even amongst Protestants, undermining the authority of the "Hebrew verity," as it was called of old, wherein Jerusalem hath justified Samaria, and cleared the Papists in their reproaching of the Word of God. Of the New Testament I shall speak particularly in the second discourse ensuing. Morinus, indeed, tells us (De Heb. et Græc. Tex. Sincerit. Exercit., i. cap. 1, p. 5), "It is a jocular thing that the heretics, in their disputations, do grant that there are corruptions and various lections in the Greek and Latin copies of the Scripture, but deny it as to the Hebrew." But why, I pray, is this so *ridiculous?* It is founded on no less stable bottom than this experience, that whereas we evidently find various lections in the Greek copies which we enjoy, and so grant that which ocular inspection evinces to be true, yet although men discover such virulent and bitter spirits against the Hebrew text as this Morinus doth, calling all men fools or knaves that contend for its purity, they are none of them able to show, out of any copies yet extant in the world, or that they can make appear ever to have been extant, that ever there were any such various lections in the originals of the Old Testament. And is there any reason that we should be esteemed *ridiculous*, because, believing our own eyes, we will not also believe the testimony of some few men of no credit with us, asserting that for truth which we have abundant cause to believe to be utterly false? But of these men so far.

I thought, at the entrance of my discourse, to have also insisted on some other ways whereby Satan in these days assaults the sacred truth of the Word of God, in its authority, purity, integrity, or perfection, especially in the poor, deluded, fanatical souls amongst us, commonly called Quakers, for the instruction of the younger sort against whose abominations I have subjoined the theses in the close of the other treatises; but I am sensible how far I have already exceeded the bounds of a preface unto so small treatises as these ensuing, and therefore, giving a brief account of my undertaking in this cause of God and his Word, for the vindication of the authority and integrity of it, I shall put a close to this discourse.

It may be some of you have heard me professing my unwillingness to appear any more in the world this way. I have not, in some things, met with such pleasing entertainment as to encourage me unto it. When I have been for peace, others have made themselves ready for war; some of them, especially one[1] of late,

[1] Giles Firmin, who replied to a work of Dr Owen's upon Schism.—Ed.

neither understanding me nor the things that he writes about,—but his mind for opposition was to be satisfied. This is the manner of not a few in their writings: they measure other men by their own ignorance, and what they know not themselves they think is hid to others also. Hence, when any thing presents itself new to their minds, as though they were the first that knew what they then first know, and which they have only an obscure glimpse of, they rest not until they have published it to their praise. Such are the discourses of that person, partly trivial, partly obviated and rendered utterly useless to his purpose by that treatise which he ventured weakly to oppose. I wish I could prevail with those whose interest compels them to choose rather to be ignorant than to be taught by me to let my books alone. Another,[1] after two or three years' consideration, in answer to a book of near a hundred and forty sheets of paper, returns a scoffing reply to so much of it as was written in a quarter of an hour. I am, therefore, still minded to abstain from such engagements. And I think I may say, if there were less writing by some, there would be more reading by others, at least to more purpose. Many books full of profound learning lie neglected, whilst men spend their time on trifles; and many things of great worth are suppressed by their authors, whilst things of no value are poured out one on the neck of another. One of yourselves[2] I have often solicited for the publishing of some divinity lectures read at solemn times in the university; which (if I know aught) are, to say no more, worthy of public view. I yet hope a short time will answer my desire and expectation. Of my present undertaking there are three parts. The first is a subject that, having preached on, I was by many urged to publish my thoughts upon it, judging it might be useful. I have answered their requests. What I have performed, through the grace of Christ, in the work undertaken, is left to the judgment of the godly, learned reader. The second concerns the Prolegomena and Appendix to the late Biblia Polyglotta. Of this I said often, "Ab alio quovis hoc fieri mallem, quàm à me, sed à me tamen potius quàm à nemine." The reasons of my engaging in that work are declared at large in the entrance of it. The theses in the close were drawn in by their affinity in subject to the other discourses; and, to complete the doctrine of the Scripture concerning the Scripture, I endeavoured to comprise in them the whole truth about the Word of God, as to name and thing, opposed by the poor fanatical Quakers, as also to discover the principles they proceed upon in their confused opposition to that truth.

I have no more to add, but only begging I may have the continuance of your prayers and assistance in your several stations for the carrying on the work of our Lord and Master in this place committed unto us, that I may give in my account with joy and not with grief to Him that stands at the door, I commend you to the powerful word of his grace, and remain, your fellow-labourer and brother, in our dear Lord Jesus,

J. O.

From my Study,
September 22, 1658.

[1] This refers to the elaborate treatise on the "Perseverance of the Saints," which Dr Owen had written in opposition to John Goodwin, and to which that celebrated Arminian replied.—Ed.
[2] Dr Henry Wilkinson, public reader of divinity in the university.

OF

THE DIVINE ORIGINAL,

AUTHORITY, SELF-EVIDENCING LIGHT, AND POWER

OF

THE SCRIPTURES:

WITH

AN ANSWER TO THAT INQUIRY,

HOW WE KNOW THE SCRIPTURES TO BE THE WORD OF GOD.

PREFATORY NOTE.

This interesting treatise originated in the request of several persons, who had heard Owen preaching on the subject, that he would publish the substance of what he had preached. It broaches the great argument of the experimental evidence in favour of the Christian revelation, which he afterwards developed more fully in his "Reason of Faith" (see vol. iv., p. 4), in connection with which the present treatise should be studied. A similar train of reasoning has been prosecuted by Professor Halyburton, in the appendix to his work on Natural and Revealed Religion; by President Edwards, in his treatise on Religious Affections; and by Dr Chalmers, in his Theological Institutes. The last-mentioned author, in a preface to the following work, has recorded his high opinion of its merits:—"Dr Owen's Treatise 'On the Divine Original,' etc., embraces a distinct but most important species of evidence; and this article will be held in high estimation by those who desiderate a satisfactory conviction of the claims of the Bible to divine inspiration, of which he adduces the most solid and indubitable proof." Comparing it with other treatises on the evidences, by Leslie, Lyttelton, Doddridge, Bates, and Baxter, and after awarding a due meed of praise to these writers, he proceeds: "Yet do we hold Dr Owen to have rendered a more essential service to the cause of divine revelation, when, by his clear and irresistible demonstrations, he has proved that the written Word itself possesses a self-evidencing light and power for manifesting its own divine original, superior to the testimony of eye-witnesses, or the evidence of miracles, or those supernatural gifts with which the first teachers of Christianity were endowed for accrediting their divine mission."

ANALYSIS.

Starting with the principle that the authority of revelation depends on its divine origin, he exhibits the claim of the Old Testament Scriptures to this high authority, and unfolds the special providence through which they have been transmitted to us without corruption or mutilation. The same claim is advanced for the New Testament, chap. I. Having proved that the Scriptures are to be received in the exercise of faith, resting directly on the authority of God as its foundation, or as the formal reason of our assent to them as his word, he defines their authority to be their right and power to command and require obedience in the name of God. He enumerates three ways by which their divine origin, and, consequently, their divine authority, are proved:—I. By a *general induction*, which consists of analogical arguments, to the effect that as the stamp of a divine authorship is impressed on creation, so that, apart from any separate and independent testimony from God, it teems with evidence of a divine original, so in the Word the intrinsic evidence of a divine original may reasonably be expected, and is actually to be found, chap. II.; II. By the *testimonies which the Word itself contains* to its own character and claims; and, III. By *innate arguments*, evidence springing intrinsically from the Word, in the influence with which it operates on the mind and conscience. This self-evidencing property of Scripture is unfolded under a reference to the light which it imparts, and its spiritual efficacy to renew and sanctify, chap. III., IV. He explains what is meant by "the testimony of the Spirit," discriminating it from popish and fanatical errors: he proceeds to reject the authority of *tradition*, and to indicate the true place of *miracles* in the evidences of Christianity, chap. V. Two supplementary arguments close the treatise, designed to prove still further the self-evidencing power of the Word, and derived,—1. From the nature of the doctrines contained in the Word, such as their universal adaptation and peculiarly glorious character; and, 2. From the harmony and connection subsisting among all the parts of Scripture.—Ed.

THE DIVINE ORIGINAL OF THE SCRIPTURE.

CHAPTER I.

The divine original of the Scripture the sole foundation of its authority—The original of the Old Testament—The peculiar manner of the revelation of the word—The written word, as written, preserved by the providence of God—Cappellus' opinion about various lections considered—The Scripture not ἰδίας ἐπιλύσεως—The true meaning of that expression—Entirely from God, to the least tittle—Of the Scriptures of the New Testament, and their peculiar prerogative.

THAT the whole authority of the Scripture in itself depends solely on its divine original, is confessed by all who acknowledge its authority. The evincing and declaration of that authority being the thing at present aimed at, the discovery of its divine spring and rise is, in the first place, necessarily to be premised thereunto. That foundation being once laid, we shall be able to educe our following reasons and arguments, wherein we aim more at weight than number, from their own proper principles.

As to the original of the Scripture of the Old Testament, it is said, God SPAKE, πάλαι ἐν τοῖς προφήταις, (Heb. i. 1,) "of old, or formerly, in the prophets." From the days of Moses the lawgiver, and downwards, unto the consignation and bounding of the canon delivered to the Judaical Church, in the days of Ezra and his companions, אַנְשֵׁי כְּנֶסֶת הַגְּדוֹלָה, the "men of the great congregation"—so God spake. This being done only among the Jews, they, as his church, ἐπιστεύθησαν τὰ λόγια τοῦ Θεοῦ, (Rom. iii. 2, ix. 4,) were "intrusted with the oracles of God." God spake, ἐν τοῖς προφήταις; ἐν for διά, (Chrysostom, Theophylact,) *in* for *by*: διὰ τῶν προφητῶν, "by the prophets," as Luke i. 70, διὰ στόματος τῶν ἁγίων προφητῶν, "by the mouth of the holy prophets." But there seems to be somewhat further intended in this expression.

In the exposition, or giving out the eternal counsel of the mind and will of God unto men, there is considerable [*to be considered*]: 1. His speaking *unto* the prophets; and, 2. His speaking *by* them unto us. In this expression, it seems to be that בַּת קוֹל, or *filia vocis*—that voice from heaven that came to the prophets—which is understood. So God spake in the prophets; and in reference thereunto there is propriety in that expression, ἐν τοῖς προφήταις—"in the pro-

phets." Thus the Psalms are many of them said to be, *To this* or that man. מִכְתָּם לְדָוִד, "A golden psalm to David"—that is, from the Lord; and from thence their tongue was as the "pen of a writer." (Ps. xlv. 1.) So God spake *in* them, before he spake *by* them.

The various ways of special revelation, by dreams, visions, audible voices, inspirations, with that peculiar one of the lawgiver under the Old Testament called פָּנִים אֶל־פָּנִים, "face to face," (Exod. xxxiii. 11; Deut. xxxiv. 10) and פֶּה אֶל־פֶּה, (Numb. xii. 8,) with that which is compared with it and exalted above it (Heb. i. 1–3) in the New, by the Son, viz., ἐκ κόλπου τοῦ πατρός, "from the bosom of the Father," (John i. 17, 18,) are not of my present consideration—all of them belonging to the *manner* of the thing inquired after, not the thing itself.

By the assertion, then, laid down, of God "speaking in the prophets of old," from the beginning to the end of that long tract of time (consisting of one thousand years) wherein he gave out the writings of the Old Testament, two things are ascertained unto us, which are the foundation of our present discourse.

1. That the laws they made known, the doctrines they delivered, the instructions they gave, the stories they recorded, the promises of Christ, the prophecies of gospel times they gave out and revealed, were not their own, not conceived in their minds, not formed by their reasonings, not retained in their memories from what they heard, not by any means beforehand comprehended by them, (1 Pet. i. 10, 11,) but were all of them immediately from God—there being only a passive concurrence of their rational faculties in their reception, without any such active obedience as by any law they might be obliged unto. Hence,

2. God was so with them, and by the Holy Ghost so spake in them—as to their receiving of the Word from him, and their delivering of it unto others by speaking or writing—as that they were not themselves enabled, by any habitual light, knowledge, or conviction of truth, to declare his mind and will, but only acted as they were immediately moved by him. Their tongue in what they said, or their hand in what they wrote, was עֵט סוֹפֵר, no more at their own disposal than the pen is in the hand of an expert writer.

Hence, as far as their own personal concernments, as saints and believers, did lie in them, they are said ἐρευνᾶν, "to make a diligent inquiry into, and investigation of," the things which ἐδήλου τὸ ἐν αὐτοῖς Πνεῦμα Χριστοῦ, the "Spirit of Christ that spake in themselves did signify." (1 Pet. i. 10, 11.) Without this, though their visions were express, so that in them their eyes were said to be open, (Numb. xxiv. 3, 4,) yet they understood them not. Therefore, also, they studied the writings and prophecies of one another. (Dan. ix. 2.) Thus they attained a saving, useful, habitual knowledge of the truths delivered

by themselves and others, by the illumination of the Holy Ghost, through the study of the Word, even as we. (Ps. cxix. 104.) But as to the receiving of the Word from God, as God spake in them, they obtained nothing by study or meditation, by inquiry or reading. (Amos vii. 15.) Whether we consider the *matter* or manner of what they received and delivered, or their receiving and delivering of it, they were but as an instrument of music, giving a sound according to the hand, intention, and skill of him that strikes it.

This is variously expressed. Generally, it is said דְּבָר הָיָה "the word was" to this or that prophet, which we have rendered "the word came" unto them. Ezek. i. 3: הָיֹה הָיָה דְבַר, it "came expressly;" "essendo fuit"—it had a subsistence given unto it, or an effectual in-being, by the Spirit's entering into him. (Ver. 14.) Now, this coming of the word unto them had oftentimes such a greatness and expression of the majesty of God upon it, as filled them with dread and reverence of him, (Hab. iii. 16,) and also greatly affected even their outward man. (Dan. viii. 27.) But this dread and terror (which Satan strove to imitate in his filthy tripods, and *ἐγγαστρίμυθοι*) was peculiar to the Old Testament, and belonged to the pedagogy thereof. (Heb. xii. 18–21.) The Spirit, in the declaration of the New Testament, gave out his mind and will in a way of more liberty and glory. (2 Cor. iii.) The expressness and immediacy of revelation was the same; but the manner of it related more to that glorious liberty in fellowship and communion with the Father, whereunto believers had then an access provided them by Jesus Christ. (Heb. ix. 8, x. 19, 20, xii. 22-24.) So our Saviour tells his apostles, (Matt. x. 20,) *οὐχ ὑμεῖς ἐστε οἱ λαλοῦντες*, "You are not the speakers" of what you deliver, as other men are, the figment and imagination of whose hearts are the fountain of all that they speak; and he adds this reason, *Τὸ γὰρ Πνεῦμα τοῦ πατρὸς τὸ λαλοῦν ἐν ὑμῖν*, "The Spirit of the Father *is* that which speaketh in you." Thus, the word that came unto them was a book which they took *in* and gave *out* without any alteration of one tittle or syllable. (Ezek. ii. 8–10, iii. 3; Rev. x. 9–11.)

Moreover, when the word was thus come to the prophets, and God had spoken in them, it was not in their power to conceal it, the hand of the Lord being strong upon them. They were not now only, on a general account, to utter the truth they were made acquainted withal, and to speak the things they had heard and seen, (which was their common preaching work,) according to the analogy of what they had received, (Acts iv. 20,) but, also, the very individual words that they had received were to be declared. When the word was come to them, it was as a fire within them, that must be delivered, or it would consume them. (Ps. xxxix. 3; Jer. xx. 9; Amos iii. 8, vii. 15, 16.) So

Jonah found his attempt to hide the word that he had received to be altogether vain.

Now, because these things are of great importance, and the foundation of all that doth ensue—viz., the discovery that the Word is come forth unto us from God, without the least mixture or intervenience of any medium obnoxious to fallibility, (as is the wisdom, truth, integrity, knowledge, and memory, of the best of all men,)—I shall further consider it from one full and eminent declaration thereof, given unto us, 2 Pet. i. 20, 21. The words of the Holy Ghost are, *Τοῦτο πρῶτον γινώσκοντες, ὅτι πᾶσα προφητεία γραφῆς, ἰδίας ἐπιλύσεως οὐ γίνεται· οὐ γὰρ θελήματι ἀνθρώπου ἠνέχθη ποτὲ προφητεία, ἀλλ' ὑπὸ Πνεύματος ἁγίου φερόμενοι ἐλάλησαν οἱ ἅγιοι Θεοῦ ἄνθρωποι*—"Knowing this first, that no prophecy of Scripture is of any private interpretation; for the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man, but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost."

That which he speaks of is *προφητεία γραφῆς*, the "prophecy of Scripture," or written prophecy.

There were then traditions among the Jews to whom Peter wrote, exalting themselves into competition with the written Word, and which not long after got the title of an oral law, pretending to have its original from God. These the apostle tacitly condemns; and also shows under what formality he considered that which (verse 19) he termed *λόγος προφητικός*, the "word of prophecy;" viz., as *written*. The written Word, as such, is that whereof he speaks. Above fifty times is *ἡ γραφή*, or *αἱ γραφαί*, in the New Testament, put absolutely for the Word of God. And מִכְתָּב is so used in the Old for the word of prophecy. (2 Chron. xxi. 12.) It is the *ἡ γραφή* that is *θεόπνευστος*, (2 Tim. iii. 16,) "the writing, or word written, is by inspiration from God." Not only the doctrine in it, but the *γραφή* itself, or the "doctrine as written," is so from him.

Hence, the providence of God hath manifested itself no less concerned in the preservation of the writings than of the doctrine contained in them; the writing itself being the product of his own eternal counsel for the preservation of the doctrine, after a sufficient discovery of the insufficiency of all other means for that end and purpose. And hence the malice of Satan hath raged no less against the book than against the truth contained in it. The dealings of Antiochus under the Old Testament, and of sundry persecuting emperors under the New, evince no less. And it was no less crime of old to be *traditor libri* than to be *abnegator fidei*. The reproach of *chartacea scripta*, and *membranæ*, (Coster. Enchirid., cap. i.), reflects on its author.[1] It is true, we have not the *Αὐτόγραφα* of Moses and the prophets, of the

[1] Hebræa volumina nec in una dictione corrupta invenies. Sant. Pag. *ἰῶτα ἓν ἢ μία κεραία οὐ μὴ παρέλθῃ.* (Matt. v. 18.)

apostles and evangelists; but the ἀπόγραφα or "copies" which we have contain every *iota* that was in them.

There is no doubt but that in the copies we now enjoy of the Old Testament there are some diverse readings, or various lections. The קְרִי וּכְתִיב,[1] the תִּקּוּן סוֹפְרִים,[2] the עִטּוּר סוֹפְרִים,[3] (for the סְבִירִין are of another nature,)—the various lections of Ben Asher, or Rabbi Aaron the son of Rabbi Moses of the tribe of Asher, and Ben Naphtali, or Rabbi Moses the son of David of the tribe of Naphtali—the lections also of the eastern and western Jews, which we have collected at the end of the great Bible with the Masora—evince it. But yet we affirm, that the whole Word of God, in every letter and tittle, as given from him by inspiration, is preserved without corruption. Where there is any variety it is always in things of less, indeed of no, importance.[4] God by his providence preserving the whole entire, suffered this lesser variety to fall out, in or among the copies we have, for the quickening and exercising of our diligence in our search into his Word.

It was an unhappy attempt, (which must afterward be spoken unto,) that a learned man[5] hath of late put himself upon, viz., to prove variations in all the present Ἀπόγραφα of the Old Testament in the Hebrew tongue from the copies used of old, merely upon *uncertain conjectures* and the credit of *corrupt translations.* Whether that plea of his be more unreasonable in itself and devoid of any real ground of truth, or injurious to the love and care of God over his Word and church, I know not; sure I am, it is both in a high degree. The translation especially insisted on by him is that of the LXX. That this translation—either from the mistakes of its first authors, (if it be theirs whose name and number it bears,) or the carelessness, or ignorance, or worse, of its transcribers—is corrupted and gone off from the original in a thousand places twice told, is acknowledged by all who know aught of these things. Strange that so corrupt a stream should be judged a fit means to cleanse the fountain; that such a Lesbian rule should be thought a fit measure to correct the original by; and yet on the account hereof, with some others not one whit better, (or scarce so good,) we have one thousand eight hundred and twenty-six various lections exhibited unto us, with frequent insinuations of an infinite number more yet

[1] Reading, in the margin, and writing, in the line.

[2] Correctio scribarum, or the amendment of some small *apiculi* in eighteen places.

[3] Ablatio scribarum, or a note of the redundancy of ו in five places. (Vid. Raymund., Pugio Fid. Petrus Galat., lib. i. cap. 8.)

[4] Hebræi V. T. Codices per universum terrarum orbem, per Europam, Asiam, et Africam, ubique sibi sunt similes, eodêmque modo ab omnibus scribuntur et leguntur; si forte exiguas quasdam apiculorum quorundam differentias excipias, quæ ipsæ tamen nullam varietatem efficiunt. (Bux. Vin. Ver. Heb. ii. cap. 14.)

[5] Ludovicus Cappellus, in his "Critica Sacra."

to be collected. It were desirable that men would be content to show their learning, reading, and diligence, about things where there is less danger in adventures.

Nor is the relief Cappellus provides against the charge of bringing things to an uncertainty in the Scripture, (which he found himself obnoxious unto,) less pernicious than the opinion he seeks to palliate thereby; although it be since taken up and approved by others.[1] "The saving doctrine of the Scripture," he tells us,[2] "as to the matter and substance of it, in all things of moment, is preserved in the copies of the original and translations that do remain."

It is indeed a great relief against the inconvenience of corrupt translations, to consider that although some of them be bad enough, yet, if all the errors and mistakes that are to be found in all the rest should be added to the worst of all, every necessary, saving, fundamental truth, would be found sufficiently testified unto therein. But to depress the sacred truth of the originals into such a condition as wherein it should stand in need of this apology, and that without any colour or pretence from discrepancies in the copies themselves that are extant, or any tolerable evidence that there ever were any other in the least differing from these extant in the world, will at length be found a work unbecoming a Christian, Protestant divine. Besides the injury done hereby to the providence of God towards his church, and care of his Word, it will not be found so easy a matter, upon a supposition of such corruption in the originals as is pleaded for, to evince unquestionably that the whole saving doctrine itself, at first given out from God, continues entire and incorrupt. The nature of this doctrine is such, that there is no other principle or means of its discovery, no other rule or measure of judging and determining any thing about or concerning it, but only the writing from whence it is taken; it being wholly of divine revelation, and that revelation being expressed only in that writing. Upon any corruption, then, supposed therein, there is no means of rectifying it. It were an easy thing to correct a mistake or corruption in the transcription of any problem or demonstration of Euclid, or any other ancient mathematician, from the consideration of the things themselves about which they treat being always the same, and in their own nature equally exposed to the knowledge and

[1] Proleg. ad Bibl. Polyglot.

[2] Satis ergo est quod eadem salutaris doctrina quæ fuit à Mose, prophetis, apostolis et evangelistis in suis αὐτογράφοις primum literis consignata, eadem omnino pariter in textibus Græco et Hebræo, et in translationibus cum veteribus, tum recentibus, clarè certò et sufficienter inveniatur. Pariter illæ omnes unà cum textibus Græco et Hebræo sunt et dici possunt authenticæ, sacræ, divinæ, διότνιυστοι—respectu materiæ, &c. Sunt in Scripturis multa alia non usque adeo scitu necessaria, &c. (Cappel. Critic. Sac., lib. vi. cap. 5, § 10, 11.)

understanding of men in all ages. In things of pure revelation—whose knowledge depends solely on their revelation—it is not so. Nor is it enough to satisfy us, that the doctrines mentioned are preserved entire; every tittle and ἰῶτα in the Word of God must come under our care and consideration, as being, as such, from God. But of these things we shall treat afterward at large. Return we now to the apostle.

This προφητεία γραφῆς, this written prophecy, this λόγος προφητικος, saith he, ἰδίας ἐπιλύσεως οὐ γίνεται—"is not of any private interpretation." Some think that ἐπιλύσεως is put for ἐπηλύσεως or ἐπελεύσεως, which, according to Hesychius, denotes afflation, inspiration, conception within: so Calvin. In this sense, the importance of the words is the same with what I have already mentioned, viz., that the prophets had not their private conceptions, or self-fancied enthusiasms, of the things they spake. To this interpretation assents Grotius. And ἐπηλύσεως for ἐπιλύσεως is reckoned amongst the various lections that are gathered out of him, in the appendix to the Biblia Polyglotta. Thus ἰδίας ἐπιλύσεως οὐ γίνεται is the other side of that usual expression, ἐπῆλθεν ἐπ' ἐμὲ ὁ λόγος, or τὸ πνεῦμα. Camero contends for the retaining of ἐπιλύσεως; and justly. We begin a little too late to see whither men's bold conjectures, in correcting the original text of the Scriptures, are like to proceed. Here is no colour for a various lection. One copy, it seems, by Stephen, read διαλύσεως, without ground, by an evident error; and such mistakes are not to be allowed the name or place of various readings. But yet, says Camero, ἐπίλυσις is such a "resolution" and interpretation as is made by revelation. He adds, that in that sense ἐπιλύειν is used by the LXX. in the business of Joseph's interpretation of Pharaoh's dream, (Gen. xl.,) which was by revelation. But indeed the word is not used in that chapter. However, he falls in with this sense—as do Calvin and Grotius—that ἰδίας ἐπιλύσεως is not to be referred to our interpretation of the prophets, but to the way and manner of their receiving the counsel and will of God.

And, indeed, ἰδίας ἐπιλύσεως οὐ γίνεται—taking ἐπίλυσις for an interpretation of the word of prophecy given out by writing, as our translation bears it—is an expression that can scarcely have any tolerable sense affixed unto it. Γίνεται, or οὐ γίνεται, relates here to προφητεία γραφῆς, and denotes the first giving out of the Word, not our after-consideration of its sense and meaning. And without this sense it stands in no coherence with, nor opposition to, the following sentence, which, by its causal connection to this, manifests that it renders a reason of what is herein affirmed in the first place; and in the latter—turning with the adversative ἀλλά—an opposition unto it: Οὐ γὰρ θελήματι ἀνθρώπου ἠνέχθη ποτὲ προφητεία, ἀλλ' ὑπὸ Πνεύματος ἁγίου

φερόμενοι ἐλάλησαν ἅγιοι Θεοῦ ἄνθρωποι.—"For prophecy came not at any time by the will of man, but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost." What reason is in the first part of this verse why the Scripture is not of our private interpretation? or what opposition in the latter to that assertion? Nay, on that supposal, there is no tolerable correspondency of discourse in the whole περιοχή. But take the word to express the coming of the prophecy to the prophets themselves, and the sense is full and clear.

This, then, is the intention of the apostle: The prophecy which we have written—the Scripture—was not an issue of men's fancied enthusiasms, not a product of their own minds and conceptions, not an interpretation of the will of God by the understanding of man—that is, of the prophets themselves. Neither their rational apprehensions, inquiries, conceptions of fancy, or imaginations of their hearts, had any place in this business; no self-affiation, no rational meditation, managed at liberty by the understanding and will of men, had place herein.

Of this saith the apostle, Τοῦτο πρῶτον γινώσκοντες·—"Knowing, judging, and determining this in the first place:" "this is a principle to be owned and acknowledged by every one that will believe any thing else" Γινώσκω is not only to know, to perceive, to understand; but also to judge, own, and acknowledge. This, then, in our religion, is to be owned, acknowledged, submitted unto, as a principle, without further dispute. To discover the grounds of this submission and acknowledgment is the business of the ensuing discourse.

That this is so indeed, as before asserted, and to give a reason why this is to be received as a principle, he adds, (verse 21,) Οὐ γὰρ θελήματι ἀνθρώπου ἠνέχθη ποτὲ προφητεία. That word of prophecy which we have written, is not ἰδίας ἐπιλύσεως—"of private conception"—"for it came not at any time by the will of man." Ἠνέχθη, which is the passive conjugation of φέρω from ἐνέγκω, denotes at least to be "brought in"—more than merely it "came"—it was brought into them by the will of God. The affirmative, as to the will of God, is included in the negative, as to the will of man; or it came as the voice from heaven to our Saviour on the mount. (Verse 18, where the same word is used.) So Ezek. i. 3, הָיָה הָיָה דְבַר, "essendo fuit verbum," it was brought into him, as was showed before. Thus God brought the word to them, and spake *in* them, in order of nature, before he spake *by* them. As ἠνέχθη, it was brought to them, it was קוֹל יְהוָה, "the voice of the Lord," (Gen. iii. 8,) or בַּת קוֹל, as the Jews call it: as spoken by them, or written, it was properly דְּבַר־יְהוָה, "verbum Dei," "the word of God," which by his immediate voice he signified to the prophets. Thus some of them, in visions, first ate a written book and then prophesied, as was instanced before. And this is the first spring

of the Scripture—the beginning of its emanation from the counsel and will of God. By the power of the Holy Ghost it was brought into the organs or instruments that he was pleased to use, for the revelation and declaration of it unto others.

That which remains for the completing of this dispensation of the Word of God unto us is added by the apostle: Ὑπὸ Πνεύματος ἁγίου φερόμενοι ἐλάλησαν ἅγιοι Θεοῦ ἄνθρωποι. When the word was thus brought to them, it was not left to their understandings, wisdoms, minds, memories, to order, dispose, and give it out; but they were borne, acted, [actuated,] carried out by the Holy Ghost, to speak, deliver, and write all that, and nothing but that—to every tittle—that was so brought to them. They invented not words themselves, suited to the things they had learned, but only expressed the words that they received. Though their mind and understanding were used in the choice of words, (whence arise all the differences—that is, in their manner of expression—for they did use דִּבְרֵי חֵפֶץ "words of will," or choice,) yet they were so guided, that their words were not their own, but immediately supplied unto them. And so they gave out כָּתוּב יֹשֶׁר, the "writing of uprightness," and דִּבְרֵי אֱמֶת, "words of truth" itself. (Eccles. xii. 10.) Not only the *doctrine* they taught was the word of truth—truth itself, (John xvii. 17,)—but the *words* whereby they taught it were words of truth from God himself. Thus, allowing the contribution of passive instruments for the reception and representation of words—which answer the mind and tongue of the prophets, in the coming of the voice of God to them—every apex of the written Word is equally divine, and as immediately from God as the voice wherewith, or whereby, he spake to or in the prophets; and is, therefore, accompanied with the same authority in itself, and unto us.

What hath been thus spoken of the scripture of the Old Testament, must be also affirmed of the New, with this addition of advantage and pre-eminence, viz., that ἀρχὴν ἔλαβεν λαλεῖσθαι διὰ τοῦ Κυρίου, (Heb. ii. 3,) "it received its beginning of being spoken by the Lord himself." God spake in these last days, ἐν τῷ Υἱῷ, "in the Son." (Heb. i. 2.)

Thus God, who himself began the writing of the Word with his own finger, (Exod. xxxi. 18,)—after he had spoken it, (Exod. xx.,) appointing or approving the writing of the rest that followed, (Deut. xxxi. 12; Josh. xxiii. 6; 1 Kings ii. 3; 2 Kings xiv. 6, xvii. 13; 1 Chron. xxii. 13; 2 Chron. xxv. 4; Ezek. ii. 8–10; Hab. ii. 2; Luke xvi. 29; John v. 39, xx. 31; Acts xvii. 11,)—doth lastly command the close of the immediate revelation of his will to be written in a book; (Rev. i. 11;) and so gives out the whole of his mind and counsel unto us in writing, as a merciful and stedfast relief against all that confusion, darkness, and uncertainty, which the vanity, folly, and looseness of the minds of men—drawn out and heightened by the unspeak-

able alterations that fall out amongst them—would otherwise have certainly run into.

Thus we have laid down the original of the Scriptures from the Scripture itself. And this original is the basis and foundation of all its authority. Thus is it from God—entirely from him. As to the doctrine contained in it, and the words wherein that doctrine is delivered, it is wholly his; what *that* speaks, *he* speaks himself. He speaks in it and by it; and so it is vested with all the moral authority of God over his creatures.

CHAPTER II.

The main question proposed to consideration—How we may know assuredly the Scripture to be the word of God—The Scripture to be received by divine faith—The authority of God the foundation—The way whereby that authority is evidenced or made known—The various ways of God's revealing himself and his mind—1. By his works; 2. By the light of nature; 3. By his word—All of these evince themselves to be from him, his word especially.

Having laid, in the foregoing chapter, the foundation that we are to build and proceed upon, I come now to lay down the inquiry, whose resolution must thence be educed. That, then, which we are seeking after, is, how we, and the rest of men in the world, who, through the merciful dispensation of God, have the book or books wherein the scripture given out from him (as above declared) is contained, or said to be contained—we, who live so many ages from the last person who received any part of it immediately from God, or who have not received it immediately ourselves—may come to be ascertained, [assured,] as to all ends and purposes wherein we may be concerned therein, that the whole and entire written word in that book, or those books, hath the original, and consequently the authority, that it pleads and avows—viz., that it is ἐξ οὐρανοῦ, and not ἐξ ἀνθρώπων, from God, in the way and manner laid down, and not the invention of men, attending to σεσοφισμένοις μύθοις, (2 Pet. i. 16,) or "cunningly devised fables."

Now, seeing it is expected from us, and required of us, by God himself, and that on the penalty of his eternal displeasure if we fail in our duty, (2 Thess. i. 7–10,) that we receive the Scripture not as we do other books—in relation to their authors—with a firm opinion, built on prevailing probable arguments, prevalent against any actual conclusions to the contrary—but with divine and supernatural faith—omitting all such inductions as serve only to ingenerate a persuasion not to be cast out of the mind by contrary reasonings or objections—it is especially inquired, What is the foundation and formal reason of our doing so, if we so do? Whatever that be, it returns an answer to this important question, "Why, or on what account, do you

believe the Scriptures, or books of the Old and New Testament, to be the word of God?" Now the formal reason of things being but one—whatever consideration may be had of other inducements or arguments to beget in us a persuasion that the Scripture is the word of God, yet they have no influence on that divine faith wherewith we are bound to believe them. They may, indeed, be of some use to repel the objections that are, or may be, raised against the truth we believe—and so indirectly cherish and further faith itself—but as to a concurrence unto the foundation, or formal reason, of our believing, it is not capable of it.

Having, then, laid down the divine original of the Scriptures, and opened the manner of the Word's coming forth from God, an answer shall now, on that sole foundation, be returned to the inquiry laid down. And this I shall do in the ensuing position :—

The authority of God, the supreme Lord of all, the first and only absolute Truth, whose word is truth—speaking in and by the penmen of the Scriptures—evinced singly in and by the Scripture itself—is the sole bottom and foundation, or formal reason, of our assenting to those Scriptures as his word, and of our submitting our hearts and consciences unto them with that faith and obedience which morally respect him, and are due to him alone.

God speaking *in* the penmen of the Scripture, (Heb. i. 1,) his voice to them was accompanied with its own evidence, which gave assurance unto them; and God speaking *by* them or their writings unto us, his word is accompanied with its own evidence, and gives assurance unto us. His authority and veracity did, and do, in the one and the other, sufficiently manifest themselves, that men may quietly repose their souls upon them, in believing and obedience. Thus are we built ἐπὶ τῷ θεμελίῳ τῶν ἀποστόλων καὶ προφητῶν, (Eph. ii. 20,) "on the foundation of the apostles and prophets," in our believing.

That, then, which (to the establishment of the souls of believers) I shall labour to prove and evince, is plainly this, viz., that the Scriptures of the Old and New Testament do abundantly and uncontrollably manifest themselves to be the word of the living God; so that, merely on the account of their own proposal of themselves unto us in the name and majesty of God, as such—without the contribution of help or assistance from tradition, church, or any thing else without themselves—we are obliged, upon the penalty of eternal damnation, (as are all to whom by any means they come, or are brought,) to receive them, with that subjection of soul which is due to the word of God. The authority of God shining in them, they afford unto us all the divine evidence of themselves which God is willing to grant unto us, or can be granted us, or is any way needful for us. So, then, the authority of the written Word—in itself

and unto us—is from itself, as the Word of God; and the eviction of that authority unto us, is by itself.

When the authority of the Scripture is inquired after, strictly *its power to command and require obedience, in the name of God*, is intended. To ask, then, whence it hath its authority, is to ask whence it hath its power to command in the name of God. Surely men will not say, that the Scripture hath its power to command in the name of God from any thing but itself. And it is, indeed, a contradiction for men to say that they give authority to the Scriptures. Why do they do so? why do they give this authority to that book rather than another? They must say, Because it is the Word of God. So the reason why they give authority unto it is the formal reason of all its authority, which it hath antecedently to their charter and concession of power: Ὁ λόγος ὁ σὸς ἀλήθειά ἐστι, (John xvii. 17,) "Thy word is truth."

Some say, indeed, that the Scripture hath its authority in itself, and from itself, or its own divine original, but not *quoad nos*, "in respect of us;" [that in order] that it may reach us, that we may know, and understand, and submit to its authority, it must be testified unto *aliunde*, "from some other person or thing," appointed thereunto.

Ans. 1. But may not this be said of God himself, as well as of his Word? If God reveal himself to us, it must be by means; and if those means may not be understood to reveal him unless they are testified unto from somewhat else, God cannot reveal himself to us. "Si Deus hominibus non placuerit, utique Deus non erit." If God and his Word will keep themselves within themselves, to themselves, they may be God and his Word still, and keep their authority; but if they will deal with us, and put forth their commands to us, let them look that they get the church's testimonials—or, on this principle, they may be safely rejected! But,

2. Authority is a thing that no person or thing can have in him or itself, that hath it not in respect of *others*. In its very nature it relates to others that are subject unto it. All authority arises from relation, and answers to it throughout. The authority of God over his creatures, is from their relation to him as their Creator. A king's authority is in respect of his subjects; and he who hath no subjects hath no kingly authority in himself, but is only a stoical king. The authority of a minister relates to his flock; and he who hath no flock hath no authority of a minister: if he have not a ministerial authority, in reference to a flock, a people, a church, he hath none, he can have none in himself. So is it in this case; if the Scripture hath no authority from itself in respect of us, it hath none in itself, nor can have. If it hath it in itself, it hath it in respect of us. Such a respect—that is, a right to command and oblige to obedience—is as inseparable from authority, or a moral power, as heat is from

fire. It is true, a man may have, *de jure*, a lawful authority over those whom, *de facto*, he cannot force or compel to obedience. But want of force doth not lessen authority. God loseth not his authority over men though he put not forth towards them ὑπερβάλλον μέγεθος τῆς δυνάμεως, or ἐνέργειαν τοῦ κράτους τῆς ἰσχύος, "the greatness of his power, or the efficacy of the might of his strength," to cause them to obey. It is fond, [foolish,] then, to imagine that a man, or any thing, should have an authority in himself or itself, and yet not have that authority in respect of them who are to be subject thereunto. That is not a law properly at all, which is not a law to some. Besides, all the evil of disobedience relates to the authority of him that requires the obedience. (James ii. 10, 11.) No action is disobedience, but from the subjection of him who performs it unto him who requires obedience. And, therefore, if the Scripture hath not an authority in itself towards us, there is no evil in our disobedience unto its commands, or in our not doing what it commandeth; and our doing what it forbiddeth is not disobedience, because it hath not an authority over us. I speak of it as considered in itself, before the accession of the testimony pretended [to be] necessary to give it an authority over us. Hitherto, then, have we carried this objection—To disobey the commands of the Scripture before the communication of a testimony unto it by men is no sin. *Credat Apella.*

The sense, then, of our position, is evident and clear; and so our answer to the inquiry made. The Scripture hath all its authority from its Author, both in itself and in respect of us. That it hath the Author and original pleaded for, it declares itself, without any other assistance—by the ways and means that shall afterward be insisted on. The truth whereof I shall now confirm—1*st*, By one general induction; 2*d*, By testimonies; 3*d*, By arguments, expressing the ways and means of its revelation of itself.

There are three ways whereby God, in several degrees, revealeth himself, his properties, his mind, and will, to the sons of men.

1. He doth it by his *works*, both of creation and providence. "All thy works praise thee." (Ps. cxlv. 10, &c.) "The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament showeth his handywork. Day unto day uttereth speech, and night unto night showeth knowledge. There is no speech nor language where their voice is not heard. Their line is gone out through all the earth, and their words to the end of the world." (Ps. xix. 1-4, &c.) So Job xxxvii., xxxviii., xxxix., throughout. "God, who made heaven and earth, and the sea, and all things that are therein, in times past suffered all nations to walk in their own ways; yet he left not himself without witness, in that he did good, and gave us rain from heaven, and fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladness."

(Acts xiv. 15–17.) And, "God, that made the world, and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands; neither is worshipped with men's hands, as though he needed any thing, seeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all things; and hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation," ζητεῖν τὸν Κύριον εἰ ἄραγε ψηλαφήσειαν αὐτὸν καὶ εὕροιεν, "that they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after him, and find him." (Acts xvii. 24–27.) "For that which may be known of God is manifest in them, for God hath showed it unto them; for the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead." (Rom. i. 18–20.) All which places (God assisting) shall be opened, before long, in another treatise.[1] The sum of them amounts to what was before laid down, viz., that God reveals and declares himself unto us by the works of his hands.

2. God declares himself—his sovereign power and authority, his righteousness and holiness—by the innate (or ingrafted) *light of nature*, and principles of the consciences of men. That indispensable moral obedience which he requireth of us, as his creatures, and subject to his law, is in general thus made known unto us. For "the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law; these, having not the law, are a law unto themselves; which show the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another." (Rom. ii. 14, 15.) By the light that God hath indelibly implanted in the minds of men—accompanied with a moral instinct of good and evil, seconded by that self-judgment which he hath placed in us, in reference to his own judgment over us—doth he reveal himself unto the sons of men.

3. God reveals himself by his *Word*, as is confessed. It remains, then, that we inquire how we may know and be ascertained that these things are not deceivable pretences, but that God doth indeed so reveal himself by them.

The works of God (as to what is his will to teach and reveal of himself by them) have that expression of God upon them—that stamp and character of his eternal power and Godhead—that evidence with them that they are his—that, wherever they are seen and considered, they undeniably evince that they are so, and that what they teach concerning him, they do it in his name and authority. There is no need of traditions, no need of miracles, no need of the authority of any churches, to convince a rational creature that the works of God are his, and his only; and that he is eternal and infinite in

[1] Θεολογούμενα, sive De Natura, Ortu, et Studio Theologiæ.

power that made them. They carry about with them their own authority. By being *what* they are, they declare *whose* they are. To reveal God by his works, there is need of nothing but that they be by themselves represented, or objected to the consideration of rational creatures.

The voice of God in nature is in like manner effectual. It declares itself to be from God by its own light and authority. There is no need to convince a man by substantial witnesses, that what his conscience speaks, it speaks from God. Whether it bear testimony to the being, righteousness, power, omniscience, or holiness of God himself—or whether it call for that moral obedience which is eternally and indispensably due to Him, and so shows forth the "work of the law in the heart"—it so speaks and declares itself, that without further evidence or reasoning, without the advantage of any considerations but what are by itself supplied, it discovers its Author, from whom it is, and in whose name it speaks. Those κοιναὶ ἔννοιαι, καὶ προλήψεις, "those common notions and general presumptions" of Him and His authority, that are inlaid in the natures of rational creatures by the hand of God, to this end, that they might make a revelation of Him as to the purposes mentioned, are able to plead their own divine original, without the least contribution of strength or assistance from without.

And thus is it with those things. Now, the Psalmist says unto God, (Ps. cxxxviii. 2,) "Thou hast magnified" עַל־כָּל־שִׁמְךָ אִמְרָתֶךָ "over all thy name, thy Word" [which] thou hast spoken. The name of God is all that whereby he makes himself known. Over all this God magnifies his Word. It all lies in a subserviency thereunto. The name of God is not here God himself, but every thing whereby God makes himself known. Now, it were very strange, that those low, dark, and obscure principles and means of the revelation of God and his will, which we have mentioned, should be able to evince themselves to be from him, without any external help, assistance, testimony, or authority; and [that] that which is by God himself magnified above them—which is far more noble and excellent in itself, and, in respect of its end and order, hath far more divinely conspicuous and glorious impressions and characters of his goodness, holiness, power, grace, truth, than all the creation—should lie dead, obscure, and have nothing in itself to reveal its Author, until this or that superadded testimony be called in to its assistance. We esteem them to have done no service unto the truth, who, amongst innumerable other bold denials, have insisted on this also—that there is no *natural knowledge* of God, arising from the innate principles of reason, and the works of God proposing themselves to the consideration thereof. Let now the way to the progress of *supernatural revelation* be obstructed, by denying that it is able to

evince itself to be from God, and we shall quickly see what banks are cut, to let in a flood of atheism upon the face of the earth.

Let us consider the issue of this general induction: As God, in the creation of the world, and all things therein contained, hath so made and framed them, hath left such characters of his eternal power and wisdom in them and upon them, filled them with such evidences of their Author, suited to the apprehensions of rational creatures, that without any other testimony from himself, or any else—under the naked consideration and contemplation of what they are—they so far declare their Creator, that they are left wholly inexcusable who will not learn and know him from thence; so in the giving out of his Word to be the foundation of that world which he hath set up in this world, as הָאוֹפַן בְּתוֹךְ הָאוֹפָן, "a wheel within a wheel"—his church—he hath, by his Spirit, implanted in it and impressed on it such characters of his goodness, power, wisdom, holiness, love to mankind, truth, faithfulness, with all the rest of his glorious excellencies and perfections, that at all times, and in all places, when הָרָקִיעַ, "the expansion" of it, is stretched over men by his providence—without any other witness or testimony given unto it—it declares itself to be his, and makes good its authority from him; so that the refusal of it upon its own evidence brings unavoidable condemnation on the souls of men. This comparison is insisted on by the Psalmist, Ps. xix.; where, as he ascribeth קוֹל and קָו, a "voice" and "line," to the creatures, so אוֹר, &c., light, power, stability, and permanency, like that of the heavens and sun, (in commutation of properties,) to the Word, and in an inexpressible exaltation of it above them; the light of one day of this sun being unspeakably more than that of seven others, as to the manifestation of the glory of God.

This, then, is fixed as a principle of truth: *Whatever* God hath appointed to reveal himself by, as to any special or general end—that those whom he intends to discover himself unto may either be effectually instructed in his mind and will, according to the measure, degree, and means of the revelation afforded, or be left inexcusable for not receiving the testimony that he gives of himself, by any plea or pretence of want of clear, evident, manifest revelation—*that*, whatever it be, hath such an impression of his authority upon it, as undeniably to evince that it is from him. And this, now, concerning his Word, comes further to be confirmed by testimonies and arguments.

CHAPTER III.

Arguments of two sorts—Inartificial arguments, by way of testimony to the truth—To whom these arguments are valid—Of Διστευστία—The rejection of a plea of Διστευστία, wherein it consists—Of miracles, their efficacy to beget faith compared with the word.

Having declared the divine original and authority of the Scripture, and explained the position laid down as the foundation of our ensuing discourse, way is now made for us to the consideration of those *self-evidences* of its divine rise, and consequently authority, that it is attended withal, [and] upon the account whereof we receive it, as (believing it to be) the Word of God.

The arguments whereby any thing is confirmed are of two sorts; inartificial, by the way of testimony; and artificial, by the way of deductions and inferences. Whatever is capable of contributing evidence unto truth falls under one of these two heads. Both these kinds of proofs we make use of in the business in hand. Some profess they own the authority of the Scriptures, and also urge others so to do; but they will dispute on what grounds and accounts they do so. With those we may deal, in the first way, by testimony from the Scriptures themselves; which upon their own principles they cannot refuse. When they shall be pleased to inform us that they have relinquished those principles, and do no longer own the Scripture to be the word of God, we will withdraw the witnesses, upon their exceptions, whom for the present we make use of. Testimonies that are innate and ingrafted in the Word itself, used only as mediums of artificial arguments to be deduced from them, (which are of the second sort,) may be used towards them who at present own not the authority of the Scripture on any account whatever, or who are desirous to put on themselves the persons of such men, to try their skill and ability for the management of a controversy against the Word of God.

In both these cases the testimony of the Scripture is pleaded, and is to be received, or cannot with any pretence of reason be refused. In the former, upon the account of the acknowledged authority and veracity of the witness, though speaking in its own case; in the latter, upon the account of that self-evidence which the testimony insisted on is accompanied withal, made out by such reasonings and arguments as, for the kind of them, persons who own not its authority cannot but admit. In human things, if a man of known integrity and unspotted reputation bear witness in any cause, and give uncontrollable evidence to his testimony, from the very nature and order of the things whereof he speaks, as it is expected that those who know and admit of his integrity and reputation do acquiesce in his assertion, so those to whom he is a stranger, who are not moved by his authority, will yet be overcome to assent to what is witnessed by

him, from the nature of the things he asserts, especially if there be a coincidence of all such circumstances as are any way needful to give evidence to the matter in hand.

Thus it is in the case under consideration. For those who profess themselves to believe the Scriptures to be the word of God, and so own the credit and fidelity of the witness, it may reasonably be expected from them, yea, in strict justice demanded of them, that they stand to the testimony that they give to themselves and their own divine original. By saying that the Scripture is the word of God, and then commanding us to prove it so to be, they render themselves obnoxious unto every testimony that we produce from it that so it is, and that it is to be received on its own testimony. This witness they cannot waive without disavowing their own professed principles; without which principles they have not the least colour of imposing this task on us.

As for them with whom we have not the present advantage of their own acknowledgment, it is not reasonable to impose upon them with the bare testimony of that witness concerning whom the question is, Whether he be worthy the acceptation pleaded for? but yet arguments taken from the Scripture—from what it is and doth, its nature and operation, by which the causes and springs of all things are discovered—are not to be refused.

But it is neither of these that principally I intend to deal withal; my present discourse is rather about the satisfaction of our own consciences, than the answering of others' objections. Only we must satisfy our consciences upon such principles as will stand against all men's objections. This, then, is chiefly inquired after, viz., what it is that gives such an assurance of the Scriptures being the word of God, as that, relying thereon, we have a sure bottom and foundation for our receiving them as such; and from whence it is that those who receive them not in that manner are left inexcusable in their damnable unbelief. This, we say, is in and from the Scripture itself; so that there is no other need of any further witness or testimony, nor is any, in the same kind, to be admitted.

It is not at all in my purpose to insist largely at present on this subject, and, therefore, I shall content myself with instancing some few testimonies and arguments, beginning with one or two of the first sort. Isa. viii. 20: "To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, there is no light in them." Whatever any one says—be it what or who it will, church or person—if it be in or about the things of God, concerning his will or worship, with our obedience to him, it is to be tried by the law and testimony. Hither we are sent; this is asserted to be the rule and standard, the touchstone of all speakings whatever. Now, that must speak alone

for itself which must try the speaking of all but itself, yea, its own also.

But what doth this law and testimony—that is, this written Word—plead, on the account whereof it should be thus attended unto? What doth it urge for its acceptation? Tradition, authority of the church, miracles, consent of men? or doth it speak αὐτοκρατορικῶς, and stand only upon its own sovereignty? The apostle gives us his answer to this inquiry, (2 Tim. iii. 16,) Πᾶσα γραφὴ θεόπνευστος. Its *plea* for reception—in comparison with and opposition unto all other ways of coming to the knowledge of God, his mind and will—founded whereon it calls for attendance and submission with supreme, uncontrollable authority, is its θεοπνευστία, or "divine inspiration." It remains, then, only to be inquired, whether, when θεοπνευστία is pleaded, there be any middle way, but either that it be received with divine faith or rejected as false.

Suppose a man were θεόπνευστος, "divinely inspired," and should so profess himself in the name of the Lord, as did the prophets of old; (Amos vii.;) supposing, I say, he were so indeed, it will not be denied but that his message were to be received and submitted unto on that account. The denial of it would justify them who "rejected and slew those that spake unto them in the name of the Lord." And that is to say, in plain terms, we may reject them whom God sends. Though miracles were given only with respect to *persons*, not *things*, yet most of the prophets who wrought no miracles insisted on this, that being θεόπνευστοι, "divinely inspired," their doctrine was to be received as from God. On their so doing, it was sin, even unbelief and rebellion against God, not to submit to what they spake in his name. And it always so fell out—to fix our faith on the right bottom—that scarce any prophet that spake in the name of God had any approbation from the church in whose days he spake. (Matt. v. 12, xxiii. 29; Luke xi. 47, 48; Acts vii. 52; Matt. xxi. 33–39.) It is true, ἐγένοντο ψευδοπροφῆται ἐν τῷ λαῷ, (2 Pet. ii. 1,) "there were false prophets among the people," that spake in the name of the Lord, when he sent them not. (Jer. xxiii. 21.) Yet were those whom he did send to be received on pain of damnation: on the same penalty were the others to be refused. (Jer. xxiii. 28, 29.) The foundation of this duty lies in the τὸ θεῖον that accompanied the word that was ἐκ θεοπνευστίας: of which afterward. And, without a supposal hereof, it could not consist with the goodness and righteousness of God to require of men—under the penalty of his eternal displeasure—to make such a discrimination, where he had not given them τεκμήρια, "infallible tokens," to enable them so to do.

But that he had and hath done so, he declares, (Jer. xxiii. 26–29,) "How long shall this be in the heart of the prophets that prophesy

lies? that are prophets of the deceit of their own heart, which think to cause my people to forget my name by their dreams, which they tell every man to his neighbour, as their fathers have forgotten my name for Baal. The prophet that hath a dream, let him tell a dream; and he that hath my word, let him speak my word faithfully. What is the chaff to the wheat? saith the Lord. Is not my word like a fire? saith the Lord, and like a hammer that breaketh the rock in pieces?" In the latter days of that church, when the people were most eminently perplexed with false prophets—both as to their number and subtlety—yet God lays their eternal and temporal safety or ruin on their discerning aright between his word and that which was only pretended so to be. And that they might not complain of this imposition, he tenders them security of its easiness of performance. Speaking of his *own word comparatively*, as to every thing that is not so, he says it is as wheat to chaff, which may infallibly—by being what it is—be discerned from it; and then *absolutely*, that it hath such properties as that it will discover itself—even light, and heat, and power. A person, then, who was truly θεόπνευστος, was to be attended unto because he was so.

As, then, it was said before, the *Scriptures* being θεόπνευστοι, is not the case the same as with a *man* that was so? Is there any thing in the writing of it by God's command that should impair its authority? Nay, is it not freed from innumerable prejudices that attended it in its first giving out by men, arising from the personal infirmities and supposed interests of them that delivered it? (Jer. xliii. 3; John ix. 29; Acts xxiv. 5.)

This being pleaded by it, and insisted on, its testimony is received, or it is not. If it be received on this account, there is in it, we say, the proper basis and foundation of faith, whereon it hath its ὑπόστασις, or "subsistence." If it be rejected, it must be not only with a refusal of its witness, but also with a high detestation of its pretence to be from God. What ground or plea for such a refusal and detestation any one hath, or can have, shall be afterward considered. If it be a sin to refuse it, it had been a duty to receive it; if a duty to receive it as the word of God, then was it sufficiently manifested so to be. Of the objection arising from them who pretend to this inspiration falsely, we have spoken before; and we are as yet dealing with them that own the book whereof we spake to be the word of God, and only call in question the grounds on which they do so, or on which others ought so to do. As to these, it may suffice, that—in the strength of all the authority and truth they profess to own and acknowledge in it—it declares the foundation of its acceptance to be no other but its own divine inspiration. Hence it is λόγος πάσης ἀποδοχῆς ἄξιος.

Again, in that dispute that was between Abraham and the rich man, (Luke xvi. 31,) about the best and most effectual means of bringing men to repentance: the rich man in hell, speaking his own conception, fixes upon miracles—if one rise from the dead and preach, the work will be done. Abraham is otherwise minded—that is, Christ was so, the author of that parable; he bids them attend to Moses and the prophets, the written Word, as that which all faith and repentance was immediately to be grounded on. The inquiry being, how men might be best assured that any message is from God, did not the Word manifest itself to be from him, this direction had not been equal.

The ground of the request for the rising of one from the dead, is laid in the common apprehension of men not knowing the power of God in the Scriptures; who think that if an evident miracle were wrought, all pretences and pleas of unbelief would be excluded. Who doth not think so? Our Saviour discovers that mistake, and lets men know that those who will not own or submit to the authority of God in the Word, would not be moved by the most signal miracles imaginable. If a holy man, whom we had known assuredly to have been dead for some years, should rise out of his grave and come unto us with a message from God, could any man doubt whether he were sent unto us of God or no? I suppose not. The rising of men from the dead was the greatest miracle that attended the resurrection of our Saviour; (Matt. xxvii. 52, 53;) yea, greater than his own, if the Socinians may be believed, viz., in that he raised not himself by his own power: yet the evidence of the mission of such a one, and the authority of God speaking in him—our Saviour being judge—is not of an efficacy to enforce belief, beyond that which is in the written Word, nor a surer foundation for faith to repose itself upon.

Could we hear a voice from heaven, accompanied with such a divine power as to evidence itself to be from God, should we not rest in it as such? I suppose men think they would. Can we think that any man should withdraw his assent, and say, Yea, but I must have some testimony that this is from God? All such evasions are precluded, in the supposition wherein a self-evidencing power is granted. What greater miracle did the apostles of Christ ever behold, or hear, than that voice that came ὑπὸ τῆς μεγαλοπρεποῦς δόξης, "from the excellent glory"—"This is my beloved Son?" Yet Peter, who heard that voice, tells us that, comparatively, we have greater security from and by the written Word than they had *in* and *by* that miraculous voice. We have βεβαιότερον τὸν προφητικὸν λόγον. We heard, saith he, that voice indeed; but we have "a more sure word of prophecy" to attend unto—more sure, not in itself, but in its giving

out its evidence unto us. And how doth it appear so to be? The reason he alleges for it was before insisted on. (2 Pet. i. 18–21.)

Yea, suppose that God should speak to us from heaven as he spake to Moses, or as he spake to Christ; or from some certain place, as Numb. vii. 89; how should we be able to know it to be the voice of God? Cannot Satan cause a voice to be heard in the air, and so deceive us? or, may not there be some way (in this kind) found out, whereby men might impose upon us with their delusions? Pope Celestine thought he heard a voice from heaven, when it was but the cheat of his successor. Must we not rest at last in that τὸ θεῖον which accompanies the true voice of God evidencing itself, and ascertaining the soul beyond all possibility of mistake? Now, did not this τεκμήριον accompany the written Word at its first giving forth? If it did not, as was said, how could any man be obliged to discern it from all delusions? If it did, how came it to lose it? Did God appoint his Word to be written, that so he might destroy its authority? If the question be, whether the doctrines proposed to be believed are truths of God, or "cunningly devised fables," we are sent to the Scripture itself, and that alone, to give the determination.

CHAPTER IV.

Innate arguments in the Scripture of its divine original and authority—Its self-evidencing efficacy—All *light* manifests itself—The Scripture light—Spiritual light evidential—Consectaries from the premises laid down—What the self-evidencing light of the Scripture peculiarly is—*Power* self-evidencing—The Scripture the power of God, and powerful—How this power exerts itself—The whole question resolved.

Having given some few instances of those many testimonies which the Scripture, in express terms, bears to itself, and the spring, rise, and fountain of all that authority which it claims among and over the sons of men—which all those who pretend, on any account whatever, to own and acknowledge its divinity, are bound to stand to, and are obliged by—the second thing proposed, or the innate arguments that the Word of God is furnished withal for its own manifestation, and whereby the authority of God is revealed, for faith to repose itself upon, comes in the next place into consideration. Now, these arguments contain the full and formal grounds of our answer to that inquiry before laid down, viz., why and wherefore we do receive and believe the Scripture to be the word of God. It being the formal reason of our faith, that whereon it is built and whereinto it is resolved, that is inquired after, we answer as we said before, We do so receive, embrace, believe, and submit unto it, because of the authority of God who speaks it, or gave it forth as his mind and will, evidencing itself by the Spirit in and with that Word,

unto our minds and consciences: or, because that the Scripture, being brought unto us by the good providence of God, in ways of his appointment and preservation, it doth evidence itself infallibly unto our consciences to be the word of the living God.

The self-evidencing efficacy of the Scripture, and the grounds of it—which consist in common mediums, that have an extent and latitude answerable to the reasons of men, whether as yet they acknowledge it to be the word of God or no—are those, then, which, in the remainder of this discourse, I shall endeavour to clear and vindicate. This only I shall desire to premise, that whereas some grounds of this efficacy seem to be placed in the things themselves contained in the Scripture, I shall not consider them abstractedly as such, but under the formality of their being the Scripture or written Word of God; without which consideration and resolution the things mentioned would be left naked, and utterly divested of their authority and efficacy pleaded for, and be of no other nature and importance than the same things found in other books. It is the writing itself that now supplies the place and room of the persons in and by whom God originally spake to men. As were the persons speaking of old, so are the writings now. It was the *word spoken* that was to be believed, yet as *spoken* by them from God; and it is now the *word written* that is to be believed, yet as *written* by the command and appointment of God.

There are, then, two things that are accompanied with a self-evidencing excellency; and every other thing doth so, so far as it is partaker of their nature, and no otherwise. Now, these are—1*st*, Light; 2*d*, Power, for or in operation.

1. Light manifests itself. Whatever is light doth so; that is, it doth whatever is necessary on its own part for its manifestation and discovery. Of the defects that are or may be in them to whom this discovery is made we do not as yet speak; and "whatever manifests itself is light"—πᾶν γὰρ τὸ φανερούμενον φῶς ἐστι. (Eph. v. 13.) Light requires neither proof nor testimony for its evidence. Let the sun arise in the firmament, and there is no need of witnesses to prove and confirm, unto a seeing man, that it is day. A small candle will so do. Let the least child bring a candle into a room that before was dark, and it would be a madness to go about to prove by substantial witnesses—men of gravity and authority—that light is brought in. Doth it not evince itself with an assurance above all that can be obtained by any testimony whatever? Whatever is light, either naturally or morally so, is revealed by its being so. That which evidenceth not itself is not light.

That the Scripture is a light we shall see immediately. That it is so, or can be called so, unless it hath this nature and property of light, to

evidence itself as well as to give light unto others, cannot in any tolerable correspondency of speech be allowed. Whether light spiritual and intellectual regarding the mind, or natural with respect to bodily sight, be firstly and properly light, from whence the other is by allusion denominated, I need not now inquire. Both have the same properties in their several kinds. Φῶς ἀληθινὸν φαίνει—"True light shineth." Ὁ Θεὸς φῶς ἐστι, (1 John i. 5,) "God is light;" and he inhabiteth φῶς ἀπρόσιτον, (1 Tim. vi. 16,) not a shining, glistering brightness, as some[1] grossly imagine, but the glorious, unsearchable majesty of his own being, which is inaccessible to our understandings. So Isaiah, (lvii. 15,) "God inhabiteth eternity." So עֹטֶה אוֹר saith the Psalmist, (civ. 2,) "Thou clothest thyself with light;" and Daniel, (ii. 22,) וּנְהוֹרָא עִמֵּהּ שְׁרֵא, the "light remaineth with him." God is light essentially, and is, therefore, known by the beaming of his eternal properties in all that outwardly is of him. And light abides with him as the fountain of it, he communicating light to all others. This being the fountain of all light, the more it participates of the nature of the fountain, the more it is light; and the more properly, as the properties and qualities of it are considered. It is, then, spiritual, moral, intellectual light, with all its mediums, that hath the preeminence, as to a participation of the nature and properties of light.

Now, the Scripture, the Word of God, is light. Those that reject it are called (Job xxiv. 13) מֹרְדֵי־אוֹר, "light's rebels"—men resisting the authority which they cannot but be convinced of. (Ps. xix. 8, xliii. 3, cxix. 105, 130; Prov. vi. 23; Isa. ix. 2; Hos. vi. 5; Matt. iv. 16, v. 14; John iii. 20, 21.) It is a light so shining with the majesty of its Author, as that it manifests itself to be his, (2 Pet. i. 19,) "a light shining in a dark place," with an eminent advantage for its own discovery, as well as unto the benefit of others. Let a light be ever so mean and contemptible, yet if it shines, casts out beams and rays in a dark place, it will evidence itself. If other things be wanting in the faculty, the light, as to its innate glory and beauty, is not to suffer prejudice. But the Word is a glorious, shining light, as hath been showed; an illuminating light, compared to and preferred above the light of the sun. (Ps. xix. 5–8; Rom. x. 18.) Let not, then, a reproach be cast upon the most glorious light in the world, the most eminent reflection of uncreated light and excellencies, that will not be fastened on any thing that, on any account, is so called. (Matt. v. 16.)

Now, as the Scripture is thus a light, we grant it to be the duty of the church, of any church, of every church, to hold it up,

[1] John Biddle, the father of English Socinians, in a catechism which he published in 1654.—Ed.

whereby it may become the more conspicuous. It is a pillar and ground to set this light upon. (1 Tim. iii. 15.) Στύλος καὶ ἑδραίωμα τῆς ἀληθείας, may refer to the mystery of godliness in the next words following, in good coherence of speech, as well as to the church; but granting the usual reading, no more is affirmed but that the light and truth of the Scripture are held up and held out by the church. It is the duty of every church so to do—almost the whole of its duty. And this duty it performs *ministerially*, not *authoritatively*. A church may *bear up the light*—it *is not the light*. It bears witness to it, but kindles not one divine beam to further its discovery. All the preaching that is in any church, its administration of ordinances, all its walking in the truth, hold up this light.

Nor doth it in the least impair this self-evidencing efficacy of the Scripture, that it is a moral and spiritual, not a natural light. The proposition is universal to all kinds of light; yea, more fully applicable to the former than the latter. Light, I confess, of itself, will not remove the defect of the visive faculty. It is not given for that end. Light is not eyes. It suffices that there is nothing wanting on its own part for its discovery and revelation. To argue that the sun cannot be known to be the sun, or the great means of communicating external light unto the world, because blind men cannot see it, nor do know any more of it than they are told, will scarce be admitted; nor doth it in the least impeach the efficacy of the light pleaded for, that men stupidly blind cannot comprehend it. (John i. 5.)

I do not assert from hence, that wherever the Scripture is brought, by what means soever, (which, indeed, is all one,) all that read it, or to whom it is read, must instantly of necessity assent unto its divine original. Many men who are not stark blind may have yet so abused their eyes, that when a light is brought into a dark place they may not be able to discern it. Men may be so prepossessed with innumerable prejudices—principles received by strong traditions—corrupt affections making them hate the light—that they may not behold the glory of the Word when it is brought to them. But it is nothing to our present discourse, whether any man living be able by and of himself to discern this light, whilst the defect may be justly cast on his own blindness. 2 Cor. iv. 2–4: "By manifestation of the truth, commending ourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God. But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: in whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them." There is, in the dispensation of the Word, an evidence of truth commending itself to the consciences of men. Some receive not this evidence. Is it for want of light in the truth itself? No; that is a glorious light that shines

into the hearts of men. Is it for want of testimony to assert this light? No; but merely because the god of this world hath blinded the eyes of men, that they should not behold it.

From what, then, hath been laid down, these two things may be inferred:—That as the authority of God—the first and only absolute truth in the Scripture—is that alone which divine faith rests upon, and is the formal object of it—so wherever the Word comes, by what means soever, it hath in itself a sufficiency of light to evidence to all (and will do it eventually to all that are not blinded by the god of this world) that authority of God its author; and the only reason why it is not received, by many in the world to whom it is come, is the advantage that Satan hath to keep them in ignorance and blindness, by the lusts, corruptions, prejudices, and hardness of their own hearts.

The Word, then, makes a sufficient proposition of itself, wherever it is; and he to whom it shall come, who refuses it because it comes not so or so testified, will give an account of his atheism and infidelity. He that hath the witness of God need not stay for the witness of men, for the witness of God is greater.

Wherever the Word is received indeed, as it requireth itself to be received, and is really assented unto as the Word of God, it is so received upon the evidence of that light which it hath in itself, manifestly declaring itself so to be. It is all one by what means, by what hand—whether of a child or a church, by accident or tradition, by common consent of men or peculiar providence—the Scripture comes unto us: come how it will, it hath its authority in itself and towards us by being the word of God—and hath its power of manifesting itself so to be from its own innate light.

Now, this light in the Scripture, for which we contend, is nothing but the beaming of the majesty, truth, holiness, and authority of God, given unto it and left upon it by its author, the Holy Ghost—an impress it hath of God's excellency upon it, distinguishing it by infallible τεκμήρια from the product of any creature. By this it dives into the consciences of men, into all the secret recesses of their hearts; guides, teaches, directs, determines, and judges *in* them, *upon* them, in the name, majesty, and authority of God. If men who are blinded by the god of this world, will yet deny this light because they perceive it not, it shall not prejudice them who do. By this self-evidencing light, I say, doth the Scripture make such a proposition of itself as the word of God, that whoever rejects it, doth it at the peril of his eternal ruin; and thereby a bottom or foundation is tendered for that faith which it requireth to repose itself upon.

For the proof, then, of the divine authority of the Scriptures unto him or them who, as yet, on no account whatever do acknowledge

it—I shall only suppose that, by the providence of God, the book itself be so brought unto him or them, as that he or they be engaged to the consideration of it, or do attend to the reading of it. This is the work of God's providence in the government of the world. Upon a supposal hereof I leave the Word with them, and if it evidence not itself unto their consciences, it is because they are blinded by the god of this world, which will be no plea for the refusal of it at the last day; and they who receive it not on this ground, will never receive it on any, as they ought.

2. The second sort of things that evidence themselves, are things of an effectual *powerful operation* in any kind. So doth fire by heat, the wind by its noise and force, salt by its taste and savour, the sun by its light and heat; so do also moral principles that are effectually operative. (Rom. ii. 14, 15.) Men in whom they are, ἐνδείκνυνται τὸ ἔργον, "do manifest the work" of them, or manifest them by their work and efficacy. Whatever it be that hath an innate power in itself, that will effectually operate on a fit and proper subject—it is able to evidence itself, and its own nature and condition.

To manifest the interest of the Scripture to be enrolled among things of this nature—yea, (under God himself, who is known by his great power, and the effects of it,) to have the pre-eminence—I shall observe only one or two things concerning it, the various improvement whereof would take up more time and greater space than I have allotted to this discourse.

It is absolutely called the "power of God," and that unto its proper end; which way lies the tendency of its efficacy in operation. (Rom. i. 16.) It is δύναμις Θεοῦ, "vis, virtus Dei"—the "power of God." Ὁ λόγος ὁ τοῦ σταυροῦ, the "word concerning the cross"—that is, the gospel—is δύναμις Θεοῦ, (1 Cor. i. 18,) the "power of God." And faith, which is built on that Word, without other helps or advantages, is said to stand in the "power of God;" (1 Cor. ii. 5;) that is, effectually working in and by the Word, it worketh ἐν ἀποδείξει Πνεύματος καὶ δυνάμεως, "in the demonstration of the Spirit and of power;" ἕν διὰ δυοῖν·—its spiritual power gives a demonstration of it. Thus it comes not as a naked word, (1 Thess. i. 5,) but in "power, and in the Holy Ghost;" and ἐν πληροφορίᾳ πολλῇ· giving all manner of assurance and full persuasion of itself, even by its power and efficacy. Hence it is termed מַטֵּה עֻזּ, "the rod of power" or strength, (Ps. cx. 2,) denoting both authority and efficacy. Surely that which is thus the power and authority of God, is able to make itself known so to be.

It is not only said to be δύναμις, "power," the power of God in itself, but also δυνάμενος, "able and powerful" in respect of us. "Thou

hast learned," saith Paul to Timothy, τὰ ἱερὰ γράμματα, "the sacred letters," (the written Word,) τὰ δυνάμενά σε σοφίσαι εἰς σωτηρίαν, "which are able to make thee wise unto salvation." They are powerful and effectual to that purpose. It is λόγος δυνάμενος σῶσαι τὰς ψυχάς, (James i. 21,) "The word that hath power in it to save souls." So Acts xx. 32: "I commend you" λόγῳ τῷ δυναμένῳ, "to the able, powerful word." And that we may know what kind of power it hath, the apostle tells us that it is ζῶν καὶ ἐνεργής—it is "living and effectual," (Heb. iv. 12,) and "sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart." It is designed of God to declare τὴν ἐνέργειαν τῆς δυνάμεως, "the effectual working of his power." (See John vi. 68, 69; 1 Cor. vi. 14, xv. 57; Gal. ii. 8.) By virtue of this power, it brought forth fruit in all the world. (Col. i. 6.) Without sword, without (for the most part) miracles, without human wisdom or oratory, without any inducements or motives but what were merely and solely taken from itself, consisting in things that "eye had not seen, nor ear heard, nor could enter into the heart of man to conceive," hath it exerted this its power and efficacy to the conquest of the world—causing men of all sorts, in all times and places, so to fall down before its divine authority, as immediately to renounce all that was dear to them in the world, and to undergo whatever was dreadful, terrible, and destructive to nature in all its dearest concernments.

It hath been the work of many to insist on the particulars wherein this power exerts itself; so that I shall not enlarge upon them. In general, they have this advantage, that as they are all spiritual, so they are such as have their seat, dwelling, and abode, in the hearts and consciences of men, whereby they are not liable to any exception, as though they were pretended. Men cannot harden themselves in the rejection of the testimony they give, by sending for magicians to do the like; or by any pretence that it is a common thing that is befallen them on whom the Word puts forth its power. The seat or residence of these effects is safe-guarded against all power and authority but that of God. Its diving into the hearts, consciences, and secret recesses of the minds of men; its judging and sentencing of them in themselves; its convictions, terrors, conquests, and killing of men; its converting, building up, making wise, holy, obedient; its administering consolations in every condition, and the like effects of its power, are usually spoken unto.

These are briefly the foundations of the answer returned to the inquiry formerly laid down, which might abundantly be enlarged—How know we that the Scripture is the word of God; how may others come to be assured thereof? The Scripture, say we, bears

testimony to itself that it is the word of God; that testimony is the witness of God himself, which whoso doth not accept and believe, he doth what in him lies to make God a liar. To give us an infallible assurance that, in receiving this testimony, we are not imposed upon by cunningly devised fables, the *αἱ γραφαί*, the *ἱερα γράμματα*, "the Scriptures," have that glory of light and power accompanying them, as wholly distinguisheth them by infallible signs and evidences from all words and writings not divine; conveying their truth and power into the souls and consciences of men with an infallible certainty. On this account are they received as from God by all that receive them, who have any real, distinguishing foundation of their faith, which would not be—separated from these grounds—as effectual an expedient for the reception of the Koran.

CHAPTER V.

Of the testimony of the Spirit—Traditions—Miracles.

Before I proceed to the consideration of those other testimonies, which are as arguments drawn from those innate excellencies and properties of the Word which I have insisted on, some other things, whose right understanding is of great importance in the cause under debate, must be laid down and stated. Some of these refer to that testimony of the Spirit that is usually and truly pleaded as the great ascertaining principle, or that on the account whereof we receive the Scriptures to be the word of God. That it may be seen in what sense that is usually delivered by our divines, and how far there is a coincidence between that assertion and what we have delivered—I shall lay down what that testimony is, wherein it consists, and what is the weight or stress that we lay upon it.

That the Scripture be received as the word of God, there is required a twofold efficacy of the Spirit. The first respects the subject, or the mind of man that assents unto the authority of the Scripture. Now, concerning this act or work of the Spirit, whereby we are enabled to believe the Scripture, on the account whereof we may say that we receive the Scripture to be the word of God—or upon the testimony of the Spirit—I shall a little inquire, what it is, and wherein it doth consist.

First, then, It is not an outward or inward *vocal* testimony concerning the Word, as the Papist would impose upon us to believe and assent. We do not affirm that the Spirit immediately, by himself, saith unto every individual believer, This book is, or contains, the

word of God. We say not that the Spirit ever speaks to us *of* the Word, but *by* the Word. Such an enthusiasm as they fancy is rarely pretended; and where it is so, it is for the most part quickly discovered to be a delusion. We plead not for the usefulness, much less the necessity, of any such testimony. Yea, the principles we have laid down—resolving all faith into the public testimony of the Scriptures themselves—do render all such private testimonies altogether needless.

Secondly, This testimony of the Spirit consists not in a *persuasion* that a man takes up, he knows not well how or why; only this he knows, he will not depose it [lay it aside] though it cost him his life. This would be like that which by Morinus[1] is ascribed to the Church of Rome, which, though it knew no reason why it should prefer the vulgar Latin translation before the original, yet, by the guidance of the Spirit, would do so—that is, unreasonably. But if a man should say, that he is persuaded that the Scripture is the word of God, and that he will die a thousand times to give testimony thereunto; and, not knowing any real ground of this persuasion that should bear him out in such a testimony, shall ascribe it to the Spirit of God—our concernment lies not in that persuasion. This may befall men by the advantage of traditions, whereof men are usually zealous, and obstinate in their defence. Education in some constitutions will give pertinacity in most vain and false persuasions. It is not, then, a resolution and persuasion induced into our minds we know not how, built we know not upon what foundation, that we intend in the assignation of our receiving the Scripture to be the word of God to the effectual work and witness of the Holy Ghost.

Two things, then, we intend by this work of the Spirit upon the mind of man.

1. His communication of spiritual light; by an act of His power, enabling the mind to discern the saving truth, majesty, and authority of the Word—πνευματικὰ πνευματικῶς. There is a blindness, a darkness, upon the minds of men πνεῦμα μὴ ἐχόντων, that not only disenables them from discerning the things of God in their certainty, evidence, necessity, and beauty, (for ψυχικὸς ἄνθρωπος οὐ δέχεται τὰ τοῦ θεοῦ), but also causes them to judge amiss of them, as things weak and foolish, dark, unintelligible, not answering to any principle of wisdom whereby they are guided. (1 Cor. ii.) Whilst this γλαύκωμα abides on the minds of men it is impossible that they should, on any right abiding foundation, assent to the Word of God. They may have a prejudicate opinion—they have no faith concerning it. This darkness, then, must be removed by the communication of light by the

[1] Morin. Exercit. de Heb. Text. Sincer., Exercit. i. cap. 1.

Holy Ghost; which work of his illumination is commonly by others spoken unto, and by me also in another place.[1]

2. The Holy Ghost, together with and by his work of illumination, taking off the perverse disposition of mind that is in us by nature, with our enmity to and aversation from the things of God, effectually also persuades the mind to a receiving and admitting of the truth, wisdom, and authority of the Word. Now, because this perverse disposition of mind, possessing the τὸ ἡγεμονικόν of the soul, influences the will also into an aversation and dislike of that goodness which is in the truth proposed to it, it is removed by a double act of the Holy Ghost.

(1.) He gives us wisdom—understanding—a spiritual judgment—whereby we may be able to compare spiritual things with spiritual, in a spiritual manner, and to come thereby to a clear and full light of the heavenly excellency and majesty of the Word; and so enables us to know of the doctrine whether it be of God. Under the benefit of this assistance all the parts of the Scripture in their harmony and correspondency, all the truths of it in their power and necessity, come in together to give evidence one to another, and all of them to the whole; I mean as the mind is enabled to make a spiritual judgment of them.

(2.) He gives αἴσθησιν πνευματικήν, a spiritual sense, a taste of the things themselves upon the mind, heart, and conscience; when we have αἰσθητήρια γεγυμνασμένα, "senses exercised" to discern such things. These things deserve a more full handling, and to be particularly exemplified from Scripture, if the nature of our present design would admit thereof.

As in our natural estate, in respect of these things of God, the mind is full of vanity, darkness, blindness, yea, is darkness itself, so that there is no correspondency between the faculty and the object—and the will lies in an utter unacquaintedness, yea, impossibility of any acquaintance, with the life, power, savour, sweetness, relish, and goodness, that are in the things proposed to be known and discerned, under the dark shades of a blind mind; so, for a removal of both these, the Holy Ghost communicates light to the understanding, whence it is able to see and judge of the truth as it is in Jesus—and the will being thereby delivered from the dungeon wherein it was, and quickened anew, performs its office, in embracing what is proper and suited unto it in the object proposed. The Spirit, indeed, discovereth to every one καθὼς βούλεται, according to the counsel of his will; but yet in that way, in the general, whereby the sun gives out his light and heat, the former making way for the latter. But these things must not now be insisted on.

[1] Dr Owen treats of this subject in his Pneumatologia, or Discourse concerning the Holy Spirit.—Ed.

Now, by these works of the Spirit he doth, I say, persuade the mind concerning the truth and authority of the Scripture, and therein leave an impression of an effectual testimony within us; and this testimony of his, as it is authoritative and infallible in itself, so [is it] of inconceivably more efficacy, power, and certainty, unto them that do receive it, than any voice or internal word, boasted of by some, can be. But yet this is not the work of the Spirit at present inquired after.

3. There is a testimony of the Spirit that respects the object, or the Word itself; and this is a public testimony, which, as it satisfies our souls in particular, so it is, and may be, pleaded in reference unto the satisfaction of all others to whom the Word of God shall come. The Holy Ghost speaking in and by the Word—imparting to it virtue, power, efficacy, majesty, and authority—affords us the witness that our faith is resolved into. And thus, whereas there are but two heads whereunto all grounds of assent do belong—viz., authority of testimony and the self-evidence of truth—they do here both concur in one. In the same Word, we have both the authority of the testimony of the Spirit and the self-evidence of the truth spoken by him; yea, so that both these are materially one and the same, though distinguished in their formal conceptions. I have been much affected with those verses of Dante, the Italian poet, which somebody hath thus, word for word, turned into Latin:—

——— "Larga pluvia
Spiritus sancti quæ est diffusa
Super veteres, et super novas membranas,
Est syllogismus qui eam mihi conclusit
Acutè adeo ut præ illa
Omnis demonstratio mihi videatur obtusa."

The Spirit's communication of his own light and authority to the Scripture, as evidence of its original, is the testimony pleaded for.

When, then, we resolve our faith into the testimony of the Holy Ghost, it is not any private whisper, word, or voice, given to individual persons; it is not the secret and effectual persuasion of the truth of the Scriptures that falls upon the minds of some men, from various involved considerations of education, tradition, and the like, whereof they can give no particular account; it is not the effectual work of the Holy Ghost upon the minds and wills of men, enabling them savingly to believe, that is intended; (the Papists, for the most part, pleading about these things, do but show their ignorance and malice;) but it is the public testimony of the Holy Ghost given unto all, of the Word, by and in the Word, and its own divine light, efficacy, and power.

Thus far, then, have we proceeded: The Scripture, the written

Word, hath its infallible truth in itself: Ὁ λόγος ὁ σὸς ἀλήθειά ἐστι. (John xvii. 17.) From whence it hath its verity, thence it hath its authority; for its whole authority is founded in its truth. Its authority in itself, is its authority in respect of us; nor hath it any whit more in itself than, *de jure*, it hath towards and over all them to whom it comes. That, *de facto*, some do not submit themselves unto it, is their sin and rebellion. This truth, and consequently this authority, is evidenced and made known to us by the public testimony which is given unto it by the Holy Ghost speaking in it, with divine light and power, to the minds, souls, and consciences of men; being therein by itself proposed unto us, we being enlightened by the Holy Ghost, (which, in the condition wherein we are, is necessary for the apprehension of any spiritual thing or truth in a spiritual manner,) we receive it, and religiously subject our souls unto it, as the word and will of the ever-living, sovereign God and Judge of all. And if this be not a bottom and foundation of faith, I here publicly profess that, for aught I know, I have no faith at all.

Having laid this stable foundation, I shall, with all possible brevity, consider some pretences and allegations for the confirmation of the authority of the Scripture, invented and made use of by some to divert us from that foundation, the closing wherewith will, in this matter alone, bring peace unto our souls. And so this chapter shall, as it were, lay in the balance and compare together, the testimony of the Spirit before mentioned and explained, and the other pretences and pleas that shall now be examined.

1. Some say—when, on other accounts they are concerned so to say—that we "have received the Scripture from the Church of Rome, which received it by *tradition;* and this gives a credibility unto it." Of tradition in general—without this limitation (which destroys it) of the Church of Rome—I shall speak afterward. Credibility either keeps within the bounds of probability, as that may be heightened to a manifest uncontrollableness, whilst yet its principles exceed not that sphere—in which sense it belongs not at all to our present discourse; or it includes a firm, suitable foundation for faith, supernatural and divine. Have we, in this sense, received the Scripture from that church, as it is called? Is that church able to give such a credibility to any thing? or doth the Scripture stand in need of such a credibility to be given to it from that church? Is not the first most false, and is not the last blasphemous? To receive a thing from a church as a church, is to receive it upon the authority of that church. If we receive any thing from the authority of a church, we do it not because the thing itself is ἀποδοχῆς ἄξιος, "worthy of acceptation," but because of the authority alleged. If, then, we thus receive the Scriptures from the Church of Rome, why

(in particular) do we not receive the apocryphal books also which she receives? How did the Church of Rome receive the Scriptures? Shall we say that she is authorized to give out what seems good to her as the Word of God? No; but she hath received them by tradition. So she pleads that she hath received the apocryphal books also. We, then, receive the Scriptures from Rome—Rome by tradition; we make ourselves judges of that tradition; and yet Rome saith this is one thing that she hath by the same tradition, viz., that she alone is judge of what she hath by tradition. But the common fate of liars is befallen that harlot. She hath so long, so constantly, so desperately lied, in many, the most, things that she professeth pretending tradition for, that indeed she deserves not to be believed when she telleth the truth. Besides, she pleads that she received the Scriptures from the beginning, when it is granted that the copies of the Hebrew of the Old and the Greek of the New Testament were only authentic; these she pleads, now under her keeping, to be wofully corrupted, and yet is angry that we believe not her tradition.

2. Some add, that we receive the Scripture to be the word of God upon the account of the *miracles* that were wrought at the giving of the Law and of the New Testament; which miracles we have received by universal tradition. But, first, I desire to know whence it comes to pass, that, seeing our Saviour Jesus Christ wrought many other miracles besides those that are written, (John xx. 30, xxi. 25,) and the apostles likewise, they cannot, by all their traditions, help us to so much as an obscure report of any one that is not written; (I speak not of legends;) which yet at their performance were no less known than those that are, nor were less useful for the end of miracles than they. Of tradition in general afterward: but is it not evident that the miracles whereof they speak are preserved in the Scripture, and no otherwise? And if so, can these miracles operate upon the understanding or judgment of any man, unless he first grant the Scripture to be the word of God—I mean to the begetting of a divine faith of them, even that there were ever any such miracles? Suppose these miracles, alleged as the ground of our believing of the Word, had not been written, but, like the sibyl's leaves, had been driven up and down by the worst and fiercest wind that blows in this world—the breath of man;—those who should keep them by tradition (that is, men) are by nature so vain, foolish, malicious—such liars, adders, detracters—have spirits and minds so unsuited to spiritual things, so liable to alteration in themselves, and to contradiction one to another—are so given to impostures, and are so apt to be imposed upon—have been so shuffled and driven up and down the world in every generation—

have, for the most part, so utterly lost the remembrance of what themselves are, whence they came, or whither they are to go—that I can give very little credit to what I have nothing but their authority to rely upon for, without any evidence from the nature of the thing itself.

Abstracting, then, from the testimony given in the Scriptures to the miracles wrought by the prime revealers of the mind and will of God in the Word, no tolerable assurance as to the business in hand, where a foundation for faith is inquired after, can be given, that ever any such miracles were wrought. If numbers of men may be allowed to speak, we may have a traditional testimony given to the blasphemous figments of the Koran, under the name of true miracles. But the constant tradition of more than a thousand years, carried on by innumerable multitudes of men, great, wise, and sober, from one generation to another, doth but set open the gates of hell for the Mohammedans. Yet, setting aside the authority of God in his Word, and what is resolved thereinto, I know not why they may not vie traditions with the rest of the world. The world, indeed, is full of traditions flowing from the Word—that is, a knowledge of the doctrines of the Word in the minds of men; but a tradition of the Word not resolved into the Word—a tradition referred to a fountain of sense in seeing and hearing, preserved as an oral law in a distinct channel and stream by itself—when it is evidenced, either by instance in some particular preserved therein, or in a probability of securing it through the generations past, by a comparison of some such effect in things of the like kind, I shall be ready to receive it.

Give me, then, as I said before, but the least obscure report of any one of those many miracles that were wrought by our Saviour and the apostles, which are not recorded in the Scriptures, and I shall put more valuation on the pretended traditions than I can as yet persuade myself unto. Besides, many writers of the Scripture wrought no miracles, and by this rule their writings are left to shift for themselves. Miracles, indeed, were necessary to take off all prejudices from the persons that brought any new doctrine from God; but the doctrine still evidenced itself. The apostles converted many, where they wrought no miracles; (Acts xvi.—xviii.) and where they did so work, yet they were received for their doctrine, and not the doctrine on their account. And the Scripture now hath no less evidence and demonstration in itself of its divinity, than it had when by them it was preached.

But because this tradition is pretended with great confidence as a sure bottom and foundation for receiving of the Scriptures, I shall a little further inquire into it. That which in this case is intended by this Masora, or "tradition," is a report of men, which those who are

present have received from them that are gone before them.[1] Now, this may be either of all the men of the world, or only of some of them; if of all, either their suffrages must be taken in some convention, or gathered up from the individuals as we are able and have opportunity. If the first way of receiving them were possible, which is the utmost improvement that imagination can give the authority inquired after, yet every individual of men being a liar, the whole convention must be of the same complexion, and so not be able to yield a sufficient basis to build a faith upon, *cui non potest subesse falsum*—that is, infallible, and that "cannot possibly be deceived:" much less is there any foundation for it in such a report as is the emergency of the assertion of individuals.

But now if this tradition be alleged as preserved only by some in the world—not the half of rational creatures—I desire to know what reason I have to believe those who have that tradition, or plead that they have it, before and against them who profess they have no such report delivered to them from their forefathers. Is the reason hereof, because I live among those who have this tradition, and they are my neighbours whom I know? By the same rule those who live among the other parts of men are bound to receive what they deliver them upon tradition; and so men may be obliged to believe the Koran to be the word of God.

It is more probable, it will be answered, that their testimony is to be received because they are the church of God. But it doth not yet appear that I can any other way have any knowledge of them so to be, or of any authority that any number of men (more or less) can have in this case, under that name or notion, unless by the Scripture itself. And if so, it will quickly appear what place is to be allotted to their testimony, who cannot be admitted as witnesses unless the Scripture itself be owned and received; because they have neither plea nor claim to be so admitted but only from the Scripture. If they shall aver, that they take this honour to themselves, and that, without relation to the Scripture, they claim a right of authoritative witness-bearing in this case—I say again, upon the general grounds of natural reason and equity, I have no more inducements to give credit to their assertions than to an alike number of men holding out a tradition utterly to the contrary of what they assert.

But yet suppose that this also were granted, and that men might be allowed to speak in their own name and authority, giving testimony to themselves—which, upon the hypothesis under consideration, God himself is not allowed to do—I shall desire to know whether, when the church declares the Scriptures to be the word of God unto

[1] Hinc Masora sive Massoreth *Traditio*, vel rei de manu in manum, aut doctrinæ ex animo in animum, mediante docentis voce, quâ seu manu doctrina alteri traditur. (Buxtor. Comment. Mas.)

us, it doth apprehend any thing in the Scripture as the ground of that judgment and declaration, or no? If it says, No, but that it is proposed upon its sole authority—then surely, if we think good to acquiesce in this decision of this doubt and inquiry, it is full time for us to lay aside all our studies and inquiries after the mind of God, and seek only what that man [says,] or those men say, who are intrusted with this authority—as they say, and as they would have us believe them, though we know not at all how or by what means they came by it, seeing they dare not pretend any thing from the Scripture, lest thereby they direct us to that in the first place.

If it be said that they do upon other accounts judge and believe the Scripture to be true, and to be the word of God—I suppose it will not be thought unreasonable if we inquire after those grounds and accounts, seeing they are of so great concernment unto us. All truths in relations consisting in their consonancy and agreement to the nature of the things they deliver, I desire to know how they came to judge of the consonancy between the nature of the things delivered in the Scripture and the delivery of them therein. The things whereof we speak being heavenly, spiritual, mysterious, and supernatural, there cannot be any knowledge obtained of them but by the Word itself. How, then, can they make any judgment of the truth of that Scripture in the relation of these things which are no where to be known (I speak of many of them) in the least, but by that Scripture itself?

If they shall say that they found their judgment and declaration upon some discovery that the Scripture makes of itself unto them, they affirm the same that we plead for; only they would very desirously appropriate to themselves the privilege of being able to discern that discovery so made in the Scripture. To make good this claim, they must either plead somewhat from themselves or from the Scripture. If from themselves, it can be nothing but that they see, (like the men of China,) and all others are blind, or have but one eye at the best—being wiser than any others, and more able to discern than they. Now, though I shall easily grant them to be very subtle and cunning, yet that they are so much wiser than all the world besides—that they are meet to impose upon their belief things that they neither do nor can discern or know—I would not be thought to admit, until I can believe myself and all others, not of their society or combination, to be beasts of the field, and they as the serpent amongst us. If it be from the Scripture that they seek to make good this claim, then as we cause them there to make a stand—which is all we aim at—so their plea must be from the promise of some special assistance granted to them for that purpose. If their assistance be that of the Spirit, it is either of the Spirit that is promised to believers to work in them, as before described and related, or it is some private

testimony that they pretend is afforded to them. If the former be affirmed, we are in a condition wherein the necessity of devolving all on the Scripture itself, to decide and judge who are believers, lies in every one's view; if the latter, who shall give me assurance that when they pretend that witness and testimony, they do not lie and deceive? We must here certainly go either to the Scripture or to some cunning man to be resolved. (Isa. viii. 19, 20.)

I confess the argument is of great force and efficacy which hath, not long since, been singled out, and dexterously managed, by an able and learned pen,[1] viz., of proving the truth of the doctrine of the Scripture from the truth of the story, and the truth of the story from the certainty there is that the writers of the books of the Bible were those persons whose names and inscriptions they bear; so pursuing the evidence, that what they wrote was true and known to them so to be, from all *requisita* that may possibly be sought after for the strengthening of such evidence. It is, I say, of great force and efficacy as to the end for which it is insisted on—that is, to satisfy men's rational inquiries; but as to a ground of faith, it hath the same insufficiency with all other arguments of the like kind. Though I should grant that the apostles and penmen of the Scripture were persons of the greatest industry, honesty, integrity, faithfulness, holiness, that ever lived in the world, as they were; and that they wrote nothing but what themselves had as good assurance of as what men by their senses of seeing and hearing are able to attain: yet such a knowledge or assurance is not a sufficient foundation for the faith of the church of God. If they received not every word by inspiration, and that evidencing itself unto us otherwise than by the authority of their integrity, it can be no foundation for us to build our faith upon.

Before the committing of the Scriptures to writing, God had given the world an experiment what keepers men were of this revelation by tradition. Within some hundreds of years after the flood, all knowledge of him, through the craft of Satan and the vanity of the minds of men, which is unspeakable, was so lost, that nothing but as it were the creation of a new world, or the erection of a new church-state by new revelations, could relieve it. After that great trial, what can be further pretended on the behalf of tradition, I know not.

The sum of all is: The merciful, good providence of God having, by divers and various means—using therein, amongst other things, the ministry of men and churches—preserved the writings of the Old and New Testament in the world, and by the same gracious disposal afforded them unto us, they are received and submitted unto by us,

[1] D. Ward, Essay, &c.

upon the grounds and evidences of their divine original before insisted on.

Upon the whole matter, then, I would know, if the Scripture should be brought to any man when or where he could not possibly have it attested to be the word of God—by any public or private authority of man or church, tradition or otherwise—whether he were bound to believe it or no? whether he should obey God in believing, or sin in the rejecting of it? Suppose he do but take it into consideration, do but give it the reading or hearing, seeing in every place it avers itself to be the word of God, he must of necessity either give credit unto it or disbelieve it; to hang in suspense—which ariseth from the imperfect actings of the faculties of the soul—is in itself a weakness, and, in this case, being reckoned on the worst side, is interpretatively a rejection. If you say it were the duty of such a one to believe it, you acknowledge in the Scripture itself a sufficient evidence of its own original authority—without which it can be no man's duty to believe it. If you say it would not be his sin to reject and refuse it, to disbelieve all that it speaks in the name of God, then this is what you say—God may truly and really speak unto a man, (as he doth by the Scripture,) and yet that man not be bound to believe him. We deal not thus with one another.

To wind up, then, the plea insisted on in the foregoing chapter, concerning the self-evidencing light and power of the Scripture, from which we have diverted, and to make way for some other considerations that tend to the confirmation of their divine original, I shall close this discourse with the two general considerations following:—

1. Then, laying aside these failing pleas, there seems to be a *moral impossibility* that the Word of God should not manifest its own original, and its authority from thence. "Quælibet herba Deum." There is no work of God, as was showed, but reveals its author. A curious artificer imparts that of form, shape, proportion, and comeliness, to the fruit of his invention and work of his hands, that every one that looks upon it must conclude that it comes from skill and ability. A man in the delivery of his mind in the writing of a book, will give it such an impression of reason, that though you cannot conclude that this or that man wrote it, yet you must that it was the product of a man or rational creature; yea, some individual men of excellency in some skill are instantly known by them that are able to judge in that art or skill by the effects of their skill. This is the piece, this is the hand, the work of such a one. How easy is it for those who are conversant about ancient authors to discover an author by the spirit and style of his writings! Now, certainly, this is strange beyond all belief, that almost every agent should give an impress to his work whereby it may be appropriated unto him; and only the

Word—wherein it was the design of the great and holy God to give us a portraiture, as it were, of his wisdom, holiness, and goodness, so far as we are capable of an acquaintance with him in this life—is not able to declare and evince its original. That God, who is *prima Veritas*, "the first and sovereign Truth," infinitely separated and distinguished from all creatures, on all accounts whatever, should write a book, or at least immediately indite it, commanding us to receive it as his under the penalty of his eternal displeasure, and yet that book not make a sufficient discovery of itself to be his, to be from him, is past all belief. Let men that live on things received by tradition from their fathers—who perhaps never had sense of any real transaction between God and their souls, who scarce ever perused the Word seriously in their lives, nor brought their consciences to it—please themselves in their own imaginations; the sure anchor of a soul that would draw nigh to God, in and by his Word, lies in the things laid down.

I suppose it will not be denied but that it was the mind and will of God that those to whom his Word should come should own it and receive it as his; if not, it were no sin in them to reject it unto whom it doth so come. If it were, then either he hath given those characters unto it, and left upon it that impression of his majesty, whereby it might be known to be his, or he hath not done so; and that either because he would not or because he could not. To say the latter, is to make him more infirm than a man or other worm of the earth—than any naturally effectual cause. He that saith the former, must know that it is incumbent on him to yield a satisfactory account why God would not do so, or else he will be thought blasphemously to impute a want of that goodness and love of mankind unto Him which he hath in infinite grace manifested to be in himself. That no man is able to assign any such reason, I shall firmly believe, until I find some attempting so to do—which, as yet, none have arrived at that height of impudence and wickedness as to own.

2. How horrible is it to the thoughts of any saint of God, that the Scripture should not have its authority from itself! Tertullian objects this to the Gentiles: (Apol., cap. v.:) "Facit et hoc ad causam nostram, quod apud vos de humano arbitratu divinitas pensitatur; nisi homini Deus placuerit, Deus non erit; homo jam Deo propitius esse debebit." Would it be otherwise in this case, if the Scripture must stand to the mercy of man for the reputation of its divinity, nay, of its verity? for whence it hath its authority, thence it hath its verity also, as was observed before; and many more words of this nature might be added.

CHAPTER VI.

Consequential considerations, for the confirmation of the divine authority of the Scripture.

I said, in the former chapter, that I would not employ myself willingly to enervate or weaken any of the reasons or arguments that are usually insisted on to prove the divine authority of the Scripture. Though I confess I like not to multiply arguments that conclude to a probability only, and are suited to beget a firm opinion at best, where the principle intended to be evinced is *de fide*, and must be believed with faith divine and supernatural; yet because some may haply be kept to some kind of adherence to the Scriptures by mean grounds, that will not in their own strength abide, until they get footing in those that are more firm, I shall not make it my business to drive them from their present station, having persuaded them by that which is better.

Yea, because, on supposition of the evidence formerly tended, there may be great use, at several seasons, of some consequential considerations and arguments to the purpose in hand, I shall insist on two of that kind; which, to me who have the advantage of receiving the Word on the fore-mentioned account, seem not only to persuade, and in a great measure to convince to undeniable probability, but also to prevail irresistibly on the understanding of unprejudiced men to close with the divine truth of it.

The first of these is taken from the nature of the doctrine itself contained in the Scripture; the second, from the management of the whole design therein: the first is innate, the other of a more external and rational consideration.

For the first of them, there are two things considerable in the doctrine of the Scripture, that are powerful, and, if I may so say, uncontrollably prevalent as to this purpose.

First, Its *universal suitableness*, upon its first clear discovery and revelation, to all the entanglements and perplexities of the souls of men, in reference to their relation to and dependence upon God. If all mankind have certain entanglements upon their hearts and spirits in reference unto God—which none of them that are not utterly brutish do not wrestle withal, and which all of them are not able in the least to assoil [acquit] themselves in and about—certainly that doctrine which is suited universally to satisfy all their perplexities, to calm and quiet their spirits in all their tumultuatings, and doth break in upon them with a glorious efficacy to that purpose, in its discovery and revelation, must needs be from that God with whom we have

to do, and none else. From whom else, I pray, should it be? He that can give out the Word *ille mihi semper erit Deus.*

Now, there are three general heads of things, that all and every one of mankind, not naturally brutish, are perplexed withal, in reference to their dependence on God and relation to him.

1. *How they may worship him as they ought.*

2. *How they may be reconciled* and at peace with him, or have an atonement for that guilt which naturally they are sensible of.

3. *What is the nature of true blessedness,* and how they may attain it, or how they may come to the enjoyment of God.

That all mankind are perplexed and entangled with and about these considerations—that all men ever were so, without exception, more or less, and continue so to be to this day—that of themselves they miserably grope up and down in the dark, and are never able to come to any satisfaction, neither as to what is present nor as to what is to come—I could manifest, from the state, office, and condition of conscience, the indelible προλήψεις, "presumptions," about them, that are in the hearts of all by nature. The whole history of all religion which hath been in the world, with the design of all ancient and present philosophy, with innumerable other uncontrollable convictions, (which also, God assisting, I shall in another treatise declare,) do manifest this truth.

That, surely, then, which shall administer to all and every one of them, equally and universally, satisfaction as to all these things—to quiet and calm their spirits, to cut off all necessity of any further inquiries—give them that wherein they must acquiesce and wherewith they will be satiated, unless they will cast off that relation and dependence on God which they seek to confirm and settle; surely, I say, this must be from the all-seeing, all-satisfying Truth and Being, and from none else. Now, this is done by the doctrine of the Scripture, with such a glorious, uncontrollable conviction, that every one to whom it is revealed, the eyes of whose understanding are not blinded by the god of this world, must needs cry out Εὕρηκα—"I have found" that which in vain I sought elsewhere, waxing foolish in my imaginations.

It would be too long to insist on the severals—take one instance in the business of atonement, reconciliation, and acceptance with God. What strange, horrible fruits and effects have men's contrivances on this account produced! What have they not invented? what have they not done? what have they not suffered? and yet continued in dread and bondage all their days. Now, with what a glorious, soul-appeasing light doth the doctrine of satisfaction and atonement by the blood of Christ, the Son of God, come in upon such men! This first astonisheth, then conquereth, then ravisheth

and satiateth the soul. This is that they looked for, this they were sick for, and knew it not. This is the design of the apostle's discourse in the three first chapters of the Epistle to the Romans. Let any man read that discourse from chap i. 18, and onward, and he will see with what glory and beauty, with what full and ample satisfaction, this doctrine breaks out. (Chap. iii. 21–26.)

It is no otherwise as to the particulars of present worship or future blessedness. This meets with men in all their wanderings, stops them in their disquisitions, convinces them of the darkness, folly, uncertainty, falseness, of all their reasonings about these things; and that with such an evidence and light as at once subdues them, captivates their understanding, and quiets their souls. So was that old Roman world conquered by it; so shall the Mohammedan be, in God's good and appointed time.

Of what hath been spoken this is the sum: All mankind, that acknowledge their dependence upon God and relation to him, are naturally (and cannot be otherwise) grievously involved and perplexed in their hearts, thoughts, and reasonings, about the worship of God, acceptation with him, (having sinned,) and the future enjoyment of him. Some with more clear and distinct apprehensions of these things, some under more dark and general notions of them, are thus exercised. To extricate themselves, and to come to some issue in and about these inquiries, hath been the great design of their lives—the aim they had in all things they did, as they thought, well and laudably in this world. Notwithstanding all which, they were never able to deliver themselves, no, not one of them, or attain satisfaction of their souls, but waxed vain in their imaginations, and their foolish hearts were more and more darkened. In this estate of things, the doctrine of the Scripture coming in with full, unquestionable satisfaction to all these—suited to the inquirings of every individual soul, with a largeness of wisdom and depth of goodness not to be fathomed—it must needs be from that God with whom we have to do. And those who are not persuaded hereby, that will not cast anchor in this harbour, let them put to sea once more, if they dare; turn themselves loose to other considerations, and try if all the fore-mentioned perplexities do not inevitably return.

Another consideration of the doctrine of the Scripture to this purpose regards some particulars of it. There are some doctrines of the Scripture, some revelations in it, so *sublimely glorious*, of *so profound and mysterious an excellency*, that at the first proposal of them, nature startles, shrinks, and is taken with horror, meeting with that which is above it, too great and too excellent for it, which it could desirously avoid and decline; but yet, gathering itself up to them, it yields, and finds that unless they are accepted and submitted

unto, though unsearchable, not only all that hath been received must be rejected, but also the whole dependence of the creature on God be dissolved, or rendered only dreadful, terrible, and destructive to nature itself. Such are the doctrines of the Trinity, of the incarnation of the Son of God, of the resurrection of the dead, of the new birth, and the like. At the first revelation of these things nature is amazed, cries, "How can these things be?" or gathers up itself to opposition: "This is babbling"—like the Athenians; "Folly"—as all the wise Greeks. But when the eyes of reason are a little confirmed, though it can never clearly behold the glory of this sun, yet it confesseth a glory to be in it above all that it is able to apprehend. I could manifest, in particular, that the doctrines before mentioned, and several others, are of this importance; namely, though great above and beyond the reach of reason, yet, upon search, found to be such, as, without submission to them, the whole comfortable relation between God and man must needs be dissolved.

Let us take a view in our way of one of the instances. What is there, in the whole book of God, that nature at first sight doth more recoil at, than the doctrine of the Trinity? How many do yet stumble and fall at it! I confess the doctrine itself is but sparingly—yet it is clearly and distinctly—delivered unto us in the Scripture. The sum of it is: That God is one—his nature or his being one: that all the properties or infinite essential excellencies of God, as God, do belong to that one nature and being: that this God is infinitely good, holy, just, powerful; he is eternal, omnipotent, omnipresent; and these things belong to none but him—that is, that one God: that this God is the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost; which are not diverse names of the same person, nor distinct attributes or properties of the same nature or being, but one, another, and a third, all equally that one God, yet really distinguished between themselves by such incommunicable properties as constitute the one to be that one, and the other to be that other, and the third to be that third. Thus, the Trinity is not the union nor unity of three, but it is a trinity in unity, or the ternary number of persons in the same essence; nor doth the Trinity, in its formal conception, denote the essence, as if the essence were comprehended in the Trinity, which is in each person; but it denotes only the distinction of the persons comprised in that number.

This, I say, is the sum of this doctrine, as it is delivered unto us in the Scripture. Here reason is entangled; yet, after a while, finds evidently, that unless this be embraced, all other things wherein it hath to do with God will not be of value to the soul. This will quickly be made to appear. Of all that communion which is here between God and man, founded on the revelation of his mind and

will unto him, which makes way for his enjoyment in glory, there are these two parts:—1*st*, God's gracious communication of his love, goodness, &c., with the fruits of them, unto man; 2*d*, The obedience of man unto God, in a way of gratitude for that love, according to the mind and will of God revealed to him. These two comprise the whole of the intercourse between God and man. Now, when the mind of man is exercised about these things, he finds at last that they are so wrapped up in the doctrine of the Trinity, that without the belief, receiving, and acceptance of it, it is utterly impossible that any interest in them should be obtained or preserved.

For the first, or the communication of God unto us in a way of love and goodness, it is wholly founded upon and inwrapped in this truth, both as to the eternal spring and actual execution of it. A few instances will evince this assertion. The eternal fountain of all grace, flowing from love and goodness, lies in God's election, or predestination. This being an act of God's will, cannot be apprehended but as an eternal act of his Wisdom or Word also. All the eternal thoughts of its pursuit lie in the covenant that was between the Father and the Son, as to the Son's undertaking to execute that purpose of his. This I have at large elsewhere declared.

Take away, then, the doctrine of the Trinity, and both these are gone; there can be no purpose of grace by the Father in the Son—no covenant for the putting of that purpose in execution: and so the foundation of all fruits of love and goodness is lost to the soul.

As to the execution of this purpose, with the actual dispensation of the fruits of grace and goodness unto us, it lies wholly in the unspeakable condescension of the Son unto incarnation, with what ensued thereon. The incarnation of the eternal Word by the power of the Holy Ghost, is the bottom of our participation of grace. Without it, it was absolutely impossible that man should be made partaker of the favour of God. Now, this inwraps the whole doctrine of the Trinity in its bosom, nor can once be apprehended without its acknowledgment. Deny the Trinity, and all the means of the communication of grace, with the whole of the satisfaction and righteousness of Christ, fall to the ground. Every tittle of it speaks this truth; and they who deny the one reject the other.

Our actual participation of the fruits of this grace is by the Holy Ghost. We cannot ourselves seize on them, nor bring them home to our own souls. The impossibility hereof I cannot now stay to manifest. Now, whence is this Holy Ghost? Is he not sent from the Father by the Son? Can we entertain any thought of his effectual working in us and upon us, but it includes this whole doctrine? They, therefore, who deny the Trinity, deny the efficacy of its operation also.

So is it as to our obedience unto God, whereby the communion between God and man is completed. Although the formal object of divine worship be the nature of God, and the persons are not worshipped as persons distinct, but as they are each of them God; yet, as God, they are every one of them distinctly to be worshipped. So is it as to our faith, our love, our thanksgiving, all our obedience, as I have abundantly demonstrated in my treatise of distinct communion with the Father in love, the Son in grace, and the Holy Ghost in the privileges of the gospel. Thus, without the acknowledgment of this truth, none of that obedience which God requireth at our hands can in a due manner be performed.

Hence, the Scripture speaks not of any thing *between God and us* but what is founded on this account. The Father worketh, the Son worketh, and the Holy Ghost worketh. The Father worketh not but by the Son and his Spirit; the Son and Spirit work not but from the Father. The Father glorifieth the Son, the Son glorifieth the Father, and the Holy Ghost glorifieth them both. Before the foundation of the world the Son was with the Father, and rejoiced in his peculiar work for the redemption of mankind. At the creation, the Father made all things, but by the Son and the power of the Spirit. In redemption, the Father sends the Son; the Son, by his own condescension, undertakes the work, and is incarnate by the Holy Ghost. The Father, as was said, communicates his love and all the fruits of it unto us by the Son, as the Holy Ghost doth the merits and fruits of the mediation of the Son. The Father is not known nor worshipped, but by and in the Son; nor Father nor Son, but by the Holy Ghost, &c.

Upon this discovery, the soul that was before startled at the doctrine in the notion of it, is fully convinced that all the satisfaction it hath sought after, in its seeking unto God, is utterly lost if this be not admitted. There is neither any foundation left of the communication of love to him, nor means of returning obedience unto God. Besides, all the things that he hath been inquiring after appear, on this account, in their glory, beauty, and reality, unto him; so that that which most staggered him at first in the receiving of the truth, because of its deep, mysterious glory, doth now most confirm him in the embracing of it, because of its necessity, power, and heavenly excellency.

And this is one argument of the many belonging to the things of the Scripture, that, upon the grounds before mentioned, hath in it, as to my sense and apprehension, an evidence of conviction not to be withstood.

Another consideration of the like efficacy may be taken from a brief view of the whole Scripture, with the design of it. The consent

of parts, or harmony of the Scripture in itself, and every part of it with each other and with the whole, is commonly pleaded as an evidence of its divine original. This much, certainly, it doth evince, beyond all possible contradiction, that the whole proceedeth from one and the same principle, hath the same author, and he wise, discerning, able to comprehend the whole compass of what he intended to deliver and reveal. Otherwise, or by any other, that oneness of spirit, design, and aim, in unspeakable variety and diversity of means of its delivery—that absolute correspondency of it to itself, and distance from any thing else—could not have been attained. Now, it is certain that this principle must be *summum* in its kind—either *bonum* or *malum*. If the Scripture be what it reveals and declares itself to be, it is then unquestionably the "word of the living God," truth itself; for that it professeth of itself from the beginning to the ending—to which profession, all that it reveals answers absolutely and unquestionably in a tendency to his glory alone. If it be not so, it must be acknowledged that the author of it had a blasphemous design to hold forth himself to be God, who is not so—a malicious design to deceive the sons of men, and to make them believe that they worship and honour God, and obey him, when they do not, and so to draw them into everlasting destruction; and that to compass these ends of blasphemy, atheism, and malice, he hath laid out, in a long course of time, all the industry and wisdom that a creature could be made partaker of. Now, he that should do thus must be the devil, and none else: no other creature can possibly arrive at that height of obstinacy in evil. Now, certainly, whilst God is pleased to continue unto us any thing whereby we are distinguished from the beasts that perish, whilst there is a sense of a distance between good and evil abiding amongst men, it cannot fall upon the understanding of any man that that doctrine which is so holy and pure—so absolutely leading to the utmost improvement of whatever is good, just, commendable, and praiseworthy—so suitable to all the light of God, of good and evil, that remains in us—could proceed from any one everlastingly hardened in evil, and that in the pursuit of the most wicked design that that wicked one could possibly be engaged in, namely, to enthrone himself, and maliciously to cheat, cozen, and ruin the souls of men; so that upon necessity the Scripture can own no author but him whose it is—even the living God.

As these considerations are far from being the bottom and foundation of our faith, in our assenting to the authority of God in the Word, so, on the supposition of what is so, they have a usefulness, as to support in trials and temptations, and the like seasons of difficulty: but of these things so far.

OF THE INTEGRITY AND PURITY

OF THE

HEBREW AND GREEK TEXT OF THE SCRIPTURE;

WITH

CONSIDERATIONS ON THE PROLEGOMENA AND APPENDIX TO THE LATE "BIBLIA POLYGLOTTA."

PREFATORY NOTE.

THERE is a tendency to acquiesce in the general verdict against our author for the part he took in the controversy with Walton on the subject of the London Polyglott, without any very careful inquiry into the grounds on which it rests. Dr Owen, we are convinced, has been the victim of unintentional misrepresentation on this point, partly through the dexterous management of Walton, partly through his own want of caution in properly defining his position, and partly because on some points he was completely in error. Dr Twells, in his biography of Pococke, accuses Owen of writing against the Polyglott; and Mr Todd, in his biography of Walton, bitterly re-echoes the charge. Even his friendly biographer, Mr Orme, intimates that he viewed the Polyglott "with jealousy or disapprobation." No statement could be more unfounded. Transparent honesty and perfect truthfulness were leading features of his character; and we cannot think of him as speaking in any other terms but those of warm and unfeigned admiration, when he eulogizes the Polyglott as "a noble collection," "a great and useful work," "which he much esteemed," and when he declares that he "would never fail, on all just occasions, to commend the usefulness of the work, and the learning, diligence, and pains, of the worthy persons that have brought it forth." Dr Chalmers, also, in reference to this controversy, censures Owen as "illiterate" for the views he expressed in it, and contrasts "the lordly insolence of the prelate" with "the outrageous violence of the puritan." There is more of alliteration than truth in the contrast. Walton's short-lived prelacy did not begin till after his controversy with Owen; and the charge of "outrageous violence" against the latter appears to have been suggested by the misrepresentation of his antagonist. Owen professed a desire to conduct the dispute "with Christian candour and moderation of spirit;" and, on the whole, he redeemed his pledge.

On the minute and multifarious details of biblical literature, our author assuredly must yield the palm to Walton. It was not his province. But the real merits of the controversy between them involve two questions, and by his opinions on these it must be judged whether the condemnation so unsparingly heaped on him is altogether well founded. These questions relate to the various readings in the original text of Scripture, and to the antiquity of Hebrew punctuation.

1. On the subject of various readings, Owen had submitted, in the epistle dedicatory, at the beginning of the former treatise, ample evidence that Papists had resorted on a great scale to the artifice of magnifying the corruption of the text, in order to exalt the Vulgate and support the claim of their church to infallibility. As critical research multiplied the various readings by the inspection of the ancient codices, Protestant divines took alarm, and, trembling for the ark of truth, discountenanced such inquiries. That Owen was altogether free from the panic cannot be affirmed. We must sympathize,

however, with any pious jealousy for the honour of the holy oracles, in an age when sound principles of criticism had not been clearly established. It will be new, moreover, to many readers, who have hitherto assumed as true the charge against Owen of ignorant antipathy to the duties and advantages of sacred criticism, when they are told that he not only admitted the existence of various readings, but held that if any others could be discovered from a collation of manuscripts, they "deserved to be considered;" differing in this respect from Dr Whitby, who, at a later period, in 1710, published his "Examen Variantium Lectionum," in opposition to Mill's edition of the New Testament, taking up ground from which Owen would have recoiled, and insisting that every word in the common text stood as originally written,—"in iis omnibus lectionem textûs defendi posse." Owen acknowledged and proclaimed the fact, that in spite of all the variety in the readings, not a single doctrine was vitally affected by them. In regard to them, he objected to the unnecessary multiplication of very trivial differences,—an objection of no moment, stated in a single sentence, and never afterwards pressed. He objected further to the practice of Cappell, in making innovations on the received text by the authority of translations only, on the ground that these translations were made from copies *essentially different* from any now extant. He exonerates Walton from this error, but deems him not sufficiently careful to refrain from admitting into his Polyglott readings gathered from such a source. It was against Cappell's theory that he chiefly wrote; and some strong expressions used in regard to it are quoted by Walton, in his reply to the following treatise, as directed sweepingly against the Polyglott. Few now would ratify the innovations of Cappell. Dr Davidson, in his standard work on biblical criticism, "sighs over the groundless conjectures introduced into parts of the Old Testament text by Cappell." Owen's main objection, however, reproduced frequently in the course of his tract, was against the attempt to amend the text by mere conjecture. There is still a diversity of opinion as to the legitimacy of this source of criticism. Griesbach repudiated the use of it in his edition of the New Testament. Marsh would avail himself of it in regard to the Old Testament, but not in regard to the New. Davidson reckons the cautious use of it lawful in regard to both. At all events, Walton himself professed to discard it as an instrument of criticism; and yet, as Owen shows, he admitted into the Polyglott the conjectural emendations of Grotius. Even Simon, an admirer of Grotius, while commending his notes, complains that he "sometimes multiplies the various readings without necessity." So far, therefore, as it was a question of principle between them, Walton was not in advance of Owen. So far as it was a question of fact, Owen had rather the best of the dispute.

2. As to Hebrew punctuation, Owen held the points to be part of Scripture, and as sacred and ancient as the other elements of the text. Here he may have erred, but it was in honourable company,—with the Buxtorfs, Gerard, Glass, Voet, Flacius Illyricus, Lightfoot, Leusden, and others. Cappell, in 1624, though wrong on the question of criticism, adopted the opinions of a learned Jew, Elias Levita, who wrote in 1520, and of some Jewish and Christian writers even before the days of Levita, and first took strong ground in denying the antiquity of the Hebrew points, and tracing them to the school of the Masoretes. Still, the question was not determined. Schultens, in 1737, followed by Michaelis, adopted an intermediate course, contending that *some points* had been in use from the earliest ages of the language. Eichhorn and Gesenius were inclined to believe in the existence of some points before the Talmud and the days of Jerome. It was only in 1830 that Hupfeld is considered to have set the question at rest, by proving the Masoretic punctuation to have been unknown both to the authors of the Talmud and to Jerome. It is a question which it has taken the discussion of centuries to settle, and some may even yet be disposed to think that all the difficulties connected with Hupfeld's view are not eliminated from it, and that some apparatus corresponding to the points must have been needed to secure uniformity in Hebrew pronunciation during successive ages, and in all parts of the world, wherever in ancient times there were Jews to speak their own tongue or read their own Scriptures.

Owen erred in various matters of detail; but the same allegation, though not to the same extent, might be made respecting Walton, who advanced opinions in the controversy which no modern scholar would endorse with his sanction. Owen erred also in betraying a nervous sensitiveness, lest an imposing array of various readings should invalidate the authority of the sacred text. The spirit in which Walton replied, however, cannot be justified,—transmuting the hypothetical reasonings of his adversary into positive averments, and applying to the Polyglott what he wrote against Bellarmine, Leo Castrius, Morin, and Cappell, whose principles of criticism were notoriously un-

sound and dangerous. Owen begins the following treatise by stating, that after he had finished but before he had sent off the manuscript of the preceding treatise "On the Original of Scripture," the London Polyglott had reached him. "Palpable untruth!" exclaimed Walton; "for in that treatise there are two references to the Polyglott;"—as if they could not have been inserted after he had seen it, the more especially as on seeing it Owen declares that he took time for consideration. It is to be wished that he had taken more time, and been more guarded, and less rash on this occasion. He would have been less open in minor details to the rebukes of his learned and haughty antagonist; with whom, after all, we cannot help feeling some degree of sympathy, in his fears lest the rude breath of jealous criticism should scorch the laurel due to his brow for devising and completing that stupendous monument of enterprise, learning, and industry,—the Biblia Sacra Polyglotta Londini.—Ed.

CHAPTER I.

The occasion of this discourse—The danger of supposing corruptions in the originals of the Scripture—The great usefulness of the Biblia Polyglotta—The grounds of the ensuing animadversions—The assertions proposed to be vindicated laid down—Their weight and importance—Sundry principles in the Prolegomena prejudicial to the truth contended for laid down—Those principles formerly asserted by others—Reasons of the opposition made to them.

When this whole little precedent treatise[1] was finished and ready to be given out unto the stationer, there came to my hands the Prolegomena and Appendix to the Biblia Polyglotta lately published. Upon the first sight of that volume, I was somewhat startled with that bulky collection of various readings which the appendix tenders to the view of every one that doth but cast an eye upon it. Within a while after, I found that others also, men of learning and judgment, had apprehensions of that work not unlike those which my own thoughts had suggested unto me. Afterward, considering what I had written about the providence of God in the preservation of the original copies of the Scripture in the foregoing discourse, fearing lest, from that great appearance of variations in the original copies, and those of all the translations, published with so great care and diligence, there might some unconquerable objections against the truth of what I had asserted be educed, I judged it necessary to stop the progress of those thoughts until I could get time to look through the Appendix and the various lections in that great volume exhibited unto us, with the grounds and reasons of them in the Prolegomena. Having now discharged that *task* and (as things were stated) *duty*, I shall crave leave to deliver my thoughts to some things contained in them, which possibly men of perverse minds may wrest to the prejudice of my former assertions,—to the prejudice of

[1] The treatise "Of the Divine Original, etc., of the Scriptures."

the certainty of divine truth, as continued unto us, through the providence of God, in the originals of the Scripture.

What use hath been made, and is as yet made, in the world, of this supposition, that corruptions have befallen the originals of the Scripture, which those various lections at first view seem to intimate, I need not declare. It is, in brief, the foundation of Mohammedanism (Alcor. Azoar. 5), the chiefest and principal prop of Popery, the only pretence of fanatical anti-scripturists, and the root of much hidden atheism in the world.[1] At present there is sent unto me by a very learned person, upon our discourse on this subject, a treatise in English, with the Latin title of "Fides Divina," wherein its nameless author, on this very foundation, labours to evert and utterly render useless the whole Scripture. How far such as he may be strengthened in their infidelity by the consideration of these things time will manifest.

Had there not been, then, a necessity incumbent on me either utterly to desist from pursuing any thoughts of publishing the foregoing treatise, or else of giving an account of some things contained in the Prolegomena and Appendix, I should, for many reasons, have abstained from this employment. But the truth is, not only what I had written in the first chapter about the providence of God in the preservation of the Scripture, but also the main of the arguments afterward insisted on by me concerning the self-evidencing power and light of the Scripture, receiving, in my apprehension, a great weakening by the things I shall now speak unto, if owned and received as they are proposed unto us, I could not excuse myself from running the hazard of giving my thoughts upon them.

The wise man tells us that he considered "all travail, and every right work, and that for this a man is envied of his neighbour;" which, saith he, is "vanity and vexation of spirit," Eccles. iv. 4. It cannot be denied but that this often falls out, through the corruption of the hearts of men, that when works, right works, are with most sore travail brought forth in the world, their authors are repaid with envy for their labour; which mixes all the issues of the best endeavours of men with vanity and vexation of spirit. Jerome of old and Erasmus of late are the usual instances in this kind. That I have any of that guilt in a peculiar manner upon me in reference to this work of publishing the Biblia Polyglotta, which I much esteem, or the authors and contrivers of it, whom I know not,[2] I can with due consideration, and do, utterly deny. The Searcher of all hearts

[1] Whitak. Cham. Rivet. de S. S. Molin. nov. Pap. Mestrezat. Cont. Jesuit. Regourd. Vid. Card. Perron. Respon. ad Reg. mag. Bullen. l. 5, c. 6.

[2] Since my writing of this, some of the chief overseers of the work, persons of singular worth, are known to me.

knows I lie not. And what should possibly infect me with that leaven? I neither profess any deep skill in the learning used in that work, nor am ever like to be engaged in any thing that should be set up in competition with it, nor did I ever know that there was such a person in the world as the chief author of this edition of the Bible but by it. I shall, then, never fail, on all just occasions, to commend the usefulness of this work, and the learning, diligence, and pains, of the worthy persons that have brought it forth; nor would be wanting to their full praise in this place, but that an entrance into this discourse with their due commendations might be liable to misrepresentations. But whereas we have not only the Bible published, but also private opinions of men, and collections of various readings (really or pretendedly so we shall see afterward), tending some of them, as I apprehend, to the disadvantage of the great and important truth that I have been pleading for, tendered unto us, I hope it will not be grievous to any, nor matter of offence, if, using the same liberty that they or any of them whose hands have been most eminent in this work have done, I do, with, I hope, Christian candour and moderation of spirit, briefly discover my thoughts upon some things proposed by them.

The renownedly learned prefacer to the Arabic translation in this edition of it tells us that the work of translating the Pentateuch into that language was performed by a Jew, who took care to give countenance to his own private opinions, and so render them authentic by bringing them into the text of his translation.

It is not of any such attempt that I have any cause to complain, or shall so do in reference to these Prolegomena and Appendix; only I could have wished (with submission to better judgments be it spoken) that, in the publishing of the Bible, the sacred text, with the translations, and such naked historical accounts of their originals and preservation as were necessary to have laid them fair and open to the judgment of the reader, had not been clogged with disputes and pleas for particular private opinions, imposed thereby with too much advantage on the minds of men by their constant neighbourhood unto canonical truth.

But my present considerations being not to be extended beyond the concernment of the truth which in the foregoing discourse I have pleaded for, I shall first propose a brief abstract thereof, as to that part of it which seems to be especially concerned, and then lay down what to me appears in its prejudice in the volumes now under debate, not doubting but a fuller account of the whole will by some or other be speedily tendered unto the learned and impartial readers of them. The sum of what I am pleading for, as to the particular head to be vindicated, is, That *as the Scriptures of the Old and New*

Testament were immediately and entirely given out by God himself, his mind being in them represented unto us without the least interveniency of such mediums and ways as were capable of giving change or alteration to the least iota or syllable; so, by his good and merciful providential dispensation, in his love to his word and church, his whole word, as first given out by him, is preserved unto us entire in the original languages; where, shining in its own beauty and lustre (as also in all translations, so far as they faithfully represent the originals), it manifests and evidences unto the consciences of men, without other foreign help or assistance, its divine original and authority.

Now, the several assertions or propositions contained in this position are to me such important truths, that I shall not be blamed in the least by my own spirit, nor I hope by any others, in contending for them, judging them fundamental parts of the faith once delivered to the saints; and though some of them may seem to be less weighty than others, yet they are so concatenated in themselves, that by the removal or destruction of any one of them, our interest in the others is utterly taken away. It will assuredly be granted that the persuasion of the coming forth of the word immediately from God, in the way pleaded for, is the foundation of all faith, hope, and obedience. But what, I pray, will it advantage us that God did so once deliver his word, if we are not assured also that that word so delivered hath been, by his special care and providence, preserved entire and uncorrupt unto us, or that it doth not evidence and manifest itself to be his word, being so preserved? Blessed, may we say, were the ages past, who received the word of God in its unquestionable power and purity, when it shone brightly in its own glorious native light, and was free from those defects and corruptions which, through the default of men in a long tract of time, it hath contracted; but for us, as we know not well where to lay a sure foundation of believing that this book rather than any other doth contain what is left unto us of that word of his, so it is impossible we should ever come to any certainty almost of any individual word or expression whether it be from God or no. Far be it from the thoughts of any good man, that God, whose covenant with his church is that his word and Spirit shall never depart from it, Isa. lix. 21, Matt. v. 18, 1 Pet. i. 25, 1 Cor. xi. 23, Matt. xxviii. 20, hath left it in uncertainties about the things that are the foundation of all that faith and obedience which he requires at our hands.

As, then, I have in the foregoing treatise evinced, as I hope, the self-evidencing light and power of the Scripture, so let us now candidly, for the sake and in the pursuit of truth,—dealing with a mind freed from prejudices and disquieting affections, save only the

trouble that arises from the necessity of dissenting from the authors of so useful a work,—address ourselves to the consideration of what seems in these Prolegomena and Appendix to impair the truth of the other assertions about the entire preservation of the word as given out from God in the copies which yet remain with us. And this I shall do, not doubting but that the persons themselves concerned will fairly accept and weigh what is conscientiously tendered.

As, then, I do with all thankfulness acknowledge that many things are spoken very honourably of the originals in these Prolegomena, and that they are in them absolutely preferred above any translation whatever,[1] and asserted in general as the authentic rule of all versions, contrary to the thoughts of the publisher of the great Parisian Bibles, and his infamous *hyperaspistes*, Morinus; so, as they stand in their aspect unto the Appendix of various lections, there are both opinions and principles, confirmed by suitable practices, that are of the nature and importance before mentioned.

1. After a long dispute to that purpose, it is determined that the Hebrew points or vowels, and accents, are a *novel invention* of some Judaical Rabbins, about five or six hundred years *after the giving out of the gospel*.[2] Hence,—

(1.) An antiquity is ascribed to some *translations*, two or three at the least, above and before the invention of these points; whose agreement with the original cannot, therefore, by just consequence, be tried by the present text, as now pointed and accented.

(2.) The whole credit of our reading and interpretation of the Scripture, as far as regulated by the present *punctuation*, depends solely on the faithfulness and skill of those Jews whose invention this work is asserted to be.

2. The קְרִי וּכְתִיב, of which sort are above eight hundred in the Hebrew Bibles, are various lections, partly gathered by some Judaical Rabbins out of ancient copies, partly their critical amendments.[3]

And, therefore,—

After these various lections, as they are esteemed, are presented unto us in their own proper order, wherein they stand in the great Bibles (not surely to increase the bulk of diverse readings, or to present a face of new variety to a less attentive observer, but) to evidence that they are such various lections as above described, they are given us over a second time, in the method whereinto they are cast by Cappellus, the great patriarch of these mysteries.[4]

3. That there are such alterations befallen the *original* as, in many places, may be rectified by the translations that have been made of old.[5]

[1] Proleg. 7, sect. 17. [2] Ibid. 3, sect. 8, et seq. [3] Ibid. 8, sect. 23, etc.
[4] Append. p. 5. [5] Proleg. 7, sect. 12.

And therefore,—

Various lections may be observed and gathered out of those translations, by considering how they read in their copies, and wherein they differed from those which we now enjoy.[1]

4. It is also declared, that where any *gross faults* or corruptions are befallen the originals, men may by their faculty of critical conjecturing, amend them, and restore the native lections that were lost; though in general, without the authority of copies, this may not be allowed.[2]

And therefore,—

A collection of various readings out of Grotius, consisting for the most part in such conjectures, is in the Appendix presented unto us.

5. The *voluminous bulk of various lections*, as nakedly exhibited, seems sufficient to beget scruples and doubts in the minds of men about the truth of what hath been hitherto by many pretended concerning the preservation of the Scripture through the care and providence of God.

It is known to all men acquainted with things of this nature that in all these there is no *new opinion* coined or maintained by the learned prefacer to these Bibles; the severals mentioned have been asserted and maintained by sundry learned men. Had the opinion about them been kept in the ordinary sphere of men's private conceptions, in their own private writings, running the hazard of men's judgments on their own strength and reputation, I should not from my former discourse have esteemed myself concerned in them. Every one of us must give an account of himself unto God. It will be well for us if we are found holding the foundation. If we build hay and stubble upon it, though our work perish, we shall be saved. Let every man in these things be fully persuaded in his own mind; it shall be to me no offence. It is their being laid as the foundation of the usefulness of these Biblia Polyglotta, with an endeavour to render them catholic, not in their own strength, but in their appendage to the authority that on good grounds is expected to this work, that calls for a due consideration of them. All men who will find them stated in these Prolegomena may not perhaps have had leisure, may not perhaps have the ability, to know what issue the most of these things have been already driven unto in the writings of private men.

As I willingly grant, then, that some of these things may, without any great prejudice to the truth, be candidly debated amongst learned men, so taking them altogether, placed in the advantages they now enjoy, I cannot but look upon them as an engine suited to the destruction of the important truth before pleaded for, and as a fit

[1] Proleg. 6, sect. 8–10. [2] Ibid. 6, sect. 12.

weapon put into the hands of men of atheistical minds and principles, such as this age abounds withal, to oppose the whole evidence of truth revealed in the Scripture. I fear, with some, either the pretended *infallible judge* or the *depth of atheism* will be found to lie at the door of these considerations. "Hoc Ithacus vellet." But the debate of the advantage of either Romanists or Atheists from hence belongs to another place and season. Nor is the guilt of any consequences of this nature charged on the workmen, which yet may be feared from the work itself.

CHAPTER II.

Of the purity of the originals—The αὐτόγραφα of the Scripture lost—That of Moses, how and how long preserved—Of the book found by Hilkiah—Of the αὐτόγραφα of the New Testament—Of the first copies of the originals—The scribes of those copies not Θεόπνευστοι—What is ascribed to them—The great and incomparable care of the scribes of it—The whole word of God, in every tittle of it, preserved entire in the copies of the original extant—Heads of arguments to that purpose—What various lections are granted in the original of the Old and New Testaments—Sundry considerations concerning them, manifesting them to be of no importance—That the Jews have not corrupted the text—The most probable instances considered.

HAVING given an account of the *occasion* of this discourse, and mentioned the particulars that are, all or some of them, to be taken into further consideration, before I proceed to their discussion, I shall, by way of addition and explanation to what hath been delivered in the former treatise, give a brief account of my apprehensions concerning the purity of the present original copies of the Scripture, or rather copies in the original languages, which the church of God doth now and hath for many ages enjoyed as her chiefest treasure; whereby it may more fully appear what it is we plead for and defend against the insinuations and pretences above mentioned.

First, then, it is granted that the individual αὐτόγραφα of Moses, the prophets, and the apostles, are in all probability, and as to all that we know, utterly perished and lost out of the world; as also the copies of Ezra. The reports mentioned by some to the contrary are open fictions.[1] The individual ink and parchment, the rolls or books that they wrote, could not without a miracle have been preserved from mouldering into dust before this time. Nor doth it seem improbable that God was willing by their loss to reduce us to a nearer

[1] Adrianus Ferrariensis Flagellum Judæor. lib. ix. cap. ii. Rab. Azarias Meor Henaim. p. 13, cap. ix.

consideration of his care and providence in the preservation of every tittle contained in them. Had those individual writings been preserved, men would have been ready to adore them, as the Jews do their own ἀπόγραφα in their synagogues.

Moses, indeed, delivered his original copy of the Pentateuch in a public assembly unto the Levites (that is, the sons of Korah), to be put into the sides of the ark, and there kept for a perpetual monument, Deut. xxxi. 25, 26. That individual book was, I doubt not, preserved until the destruction of the temple. There is, indeed, no mention made of the book of the law in particular, when the ark was solemnly carried into the holy place after the building of Solomon's temple, 2 Chron. v. 4, 5; but the tabernacle of the congregation continued until then. That, and all that was in it, are said to be "brought up," verse 5. Now, the placing of the book by the sides of the ark being so solemn an ordinance, it was no doubt preserved; nor is there any pretence to the contrary. Some think the book found by Hilkiah in the days of Josiah was this καλὴ παραθήκη, or αὐτόγραφον of Moses, which was placed by the sides of the ark. It rather seems to have been some ancient sacred copy, used in the service of the temple, and laid up there, as there was in the second temple,[1] which was carried in triumph to Rome: for besides that he speaks of his finding it in general in the house of the Lord, upon the occasion of the work which was then done, 2 Chron. xxxiv. 15, which was not in or about the holy place, where he, who was high priest, knew full well this book was kept, it doth not appear that it was lawful for him to take that sacred depositum from its peculiar archives to send it abroad, as he dealt with that book which he found; nay, doubtless, it was altogether unlawful for him so to have done, it being placed there by a peculiar ordinance, for a peculiar or special end. After the destruction of the temple, all inquiry after that book is in vain. The author of the Second Book of Maccabees mentions not its hiding in Nebo by Jeremiah, with the ark and altar, or by Josiah, as say some of the Talmudists; nor were it of any importance if they had. Of the Scripture preserved in the temple at its last destruction, Josephus gives us a full account, De Bell. Jud. lib. vii. cap. xxiv.

Secondly, For the Scriptures of the New Testament, it doth not appear that the αὐτόγραφα of the several writers of it were ever gathered into one volume, there being now no one church to keep them for the rest. The epistles, though immediately transcribed for the use of other churches, Col. iv. 16, were doubtless kept in the several churches whereunto they were directed. From those πρωτότυπα there were quickly ἐκτυπούμενα, "transcribed copies," given out

[1] Joseph. de Bell. Jud. lib. vii. cap. xxiv.

to "faithful men," 2 Tim. ii. 1, whilst the infallible Spirit yet continued his guidance in an extraordinary manner.

For the first transcribers of the original copies, and those who in succeeding ages have done the like work from them, whereby they have been propagated and continued down to us, in a subserviency to the providence and promise of God, we say not, as is vainly charged by Morinus and Cappellus, that they were all or any of them ἀναμάρτητοι and θεόπνευστοι, "infallible and divinely inspired," so that it was impossible for them in any thing to mistake. It is known, it is granted, that failings have been amongst them, and that various lections are from thence risen; of which afterward. Religious care and diligence in their work, with a due reverence of Him with whom they had to do, is all we ascribe unto them. Not to acknowledge these freely in them, without clear and unquestionable evidence to the contrary, is high uncharitableness, impiety, and ingratitude. This care and diligence, we say, in a subserviency to the promise and providence of God, hath produced the effect contended for; nor is any thing further necessary thereunto. On this account to argue, as some do, from the miscarriages and mistakes of men, their oscitancy and negligence in transcribing the old heathen authors, Homer, Aristotle, Tully, we think it not tolerable in a Christian, or any one that hath the least sense of the nature and importance of the word, or the care of God towards his church. Shall we think that men who wrote out books wherein themselves and others were no more concerned than it is possible for men to be in the writings of the persons mentioned, and others like them, had as much reason to be careful and diligent in that they did as those who knew and considered that every letter and tittle that they were transcribing was part of the word of the great God, wherein the eternal concernment of their own souls and the souls of others did lie? Certainly, whatever may be looked for from the religious care and diligence of men lying under a loving and careful aspect from the promise and providence of God, may be justly expected from them who undertook that work. However, we are ready to own all their failings that can be proved. To assert in this case without proof is injurious.

The Jews have a common saying among them,—that *to alter one letter of the law is no less sin than to set the whole world on fire;* and shall we think that in writing it they took no more care than a man would do in writing out Aristotle or Plato, who for a very little portion of the world would willingly have done his endeavour to get both their works out of it? Considering that the word to be transcribed was, every ἰῶτα and tittle of it, the word of the great God; that that which was written, and as written, was proposed as his, as from him; that if any failings were made, innumerable eyes of men,

owning their eternal concernment to lie in that word, were open upon it to discover it, and thousands of copies were extant to try it by; and all this known unto and confessed by every one that undertook this work,—it is no hard matter to prove their care and diligence to have outgone that of other common scribes of heathen authors. The truth is, they are prodigious things that are related of the exact diligence and reverential care of the ancient Jews in this work, especially when they intrusted a copy to be a rule for the trial and standard of other private copies. Maimonides in הלכות ספר תורה, chap. viii. 3, 4, tells us that Ben Asher spent many years in the careful, exact writing out of the Bible. Let any man consider the twenty things which they affirm to profane a book or copy, and this will further appear. They are repeated by Rabbi Moses, Tractat. de Libro Legis. cap. x. One of them is, שחסר אפילו אות אחת, "If but one letter be wanting;" and another, "If but one letter be redundant." Of which more shall be spoken if occasion be offered.

Even among the heathen, we will scarce think that the Roman pontifices, going solemnly to transcribe the Sibyls' verses, would do it either negligently or treacherously, or alter one tittle from what they found written; and shall we entertain such thoughts of them who knew they had to do with the living God, and that in and about that which is dearer to Him than all the world besides? Let men, then, clamour as they please, and cry out of all men as ignorant and stupid which will not grant the corruptions of the Old Testament which they plead for, which is the way of Morinus; or let them propose their own conjectures of the ways of the entrance of the mistakes that they pretend are crept into the original copies, with their remedies, which is the way of Cappellus; we shall acknowledge nothing of this nature but what they can prove by undeniable and irrefragable instances,—which, as to any thing as yet done by them or those that follow in their footsteps, appears upon the matter to be nothing at all. To this purpose take our sense in the words of a very learned man: "Ut in iis libris qui sine vocalibus conscripti sunt, certum constantemque exemplarium omnium, tum excusarum scriptionem similemque omnino comperimus, sic in omnibus etiam iis quibus puncta sunt addita, non aliam cuipiam nec discrepantem aliis punctationem observavimus; nec quisquam est qui ullo in loco diversa lectionis Hebraicæ exemplaria ab iis quæ circumferuntur, vidisse se asserat, modo grammaticam rationem observatam dicat. Et quidem Dei consilio ac voluntate factum putamus, ut cum magna Græcorum Latinorumque fere omnium ejusdem auctoris exemplarium, ac præsertim manuscriptorum pluribus in locis varietas deprehendatur, magna tamen in omnibus Hebraicis, quæcunque nostro sæculo inveniuntur, Bibliis, scriptionis æqualitas, similitudo atque

constantia servetur quocunque modo scripta illa sint, sive solis consonantibus constent, sive punctis etiam instructa visantur," Arias Montan. præfat. ad Biblia Interlin. de Varia Hebraicorum Librorum Scriptione et Lectione.

It can, then, with no colour of probability be asserted[1] (which yet I find some learned men too free in granting), namely, that there hath the same fate attended the Scripture in its transcription as hath done other books. Let me say without offence, this imagination, asserted on deliberation, seems to me to border on atheism. Surely the promise of God for the preservation of his word, with his love and care of his church, of whose faith and obedience that word of his is the only rule, requires other thoughts at our hands.

Thirdly, We add, that *the whole Scripture,* entire as given out from God, without any loss, is preserved in the *copies of the originals* yet remaining; what varieties there are among the copies themselves shall be afterward declared. In them all, we say, is every letter and tittle of the word. These copies, we say, are the rule, standard, and touchstone of all translations, ancient or modern, by which they are in all things to be examined, tried, corrected, amended; and themselves only by themselves. Translations contain the word of God, and are the word of God, perfectly or imperfectly, according as they express the words, sense, and meaning of those originals. To advance any, all translations concurring, into an equality with the originals,—so to set them by it as to set them up with it on even terms,—much more to propose and use them as means of castigating, amending, altering any thing in them, gathering various lections by them, is to set up an altar of our own by the altar of God, and to make equal the wisdom, care, skill, and diligence of men, with the wisdom, care, and providence of God himself. It is a foolish conjecture of Morinus, from some words of Epiphanius, that Origen in his Octapla placed the translation of the LXX. in the midst, to be the rule of all the rest, even of the Hebrew itself, that was to be regulated and amended by it: "Media igitur omnium catholica editio collocata erat, ut ad eam Hebræa cæteræque editiones exigerentur et emendarentur," Exercit. lib. i. cap. iii. p. 15. The truth is, he placed the Hebrew, in Hebrew characters, in the first place, as the rule and standard of all the rest; the same in Greek characters in the next place; then that of Aquila; then that of Symmachus; after which, in the fifth place, followed that of the LXX., mixed with that of Theodotion.

The various arguments giving evidence to this truth that might be produced are too many for me now to insist upon, and would take up more room than is allotted to the whole discourse, should

[1] Proleg. 7, sect. 12.

I handle them at large, and according to the merit of this cause. 1. The *providence of God* in taking care of his word, which he hath magnified above all his name, as the most glorious product of his wisdom and goodness, his great concernment in this word answering his promise to this purpose; 2. The *religious care* of the church (I speak not of the Romish synagogue) to whom these oracles of God were committed; 3. The care of the first writers in giving out *authentic copies* of what they had received from God unto many, which might be rules to the first transcribers; 4. The *multiplying copies* to such a number that it was impossible any should corrupt them all, wilfully or by negligence; 5. The preservation of the *authentic copies*, first in the Jewish synagogues, then in the Christian assemblies, with reverence and diligence; 6. The *daily reading* and studying of the word by all sorts of persons, ever since its first writing, rendering every alteration liable to immediate observation and discovery, and that all over the world; with, 7. The consideration of the many *millions* that looked on every letter and tittle in this book as their inheritance, which for the whole world they would not be deprived of: and in particular, for the Old Testament (now most questioned), 8. The care of Ezra and his companions, *the men of the great synagogue*, in restoring the Scripture to its purity when it had met with the greatest trial that it ever underwent in this world, considering the paucity of the copies then extant;[1] 9. The *care of the Masoretes* from his days and downward, to keep perfect and give an account of every syllable in the Scripture,—of which see Buxtorfius, Com. Mas.; 10. The *constant consent* of all copies in the world, so that, as sundry learned men have observed, there is not in the whole Mishna, Gemara, or either Talmud, any one place of Scripture found otherwise read than as it is now in our copies; 11. The security we have that no mistakes were voluntarily or negligently brought into the text before the coming of our Saviour, who was to *declare* all things, in that he not once reproves the Jews on that account, when yet for their false glosses on the word he spares them not;[2] 12. Afterward the watchfulness which the two nations of Jews and Christians had always one upon another,—with sundry things of the like importance, might to this purpose be insisted on. But of these things I shall speak again, if occasion be offered.

Notwithstanding what hath been spoken, we grant that there are

[1] "Hierosolymis Babylonica expugnatione deletis, omne instrumentum Judaicæ literaturæ per Esdram constat restauratum."—Tertull. lib. de Hab. Mul. cap. iii.

[2] "Quod si aliquis dixerit Hebræos libros à Judæis esse falsatos, audiat Origenem, quid in octavo volumine explanationum Esaiæ respondeat quæstiunculæ; quod nunquam dominus et apostoli qui cætera crimina arguunt in Scribis et Pharisæis, de hoc crimine quod erat maximum reticuissent. Sin autem dixerint post adventum Domini et prædicationem apostolorum libros Hebræos fuisse falsatos cachinnum tenere non potero."—Hierom. in cap. vi. Esaiæ.

and have been various lections in the Old Testament and the New. For the Old Testament, the Keri and Ketib, the various readings of Ben Asher and Ben Naphtali, of the eastern and western Jews, evince it. Of the קְרִי וּכְתִיב I shall speak particularly afterward. They present themselves to the view of every one that but looks into the Hebrew Bible. At the end of the great Rabbinical Bibles (as they are called) printed by Bombergus at Venice, as also in the edition of Buxtorfius at Basil, there is a collection of the various readings of Ben Asher and Ben Naphtali, of the eastern and western Jews;—we have them also in this Appendix. For the two first mentioned, they are called among the Jews, one of them, R. Aaron, the son of R. Moses, of the tribe of Asher; the other, R. Moses, the son of David, of the tribe of Naphtali. They flourished, as is probable, among the Jews, about the year of Christ 1030, or thereabouts, and were teachers of great renown, the former in the west or Palestina, the latter in the east or Babylon. In their exact consideration of every letter, point, and accent of the Bible, wherein they spent their lives, it seems they found out some varieties. Let any one run them through as they are presented in this Appendix, he will find them to be so small, consisting for the most part in unnecessary accents, of no importance to the sense of any word, that they deserve not to be taken notice of. For the various readings of the oriental or Babylonian, and occidental or Palestine Jews, all that I know of them (and I wish that those that know more of them would inform me better) is, that they first appeared in the edition of the Bible by Bombergus, under the care of Felix Pratensis, gathered by R. Jacob Ben Chajim, who corrected that impression. But they give us no account of their original, nor (to profess my ignorance) do I know any that do: it may be some do, but in my present haste I cannot inquire after them. But the thing itself proclaims their non-importance; and Cappellus, the most skilful and diligent improver of all advantages for impairing the authority of the Hebrew text, so to give countenance to his "Critica Sacra," confesses that they are all trivial, and not in matters of any moment. Besides these, there are no other various lections of the Old Testament. The conjectures of men conceited of their own abilities to correct the word of God are not to be admitted to that title. If any others can be gathered, or shall be hereafter, out of ancient copies of credit and esteem, where no mistake can be discovered as their cause, they deserve to be considered. Men must here deal by instances, not conjectures. All that yet appears impairs not in the least the truth of our assertion, that every letter and tittle of the word of God remains in the copies preserved by his merciful providence for the use of his church.

As to Jews, besides the mad and senseless clamour in general for

corrupting the Scriptures, three things are with most pretence of reason objected against them:—The תקון סופרים, tikkun sopherim, or "correctio scribarum," by which means it is confessed by Elias that eighteen places are corrected. But all things are here uncertain: uncertain that ever any such things were done; uncertain who are intended by their sopherim,—Ezra and his companions most probably; nor do the particular places enumerated discover any such correction. They are all in particular considered by Glassius, lib. i. tract. 1; but the whole matter is satisfactorily determined by Buxtorfius in his letters to Glassius, printed by him, and repeated again by Amama, Anti. Barb. Bib. lib. i. p. 30, 31. Because this thing is much insisted on by Galatinus to prove the Jews' corrupting of the text, it may not be amiss to set down the words of that great master of all Jewish learning:—

"Ad tertium quæsitum tuum, de tikkun sopherim, 18 voces hanc censuram subiisse Massora passim notat. Recensio locorum in vestibulo libri Numerorum, et Ps. cvi. Utrobique non nisi 16 recensentur, sed in Num. xii. 12 duo exempla occurrunt, ut notat R. Solomon. Deest ergo unus locus mihi, quem ex nullo Judæo hactenus, expiscari potui, nec magnus ille Mercerus eum invenit. Galatinus hoc thema non intellexit, et aliena exempla admiscet. Sic et alii qui corruptiones ista esse putant. Nec ullum hactenus ex nostris sive evangelicis sive catholicis vidi, qui explicarit, quæ fuerint scribæ isti, et quales תיקונים ipsorum. Quam antiquæ hæ notæ de tikkun sint, liquido mihi nondum constat. Antiquior ipsarum memoria est in libro ספרו, qui ante Talmud Babylonicum fertur conscriptus. Dissentiunt tamen Hebræi de ejus autore et tempore. In Talmud neutro ulla plane istius tikkun mentio fit, cum alias עיטור סופרים longe minoris negotii in Talmud commemoretur. Si aliter ista loca fuissent aliquando scripta, Onkelos et Jonathan id vel semel expressissent. Nec Josephus reticuisset, qui contrarium Hebræis adscribit, nullam scilicet unquam literam mutatam fuisse in lege ab Hebræis popularibus suis, lib. i. contra Apionem. Talmudistæ in Lev. xxvii. vers. ult. diversis locis notant, nec prophetæ ulli licitum fuisse vel minimum in lege mutare vel innovare. Quomodo ergo scribæ quidam vulgares hanc audaciam sibi arrogassent, textum sacrum in literis et sensu corrigere? In silentio itaque omnium, in aurem tibi dico, Sopherim hosce fuisse ipsos autores sacros, Mosen et Prophetas, qui nunquam aliter scripserunt quam hodie scriptum legitur. At sapientes Hebræorum nasutiores, animadvertentes inconvenientiam quandam in istis locis, scripserunt, aliter istos autores loqui debuisse, et secundum cohærentiam propositi textus, sic vel sic scribere, sed pro eo maluisse sic scribere, et id sic efferre, ut illud hodie in textu est. Veluti Gen. xviii. 22, lectum scriptum, 'Et Abraham adhuc sta-

bat coram Domino.' Itane? ubi legitur, inquiunt sapientes, quod Abraham venerit ad Dominum, et steterit coram eo; contrarium dicitur in præcedentibus, Deus scilicet venit ad Abraham, et dixit ad eum, 'Num ego celo ab Abrahamo,' etc. 'Clamor Sodomæ et Gomorrhæ magnus est,' etc. Ideoque Moses scribere debuit, 'Et Dominus adhuc stabat coram Abrahamo.' At ita serviliter de Deo loqui non decuit Mosen, unde תיקון correxit et mutavit stylum sermonis, honoris majoris causa, et dixit, 'Et Abraham adhuc stabat,' etc. Hinc R. Salamo adjicit היה לו לכתוב scribendum ipsi (Mosi) erat, (Seu) scribere debebat, 'Et Dominus stabat;' non quod aliter sic scripserit antea, et postea id ab aliis scribis correctum sit, aut corruptum. Hinc R. Aben Ezra, ad aliquot loca irridet nasutos, inquiens, nullo tikkun opus fuisse, id est, nihil esse, quod nasuti isti sapientes putarint, autorem debuisse aliter ibi loqui vel scribere. Vide et eum Job. xxxii. 3. Habes mysterium prolixe explicatum, in quo et multi Hebræorum impegerunt." Thus far Buxtorfius.

The עיטור סופרים are insisted on by the same Galatinus; but these are only about the use of the letter ו four or five times, which seem to be of the same rise with them foregoing.

But that which makes the greatest cry at present is the corruption of Ps. xxii. 17, where, instead of כָּאֲרִי, which the LXX. translated "Ωρυξαν, "They digged" or "pierced,"—that is, "my hands and feet,"—the present Judaical copies, as the Antwerp Bibles also, read כָּאֲרִי, "as a lion," so depraving the prophecy of our Saviour's suffering, "They digged (or pierced) my hands and my feet," leaving it no sense at all; "As a lion my hands and my feet." Simeon de Muis upon the place pleads the substitution of י for ו to be a late corruption of the Jews; at least, כָּאֲרִי was the Keri, and was left out by them. Johannes Isaac, lib. ii. ad Lindan., professes that when he was a Jew, he saw כָּאֲרִי in a book of his grandfather's. Buxtorf affirms one to have been the Ketib, the other the Keri, and proves it from the Masora; and blames the Antwerp Bibles for printing כָּאֲרִי in the line. With him agree Genebrard, Pagninus, Vatablus, Mercer, Rivet, etc. Others contend that Ca-ari, "as a lion," ought to be retained, repeating ὡσὸ κοινοῦ, the verb הִקִּיפוּנִי, "They compassed me about," affirming also that word to signify, "to tear, rend, and strike;" so that the sense should be, "They tear my hands and feet as a lion." So Voetius, De Insolubil. Scripturæ. But that כָּאֲרִי cannot be here rendered "sicut leo" most evince, partly from the anomalous position of the prefix כ with Kamets, but chiefly from the Masora, affirming that that word is taken in another sense than it is used Isa. xxxviii. 13, where it expressly signifies, "as a lion." The shorter determination is, that from the radix כָּרָה by the epenthesis τοῦ א, and the change which is used often of ו into י (as in the

same manner it is Ezra x. 44), in the third person plural, the preterperfect tense of kal is כָּאֲרוּ, "perfoderunt," "they digged," or "pierced through my hands and my feet." But to what purpose is this gleaning after the vintage of Mr Pococke to this purpose in his excellent Miscellanies?

The place of old instanced in by Justin Martyr, Ps. xcvi. 10, where he charges the Jews to have taken out these words, ἀπὸ ξύλου, "from the wood," making the sense, "The LORD reigneth from the wood," or the tree, so pointing out the death of Christ on the cross, is exploded by all; for besides that he speaks of the Septuagint, not of the Hebrew text, it is evident that those words were foisted into some few copies of that translation, never being generally received, as is manifested by Fuller, Miscellan. lib. iii. cap. xiii. And it is a pretty story that Arias Montanus tells us of a learned man (I suppose he means Lindanus) pretending that those words were found in a Hebrew copy of the Psalms, of venerable antiquity, beyond all exception, here in England; which copy coming afterward to his hand, he found to be a spurious, corrupt, novel transcript, wherein yet the pretended words are not to be found! Arias Mont. Apparat. de Variis Lec. Heb. et Mass. And I no way doubt, but that we want opportunity to search and sift some of the copies that men set up against the common reading in sundry places of the New Testament, we should find them not one whit better or of more worth than he found that copy of the Psalms.

CHAPTER III.

Of various lections in the Greek copies of the New Testament.

FOR various lections in the Greek copies of the New Testament, we know with what diligence and industry they have been collected by some, and what improvement hath been made of those collections by others. Protestants, for the most part, have been the chiefest collectors of them. Stephanus, Camerarius, Beza, Cameron, Grotius, Drusius, Heinsius, De Dieu, Cappellus, all following Erasmus, have had the prime hand in that work. Papists have ploughed with their heifer to disparage the original, and to cry up the Vulgar Latin. A specimen of their endeavours we have in the late virulent exercitations of Morinus. At first very few were observed. What a heap or bulk they are now swelled unto we see in this Appendix. The collection of them makes up a book bigger than the New Testament itself! Of those that went before, most gave us only what they found in some particular copies that themselves were possessors of; some,

those only which they judged of importance, or that might make some pretence to be considered whether they were proper or no. Here we have all that by any means could be brought to hand, and that whether they are tolerably attested for various lections or no; for as to any contribution unto the better understanding of the Scripture from them, it cannot be pretended. And whither this work may yet grow I know not.

That there are in some copies of the New Testament, and those some of them of some good antiquity, *diverse readings*, in things or words of less importance, is acknowledged. The proof of it lies within the reach of most, in the copies that we have; and I shall not solicit the reputation of those who have afforded us others out of their own private furniture. That they have been all needlessly heaped up together, if not to an eminent scandal, is no less evident. Let us, then, take a little view of their rise and importance.

That the Grecian was once as it were the vulgar language of the whole world of Christians is known. The writing of the New Testament in that language in part found it so, and in part made it so. What thousands, yea, what millions of copies of the New Testament were then in the world, all men promiscuously reading and studying of the Scripture, cannot be reckoned. That so many transcriptions, most of them by private persons, for private use, having a standard of correction in their *public assemblies* ready to relieve their mistakes, should be made without some variation, is ἐκ τῶν ἀδυνάτων. From the copies of the first ages, others in the succeeding have been transcribed, according as men had opportunity. From those which are come down to the hands of learned men in this latter age, whereof very few or none at all are of any considerable antiquity, have men made it their business to collect the various readings we speak of; with what usefulness and serviceableness to the churches of God others that look on must be allowed their liberty to judge. We know the vanity, curiosity, pride, and naughtiness of the heart of man; how ready we are to please ourselves with things that seem singular and remote from the observation of the many, and how ready to publish them as evidences of our learning and diligence, let the fruit and issue be what it will. Hence it is come to pass,—not to question the credit of any man speaking of his manuscripts, which is wholly swallowed in this Appendix,—that whatever varying word, syllable, or tittle, could be by any observed, wherein any book, though of yesterday, varieth from the common received copy, though manifestly a mistake, superfluous or deficient, inconsistent with the sense of the place, yea, barbarous, is presently imposed on us as a various lection.

As, then, I shall not speak any thing to derogate from the worth of their labour who have gathered all these various readings into one

body or volume, so I presume I may take liberty without offence to say, I should more esteem of theirs who would endeavour to search and trace out these pretenders to their several originals, and, rejecting the spurious brood that hath now spawned itself over the face of so much paper, that ought by no means to be brought into competition with the common reading, would reduce them to such a necessary number, whose consideration might be of some other use than merely *to create a temptation* to the reader that nothing is left sound and entire in the word of God.

However, now Satan seems to have exerted the utmost of his malice, men of former ages the utmost of their negligence, of these latter ages of their diligence,—the result of all which we have in the present collection in this Appendix,—with them that rightly ponder things there ariseth nothing at all to the prejudice of our assertion; as may possibly, God assisting, be further manifested hereafter, in the particular consideration of some or all of these diverse readings therein exhibited unto us. Those which are of importance have been already considered by others, especially Glassius, tract. 1, lib. i.

It is evident that the design of this Appendix was to gather together every thing of this sort that might by any means be afforded. At the present, that the reader may not be too much startled at the fruit of their diligence whose work and labour it was, I shall only remark concerning it some few things that, on a general view of it, occur unto me:—

First, then, here is professedly no choice made nor judgment used in *discerning* which may indeed be called various lections, but all differences whatever that could be found in any copies, printed or written, are equally given out. Hence many differences that had been formerly rejected by learned men for open corruptions are here tendered us again. The very first observation in the treatise next printed unto this collection, in the Appendix itself, rejects one of the varieties as a corruption. So have some others of them been by Arias Montanus, Cameron, and many more. It is not every variety or difference in a copy that should presently be cried up for a various reading. A man might with as good colour and pretence take all the printed copies he could get of various editions, and gathering out the *errata typographica*, print them for various lections, as give us many, I shall say the most, of those in this Appendix under that name. It may be said, indeed, that the composers of this Appendix found it not incumbent on them to make any judgment of the readings which *de facto* they found in the copies they perused, but merely to represent what they so found, leaving the judgment of them unto others. I say also it may be so; and therefore, as I do not reflect on them nor their diligence, so I hope they or others

will not be offended that I give this notice of what judgment remains yet to be made concerning them.

Secondly, Whereas Beza, who is commonly blamed by men of all sides and parties for making too bold upon various lections, hath professedly *stigmatized his own manuscript*, that he sent unto Cambridge, as so corrupt in the Gospel of Luke that he durst not publish the various lections of it, for fear of offence and scandal (however, he thought it had not fallen into the hands of heretics, that had designedly depraved it), we have here, if I mistake not, all the corruptions of that copy given us as various readings; for though I have not seen the copy itself, yet the swelling of the various lections in that Gospel into a bulk as big or bigger than the collection of all the New Testament,—besides the [other] Gospels and Acts, wherein that copy is cited one thousand four hundred and forty times,—puts it out of all question that so we are dealt withal. Now, if this course be taken, and every stigmatized copy may be searched for differences, and these presently printed as various readings, there is no doubt but we may have enough of them to frighten poor unstable souls into the arms of the pretended infallible guide;—I mean as to the use that will be made of this work by such persons as Morinus.

Thirdly, I am not without apprehensions that "opere in longo obrepsit somnus," and that whilst the learned collectors had their hands and minds busied about other things, some *mistakes* did fall into this work of gathering these various lections. Some things I meet withal in it that I profess I cannot bring to any good consistency among themselves. To let pass particular instances, and insist on one only of a more general and eminent importance:—in the entrance unto this collection an account is given us of the *ancient copies* out of which these observations are made; among the rest one of them is said to be an ancient copy in the library of Emmanuel College in Cambridge: this is noted by the letters Em. throughout the whole collection. Now, whereas it is told us, in these preliminary cautions and observations, that it contains only Paul's Epistles, I wonder how it is come to pass that so many various lections in the Gospels and Acts as in the farrago itself are fixed on the credit of that book could come to be gathered out of a copy of Paul's Epistles. Certainly here must be some mistake, either in the learned authors of the previous directions, or by those employed to gather the varieties following. And it may be supposed that that mistake goes not alone; so that, upon a further consideration of particulars, it may be we shall not find them so clearly attested as at first view they seem to be. It would indeed be a miracle, if, in a work of that variety, many things should not escape the eye of the most diligent observer.

I am not, then, upon the whole matter, out of hopes but that, upon

a diligent review of all these various lections, they may be reduced to a less offensive and less formidable number. Let it be remembered that the vulgar copy we use was the public possession of many generations,—that upon the invention of printing it was in actual authority throughout the world with them that used and understood that language, as far as any thing appears to the contrary; let that, then, pass for the standard, which is confessedly its right and due, and we shall, God assisting, quickly see how little reason there is to pretend such varieties of readings as we are now surprised withal: for,—

1. Let those places be *separated* which are not sufficiently attested unto, so as to pretend to be various lections; it being against all pretence of reason that every mistake of every obscure, private copy, perhaps not above two or three hundred years old (or if older), should be admitted as a various lection, against the concurrent consent of, it may be, all others that are extant in the world, and that without any congruity of reason as to the sense of the text where it is fallen out. Men may, if they please, take pains to inform the world wherein such and such copies are corrupted or mistaken, but to impose their known failings on us as various lections is a course not to be approved.

2. Let the same judgment, and that deservedly, pass on all those *different places* which are altogether inconsiderable, consisting in *accents* or the change of a *letter*, not in the least intrenching on the sense of the place, or giving the least intimation of any other sense to be possibly gathered out of them but what is in the approved reading. To what end should the minds of men be troubled with them or about them, being evident mistakes of the scribes, and of no importance at all?

3. Let them also be removed from the pretence, which carry their own convictions along with them that they are *spurious*, either,—(1.) By their *superfluity*, or *redundancy* of unnecessary words; or, (2.) Their *deficiency* in words evidently necessary to the sense of their places; or, (3.) Their *incoherence* with the text in their several stations; or, (4.) [By giving] *evidence* of being intended as expository of difficulties, having been moved and assoiled by some of the ancients upon the places, and their resolutions being intimated; or, (5.) Are foisted out of the Septuagint, as many places out of the *New* have been inserted into that copy of the *Old;* or, (6.) Are taken out of *one place* in the same penman and are used in *another;* or, (7.) Are apparently taken out of *one Gospel* and supplied in another, to make out the sense of the place; or, (8.) Have been corrected *by the Vulgar Latin*,—which hath often fallen out in some copies, as Lucas Brugensis shows us on Matt. xvii. 2, Mark i. 38, vii. 4, and sundry other places; or, (9.) Arise out of *copies apparently corrupted*, like that of Beza in Luke, and that in the Vatican boasted of by Huntley the Jesuit, which Lucas

Brugensis affirms to have been changed by the Vulgar Latin, and which was written and corrected, as Erasmus says, about the [time of the] council of Florence, when an agreement was patched up between the Greeks and Latins; or, (10.) Are notoriously corrupted by the *old heretics*, as 1 John v. 7. Unto which heads many, yea, the most of the various lections collected in this Appendix may be referred. I say, if this work might be done with care and diligence (whereunto I earnestly exhort some in this university, who have both ability and leisure for it), it would quickly appear how small the number is of those varieties in the Greek copies of the New Testament which may pretend unto any consideration under the state and title of various lections, and of how very little importance they are to weaken in any measure my former assertion concerning the care and providence of God in the preservation of his word. But this is a work of more time and leisure than at present I am possessor of; what is to come, θεοῦ ἐν γούνασι κεῖται. In the meantime I doubt not but to hear tidings from Rome concerning this variety, no such collection having as yet been made in the world.

CHAPTER IV.

General premises—Opinions prejudicial to the authority of the originals in the Prolegomena enumerated—The just consequences of these premises—Others engaged in these opinions—Of Cappellus—Of Origen, Ximenes, Arias Montanus' editions of the Bible.

HAVING now declared in what sense, and with what allowance as to various lections, I maintain the assertion laid down in the foregoing treatise concerning the providential preservation of the whole book of God, so that we may have full assurance that we enjoy the whole revelation of his will in the copies abiding amongst us, I shall now proceed to weigh what may be objected further (beyond what hath already been insisted on) against the truth of it from the Prolegomena and Appendix to the Biblia Polyglotta, at the entrance of our discourse proposed to consideration:—

To speak somewhat of them in general, I must crave leave to say, —and it being but the representation of men's avowed judgments, I hope I may say without offence,—that together with many high and honourable expressions concerning the originals, setting aside the incredible figment of the Jews corrupting the Bible out of hatred to the Christians, which, being first supposed by Justin Martyr (though he speaks of the LXX. only), hath scarce found one or two since to own it, but is rejected by the universality of learned men, ancient and modern, unless some few Papists mad upon their idols, and the

thesis preferring in general this or that translation above the original, there is no opinion that I know of that was ever ventilated among Christians, tending to the depression of the worth or impairing the esteem of the Hebrew copies, which is not, directly or by just consequence, owned in these Prolegomena. Thence it is contended that the present *Hebrew character* is not that used by God himself and in the old church before the captivity of Babylon, but it is the Chaldean, the other being left to the Samaritans; that the *points* or *vowels*, and *accents*, are a late invention of the Tiberian Masoretes, long after sundry translations were extant in the world; that the Keri and Ketib are *critical notes*, consisting partly of various lections gathered by the late Masoretes and Rabbins; that considering how ofttimes, in likelihood, translators read the text before the invention of the points and accents, the present reading may be corrected and amended by them, and that because the old translators had other copies, or different copies from them which we now enjoy; that where *gross faults* are crept into the Hebrew text, men may by their own conjectures find out various lections whereby they may be amended,—and to this purpose an instance of such various lections, or rather corrections of the original, is in the Appendix exhibited unto us out of Grotius; that the books of the Scriptures having had the fate of other books,—by passing through the hands of many transcribers, they have upon them the marks of their negligence, ignorance, and sloth.

Now, truly, I cannot but wish that some other way had been found out to give esteem and reputation to this *noble collection* of translations than by espousing these opinions, so prejudicial to the truth and authority of the originals. And it may be justly feared, that where *one* will relieve himself against the uncertainty of the originals by the consideration of the various translations here exhibited unto us, being such as upon trial they will be found to be, *many* will be ready to question the foundation of all.

It is true, the learned prefacer owns not those wretched consequences that some have laboured to draw from these premises; yet it must be acknowledged, also, that sufficient security against the lawful deriving those consequences from these premises is not tendered unto us. He says not that because this is the state of the Hebrew language and Bible, therefore all things in it are dubious and uncertain, easy to be turned unto various senses, not fit to be a rule for the trial of other translations, though he knows full well who think this a just consequence from the opinion of the *novelty of the vowels;* and himself grants that all our knowledge of the Hebrew is taken from the translation of the LXX., as he is quoted to that purpose by Morinus, Præfat. ad Opusc. Hebræ. Samarit. He

concludes not that on these accounts we must rely upon an *infallible living judge*, and the translation that he shall commend unto us, though he knows full well who do so; and himself gives it for a rule, that at the correction of the original we have the consent of the guides of the church. I could desire then, I say, that sufficient security may be tendered us against these inferences before the premises be embraced, seeing great and wise men, as we shall further see anon, do suppose them naturally and necessarily to flow from them.

It is confessed that some learned men, even among the Protestants, have heretofore vented these or some of these paradoxes; especially Cappellus, in his "Arcanum Punctationis Revelatum," "Critica Sacra," and other treatises; in the defence whereof, as I hear, he still laboureth, being unwilling to suffer loss in the fruit of so great pains. What will become of his reply unto Buxtorfius in the defence of his Critica I know not. Reports are that it is finished; and it is thought he must once more flee to the Papists by the help of his son, a great zealot amongst them; as he did with his Critica, to get it published. The generality of learned men among Protestants are not yet infected with this leaven; nor, indeed, do I find his boldness in conjecturing approved in these Prolegomena. But let it be free for men to make known their judgments in the severals mentioned. It hath been so, and may it abide so still. Had not this great and useful work been prefaced with the stating of them, it had not been of public concernment (as now it seems to be) to have taken notice of them.

Besides, it is not known whither this inconvenience will grow. Origen, in his Octapla, as was declared, fixed the Hebrew original as the rule and measure of all translations. In the reviving of that kind of work by Ximenes in the Complutensian Bibles, its station is left unto it. Arias Montanus, who followed in their steps (concerning whose performances under his master the king of Spain, I may say, for sundry excellencies, "Nil oriturum alias, nil ortum tale"), was religiously careful to maintain the purity of the originals, publishing *the Hebrew verity* (as it is called by Jerome, Austin, and others of the ancients) as the rule of examining by it all translations whatever; for which he is since accused of ignorance by a petulant Jesuit,[1] that never deserved to carry his books after him. Michael Le Jay hath given a turn to this progress, and in plain terms exalts a corrupt translation above the originals, and that upon the principle under consideration, as is abundantly manifest from Morinus. And if this change of judgment, which hath been long insinuating itself, by the curiosity and boldness of critics, should break in also upon

[1] Morin. Exercit. de Heb. Text. Sinc. lib. i. exer. i. cap. iv.

the protestant world, and be avowed in public works, it is easy to conjecture what the end will be. We went from Rome under the conduct of the *purity* of the originals; I wish none have a mind to return thither again under the pretence of their *corruption.*

CHAPTER V.

The original of the points proposed to consideration in particular—The importance of the points to the right understanding of the Scripture—The testimony of Morinus, Junius, Johannes Isaac, Cevallerius, and others—The use made by the Papists of the opinion of the novelty of the points—The importance of the points further manifested—The extreme danger of making the Hebrew punctuation arbitrary—That danger evinced by instance—No relief against that danger on the grounds of the opinion considered—The authors of the Hebrew punctuation according to the Prolegomena; who and what—Morinus' folly—The improbability of this pretence—The state of the Jews, the supposed inventors of the points, after the destruction of the temple—Two attempts made by them to restore their religion: the first under Barchochab, with its issue; the second under R. Judah, with its issue—The rise and foundation of the Talmuds—The state of the Jews upon and after the writing of the Talmuds—Their rancour against Christ—Who the Tiberian Masoretes were that are the supposed authors of the Hebrew punctuation; their description—That figment rejected—The late testimony of Dr Lightfoot to this purpose—The rise of the opinion of the novelty of the points—Of Elias Levita—The value of his testimony in this case—Of the validity of the testimony of the Jewish Rabbins—Some considerations about the antiquity of the points: the first, from the nature of the punctuation itself, in reference unto grammatical rules; [the second,] from the Chaldee paraphrase, and integrity of the Scripture as now pointed.

THIS being, in my apprehension, the state of things amongst us, I hope I may without offence proceed to the consideration of the particulars before mentioned, from whence it is feared that objections may arise against the purity and self-evidencing power of the Scriptures, pleaded for in the foregoing treatise. That which in the first place was mentioned, is the assertion of the *points or vowels, and accents, to be a novel invention of some Rabbins of Tiberias in Palestina.* This the learned author of the Prolegomena defends with Cappellus' arguments, and such other additions as he was pleased to make use of. To clear up the concernments of our truth in this particular, it will be necessary to consider,—1. What *influence* in the right understanding of the text these points have, and necessarily must have; 2. What is their *original*, or whom their invention is ascribed unto in these Prolegomena. As to the assertive part of this controversy, or the vindication of their true sacred original,

some other occasion may call for additions to what is now (by the way) insisted on. And as I shall not oppose them who maintain that they are coevous with the letters,—which are not a few of the most learned Jews and Christians,—so I nowise doubt but that, as we now enjoy them, we shall yet manifest that they were completed by אנשי כנסת הגדולה, the men of the great synagogue, Ezra and his companions, guided therein by the infallible direction of the Spirit of God.

That we may not seem ἀεροβατεῖν, or to contend *de lana caprina*, the importance of these points as to the right understanding of the word of God is first to be considered, and that from testimony and the nature of the thing itself. Morinus, in his preface to his Hebrew Lexicon, tells us that without the points no certain truth can be learned from the Scriptures in that language, seeing all things may be read divers ways, so that there will be more confusion in that one tongue than was amongst all those at Babylon: "Nulla igitur certa doctrina poterit tradi de hac lingua, cum omnia possint diversimodo legi, ut futura sit major confusio unicæ hujus linguæ quam illa Babylonis." Morinus plainly affirms that it is so indeed, instancing in the word דבר, which, as it may be variously pointed, hath at least eight several significations, and some of them as distant from one another as heaven and earth. And to make evident the uncertainty of the language on this account, he gives the like instance in *c*, *r*, *s*, in Latin. Junius, in the close of his animadversions on Bell. De Verbo Dei, lib. ii. cap. ii., commends that saying of Johannes Isaac against Lindanus, "He that reads the Scriptures without points is like a man that rides a horse ἀχάλινος, without a bridle; he may be carried he knows not whither." Radulphus Cevallerius goes further: Rudiment. Ling. Heb. cap. iv., "Quod superest de vocalium et accentuum antiquitate, eorum sententiæ subscribo, qui linguam Hebræam, tanquam omnium aliarum ἀρχέτυπον absolutissimum, plane ab initio scriptam confirmant; quandoquidem qui contra sentiunt non modo authoritatem sacræ Scripturæ dubiam efficiunt, sed radicitus (meo quidem judicio) convellunt, quod absque vocalibus et distinctionum notis, nihil certi firmique habeat;"—"As for the antiquity of the vowels and accents," saith he, "I am of their opinion who maintain the Hebrew language, as the exact pattern of all others, to have been plainly written with them from the beginning; seeing that they who are otherwise minded do not only make doubtful the authority of the Scriptures, but, in my judgment, wholly pluck it up by the roots, for without the vowels and notes of distinction it hath nothing firm and certain."

In this man's judgment (which also is my own), it is evident to all how obnoxious to the opinion now opposed the truth is that I am contending for.

To these also may be added the great Buxtorfs, father[1] and son,[2] Gerard,[3] Glassius,[4] Voetius,[5] Flacius Illyricus,[6] Polanus, Whitaker, Hassret,[7] Wolthius.[8]

It is well known what use the Papists make of this conceit. Bellarmine maintains that there are errors crept into the original by this addition of the points: De Verb. Dei, lib. ii. cap. ii., "Hisce duabus sententiis refutatis, restat tertia, quam ego verissimam puto, quæ est, Scripturas Hebraicas non esse in universum depravatas opera et malitia Judæorum, nec tamen omnino esse integras et puras, sed habere suos errores quosdam, qui partim irrepserint negligentia et ignorantia librariorum, etc., partim ignorantia Rabbinorum qui puncta addiderunt; itaque possumus, si volumus, puncta detrahere et aliter legere;"—"These two opinions being confuted, the third remaineth, which I suppose to be most true; which is, that the Hebrew Scriptures are not universally corrupted by the malicious work of the Jews, nor yet are wholly pure and entire, but that they have errors, which have crept in partly by the negligence and ignorance of the transcribers, partly by the ignorance of the Rabbins who added the points; whence we may, if we please, reject the points and read otherwise."

In the voluminous opposition to the truth made by that learned man, I know nothing more perniciously spoken, nor do yet know how his inference can be avoided on the hypothesis in question. To what purpose this insinuation is made by him is well known, and his companions in design exactly declare it. That their Hebrew text be corrected by the Vulgar Latin is the express desire of Gregory de Valentia, tom. i. disput. 5, q. 3; and that because the church hath approved that translation, it being corrected (says Huntley) by Jerome before the invention of points. But this is put out of doubt by Morinus, who from hence argues the Hebrew tongue to be a very nose of wax, to be turned by men which way they please, and to be so given of God on purpose that men might subject their consciences to their infallible church, Exercit. lib. i. exer. i. cap. ii.' Great hath been the endeavour of this sort of men, wherein they have left no stone unturned, to decry the originals. Some of them cry out that the Old Testament is corrupted by the Jews, as Leo Castrius,[9] Gordonius Huntlæus,[10] Melchior Canus,[11] Petrus Galatinus,[12] Morinus,[13] Salmeron, Pintus, Mersennus, Animad. in Problem. Georgii Venet, etc., p. 233;[14]—that many corruptions have crept into it by negligence

[1] Buxtorf. Tiberias. [2] De Antiquitate Punct. [3] Exeg. loc. com. tom. i. de Sa. Sc. [4] De Text. Heb. Puri. [5] Loc. com. quousque se extendat. Author S. Sa. [6] Clav. Scrip. Sel. p. 2, trac. 6. [7] De Templ. Ezec. [8] Disputat. Jenæ. [9] De Translat. Scripturæ. [10] Controversarium Epitome. [11] Loc. Theol. lib. ii. cap. xiii. [12] Arcan. Cathol. lib. i. [13] Exercit. de Heb. Text. Sincer. [14] Proleg.

and the carelessness of scribes, so Bellarmine,[1] Genebrard,[2] Sixtus Senensis,[3] with most of the rest of them. In these things, indeed, they have been opposed by the most learned of their own side, as Arias Montanus,[4] Johannes Isaac,[5] Pineda,[6] Masius,[7] Ferrarius,[8] Andradius, and sundry others, who speak honourably of the originals. But in nothing do they so pride themselves as in this conceit of the novelty of the Hebrew punctuation, whereby they hope, with Abimelech's servants, utterly to stop the wells and fountains from whence we should draw our souls' refreshment.

This may serve for a short view of the opinions of the parties at variance, and their several interests in these opinions. The importance of the points is on all hands acknowledged, whether aiming at the honour or dishonour of the originals. Vowels are the life of words; consonants without them are dead and immovable; by them are they carried to any sense, and may be to divers. It is true that men who have come to acquaintance with the Scriptures by the help of the vowels and accents, being in possession of an habitual notion and apprehension of that sense and meaning which ariseth from them, may possibly think that it were a facile thing to find out and fix upon the same sense by the help of the *matres lectionis* אהוי, and the consideration of antecedents and consequents, with such like assistances. But let them be all taken out of the way (as I shall manifest it is fit they should be, if they have the original assigned to them by the Prolegomena), and let men lay aside that advantage they have received from them, and it will quickly appear into what devious ways all sorts of such persons will run. Scarce a chapter, it may be a verse, or a word, in a short time, would be left free from perplexing, contradicting conjectures. The words are altogether innumerable whose significations may be varied by an arbitrary supplying of the points. And when the regulation of the punctuation shall be left to every single person's conjectures upon antecedents and consequents (for who shall give a rule to the rest), what end shall we have of fruitless contests? What various, what pernicious senses shall we have to contend about! Suppose that men sober, modest, humble, pious, might be preserved from such miscarriages, and be brought to some agreement about these things (which yet in these days, upon many accounts, is not to be looked for, yea, from the nature of the thing itself seems impossible), yet this gives us but a human, fallible persuasion, that the readings fixed on by them are according to the mind of God; but to expect such an agreement is fond and foolish. Besides, who shall secure us against the luxuriant,

[1] De Verbo Dei, lib. ii. [2] In Ps. xxi. [3] Biblioth. lib. viii. Hæres. 13.
[4] Præfat ad Bib. Interlin. [5] Respons. ad Lindan. [6] De rebus Solom. cap. iv. sect. 1. [7] Præfat. ad Josu. [8] Proleg. Biblica.

atheistical wits and spirits of these days, who are bold upon all advantages ἀκίνητα κινεῖν, and to break in upon every thing that is holy and sacred, that they will not, by their huckstering, utterly corrupt the word of God? How easy is it to foresee the dangerous consequents of contending for various readings, though not false nor pernicious, by men pertinaciously adhering to their own conjectures! The word of God, as to its literal sense, or reading of the words of it, hath hitherto been ἐξαγώνιον, and the acknowledged touchstone of all expositions; render this now a μῆλον ἔριδος, and what have we remaining firm and unshaken?

Let men, with all their confidence as to the knowledge of the sense and meaning of the Scriptures which they have already received, by such helps and means as are all of them resolved into the present punctuation of the Bible (for all grammars, all lexicons, the whole Masora, all helps to this language, new and old in the world, are built on this foundation), reduce themselves to such an indifferency as some of late have fancied as a meet rise for knowledge, and fall seriously to the reading of some of the prophets, whose matter is sublime and mystical, and their style elliptical and abstruse, without the help of points and accents,—let them fix them, or any figures to answer their sounds, *arbitrarily*, merely on their judgment in the language and conjectures at the sense of the place, without any advantage from what they have been instructed in,—and let us see whether they will agree, as they fabulously report of the seventy translators! Whatever may be the issue of their industry, we need not fear quickly to find as learned as they that would lay their work level with the ground. I confess, considering the days we live in, wherein the bold and curious wits of men, under pretence of critical observations, alluring and enticing with a show of learning, have ventured to question almost every word in the Scripture, I cannot but tremble to think what would be the issue of this supposition, that the points or vowels, and accents, are no better guides unto us than may be expected from those who are pretended to be their authors. The Lord, I hope, will safeguard his own from the poison of such attempts. The least of its evil is not yet thoroughly considered. So that whereas, saving to myself the liberty of my judgment as to sundry particulars, both in the impression itself and in sundry translations, I acknowledge the great usefulness of this work, and am thankful for it, which I here publicly testify, yet I must needs say, I had rather that it, and all works of the like kind, were out of the world, than that this one opinion should be received, with the consequences that unavoidably attend it.

"But this trial needs not be feared. Grant the points to have the original pretended, yet they deserve all regard, and are of singular

use for the right understanding of the Scripture; so that it is not lawful to depart from them without urgent necessity, and evidences of a better lection to be substituted in the room of that refused." But as this relieves us not, but still leaves us within the sphere of rational conjectures, so whether it can honestly be pretended and pleaded in this case comes nextly to be discovered by the consideration of the supposed authors of this invention.

The founders of this story of the invention of the Hebrew points tell us that it was the work of some Rabbins living at Tiberias, a city in Galilee, about the year of Christ 500, or in the next century after the death of Jerome and the finishing of the Babylonian Talmud. The improbability of this story or legend I am not now to insist upon. Morinus makes the lie lower. He tells us that the Babylonian Talmud was finished but a little before the year 700, Exer. ii. cap. iii., par. poster.; and that the Masoretes (to whom he ascribes the invention of the points) wrote a long time after the finishing of the Talmud and the year 700, p. p. 5, cap. iii. This long time cannot denote less than some hundreds of years. And yet the same man in his preface to his "Samaritica Opuscula," boasting of his finding R. Jehuda Chiug, manifests that he was acquainted with the present punctuation, and wrote about it. Now, this rabbi was a grammarian,—which kind of learning among the Jews succeeded that of the Masoretes,—and he lived about the year 1030; so that no room at all seems to be left for this work. That there was formerly a famous school of the Jews and learned men at Tiberias is granted. Jerome tells us that he hired a learned Jew from thence for his assistance, Epist. ad Chromat. Among others, Dr Lightfoot[1] hath well traced the shadow of their sanhedrim, with their presidents in it, in some kind of succession, to that place. That they continued there in any esteem, number, or reputation, unto the time assigned by our authors for this work, is not made to appear from any history or record of Jews or Christians; yea, it is certain that about the time mentioned, the chiefest flourishing of the Jewish doctors was at Babylon, with some other cities in the east, where they had newly completed their Talmud, the great pandect of Jewish laws and constitutions, as themselves everywhere witness and declare. That any persons considerably learned were then in Tiberias is a mere conjecture; and it is most improbable, considering what destruction had been made of them at Diocæsarea and Tiberias, about the year of Christ 352, by Gallus, at the command of Constantius. That there should be such a collection of them so learned, so authorized, as to invent this work and impose it on the world, no man once taking notice that any such persons ever were, is beyond all belief. Not-

[1] Lightfoot, Fall of Hierus. sect. 3–5, etc.

withstanding any entanglements that men by their conjectures may put upon the persuasion of the antiquity of the points, I can as soon believe the most incredible figment in the whole Talmud as this fable. But this is not my business. Let it be granted that such persons there were. On the supposition under consideration, I am only inquiring what is the state and condition of the present Hebrew pointing, and what weight is to be laid thereon. That the reader, then, may a little consider what sort of men they were who are assigned in these Prolegomena as the inventors of this artifice of punctuation, I shall take a brief view of the state of the Jews after the destruction of the temple down to the days inquired after.

That the Judaical church-state continued not only *de facto*, but, in the merciful forbearance of God, so far that the many thousands of believers that constantly adhered to the Mosaical worship were accepted with God until the destruction of the temple; that that destruction was the ending of the world that then was by fire, and the beginning of setting up solemnly the new heaven and new earth wherein dwelleth righteousness,—I have at large elsewhere declared, and may, God assisting, yet further manifest in my thoughts on the Epistle of Paul to the Hebrews. From the time between the beginning of Christ's preaching to the utter desolation of the city and temple, an open, visible rejection of that church, as such, was made. Thereon an utter separation of the true Israel from it ensued; and the hardened residue became לֹא־עַמִּי and לֹא רֻחָמָה,—a people not in covenant or delight, but of curse and indignation. What their state was for a season onwards, both civil and religious, many have declared. I shall only insist on the heads of things. In general, then, they were most remote from accepting of the punishment of their sin, or considering that God was revenging upon them the quarrel of his covenant to the utmost, having broken both his staves, "Beauty and Bands." So far were they from owning their sin in selling of their Messiah, that, seeing an end put to all their former worship thereupon, there is nothing recorded of them but these two things, which they wholly, in direct opposition unto God, gave themselves up unto:—1. They increased in rage and madness against all the followers of Christ, stirring up persecution against them all the world over. Hereunto they were provoked by a great number of apostates, who, when they could no longer retain their Mosaical rites with the profession of Christ, being rejected by the churches, fell back again to Judaism or semi-Judaism. 2. A filthy lusting and desire after their former worship, now become abominable and a badge of infidelity, that so their table might become a snare unto them, and what had been for their safety might now become the

means of their utter ruin and hardening. Of the former, or their stirring up of persecution, all stories are full of examples and instances. The latter, or their desires and attempts for the restoration of their worship, as conducing to our present business, must be further considered.

For the accomplishment of a design to restore their old religion, or to furnish themselves with a new, they made two desperate attempts. The first of these was by arms, under their pseudo-Messiah, Barchochab, in the days of Hadrian. Under the conduct and influencings of this man, to whom one of the chief Rabbins (Akiba) was armour-bearer, in the pursuit of a design to restore their temple and worship, they fell into rebellion against the Romans all the world over. In this work, after they had committed unheard-of outrages, massacres unparalleled, murders, spoils, and cruelties, and had shaken the whole empire, they were themselves in all parts of the world, especially in the city Bether, where was the head of their rebellion, ruined with a destruction seeming equal to that which befell them at Jerusalem in the days of Vespasian and Titus.

That the rise of this war was upon the twofold cause mentioned, namely, their desire to retain their former worship and to destroy the Christian, is evident. For the first, it is expressed by Dio Cassius: Hist. Rom. lib. lxix., in Vita Had., Ἐς δὲ τὰ Ἱεροσόλυμα πόλιν αὐτοῦ ἀντὶ τῆς κατασκαφείσης οἰκίσαντος, ἣν καὶ Αἰλίαν Καπιτωλίναν ὠνόμασε καὶ ἐς τὸν τοῦ Θεοῦ τόπον, ναὸν τῷ Διὶ ἕτερον ἀναντεγείροντος, πόλεμος οὐτε μικρὸς οὔτ' ὀλιγοχρόνιος ἐκινήθη. Ἰουδαῖοι γὰρ, δεινόν τι ποιούμενοι τοὺς ἀλλοφύλους τινὰς ἐς τὴν πόλιν σφῶν οἰκισθῆναι, καὶ τὰ ἱερὰ ἀλλότρια ἐν αὐτῇ ἱδρυθῆναι κ.τ.λ. It was the defiling of the soil whereon the temple stood (which God suffered on set purpose to manifest their utter rejection, and that the time was come wherein he would be no more worshipped in that place in the old manner) that put them in arms, as that author declares at large. And for the latter, Justin Martyr, who lived at that time, informs us of it: Apol. ii. ad Anton. Pium., Καὶ γὰρ ἐν τῷ νῦν γεγενημένῳ Ἰουδαϊκῷ πολέμῳ Βαρχοχέβας ὁ τῆς Ἰουδαίων ἀποστάσεως ἀρχηγέτης Χριστιανοὺς μόνους εἰς τιμωρίας δεινὰς, εἰ μὴ ἀρνοῖντο Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν καὶ βλασφημοῖεν, ἐκέλευεν ἀπάγεσθαι. His fury was in an especial manner against the Christians, whom he commanded to be tortured and slain, unless they would deny and blaspheme Jesus Christ. See Euseb. Chron. ad an. Christi 136. And this war they managed with such fury, and, for a while, success, that after Hadrian had called together against them the most experienced soldiers in the world, particularly Julius Severus out of England, and had slain of them five millions and eighty thousand in battle, with [while ?] an infinite number besides, as the historian speaks, by famine, sickness, and fire, were consumed, he found himself to have sustained so much

loss by them that he began not his letter to the senate in the wonted manner, Εἰ αὐτοὶ καὶ οἱ παῖδες ὑμῶν ὑγιαίνετε, εὖ ἂν ἔχοι· ἐγὼ καὶ τὰ στρατεύματα ὑγιαίνομεν· he could not assure them that it was well with him and his army.

By this second desolation they were [brought] very low, made weak and contemptible, and driven into obscurity all the world over. In this state they wandered up and down for some season in all manner of uncertainty. They had not only lost the place of their solemn worship, seeing it was wholly defiled, the name of Jerusalem changed into Ælia, and themselves forbid to look towards it upon pain of death,[1] but also, being now unspeakably diminished in their number, all hope of contriving themselves into any condition of observing their old rites and worship was utterly lost.[2]

Here they sat down amazed for a season, being at their wits' end, as was threatened to them in the curse. But they will not rest so. Considering, therefore, that their old religion could not be continued without a Jerusalem and a temple, they began a nefarious attempt against God, equal to that of the old world in building Babel, even to set up a new religion, that might abide with them wherever they were, and give them countenance in their infidelity and opposition to the gospel unto the utmost. The head of this new apostasy was one R. Judah, whom we may not unfitly call the Mohammed of the Jews. They term him Hannasi, the "prince;" and Hakkadosh, the "holy." The whole story of him and his companions, as reported by the Jews, is well collected by Joseph de Voysin, Observat. in Procem. ad Pugi. Fidei. p. 26, 27. The sum of the whole concerning this work is laid down by Maimonides in his præfatio in Seder Zeraiim, p. 36, 37 of the edition of Mr Pococke; wherein also a sufficient account is given of the whole Mishna, with the names of the Rabbins either implied in it or occasionally mentioned. This man, about the year of Christ 190 or 200, when the temple had now lain waste almost three times as long as it did in the Babylonish captivity, being countenanced, as some of themselves report,[3] by Antoninus Pius, compiled the Jewish Koran, or the Mishna, as a rule

[1] Euseb. Hist. lib. iv. cap. vi.; Orosius. lib. vii. cap. xiii.; Hieron. Com. in Zach. cap. xi. Vid Tzemach. David. et Hotting. Hist. Ecclesi. Nov. Testam.

[2] "Dispersi, palabundi et cœli et soli sui extorres, vagantur per orbem sine homine, sine Deo, rege, quibus nec advenarum jure terram patriam saltem vestigio salutare conceditur."—Tertull. Apol.

[3] "Post hæc processu temporis ventum est ad Rabbinu Hakkadosh, cui pax, qui fuit seculi sui phœnix, etc. Ille legem in Israele confirmavit sententiis, dictis, et differentiis ore traditis a Mose, usque ad tempora sua collectis, cum et ipse esset ex iis qui ore tradita referebant. Collectis igitur sententiis et dictis istis, manum admovit componendæ Mishnæ, quæ omnium quæ in lege scripta sunt præceptorum explicationem contineret, partim traditionibus a Mose (cui pax), ore acceptis, partim consequentiis argumentatione elicitis," etc.—Vid. R. Maimon. præfat. in Seder Zeraiim, edit. Poc. p. 36–38.

of their worship and ways for the future. Only, whereas Mohammed afterward pretended to have received his figments by revelation (though, indeed, he had many of his abominations from the Talmud), this man pleaded the receiving of his by tradition,—the two main engines that have been set up against the word of God. Out of such pharisaical traditions as were indeed preserved amongst them, and such observances as they had learned and taken up from apostate Christians, as Aquila and others, with such figments as were invented by himself and his predecessors since the time of their being publicly rejected and cursed by God, this man compiled the ספר משניות, —which is the text of their Talmud, and the foundation of their present religion,—under the name of the old oral law. That sundry Christian ceremonies and institutions, vilely corrupted, were taken up by the Jews of those days, many of them being apostates, as were also some of Mohammed's assistants in compiling of the Koran, I shall, God assisting, elsewhere endeavour to evince and manifest. That any gospel observances were taken from the Jews, as being in practice amongst them before their institution by Christ, will appear in the issue to be a bold and groundless fancy.

The foundation mentioned being laid in a collection of traditions and new invention of abominations, under the name of old traditions, by this Rabbi, the following Talmuds are an improvement of the same attempt of setting up a religion under the curse and against the mind and will of God, that, being rejected by him, and left "without king, without prince, without sacrifice, without image, without an ephod, and without teraphim," any kind of worship, true or false, they might have something to give them countenance in their unbelief. The Talmud of Jerusalem, so called (for it is the product of many comments on the Mishna in the city of Tiberias, where R. Judah lived) because it was compiled in the land of Canaan, whose metropolis was Jerusalem, was published about the year of Christ 230: so it is commonly received, though I find Dr Lightfoot of late, on supposition of finding in it the name of Diocletian the emperor, to give it a later date; but I confess I see no just ground for the alteration of his judgment from what he delivered in another treatise before. The Doclet mentioned by the Rabbins was beaten by the children of R. Judah Princeps, as himself observes, who lived in the days of one of the Antoninuses, a hundred years before Diocletian. Neither was ever Diocletian in a low condition in the east, being a Sarmatian born, and living in the western parts; only he went with Numerianus in that expedition into Persia, wherein he was made emperor at his return. But this is nothing to my purpose. See Lightfoot, Chorograph. cap. lxxxi. p. 144. The Babylonian Talmud, so called because compiled in the land of Babylon, in the cities of

Nahardea, Sora, and Pumbeditha, where the Jews had their synagogues and schools, was finished about the year 506 or 510. In this greater work was the mystery of their iniquity finished, and the engine of their own invention for their further obduration perfectly completed. These are now the rule of their faith, the measure of their exposition of Scripture, the directory of their worship,—the ground of their hope and expectation.

All this while the Jews enjoyed the letter of the Scriptures, as they do to this day; yea, they receive it sometimes with the honour and veneration due to God alone. God preserved it amongst them for our present use, their further condemnation, and means of their future conversion. But after the destruction of the temple, and rejection of their whole church-state, the word was no longer committed to them of God, nor were they intrusted with it, nor are to this day. They have it not by promise or covenant, as they had of old, Isa. lix. 21. Their possession of it is not accompanied with the administration of the Spirit; without which, as we see in the instance of themselves, the word is a dead letter, of no efficacy for the good of souls. They have the letter amongst them, as at one time they had the ark in the battle against the Philistines, for their greater ruin.

In this state and condition they everywhere discover their rancour and malice against Christ, calling him, in contempt and reproach, תָּלוּי, who is קָדוֹשׁ קָדוֹשׁ קָדוֹשׁ יְהוָה צְבָאוֹת, relating monstrous figments concerning him and their dealing with him, under the name of "Jesus the son of Pandira." Some deny that by Jesus, the son of Pandira and Stada, in the Talmud, the blessed Messiah is intended. So did Galatinus, Arcan. Relig. Cathol. lib. i. cap. vii.; and Reuchlinnus Cabal. lib. i. p. 636; Guliel. Schickard., in Procem. Tarich. p. 83. The contrary is asserted by Reynoldus, Prælec. in lib. Apoc., prælec. 103, p. 405, 406; Buxtorfius Lexic. Rab. voce טטד, and also in פנדירא; Vorstius Not. ad Tzem. Dav. p. 264. And, in truth, the reason pleaded by Galatinus and others to prove that they did not intend our Saviour doth, upon due consideration, evince the contrary. The Jesus, say they, who is mentioned in the Talmud, lived in the days of the Maccabees, being slain in the time of Hyrcanus, or of Aristobulus, one hundred years before the death of the true Messiah; so that it cannot be he who is by them intended. But this is invented by the cursed wretches, that it should not appear that their temple was so soon destroyed after their wicked defection from God in killing of his Son. This is most manifest from what is cited by Genebrard from Abraham Levita, in his "Cabala Historiæ," where he says that Christians invented this story, that Jesus was crucified in the life of Herod (that is, the tetrarch), that it might appear that their temple was destroyed immediately thereupon;

"when," saith he, "it is evident from the Mishna and Talmud that he lived in the time of Alexander, and was crucified in the days of Aristobulus:" so discovering the true ground why they perverted the whole story of his time,—namely, lest all the world should see their sin and punishment standing so near together. But it is well that the time of our Saviour's suffering and death was affirmed even by the heathens, before either their Mishna or Talmud were born or thought of: "Abolendo rumori" (he speaks of Nero, and of his firing Rome) "subdidit reos, et quæsitissimis pœnis affecit, quos, per flagitia invisos, vulgus Christianos appellabat. Auctor nominis ejus Christus, Tiberio imperitante, per Procuratorem Pontium Pilatum supplicio affectus erat," Tacit. Annal. lib. xv. cap. xliv. To return to our Jews: universally in all their old writings they have carried on a design of impugning him in his Gospel; for as we need not their testimony, nor any thing but the Scripture, for their conviction and αὐτοκαταχρισία, so, to acknowledge the truth, the places cited out of their Talmuds and Gemara, from the Cabalists and other Rabbins, by Martinus Raymundus, Porchetus, Galatinus, Reuchlinus, and others (setting aside Galatinus his Gale Rezeia, which must be set aside), seem[ing] to be wrested the most of them beside their intentions, as things obscurely, metaphorically, and mystically written, are easily dealt withal. Their disputes about the Messiah, when they speak of him of set purpose, as in Lib. Sanhedrim, are foolish, contradictious triflings, wherein they leave all things as uncertain as if they were wrangling in their wonted manner, "de lana caprina." So that, for my part, I am not much removed from the opinion of Hulsius (lib. i. p. 2, dic. sup. de Temp. Messiæ), that Æsop's Fables are of as much use in Christian religion as the Judaical Talmud. Whilst they keep the Scripture, we shall never want weapons out of their own armory for their destruction. Like the Philistine, they carry the weapon that will serve to cut off their own heads. Now, the Tiberian Masoretes, the supposed inventors of the points or vowels, and accents, which we now use, were men living after the finishing of the last Talmud, whose whole religion was built thereon.

Let us, then, a little, without prejudice or passion, consider who or what these men were, who are the supposed authors of this work:—
1. Men they were (if any such were) *who had not the word of God committed* to them in a peculiar manner, as their forefathers had of old, being no part of his church or people, but were only outwardly possessors of the letter, without just right or title to it, utterly uninterested in the promise of the communication of the Spirit, which is the great charter of the church's preservation of truth, Isa. lix. 21.
2. Men *so remote from a right understanding of the word*, or the mind and will of God therein, that they were desperately engaged

to oppose his truth in the books which themselves enjoyed, in all matters of importance unto the glory of God or the good of their own souls, from the beginning to the ending; the foundation of whose religion was infidelity, and one of their chief fundamentals an opposition to the gospel.[1] 3. Men *under the special curse of God* and his vengeance, upon the account of the blood of his dear Son. 4. Men *all their days feeding themselves with vain fables,* and mischievous devices against the gospel, labouring to set up a new religion under the name of the old, in despite of God; so striving to wrestle it out with his curse to the utmost. 5. Men *of a profound ignorance* in all manner of learning and knowledge but only what concerned their own dunghill traditions;[2] as appears in their stories, wherein they make Pyrrhus, king of Epirus, help Nebuchadnezzar against Jerusalem, with innumerable the like fopperies. 6. Men *so addicted to such monstrous figments,* as appears in their Talmuds, as their successors of after ages are ashamed of, and seek to palliate what they are able; yea, for the most part *idolaters and magicians,* as I shall evince. Now, I dare leave it to the judgment of any godly, prudent person, not addicted to parties and names of men, who is at all acquainted with the importance of the Hebrew vowels and accents unto the right understanding of the Scripture, with what influence their present fixation hath upon the literal sense we embrace, whether we need not very clear evidence and testimony, yea, undeniable and unquestionable, to cast the rise and spring of them upon the invention of this sort of men.

Of all the fables that are in the Talmud I know none more incredible than this story, that men who cannot, by any story or other record, be made to appear that they ever were in *rerum natura,*—such men as we have described, obscure, unobserved, not taken notice of by any learned man, Jew or Christian,—should in a time of deep ignorance, in the place where they lived, amongst a people wholly addicted to monstrous fables, themselves blinded under the curse of God, find out so great, so excellent a work, of such unspeakable usefulness, not once advising with the men of their own profession and religion, who then flourished in great abundance at Babylon and the places adjacent, and impose it on all the world (that receive the Scriptures), and have every tittle of their work received, without any opposition or question from any person or persons, of any principle whatever; yea, so as to have their invention made the constant rule of all following expositions, comments, and interpretations. *Credat Apella.*

To draw, then, to the close of this discourse, I must crave liberty

[1] Fundament. nonum. apud Maimon. præfat. ad Perek. Chelek. p. 175, edit. Poc.
[2] Shobet Jehuda, p. 40.

to profess that if I could be thoroughly convinced that the present Hebrew punctuation were the figment and invention of these men, I should labour to the utmost to have it utterly taken away out of the Bible, nor should I (in its present station) make use of it any more. What use such an invention might be of under catholic rules, in a way of grammar, I shall not dispute; but to have it placed in the Bible as so great a part of the word of God is not tolerable. But blessed be God, things are not as yet come to that pass! I shall only add, that whereas some of the most eminently learned and exercised persons in all the learning and antiquity of the Jews that these latter ages have produced, have appeared in the confutation of this fancy of the invention of the points by some post-Talmudical Masoretes, I am sorry their respect to the Rabbins hath kept them from the management of this consideration, which is to me of so great importance.

To what I have spoken I shall add the words of learned Dr Lightfoot, in his late Centuria Chorograph., which came to my hands since the finishing of this discourse, cap. lxxxi. p. 146: "Sunt qui punctata Biblia credunt a sapientibus Tiberiensibus" (he means Elias only, for other Jews of this opinion there are none). "Ego impudentiam Judæorum, qui fabulam invenerunt, non miror; Christianorum credulitatem miror, qui applaudunt. Recognosce (quæso) nomina Tiberiensium a sita illic primum academia ad eam expirantem, et quidnam tandem invenies nisi genus hominum præ Pharisaismo insaniens, traditionibus fascinans et fascinatum, cæcum, vafrum, delirum; ignoscant, si dicam magicum et monstrosum? Ad opus tam divinum homines quam ineptos, quam stolidos! Perlege Talmud Hierosolymitanum, et nota qualiter illic se habeant R. Juda, R. Chamnath, Z. Judan, R. Hoshaia, R. Chaija Rubba, R. Chaija Bar Ba, R. Jochanan, reliquique inter Tiberienses grandissimi doctores; quam serio nihil agunt; quam pueriliter seria; quanta in ipsorum disputationibus vafrities, spuma, venenum, fumus, nihil; et si punctata fuisse Biblia in istiusmodi schola potes credere, crede et omnia Talmudica. Opus Spiritus Sancti sapit punctatio Bibliorum, non opus hominum perditorum, excæcatorum, amentium." In the words of this learned person there is the sum of what I am pleading for. Saith he, "I do not admire the Jews' impudence, who found out that fable; I admire Christians' credulity, who applaud it. Recount, I pray, the names of the Tiberians from the first foundation of a university there to the expiring thereof, and what do you find but a sort of men being mad with (or above) the Pharisees, bewitching and bewitched with traditions, blind, crafty, raging; pardon me if I say magical and monstrous? What fools, what sots, as to such a divine work! Read over the Talmud of Jerusalem; consider how R. Juda, R. Chamnath, Z. Judan, R. Hoshaia, R. Chaija

Rubba, R. Chaija Bar Ba, R. Jochanan, and the rest of the great doctors among the Tiberians, do behave themselves; how seriously they do nothing; how childish they are in serious things; how much deceitfulness, froth, venom, smoke, nothing, in their disputations: and if you can believe the points of the Bible to proceed from such a school, believe also their Talmuds. The pointing of the Bible savours of the work of the Holy Spirit, not of wicked, blind, and mad men."

The Jews generally believe these points to have been from mount Sinai, and so downward by Moses and the prophets, at least from Ezra and his companions, the men of the great synagogue; not denying that the knowledge and use of them received a great reviving by the Gemarists and Masoretes, when they had been much disused. So R. Azarias at large, Imre Binah. cap. lix.

Had it been otherwise, surely men stupendously superstitious in inquiring after the traditions of their fathers would have found some footsteps of their rise and progress. It is true, there is not only the opinion, but there are the arguments, of one of them to the contrary, —namely, Elias Levita. This Elias lived in Germany about the beginning of the Reformation, and was the most learned grammarian of the Jews in that age. Sundry of the first reformers had acquaintance with him. The task not only of *reforming religion*, but also of *restoring good literature*, being incumbent on them, they made use of such assistances as were to be obtained then to that purpose. This man (whom Thuanus takes notice of[1]) lived with Paulus Fagius, and assisted him in his noble promotion of the Hebrew tongue. Hence haply it is that some of those worthies unwarily embraced his novel opinion, being either overborne with his authority, or not having leisure to search further after the truth. That the testimony of this one Elias should be able to outweigh the constant attestation of all other learned Jews to the contrary, as Cappellus affirms and pleads, and as is insinuated in our Prolegomena,[2] is fond to imagine; and the premises of that learned man fight against his own conclusion. "It is known," saith he, "that the Jews are prone to insist on every thing that makes for the honour of their people and language; and therefore their testimony to the divine original of the present punctuation, being in their own case, is not to be admitted.

[1] "Eodem fere tempore Palatinus abolita pontificia authoritate doctrinam Lutheri recepit, eaque de causa Paulum Fagium tabernis Rhenanis in Palatinatu natum Hiedelbergam evocavit. Is sub Volfgango Capitone perfectissimam linguæ sanctæ cognitionem adeptus, cum egestate premeretur, Petri Busteri veri locupletis Isnæ in qua ille docebat senatoris liberalitate sublevatus Heliam illum Judæorum doctissimum accersendum curavit, et instituta typographica officina maximum ad solidam rerum Hebraicarum cognitionem momentum attulit."—Thuanus Hist. lib. ii. ad an. 1564, p. 546.

[2] Proleg. 3, sect. 42.

Only Elias, who in this speaks against the common interest of his people, is presumed to speak upon conviction of truth." But the whole *evidence* in this cause is on the other side. Let us grant that all the Jews are zealous of the honour and reputation of their nation and language, as they are; let us grant that they greedily close with every thing that may seem to have a tendency thereunto: what will be the issue or natural inference from these premises? Why, as nothing could be spoken more honourably of the Jews whilst they were the church and people of God than that of Paul, that "to them were committed the oracles of God," so nothing can be imagined or fixed on more to their honour since their divorce from God than that their doctors and masters should make such an addition to the Scripture, so generally acknowledged to be unspeakably useful. And to this purpose Elias, who was the father of this opinion, was far from making such deductions thence as some do now-a-days, namely, that it is lawful for us to change the vowels and accents at our pleasure, but ties all men as strictly to them as if they had been the work of Ezra. It is Elias, then, that speaks in his own case; whose testimony is, therefore, not to be admitted. What was done of old and in the days of Ezra is ours, who succeed unto the privileges of that church; what hath been done since the destruction of the temple is properly and peculiarly theirs.

It may, perhaps, be thought that by the account given of the Rabbins, their state and condition of old and of late, I might have weakened one great argument which learned men make use of to confirm the *sacred antiquity* of the present Hebrew punctuation, taken from the universal consent and testimony of the Jewish doctors, ancient and modern, this one Elias excepted. Who can think such persons are in any thing to be believed? But, indeed, the case is quite otherwise. Though we account them wholly unmeet for the work that is ascribed unto them, and, on supposition that it is theirs, affirm that it had need undergo another manner of trial than as yet, out of reverence to its generally received antiquity, it hath met withal; yet they were *men still* who were full well able to declare what *de facto* they found to be so, and what they found otherwise. It cannot, I think, be reasonably supposed that so many men, living in so many several ages, at such vast distances from one another, who, some of them, it may be, never heard of the names of other some of them, should conspire to cozen themselves and all the world besides in a matter of fact not at all to their advantage. However, for my part, whatever can be proved against them I shall willingly admit. But to be driven out of such a rich possession as is the present Hebrew punctuation, upon mere surmises and conjectures, I cannot willingly give way or consent.

It is not my design to give in arguments for the divine original of the present Hebrew punctuation; neither do I judge it necessary for any one so to do whilst the learned Buxtorfius' discourse, "De Origine et Antiquitate Punctorum," lies unanswered. I shall, therefore, only add one or two considerations which to me are of weight, and not, as I remember, mentioned by him or his father in his "Tiberias," or any other that I know of in their disputes to this purpose.

1. If the points or vowels, and accents, be coevous with the rest of the letters, or have an original before all grammar of that language (as, indeed, languages are not made by grammar, but grammars are made by languages), *then the grammar of it and them must be collected from the observation of their use*, as they were found in all their variety, before any such art was invented or used; and rules must be suited thereunto. The drawing into rules all the instances that, being uniform, would fall under such rules, and the distinct observation of anomalous words, either singly, or in exceptions comprehending many under one head that would not be so reduced, was the work of grammar. But, on the other side, if the vowels and accents were invented by themselves, and added to the letters, *then the rule and art of disposing, transposing, and changing of them, must be constituted and fixed before the disposition of them;* for they were placed after the rules made, and according to them. A middle way, that I know of, cannot be fixed on. Either they are of the original writing of the language, and have had rules made by their station therein, or they have been supplied unto it according to rules of art. Things are not thus come to pass by chance; nor was this world created by a casual concurrence of these atoms. Now, if the grammar or art was the ground and foundation, not the product of their use, as I am confident I shall never see a tolerable answer given to that inquiry of Buxtorfius the elder in his "Tiberias," why the inventors of them left so many words anomalous and pointed otherwise than according to rule or the constant course of the language, precisely reckoning them up when they had so done, and how often they are so used, as ֵ and ֶ for ֱ, and ַ for ָ, and the like, when they might, if they had so pleased, have made them all regular, to their own great ease, advantage of their language, and facilitating the learning of it to all posterity, the thing they seem to have aimed at: so I cannot be satisfied why, in that long, operose, and curious work of the Masoretes, wherein they have reckoned up every word in the Scripture, and have observed the irregularity of every letter and tittle, they never once attempt to give us out those catholic rules whereby they or their masters proceeded in affixing the points; or whence it came to pass that no learned Jew for

hundreds of years after should be able to acquaint us with that way, but in all their grammatical instructions should merely collect observations, and inculcate them a hundred times over, according as they present themselves to them by particular instances. Assuredly, had this wonderful art of pointing, which for the most part may be reduced to catholic rules, and might have wholly been so if it were an arbitrary invention, limited to no pre-existing writing, been found out first and established as the *norma* and canon of affixing the vowels, some footsteps of it would have remained in the Masora, or among some of the Jews, who spent all their time and days in the consideration of it.

2. In the days of the Chaldee paraphrast, when the prophecies of the humiliation and death of their Messiah were only not understood by them, yet *we see into how many several ways and senses they are wrested by that paraphrast*, to affix some tolerable meaning to them. Take an instance on Isa. liii. Jonathan there acknowledges the whole prophecy to be intended of Christ, as knowing it to be the common faith of the church; but not understanding the state of humiliation which the Messiah was to undergo, he wrests the words into all forms, to make that which is spoken passively of Christ, as to his suffering *from* others, to signify actively, as to his doing and exercising judgment *upon* others! But now, more than five hundred years after, when these points are supposed to be invented, when the Rabbins were awake and knew full well what use was made of those places against them, as also that the prophets (especially Isaiah) are the most obscure part of the whole Scripture, as to the grammatical sense of their words in their coherence, without points and accents, and how facile it were to invert the whole sense of many periods by small alterations in these rules of reading, yet as they are pointed they make out incomparably more clearly the Christian faith than any ancient translations of those places whatever. Johannes Isaac, a converted Jew, lib. i. ad Lindan., tells us that above two hundred testimonies about Christ may be brought out of the original Hebrew that appear not in the Vulgar Latin or any other translation. And Raymundus Martinus, "Noverint quæ ejusmodi sunt" (that is, who blamed him for translating things immediately out of the Hebrew, not following the Vulgar Latin) "in plurimis valde sacræ Scripturæ locis veritatem multo planius atque perfectius pro fide Christiana haberi in litera Hebraica quam in translatione nostra," Procem. ad Pug. Fid. sec. 14. Let any man consider those two racks of the Rabbins and swords of Judaical unbelief, Isa. liii. and Dan. ix., as they are now pointed and accented in our Bibles, and compare them with the translation of the LXX., and this will quickly appear unto him. Especially hath this been

evidenced, since the Socinians[1] as well as the Jews have driven the dispute about the satisfaction of Christ to the utmost scrutiny and examination of every word in that 53d of Isaiah. But yet, as the text stands now pointed and accented, neither Jews nor Socinians (notwithstanding the relief contributed to them by Grotius wresting that whole blessed prophecy to make application of it unto Jeremiah, thinking therein to outdo the late or modern Jews; Abrabanel and others applying it to Josiah, the whole people of the Jews, Messiah Ben Joseph, and I know not whom) have been able, or ever shall be able, to relieve themselves from the sword of the truth therein. Were such exercitations on the word of God allowable, I could easily manifest how, by changing the distinctive accents and vowels, much darkness and perplexity might be cast on the contexture of that glorious prophecy. It is known, also, that the Jews commonly plead that one reason why they keep the copy of the law in their synagogues without points is, that the text may not be restrained to one certain sense, but that they may have liberty to draw out various, and, as they speak, more eminent senses.

CHAPTER VI.

Arguments for the novelty of the Hebrew points proposed to consideration—The argument from the Samaritan letters considered and answered—Of the copy of the law preserved in the synagogues without points—The testimony of Elias Levita and Aben Ezra considered—Of the silence of the Mishna, Talmud, and Gemara, about the points—Of the Keri and Ketib—Of the number of the points—Of the ancient translations, Greek, Chaldee, Syriac—Of Jerome—The new argument of Morinus in this cause—The conclusion about the necessity of the points.

But because this seems to be a matter of great importance, wherein the truth formerly pleaded for appears to be nearly concerned, I shall, ὡς ἐν παρόδῳ, very briefly consider the arguments that are usually insisted on (as in these Prolegomena) to prove the points to be a *novel invention;* I mean of the men and at the time before mentioned. Particular instances I shall not insist upon, nor is it necessaly I should so do; it hath been done already. The heads of arguments, which yet contain their strength, are capable of a brief despatch, which shall be given them in the order wherein they are represented by the Prolegomena, Proleg. 3, sect. 38–40.

1. It is said, then, "That whereas the *old Hebrew* letters were the present Samaritan,[2] the Samaritan letters having been always without

[1] Faustus Socin. de Jesu Christo Servatore; Crellius Cont. Grot. p. 62.

[2] Pietro Della Valle had discovered, in his travels through the east, a copy of the

points, as they yet continue, it is manifest that the invention of the points must be of a later date than the change of the letters, which was in the days of Ezra; and so, consequently, be the work of the post-Talmudical Masoretes." "Pergula Pictoris!" This whole objection is made up of most uncertain conjectures. This is not a place to speak at large of the Samaritans, their Pentateuch, and its translation. The original of that nation is known from the Scripture, as also their worship of God, 2 Kings xvii. Their solemn excommunication and casting out from any interest among the people of God is also recorded, Ezra ix. x., Nehem. xiii. Their continuance in their abominations after the closing of the canon of the Scripture is reported by Josephus, Antiq. lib. xi. cap. viii. In the days of the Maccabees they were conquered by Hyrcanus, and brought into subjection by the Jews, Joseph. Antiq. lib. xiii. cap. x. Yet their will-worship, upon the credit of the tradition of their fathers, continued to the days of our Saviour, and their hatred to the people of God, John iv. 9, 22. When, by whom, in what character, they first received the Pentateuch, is most uncertain;—not likely by the priest sent to them; for notwithstanding his instructions, they continued in open idolatry, which evidences that they had not so much as seen the book of the law. Probably this was done when they were conquered by Hyrcanus, and their temple razed, after it had stood two hundred years. So also did the Edomites. What diligence they used in the preservation of it, being never committed to them by God, we shall see afterward. That there are any of them remaining at this day, or have been these thousand years past, is unknown. That the letters of their Pentateuch were the ancient Hebrew letters, as Eusebius, Jerome, and some of the Rabbins, report, seems to me (on the best inquiry I have been able to make) a groundless tradition and mere fable. The evidences tendered to prove it are much too weak to bear the weight of such an assertion. Eusebius speaks only on report; *affirmatur*,—it was so affirmed, on what ground he tells us not. Jerome, indeed, is more positive; but give me leave to say, that supposing this to be false, sufficient instances of the like mistakes may be given in him. For the testimony of the Talmud, I have often declared that with me it is of no weight, unless seconded by very good evidence. And indeed the foundation of the whole story is very vain. The Jews are thought and said to have forgot their own characters in the captivity, and to have learned the Chaldean, upon the account whereof they adhered unto it after their return, when the same men were alive at

Samaritan Pentateuch, which was presented in 1620 to the library of the Oratory at Paris, by Harlæus de Sancy. It excited considerable sensation among the learned, was reputed of great antiquity, and held to be derived from some copy antecedent to the Babylonish captivity. It contained no vowel points, and hence the analogical argument to which our author refers against the antiquity of the Hebrew points.—Ed.

the burning of the one and the building of the other temple. That the men of one and the same generation should forget the use of their own letters, which they had been exercised in, is incredible. Besides, they had their Bibles with them always, and that in their own character only; whether they had any one other book or no, we know not. And whence, then, this forgetting of one character and learning of another should arise doth not appear; nor shall I, in such an improbable fiction, lay much weight on testimonies the most ancient whereof is six hundred years later than the pretended matter of fact.

The most weighty proof in this case is taken from the ancient *Judaical coins*, taken up with Samaritan characters upon them. We are now in the high road of forgeries and fables; in nothing hath the world been more cheated. But be it granted that the pretended coins are truly ancient, must it needs follow that because the letters were then known and in use, that they only were so,—that the Bible was written with them, and those now in use unknown? To salve the credit of the coins, I shall crave leave to answer this conjecture with another. The Samaritan letters are plainly preternatural (if I may so say), a studied invention,—in their frame and figure fit to adorn, when extended or greatened, by way of engraving or embossing, any thing they shall be put upon or cut in. Why may we not think they were invented for that purpose, namely, to engrave on vessels and to stamp on coins, and so came to be of some use in writing also? Their shape and frame promise some such thing. And this is rendered the more probable from the practice of the Egyptians, who, as Clemens Alexandrinus[1] tells us, had three sorts of letters; one which he calls *ἐπιστολογραφική*, with which they wrote things of common use; another termed by him *ἱερογραφική*, used by the priests in the sacred writings; and the other *ἱερογλυφική*, which also was of two sorts, simple and symbolical. Seeing, then, it was no unusual thing to have sundry sorts of letters for sundry purposes, it is not improbable that it was so also among the Jews: not that they wrote the sacred writings in a peculiar character as it were to hide them, which is declaimed against, but only that the other character might be in use for some purposes; which is not unusual. I cannot think the Greeks of old used only the *uncial* letters, which yet we know some did; though he did not who wrote Homer's Iliad in no greater a volume than would go into a nutshell.

[1] Αὐτίκα δὲ οἱ παρ' Αἰγυπτίοις παιδευόμενοι, πρῶτον μὲν πάντων τὴν Αἰγυπτίων γραμμάτων μέθοδον ἐκμανθάνουσι, τὴν ἐπιστολογραφικὴν καλουμένην· δευτέραν δε, ἱερατικὴν ἣ χρῶνται οἱ ἱερογραμματεῖς· ὑστάτην δὲ καὶ τελευταίαν, τὴν ἱερογλυφικὴν ἧς ἡ μέν ἐστι διὰ τῶν πρωτῶν στοιχείων κυριολογικὴ, ἡ δὲ συμβολική· τῆς δὲ συμβολικῆς ἡ μὲν κυριολογεῖται κατὰ μίμησιν· ἡ δὲ ὥσπερ τροπικῶς γράφεται, ἡ δὲ ἀντικρυς ἀλληγορεῖται κατά τινας αἰνιγμούς· ἥλιον γὰρ οὕν γράψαι βουλόμενοι, κύκλον ποιοῦσι· σελήνην δὲ, σχῆμα μηνειδὲς, κατὰ τὸ κυριολογούμενον εἶδος. —Clemens. Alex., Stromat. lib. v.

But if that should be granted that cannot be proved,—namely, that such a change was made,—yet this prejudices not them in the least who affirm Ezra and the men of the great congregation to have been the authors of the points, seeing the authors of this rumour affixed that as the time wherein the old Hebrew letters were excommunicated out of the church, together with the Samaritans. Nay, it casts a probability on the other hand, namely, that Ezra, laying aside the old letters because of their difficulty, together with the new introduced the points, to facilitate their use. Nor can it be made to appear that the Samaritan letters had never any vowels affixed to them. Postellus affirms that the Samaritans had points in the days of Jerome, and that their loss of them is the cause of their present corrupt reading: "Punctis hodie quæ habebant Hieronymi temporibus carent: leguntque, sine punctis admodum depravatè," Postell. Alphab. 12 lingua. There were always some copies written without vowels, which might be preserved, and the others lost. That people (if we have any thing from them) being wicked, ignorant, sottish, superstitious, idolatrous, rejecters of the greatest part of the Scripture, corrupters of what they had received, might neglect the task of transcribing copies with points, because a matter of so great care and diligence, to be performed aright. Nor is it improbable, whatever is pretended to the contrary, that, continuing in their separation from the people of God, they might get the law written in a character of their own choosing, out of hatred to the Jews.

Now, let any man judge whether, from this heap of uncertainties, any thing can arise with the face of a witness, to be admitted to give testimony in the cause in hand. He that will part with his possession on such easy terms never found much benefit in it.

2. The *constant practice* of the Jews in preserving in their synagogues one book, which they almost adore, written without points, is alleged to the same purpose; "for what do they else hereby but tacitly acknowledge the points to have a human original?" *Ans.* But it is certain they do not so acknowledge them, neither by that practice nor by any other way, it being the constant opinion and persuasion of them all (Elias only excepted) that they are of a divine extract; and if their authority be to be urged, it is to be submitted unto in one thing as well as in another. The Jews give a threefold account of this practice:—(1.) The difficulty of transcribing copies without any failing, the *least* rendering the whole book, as to its use in their synagogues, profane. (2.) The liberty they have thereby to draw out *various senses*, more eminent, as they say (indeed more vain and curious), than they have any advantage to do when the reading is restrained to one certain sense by the vowels and accents. (3.) To keep all *learners* in dependence on their teachers, seeing they cannot

learn the mind of God but by their exposition, R. Azarias, lib. Imre Binah. cap. lix. If these reasons satisfy not any as to the ground of that practice, they may be pleased to inquire of them for others who intend to be bound by their authority;—that the points were invented by some late Masoretes they will not inform them. For Jesuitical stories out of China, they are with me, for the most part, of the like credit with those of the Jews in their Talmud; he that can believe all the miracles that they work, where men are not warned of their juggling, may credit them in other things. However, as I said, I do not understand this argument: "The Jews keep a book in their synagogues without points, therefore the points and accents were invented by the Tiberian Masoretes;" when they never read it, or rather sing it, but according to every point and accent in ordinary use. Indeed, the whole profound mystery of this business seems to be this, that none be admitted to read or sing the law in their synagogues until he be so perfect in it as to be able to observe exactly all points and accents in a book wherein there are none of them.

3. The testimony of *Elias Levita*, not only as to his own judgment, but also as to what he mentions from Aben Ezra and others, is insisted on. "They affirm," saith he, "that we have received the whole punctuation from the Tiberian Masoretes." *Ans.* It is very true that Elias was of that judgment; and it may well be supposed, that if that opinion had not fallen into his mind, the world had been little acquainted with it at this day. That by "receiving of the punctuation from the Tiberians," the *continuation* of it in their school, not the *invention* of it, is intended by Aben Ezra, is beyond all exception evinced by Buxtorfius, De Punct. Antiq. par. i. cap. iii. Nor can any thing be spoken more directly to the contrary of what is intended, than that which is urged in the Prolegomena from Aben Ezra, Comment. in Exod. xxv. 31, where he affirms that he saw some books examined in all the letters, and the whole punctuation by the wise men of Tiberias, namely, to try whether it were done exactly according to the patterns they had. Besides, all Elias' arguments are notably answered by R. Azarias, whose answers are repeated by Joseph de Voysin in his most learned Observations on the Procœmium of the Pugio Fidei, p. 91, 92. And the same Azarias shows the consistency of the various opinions that were among the Jews about the vowels; ascribing them as to their virtue and force to Moses, or God on Mount Sinai; as to their figure and character to Ezra; and as to the restoration of their use unto the Masoretes.

4. The silence of the Mishna Gemara, or *whole Talmud*, concerning the points is further urged. This argument is also at large discussed by Buxtorfius, and the instances in it answered to the full;

nor is it needful for any man to add any thing further until what he hath discoursed to this purpose be removed. See par. i. cap. vi. See also Glassius, lib. i. tract. i. De Textus Hebræi Puritate, who gives instances to the contrary; yea, and the Talmud itself, in Nedarim, or "of vows," chap. iv., on Nehem. viii. 8, doth plainly mention them; and treatises more ancient than the Talmud, cited by R. Azarias in Imre Binah, expressly speak of them. It is to me a sufficient evidence, able to overbear the conjectures to the contrary, that the Talmudists both knew, and in their readings were regulated by, the points now in use, in that, as many learned men have observed, there is not one text of Scripture to be found cited in the Talmud in any other sense, as to the literal reading and meaning of the words, than only that which it is restrained unto by the present punctuation; when it is known that the patrons of the opinion under consideration yield this constantly as one reason of the seventy translators reading words and sentences otherwise than we read them now in our Bibles,—namely, because the books they used were not pointed, whereby they were at liberty to conjecture at this or that sense of the word before them. This is one of the main pillars of Cappellus' whole fabric in his Critica Sacra. And how it can be fancied there should be no variety between our present reading and the Talmudists', upon supposition they knew not the use of points, I know not. Is it possible, on this supposition, there should be such a coincidence between their and our present punctuation, when, on the same principle, it seems there are so many variations by the LXX. and the Chaldee paraphrast?

5. Of the קְרִי וּכְתִיב, which are pleaded in the next place to this purpose, I shall speak afterward. The difference in them is in the consonants, not in the vowels; which yet argues not that there were no vowels when they were collected or disposed as now we find them. Yea, that there were no vowels in the copies from whence they were collected (if they were so collected) may be true, but that that collection was made any later, for the main of it, than the days of Ezra doth not appear. Now, whatever was done about the Scripture in the Judaical church before the times of our Saviour is manifest to have been done by divine authority, in that it is nowhere by him reproved, but rather the integrity of every word is by him confirmed. But of these things distinctly by themselves afterward we are to speak.

6. A sixth argument for the novelty of the points is taken from their *number;* for whereas it is said all kinds of sounds may be expressed by five vowels, we are in the present Hebrew punctuation supplied with fourteen or fifteen, which, as it is affirmed, manifests abundantly that they are not coevous or connatural to the language itself, but the arbitrary, artificial invention of men, who have not as-

signed a sufficient difference in their force and sound to distinguish them in pronunciation. But this objection seems of small importance. The ground of it is an apprehension that we still retain exactly the true pronunciation of the Hebrew tongue; which is evidently false. (1.) It is now near two thousand years since that tongue was vulgarly spoken in its purity by any people or nation. To imagine that the true, exact, distinct pronunciation of every tittle and syllable in it, as it was used by them to whom it was vulgar and natural, is communicated unto us, or is attainable by us, is to dream pleasantly whilst we are awake. Aben Ezra makes it no small matter that men of old knew aright how to pronounce Kamets Gadol. Saith he, אנשי טבריא גם חכמי מצרים ואפריקא יודעים לקרוא הקמץ גדול,—"The men of Tiberias, also the wise men of Egypt and Africa, knew how to read Kamets Gadol." (2.) Even the distinct force of one consonant, and that always radical, ע, is utterly lost, so that the present Jews know nothing of its pronunciation. (3.) Nor can we distinguish now between תכ and טק, between ב and וּ, though the Jews tell us that the wise men of Tiberias could do so twelve hundred years ago; as also between ֶ and ַ, ֵ and ֶ, וּ and ֻ; nor is the distinct sound of עחהא so obvious unto us. (4.) The variety of consonants among many nations, and their ability to distinguish them in pronunciation, makes this of little consideration. The whole nation of the Germans distinguish not between the force and sound of *t* and *d;* whereas the Arabic *dal* and *dhsal, dad, ta,* and *da,* manifest how they can distinguish those sounds. (5.) Nor are the Jewish ץ ז ס שׂ שׁ answered distinctly in any other language; to distinguish some of which good old Jerome had his teeth filed, by the direction of his Nicodemus.[1] (6.) The truth is, the Hebrews have but ten vowels, five long and five short, or five great and five less; Sheva is but a servant to all the rest, and its addition to Segol and Pathakh makes no new vowels. To distinguish between Kamets Khatuph and Khatuph Kamets there is no colour. Seven only of them, as Morinus hath manifested out of R. Jehuda Chiug, one of the first grammarians among the Jews, namely, וּ וֹ ֻ ֶ ֵ ַ ָ, they called, of old, kings, or the chief rulers of all the motions of the letters. So that indeed they have not so many figures to distinguish sounds by, with all their vowels, as have the Greeks. Besides the seven vowels, they have twelve diphthongs, and three of them, as to any peculiar sound, as mute as Sheva. It is true, Pliny tells us that Simonides Melicus found out two of the vowels, η and ω, as he did also two consonants, ζ and ψ; but surely he did so because he found them needful to answer the dis-

[1] "Veni rursum Hierosolymam, et Bethlehem ubi labore pretii Bartemium Judæum nocturnum habui præceptorem; timebat enim Judæos, et exhibebat se mihi alium Nicodemum."—Hieron. Ep. ad Oceanum.

tinct sounds used in that language, or he had deserved little thanks for his invention.[1] Speaking lately with a worthy learned friend[2] about a universal character, which hath been mentioned by many, attempted by divers, and by him brought to that perfection as will doubtless yield much if not universal satisfaction unto learned and prudent men, when he shall be pleased to communicate his thoughts upon it to the world, we fell occasionally on the difference of apert sounds or vowels: which when I heard him with good reason affirm to be eight or nine, remembering this argument about the Hebrew points, I desired him to give his thoughts in a few words the next day; which he did accordingly. Now, because his discourse seems evidently to discover the vanity of this pretence, that the Hebrew vowels are an arbitrary invention from their number, I have here inserted it:—

Apert sounds are either..... { Simple. Vowels. / Double. Diphthongs.

1. Apert simple sounds are distinguishable..... { Formally. / Accidentally.

(1.) The *formal* difference is that which doth constitute several letters, and must depend upon the various apertion required to the making of them, together with the gravity or acuteness of the tone which is made by them; according to which there are at least eight simple vowels, that are by us easily distinguishable, namely,—

1. } E { magis acutum: as in he, me, she, ye, etc.
2. } { minus acutum: as the English, the; the Latin, me, te, se, etc.
3. I or Y, which are both to be accounted of one power and sound. Shi, di; thy, my.
4. } A { magis apertum. All, tall, gall, wall.
5. } { minus apertum. Ale, tale, gale, wale.
6. } O { rotundum, minus grave: as the English, go, so, no; the Latin, do.
7. } { magis grave et pingue: as the English, do, to, who.
8. U as in tu, use, us, etc.

So many apert simple sounds there are evidently distinguishable: I would be loath to say that there neither are nor can be any more; for who knows how many other minute differences of apertion and gravity may be now used, or hereafter found out by others, which practice and custom may make as easy to them as these are to us?

(2.) But besides this formal difference, they are some of them *accidentally* distinguishable from one another, with reference to the quantity of time required to

[1] "Literas semper arbitror Assyrias fuisse, sed alii apud Egyptios a Mercurio, ut Gellius; alii apud Tyros repertas volunt: utique in Græciam intulisse e Phœnice Cadmum sexdecim numero, quibus Trojano bello adjecisse quatuor hac figurâ Θ Ξ Φ Χ. Palimedem totidem, post eum Simonidem Melicum ζ η Ψ ω, quarum omnium vis in nostris cognoscitur."—Plinius Nat. Hist. lib. vii. cap. lvi. quæ quis in vita invenerit.

[2] Dr Wilkins, ward. of Wad. Col.: [afterwards bishop of Chester, and author of a celebrated "Essay towards a Real Character and Philosophical Language." On account of his literary pursuits in this direction, Owen seems to have appealed to him as an authority in the present instance. A complete and more accurate classification of sounds will be found in certain recent works. See a list of authors on the subject in the appendix to the "Essentials of Phonetics," by Ellis.—Ed.]

their prolation, whereby the same vowel becomes sometimes long [and sometimes] short:—

So E min. acut.	L.	Mete, steme.
	S.	Met, stem.
I.....	L.	Alive, give, drive, title, thine.
	S.	Live, give, driven.——☞ i. e., tittle, thin.
A min. apert. A ...	L.	Bate, hate, cate, same, dame—ae.
	S.	Bat, hat, cat, sam, dam.
O rotund.....	L.	One, none, note, etc.—oe *vel* oa.
	S.	One (non Lat.), not.
U.....	L.	Use, tune, pule, acute.——ue.
	S.	Us, tun, pull, cut.

The other remaining vowels, namely, E magis acut., A magis apert., and O magis grave, do not change their quantities, but are always long.

2. Diphthongs are made of the complexion of two vowels in one syllable, where the sounds of both are heard. These are:—

1. Ei, ey.....Hei, Lat. They.
2. Ea.....Eat, meat, seat, teat, yea, plea.
3. Eu, ew.....Heu, Lat. Few, dew.
4. Ai, ay,.....Aid, said, pay, day.
5. Au, aw.....Audience, author, law, draw.
6. Oi, oy.....Point, soil, boy, toy.
7. Ou, ow.....Rout, stout, how, now.
8. Ui, uy.....Bui, juice.
9. Eo.....Yeoman, people.

How other diphthongs (which have been used) may be significant for the expression of long vowels, see noted above.

There is, then, very little weight to be ventured upon the strength of this objection.

7. It is further pleaded, Proleg. 8, sect. 46, that the ancient *translations*,—the Greek, the Chaldee, and the Syriac,—do manifest that at the time of their composing the points were not invented, and that because in sundry places it is evident that they read otherwise, or the words with other points (I mean as to the force and sound, not figure of them) than those now affixed. For this purpose, very many instances are given us out of the Septuagint, especially by Cappellus; Grotius also takes the same course. But neither is this objection of any force to turn the scale in the matter under consideration. Somewhat will, in the close of this discourse, be spoken of those translations. The differences that may be observed in them, especially in the former, would as well prove that they had other consonants,—that is, that the copies they used had other letters and words,—than ours, as other vowels; yea, if we must suppose that where they differ from our present reading they had other and better copies, it is most certain that we must grant ours to be very corrupt. "Hoc Ithacus vellet." Nor can this inference be avoided, as shall, God willing, be further manifested, if occasion be administered. The truth is, the present copies that we have of the Septuagint do in many places so vary from

the original that it is beyond all conjecture what should occasion it. I wish some would try their skill upon some part of Job, the Psalms, and the Prophets, to see if, by all their inquiries of extracting various lections, they can find out how they read in their books, if they rendered as they read, and we enjoy what they rendered. Simeon de Muis tells us a very pretty story of himself to this purpose, Assert. Verit. Heb. sect. 1; as also how ridiculous he was in his attempt. But I shall recall that desire. The Scripture, indeed, is not so to be dealt withal; we have had too much of that work already. The rabbinical אל תקרא is not to be compared with some of our critics' Temura and Notarjecon.[1] Of the Chaldee paraphrase I shall speak afterward. It seems not to be of the antiquity pretended. It is not mentioned by Josephus, nor Origen, nor Jerome;—but this will not impeach its antiquity. But whereas it is most certain that it was in high esteem and reverence among all the Jews before the time assigned for the punctuation of the points, it seems strange that they should, in disposing of them, differ from it voluntarily in so many places. Besides, though these translators, or any of them, might use copies without vowels, as it is confessed that always some such there were, as still there are, yet it doth not follow at all that therefore the points were not found out nor in use. But more of this when we come to speak distinctly of these translations.

8. Of the same importance is that which is, in the last place, insisted on from *the silence of Jerome* and others of the ancients as to the use of the points among the Hebrews. But [as] Jerome saw not all things (he saw not the Chaldee paraphrase, which our authors suppose to have been extant at least four hundred years before him), so it cannot be made evident that he mentioned all that he saw. To speak expressly of the vowels he had no occasion; there was then no controversy about them, nor were they then distinctly known by the names whereby they are now called. The whole current of his translation argues that he had the Bible as now pointed; yea, learned men have manifested by instances that seem of irrefragable evidence that he had the use of them; or, it may be, he could not obtain a pointed copy, but was instructed by his Jew in the right pronunciation of words. Copies were then scarce, and the Jews full of envy. All these things are uncertain. See Munster. Præfat. ad Bib. The truth is, either I cannot understand his words, or he doth positively affirm that the Hebrew had the use of vowels, in his Epistle to Evagrius, Epist. 126: "Nec refert utrum Salem an Salim nominetur,

[1] Cabalistic signs,—תְּמוּרָה and נוֹטָרִיקוֹן, the former denoting a change either by transposition of letters, or by altering the alphabetical order of the letters; the latter being applied to instances in which one letter written is held to be the sign for a whole word or object.—Ed.

cum vocalibus[1] in medio litteris perraro utantur Hebræi." If they did it *perraro*, they did it, and then they had them, though in those days, to keep up their credit in teaching, they did not much use them. Nor can this be spoken of the sound of the vowels, but of their figures; for surely they did not seldom use the sounds of vowels, if they spake often. And many other testimonies from him may be produced to the same purpose.

Morinus, in his late "Opuscula Hebræa Samaritica," in his digression against the Hebrew points and accents, the first part, p. 209, brings in a new argument to prove that the *puncta vocalia* were invented by the Jewish grammarians, however the distinction of sections might be before. This he attempts out of a discourse of Aben Ezra concerning the successive means of the preservation of the Scripture; first, by the men of the great synagogue, then by the Masoretes, then by the grammarians. As he assigns all these their several works, so to the grammarians the skill of knowing the progresses of the holy tongue, the generation of the kingly points and of Sheva, as he is by him there cited at large. After, he labours to prove by sundry instances that the *puncta vocalia* are by him called *reges*, and not the accents, as is now the use; and in the *addenda* to his book, prefixed to it, he triumphs upon a discovery that the vowels are so called by Rabbi Jehuda Chiug, the most ancient of the Jewish grammarians. The business is now, it seems, quite finished, and he cries out, "Oculis aliorum non egemus amplius, *αὐτόπται* nunc sumus"! A sacrifice is doubtless due to this drag of Morinus. But *quid dignum tanto?*

The place insisted on by him out of Aben Ezra was some years before produced, weighed, and explained, by Buxtorf, out of his מֹאזְנֵי לָשׁוֹן הַקֹּדֶשׁ, or the Standard of the Holy Tongue, De Punct. Orig. par. i. p. 13, 14, cap. iii.; and it is not unlikely, from Morinus his preface to his consideration of that place, that he fixed on it some years ago, that he learned it from Buxtorfius, by the provision that he lays in against such thoughts; for what is it to the reader *when* Morinus made his observations? The manner of the men of that society in other things gives sufficient grounds for this suspicion. And Simeon de Muis intimates that he had dealt before with the father as he now deals with the son, Censur. in Exercitat. iv. cap. vii. p. 17; himself, with great and rare ingenuity, acknowledging what he received of him: Assert. Verit. Heb. cap. v., "Dicesve me hæc omnia mutuatum a Buxtorfio? quidni vero mutuor, si necesse erit." But what is the great discovery here made? 1. That the *puncta vocalia* are

[1] Words seemingly conclusive in favour of Owen's view, if Jerome understood by "*vocales*" what we understand by "vowels." The former, however, in the language of Jerome denotes "gutturals." See Havernick's "Introduction to the Old Testament," sect. 53, and Hupfeld, s. 580.—Ed.

some of them called *reges;* the accents have now got that appellation; some of them are *reges,* and some *ministri:* so that the present state of things in reference to vowels and accents is but novel. 2. That the grammarians invented these *regia puncta,* as Aben Ezra says.

But, I pray, what cause of triumph or boasting is in all this goodly discovery? Was it ever denied by any that the casting of the names of the vowels and accents, with the titles, was the work of the grammarians? was it not long since observed by many that the five long vowels, with ֵ and ֽ, were called of old *reges?* and that the distinction of the vowels into long and short was an invention of the Christians rather than Jewish grammarians, the Jews calling them some absolutely *reges,* some great and small, some *matres et filias?* "But then," saith he, "the grammarians were the inventors of these points." Why so? "Aben Ezra refers this unto the work of the grammarians, to know the progresses of the holy tongue, the generation of those kings," etc. But can any thing be more evident against his design than his own testimony? It was the work of the grammarians to *know* these things, therefore not to *invent* them. Did they invent the radical and servile letters? Surely they also then invented the tongue; for it consists of letters radical and servile, of points and accents: and yet this is also ascribed to them by Aben Ezra. But it is well that Morinus hath at length lighted upon R. Jehuda Chiug. His opinion before was collected out of Kimchi, Ephodius, Muscatus, and others. But what says he now himself? For aught that appears, by what we have quoted by Morinus, he is like to prove a notable witness of the antiquity of the points. It may be well supposed that Morinus, writing on set purpose against their antiquity, would produce that testimony which in his whole author was most to his purpose; and yet he fixes on one wherein this ancient grammarian, who lived about the year of Christ 1150 or 1200, gives us an account of the points, with their names, without the least intimation of any thing to the impeachment of their divine original. So also the same Aben Ezra on Ps. ix. 7 tells us of one Adonim Benlafrad, who, long before this R. Jehuda, found ֵ for ֶ in an ancient copy. And therefore, when Morinus comes to make the conclusion of his argument, discovering, it seems, himself the folly of the pretence that the points were invented by the grammarians, the last sort of men mentioned by Aben Ezra, he says, "Procul omni dubio est, et luce meridiana clarius Aben Ezram sensisse omnium vocalium punctationem a Masorethis Tiberiensibus, et grammaticis, qui hos sequuti sunt, originem ducere." But of these Masoretes there is not one word in the premises, nor is any such thing assigned unto them by Aben Ezra, but quite another employment,—of making a hedge about the law, by their observations on all the words of it;—and had he dreamed of their inventing the points, he would sure

enough have assigned that work to them; and as for the grammarians, his own testimony lies full to the contrary.

And these are the heads of the arguments insisted on by Cappellus and others, and by these Prolegomena, to prove the Hebrew punctuation to be an invention of the Jews of Tiberias five hundred years or more after the incarnation of Christ. "Brevis Cantilena, sed longum Epiphonema." As I have not here designed to answer them at large, with the various instances produced to give countenance unto them (nor is it needful for any so to do until the answer already given to them be removed), so by the specimen given of their nature and kind, the sober and pious reader may easily judge whether there be any force in them to subvert the persuasion opposed by them, grounded on the *catholic tradition* and consent of the Jews; the *uncontradicted reception* of them absolutely, without the least opposition, all the world over, by Jews and Christians; the very *nature of the punctuation* itself, following the genius of the language, not arising or flowing from any artificial rules; the impossibility of assigning any author to it since the days of Ezra, but only by such loose conjectures and imaginations as ought not to be admitted to any plea and place in this weighty cause; all attended with that great uncertainty which, without their owning of these points to be of divine original, we shall be left unto in all translations and expositions of the Scripture. It is true, whilst the Hebrew language was the vulgar tongue of the nation, and was spoken by every one uniformly everywhere, it had been possible that, upon a supposition that there were no points, men, without infallible guidance and direction, might possibly affix notes and figures which might with some exactness answer the common pronunciation of the language, and so, consequently, exhibit the true and proper sense and meaning of the words themselves: but when there had been an interruption of a thousand years in the vulgar use of the language, it being preserved pure only in one book, to suppose that the true and exact pronunciation of every tittle, letter, and syllable, was preserved alive by oral tradition, not written anywhere, not commonly spoken by any, is to build towns and castles of imaginations, which may be as easily cast down as they are erected. Yet unless this be supposed (which with no colour of reason can be supposed, which is yet so by Cappellus and the learned author of the Prolegomena), it must be granted that the great rule of all present translations, expositions, and comments, that have been made in the church of God for some hundreds of years, is the arbitrary invention of some few Jews, living in an obscure corner of the world, under the curse of God, in their unbelief and blindness! The only relief in the Prolegomena against this amazing inference is, as was said, that the Masoretes affixed not the present punctuation arbitrarily (so also Cappellus), but according to

the tradition they had received. What weight is to be laid upon such a tradition for near a thousand years (above, according to Morinus) is easily to be imagined. Nor let men please themselves with the pretended facility of learning the Hebrew language without points and accents; and not only the language, but the true and proper reading and distinction of it in the Bible. Let the points and accents be wholly removed, and all apprehensions of the sense arising by the restraint and distinction of the words as now pointed, and then turn in the drove of the learned critics of this age upon the naked consonants, and we shall quickly see what woful work, yea, havoc of sacred truth, will be made amongst them. Were they shut up in several cells, I should scarcely expect the harmony and agreement amongst them which is fabulously reported to have been in the like case among the LXX. The Jews say, and that truly, אין איש את לשונו על הקראה בלנקוד לא ירים,—"No man can lift up his tongue to read without punctuation." And, "Si rationi in his et similibus dominium concedamus, toti mutabuntur libri, in literis, vocibus, et sententiis, et sic res ipsa quoque mutabitur," Lib. Cosri. 1, par. 3, p. 28.

And thus have I, with all possible brevity, vindicated the position formerly insisted on from this grand exception, which might be justly feared from the principles laid down in the Prolegomena.

CHAPTER VII.

Of the קְרִי וּכְתִיב, their nature and original—The difference is in the consonants—Morinus' vain charge on Arias Montanus—The senses of both consistent—Of the great congregation—The spring and rise of these various readings—The judgment of the Prolegomena about them—Their order given twice over in the Appendix—The rise assigned to them considered—Of Cappellus, his opinion, and the danger of it.

We are not as yet come to a close. There is another thing agitated in these Prolegomena, and represented in the Appendix, that may seem to derogate from the universality of my assertion concerning the entire preservation of the original copies of the Scripture. The קְרִי וּכְתִיב, or the *scriptio* and *lectio*, or *scriptum* and *lectum*, is that which I intend. The general nature of these things is known to all them that have looked into the Bible. One word is placed in the line and another in the margin, the word in the line having not the points or vowels affixed to it that are its own, but those that belong to the word in the margin. Of this sort there are in the Bible eight hundred and forty, or thereabout; for some of the late editions, by mistake or oversight, do differ in the precise number. All men that have wrote any considerations on the Hebrew text have spoken of their nature in general; so hath the author of these Prolegomena.

As to our present concernment,—namely, to manifest that from them no argument can arise as to the corruption of the original,—the ensuing observations concerning them may suffice:—

1. All the difference in these words is in the consonants, not at all in the vowels. The word in the margin owns the vowels in the line as proper to it, and the vowels in the line seem to be placed to the word whereunto they do not belong, because there is no other meet place for them in the line where they are to be continued, as belonging to the integrity of the Scripture.

Morinus, to manifest his rage against the Hebrew text, takes from hence occasion to quarrel with Arias Montanus, and to accuse him of ignorance and false dealing, De Heb. Text. Sincer., Exer. i. cap. iv. p. 40.

The pretence of his quarrel he makes to be, that Arias affirms the greatest part of these various lections to consist in some differences of the points; for which purpose he cites his words out of his preface to his collection of various lections: "Maxima in his lectionibus varietatis pars in hujusmodi punctorum discrepantia consistit, ut toto hujus Mazzoreth sive variarum lectionum volumine demonstratur." Whereunto he subjoins, "Mira assertio! ne una quidem in punctis sita est. Catalogum plurimorum ipse ad finem præfationis adtexuit. Et varietates omnes sunt in literis, nulla in punctis. Confidentius scribo omnium variarum lectionum quas Judæi appellant קְרִי וּכְתִיב, Keri et Ketib, de quibus agit Arias nulla prorsus ad puncta pertinet. Iterum confidentius," etc. Would not any man think but that the man had made here some *great discovery*, both as to the nature of the קְרִי וּכְתִיב, as also to the ignorance of Arias, whom he goes on to reproach as a person unacquainted with the Masora, and with the various lections of Ben Asher and Ben Naphtali, of the eastern and western Jews, at the end of the Venetian Bibles; which Bibles he chiefly used in the printing of his own? And yet, on the other hand, men acquainted with the ability and great discerning of Arias will be hardly persuaded that he was so blind and ignorant as to affirm the greatest part of the variety he spoke of consisted in the changing of vowels, and immediately to give instances wherein all he mentions consists in the change of consonants only. But what if all this should prove the ignorance and prejudice of Morinus? First, To his redoubled assertion about the difference of the Keri and Ketib in the consonants only,—wherein he speaks as though he were blessing the world with a new and strange discovery,—it is a thing known "lippis et tonsoribus," and hath been so since the days of Elias Levita. What then? Intended Arias Montanus to affirm the contrary?

> "Hic nigri succus loliginis: hæc est
> Ærugo mera."

He speaks not at all of the קְרִי וּכְתִיב, but merely of the anomalous

pointing of words, in a various way from the genius of the tongue, as they are observed and reckoned up in the Masora: of other varieties he speaks afterward, giving a particular account of the Keri and Ketib; which whether he esteemed various lections or no I know not. "Non si te superis æques." But all are ignorant who are not of the mind of an aspiring Jesuit!

2. That the difference in the sense, taking in the whole context, is upon the matter very little, or none at all; at least each word, both that in the line and that in the margin, yields a sense agreeable to the analogy of faith.

Of all the varieties that are found of this kind, that of two words the same in sound, but of most distinct significations, seems of the greatest importance,—namely, לוֹ and לֹא, fourteen or fifteen times; where לֹא, "not," is in the text, the margin notes לוֹ, "to him," or "his," to be read. But yet, though these seem contrary one to the other, wherever this falls out, a sense agreeable to the analogy of faith ariseth fairly from either word: as, to give one or two instances, Ps. c. 3, הוּא עָשָׂנוּ וְלֹא אֲנַחְנוּ,—"He hath made us, and not we ourselves." The Keri in the margin is ולו, "his;" giving this sense, "He hath made us, and his we are," the verb substantive being included in the pronoun. So Isa. lxiii. 9, בְּכָל-צָרָתָם לֹא צָר,—"In all their afflictions (or straits), no straitness:" so the כְּתִיב. The קְרִי [is] לו, "Straitness (or affliction) was to him," or "he was straitened" or "afflicted." In the first way, God signifieth that when they were in their outward straits, yet he was not straitened from their relief; in the other, that he had compassion for them, was afflicted with them, which upon the matter is the same. And the like may be showed of the rest.

I confess I am not able fully to satisfy myself in the original and spring of all this variety, being not willing merely to depend on the testimony of the Jews, much less on the conjectures of late innovators. To the uttermost length of my view, to give a full account of this thing is a matter of no small difficulty. Their venerable antiquity and unquestionable reception by all translators gives them sanctuary from being cast down from the place they hold by any man's bare conjecture. That which to me is of the greatest importance is, that they appear most of them to have been in the Bibles then when the oracles of God were committed to the Jews; during which time we find them not blamed for adding or altering one word or tittle. Hence the Chaldee paraphrast often follows the Keri, which never was in the line, whatever some boastingly conjecture to the contrary; and sometimes the Ketib. That which seems to me most probable is, that they were collected, for the most part of them, by the אנשי כנסת הגדולה, "The men of the great congregation." Some, indeed, I find of late (I hope not out of a design to bring all

things to a further confusion about the original) to question whether ever there were any such thing as the great congregation. Morinus calls it a Judaical figment. Our Prolegomena question it, Proleg. 8, sect. 22. But this is only to question whether Ezra, Nehemiah, Joshua, Zechariah, Haggai, and the rest of the leaders of the people, on their return from the captivity, did set a sanhedrim, according to the institution of God, and labour to reform the church and all the corruptions that were crept either into the word or worship of God. I see not how this can reasonably be called into question, if we had not, to confirm it, the catholic tradition of Jews and Christians. Neither is it called "The great congregation" from its number, but from the eminency of persons. Now, on this supposition it may be granted that the Keri on the books of these men themselves, Ezra and the rest, were collected by the succeeding church; unless we shall suppose, with Ainsworth, that the word was so received from God as to make both necessary. And if we know not the true cause of its being so given, we have nothing to blame but our own ignorance, this not being the only case wherein we have reason so to do. Our last translation generally rendereth the word in the margin, noting also the word in the line, where there is any considerable difference. Those who have leisure for such a work may observe what choice is used in this case by old and modern translators; and if they had not believed them to have had an authoritative original, beyond the impeachment of any man in these days, they could not fairly and honestly have used both line and margin as they have done.

What say now our Prolegomena, with the Appendix, unto these things?

We have them in the Appendix represented unto us in their own order, according as they are found in the books of the Scriptures; and then over again in the order and under the heads that they are drawn and driven unto by Cappellus;—a task that learned man took upon himself, that he might in the performance of it give some countenance to his opinion, that they are, for the most part, critical emendations of the text made by some late Masoretes, that came no man knows whence, that lived no man knows where nor when. Thus, whereas these Keri and Ketib have the only face and appearance upon the matter of various lections upon the Old Testament (for the Jews' collections of the various readings of Ben Asher and Ben Naphtali, of the oriental and occidental Jews, are of no value, nor ever had place in their Bible, and may be rejected), the unwary viewer of the Appendix is presented with a great bulk of them, their whole army being mustered twice over in this service!

But this inconvenience may be easily amended, nor am I concerned in it.

3. Wherefore, thirdly, for the rise of them, it is said that some of them are the amendments of the Masoretes or Rabbins; others, various lections out of divers copies. That they are all, or the most part of them, critical amendments of the Rabbins is not allowed; for which latter part of his determination we thank the learned author, and take leave to say that in the former we are not satisfied. Prol. 8, sect. 23–25, the arguments that are produced to prove them not to have been from Ezra, but the most part from post-Talmudical Rabbins, are capable of a very easy solution, which also another occasion may discover; at present I am gone already too far beyond my intention, so that I cannot allow myself any farther digression.

To answer briefly. Ezra and his companions might be the collectors of all those in the Bible but their own books, and those in their own books might be added by the succeeding church. The oriental and occidental Jews differ about other things as well as the Keri and Ketib. The rule of the Jews, that the Keri is always to be followed, is novel, and therefore the old translators might read either or both as they saw cause. There was no occasion at all why these things should be mentioned by Josephus, Philo, Origen. Jerome says, indeed, on Isa. xlix. 5, that Aquila rendered that word "to him," which is written with ל and א, not ל and ו. But he makes it not appear that Aquila read not as he translated, that is, by the קְרִי. And for what is urged of the Chaldee and LXX. making use of the Keri and Ketib, it is not intended that they knew the difference under these names, but that these differences were in their days. That the word now in the margin was in the line until the days of the pretended Masoretes is not nakedly to be said, but proved, if such a novel fancy expect any credit in the world. That the Judaical Rabbins have made some alterations in the text of their own accord, at least placed words in the margin, as to their consonants, supplying their vowels in the line where they ought not to have place; that there were various lections in the copies after the Talmud, which have been gathered by some obscure Jews, no mention being made of those collections in the Masora or any of their grammarians,—is the sum of the discourse under consideration. When all this, or any part of it, is proved by testimony or evident reason, we shall further attend unto it.

In the meantime, I cannot but rejoice that Cappellus' fancy about these things,—than which I know nothing more pernicious to the truth of God,—is rejected. If these hundreds of words were the critical conjectures and amendments of the Jews, what security have we of the mind of God as truly represented unto us, seeing that it is supposed also that some of the words in the margin were sometimes in the line? And if it be supposed, as it is, that there are innumerable

other places of the like nature standing in need of such amendments, what a door would be opened to curious, pragmatical wits to overturn all the certainty of the truth of the Scripture every one may see. Give once this liberty to the audacious curiosity of men priding themselves in their critical abilities, and we shall quickly find out what woful state and condition the truth of the Scripture will be brought unto. If the Jews have made such amendments and corrections of the text, and that to so good purpose, and if so much work of the like kind yet remain, can any man possibly better employ himself than with his utmost diligence to put his hand to this plough? But he that pulleth down a hedge, a serpent shall bite him.

CHAPTER VIII.

Of gathering various lections by the help of translations—The proper use and benefit of translations—Their new pretended use—The state of the originals on this new pretence—Of the remedy tendered to the relief of that state—No copies of old differing in the least from those we now enjoy, inferred from the testimony of our Saviour—No testimony, new or old, to that purpose—Requisites unto good translations—Of the translations in the Biblia Polyglotta—Of the Arabic—Of the Syriac—Of the Samaritan Pentateuch—Of the Chaldee Paraphrase—Of the Vulgar Latin—Of the Septuagint—The translations of the New Testament—Of the Persian—Of the Ethiopian—The value of these translations as to the work in hand—Of the supposition of gross corruption in the originals—Of various lections out of Grotius—Of the Appendix in general.

BECAUSE it is the judgment of some, that yet other objections may be raised against the thesis pleaded for, from what is affirmed in the Prolegomena about gathering various lections by the help of translations, and the instances of that good work given us in the Appendix, I shall close this discourse with the consideration of that pretence.

The great and signal use of *various translations,* which hitherto we have esteemed them for, was the help afforded by them in expositions of the Scripture. To have represented unto us in one view the several apprehensions and judgments of so many worthy and learned men as were the authors of these translations, upon the original words of the Scripture, is a signal help and advantage unto men inquiring into the mind and will of God in his word. That translations were of any other use formerly was not apprehended. They are of late presented unto us under another notion,—namely, as means and helps of correcting the original, and finding out the corruptions that are in our present copies, showing that the copies which their authors used did really differ from those which we now enjoy

and use! For this rare invention we are, as for the former, chiefly beholden to the learned and most diligent Cappellus; who is followed, as in sundry instances himself declares, by the no less learned Grotius. To this purpose the scene is thus laid: It is supposed [that] of old *there were sundry copies of the Old Testament differing in many things, words, sentences, from those we now enjoy.* Out of these copies some of the ancient translations have been made. In their translations they express the sense and meaning of the copies they made use of. Hence, by considering what they deliver, where they differ from our present copies, we may find out (that is, learned men, who are expert at conjectures, may do so) how they read in theirs. Thus may we come to a further discovery of the various corruptions that are crept into the Hebrew text, and by the help of those translations amend them. Thus Cappellus. The learned author of our Prolegomena handles this business, Proleg. 6. I do not remember that he anywhere expressly affirms that they had *other copies* than those we now enjoy; but whereas (besides the Keri and Ketib, the various readings of Ben Asher and Ben Naphtali, of the eastern and western Jews) there are, through the neglect, oscitancy, and frailty of the transcribers, many things befallen the text,—not such failings as, happening in one copy, may be easily rectified by others, which are not to be regarded as various lections, nor such as may be collected out of any ancient copies, but faults or mistakes in all the copies we enjoy, or that have ever been known,—by the help and use of translations, conjecturing how they read in their books, either with other words or letters, consonants or points, we may collect various lections as out of the original. What this opinion upon the matter differeth from that of Cappellus I see not, for the difference between our copies and those of old are by him assigned to no other original; nor doth Cappellus say that the Jews have voluntarily corrupted the text, but only that alterations are befallen it by the means and ways recounted in the Prolegomena. To make this evident by instances, we have a great number of such various lections, gathered by Grotius, in the Appendix. The truth is, how that volume should come under that name, at first view I much wondered. The greatest part of it gives us no various lections of the Hebrew text, as is pretended, but various interpretations of others from the Hebrew. But the Prolegomena solve that seeming difficulty. The particulars assigned as various lections are not different readings, collected out of any *copies extant,* or ever known to have been extant, but *critical conjectures* of his own for the amendment of the text, or at most conjectures upon the reading of the words by translators, especially the LXX. and Vulgar Latin.

Let us now consider our disease intimated, and the remedy pre-

scribed, together with the improbability of the one and the unsuitableness of the other as to the removal of it, being once supposed. The distemper pretended is dreadful, and such as may well prove mortal to the sacred truth of the Scripture. The sum of it, as was declared before, is, "That of old there were *sundry copies extant*, differing in many things from those we now enjoy, according to which the ancient translations were made, whence it is come to pass that in so many places they differ from our present Bibles, even all that are extant in the world;" so Cappellus;—or, "That there are corruptions befallen the text (varieties from the αὐτόγραφα) that may be found by the help of translations;" as our Prolegomena.

Now, whereas the *first translation* that ever was, as is pretended, is that of the LXX., and that, of all others, excepting only those which have been translated out of it, doth most vary and differ from our Bible, as may be made good by some thousands of instances, we cannot but be exceedingly uncertain in finding out wherein those copies which, as it is said, were used by them, did differ from ours, or wherein ours are corrupted, but are left unto endless uncertain conjectures. What sense others may have of this distemper I know not; for my own part, I am solicitous for the ark, or the sacred truth of the original, and that because I am fully persuaded that the remedy and relief of this evil provided in the translations is unfitted to the cure, yea, fitted to increase the disease. Some other course, then, must be taken; and seeing the remedy is notoriously insufficient to effect the cure, let us try whether the whole distemper be not a mere fancy, and so do what in us lieth to prevent that horrible and outrageous violence which will undoubtedly be offered to the sacred Hebrew verity, if every learned mountebank may be allowed to practise upon it with his conjectures from translations.

1. It is well known that the translation of the LXX., if it have the original pretended, and which alone makes it considerable, was made and finished three hundred years, or near thereabout, before the incarnation of our Saviour. It was in that time and season wherein the oracles of God were committed to the Jews, whilst that church and people were the only people of God, accepted with him, designed by him keepers of his word for the use of the whole church of Christ to come, as the great and blessed foundation of truth,—a time when there was an authentic copy of the whole Scripture, as the rule of all others, kept in the temple. Now, can it be once imagined that there should be at that time such notorious varieties in the copies of the Scripture, through the negligence of that church, and yet afterward neither our Saviour nor his apostles take the least notice of it? Yea, doth not our Saviour himself affirm of the word that then was among the Jews, that not ἰῶτα ἓν or μία κεραία of it

should pass away or perish? where, let not the points, but the consonants themselves with their apices, be intended or alluded unto in that expression: yet of that word, which was translated by the LXX., according to this hypothesis, and which assuredly they then had, if ever, not only tittles and letters, but words, and that many, are concluded to be lost. But that no Jew believes the figment we are in the consideration of, I could say, "Credat Apella."

2. Waiving the consideration of our refuge in these cases, namely, the good providence and care of God in the preservation of his word, let the authors of this insinuation prove the assertion, namely, that there was ever in the world any other copy of the Bible, differing in any one word from those that we now enjoy; let them produce one testimony, one author of credit, Jew or Christian, that can, or doth, or ever did, speak one word to this purpose; let them direct us to any relic, any monument, any kind of remembrancer of them,—and not put us off with weak conjectures upon the signification of one or two words, and it shall be of weight with us. Is it meet that a matter of so huge importance, called into question by none but themselves, should be cast and determined by their conjectures? Do they think that men will part with the possession of truth upon so easy terms? that they will be cast from their inheritance by divination? But they will say, "Is it not evident that the old translators did make use of other copies, in that we see how they have translated many words and places, so as it was not possible they should have done had they rendered our copy according to what we now read?" But will this indeed be pleaded? May it not be extended to all places as well as to any? and may not men plead so for every variation made by the LXX. from the original, that they had other copies than any that now are extant? Better all old translations should be consumed out of the earth than that such a figment should be admitted. That there are innumerable other reasons to be assigned of the variations from the original,—as the translators' own inadvertency, negligence, ignorance (for the wisest see not all), desire to expound and clear the sense, and, as it was likely, of altering and varying many things from the original, with the innumerable corruptions and interpolations that have befallen that translation, indifferently well witnessed unto by the various lections exhibited in the Appendix,—it were easy to manifest. Seeing, then, that neither the care of God over his truth, nor the fidelity of the Judaical church whilst the oracles of God were committed thereunto, will permit us to entertain the least suspicion that there was ever in the world any copy of the Bible differing in the least from that which we enjoy, or that those we have are corrupted, as is pretended; and seeing that the authors of that insinuation cannot produce the least testimony to make it good, μένωμεν

ὥσπερ ἐσμὲν, through the mercy and goodness of God, in the entire, *unquestionable possession* of his oracles once committed to the Jews, and the faith therein once committed to the saints.

But now, to suppose that such indeed hath been the condition of the holy Bible in its originals as is pretended, let us consider whether any relief in this case be to be expected from the translations exhibited unto us, with much pains, care, and diligence, in these Biblia Polyglotta, and so at once determine that question, whether this be any part of the use of translations, be they ever so ancient, namely, to correct the originals by, leaving further discussion of sundry things in and about them to other exercitations.

That all or any translation may be esteemed *useful* for this purpose, I suppose without any contention it will be granted,—1. That we be certain concerning them that they are *translated out of the originals themselves*, and not out of the interpretations of them that went before them; for if that appear, all their authority as to the business inquired after falls to the ground, or is at best resolved into that former whence they are taken, if they are at agreement therewith; otherwise they are a thing of naught. And this one consideration will be found to lay hold of one moiety of these translations. 2. That they be of venerable *antiquity*, so as to be made when there were other copies of the original in the world besides that which we now enjoy. 3. That they be known to be made by men of *ability and integrity*, sound in the faith, and conscientiously careful not to add or detract from the originals they made the translation out of. If all these things at least concur not in a translation, it is most undeniably evident that it can be of no use to assist in the finding out what corruptions have befallen our copies, and what is the true lection of any place about which any differences do arise. Let us, then, as without any prejudice in ourselves, so without, I hope, any offence to others, very briefly consider the state and condition of the translations given us in the Biblia Polyglotta as to the qualifications here laid down.

Let us, then, take a view of some of the chiefest of them, without observing any order, seeing there is no more reason for that which is laid down in this Appendix than for any other that may be fixed on. I shall begin with the ARABIC, for the honour I bear to the renownedly learned publisher[1] of it and the various lections of the several copies thereof; and the rather because he hath dealt herein with his wonted candour, giving in a clear and learned account of the original and nature of that translation; which I had, for the sub-

[1] Dr Edward Pococke, born 1604; rector of Childrey, Berkshire, in 1643; professor of Hebrew in Oxford; one of Walton's assistants in the preparation of the Polyglott, and one of the most accomplished scholars of his time.—ED.

stance of it, received from him in a discourse before, wherein also he gave me a satisfactory account concerning some other translations, which I shall not need now to mention, though I shall only say his judgment in such things is to be esteemed at least equal with [that of] any now alive.

First, then, he tells us upon the matter that this translation is *a cento*, made up of many ill-suited pieces,[1] there being no translation in that language extant. I speak of the Old Testament. 2. For the antiquity of the most ancient part of it, [it] was made about the year 4700 of the Jews' account, that is, of Christ 950.[2] 3. It was, as to the Pentateuch, translated by R. Saadias Haggaon. 4. That it is interpreted [interpolated?] and changed in sundry things by some other person. 5. That he who made these changes seemed to have so done that he might the better thereby δουλεύειν ὑποθέσει, as to some particular opinion of his own; whereof sundry instances are given. 6. That he seems to have been a Mohammedan, or at least much to have favoured them, as appears from other evidences, so from the inscription of his work with that solemn motto, taken out of the Koran, "In nomine Dei miseratoris, misericordia." 7. It may be thought, also, that some other, a Jew or a Samaritan, had his hand in corrupting the last translation, 8. who thought to stamp a divine authority upon his particular opinions. 9. That the foundation of this translation, now printed, being that of Saadias, it is observable that he professeth that he did both *add* and *detract* according as he thought meet, that so he might set out the hidden, cabalistical understanding of the Scripture. 10. That the other Arabic translations that are extant are out of the Septuagint, either immediately or by the Syriac, which was translated out of it. On these and the like heads doth that oracle of the eastern learning—who hath not only, as some, learned the words of some of those languages, but searched with great diligence and judgment into the nature of the learning extant in them, and the importance of the books we have—discourse in that preface. It is the way of sciolists, when they have obtained a little skill in any language or science, to persuade the world that all worth and wisdom lie therein: men thoroughly learned, and whose learning is regulated by a sound judgment, know that the true use of their abilities consists in the true suiting of men to a clear acquaintance with truth. In that kind, not only in this particular are we beholden to this worthy, learned person.

[1] Pococke's statement was, that this translation was not all made by one author, or directly from the Hebrew, but partly out of the Hebrew, partly out of the Syriac, and partly out of the Septuagint.—Ed.

[2] It was of the translation of the Pentateuch by Saadias that Pococke had affirmed that it had been executed about A.D. 950. Owen seems to refer to the most ancient part of the *Old Testament;* Walton writes as if Owen had spoken of the most ancient part of the *translation.*—Ed.

I suppose there will not need much arguing to prove that this translation, though exceeding useful in its own place and kind, yet is not in the least a fit remedy to relieve us against any pretended corruption in the original, or to gather various lections different from our present copy by. Well may it exercise the ability of learned men to consider wherein and how often it goes off from the rule of faith; but rule in itself and upon its own account, coming short of all the necessary qualifications laid down before, it is none.

Should I now go to gather instances of the failings of this translation, open and gross, and so proceed with the rest, I think I might make a volume near as big as that of the various lections now afforded us; but I have another manner of account to give of my hours than so to spend them.

Whether the SYRIAC translation be any fitter for this use, any one who shall be pleased to consider and weigh it will easily discover. It seems, indeed, to have been made out of the original, at least for some part of it, or that the translation of the LXX. hath been in many things changed since this was made (which I rather suppose); but when,[1] where, or by whom, doth not appear; nor doth it in many things seem to have any respect at all unto the Hebrew. The note at the close of the Prophets I suppose to proceed rather from the scribe of that individual copy than the translator; but that the reader may see what hands it hath passed through, he may take it as it is rendered by the learned author of the annotations on that translation: "Explicit Malachias sive libri xii. prophetarum, quorum oratio perpetuo nobis adsit, Amen; precibusque ipsorum, precibusque omnium sanctorum, sodalium ipsorum præsertim virginis, quæ Deum peperit, omnium sanctorum matris quæ pro genere Adami intercedit, propitius sit Deus lectori et scriptori peccatori, et omnibus sive verbo sive opere, ipsis participantibus." But this good conclusion is, as I suppose, from the scribe; the usual negligence of whom in his work is frequently taxed in the collection of various readings, as page 8, *et alibi.*

Now, though I confess this translation to be very useful in many things, and to follow the original for the most part, yet being made as yet I know neither when nor by whom, in sundry places evidently following another corrupt translation, and having passed through the hands of men ignorant and suspicious, against whose frauds and folly, by reason of the paucity of copies, we have no relief, I

[1] The reference is to the old Syriac or Peshito; a name derived from the Chaldee פְּשִׁיטָא, *simple* or *single*. Though Walton complained bitterly of the statement of Owen, yet the date of the version has been long matter of controversy among the learned, Michaelis ascribing to it high antiquity, Marsh questioning the conclusiveness of his arguments, and Laurence unsuccessfully attempting to refute the bishop. It is thought to belong to the end of the second or beginning of the third century.—ED.

question whether it may be esteemed of any great use or importance as to the end inquired after.[1]

Of the SAMARITAN PENTATEUCH, both original and translation, we shall not need to add much. What the people from whom it hath its denomination were is known; nor have the inquiries of Scaliger and Morinus added any thing to what is vulgarly known of them from the Scripture and Josephus. In a word, an idolatrous, superstitious, wicked people they were, before they were subdued by Hyrcanus; afterward they continued in the separation from the true church of God; and, upon the testimony of our Saviour, had not salvation among them. When they received their Pentateuch is uncertain; it is uncertain also how long they kept it. That they corrupted it whilst they had it is not uncertain; they are charged to have done so by the Jews in the Talmud, and the instance they give abides to this day, Deut. xi. 30. They have added "Sichem" to the text, to give countenance to their abominations. And openly, in Deut. xxvii. 4, where God gives a command that an altar should be set up on mount Ebal, they have wickedly and nefariously corrupted the text, and put in Gerizim. Now, one such voluntary corruption, made on set purpose to countenance a sin and false worship, is enough to lay low the authority of any copy whatever. The copy here printed was brought out of the east, from Damascus, not long since. "It appears to have been two hundred and thirty years old," saith Morinus in the account of it, Opusc. Samar. Præfat. ad Translat. Samarit. As I said before, that any Samaritans do as yet remain is uncertain; some few Jews there are that walk in that way, here and there a few families. Now, that this Pentateuch, which was never as such committed to the church of God, that had its rise no man knows by whom, and that hath been preserved no man knows how, known by few, used by none of the ancient Christians, that hath been voluntarily corrupted by men of corrupt minds, to countenance them in their folly, should be of any authority, upon its own single account, to any end or purpose, especially to vie with the Hebrew text, men that have not some design that they publicly own not will scarce contend. The places instanced in by Morinus[2] to prove its integrity above the Hebrew copy, as to the solution of difficulties by it, in Gen. xi. 29, 31, Exod. xii. 40, do evidently prove it corrupt. Any man that will consider them will find the alterations purposely made

[1] A statement that must be qualified, Michaelis pronouncing it "the very best translation of the Greek Testament he ever read;" and Dr Davidson affirming, "It is far from being as accurate or as uniformly good as it might have been," but always to be "consulted as an important document in the criticism and interpretation of the New Testament." The testimony of the latter author as to the value of the Old Testament according to this version is equally decided: "In point of fidelity, it is the best of all the ancient versions."—ED.

[2] Morin. cap. i. exer. 4.

to avoid the difficulties in those places; which is one common evidence of corruption. In Gen. xi. 31, sixty years are cut off from the life of Terah, to make the chronology agree; and that of Exod. xii. 40, "The dwelling of the children of Israel and their fathers, when they dwelt in the land of Canaan and in the land of Egypt, was four hundred and thirty years," is a plain comment or exposition on the text. Nor would Jerome, who had this copy, make any use of it in these difficulties. Might I go over the rest of Morinus' instances, whereby he seeks to credit his Samaritan copy, which we have in these Biblia Polyglotta, I could manifest that there is scarce one of them but yields a clear argument of corruption in it, upon some of the best grounds that we have to judge of the sincerity or corruption of any copy. And if this Pentateuch had been of any credit of old, it would not have been omitted, yea, as it seems, utterly rejected as a thing of nought, by Origen, in his diligent collection of the original and versions.[1]

But we are in a way and business wherein all things are carried to and fro by conjectures; and it were no hard task to manifest the utter uncertainty of what is fixed on as the original of this Pentateuch by the author of the Prolegomena, or to re-enforce those conjectures which he opposeth; but that is not my present work, nor do I know that ever it will be so. But I must for the present say, that I could have been glad that he had refrained the close of his discourse, sect. 2, wherein, from the occasional mention of the Samaritan Liturgy, and the pretended antiquity of it, he falls, not without some bitterness of spirit, on those who have laid aside the English Service-book. It were not (in the judgment of some) imprudently done, to reserve a triumph over the sectaries to some more considerable victory than any [that] is to be hoped [for] from the example of the Samaritans. Were they all barbers, and porters, and alehouse-keepers, yet they might easily discern that the example and precedent of a wicked people, forsaken of God, and forsaking of him, to whom the promise of the Spirit of supplications was never made, nor he bestowed upon them, is not cogent unto the people of Christ under the new testament, who have the promise made good unto them. And much more unto the same purpose will some of them be found to say, when men of wisdom and learning, who are able to instruct them, shall condescend personally so to do. But I shall forbear what might further be spoken.

The CHALDEE Paraphrase is *a cento* also. The Targum of Jonathan

[1] It is now beyond all question that Owen's estimate of the value of the Samaritan Pentateuch, for the purposes of critical emendation, was correct. Since the dissertation of Gesenius, "De Pentateuchi Samaritani Origine," etc., "its credit in the critical world," says Dr Davidson, "has been greatly lowered, its position as an authority depreciated far below the rank which several eminent scholars once gave it."—ED.

is ancient, so also is that of Onkelos; they are supposed to have been made before or about the time of our Saviour. Some of the Jews would have Jonathan to have lived not long after Ezra; others [say] that he was the chief disciple of Hillel, about a hundred years before Christ's incarnation; some are otherwise minded, and will not own it to be much older than the Talmud: but as yet I see no grounds sufficient to overthrow the received opinion. The other parts of the Scripture were paraphrased at several times, some above five hundred years after our Saviour, and are full of Talmudical fancies, if not fables; as that on the Canticles. That all these Targums are of excellent use is confessed; and we are beholden to the Biblia Polyglotta for representing them in so handsome an order and place, that with great facility they may be compared with the original. But as to the end under consideration, how little advantage is from hence to be obtained, these few ensuing observations will evince:—1. It was never the aim of those paraphrasts to render the original text exactly *verbum de verbo*, but to represent the sense of the text according as it appeared to their judgment. Hence it is impossible to give any true account how they read in any place wherein they dissent from our present copies, since their endeavour was to give us the sense as they thought, rather than the bare and naked importance of the words themselves. Hence Elias saith of them, והנה המתרגמים לא שמרו לפעמים דרך הדקדוק,—"Behold, the Targumists observed not sometimes the way of grammar." 2. It is evident that all the Targums agreed to give us often mystical senses, especially the latter, and so were necessitated to go off from the letter of the text. 3. It is evident that they have often made additions of whole sentences to the Scripture, even the best of them, from their own apprehensions or corrupt traditions, whereof there is not one tittle or syllable in the Scripture, nor ever was. 4. What careful hands it hath passed through, the bulky collection of various lections given in this Appendix doth abundantly manifest. And seeing it hath not lain under any peculiar care and merciful providence of God, whether innumerable other faults and errors, not to be discovered by any variety of copies (as it is happened with the Septuagint), may not be got into it, who can tell? Of these and the like things we shall have a fuller account when the "Babylonia" of Buxtorf the father (promised some while since by the son to be published, Vindic. Veritat. Heb. p. 2, c. x. p. 337, and, as we are informed by the learned annotator on this Paraphrase, in his preface in the Appendix, lately sent to the publishers of this Bible) shall be put out. So that we have not as yet arrived at the remedy provided for the supposed distemper.

Of the VULGAR LATIN, its uncertain original, its corruptions and

barbarisms, its abuse, so much hath been spoken, and by so many already, that it were to no purpose to repeat it over again. For my part, I esteem it much the best in the whole collection exhibited unto us, excepting the interlineary of Arias; but not to be compared to sundry modern translations, and very unfit to yield the relief sought after.

The SEPTUAGINT is that which must bear the weight of the whole. And good reason there is, indeed, that it should answer for the most of the rest, they being evidently taken out of it, and so they are oftentimes worse; yet they are now better than that is. But here again all things are exceedingly uncertain; nothing almost is manifest concerning it but that it is wofully corrupt. Its rise is uncertain. Some call the whole story of that translation into question as though there had never been any such persons in *rerum natura*. The circumstances that are reported about them and their works are certainly fabulous. That they should be sent for upon the advice of Demetrius Phalereus, who was dead before, that they should be put into seventy-two cells or private chambers, that there should be twelve of each tribe fit for that work, are all of them incredible.[1] See Scal. ad Euseb. fol. 123; Wouwer Syntag. cap. xi.

Some of the Jews say that they made the translation out of a corrupt Chaldee paraphrase; and to me this seems not unlikely. Josephus, Austin, Philo, Jerome, Zonaras, affirm that they translated the Law or Pentateuch only. Josephus affirms this expressly: Οὐδὲ γὰρ, saith he, πᾶσαν ἐκεῖνος ἔφθη λαβεῖν τὴν ἀναγραφὴν, ἀλλ' αὐτὰ μόνα τὰ τοῦ νόμου παρέδοσαν οἱ πεμφθέντες ἐπὶ τὴν ἐξήγησιν, Procem. ad Antiquit. And this is a received opinion; whence we have the rest is unknown. Take to this purpose the ensuing chapter out of Drusius, Observat. lib. vi. cap. ix.:—

"Vulgatam translationem Græcam non esse LXX. interpretum, contra, quam olim existimatum fuit.

"Translatio ea quæ vulgo apud Græcos habetur, quin LXX. interpretum non sit, nemini hodie dubium esse arbitror nam si nihil aliud, innumeri in ea loci sunt, qui arguunt magnam imperitiam sermonis Ebraici; sed et negligentiam singularem in legendo, et oscitantiam tantis viris indignam qui in ea editione non videt, nihil videt; etsi Eusebius, Hieronymus passim in monumentis suis eam Septuaginta interpretibus attribuere videtur. Nos quoque cum aliquid inde proferimus usitato magis quam vero nomine utimur, exemplo videlicet Hieronymi, quem suspicamur, licet crederet interpretationem eam a viris illis elaboratam minime fuisse, ne offenderet Græcos voluisse

[1] On this point the good sense of Owen had fairly the better of the learning of Walton, who believed and defended the whole fable of Aristeas in regard to the origin of the Septuagint: see Proleg. ix. 18.—ED.

tamen recepto nomine semper appellare. Certe quin dubitaverit super iisdem authoribus, nihil dubitamus, nam vel hoc nos in ea opinione confirmat, quod scribit Josephum, omnemque adeo scholam Judæorum quinque tantum libros Mosis a Septuaginta interpretibus translatos esse asserere, scribit autem hoc non semel, sed sæpius, ut Ezech. v. pag. 343, et pag. 301 et 372 et Mich. ii. pag. 150. Libris Antwerpiæ vulgatis."

Let it be granted that such a translation was made, and that of the whole Bible, by some Alexandrian Jews, as is most probable, yet it is certain that the *αὐτόγραφον* of it, if left in the library of Alexandria, was consumed to ashes in Cæsar's wars; though Chrysostom tells us that the Prophets were placed in the temple of Serapis: *Μέχρι νῦν ἐκεῖ τῶν προφητῶν αἱ ἑρμηνευθεῖσαι βίβλοι μένουσιν*, Ad Judæos; "and they abide there," saith he, "unto this day." How unlikely this is any man may guess, by what Jerome, who made another manner of inquiry after those things than Chrysostom, affirms concerning the incurable various copies of that translation wanting an umpire of their differences. We know also what little exactness men in those days, before the use of grammar, attained in the knowledge of languages in their relation to one another; and some learned men do much question even the skill of those interpreters. So Munster. Præfat. ad Biblia, "Videbat Hieronymus vir pius et doctus, Latinos vera et genuina legis atque prophetarum destitutos lectione, nam LXX. interpretum editio, quæ tunc ubique locorum receptissima erat apud Græcos et Latinos nedum perperam plerisque in locis versa fuit, verum per scriptores atque scribas plurimum corrupta, id quod et hodie facile patet conferenti editionem illam juxta Hebraicam veritatem, ut interim fatear illos non admodum peritos fuisse linguæ Hebraicæ id vel quod inviti cogimur fateri, alioquin in plurimis locis non tam fœde lapsi fuissent."

If, moreover, the ability be granted, what security have we of their *principles* and *honesty?* Cardinal Ximenes, in his preface to the edition of the Complutensian Bibles, tells us (that which is most true, if the translation we have be theirs) that on sundry accounts they took liberty in translating according to their own mind; and thence concludes, "Unde translatio Septuaginta duum, quandoque est superflua quandoque diminuta;"—"it is sometimes superfluous, sometimes wanting." But suppose all these uncertainties might be overlooked, yet the intolerable corruptions that (as is on all hands confessed) have crept into the translation make it altogether useless as to the end we are inquiring after. This Jerome in his Epistle to Chromatius at large declares, and shows from thence the necessity of a new translation. Yea, Bellarmine himself says, that though he believes the translation of the LXX. to be still extant, yet it is so

corrupt and vitiated that it plainly appears to be another, lib. ii. De Verbo Dei, cap. vi.

He that shall read and consider what Jerome hath written of this translation, even then when he was excusing himself, and condescending to the utmost to waive the envy that was coming on him upon his new translation, in the second book of his Apology against Rufinus, cap. viii. ix., repeating and mollifying what he had spoken of it in another place, will be enabled in some measure to guess of what account it ought to be with us. In brief, he tells us it is corrupted, interpolated, mingled by Origen with that of Theodotion, marked with asterisks and obelisks; that there were so many copies of it, and they so varying, that no man knew what to follow (he tells us of a learned man who on that account interpreted all the errors he could light on for Scripture); that in the book of Job, take away what was added to it by Origen, or is marked by him, and little will be left. His discourse is too long to transcribe. See also his Epistle to Chromatius at large to this purpose. Let the reader also consult the learned Masius, in his preface to his most learned Comment on Joshua.

For the translations of the New Testament that are here afforded us, little need be spoken. Of the antiquity, usefulness, and means of bringing the Syriac into Europe, an account hath been given by many, and we willingly acquiesce in it. The ETHIOPIAN and PERSIAN are novel things, of little use or value; yea, I suppose it may safely be said they are the worst and most corrupt that are extant in the world. The Persian was not translated out of the Greek, as is confessed by the learned annotator upon it, "Præsens locus satis arguit, Persam Græcum codicem haud consuluisse," in Luc. x. et 41. Yea, in how many things he goes off from the Greek, Syriac, Arabic, yea, goes directly contrary to the truth, is both acknowledged by its publisher and is manifest from the thing itself. I know no use of it but only to show that such a useless thing is in the world.[1] Nor is the Ethiopian one whit better,—a novel endeavour of an illiterate person. He tells us that John, when he wrote the Revelation, was archbishop of Constantia, or Constantinople, etc. It is to no purpose to go over the like observations that might be made on these translations; if any man hath a mind to be led out of the way, he may do well to attend unto them. Whether some of them be in use now in the world I know not; I am sure it is well if they be not. Had I not seen them, I could not have imagined any had

[1] "The criticism of the New Testament should discard all Persian versions as worthless," Dr Davidson, Bib. Crit. ii. 222. In regard to the Ethiopic, no great value is attached to it by modern critics, as there is great uncertainty about its origin, and its text has never been very correctly printed.—ED.

been so bad. Would I make it my business to give instances of the mistakes, ignorance, falsifications, errors, and corruptions of these translators, whoever they were (Jews or Christians, for I am not without some ground of thinking that Jews have had their hands in them for money), my discourse, as I said before, would swell into a volume; and, unless necessitated, I shall avoid it.

From what hath been spoken, it may abundantly appear that if there are indeed such corruptions, mistakes, and errors, crept into the original, as some have pretended, there is no relief in the least provided for the security of truth by any of the translations exhibited unto us in these late editions of the Bible, themselves being of an uncertain original, corrupt, and indeed of no authority from themselves, but merely from their relation to that whose credit is called in question. For my own part, as I said before, I allow them their proper use and place, and am thankful to them by whose care and pains we are made partakers of them; but to endeavour by them to correct the Scripture,—to gather various lections out of the original, as say others,—for my part I abhor the thought of it; let others do as seems good unto them. And if ever I be necessitated to speak in particular of these translations, there are yet in readiness further discoveries to be made of them.[1]

There remains only, as to my purpose in hand, that some brief account be taken of what is yet further insinuated of the liberty to observe various lections in the Bible, upon supposition of *gross corruptions* that may be crept into it; as also of the specimen of various lections gathered out of Grotius' Annotations; and somewhat of the whole bulk of them as presented unto us in the Appendix.

[1] On the important question of the value of ancient translations in criticism, it is right the modern reader should not be misled. That they are of value, not for the criticism, but the interpretation of the Scriptures, is the position of our author. It cannot be defended; and the language in which he objects to these versions is too unqualified, although on some points his objections were not destitute of weight, and have been confirmed by subsequent inquiries. On this subject,—the use of versions in criticism,—we may cite the opinion of the most recent authority, Dr Davidson, in his valuable work on Biblical Criticism. Speaking of the principal versions of the Old Testament,—the Septuagint, the fragments of the other Greek translators, the Peshito or old Syriac, the Latin of Jerome, the Targums of Jonathan and Onkelos, and the Arabic of Saadias Haggaon,—he remarks, in regard to the supposition that they exhibit the text prior to all existing manuscripts, "They do without doubt render this important service *partially*. Their use in the criticism of the Old Testament is great. We have no other aids of equal value, provided they be rightly applied. Yet they do not give an *exact* and *complete* view of the original text, as it was at the time of their origin. They do not yield that important service to sacred literature which they might have done."

On the subject of New Testament versions he observes, "No benefit has accrued from extending the range of investigation in this quarter. Rather has there been disadvantage. . . . . The Arabic versions of the New Testament ought to be neglected. They are useless. The same may be said of the Persian." The versions which he regards as sources of criticism are the Syriac, Latin, Egyptian, Ethiopic, and Gothic.—Ed.

For the corruptions supposed, I could heartily wish that learned men would abstain from such insinuations, unless they are able to give them some pretence by instances. It is not spoken of this or that copy, which, by the error of the scribes or printers, may have important mistakes found in it. There is no need of men's critical abilities to rectify such mistakes; other copies are at hand for their relief. It is of the text, without such suppositions, that this insinuation is made. Now, to cast scruples into the minds of men about the integrity and sincerity of that, without sufficient ground or warrant, is surely not allowable. It is not good to deal so with *men* or their writings, much less with *the word of God.* Should any man write that in case of such a man's theft or murder, who is a man of unspotted reputation, it were good to take such or such a course with him, and publish it to the world, would their stirring of such rumours be looked on as an honest, Christian, and candid course of proceeding? And is it safe to deal so with the Scripture? I speak of Protestants. For Papists, who are grown bold in the opposition to the originals of the Scripture, I must needs say that I look upon them as effectually managing a design of Satan to draw men into atheism; nor, in particular, do I account Morinus' Exercitations one whit better. It is readily acknowledged that there are many difficult places in the Scripture, especially in the historical books of the Old Testament. Some of them have by some been looked at as ἄλυτα. The industry of learned men of old, and of late Jews and Christians, has been well exercised in the interpretation and reconciliation of them: by one or other a fair and probable account is given of them all. Where we cannot reach the utmost depth of truth, it hath been thought meet that poor worms should captivate their understandings to the truth and authority of God in his word. If there be this liberty once given, that they may be looked on as corruptions, and amended at the pleasure of men, how we shall be able to stay before we come to the bottom of questioning the whole Scripture I know not. That, then, which yet we insist upon is, that according to all rules of equal procedure, men are to prove such corruptions before they entertain us with their provision of means for remedy.

For the specimen of various lections gathered out of Grotius' Annotations, I shall not much concern myself therein; they are nothing less than various lections of that learned man's own observations. Set aside, 1. The various lections of the Septuagint, [of the] Vulgar Latin, [and] of Symmachus, Aquila, and Theodotion, wherein we are not concerned; 2. The Keri and Ketib, which we have oftentimes over and over in this volume; 3. The various readings of the oriental and occidental Jews, which we have also elsewhere; 4. Conjectures how the Septuagint and Vulgar Latin read, by altering letters only;

5. Conjectures of his own how the text may be mended,—and a very little room will take up what remains. By that cursory view I have taken of them, I see not one word that can pretend to be a various lection, unless it belong to the Keri and Ketib, or the difference between the oriental and the occidental Jews: so that, as I said before, as to my present design, I am not at all concerned in that collection; those that are may further consider it.

As short an account will serve for the general consideration of the whole bulky collection of various lections that we have here presented unto us. For those of the several translations, we are not at all concerned in them; where any or all of them fail or are corrupted, we have a rule, blessed be God, preserved to rectify them by. For those of the originals, I have spoken to them in particular. I shall only add, that we have some of them, both from the Old and New Testament, given us thrice over at least; many of the Keri and Ketib, after a double service done by them, are given us again the third time by Grotius; so also are those of the New Testament by the same Grotius and Lucas Brugensis.

PRO SACRIS SCRIPTURIS

ADVERSUS HUJUS TEMPORIS FANATICOS

EXERCITATIONES APOLOGETICÆ QUATUOR.

OXONII: 1658.

PREFATORY NOTE.

THE following dissertations seem to have been prepared and printed in 1658, though published along with the two preceding treatises in 1659. Owen was anxious to prevent the spread of Quakerism in the University of Oxford; and, as addressed to the members and students of that university, the dissertations were written in Latin. Walton, in his reply to our author's "Considerations" on the London Polyglott, took occasion to insinuate that the reason why the other two treatises had appeared in English was, that an odium might be excited against the Polyglott on points on which he and Owen were at issue, and on which the common people could not be fit judges. The allegation seems groundless. Meek and self-denied as the Friends are generally accounted, they resented keenly the weighty reasonings of Owen: and one of their number, Samuel Fisher, replied to him in "The Rustic's Alarm to the Rabbis,"—a publication overflowing in its very title-page with arrogance and self-conceit. It will be found that the reasonings of our author on the dogmas of the Quakers are by no means antiquated; and perhaps it would be difficult to specify a clearer statement and more effective refutation of them.

ANALYSIS.

I. The first dissertation relates to the question, whether sacred Scripture actually is, and may be properly termed, THE WORD OF GOD.

Two points are involved in this question,—the *character* and the *name* of Scripture. In regard to the former, our author contents himself with asserting the divine origin of Scripture, in opposition to infidels of every class; and proceeds, in opposition more especially to the tenets of the Society of Friends, to vindicate the propriety with which Scripture is commonly styled "The Word of God." They are represented as holding that Christ is called the Word, and that, as Scripture is neither Christ nor internal light from Christ, it cannot, in strict and accurate language, bear this designation.

The threefold meaning of Λόγος τοῦ Θεοῦ is first considered, as ὑποστατικός, ἐνδιάθετος, and προφορικός,—the first relating to Christ personally, the second to the exercise and manifestation of the divine power, and the third to Scripture as expressive of the divine will. Various errors respecting the Λόγος are traced to the desire of the early Christian apologists to recommend the Christian system to their heathen persecutors, on the ground that analogous doctrines were sometimes broached in the writings of heathen philosophers. Instances and proofs are supplied, and the Λόγος Θεοῦ οὐσιώδης is carefully discriminated from the Platonic Νοῦς.

It is shown that Scripture is the Word of God,—1. Because it derives its origin from him; 2. Because it contains the revelation of his will; and, 3. Because, in regard to its very words, it is of plenary inspiration.

The following objections encounter a brief but conclusive refutation:—1. "Because Christ is the Word, the Scripture cannot be the Word." The whole strength of the objection is resolved into a quibbling play on the term under discussion, as if Christ and Scripture could not both be the Word of God, though in different senses and respects. 2. "Sacred Scripture never asserts that it is the Word;"—a statement proved to be utterly incorrect. 3. "The Word was before Scripture; therefore the Scripture is not the Word of God." It is replied, that although God spoke before any utterance that came from him was committed to writing, it does not when written cease to be the Word of God. 4. "The Word of God cannot be learned from books, for it is from God himself;"—an assertion resolved by our author into falsehood and blasphemy. 5. "The Word dwells in us, Rom. x. 8, Col. iii. 16, and cannot, therefore, be Scripture." It is replied, that the word of faith is meant; that it is nigh to us, not in respect of the written letter, but of the divine truth contained in it; and that it dwells in us not *formally*, but in point of *effect*.

II. The second dissertation is on the INTERPRETATION OF SCRIPTURE.

After a denial and refutation of the claim of the Romish church to infallibility, the right of private Christians to expound and exhort is declared to be consistent with the authority of the ministerial office. This question is not directly involved in the dispute with the Quakers, as they reject all interpretation of Scripture, and substitute in its stead new revelations; but it is considered by our author in passing, as it relates to the sources of interpretation.

To private Christians, not intending to fill the office of the ministry, he concedes a liberty of exposition and exhortation, provided it be done decently and in order: and he reasons in support of this opinion,—1. From the spiritual gifts bestowed for the pur-

pose; 2. The design of church-communion; 3. The injunctions of Scripture; 4. The practice of the early church; 5. Christian experience and brotherly love; 6. The example of saints in the Old and New Testaments; and, 7. The liberty wherewith Christ has made his people free.

To other Christians, not actually invested with office, or ordained, but aiming to be so, he allows a right of preaching the gospel, interpreting Scripture, and addressing meetings; against which right, he affirms, no valid plea can be urged, either from the nature of the exercise, or any special circumstances connected with it, or any express prohibition in Scripture.

The notion of the Quakers, that there is no need for any public interpretation of Scripture, on the ground that all are inspired and possess the inward light, is refuted by a series of considerations:—The lawfulness of expounding to others what we deem to be the meaning of Scripture; the necessity for such a practice; the appointment by Christ of pastors and teachers in the church; the testimony of Scripture; the example of Christ; the custom of all the saints; and the continued necessity for the interpretation of Scripture, from the difficulties which it is admitted to contain, and to which reference is made even by Scripture itself, 2 Pet. iii. 16.

A few objections are briefly met and repelled;—such as, that inspiration is needed to interpret inspiration; that interpretation is of no practical benefit; and that there is the utmost variety of opinion in the interpretations that are given of Scripture.

III. On the Perfection of Scripture, Jews, Papists, and Quakers, whatever other points of difference obtain among them, are described as united, like the foxes of Samson, with firebrands between their tails, to ravage the fields of the church, by impugning the perfection of the divine Word. Leaving the Jews and Papists in the hands of not a few able writers, our author proceeds to deal with the Quakers. The following is a digest of the propositions which he affirms and defends:—That all truths necessary for salvation are contained in Scripture, by direct affirmation or plain implication; that there is no need of tradition or new revelations; that it is presumption to advance as worthy of divine faith what is not in Scripture; that new revelations if opposed to Scripture are blasphemy, if different from it useless; that the dogma of internal light is a fiction; and that Scripture is a perfect rule of faith and life, to which nothing can be added, and from which nothing must be taken. In a summary of the views of his opponents, he argues that they, on the contrary, despoil Holy Writ of all use, authority, and perfection.

These positions are supported, 1. by an appeal to Scripture; and under this head are cited (1.) passages asserting the perfection of the Word, (2.) prohibitions against all additions to it, (3.) references to the practice of the apostles, and (4.) passages in which the Scriptures are commended to us for all the purposes of religion; and, 2. by considerations founded on reason. It is argued that (1.) if Scripture be perfect, (2.) sufficient for salvation, and (3.) such that no additions must be made to it, (4.) if we are never directed in it to any inward light, (5.) if we are to take heed to it that we may be on our guard against deceiving spirits, (6.) if we are to try all doctrines and spirits by the test of Scripture, (7.) if there is a constant dubiety attending all enthusiastic sentiments, (8.) if errors are constantly broached by enthusiasts and fanatics, and (9.) if their conduct be often immoral and vicious, the internal light for which Quakers contend must be either unnecessary, or, however real, must be very useless.

The following arguments of the Quakers are answered:—1. That their own inward light is identical with the inspiration of Scripture, and therefore of co-ordinate authority with it. 2. That there is a promise of the Spirit to lead into all truth. 3. That Scripture can be of no use after a soul is brought to Christ. 4. That several passages of the Word confirm their tenets,—2 Cor. iii. 6; Isa. liv. 13; Jer. xxxi. 33, 34; Luke xvii. 21.

IV. On the subject of the Internal Light, various distinctions in regard to the word "light" are first specified; the condition of man is exhibited as by nature sunk in darkness, and it is proved that saving light belongs only to the elect.

Quakers affirm that the light of nature is from Christ, is enjoyed by all, and is sufficient for salvation, without the enlightenment of the Spirit or the teaching of Scripture.

In refutation of this view, five propositions are advanced and defended by our author:—1. The light of nature is not from Christ as mediator, much less is it Christ himself. 2. It is not of saving efficacy. 3. It is not sufficient for salvation, either *subjectively*, so that any one can spiritually discern what things are revealed from another source as necessary for our salvation; or *objectively*, as comprehending a disclosure of these necessary truths themselves. 4. Saving light is not imparted to all men. And, 5. No internal light can supersede the will of God as revealed in Scripture. This dissertation is closed by a notice of the perverted interpretation to which his opponents resorted on some passages, such as John i. 9, Rom. ii. 14, 15; and he replies to them by a sounder and more consistent exposition.—Ed.

AD LECTOREM ADMONITIO.

Quas hic conspicis pagellæ, lector erudite, theologicarum quarundam quæstionum determinationes, quas vocant, tibi exhibent. Quid eas ad disputationum privatarum usum, tumultuarie pæne conscriptas, seorsum a reliquis ejusdem generis laciniis, in lucem protulerit, paucis accipias velim. De auctoritate atque integritate sacrarum Scripturarum tractatus binos, linguâ vernaculâ, emittens, quorum occasiones ac rationem omnem alibi fusius exposui, disputationes hasce, quibus cum illis arctissimum est materiæ consortium, et quæ quod reliquum est circa verbum divinum controversiarum paucis absolvant, quamvis sermone ab iis disjunctas, unà in medium producendas censui. Utrùm ob doctrinæ consortium, aut linguæ dissidium, illorum tractatuum pars aliqua, aut alius ipsa tractatulus scriptiuncula hæc habeatur, penes lectorem arbitrium esto. Fanatici sunt, erroribus et stultitia hisce diebus notissimi, quos inprimis hic aggredimur. Nemo autem post homines natos, æque ac ego delirasse censendus esset, si ipsos scriptis hisce redarguere statuerim, cum nihilo plus sermonem illum quo hic utimur intelligant, quàm nos aliquoties inconditum illum verborum sonum omni sano sensu vacuum, quo ipsi non tantum omnibus aliis, sed et ipsi sibi in dicendo obstrepere videntur, mente percipere possimus. Juniorum instructioni (erunt enim forsan qui opellam hanc nostram inspicient) quibus, in sacrarum literarum studium ingenii acumen σὺν Θεῷ intendentibus, passim hosce corvos sequi testâque lutoque nec animus est nec otium, specimen hoc novi fanaticismi refutati, qui ξένοις δαιμονίοις comitatus nullubi non grassatur, dicatum est. Puteum, ni fallar, seu abyssum potius errorum omnium, non tantùm quorum in culpa cubantes deprehendimus fanaticos, sed et eorum etiam quibus pæne nullos non inquinat aut fascinat Romana meretrix, luce retectum et veritate obturatum iterum, paucis ostendimus. Destructâ autem istâ impietatis omnis et δεισιδαιμονίας arce, quam in Scripturarum contemptum moliuntur improbi homunciones, tam in proclivi est ut cadat tota errorum propago, quàm imber est quando pluit. Quæ hic eo animo in honorem verbi Dei scripta invenies, tu lector, sine gratia, odio aut partium studio, perpende atque judica.

PRO SACRIS SCRIPTURIS, ETC.

QUESTIO I.

An sacra Scriptura sit ac vere dicatur verbum Dei?

Sectio 1. Quæstionis hujus duas esse partes constat, quarum una *rem* ipsam, *nomen* proprium Scripturarum altera ponit. Eam sub hisce terminis proposuimus, ut largior inde pateret disputandi campus, dum in utramvis partem opponentibus incurrere licuerit. Primam autem quæstionis partem duplicem iterum respectum induere posse palam est, nempe prout Scripturam respicit vel in *esse reali*, ut loquuntur, aut etiam in *esse cognoscibili;* nimirum Scripturam esse verbum Dei contra Atheos, Paganos, et—Novum Testamentum quod attinet—Judæos etiam, asserentes, unâ, eam spirituali suâ luce, quam a solo authore suo mutuatur, se Dei verbum esse infallibiliter demonstrare, contra Pontificios, affirmamus: Fanaticos nostrates, qui a *tremore* quo se in sacris agitari ipsi sibi fingunt, aut reapse vi mali spiritûs agitantur, vulgò Trepidantes seu *Quakers* vocantur, respicit quæstionis pars posterior, quæ est de Scripturæ nomine proprio.

Sect. 2. De primâ quæstionis parte innumera extant virorum doctissimorum scripta, quibus veritatem, quam astruendam hâc disputatione duximus, et dilucide exposuerint, atque adversus insultus Atheorum ex unâ parte, Pontificiorum ex alterâ, ita muniverint, ut omnino nihil opus sit ea hic repetere, quæ aliunde nullo negotio peti possunt; hoc tantùm addam, inter omnes quotquot sunt ubivis theologos, qui causam hanc Dei atque verbi ipsius contra Pontificios defendendam susceperunt, vix quenquam inveniri, qui cum Whitakero nostro comparandus sit, nedum ei præferendus; de parte ideo quæstionis posteriori, seu *de nomine Scripturæ* proprio, contra fanaticos nostrates impræsentiarum mihi agendum esse duxi.

Sect. 3. Etenim, huic hominum generi cùm non satis esset iiscum congredi et sociari, qui præteritis sæculis *convicia* sacris Scripturis intentârunt, atque omnia in illas injecta opprobria suo calculo approbare; cùm hoc solum sibi reliquum fecisse aliorum *ingeniosam* nequitiam observaret, ut in discrimen *nominis*, unde omnis earum dependet auctoritas, illas adduceret; hujus rei conficiendæ curam sibi

a Satana delatam gaudet, nimirum ut titulo illo glorioso, verbo Dei, illas spoliaret. Jam verò, uti semper antiquo generis humani hosti perniciosa sua molimina *colore* aliquo seu fuco illinere pro more fuit, ita, quo plus veneni et malitiæ ulli eorum inesse noverit, eo gloriosiori tegumento infucatum obtrudere satagit. Exemplo sit is quem jam perpendimus *error*, seu *furor* potius dicendus sit; ut nihil pæne unquam *perniciosius* excogitaverit, nec quod præsentius venenum ecclesiæ Christi propinaret; ita nunquam fallaciori prætextu ad animas rudium et ἀγάγων illaqueandas usus est; hic vero qualis sit videamus. " Nomen verbi Dei," inquiunt fanatici, " soli Christo competit; ideoque titulum illum Scripturæ conferre nobis est religio. Nonne enim qui decet Scripturæ honorem habere possumus, nisi suum Christo honorem derogemus? Num Scriptura Christus? num litera Spiritus? hoc nomen Christi, 'Verbum Dei:' Scriptura suâ sorte ac nomine contenta abeat."

Sect. 4. Atqui hæc omnia merus fucus sunt, præstigiæ ac fraudes; si enim reverentiâ Christi ducti, si vario usu et *homonymiâ* vocis τοῦ λόγου decepti, auctoritatem, necessitatem, et perfectionem suam sacræ Scripturæ relinquentes, de solo nomine litem moverent miseri homunciones, *misericordiâ* saltem, si non veniâ digni viderentur. Sed alia omnino res est; non enim tantùm Scripturas omni suâ auctoritate spoliare, easque loco suo movere, sed et *ipsum* Christum *personalitate* suâ atque divinâ existentiâ exuere, hoc unico stratagemate intendunt et conantur.

Sect. 5. Cùm enim multa de verbo Dei dicantur, quæ proprie et directe personæ Christi θεανθρώπου non conveniunt, figmentum horrendum, *Christum quendam imaginarium*, qui *lumen sit internum* omnibus commune, et nescio quod τὸ πᾶν spirituale, hoc est vere nihil, comminiscuntur; quoniam autem millies fere mentio facta est *verbi* Dei, atque prædicationis, promulgationis, et receptionis ejusdem, iis in locis, qui quo minus de personâ Christi intelligantur innumera sunt quæ obstant; neque in iis Scripturam intendi agnoscere velint; nescio quod inde *verbum internum*, cujus jam in solidum sunt ipsi possessores, et illorum qui illud antea inclusum tenuerunt hæredes ex asse, exculpunt atque extorquent.

Sect. 6. De fictitio isto, sive *lumine* sive *verbo interno*, et *Christo imaginario* postea nobis suo ordine sigillatim agendum est; jam quæ sit horum hominum de Scripturâ sententia, et quibus rationibus eam defendere satagunt accurate perpendamus; ea verò sic se habet.

Sect. 7. Scripturam, inquiunt, sacram *revelationem* quandam voluntatis divinæ continere, eatenus a Deo profectam, quatenus ab *interno illo lumine*, quod ex Christo in iis fuit qui libros istos scripserint, quos scripturas nuncupatis, processit, profitemur. Cæterùm *lumen* illud omnibus æque inesse mortalibus; ita ut qui ei attendere

velint, voluntatem Dei eâdem *auctoritate* et infallibilitate declarare possint, quibus in ipsa sacra Scriptura declaratur. Vera ita, inquiunt, sunt omnia, et certa, quæ in libris istis continentur, deque Deo et ejus voluntate enarrantur; et vera itidem sunt et certa, eodem genere certitudinis et veritatis, quæ a *lumine* illo *interno* proficiscuntur in iis qui ad illud attendunt. Ita liber iste scriptus, cum neque sit Christus, neque *lumen illud internum*, nullo modo est verbum Dei.

Sect. 8. Apparet ideo hosce homines ὁμωνυμίᾳ vocis τοῦ λόγου, seu verbi, se atque alios ludere ac decipere; de eâ igitur primo agendum est.

Sect. 9. Nonnullos ex antiquis, quos vocant, *patribus*, in schola Platonis eductos, et in ejus philosophia versatos, quâ multa speciosa et plane admiranda περὶ τοῦ λόγου disseruntur, ambiguitate istius verbi fuisse deceptos, non nunc primùm observatum est. Hinc Justinus palam affirmat, Christum esse λόγον, οὗ πᾶν τὸ γένος ἀνθρώπων μετέσχε, seu "rationem cujus est particeps omne humanum genus;" quod sane non multum abludit a *fanaticorum* sententia, de *lumine interno* omnibus communi, quod vel sit Christus, vel immediate a Christo, de quo posthac nonnulla nobis dicenda sunt. Eos etiam qui μετὰ λόγου, hoc est secundum *rectam rationem vitam egerunt*, inter Ethnicos, *Christi participes fuisse*, atque vitam æternam obtinuisse, idem Justinus fidenter asserit; nempe quia Christus λόγος.

Sect. 10. Hinc gravissima illa et adprime necessaria Basilii ad prima verba Evangelii Johannis admonitio. Ὅρα, inquit, μήποτε σὲ παρακρούσηται τὸ ὁμώνυμον τῆς φωνῆς: atque iterum, Μὴ παραλογίσηταί σε τὶς τῷ πολυσήμῳ τῆς λέξεως. Quid vero voluerint per istum suum λόγον Platonici, statim dicetur; neque solus Justinus hac in re orationem ad Græcorum phraseologiam attemperans, periculose Scripturarum simplicitatem deseruit. Alii etiam e veteribus ejus criminis communione implicantur. Λόγος ὁ ἐπουράνιος, πνεῦμα, γεγονὼς ἀπὸ τοῦ πατρὸς, καὶ λόγος ἐκ τῆς λογικῆς δυνάμεως, κατὰ τὴν τοῦ γεννήσαντος αὐτὸν πατρὸς μίμησιν, εἰκόνα τῆς ἀθανασίας τὸν ἄνθρωπον ἐποίησεν, inquit Tatianus Assyrius, Cont. Græc. Orat. Quid vero sibi velint ista verba, Λόγος ἐκ τῆς λογικῆς δυνάμεως, in descriptione Christi, ratio ex rationali potentia? Anne Scriptura ita loquitur de Filio Dei? minime.

Sect. 11. Ut igitur hoc latibulum, quo perpetuò sibi de refugio prospiciunt *fanatici*, ab iis abripiamus, variæ vocis hujus in Scripturis Sacris significationes præmittendæ sunt.

Sect. 12. Λόγος itaque τοῦ Θεοῦ triplex est,—ὑποστατικός, ἐνδιάθετος, προφορικός.

Sect. 13. Λόγος ὑποστατικός, qui et οὐσιώδης et ἐνυπόστατος, est ipse Christus: Καλεῖται τὸ ὄνομα αὐτοῦ· ὁ Λόγος τοῦ Θεοῦ, Apoc. xix. 13; Καὶ ὁ λόγος ἦν πρὸς τὸν Θεὸν, καὶ Θεὸς ἦν ὁ λόγος, Joh. i. 1; Καὶ ὁ λόγος σὰρξ

ἐγένετο, ver. 14. De aliis testimoniis quæ in hanc sententiam adduci solent,—viz. Ps. xxxiii. 6; Hag. ii. 5; Luc. i. 2; 2 Pet. i. 16; Act. xx. 32; Heb. iv. 12,—nihil certi habeo quod statuerim. Christum itaque verbum esse, λόγον, verbum quod Deus sit, quodque ei nomen sit verbum Dei, libentissime agnoscimus; neque super eâ re ulla nobis cum adversariis intercedit controversia. At quo sensu dicitur Christus verbum Dei, seu *quale verbum* sit, nullatenus inter nos convenit, prout, Deo volente, in sequentibus videbimus.

Sect. 14. Λόγος ἐνδιάθετος est egressus potentiæ divinæ, proposita voluntatis Dei atque consilia ejus efficaciter exsequens, seu est efficacia providentiæ divinæ, quâ opera sua ad extra, secundum consilium voluntatis suæ, Deus operatur et perficit. Gen. i. 3, "Dixit Deus, Esto lux: et fuit lux." Ps. cxlvii. 15, "Emittit sermonem suum in terram; quam celerrime excurrit verbum ejus." Verse 18, "Emittit verbum suum, liquefacit ista." Et Ps. cxlviii. 8, "Turbineus ventus efficiens verbum ejus." Isa. xxx. 31, "Voce Jehovæ contritus est Assyrius." 2 Pet. iii. 5, Γῆ ἐξ ὕδατος καὶ δι' ὕδατος συνεστῶσα, τῷ τοῦ Θεοῦ λόγῳ· οὐρανοὶ τῷ αὐτῷ λόγῳ τεθησαυρισμένοι. Heb. i. 3, Φέρων τε τὰ πάντα τῷ ῥήματι τῆς δυνάμεως αὐτοῦ. Heb. xi. 3, Πίστει νοοῦμεν κατηρτίσθαι τοὺς αἰῶνας ῥήματι Θεοῦ. Cæterùm Paulum in Epistola ad Hebræos, per ῥῆμα Θεοῦ, idem intelligere quod Petrus per λόγον Θεοῦ, vel inde apparet, quòd idem opus, respectu ejusdem, ab uno apostolorum tribuatur ῥήματι Θεοῦ, ab altero τῷ λόγῳ. His itaque testimoniis, atque innumeris aliis quæ adduci possunt, liquidò constat, efficacem Dei providentiam, quâ decreta sua exsequitur, ac opera ad extra perficit, aliquoties dici verbum Dei.

Sect. 15. Cum nos quod statutum deliberatumque in animo habemus, per instrumenta quæ in nostrâ sita sunt potestate exsequi volumus, verbo oris, seu mandato, quo ea ad agendum impellimus, utimur; Deus optimus maximus ad captum nostrum res divinas attemperans, et volens ostendere quâ facilitate consilia voluntatis, per omnipotentiam suam exsequitur, sive mediis ullis quæ in ejus sita sunt potestate uti velit, sive immediate potentiam suam exserere ei placuerit, istius potentiæ egressum actualem seu exercitium efficax, nomine verbi sui, seu vocis, indigitat: "Ipso dicente est, quicquid est; ipso præcipiente exsistit," Ps. xxxiii. 9. Cæterùm verbum Dei hoc sensu intellectum aut non *intelligunt*, aut non *agnoscunt* quibuscum nobis res est; neque hactenus, quod sciam, hac ex parte ullius criminis postulamur.

Sect. 16. Quoniam autem vocis hujus, τοῦ λόγου scilicet, homonymia, veterum nonnullis ita imposuerit, ut graviter super eâ re hallucinati sint, erroris eorum fontem et occasionem paucis detegere non abs re fore judicamus. Ea verò res ita se habet. Qui vel ex professo apologias pro Christianis instituebant, ut Justinus Martyr, Athena-

goras, Tertullianus aliique, vel diserte atque datâ operâ Gentilium argumenta refutabant, atque ipsos errorum convincebant,—cui operi inter alios egregie incubuerunt Clemens Alexandrinus, Tatianus Assyrius, Theophilus Antiochenus ad Autolychum, Eusebius, Cyrillus, et Theodoretus,—ut vel tyrannorum furorem et amentiam mitigarent, aut compescerent, ostendendo nimirum ea quæ in Evangelio continentur non esse adeo absurda, et a communi hominum sensu remota, quin istorum prophetis et σοφοῖς nota aliquantum, et percepta fuerint; vel quò veritatis æternæ vim, in mentes etiam adversariorum ejus se insinuantem ostenderent, γνώμας et sententias ex philosophorum libris excerptas, ad fines hosce promovendos accomodas, sæpissime protulerunt, ut earum auctoritate adversarios premerent. Atque sane utinam aliquando non nimis longe jaculati fuissent, aut ab auctoritate fidei, et Scripturarum simplicitate descivissent. Hinc autem prima mali labes, dum cœlestia mysteria et tremenda Christianorum sacra, Gentilium notionibus et vanis cæremoniis attemperare voluerint.

Sect. 17. Per instantias agamus. Satis decantata est Platonicorum τριάς, nempe τὸ αὐτόγονον, ὁ νοῦς ὁ δημιουργὸς, ἡ τοῦ κόσμου ψυχή. De eâ vero ita Theodoretus, sermone secundo Ἑλληνικῶν παθημάτων θεραπευτικῆς. Concesserunt, inquit, ὑπέρχρονα καὶ ἀΐδια, τὸν ἀγαθὸν, καὶ νοῦν, καὶ παντὸς τὴν ψυχήν. Additque, Ὃν μὲν ἡμεῖς πατέρα καλοῦμεν, τὸν ἀγαθὸν ὀνομάζονται, νοῦν δὲ, ὃν ἡμεῖς υἱὸν καὶ λόγον προσαγορεύομεν; quasi sc. doctrina Trinitatis ex solo naturæ lumine Gentilibus innotuisset, quod falsissimum. Irenæo etiam impingunt Centuriatores Magdeburgenses, Cent. ii. Col. 227, quod ita obscure et perplexe non raro vocabulo "verbi," seu τοῦ λόγου utatur, ut videatur non perspicue inter "verbum substantiale" et "verbum vocale seu oris" distinguere; a quo crimine utrum sufficienter vindicetur a Feuardentio, qui ob hanc rem convitiis in Centuriatores debacchatur, judicent æqui rerum æstimatores. Quid vero Platonici per νοῦν, et τοῦ παντὸς ψυχήν intelligebant, clare et ornate ex eorum scriptis exponit poetarum doctissimus, vi. Æneidos, v. 724–733:—

> "Principio cœlum, ac terras, camposque liquentes,
> Lucentemque globum Lunæ, Titaniaque astra
> Spiritus intus alit, totamque infusa per artus
> Mens agitat molem, et magno se corpore miscet.
> Inde hominum, pecudumque genus, vitæque volantum,
> Et quæ marmoreo fert monstra sub æquore pontus.
> Igneus est ollis vigor, et cœlestis origo
> Seminibus; quantum non noxia corpora tardant,
> Terrenique hebetant artus, moribundaque membra.
> Hinc metuunt, cupiuntque; dolent, gaudentque;"—

Hæc ille; digna sc. quæ Dei Filio unigenito ascriberentur. Vulgus autem Christianorum dogma Trinitatis, verbis Scripturæ sacræ magis consentaneis, neque figmentis philosophorum interpolatum

communiter et palam exposuisse, testis etiam est Lucianus in Philopatride, seu διδασκομένῳ, ubi Tryphonem quendam Christianis sacris initiatum ita disserentem introducit:—

Ὑψιμέδοντα θεὸν, μέγαν, ἄμβροτον, οὐρανίωνα.
Υἱὸν πατρὸς, πνεῦμα ἐκ πατρὸς ἐκπορευόμενον,
Ἓν ἐκ τριῶν, καὶ ἐξ ἑνὸς τρία,
Ταῦτα νόμιζε Ζῆνα, τόνδ' ἡγοῦ θεόν.

Sect. 18. In verbo λόγος, de quo agimus, non minor erat erratio, imo paulo periculosior. Adversus Julianum, lib. vii., verborum istorum Platonis ex Epinomide Cyrillus meminit: Συναποτελῶν κόσμον, ὃν ἔταξε ὁ λόγος ὁ πάντων θειότατος ὁρατῶν. Hunc vero esse λόγον nostrum divinum acerrime contendit. Occurrunt et alia huic gemina apud eundem autorem pæne infinita.

Sect. 19. At alia est ea ratio, quam in mundi conditu Deus adhibuit, a λόγῳ, per quem omnia sunt condita. Platonem autem per λόγον istum, ideam quandam in mente divinâ, mundi quasi exemplar intellexisse constat; ut recte Thomas P. P. Q. 32, a. 3, c.

Sect. 20. Ejus etiam vestigiis insistens Philo, λόγον, τὴν ἀσώματον θείαν ἰδέαν diserte vocat, apud Eusebium, lib. xi., Præpar. Evang. cap. xv. Ejusdem commatis sunt omnia ea testimonia, quæ ad secundum principium, Deum δημιουργόν, seu omnium artificem demonstrandum, ex Platone, Plotino, Numenio, Amelioque, producit idem Eusebius. Ac Amelius quidem expresse recitat initium evangelii Johannis, quem philosophum barbarum vocat. Eorum verò omnium sensum ipse Eusebius exponit, cap. xxiii., nempe ideam nescio quam, vim naturarum ingentem, archetypum et exemplar omnium, mentem omnia animantem, magnum quoddam vivens, ortu et interitu carens, ea sub voce finxerunt.

Sect. 21. Λόγος ideo Θεοῦ οὐσιώδης, omni adhibita accuratione, distinguendus est non tantùm a Platonicorum νῷ λόγῳ, τοῦ παντὸς ψυχῇ, Θεῷ δημιουργικῷ, vi naturarum ingente, mente cuncta animante, ideâ, atque rerum omnium exemplari, sed et a λόγῳ isto ἐνδιαθέτῳ, de quo nonnulla jam diximus. Hic vero, nempe ἐνδιάθετος, diligenter admodum a Maimonide, More Nevochim, seu Duce Dubitantium, pa. 1, cap. xxiii., describitur. "Quicquid," inquit, "a Deo creatur, id attribuitur verbo ejus, ut 'verbo Domini cœli creati sunt;' similitudine desumptâ ab operibus regum terrenorum, quorum instrumenta in perficiendâ et exsequendâ suâ voluntate sunt verba ipsorum;" de loco vero isto, nempe Ps. xxxiii. 6, ego plane dubito annon de Dei verbo æterno interpretandus sit; rem ipsam autem quod attinet, explicationem admitto. Deinde cap. lxv. ostendit verba אֵמֶר et דָּבָר, quæ synonyma sunt, homonymice usurpari, atque de verbo externo, internâ cogitatione, atque mente, et voluntate dici.

Sect. 22. Multis quidem argumentis, acerrime contendit Jos. Pla-

cæus, Disputationibus de Christi Deitate, argumento 21, per verbum illud toties in creatione repetitum, "dixit Deus," æternum λόγον, Dei Filium intelligi; atque ille quidem accurate disputat, ut quid in contrarium opponat haud facile inventurus sit adversarius. Restat autem adhuc mihi scrupulus unicus; cum enim per totum primum caput Geneseos, δημιουργός ubivis Elohim dicatur, atque illud nomen tres personas formaliter exprimere orthodoxi omnes consentiant, qui fieri potest, ut τῶν Elohim verbum sit ὁ λόγος, cum non sit sui ipsius verbum aut sermo? Ubicunque autem verbum Jehovæ seu Dei dicitur, vox Dei ὑποστατικῶς sumitur, atque personam Patris denotat, quo modo vox ista Elohim sumi non posse videtur.

Sect. 23. Male ideo Grotius in Annotationibus ad cap. i. Johannis usum vocis τοῦ λόγου ad verba ea Mosis, "Dixit Deus, Esto lux, et fuit," retulit, quum ea plane de λόγῳ ἐνδιαθέτῳ prolata fuerint, prout etiam a Maimonide exponuntur, cui iste lectorem remittit. Male etiam in eundem sensum ea quæ occurrunt apud Chaldæum paraphrasten potentiam Dei per verbum ejus exprimentem, adducit; pessime eundem λόγον Platonicos atque Philonem intendisse contendit; atque in eum sensum nonnulla a veteribus periculose effata profert. Quale illud est Gregorii Neo-Cæsariensis: Λόγος, inquit, ἐστι δύναμις τῆς ὅλης κτίσεως ποιητική, Platonice satis; cum non sit δύναμις, seu attributum divinum, sed ὑπόστασις infinitâ δυνάμει instructus. Atque ita ille quidem omnia confundit, ut quid sibi velit, atque utrum Platonicus fuerit, aut Socinianus aut Christianus in ejus loci explicatione, haud facile sit intelligere. Sed de his pro nostro instituto plus satis.

Sect. 24. Λόγος προφορικός is est de quo sensibus cum adversariis non congruimus. Eum vero esse *Scripturam sacram*, seu verbum Dei scriptum, non *quatenus* scriptum, sed *quamvis* scriptum, credimus et profitemur.

Sect. 25. Id, quo animi nostri sensum et voluntatis nostræ proposita aliis declaramus, esse *verbum nostrum*, cùm vere verbum sit, symbolum et index conceptuum mentis, nemo, opinor, negabit. Quidni etiam declarationem mentis et voluntatis divinæ, quâ quicquid a nobis fieri, vel de se cognosci velit, Deus notum facit, ejus *verbum* dici debere concedamus? fatemur utique Deum voluntatem suam, *vivâ voce*, antequam ullum verbum scriptum erat, declarâsse; et certe quando immediate Deus locutus est, id quod locutus est ejus *verbum* erat: anne verò id perdidit illud suum esse verbum Dei, quod locutus est, quia ex ejus mandato scriptum est? Neque sane dicimus declarationem hanc quam habemus in Scripturis voluntatis Dei, verbum ejus esse, quia scriptum est; sed verbum Dei ex ipsius mandato jam scriptum esse contendimus.

Sect. 26. Quo minus ideo, *inanibus logomachiis* (quibus supra modum sibi placent fanatici, quando importunâ loquacitate molestos se

præbere in animo habent) detineamur, quo sensu Scriptura sacra sit verbum Dei, atque ita dici debeat, paucis expediamus.

Sect. 27. Primò, ideo, respectu *ortûs*, hoc nomen sibi vindicat Scriptura sacra. Originem suam a Deo habet. Ipse *eam* locutus est: partim immediate, partim mediate *in Filio*, prophetis, aliisque ejus promulgatoribus: Heb. i. 1, Ὁ Θεὸς λαλήσας ἐν τοῖς προφήταις, ἐλάλησεν ἡμῖν ἐν υἱῷ. Imo quæ, mediantibus prophetis, apostolis, aliisque divinis scriptoribus, ecclesiæ olim locutus est, ipse ea omnia immediate locutus est, non tantùm iis ipsis quibus provinciam istam promulgandi et scribendi voluntatem suam delegavit, et per eos nobis; sed in iis immediate *nobiscum* locutus est, atque in eorum scriptis adhuc loquitur, Heb. i. 1, 2; Luc. i. 70, Ἐλάλησε διὰ στόματος τῶν ἁγίων προφήτων τῶν ἀπ' αἰῶνος; 2 Pet. i. 20, 21.

Sect. 28. Secundò, respectu *subjectæ materiæ*, seu divinæ veritatis in eâ revelatæ, sacra Scriptura est verbum Dei; quatenus nempe est revelatio voluntatis divinæ ab ipso Deo profecta. Hoc sensu locis pæne innumeris verbum Dei dicitur, Joh. xvii. 17. Ita ubi verbum Dei, *prædicari*, *promulgari*, *multiplicari*, *recipi* enarratur, sanctissima ista veritas, seu *materia* Scripturarum, non Scriptura *formaliter* considerata intenditur; aliquoties enim contigit, et quotidie fieri potest, ut verbum Dei prædicetur, ubi Scriptura, hoc est ipsa *scriptio*, non legatur. In eâ autem verbi prædicatione, quæ ex Scripturis sine actuali Scripturarum in ipso actu prædicandi lectione, fieri potest, nihil aliud est absolute et in se verbum Dei, quàm quod ῥητῶς in Scripturâ continetur: Act. xxvi. 22, Οὐδὲν ἐκτὸς λέγων ὧν τε οἱ προφῆται ἐλάλησαν μελλόντων γίνεσθαι καὶ Μωσῆς.

Sect. 29. Tertiò, respectu *ipsorum verborum* in linguis istis quibus ex mandato et ordinatione Dei scripta est; etenim ea verba et concepta et disposita sunt per Spiritum Sanctum, neque ad exprimendum sensum, quem ipsi de mente et voluntate Dei conceperunt, ingenio ac arbitrio ipsorum scriptorum sunt permissa aut relicta: Act. xxviii. 25; Luc. i. 70; 2 Pet. i. 20, 21; 2 Tim. iii. 16, Πᾶσα γραφὴ θεόπνευστος.

Sect. 30. Respectu autem *promulgationis* veritatis divinæ, quâ prophetis aliisque viris divinis tanquam instrumentis usus est Spiritus Sanctus, ipsum verbum dicitur λόγος προφητικός, 2 Pet. i. 19, quem respectu inspirationis divinæ aliqui ἔμφυτον vocant et ἐνδιάθετον.

Sect. 31. Hinc, ideo, sacrarum Scripturarum divina auctoritas, cujus assertionem in hac nominis ejus vindicatione præcipue intendimus, dependet;—nimirum quod omnibus hisce respectibus sit verbum ejus qui supremus est Legislator, summus ac solus conscientiæ Dominus, qui solus quid sit necessarium, quid utile, eum finem quod attinet ad quem diriguntur sacræ Scripturæ, et novit et in iis revelavit.

Hisce ita præmissis, videamus porro quibus *argumentis* sententia nostra superiùs exposita defendi et statuminari possit; atque etiam

quibus *sophismatis* eam expugnare apud imperitam plebem, magnis clamoribus adhibitis, quotidie aggrediuntur *fanatici*. Primum vero argumentum nostrum sic se habet.

Sect. 32. Quod sæpe a Spiritu Sancto vocatur verbum Dei, id verbum est, atque proprie ita dicitur: nobis enim haud licet rebus sacris ad libitum nostrum nomina imponere; multo minus integrum est ea rejicere quæ pro infinitâ suâ sapientiâ Spiritus Sanctus imposuit. Sacram verò Scripturam sæpius eo nomine a Spiritu Sancto indigitari, cuivis eas vel leviter inspicienti facile apparebit. Nonnullis allatis testimoniis rem planam faciemus. Marc. vii. 13, Ἀκυροῦντες τὸν λόγον τοῦ Θεοῦ τῇ παραδόσει ὑμῶν. Quisnam autem est iste λόγος τοῦ Θεοῦ quem irritum fecerunt Pharisæi? Is nempe qui a Mose scriptus est, ver. 10, Μωσῆς γὰρ εἶπε, hoc est, scriptum reliquit. Deut. iv. 2, "Ne addite ad verbum illud quod ego vobis præcipio." Verbum quod Dominus locutus est, est verbum Domini; atqui idem est illud verbum cum "statutis et præceptis" eodem versu, quæ scripta esse nemo, opinor, negabit, Jer. xxxvi. 6, xxvi. 1–6.

Sect. 33. Id quod Deus locutus est in prophetis, quod Spiritus Sanctus locutus est per os prophetarum, quodque tanquam verbum suum per ejus mandatum scriptum est, illud verbum Dei est. At vero Deum locutum esse in prophetis et per prophetas antea probavimus. Vid. Heb. i. 1; Act. xxviii. 26; Luc. vii. 8. Hocque verbum ipsius auctoritate scriptum est, Exod. xvii. 14, xxxiv. 1, 27; Num. v. 23; Deut. vi. 9, xvii. 18; Jer. xxx. 2; Hab. ii. 2; 1 Joh. ii. 7; 2 Tim. iii. 16; Apoc. xxi. 5; et Deut. xxvii. 3. Imo ipse primus aliquid de eo digito suo scripsit, nempe Decalogum, Exod. xx.

Sect. 34. Declaratio mentis ac voluntatis divinæ, ab ipso Deo immediate profecta, est verbum Dei. Si hoc non sit verbum Dei, ego nescio quid sit. Ipse loquitur; mentis suæ sensum, quo quid a nobis fieri velit intelligamus, declarat; hoc vero facit per verbum, aut doceant nos fanatici, quid illud dicendum sit per quod hoc facit. Sed de his postea cum de verbo seu lumine interno nobis agendum est.

Sect. 35. Ultimo jam loco objectiones adversariorum diluendæ restant; pensum autem illud paucissimis absolvam.

Ob. 1. *Christus est verbum Dei, ergo Scriptura non est verbum Dei.* Mirum quantum puerile hoc intonantes sophisma ubique tumultuantur, atque quos apud suos de omnibus verbi ministris, quos præcipue insectantur, triumphos agant; "Deceptores sunt omnes, impostores, falsarii, populi seductores, qui Scripturam verbum Dei asserunt, cùm Christus ipse sit verbum Dei."

Resp. 1. Fallacia est ex homonymiâ vocis. Christus est verbum Dei *essentiale*, verbum Deus, λόγος οὐσιώδης: Scriptura verbum Dei *scriptum*, λόγος προφορικός.

2. Mentio fit verbi Christi, Col. iii. 16; Act. xix. 10: at verbum

Christi non est ipse Christus: etiam verbi evangelii; et quamvis apud ipsos evangelium sit Christus, at verbum evangelii Christus esse non potest. *Resp.* At *distinctionibus istis haud opus est;* hæc sunt inventa hominum. Scriptura palam asserit Christum esse Dei verbum. *Resp.* An solis ideo fanaticis liceat sophistas agere ac ludere in vocum ambiguitate et ὁμωνυμίᾳ? Non distinguimus nisi ubi ipsum Spiritum Sanctum distinctione nobis præeuntem habemus, sicut superiùs demonstratum est.

Sect. 36. *Ob.* 2. *Sacra Scriptura nusquam asserit se esse verbum Dei. Resp.* Hoc falsum esse allatis testimoniis evicimus, quibus innumera alia addi possint.

Sect. 37. *Ob.* 3. *Verbum Dei fuit ante Scripturam, ergo Scriptura non est verbum Dei. Resp.* Concedimus locutum esse Deum antequam ullum verbum quod locutus est scriptis mandatum est, eoque sensu verbum Dei ante Scripturam fuisse concedimus. At verò idem verbum jam scriptum esse, neque ideo cessare esse verbum Dei, quamvis scriptum sit, contendimus. Subjectum non amittitur quamvis scriptio accesserit.

Sect. 38. *Ob.* 4. *Verbum Dei non potest disci ex libris, nam est ab ipso Deo. Resp.* Hoc falsissimum atque blasphemum est; ideo enim scriptum est verbum Dei ut ex libris id discamus, 2 Tim. iii. 16. Huc perpetuo a Deo ipso mittimur, ad verbum et voluntatem ipsius discendam, Deut. xvii. 19; Esa. viii. 20; Joh. v. 39; unde eos beatos pronunciat qui continuò in lege suâ scriptâ versantur, Ps. i. 1, 2. Ortum et originem errorum in Scripturarum ignorantiam rejicit Christus, Mat. xxii. 29. Atque hinc palam ostendit hoc hominum genus se neque scintillam lucis habere, Esa. viii. 20; Dan. x. 21; Luc. xxiv. 27, 45; Act. xvii. 2, 11, xviii. 24, 28; Rom. i. 2; 2 Tim. iii. 15.

Sect. 39. *Ob.* 5. *Verbum prope nos est, in ore et in corde,* Rom. x. 8; *et verbum Christi inhabitat in nobis,* Col. iii. 16; *sed hoc verbum non est scriptum, non litera scripta. Resp.* Verbum illud quod in nobis est, est *verbum fidei,* quod apostoli prædicârunt, Rom. x. 8. Nihil autem prædicabant apostoli quod non scriptum fuit per Mosen et prophetas, Rom. xvi. 26; imo verbum illud verbum scriptum esse, ex professo eo loci, ver. 11, asserit Paulus. 2. Scriptura est prope nos, in ore et corde nostro, non respectu *literæ scriptæ,* sed *veritatis* divinæ in eâ contentæ, quo etiam respectu sæpissime Dei verbum vocatur, uti superiùs ostensum est. In corde nostro est ideo Scriptura, non formaliter quatenus scripta, sed quatenus divinam veritatem continet atque exhibet. 3. In nobis ideo inhabitat verbum Dei, effective et eminenter, non formaliter.

Sect. 40. Atque hæc est summa eorum omnium quæ in vicis, templis, publice, privatim, aut vociferantur aut mussitant adversus sacras Scripturas fanatici. Quid vero apud se in toto hoc molimine deli-

beratum habeant, cùm ad luminis illius interni, de quo tantopere gloriantur, considerationem deventum sit, palam fiet. Ut rem paucis comprehendam: auctoritate, necessitate, perfectione Scripturarum rejectis, afflatum suum, perplexum et falsum semper, sæpissime blasphemum, in ejus locum substituere, in animum induxerunt.

EXERCIT. II.

De Scripturarum interpretatione.

Sect. 1. In quæstione de Scripturarum *interpretatione*, et interprete proprio, Pontificii, quos in tota causa religionis *familiæ herciscundæ* postulare necesse habemus, seu cæco sui amore ducti, seu nimio aliorum omnium contemptu, controversias omnes compendifacere, atque pro eâ quâ pollent auctoritate, seu potius vafritie, hæreticos quos vocant, uno ictu, quasi fundâ ex insidiis, cædere et trajicere se posse sperant; ipsi interea, cum totâ quam in tergo habent mendaciorum sarcinâ, latentes post principia. Eos saltem qui postquam populum aliquem bello domare et sub jugum mittere decreverint, arces munitas, quibus adversariorum apparatum omnem bellicum contineri noverint, extemplò occupant, imitari videntur.

Sect. 2. Etenim cùm utrinque in confesso sit (quod etiam impræsentiarum ulterius demonstrare aggredimur), opus esse Scripturarum *interpretatione* aliquâ, quâ mentem et genuinum in iis Spiritûs Sancti sensum investigare, atque ea ita inde rite eruere, quæ scitu, et cognitu sunt ad salutem necessaria, seu quovismodo ad officium nostrum et obedientiam Deo debitam spectantia, liceat; hujusce rei considerationi, istiusmodi postulatorum portenta præstruunt, ut iis concessis, nulli dubium esse possit, quin omnia adversariorum consilia ita præripuerint, ut quoscunque velint de iis *triumphos* splendide et secure agant.

Sect. 3. Quòd semper fuerit, sitque, atque de jure *debeat* esse istiusmodi *publica*, et uti loquuntur, *auctoritativa* sacrarum Scripturarum interpretatio, in ecclesia, cui omnes et singuli Christiani, sub periculo et pœnâ salutis æternæ amittendæ, conscientias submittere, ex voluntate Christi teneantur, primo in loco affirmant.[1] Cùmque omnis interpretatio sit interpretis alicujus actio, atque *illius* auctoritas abs *hujus* auctoritate dependeat, ut sit, aut esse debeat, *visibilis* aliquis et publicus interpres, seu ut plerumque loqui malunt, magnifice scilicet, sensûs Scripturarum *judex aliquis infallibilis*, *ἀνυπεύθυνος*, *visibilis* et omnibus expositus, qui hoc dono interpretationis polleat,

[1] Concil. Trident. sess. iv.; Thom. Stapl. lib. x. cap. xi.; Bellar. de Verbo Dei, lib. iii. cap. i., etc.

cujus interpretationibus, virtute *auctoritatis* quâ ipse est sub Christo instructus, non *veritatis* quam istæ habent, aut habere possint ex analogia fidei, omnes fideles dicto obedientes esse obligantur, non minus necessarium esse, eâdem veritate et confidentiâ asserunt.[1] Imò ut plerumque mens humana (eâ est innatâ vanitate), cum magno quopiam errore seu monstro tumet, μεγαλαυχεῖ, eò blasphemiæ processit nonnullorum audacia, ut cùm assertiones istas, omni testimonio divino penitus destitutas esse, non possint non intelligere, et pænè confiteri, tamen "neminem unquam mortalium regnum seu regimen aliquod, stultius aut ineptius instituisse, quàm ecclesiam suam disposuit Jesus Christus,"[2] si modò eo interprete illam non instruxerit, non veriti sunt affirmare. Uti olim, ita hodieque etiamnum est, si *Deus homini non placuerit, Deus non erit.* Neque sane alia ratione, horum hominum de ecclesia catholica præjudicio, veteri quidem fabulæ, sed insulsissimæ, satisfieri posse videtur.

Sect. 4. Jam verò nemini dubium esse potest, *quem virum* in summum istud imperium in cæteros mortales evehendum statuant.[3] Prout enim Haman iste, postquam τὸν δεῖνα ad amplissimos honores a rege maximo designari audivisset, cùm paulò plus sibi ipsi in deliciis esset quam regi, statim "cum animo suo dicebat, Quem magis delectaretur rex honore afficere quàm me?" Esther vi. 6–8, atque proinde de honoribus istis ampliandis, tanquam extemplò occupaturus, sententiam tulit; ita adversarii nostri, postquam *regem istum spiritualem et judicem infallibilem* ipsi sibi per somnia finxerint, atque ut talis *judex* et ἀνυπεύθυνος Scripturarum interpres a Christo constitui deberet, nisi indiligens omninò, etiam et insipiens ecclesiæ suæ procurator audire mallet, sibi persuaserint, vel saltem aliis persuadere tentassent, pro eâ quâ sunt humilitate atque modestiâ, hunc proximum Deo locum, si non honorem *æqualem*, tanquam unice ei in terris grati statim occupant. Quis enim nisi Christi Vicarius, vice-Deus ille, Deus alter in terris, ecclesiæ sponsus atque caput, ὁ ἐπὶ πάντα λεγόμενον Θεὸν ἢ σέβασμα ὑπεραιρόμενος, provinciæ huic administrandæ par esse potest?

Sect. 5. Porro autem si ita se res habeat, quàm facilis futura sit totius inter nos litis æstimatio, quivis nullo negotio perspiciat; si enim sacra Scriptura, quæ apud nos unica est omnes controversias dirimendi norma et medium, in eum finem interpretari debeat, ut de vero ejus sensu constare possit, atque ipsi, aut saltem inter eos *dux partium* sit eâ interpretandi Scripturas auctoritate instructus, isque solus, ita ut ex ejus determinatione seu interpretatione, indeque

[1] "Non ignorabat Deus multas in ecclesia exorituras difficultates circa fidem; debuit igitur judicem aliquem ecclesiæ providere; . . . . . igitur princeps ecclesiasticus," etc. —Bell. lib. iii. de Verb. Dei. cap. ix.

[2] Valer. Mag. Jud. Reg. Credend Cath. [3] Bell. de Rom. Pontif. lib. iv. cap. i.

solùm, certò sciri possit quis sit iste Scripturarum sensus in omni lite κριτικός, ut frustra sit omnis in eos eorumve errores testimonii dictio, frustra argumenta e Scripturis petita, necesse est.[1] Unico interpretationis infallibilis malagmate omnia conficient. Ea vero infallibilis est, quia illorum est. Hæc arx est religionis pontificiæ, imo hæc est eorum religio; et causam habent, quæ caduceo hoc eget. Hoc enim amuleto instructi, extra tela et pulverem positi, nihil usi circuitione, omnes opinione a se disjunctos damnant. Hujus autem persuasionis, atque inde animorum et irarum pleni, nemo est catholicorum, qui non ubivis cum servo illo comico clamat, "Nihil est quod malim quam illam totam familiam (hæreticorum scilicet) mihi obviam dari, primo ipsis eriperem oculos, post hæc præcipites darem; omnes ruerem, agerem, raperem, tunderem, et prosternerem," Terent. Adelph. iii. 2, 20. Eant jam quicunque volunt, et dicam iis impingant, hæreseων aut blasphemiarum insimulent, nisi ipsis judicibus, propriis suffragiis ab omni culpâ expediantur, eam tandem laudem assequentur, quâ se lubentissime carere posse, diu est quòd ostenderint.

Sect. 6. Arce autem hâc occupatâ, in quâ omnis nostra spes sita est, non minus iniqua futura est inter nos concertatio, quàm olim Israelitas inter et Philistæos intercessit, cùm *illis hi* neque ferrum neque fabrum ante pugnam reliquum fecissent, 1 Sam. xiii. 19–22, 22. At per me licet somnient, ut lubet, Romanenses; edant bibantque; at experrecti tandem, se fame sitique æternùm perituros sentient. Neque verò etiam unquam ego istuc negotii iis dabo, ut ecclesiæ privilegia et jura recenseant, cum eos pro ecclesiâ Christi non habeam. Habent itaque aliud quod agant, magis ex sese et majus; nempe ut videant in quo statu res ipsorum, cùm a Christo sint rejectanei, sitæ sunt, atque curent. Quicquid possit ecclesia, eos in hac causa nihil omnino posse asserimus; nimirum inter dominos et fures multum interest.

Sect. 7. De hisce vero humanæ superbiæ portentis ut denuò agamus nihil opus est; extra omnem disputationen jamdudum hæc duo posuerunt nostri theologi. Primò, Unicum, publicum, authenticum, et infallibilem sacrarum Scripturarum interpretem, esse ipsum earum *auctorem*,—e cujus afflatu, veritatem, perspicuitatem, et auctoritatem suam omnem habent,—Spiritum nempe Sanctum, partim in ipsis Scripturis loquentem, mentemque suam clare et dilucide exponentem, eamque per totius divinæ doctrinæ, seu veritatis in illis traditæ, *analogiam*, in omnibus partibus seu locis, ubi eum obscurius locutum fuisse videri possit, revelantem; partim lucem spiritualem in mentes nostras *immittentem*, quâ in omnem necessariam veritatem in verbo

[1] "Num æquum postulant Papistæ, dum volunt ut nosmetipsos ejus judicio submittamus, utque ab illius interpretatione penderemus, quem nos accusamus ut falsum Scripturarum interpretem, imo quem ipsissimum dicimus esse Antichristum?"—Whitak. Con. i. q. 5, cap. iii.

patefactam ducamur; ac proinde, uti reverâ a Christo non est designatus, ita nulli usui esse *judicem* illum *visibilem*, quem ita magnifice prædicant.

Sect. 8. Secundò, Cuivis homini, utut privato, ad cognitionem Dei in Scripturâ revelatam vocato, hoc officii incumbere, ut mentem Dei in Scripturis, hoc est, earum sensum sedulò, mediis omnibus in eum finem necessariis adhibitis, investigare, cognoscere, exponere, enarrare debeat, quantum ad propriam in fide ædificationem opus sit; "etenim justus ex fide sua vivet." Neque sane usque adeo obbrutuit humanum genus, ut semper præstigiatores istos spirituales, qui *αἰσχροκερδείας ἕνεκα*, contra manifesta Christi præcepta, sanctorum omnium exempla, communia rationis istius quâ homines sumus principia, et *κοινὰς ἔννοιας*, posthabitâ æternæ salutis curâ, in cæcitate et ignorantiâ voluntatis divinæ, propriique officii negligentiâ supinâ, mortalium ullos idololatriæ illecebris illaqueatos detinere conantur, ferre velit.

> "Papæ tempus erit cum magno optaverit emptam
> Intactam Scripturam."

Sect. 9. De *interprete* Scripturarum proprio, interpretationumve legitimis mediis, nullam nobis litem peculiarem intendunt fanatici, cùm omnem plane (uti postea videbimus) interpretationem quovismodo institutam respuant, ut *novas* in ejus locum substituant *revelationes*. Verùm cum ad explicationem causarum veræ et legitimæ interpretationis pertineat, quarum principalem efficientem Spiritum Sanctum superius posuimus, non supervacaneum forsan videbitur, si litem illam quæ super hac re etiam inter nostrates theologos intercedit, *ὡς ἐν παρόδῳ* paucis transigamus.

Sect. 10. Interpretes itaque Scripturæ sunt vel privati fideles, prout distinguuntur ab iis qui ad opus ministerii legitime vocantur, vel ipsi ecclesiarum ministri. Ac quidem de ecclesiarum ministris, utrùm scilicet debeant totis viribus interpretationi Scripturarum sedulò incumbere, apud nos nulla quæstio est.

Sect. 11. *Privati fideles*, vel mere privati sunt, vel aliquo modo aliorum curam sibi delegatam habent: mere privatorum sui tantum quisque curam gerit. Hos verbum Dei legere, vel ab aliis lectum diligenter audire, *τὰς γραφὰς ἐρευνᾶν*, "in lege Dei meditari," ut "crescant in gratia et in cognitione Domini nostri Jesu Christi," debere, nisi malint perire, apud nos in confesso est. Neque hæc sine aliquâ verbi interpretatione fieri possunt. Qui sensum Scripturæ per media legitima eruit, quamvis id faciat in eum finem tantum, ut ipse rite mentem Spiritus Sancti percipiat, is eatenus sacram Scripturam interpretatur, Deut. vi. 6, 7. Convicium faceret evangelio, si quis ullum Christianum adultum hoc privilegio fraudatum iret. Liberorum parentibus *οἰκοδεσπόταις*, aliisque, quibus aliorum erudiendi provincia quovis modo demandatur, aliud officium incumbit: ipsi verò,

privati quamvis sint, utrum illos, quorum bono omni jure invigilare tenentur, ἐκτρέφειν ἐν παιδείᾳ καὶ νουθεσίᾳ Κυρίου, et per Scripturarum interpretationem assiduam erudire debeant necne, nemo, nisi qui non tantùm officiorum moralium, sed et naturalium de bono et malo προλήψεων obliteratione, et ἀζηλεψίᾳ fœdâ, corruptæ alicujus ὑποθέσεως patrocinio sacrificare paratus sit, ambigere potest. Vide D. Arrowsmith. Tactica Sacra, lib. ii. cap. ii. sect. 7.

Sect. 12. Porro: cùm Spiritus Sanctus dona sua distribuat, ἰδίᾳ ἑκάστῳ καθὼς βούλεται, privatorum aliqui χαρίσμασι spiritualibus, ad ædificationem plurium aptis, sunt instructi, alii non item. De posterioribus hisce, *thesi* superiori diximus. De *prioribus* autem, utrùm verbum Dei publice exponere, atque ad plures conciones sacras habere (cùm non sint ad opus ministerii per legitimam χειροτονίαν separati), necne, quæritur.

Hi verò duûm generum sunt; aliqui enim sunt mere privati, neque ministerii officium unquam suscepturi; hisce verò, utrùm in iis ecclesiis, quarum sunt membra, atque inter earum cœtuum pomœria, ex ipsarum ecclesiarum mente et consensu, prout fert occasio vel postulare videtur necessitas, Scripturas exponere, aut ex iis de rebus divinis, et ad ecclesiæ edificationem pertinentibus disserere liceat, huc et illuc, inter viros doctos sententiis inclinatur. Alii autem sunt, qui, quamvis nondum rite et ad mentem Christi, ad opus ministerii sint vocati, cùm nulla adhuc ecclesia particularis in qua Christo secundum ordinem in evangelio patefactum servire possint, eos elegerit aut vocaverit, tamen sincere ἐπισκοπῆς ὀρέγονται, et de officio eo suscipiendo sincere, simulatque legitime fieri possit, seriò cogitant; de hisce vero utrùm publice et ordinarie, verbum Dei interpretari, atque ad populum conciones sacras habere, rite possint, etiam quæritur.

Sect. 13. Nobis, quibus in toto ordine ecclesiastico, summa ratio est quæ pro ædificatione et ἐπιγνώσει ἀληθείας τῆς κατ' εὐσέβειαν promovendâ, Tit. i. 1, facit, primi generis hominibus, libertatem illam de qua diximus, modo eâ εὐσχημόνως καὶ κατὰ τάξιν, nempe ab apostolo præscriptam, 1 Cor. xiv. 40, utantur, invitis eripere, religio est. Neque enim χαρισμάτων in eos collatorum ratio, 1 Cor. xii. 7, 11; Matt. xxv. 24, 25; 1 Pet. iv. 10, 11; 1 Cor. xiv. 12, 24;—nec unionis ecclesiasticæ a Christo institutæ finis, 1 Cor. xii. 15–20, etc.; Eph. iv. 3–7, 15, 16; Act. ii. 42;—nec officium quod variorum mandatorum Christi respectu iis incumbit, Rom. xv. 14; Eph. v. 19; Col. iii. 16; 1 Thess. v. 14; 2 Thess. iii. 15; Heb. iii. 13;—nec primarum ecclesiarum praxis (Ep. Eccles. Vien. et Lugdun.; Origen. ad Celsum; Tertull. Apol.; Justin. Mart. Apol.);—nec sanctorum experientia aut fraterna charitas, ὀδὸς illa καθ' ὑπερβολήν, 1 Cor. xiii.;—nec sanctorum sub veteri et novo testamento πρᾶξις celebrata, 2 Chron. xvii. 7–9; Job

ii. 11; Mal. iii. 16; Luc. iv. 16, 17; Act. xiii. 15; 1 Cor. xiv. 24–34;— nec libertas illa quâ omnes fideles liberos fecit Christus, Gal. vi. 1, id patitur.

Sect. 14. Secundum genus quod attinet, ita se res habet. In eâ *communitate* quæ homini est cum Deo, a relatione quam ad Creatorem optimum maximum creatura rationalis non potest non habere, unde cultus atque obedientiæ oritur indispensabilis necessitas, requiritur ut omnes eum cognoscant, et voluntatem ejus percipiant, secundum mensuram mediorum ab eo gratiose illis concessorum. Hæc naturæ vox est, hæc legis; officium hoc in omnium cordibus, pariter ac in Decalogo, primum locum tenet: ἄγνωστον Θεόν nemo rite colit. Inter media autem, quibus ad sui cognitionem revelandam Deus utitur, sacra Scriptura non tantùm longissime aliis omnibus antecellit, sed fines salutares quod attinet, unicum est, seu singulare. Porro: cum medium hoc sit mere *arbitrarium*, atque a solo Dei beneplacito pendeat, dispensatio ejus ad usum hominum, a liberrimâ etiam voluntate divinâ ut pendeat necesse est. Cum dispensatione autem mediorum unà introducitur ad officium obligatio. Atque hæc naturalia sunt, neque institutioni alicui evangelicæ innituntur, Marc. xii. 30, 31. Prout autem Dei cognitio, eâ quæ decet spirituali totius animæ subjectione comitata, in *primâ*, quam vocant, Decalogi tabulâ summum locum occupat, ita, in *secundâ*, amor proximi maximum præceptum est; est autem amare τὸ βούλεσθαί τινι ἃ οἴεται ἀγαθὰ ἐκείνου ἕνεκα, καὶ τὸ κατὰ δύναμιν πρακτικὸν εἶναι τούτων, teste philosopho.[1] Quo magis verò ad perfectionem assurgit, eo perfectius bonum amato ut velit necesse est. Amor autem iste, cùm in summo gradu esse debeat, atque ei quo nosmetipsos prosequimur, par aut similis, non potest is, in quo est, non præcipuum bonum κατὰ δύναμιν communicare cum amato. Quoniam itaque Dei cognitio est vita æterna, Joh. xvii. 3, atque adeo præcipuum illud bonum quod quis cuiquam velle possit, imperante amore hoc non amplius cuiquam, ad id præstandum idoneo, liberum est, velle alios in ea instruere vel nolle, sed, indispensabilis vi officii, ab omnibus exigitur. Jam verò prout dictum est, omnia hæc ordinantur per specialem Dei providentiam: abs eâ etiam est ordinis istius dispositio, secundum quem officium hoc præstari debeat; cùm et occasiones, et opportuna agendi tempora, inde administrentur.

Sect. 15. Hisce ita dispositis, inter eos quibus verbum suum secundum *beneplacitum* voluntatis suæ, gratuitò Deus largitur, Ps. cxlvii. 20, Esa. lix. 19, unà etiam cum eo, per Jesum Christum, Spiritum Sanctum, atque ea ipsius dona, quibus habiles et idonei ad alios instruendum in cognitione sui homines reddantur, largâ manu, et varie distribuit, 1 Cor. xii. Neque largitionem hanc facit erga eos

[1] Aristot. Rhetor. ii. cap. iv.

solùm qui ad munus ministerii in ecclesia aliquâ Christi solenniter vocati sunt, postquam ordinationem, quam vocant, obtinuerint: imo ut donis hisce aliquis ditatus sit, antequam ad χειροτονίαν accedat necesse est, etiam nonnulli iis probe sunt instructi, qui ad opus ministerii tamen in ecclesia obeundum nunquam accedunt: Πάντα δὲ ταῦτα ἐνεργεῖ τὸ ἓν καὶ τὸ αὐτὸ Πνεῦμα, διαιροῦν ἰδίᾳ ἑκάστῳ καθὼς βούλεται, 1 Cor. xii. 11; Eph. iv. 7.

Sect. 16. De quæstione autem propositâ quid tandem dici debeat, haud difficile est conjicere. Sit itaque fidelis aliquis (quod sui est officii quà talis est) cognitione Dei instructus, atque insuper χαρίσμασι spiritualibus ad alios instruendum requisitis, a Deo gratiose donatus; studiumque ac voluntatem habeat, Christo Jesu in opere evangelii inserviendi, locum vero, tempus, aliaque ad officium præstandum, ita ut ordinem nullum legitimum interturbet, per Dei providentiam opportuna obtinuerit, licitum ei esse *evangelium prædicare*, Scripturas interpretari, conciones ad populum habere, quamvis sacris ordinibus, uti loquuntur, nondum sit initiatus, pronuntiamus.

Sect. 17. Et sane quidni ita faceret? an vocatione legitimâ destitui censendus est, negotium alteri præscriptum prosequi, an in aliorum officium irruere, an novum et insolitum quiddam in ecclesia Dei aggredi, an turbas dare, aut alio quocunque modo limites sibi constitutos transilire? Ita sane clamant nonnulli; qui si pudoris egeant, saltem in hâc luce evangelii mutuo sumerent: quânam autem *vocatione* ad moralia officia præstanda opus sit, unde ortum ducat, quæque complectatur unà præter dona spiritualia, ac providentiæ ductum, viri docti atque pii, accurate perpendent, scio, priusquam in eam sententiam concedant. Sanctum sane illud animæ *propositum*, divinitùs alicui inditum, de quo verba fecimus, cum eo χαρισμάτων spiritualium apparatu, qui ad aliorum ædificationem sit necessarius, modo eorum exercitio viam paraverit Dei providentia, cum præcepto Christi ad dona illa exercenda, vocationem illam non constituere, nondum probatum est, neque æternùm probabitur. Atqui si constituant, salva res est; nam omnia hæc antea posuimus.

Sect. 18. Neque *solennia* ulla muneris peculiaris officia hinc violantur. Moralium quorundam officiorum curam, iis qui ministerio in ecclesiis Christi solenniter funguntur, speciali modo demandari certum est. Alios omnes ex eâ *delegatione*, a præstatione eorum officiorum, arceri falsum. Neque munus unquam a Deo institutum est quibusdam peculiare, quo cæteri mortales eo onere expediantur, quod ex *jure naturæ* atque præcepto Christi iis incumbit; neque jugo tali non δυσβαστάκτῳ tantùm, sed et portatu penitus impossibili, ministros opprimere voluit Deus, ut alii liberam ab imperio suo vitam agerent; neque nos aut culpam aut obedientiam aliorum præstare possumus. "Justus ex fide sua vivet."

Sect. 19. Præterea, propositum ineundi munus ministerii, simulac id secundum mentem Christi fieri possit, tanquam ad vocationem de qua agimus requisitam conditionem superiùs posuimus. De confusione autem in ecclesiâ Christi inducendâ, videant, qui εὑρήματα ista novitia, et παράδοξα, nempe ordinandi presbyteros ἀπολελυμένως, hoc est, sine relatione ad aliquos greges seu ecclesias particulares, quarum inspectioni respective vacarent, utpote earum per Spiritum Sanctum episcopi constituti, cujusmodi ordinatio non tantum a concilio Chalcedonensi prohibetur ne fieret, sed, et facta, irrita pronuntiatur; atque ut quis cœtûs alicujus tanquam pastor ejus ordinarius curam susciperet, cujus membris sacramenta evangelica administrare nolit, in eum invehere conantur; sed ἀταξίαν hanc improbant etiam qui a nobis hic diversum sentiunt. Si verò eatenus exemplis causa hæc transigatur, ut appareat hîc nihil insolens nos in ecclesia meditari, a primo usque ortu ecclesiæ, ad nostra tempora illa deducere non esset difficile, quod et alibi a nobis ostensum est.

Sect. 20. Denique si illicitum sit, hominem sacris ordinibus nondum initiatum Scripturas interpretari, aut verbum Dei prædicare, præstitis conditionibus superiùs præscriptis; tum ut hoc illicitum sit, vel a *natura* ipsius rei, vel ab aliquibus *circumstantiis* necessum est; vel forsan alicubi in Scripturis hoc expresse *prohibetur;* illicitum autem ex *natura rei* esse non potest, nisi absolute sit illicitum, ullum hominem, qui non sit verbi minister, alium in cognitione Dei instruere. At vix eò dementiæ ventum esse inter Christiani nominis professores ullos, ut hoc dicant, arbitror. Cain sane, qui ex illo improbo erat, et mactavit fratrem suum, Deo ipsi negavit se custodem esse fratris sui; sed ea vox primo, post Satanam, homicidâ, illiusque similibus digna est. Quousque vero Deus quemvis fratris sui custodem, æternam ejus salutem quod attinet, posuerit, superiùs ostendi: qui vero præceptum fidei in Christum, in ipsâ naturæ lege, primis parentibus inditâ, inclusum credunt, prædicationem evangelii *officium morale* esse non negabunt. Circumstantiæ vero, a quibus causa hæc æstimari potest, eæ sunt, vel quòd plures simul instruendos quis suscipit, vel quòd ordinarie. Eas verò, opus hoc si in se sit bonum, commendare, ac mirabiliter ornare, potius quam illicitum reddere certum est. Neque enim ratio ulla assignari potest, cur si mihi liceat unum aut alterum cognitione Dei instituere, non itidem liceat plures eodem modo informare, idque ordinarie. Cæterum iis, qui hoc omnibus universum fidelibus, quamvis donis Spiritus Sancti, ad alios instruendum requisitis, instructis, nisi sint ad opus ministerii in ecclesiâ aliquâ solenniter separati, vetitum esse affirmant, prohibitionem istam probare incumbit, quod ab eorum nemine hactenus factum esse arbitror.

Sect. 21. Sed ad propositum nobis negotium redeamus, illosque

adeamus quibuscum inprimis res est. Inanis autem est tota illa de quâ paucis egimus *controversia*, neque titivilitio emptitanda si modo nemini mortalium liceat Scripturam interpretari, aut ejus sensum exponere; hoc verò est quod *fanatici* nostrates affirmant. Quid de *ipsis* Scripturis sentiant, superiùs expositum est; quæstio hæc est de *usu* earum in ecclesia Dei. Nonnullos sane illorum sacras Scripturas privatim legere, aut aliqua saltem ex iis prius lectis aut auditis memoriâ tenere constat, imo sæpius sacrum codicem secum circumferunt; in eorum cœtibus autem, eas haud flocci faciunt, neque ullius usus sunt, neque enim unquam aut verbum ipsum legunt, aut aliquam partem ejus exponunt, aut testimoniis ex eo assumptis ad fidem iis quæ proferunt (quâ sunt humilitate), conciliandam utuntur; neque cur ita agerent causa ulla est, cum sint ipsi omnes θεόπνευστοι. In *digladiationibus* autem, quibus maxime delectantur, verba Scripturæ sæpius repetunt atque inculcant, misere plerumque perversa, atque in sensus peregrinos distorta. Omnia autem horum hominum, circa interpretationem Scripturæ, deliria ad tria capita, quorum primum ipsam interpretationem, secundum media, tertium fines ejus respicit, revocari possunt.

Sect. 22. Primò ideo, ulli homini, sacras Scripturas interpretari, vel ullam earum partem, vel sensum ejus exponere, vel quæ sit mens Spiritus Sancti in verbis quæ scripta legimus, aliis verbis enarrare, fas esse negant.

2dò. Unà cum *interpretatione* Scripturæ, ejusdem media, nempe diversorum locorum collationem, antecedentium et consequentium considerationem, vocabulorum atque phrasium examen, ut quis rite mentem Dei percipiat et intelligat, orationem assiduam, analogiæ fidei observationem, atque istius generis alia, omnia rejiciunt, damnant, exsecrantur. Ita scotomate nescio quo percussi, ut omnes alii eâdem cæcitate laborent, contendunt.

3tiò. Denique locorum difficilium elucidatio, veritatis manifestatio et probatio, hæreseων, errorum, falsorum doctorum et doctrinæ convictio, redargutio, per instructiones et exhortationes ædificatio, omnesque alii fines legitimæ interpretationis Scripturarum, iis odio sunt, et abominationi.

Sect. 23. Cum verò duplex sit sacræ Scripturæ interpretatio, una *rerum*, *verborum* altera; illam palam rejiciunt; de hâc vero consilium suum, si quod habent, explicare non possunt. Uti enim, si *sibi constare* vellent, quod et maxime cupere videntur, omnem omnino *interpretationem* rejicere debeant; ita cum sint pæne omnes ἀμαθεῖς, neque ultra linguam vernaculam sapiant, ne, μεταφράσεων rejectione, omni Scripturarum usu se privarent, atque ita in seipsis inauditum stultitiæ et impietatis exemplum palam ederent, astute cavent.

Sect. 24. Odium autem, quod in priorem illam exercent, est *πρὸς τὸ γένος*; itaque non tantùm omnes Scripturæ expositiones in *familiis* privatis, *cœtibus, ecclesiis, scholis* fidelium, vivâ voce factas, ad sensum verbi explanandum, et *intelligentiam dandam per Scripturam ipsam*, hostili animo insectantur, sed et commentarios, cunctosque alios libros, quibus pars aliqua Scripturæ interpretatur, vel veritas ulla ex ea elicitur, aut confirmatur, vel exhortationibus ad sanctitatem et evangelicam obedientiam fideles urgentur, aut alio quocunque modo in cognitione Dei homines instruuntur, eodem loco habent, et conviciis petulantissime lacerant.

Sect. 25. Christianorum omnium *sententiam*, huic delirio *fanaticorum* oppositam, in constanti et non interruptâ omnium locorum, temporum, ecclesiarum, praxi, explicatam habemus; ejus autem brevem *ὑποτύπωσιν* quandam subjicere placet. Interpretatio, uti dictum superiùs, duplex est,—*verborum* una, seu *μετάφρασις*· *rerum* altera, seu cum *ἀναλύσει ἐξήγησις*. Prima est sacræ Scripturæ ex codicibus Hæbraicis et Græcis Veteris et Novi Testamenti, in alias linguas ad usum populi Dei, linguas illas *originales* quas vocant ignorantis, translatio. Veteri ecclesiæ, quæ unius gentis fuit, tota Scriptura erat vernacula. Ea itaque nihil opus habuit translationibus. Quòd Deus autem ecclesiæ, quamdiu erat sermone uno, linguâ communi et naturali, ita ut translatione aliquâ haud egeret, Scripturas concredere voluit, argumento est, eâ maxime opus esse iis, quibus eæ linguæ in quibus scriptæ sunt non sunt vernaculæ aut communes. Cùm itaque ecclesia Christi sub novo testamento, "ex omni tribu, et lingua, et populo, et natione," colligenda fuerit, "eo non pro una gente mortem obeunte, sed ut filios Dei dispersos congregaret in unum," atque ita reapse sit collecta, Apoc. v. 9; Joh. xi. 52; cùmque necessum esset, ut unâ aliquâ linguâ, Dei verbum primitùs scriberetur, quò unicam et prorsus eandem, constantem et invariabilem credendi atque obediendi normam tota ecclesia haberet, translationibus ejus verbi eam nullo modo carere posse, apparet. *Rerum interpretatio* doctrinam, seu veritatem, et declarationem mentis divinæ in Scripturis contentam, spectat; estque veritatis et sensûs Spiritûs Sancti qui in verbis Scripturæ continetur, mediis in eum finem a Deo approbatis rite adhibitis, vi *χαρισμάτων* gratuitò acceptorum, enarratio seu expositio, "ad doctrinam, ad redargutionem, ad correctionem, ad disciplinam in justitia," omnimodamque adeo ecclesiæ ædificationem a Deo instituta.

Sect. 26. Hujusmodi autem Scripturarum *interpretationem*, licitam esse, imo necessariam, apparet (10.) ex natura rei. Deum inæstimabile verbi sui beneficium apud nos collocasse, ut per illud in sui cognitione instruamur, et in confesso est, et Scripturæ ipsius testimoniis comprobatur. *Instructionem* istam ad rationalis creaturæ

captum et intelligentiam accommodam esse debere, nemo (nisi quem male habet quod non bruta simus), opinor, negabit. Mentem ideo et voluntatem Dei, quibus nos instruendos curat, ut amplectatur *verbum illud* necesse est; in eo igitur sensus aliquis est, qui est mentis divinæ sententia. Quid enim rationalis creatura ex verbis alterius percipiat, nisi *sensum* ejus, et mentis sententiam? Finis itaque ob quem Deus nobis sacram Scripturam concredidit, non alius esse potest, quàm ut ex eâ sensum et sententiam Spiritûs Sancti cognoscamus; verba enim quibus nihil sensus subest, *psittacis* et *sturnis* conveniunt: ad perceptionem autem verborum sententiæ in eorum sensum inquisitio necessaria est; hoc autem omnis interpretationis fundamentum est; atque si licitum sit, interpretatio non potest esse illicita. Quid enim? annon, sensu verborum acquisito, quis eum enarrare possit? hoc autem est Scripturas interpretari. Neque enim aut *prohibitum* est aut *impossibile* ut quis proferat, atque aliis exponat, quæ ipse ex verbo Dei intelligit. Cum itaque *verba* Scripturæ *sensum* habeant, seu mentis Dei sententiam contineant, atque eum sensum nos percipere atque intelligere teneamur, neque aliquid obstat quo minus quem nos concepimus sensum aliis declarare possimus; sanè quin licitum sit Scripturas interpretari, negari a quoquam cui sobrium est sinciput non potest.

Sect. 27. Imo *justum* et licitum est, quia *necessarium*. Quot enim sunt, a quibus Scripturam legentibus si sciscitaretur, prout olim ab eunucho, "Nempe intelligitis quæ legitis;" cum eodem eunucho necesse esset respondere, "Quî possimus, nisi nobis quispiam dux viæ fuerit?" Act. viii. Præterquam enim, quod sint in sacra Scriptura τινὰ δυσνόητα, quæ nisi adhibitâ interpretatione legitimâ, plane essent supervacanea, et nullius usus; plurimi sunt ita infirmi et rudes, ut nisi quis viam intelligentiæ interpretando iis commonstraverit, haud unquam perventuri sint ad cognitionem veritatis. Susque deque sane habent Scripturarum intelligentiam fanatici. Hocque est πρῶτον illorum ψεῦδος; modò verba habeamus, de sensu, quasi nihil ad nos pertinente, securi sumus. Hoc verò esse, *divinæ sapientiæ et bonitati* convicium facere gravissimum, *ecclesiam sanctorum* in porcorum haram convertere, *ipsumque verbum Dei*, omnem ejus usum quod attinet, penitus respuere, facilè omnes intelligant. Etenim si Scriptura vel nullum sensum in se habeat, vel talem quem a nobis intelligi aut percipi Deus nolit, aut quem intellectum nemo enarrare potest, quidni miseros homunciones per tale verbum ludos facere (absit blasphemia) æstimandus sit?

Sect. 28. Quid verò cum iis agamus, qui cùm reverâ sint adeo infeliciter stupidi, ut nullâ neque ratione, neque experientiâ erudiri possint, quasi tamen ipsi soli saperent vanâ persuasione siderati, in contemptu eorum, quæ non intelligunt, audaciter persistunt, atque

cum comico illo clamant, "Dicat quod quisque volet, nos ex hac opinione non dimovebimur." Enimvero si omnium seculorum, omnium qui unquam exstiterunt Christianorum experientia,—si ea quæ ipsi vident, spectant, audiunt quotidie, ullius apud eos ponderis essent aut momenti, usum, necessitatem, fructum interpretationis Scripturarum per solennem verbi prædicationem, expositionem vivâ voce aut Scriptis factam negare verecundarentur: spectemus utique utrumque gregem, cùm illum qui, verbo licet fruatur, *interpretatione ejus* destitutus est. tum illum qui, unà cum verbo Dei, *aliis etiam mediis cultûs divini*, quæ in verbi interpretatione plurimùm consistant, fruitur, si modò ex fructibus arbor dignoscenda sit, bona apparebit illa, quæ istiusmodi fructus scientiæ Dei tulit quibus ubique progerminavit legitima Scripturæ interpretatio.

Sect. 29. Porro autem; quamvis et ratio illa quâ homines sumus, et ipsius rei necessitas, et usus, si modo Christiani esse velimus, interpretationem Scripturarum efflagitant, ita ut nemo nisi qui plane stupidus sit, aut cujus ἐτύφλωσε τὰ νοήματα tenebrarum princeps, de ejus necessitate animi dubius esse possit, tamen Pater ille Clementissimus, cujus curæ, amori, fidei toti innitimur, cum sciret nos animo esse remisso et torpido, neque consulere in æternitatem, imo plane languescere in iis, quibus maxime nostra interest omne studium et industriam ponere, mandatis et præceptis suis, quibus, pro imperio illo summo quod in nos habet, ad officium hocce nos obstrinxerit, nobis et socordiæ nostræ spirituali gratiose prospexit; neque obstrinxit modò, sed et insuper cohortationibus etiam ad officium hoc præstandum *paratos et alacres reddere* voluerit. Ita nempe olim, Israelitis præceperat, Deut. vi. 20–23; sicque Jehoshuæ, cap. i. 8; totique ecclesiæ, Esa. viii. 20. Etiam Servator noster Jesus Christus, Judæos tum temporis Dei populum, ad investigationem mentis divinæ in Scripturis mittit, Joh. v. 39. Atque sæpius Pharisæis exprobravit, sensûs et sententiæ Scripturarum ignorantiam, Matt. xix. 3. Cum itaque Deus nobis præceperit Scripturas legere, nocturnâ et diurnâ manu versare, in iis assidue meditari, sensum earum atque scutentiam omnibus in locis pro virili investigare, alios ex iis per mentis suæ expositionem et voluntatis declarationem, instituere, cùm ad plenam et legitimam interpretationem nihil aliud pertineat, illam etiam nobis eum præscripsisse certum est.

Sect. 30. Quanquam autem omnem industriam devoveant fanatici, ad tollendum e medio præsens ministerium in ecclesiis Christi, eo autem quod sciam impudentiæ nondum deventum est, ut negent Christum olim ministros, hoc est, *doctores et pastores*, instituisse; cum eâdem operâ ipsis negandum esset evangelium, non tantùm non esse verbum Dei, sed neque esse verum. Duraturos esse in ecclesiâ istiusmodi ministros ad consummationem usque seculi postea proba-

bitur. Si verò palam fiat interpretationem Scripturarum aliquando fuisse licitam, tum demum eorum rationes qui eam etiamnum esse licitam pernegant, atque pios omnes eo jure aut privilegio, quo gaudebant, excidisse asserunt, perpendemus. Id vero negotii ministris illis olim secundum mentem Christi institutis, datum fuisse, ut consilium et voluntatem Dei de obedientia et salute hominum, per conciones, doctrinas, exhortationes, opportune, importune exponerent, negari non potest, 2 Tim. iv. 2; 1 Pet. v. 2. Dubitanti *innumera testimonia* consensum extorquebunt. Eam autem cognitionem, ipsi, vel immediate per revelationem assecuti sunt, vel ex assidua Scripturarum lectione, auxilium suppeditante Spiritu Sancto. Immediatam revelationem eos omnes habuisse, respectu eorum omnium quæ Dei nomine alios docuerint, neque Scriptura affirmat, neque ipsi unquam de se jactitarunt, neque eâ in re sese apostolis æquiparârunt. "Num omnes apostoli? num omnes prophetæ?" Imo studio, meditationi, Scripturarum lectioni sedulò incumbere, quo ad officium exsequendum, ope Spiritûs Sancti sublevati, idonei redderentur, jussi sunt, vid. 1 Tim. iv. 12–16. In hunc etiam finem, χαρίσμασι πνευματικοῖς, sapientiæ nempe, intelligentiæ, discretionis, ac sermonis, seu facultatis loquendi, per eum qui nihil frustra agit, cumulatissime instructi fuere. Neque eo volente fit, ut quis in sudario talenta seponeret.

Sect. 31. Porro: in opere hoc interpretandi Scripturas *ipse Christus* ministros suos præivit, cum prophetas in Judæorum synagogis exposuit, Luc. iv. 17, 21, atque suis discipulis Scripturam interpretatus est, Luc. xxiv. 27. Eum inter alios secutus est Paulus, "ne quicquam dicens extra ea quæ prophetæ ac Moses futura prædixerunt," Act. xxvi. 22, eorum nempe verbis rite expositis, et in suæ doctrinæ confirmationem allatis; quod idem fecit Apollos, Act. xviii. 28, atque Philippus ad eunuchi conversionem, Act. viii. 34, 35, atque ea demum prophetia illa est, quæ ut secundum analogiam fidei rite instituatur Spiritus Sanctus prospexit, Rom. xii. 6. Hoc itaque maxime proprium est ministrorum evangelii officium, alios instituere in verbo Dei, Gal. vi. 6.

Sect. 32. *Sanctorum omnium*, juxta mentem Dei in ipsis Scripturis consignata et celebrata, *praxis*, fanaticorum delirium amentiæ et inauditæ superbiæ convincit. Quænam fuerit sanctorum Dei sub veteri testamento mens aut sententia, quibus potissimum negotiis, res divinas quod attinet, occupati fuere, suo exemplo docet nos Davides. Nihil pæne aliud vita eorum fuit, quàm in verbo, statutis, et testimoniis Dei, negotiatio; ea legere, omni studio et diligentiâ versare, in iis sese exercere, negotium fuit et voluptas. Quid copiosius? quid sublimius, sanctiusve unquam dici poterat, quàm exercitium hoc sanctorum omnium quotidianum, in Ps. cxix. a Davide celebratum? Uti hinc orditur descriptionem beati viri, Ps. i. 2, ita in

eodem eam finit. Cui vero fini aut bono, verbum ipsum tam sedulò excussisse censendi sunt, atque in eo evolvendo assidue sunt versati? Quid aliud anhelarunt, nisi ut mentem et voluntatem Dei inde discerent, atque ita sapientes fierent ad salutem? Hoc iis intime in votis erat, hoc cœlitus precibus expetebant. Sancti etiam sub novo testamento, nonne, verbum concupiscere, recipere, in eo se delectari, meditari, ut crescant in cognitione Dei, dicuntur, vel jubentur? Istiusmodi hominibus nefas fuisse, sententiam illius excutere, et sensum scrutari, nemo, opinor, dicet. An verisimile sit Deum voluisse, ut, cum Judæis, ipsas literas in numerato haberent, vel ut carmen aliquod incantatorium, cujus syllabis quamvis non intellectis vis quædam occulta subesset, Scripturam legerent, facile est judicare: imo, ut veritatem discernere et judicare, ita Spiritus probare tenebantur; per quam tandem regulam? spiritum tuum privatum? At qui demum eorum Spiritus erit lapis Lydius? Annon alii eum per suum Spiritum examinare debeant? At hujus acervi finitor, non facile invenietur. Qui communem aliquam regulam probandi Spiritus, atque sistendi omnes controversias, esse nollet, illos omnes immunes, has infinitas esse velit. Regulam istam Scripturam esse superius probavimus. At quî potest esse regula, nisi intelligatur; aut quî intelligi sine sensûs scrutatione et sententiæ expositione? Porro, ut per "habitum sensus habeamus exercitatos ad discretionem boni et mali," exigitur, Heb. v. ult., in quâ autem palæstra, aut quemadmodum exercitari debent sensus nostri spirituales? An aliò quam ad verbum Dei amandandi simus? At vero sensus exercitatos habere in verbo Dei, ad discretionem boni et mali, nihil aliud est quam facultatem discernendi veritatem, seu mentem Dei in verbo propositam obtinere. Ita olim ex Scripturis de salute exquisiverunt, atque eas scrutati sunt prophetæ ipsi, 1 Pet. i. 11, 12, atque ita etiam mater Timothei, ipsa prior edocta, 2 Tim. i. 5, filium in verbo erudivit, cap. iii. 14, 15.

Sect. 33. Imo, tam certum est quàm quod certissimum, Deum in infinita sua sapientia, eam voluntatis suæ declarationem quæ in verbo scripto continetur, ita temperasse, atque totam ejusdem revelandi methodum eo ordine disposuisse, ut *necessitatem interpretationis in ecclesia continuandæ*, quamdiu ipsum verbum continuetur, extra omnem dubitationis aleam poneret. Hinc non solùm δυσνόητα illa, quæ superius memoravimus, frequentius in Scripturis occurrunt; neque ordine ullo κατηχητικῷ, quæ faciliora sunt cognitu disponuntur; sed et ἐναντιοφανῆ quamplurima, non nisi per legitimam interpretationem exploranda et concilianda, hic illic apparent; præterea, quæ τροπικῶς et figurate intelligi debent, loca sunt innumera. Quid ergo dicemus; cùm inæstimabile prorsus verbi sui beneficium apud homines Deus collocare voluerit, nonne illud etiam simul iis usui et fructui esse voluerit? nonne ut summo apud eos esset honore et

pretio? Quî verò de sermone aut verbo illo magnifice sentirent homines, quod ab ἐναντιοφανῶν convicio et culpâ expedire non possint? aut quis usus aut fructus ex verbo non intellecto, et quod exponere fas non est, percipi potest? age ideo si viri sint fanatici, experiantur vires, et quid de locis istiusmodi, sepositâ et rejectâ omni interpretatione, sentiendum sit, ostendant.

Sect. 34. Restant *objectiones* paucissimis diluendæ. Quamvis enim me neque in libris fanaticorum editis legisse, neque ex ipsis circa insana sua dogmata coram litigantibus, quod ullius ponderis sit aut momenti, audivisse memini, tamen quæ in contrarium afferri posse videntur, strictim refellere visum est.

Sect. 35. Primò autem, "Cùm omnis Scriptura sit θεόπνευστος, nonnisi θεοπνεύστως, ac vi immediatæ inspirationis et revelationis, eam interpretari debere, æquum esse videtur. At vero ii, qui inter nos quotidie hunc sibi sumunt honorem, interpretandi Scripturam, neque θεόπνευστοι sunt, neque ullam immediatam revelationem de sensu verbi se a Deo accepisse jactitare audent; ideoque omnes æque a munere isto obeundo, arcendi sunt."

Resp. 1. Bene est! Conceditur, Scripturam interpretari posse, si modo interpretes sint θεόπνευστοι. Nulla ergo datur in hoc negotio impossibilitas ex naturâ rei.

2. Revelatio mentis divinæ ab ipso Dei sinu, antea incognitæ, et expositio voluntatis divinæ ex Scripturis, jam revelatæ, adeo inter se differunt, ut nulla ratio fingi possit, cur illius regula, hujus etiam regula esse debeat. Ut quis ex abysso infinitæ Dei sapientiæ, mentem et voluntatem ejus revelet, necesse erat, ut esset ὑπὸ πνεύματος ἁγίου φερόμενος, cùm Spiritus iste solus scrutetur profunditates Dei; ut quis, autem, veritatem in scripturis revelatam aliis exponat, satis est, si χαρίσμασι aliis πνευματικοῖς sit instructus.

Sect. 36. Sed nihil agit interpretatio, nec quicquam promovet; aut προκόπτει ἐπὶ τὸ χεῖρον; ideoque aut frustra est aut perniciosa. Quid enim? an hoc laudi duci potest, ea quæ in se certa sunt, incerta ut sint efficere; an hoc aliud est, quam dare operam ut cum ratione insanias? Etenim infallibile verbum Dei, per interpretationem fallibilem, fallibile redditur; quodque verbum Dei fuerit atque ipsa veritas, errori obnoxium, si non reapse falsum, efficitur. Omni enim interpretationi humanæ falsum subesse posse, quoniam interpretes nullo respectu sint ἀναμάρτητοι, constat. Nemo itaque, dum interpretationibus nititur, nomine et auctoritate Dei alios alloqui debet, cùm non ipsum Dei verbum, ac puram putam veritatem loquitur, sed privatas suas conjecturas enarrat. Apparet ideo, totum illud ministerium, quod in interpretatione et prædicatione verbi scripti consistit, vanum, incertum, inutile et prorsus supervacaneum esse. Atque hæc cardo est, in quo omnia illa sophismata versantur, quibus

auctor "Quæstionis Erotematicæ ad Ecclesias Reformatas" imperitis laqueos injicere summâ ope nititur.

Sect. 37. *R.* Cùm de verbi ministerio ordinario alibi plura nobis dicenda sint, quæ, in objectione hac, illa speciali modo oppugnare videntur, suo loco redarguentur. De interpretatione Scripturæ in genere jam agendum. Dico ideo:—

1. Quamvis, absolute loquendo, omnes verbi interpretes sint fallibiles, id tamen nihil officit eorum ministerio, multo minus incertum reddit aut inutile. Etenim cum Deus populum suum, sensus habere velit "exercitatos ad discretionem boni et mali," atque unctionem illis dederit, quæ de omnibus eos doceat, Heb. v. ult., 1 Joh. ii. 27, unà cum constanti et immutabili omnis doctrinæ et veritatis explorandæ regulâ, ad quam quidem regulam doctrinam apostolicam, non sine laude, olim exigebant eorum auditores; tale ministerium, quod omnia ad lapidem illum Lydium probanda et examinanda proponit, non potest non esse summe necessarium et utile.

2. Verbum rite et legitime interpretatum, etiamnum verbum Dei est; atque ipsa interpretatio, quatenus ab analogia fidei non recedit, infallibilis est, atque ipsissimum Dei verbum, materialiter, uti loquuntur, consideratum, atque reductive. Omnis itaque vera interpretatio est infallibilis, hoc est, infallibilem exhibet veritatem; non ex infallibilitate interpretis, absolute consideratâ, sed verbi rite interpretati. Atque ita, qui absolute loquendo sunt fallibiles, respectu tamen ad regulam, hoc est, ipsum verbum, et causam omnis legitimæ interpretationis efficientem habito, verbum Dei infallibiliter interpretari possunt. At vero defectus nostri, in officio quocunque præstando, ipsum officium irritum reddere non possunt, nec debent.

Sect. 38. Objiciunt tandem miras interpretum inter se *digladiationes*, atque in interpretando contradictiones, hoc vero interpretum, non interpretationum, operantium non operis ex vitio cum sit, ad quæstionem propositam nihil omnino facere videtur.

EXERCIT. III.

De perfectione Scripturæ.

Sect. 1. *Perfectionis sacrarum Scripturarum*, integralis scilicet, quæque finem earum proprium respicit (quam intoleranda prorsus quorundam nequitia pernecessariam fecit), defensionem suscipientes, operæ pretium facturi videamur, si consensum summum, atque concordem ὁμόνοιαν omne genus hæreticorum in eâ vellicandâ, paucis præmittamus, Joh. xx. 31; Rom. xv. 4; 2 Tim. iii. 15.

Sect. 2. Quantùm inter se distant, utque perpetuò invicem digladientur, Judæi, Pontificii, atque fanatici ἐνθουσιαστικοί, apud Christianæ

religionis amicos atque inimicos omnes, nimis trita est notitia. At de thesi propositâ nulla pæne est varietas; quamvis enim ex justo Dei judicio, sermo eis non est unicus,—imo ita sint inter se confusi, ut vix intelligant alter sermonem alterius; tamen ædificandæ turri, e cujus fastigio, fastu quodam giganteo, signa inferant adversa Scripturarum perfectioni, solio illi Dei in terris, summâ consensione unà omnes incumbunt.

Sect. 3. Imo, quòd hic pacem inter se conjunctissime colant, summam rei quod attinet, in causâ est, quòd in toto reliquo religionis negotio, in arma confugiant, atque capitali odio se mutuò prosequantur. Etenim si in sententiam hanc, cujus patrocinium pro viribus suscipimus de plenitudine Scripturarum, lubentes discederent, utque omnis, cujuscunque tandem generis, in religione controversia verbo Dei sistatur, consentirent, errores isti teterrimi, quorum causâ lucem Scripturæ fugientes, andabatarum more, in tenebris dimicant, atque uti olim Hammonitæ, Moabitæ, et habitatores montis Seiris, bellum adversus populum Dei suscipientes, internecioni se mutuò devovent, ad lumen solis hujus, confestim evanescerent.

Sect. 4. Cæterùm, non iisdem rationibus ducti, sed illi pro traditionibus, hi pro enthusiasmis atque revelationibus suis, tanquam pro aris focisque contendentes, atque ita, non secus ac Sampsonis vulpeculæ, obversis caudis ignitas faces in segetes ecclesiæ ferentes, cuncti amicissime e loco suo sacram Scripturam deturbare aggrediuntur.

Sect. 5. Figmentum Judæorum διαζόητον, de *duplici verbo* a Deo Mosi tradito;—uno, ipsam legem continente, quod Deus scribi voluit et jussit; expositionem et proprium ejus sensum altero, Septuaginta senioribus per oralem traditionem ab ipso Mose commisso, atque in usum synagogæ, continuâ successione per sacerdotes et sapientes conservato;—totius apud eos cultûs divini, adeoque horrendæ superstitionis et idololatriæ quibus omnia illorum sacra scatent, per aliquot annorum centurias, radicem et fundamentum fuisse nemo pæne est qui ignorat: nescientes vero summatim docebit, R. M. B. M. præfat. Seder-Zerajim.

Sect. 6. Innumeras sane, easque superstitiosissimas *traditiones* verbum Dei ἀκυροῦντας, a magistris nescio quibus, temporibus Machabeorum, cum primum in varias sectas dissiluit scribarum et doctorum turba, atque deinceps inventas, prætextu exactioris cultûs et obedientiæ, populo obtrusisse Pharisæos; tum cùm Dominus noster Jesus Christus in terris versatus est, ex severis ipsius increpationibus, adversus id hominum genus directis, discimus. At verò distinctionem istam, in universam religionis atque cultûs Dei perniciem excogitatam, tanquam totius religionis ipsorum fundamentum, non nisi decursis aliquot annorum centuriis, postquam immane traditionum plaustrum in ecclesiam invexerant primi fabulatores, venditabant posteri.

Sect. 7. Destructo etenim templo, eversâ per inauditas clades totâ republicâ, cultu qui Judæis proprius fuit, omnibusque adeo cæremoniis a Deo repudiatis atque remotis, (utpote quæ tantùm μεχρὶ καιροῦ διορθώσεως instituta fuere), populus superstes, rebellis, et incredulus, spiritu atque vero sensu verbi Dei destitutus, omnino sine Deo atque cultu omni divino relictus est, Heb. ix. 10; Hos. iii. 4. Ne ideo scelerum flagitiorumque pœnâ vexati, horrenda sua patrumque crimina ex supplicio universis paterent, nonnulli illorum, audax facinus aggressi, traditiones hinc inde dispersas, in *unum quasi corpus et systema* colligentes, illas ingenti ex Ethnicismo, atque etiam Christianismo perverse distorto, mantissâ ampliatas, pro orali istâ lege, quam unà cum Scripturâ Deum Mosi tradidisse somniant, nundinati sunt.

Sect. 8. Hoc vero nihil aliud fuit, quàm hominum in incredulitate et inobedientia obduratorum, a Deo rejectorum, incœptum, quo religionem aliquam, infidelitatis suæ prætextum, haberent; cum probe perceperint, se usque adeo a prioris illius, quam coluerunt, observantiâ esse rejectaneos, ut neque ipsi sibi in eâ placere potuerint. De quibus omnibus, σὺν Θεῷ nos fusiùs alibi agemus, sicut et egimus.

Sect. 9. Insaniâ itaque istâ perciti, non tantùm eos omnes qui de gente suâ soli Scripturæ se unice adhærere profitentur aspernantur, sed etiam *karaim*, aut (sensu eodem) uti loqui amant pontificii, *scripturarios*, seu biblistas vocantes, pessimorum hæreticorum loco eos habent.

Sect. 10. Accedamus ad *pontificios:* ii verò traditionum suarum tuendarum gratiâ, Judaicis istis nihilo meliorum, quas ab apostolis se accepisse fingunt, cum Judæis, rem ipsam quod attinet, idem omnino sentiunt, atque ita, Scripturarum perfectioni, non tantùm occulte insidiantur, sed et γυμνῇ quod aiunt τῇ κεφαλῇ eam a loco suo in ecclesiâ depellere satagunt. Vide Cost. Enchirid. cap. i.; Baron. Annal. tom. i. A.C. 53, 811; Pighium, Hierarch. Eccles. lib. i. cap. ii.; Bellar. lib. iv. de Verbo Dei, cap. iv.; Hos. de Sac. Scr., etc.

Sect. 11. Iisdem vestigiis insistunt *fanatici nostrates* (quibus ad nequitiam hanc viam patefecerunt, qui inter pontificios spirituales dicuntur) non traditionum sane ullarum gratiâ, sed *enthusiasmos* nescio quos, jactantes,—lucem internam atque infallibilitatem quandam inde emergentem.

Sect. 12. Quicquid autem Judæi, quicquid pontificii, in gratiam suarum traditionum, quicquid in opprobrium Scripturarum dicere unquam sustinuerunt, id omne horrendo percussi scotomate, revelationum suarum tuendarum ergo, et dicunt et asseverant impuri homunciones: librorum titulos horridos atque ineptissimos pudet referre.

Sect. 13. "Salvo traditionis apostolicæ fundamento, nihil noxæ

inferretur ecclesiæ, licet Scripturæ deleantur,"[1] inquit ecclesiæ istius scriptor non ignobilis. "Utinam deleantur" inquiunt fanaticorum nonnulli, "ut omnes ad lumen illud quod in iis est, attenderent magis." Hinc puerile istud nugamentum,—*ecclesiam* scilicet Scripturis esse antiquiorem, quod Achillem pro catholicis vocat Eckius, Enchirid. de Author. Eccles. Respon. 3, ad Object. Hæretic. *Revelationes* in locum ecclesiæ substituentes, Achillem suum fecêrunt fanatici.

Sect. 14. Astu itaque diaboli, regno suo a plenitudine et perfectione Scripturarum caventis, factum est, ut qui in rebus aliis omnibus diversissime sentiant, in hanc blasphemiam conspirent omnes.

Sect. 15. Judæis atque pontificiis fauces dudum obstruxerunt viri undequâque doctissimi, disputationibus de perfectione sacrarum Scripturarum contra eos institutis. Pontificiis quidem Raynoldus, Whitakerus, Junius, Rivetus, Gomarus, Gerardus, aliique non pauci; Judæis verò, Raymundus Martinus, Porchetus de Sylvaticis, Petrus Galatinus, Josephus Scaligerus, Paulus Fagius, Munsterus, Drusius, Buxtorfius, Helvicus, Genebrardus, Constan. l'Empereur, Mullerus, Hoornbeekius, aliorumque haud contemnenda manus.

Sect. 16. Fanaticos nostrates, qui præmium strenuæ contra Scripturarum perfectionem oppositioni debitum, a nullo mortalium sibi præreptum vellent, impræsentiarum nos aggredimur; et sane quòd Deo gratiose placuerit, provinciam hanc, adversus verbi sui hostes dimicandi nobis indignis delegare, uti nobis est honorificum, ita quicquid, ope ejus atque auxilio freti, munere mandato fungentes perficiemus, gratiæ divinæ in solidum acceptum ferre debemus.

Sect. 17. Quænam autem sit horum hominum de usu atque perfectione Scripturarum sententia, non facile quis declarabit: præterquam enim quod inter se non conveniant, ita inepte atque odiose in explicandis animi sui sensibus garriunt, dubiæ et incertæ significationis vocibus ludunt, peregrinis quibusdam phrasibus, quæ imperitos homines aut terreant aut alliciant, nihil sani sensûs, aut quod ab ullis sanæ mentis intelligi possit, continentibus perpetuo utuntur, ut multo faciliùs sit argumenta eorum profligare, quam mentem percipere. Imo cum turpis et inhonesta sit eorum sententia, quæ enucleate exposita, remotis strophis atque fucis, ipsa sibi apud probos omnes, etiam non palam improbos, satis esset ad exitium, datâ operâ quâ imposturam faciant, vel ipsam non palam eloquuntur, vel verbis ita consutis et consarcinatis, ut nihil pæne omnino significent, eam mangonizant, atque ita inscite consilium sermonibus obtenebrantes, nihil magis cavere videntur, quam ne intelligantur. Omissis ideo iis omnibus quæ gregis hujus præcipui errones et coryphæi, hic illic impie et blaspheme in sacras Scripturas provocati dixerunt, quæ sit communis eorum sententia, ex libris ab ipsis editis atque colloquiis

[1] Coster.

iiscum institutis, quibus in loquendo multi sunt et inepti, deprompta et collecta, paucis et, si fieri possit, luculenter exponendam duxi.

Sect. 18. Primò ideo, quatenus Scripturas sacras, *manifestationem voluntatis et mentis divinæ* continere agnoscunt, superioribus disputationibus ostendimus. Eas autem ita se habere, respectu illorum qui illas scripserunt, atque illorum etiam, quibus ab initio traditæ fuerunt, concedunt. Porro, declarationem hanc voluntatis divinæ, a Spiritu Christi, qui scriptoribus ejus adfuit, unde veritatem infallibilem declarare poterant, processisse profitentur. Atque ita quicquid in iis libris scriptum est, pro vera et indubitata mentis divinæ declaratione agnoscunt. Hactenus recte quidem; neque enim quisquam hucusque progressus, Scripturam penitus rejicere potest, nisi unà etiam, se plane *αὐτοκατάκριτον* esse declaret; neque huic confessioni renuntiare facile sustinebunt, quamvis ita tenebris offusus sit eorum sermo, atque inconditarum vocum et phrasium fuliginem ita ob oculos jaciant, ut quid sibi velint, vel conjecturis assequi sit perdifficile.

Sect. 19. Neque sane negari potest, locustas hasce, cum primum ex fumo putei prodierint, Scripturas magis sibi despicatui habuisse, atque contemptim magis de iis plerumque fuisse locutas, quam nunc dierum publice loqui sustinent; ita ut nulli dubium esse possit, quin si res eorum secundum vota successissent, eas dudum penitus rejecissent. Omissâ itaque confessione istâ, quam iis non vis veritatis, sed popularium ubivis aliquâ reverentiâ verbi Dei ductorum in capita ipsorum involans furor extorsit, quid porro de declaratione hac mentis divinæ sentiunt, videamus.

Sect. 20. Primo ideo, negant Scripturas ordinariam, immotam, perfectam, et stabilem cultûs divini, atque obedientiæ nostræ ita *regulam* esse, ut nihil opus sit aliis, novis, quotidianis revelationibus, quibus in cognitione Dei, atque officio nostro, ulterius instruamur. Deinde, seipsos, eodem Spiritu afflari, quo olim sancti Dei homines acti prophetiam attulerunt, atque verbum Dei scripserunt, affirmant: ideo omnia ea quæ circa res sacras ipsi loquuntur, non minus immediate a Deo, atque Spiritu esse, neque minus infallibilia, neque minoris in ecclesia usûs, quam ipsæ Scripturæ. De Spiritu vero hoc, quem se obtinuisse gloriantur, cùm ad lumen illorum deventum est, postea agendum.

Sect. 21. Addunt præterea, quòd cum quis intra se, se receperit ad *lumen internum*, eoque Spiritum Christi habeat, illius respectu totus Scripturarum finis obtinetur, neque ei amplius usui sunt; abs eo autem Spiritu ducti, qui communis est omnibus, verùm notus tantùm fidelibus, hoc est, hisce fanaticis, opus præterea non habent, vel doctrinâ vel auctoritate Scripturarum, cum sint ipsi *αὐτοδίδακτοι*, si iis fidem adhibere æquum sit.

Sect. 22. Cùm verò hæc summa sit horum hominum sententiæ, quam, verborum multitudine rudium animos labefactantes, ubivis effundunt, apparet eos, omni usu, auctoritate ac perfectione, sacras Scripturas spoliare. Quæ enim esse possit ejus verbi *auctoritas*, quod ab insano cujusvis fanatici nebulonis strepitu in ordinem cogatur? Qui *usus*, cùm ita impleatur, ut ad illud nemini mortalium opus sit amplius attendere? Quæ *perfectio*, cùm eo non obstante, necesse sit cuivis ad vitam æternam pervenire volenti aliis revelationibus afflari; atque lumen nescio quod, cui nihil commune est cum Scripturis, tanquam doctorem infallibilem sequi, et in omnibus ei obedire.

Sect. 23. Illius ergo Scripturarum adjuncti, quod perfectio ejus dicitur, defensionem impræsentiarum suscipientes, contra horum hominum insanam superbiam, primò, quæ sit de eo nostra sententia, deinde quibus argumentis eam stabilimus, atque fanaticorum errorem falsitatis convincimus, summas rerum tantùm persequens, cursim ostendam.

Sect. 24. Deus sacræ Scripturæ auctor cùm sit agens nobilissimus, ut propter finem agat necesse est. Eum ideo in illâ voluntatis suæ declaratione, quæ in sacrâ Scriptura continetur, finem aliquem constitutum habuisse, certum est; finis autem cùm duplex sit, primò ultimus et remotus, deinde immediatus aut proximus, de utroque sigillatim agendum est. *Finem* verò *ultimum*, supremum, et generalem, hujus revelationis voluntatis Dei, ipsius Dei gloriam esse statuimus; cùm enim omnia operatus sit Dominus propter se, atque gloriam suam, certe eximium hoc opus, a liberâ suâ voluntate procedens, ob nullum alium finem produxit, neque producere potuit. *Finis proximus et immediatus* ostendit unde atque quomodo, ex hoc opere, seu ex hac declaratione voluntatis suæ, exsurgat hæc Dei gloria, unàque, quænam sit ista gloria, speciali modo considerata. Directionem itaque nostram in cognitione Dei, atque obedientiâ ei præstandâ, ita ut tandem voluntatem ejus facientes, salutem æternam atque ipsius fruitionem assequamur, hunc finem immediatum dationis Scripturarum, atque adeo ipsarum Scripturarum, esse contendimus. Hic enim idem est *finis operantis*, atque *operis:* quod Deus per Scripturas intendit, illud ipsum illæ efficiunt, scilicet moraliter, modo operationis ipsis proprio. Apparet ideo gloriam illam summam, quam Deus intendit, in adductione hominum peccatorum ad sui cognitionem et cultum atque vitam æternam consistere; cùm verò disciplinæ cujusvis perfectio consistat in relatione ad finem, eaque perfecta habenda sit, quæ sufficiens est respectu finis sui proximi, ea verò imperfecta, quæ finem propositum assequi potis non est, perfectio Scripturarum in nullâ aliâ re consistere potest, quàm in sufficientiâ suâ, respectu finis sui proprii, qui est instructio hominum in cognitione et cultu Dei, ita ut salutem æternam assequantur.

Hôc ideo sensu Scripturam regulam esse perfectissimam totius cultûs divini, atque obedientiæ nostræ, asserimus.

Sect. 25. Sententia itaque nostra de sacrarum Scripturarum perfectione, in relatione ad finem suum, quam contra pontificios, fanaticos, aliosque, accurate defendimus, hisce conclusionibus continetur.

1. Deus omnia et singula, cujuscunque tandem generis, quæ sunt *ad nostram salutem necessaria*, vel quæ sunt in cultu suo sibi grata et accepta, in sacris Scripturis declaravit.

2. Omnia quæ Deus ita revelavit continentur in Scripturarum libris, vel αὐτολεξεί, et expresse, vel κατὰ συναναλούθησιν, atque inde per proximam, immediatam, planam consequentiam, eliciuntur.

3. Nihil ideo opus est, vel *traditionibus antiquis*, vel *revelationibus novis*, vel cujuscunque ecclesiæ auctoritate, ut ea revelentur vel constituantur, quæ in negotio religionis, sunt nobis necessaria vel Deo accepta.

4. Cùm Deus sit Zelotes, atque *gloriam suam alteri dare nolit*, nonnisi intolerandæ est superbiæ, sub quocunque prætextu id fiat, aliquid hominibus, fide divinâ credendum vel cultu divino observandum, quod non sit ab ipso in Scripturis revelatum, proponere.

5. Cùm itaque revelationes quas jactitant fanatici, sint *vel alienæ*, hoc est aliam doctrinam continentes quàm quæ in Scripturis revelatur, *vel aliæ* tantùm a revelationibus hisce divinis; *illas* blasphemas, horrendas, diabolicas, exsecrandas, *has* vanas, inutiles, utrasque falsas esse statuimus.

6. Lumen illud internum, cujus obtentu, homines a perfectione et plenitudine Scripturarum avocant fanatici, res est omnino *ficta*, atque commentum crasse excogitatum.

7. Scripturam itaque sacram ita regulam esse perfectissimam, in eum finem a Deo nobis traditam, ut ad ipsius gloriam, æternam salutem assequeremur, ut post completum quem vocant ejus canonem, nullæ novæ revelationes circa fidem communem sanctorum, aut Dei cultum, aut exspectandæ sint, aut admittendæ, credimus et profitemur.

Sect. 26. Sententiam autem hanc ita expositam probatum imus, primò auctoritative, deinde ratiocinative; testimonia vero quibus contra quosvis μισογράφους communiter eam probant nostri theologi, ad classes sequentes referri possunt.

Prima *ea loca continet*, quæ *expresse et* κατὰ ῥητόν, vel per *immediatam consequentiam, perfectionem hanc Scripturis ascribunt:* cujus generis sunt, Joh. xx. ult.; 2 Tim. iii. 13–16; Ps. xix. 7; Luc. i. 3, 4, xvi. 29; Act. i. 1; Rom. x. 17; Eph. ii. 19, 20; 2 Pet. i. 19; 2 Cor. iii. 14; Gal. vi. 16.

Secunda testimoniorum classis expresse rejicit *omnes, quascunque tandem*, ad verbum Dei scriptum *additiones*. Deut. iv. 2, xii. ult.;

Apoc. xxii. 18; Gal. i. 8; Matt. xv. 6; 1 Cor. iv. 6; Esa. viii. 20, ad hanc classem pertinent.

Tertia eorum est, quæ *exempla sanctorum apostolorum*, atque ipsius Christi, omnia ad sacras Scripturas explorantium ac explorari jubentium, proponunt, Luc. xvi. 27–31; Act. xvii. 2, 3, xviii. 24, 28, xxvi. 22. Atque plurima alia in hunc finem communiter citantur.

Quartò, Quæ in *omnes religionis usus sacras Scripturas commendant* quartam testimoniorum classem constituunt, Jehos. i. 8; Deut. xxviii. 58; Luc. xxiv. 27; Joh. v. 39; Rom. xv. 4; Phil. iii. 1; 1 Joh. i. 4, ejus generis sunt; omnia verò hæc testimonia, ita dudum ἀναντιῤῥήτως ab exceptionibus pontificiorum aliorumque, a nostris theologis vindicata sunt, ut ei operi ulterius incumbere haud opus sit.

Sect. 27. Omissis etiam iis quæ adversus pontificios pro perfectione Scripturarum ratiocinative disputari solent, iis quæ fanaticorum lumen aut spiritum internum, novas revelationes, enthusiasmos, colloquia cum angelis, atque id genus furfuris reliqua, planissime evertunt, paucis insistemus.

Sect. 28. Argumentum ideo nostrum primum ita se habet: Si revelatio voluntatis divinæ in Scripturis facta, ita sit perfecta, integra atque omnibus numeris absoluta, ut nihil opus sit ullâ aliâ revelatione, per Spiritum, aut lumen internum, enthusiasmum, afflatum cœlestem, colloquia angelica, fictâ vel factâ, ad nos in cognitione Dei, atque officio nostro, in hunc finem ut assequamur vitam æternam ad gloriam Dei, instruendum, tum *incerta, periculosa, inutilia, minime necessaria ea omnia media ad cognoscendum Deum atque voluntatem ejus*, ideoque rejicienda atque detestanda esse, quæ simulant fanatici, apparet. Jam vero perfectionem dictam Scripturarum probamus:—1. Ab *earum auctore*, Deo scilicet, a quo nihil imperfectum ullo modo, multo minus respectu finis, cui opus quodcunque destinat, procedere potest. A causâ perfectâ voluntariâ, non nisi perfectum exspectari debet. Deo enim voluntatem suam revelare volenti, nihil impedimento esse potuit, quo minus eam perfecte revelaret, quàm vel quia non potuit, quod infinitæ ejus sapientiæ atque omnipotentiæ, vel quòd non voluit, quod bonitati ac gratiæ ipsius minime convenit. Perfectam ideo dedit voluntatis suæ revelationem. 2. A *naturâ librorum sacræ Scripturæ;* sunt autem libri Veteris et Novi Testamenti. Ita diserte apostolus de libris Veteris Testamenti, 2 Cor. iii. 14, Ἐπὶ τῇ ἀναγνώσει τῆς παλαιᾶς διαθήκης. Novi Testamenti eadem est ratio versu 6. Jam vero omne Testamentum quamvis humanum sit, perfectum est. Ἀνθρώπου κεκυρωμένην διαθήκην οὐδεὶς ἀθετεῖ ἢ ἐπιδιατάσσεται· nullus irritum facit, aut aliquid ei superaddit, [Gal. iii. 15.] 3. Ab *expresso testimonio:* Ps. xix. 7, "Doc-

trina seu lex Jehovæ integra," i. e., perfecta. 4. A *materiâ*, quæ est omne Dei consilium: "Nec quicquam dicens extra ea quæ prophetæ ac Moses prædixerunt," Act. xxvi. 22. 5. A *fine*, qui est fides: "Hæc scripta sunt ut credatis," Joh. xx. 31; "Fides ex auditu," Rom. x. 17; Ἀσφάλεια fidei, Luc. i. 4; "Sapientia ad salutem," 2 Tim. iii. 15, 2 Pet i. 19; instructio perfecta ad bona opera, 2 Tim. iii. 17; acquisitio vitæ æternæ, Joh. v. 39, xx. 31. Omni ideo respectu revelatio hæc est perfecta.

Sect. 29. Secundum nostrum argumentum a *perfectâ operatione*, seu *effectu Scripturarum*, sumitur, quod sic se habet: Si Scriptura sacra ea omnia efficiat, suo genere operationis ac efficaciæ, moralis scilicet, quæ per ullam revelationem voluntatis divinæ effici possint, quò debito ac sincero cultu Deum adoremus, et tandem ad salutem æternam perveniamus, tum inania sunt alia ista principia cognitionis Dei, de quibus, falsò licet, gloriantur fanatici. At verum prius: etenim, "Lex Dei est integra, restituens animam," Ps. xix. 7; "Lucerna pedibus nostris et lux itineri," Ps. cxix. 105; "Potentia Dei ad salutem," Rom. i. 16; "Sapientem reddit hominem ad salutem," 2 Tim. iii. 15; "Et ad omne bonum opus perfecte instructum," ver. 17; "Potens est servare animas nostras," Jacob. i. 21, 1 Tim. iv. 16. Aliaque omnia perficit quæ sunt necessaria ad Dei gloriam et salutem nostram; sicut videre est, Esa. lv. 10, 11; Jer. xxiii. 29; Joh. viii. 31, 51, xvii. 20; Rom. xv. 4; Heb. iv. 12. Ergo inania sunt, falsa, etc.

Sect. 30. Tertium argumentum oritur ex *iis locis ubi Spiritus Sanctus gravissime damnat et rejicit omnia additamenta* ad verbum Scripturarum, cujuscunque tandem generis sint, ac speciatim omnes istas vias et modos cognitionis Dei, ac cum eo communionis, quos jactitant fanatici. Omnes additiones ad verbum Dei scriptum rejici ac damnari a Spiritu Sancto, apparet ex secundâ testimoniorum classe, quæ superiùs adduximus; præsertim angelorum alloquia: Col. ii. 18, Μηδεὶς ὑμᾶς καταβραβευέτω θέλων ἐν ταπεινοφροσύνῃ καὶ θρησκείᾳ τῶν ἀγγέλων, ἃ μὴ ἑώρακεν ἐμβατεύων, εἰκῇ φυσιούμενος ὑπὸ τοῦ νοὸς τῆς σαρκὸς αὐτοῦ· Heb. i. 2, 4; 1 Cor. iv. 6; Luc. xvi. 29:—revelationes cùm *alienas* a verbo scripto, seu doctrinam peregrinam et ab eo alienam continentes: Gal. i. 8, Ἐὰν ἡμεῖς ἢ ἄγγελος ἐξ οὐρανοῦ εὐαγγελίζηται ὑμῖν παρ' ὃ εὐηγγελισάμεθα ὑμῖν, ἀνάθεμα ἔστω· 2 Pet. i. 19;—tum *alias* tantum; Apoc. xxii. 18, Ἐάν τις ἐπιτιθῇ πρὸς ταῦτα, ἐπιθήσει ὁ Θεὸς ἐπ' αὐτὸν τὰς πληγὰς τὰς γεγραμμένας ἐν βιβλίῳ τούτῳ· Heb. i. 1, 2; 1 Cor. iv. 6; Col. ii. 18;—deinde *spiritum fanaticorum internum*, seu lumen internum, omnibus commune, 1 Joh. iv. 1; Esa. viii. 19; 2 Pet. ii. 18. De quo, sequente disputatione, agendum est.

Sect. 31. Quartum argumentum nostrum ita se habet: Si sæpissime a Deo nobis præcipiatur atque edicatur, ut Scripturis seu verbo

suo diligenter attendamus, ne abripiamur, et ne divertamur a veritate atque rectâ sui cognitione, per *Spiritus decipientes, revelationes, vanas imaginationes, falsos doctores, somnia, visiones, enthusiasmos, alloquia angelica* jactitantes, tum horum omnium respectu, *perfectissima illa est regula* de quâ verba facimus. Verum autem prius: imo tam clara et illustria sunt testimonia huic assertioni fidem facientia, ut ad solem cæcutiat necesse est, qui iis assentire nolit. Ex horum numero sunt, Esa. viii. 19, 20, "Quum enim edicunt vobis, Consulite pythones aut ariòlos, qui pipiunt, et qui mussitant. Legem et testimonium consulunto: annon loquuntur in sententiam illam cuicunque nulla est lucis scintilla;" 2 Tim. iii. 13–17; 2 Pet. i. 19. Atque ea etiam ubi verbi sacri certitudo, usum ecclesiæ quod attinet, verarum revelationum et miraculosarum certitudini præfertur, Luc. xvi. 29; Joh. v. 47; 2 Thess. ii. 2; 2 Joh. 5, 6, 10. Verum ergo posterius.

Sect. 32. Argumentum quintum: Illud ad quod *nunquam, nusquam* a Deo mittimur, ut inde, seu ex eo discamus sui cognitionem, et voluntatis suæ, vel ut inde directionem in officio nostro sumamus, illud non potest esse, fidei, cognitionis, doctrinæ aut obedientiæ nostræ regula, canon, principium, aut, si ita loqui liceat, directorium; at verò ad *lumen internum,* seu *Spiritum internum privatum,* ad novas revelationes, ad enthusiasmos, somnia, visiones, nunquam, nusquam a Deo ablegamur: ergo, etc. Proferant fanatici, vel unum sacræ Scripturæ locum, vel ullum cœlitus demissum testimonium, quo ad eorum fidei et obedientiæ regulas seu directiones mittimur aut nos, aut ulli alii qui ad Deum accedere vellent, et causam non dicimus quin triumphent seriò. Si autem de suo tantùm loquantur, mendaces sunt; testimonium sibi gerunt, neque verum est eorum testimonium.

Sect. 33. Sextò, Ea omnia quæ examinari et probari debent, imo quæ nos ad sacram Scripturam tanquam ad *Lydium lapidem* examinare et probare jubemur, utrum vera sint, atque veritati divinæ consentanea, cum summâ *libertate,* imo *necessitate* ea rejiciendi, si cum Scripturis sacris non conveniant, ea neque seorsim neque simul considerata, aut cultûs Dei, aut fidei et obedientiæ nostræ possunt esse regulæ aut directiones, neque propter se sunt credibilia; at verò prout ex testimoniis superiùs allatis apparet, omnes revelationes, visiones, spiritus, somnia, enthusiasmos, ita explorare, examinare, et probare jubemur: ergo neque sunt regulæ, neque per se fidem merentur. Vid. 1 Cor. xiv. 29; 1 Thess. v. 21; 1 Joh. iv. 1.

Sect. 34. Septimò. *Enthusiasmorum* omne genus *incertitudo,* septimum nobis suppeditat argumentum: Quod omni modo, atque respectu est incertum, imo *incertissimum* et fallax, sive principium revelationis, sive res revelatas consideremus; ad illud, tanquam ad regulam et ducem in viâ vitæ, et cultu Dei, attendere non debemus:

at ea est omnium enthusiasmorum conditio. De doctrinâ ipsâ, seu rebus revelatis actum est argumento superiore: omnimodam autem incertitudinem hisce enthusiasmis, respectu principii, seu ortûs, ascribimus, ea persuasione freti,—

1. A *malitiâ hominum*, qui sæpenumero scienter et volenter, ut cum Simone Mago, Muhammede aliisque nebulonibus τινὰς μεγάλους se ostentent, vel alias ob causas turpes et nefarias, fallacias aliis tendentes, visiones, somnia, spirituales afflatus, revelationes, quibus incautos dolis irretiunt, prætendunt, cum nihil minus sint quam θεόπνευστοι, vel ὑπὸ πνέυματος ἁγίου φερόμενοι. Ita olim fecerunt, Deut. xiii. 1–5; Jer. xiv. 14, xxiii. 21, 22, xxix. 31, 32. Atque ita eos facturos esse prædixit Servator noster, Matt. xxiv. 24. Atque ita etiamnum faciunt. Cum ergo experientiâ ipsâ edocti sumus, hunc atque illum, impostorem et seductorem fuisse inter eos qui lumen internum et revelationes jactitarunt, quis nobis fidem faciet, *reliquos ad unum omnes* ejusdem furfuris, istis meliores aut veraciores esse.

2. A *præstigiis* Satanæ. Hospes est in omni religione, qui non intelligit, patrem hunc mendaciorum, a jactis mundi fundamentis, sub larvâ hâc revelationum ac afflatûs interni, rationes suas ita callide composuisse, ut homines in fraudem impelleret, et unà secum in exitium traheret. Imo ob hanc præcipue causam, uti videatur, Deus verbum suum, prius ore traditum, scriptis concredere, ac sub suâ tutelâ fidis librorum monumentis mandare voluit, ne dolis Satanæ per falsas visiones, fœdas ἐγγαστριμυθίας, oracula, revelationes, enthusiasmos implicitum, perpetuò in salebras incideret quod ei curæ erat, humanum genus. Vid. 2 Cor. xi. 14; 1 Reg. xxii. 22; Zach. xiii. 2; Apoc. xvi. 13, 14; 2 Cor. ii. 11.

3. A *contradictionibus* quibus scatet spiritus enthusiasticus. Non enim tantùm unusquisque, visionem, revelationem, afflatum habet, sed ita fœde et aperte inter se a Spiritu immundo committuntur, ut vix duo eorum in eâdem revelatione et doctrinâ conveniant: sed mire digladiantes, adversas et contrarias sententias quotidie venditant. Etiam in nomine Dei se aliquoties mutuo devovent et exsecrantur: itaque nihil certi ab iis exspectare licet.

Sect. 35. Octavò. Doctrinas *falsas*, verbo Dei *contrarias*, hæreticas, perniciosas, blasphemas, lumen internum, et revelationes laudantes, sæpenumero, imo nunquam non e tenebris in solem producunt fanatici. Quid fiet, rogo, istis doctrinis dæmoniorum? suntne recipiendæ? Ideo, ut mos geratur Satanæ, repudietur atque abjiciatur evangelium necesse est; sintne ipsæ rejiciendæ, ut, procul omni dubio, summâ detestatione diris addicendæ sunt, quid tum fiet de *fide fanaticorum?*

Sect. 36. Denique non levis est momenti, quòd, hisce principiis

nixi, hos duces sequuti, regulam verbi scripti rejicientes, in mores perniciosissimos, idololatrias nefarias, homicidia, scortationes, blasphemias, exitusque infelices, quotidie, ubivis gentium impelluntur fanatici; satis exemplorum in multorum scriptis fide dignis, ubique prostat.

Sect. 37. Restat ut quæ causam suam pessimam sane agentes disceptant, atque contra sententiam nostram objiciunt, diluamus. Id porro fiet quam paucissimis.

Sic ergo procedunt:—

Ob. 1. *Qui ejusdem Spiritûs participes sunt cum iis qui verbum Dei olim locuti sunt, et illud scripserunt, iis non opus est verbo scripto, seu Scripturâ, cum idem Spiritus eosdem effectus producat in omnibus in quibus est; ita ut illi omnes voluntatem Dei declarare valeant, non minus infallibiliter quam scriptores* Θεόπνευστοι. Omnes verò fideles, eum Spiritum habere, inde apparet quod iis promissus sit, Joh. xvi. 7; et omnes baptizati sunt in eundem Spiritum. Eorum ergo omnium respectu, Scriptura est inutilis, neque amplius ei adhærere debent.

Resp. 1. Falsum est, eos sanctos Dei homines, qui aliquam partem verbi ejus scripserunt, opus non habuisse alias partes ejusdem verbi antea scripti consulere, ac mentem Dei inde ediscere. Daniel scriptor Θεόπνευστος, "consideravit ex libris," Dan. ix. 2. "Prophetæ exquisiverunt et scrutati sunt Scripturas de salute quam isti prædicabant," 1 Pet. i. 10–12. 2. Falsum est scriptores Θεοπνεύστους totam Dei voluntatem semper habitualiter et infallibiliter intellexisse, vi Spiritus prophetici vel ἀποκαλύψεως quem receperant; cùm sæpenumero respectu unius particularis doctrinæ, aut prophetiæ iis datus sit. 3. *Falsissimum* est eos omnes qui ejusdem Spiritûs participes fiunt, in eundem finem, atque respectu eorundem eum accipere. "Distinctiones donorum sunt, sed idem Spiritus," 1 Cor xii. 4; "num omnes prophetæ?" ver. 29. 4. Omnes fideles acceperunt Spiritum regenerantem, sanctificantem, consolantem; sed non respectu donorum extraordinariorum, prophetiæ scilicet, infallibilitatis, peculiaris inspirationis ad declarandam voluntatem Dei immediate, et infallibiliter ab ipso Deo.

Sect. 38. *Ob.* 2. Instant: *Spiritus iste promissus est, ut ducat nos in omnem veritatem.*

Resp. Recte. Sed per media a Deo in eum finem instituta; ideo verbum unà cum Spiritu promissum est: "Hoc erit fœdus meum cum istis, ait Jehova; Spiritus meus qui est in te, et verba mea quæ posui in ore tuo, non recedent ex ore tuo, aut ex ore seminis tui," Esa. lix. 21.

Sect. 39. *Ob.* 3. *Postquam impleta est Scriptura, atque finem suum assecuta est, desinit esse usui; at Scriptura impleta est, et finem suum assecuta est in iis omnibus, qui ad Christum intus*

latentem, adeoque lumen internum sunt adducti: ergo iis amplius usui non est.

Resp. 1. Concedimus majorem: etenim προφητεῖαι καταργηθήσονται, γλῶσσαι παύσονται, 1 Cor. xiii. 8. 2. Minorem negamus. Falsissimum enim est, sacram Scripturam, dum in hoc mundo hæremus, respectu nostri totum finem suum obtinere, aut obtinere posse; ideoque usque dum præterierint cœlum et terra, "iota unum aut unus apex nequaquam præteribit ex lege," Matt. v. 18, non enim tantùm ingeneratio fidei, sed et in eâ, dum Spiritum hunc ducimus, ædificatio, finis est Scripturæ. 3. Est duplex ideo adductio ad Christum; per gratiam una, altera per gloriam. Quando quidem adducimur ad Christum in gloriâ, cessabit Scripturæ usus presenti statui accommodatus; videbimus enim eum sicut est, facie ad faciem, et similes ei erimus. Quinetiam ipsa fides, quatenus verbo Dei scripto nitebatur, abolebitur: at non obstante priore istâ ad Christum adductione per fidem et gratiam, non plus nobis opus est victu et vestitu, ut vitam hanc animalem traducamus, quam Scripturis ut ejus cognitione atque fide indies erudiamur. Fanaticos vero non esse perfectos, neque ad Christum in gloria adductos, nobis testimonio sunt, illorum mendacia, fraudes, scelera, hypocrisis; iis vero, qui immunes se esse ab his omnibus aliisque peccatis vel levissimis, impudenter gloriantur, punitiones et incarcerationes, quas ἀκαταστασίᾳ sua sibi ultro accersunt, de quibus muliebriter quiritantur, esse debeant. Imo liquidò constat, fanaticos nonnullos, minore periculo et damno, tentasse vitam hanc animalem per quadraginta dies sine victu traducere, quamvis id a quibusdam non tantùm periculo, sed actuali vitæ dispendio factum est, quàm vitam spiritualem, sine verbi Dei usu, a mortiferis deliquiis immunem præstare.

Sect. 40. *Ob.* 4. "Scriptura est litera mortua; Spiritus vivificat:" *quis literæ mortuæ, nisi ipse sit mortuus adhærere velit?*

Resp. 1. Falsissima est ista assertio: Scriptura est verbum Dei, quod vivum est et efficax, Heb. iv. 12, neque uspiam litera esse mortua dicitur: occidit quidem, sed ideo viva est.

2. Litera occidit, quatenus litera legis est, ab evangelio separata, et quatenus a Spiritu, et vero sensu voluntatis Dei destituuntur, qui literæ adhærent, quæ Judæorum conditio fuit, contra quos eo loci disputat apostolus.

Sect. 41. *Ob.* 5. "Omnes filii tui erunt a Deo docti," Esa. liv. 13; *ergo aliâ institutione aut doctrinâ non opus est.*

Resp. 1. Scriptura sacra est ipsa doctrina, quam a Deo docemur, Ps. cxix. 2. Promissio facta est non omnibus, sed filiis ecclesiæ. 3. Causa principalis instructionis, quæ rem ipsam effectam dabit, non excludit alias, quibus ipsa uti velit; Deus nos docet, sed per Spiritum et verbum, Matt. xxviii. 19, 20, 2 Cor. iv. 6, 7.

Sect. 42. *Ob.* 6. Objiciunt illud prophetæ, "Non amplius docebunt quisque amicum suum, et quisque fratrem suum, dicendo, Cognoscite Jehovam: nam quilibet eorum cognoscent me, a minimo eorum usque ad maximum eorum, dictum Jehovæ," Jer. xxxi. 33, 34.

Resp. 1. Si verba hæc absolute intelligi debeant, tum aperte condemnatur *horrida illa vociferatio*, quâ per vicos urbis, agros, atque templa quæ vocant, illud, "cognoscite Dominum" reboant fanatici. 2. Is tantùm docendi modus seu gradus rejicitur, qui necessarius est eorum respectu quorum cordibus lex non est inscripta: nam negatio ista docendi per amicos et fratres effectus est *inscriptionis legis* in eorum cordibus: externus ideo rejicitur ille docendi modus, atque eorum respectu tantùm in quorum cordibus lex erat per gratiam inscribenda, quatenus usui erat ad convincendum eos in ipsius gratiæ efficacis absentiâ. 3. *Uberior gratia, clarior cognitio*, promptior observantia, promittuntur; instituta Dei non condemnantur.

Sect. 43. *Ob.* 7, ex Luc. xvii. 21, "Regnum Dei," inquit Servator, "in vobis est:" hoc est in impiis Pharisæis; ergo in omnibus quibuscunque. Quid igitur opus est verbo regni exteriori cùm ipsum regnum sit in omnibus?

Resp. 1. Verbum illud ἐντός semel tantùm alibi in Novo Testamento legitur, ibique substantive cum articulo usurpatur, pro parte vasis interiori, Matt. xxiii. 26. Hic loci, eodem sensu usurpari videtur, quo ab eodem evangelistâ, ἐπί, cap. xi. 20, "Εφθασεν ἐφ' ὑμᾶς ἡ βασιλεία τοῦ Θεοῦ: hoc est, "Ad vos pervenit regnum Dei;" nempe in prædicatione, miraculis, atque præsentiâ ipsius Christi. Hoc sensu regnum Dei erat, non *in* Pharisæis, sed *inter* eos; eo quod Christus ipse, istius regni Rex, fundator, præco, jam tum id prædicabat, et in medio illorum fundamenta ejus posuit. Hanc verò verborum expositionem ut amplecterer, cogit Servatoris scopus, atque totius sermonis cohærentia. Ver. 20, docet incredulos Judæos Servator noster, regnum Messiæ (quod regnum Dei vocabant) non eo modo venturum quo ipsi somniabant, nempe μετὰ πολλῆς φαντασίας· Οὐκ ἔρχεται, inquit, ἡ βασιλεία τοῦ Θεοῦ μετὰ παρατηρήσεως: non tali utique observatione, quali, regni terreni opinione præoccupati, illi usi sunt. "Sed inter vos jam est," inquit; "quod etiam ex miraculis quæ facio, atque doctrinâ quam doceo, facile percepturi essetis, nisi cœci essetis atque fatui." 2. Sano sensu concedi potest *regnum Dei* esse in fidelibus, cum sit "justitia, pax, et gaudium in Spiritu Sancto," Rom. xiv. 17. At tum (1.) non est *in omnibus;* nam in omnibus non esse justitiam, pacem, et gaudium, in confesso est. (2.) Ista sunt effectus prædicationis verbi, ac per eam indies in cordibus sanctorum augentur. (3.) Regnum hoc erat jam tum in aliquibus Judæorum, credentibus nimirum in Christum. (4.) In omnibus esse debet qui istius regni sunt participes et hæredes. (5.) Christus itaque suis verbis, exspectationem regni terreni, cum

pompâ mundanâ venturi, damnat; præsentiam regni in suâ personâ et prædicatione confirmat; fructum regni in homine interiori collocat; verbum suum nequaquam irritum facit.

EXERCIT. IV.

De lumine interno.

Sect. 1. De lumine agentibus, exorandus est "Pater" ille "luminum" a quo descendit omnis donatio bona, et omne integrum donum, ut splenderet in cordibus nostris, ad præbendum lucem notitiæ gloriæ suæ in facie Jesu Christi, ut a potestate tenebrarum liberati, in sui cognitionem atque cultum rite dirigamur.

Sect. 2. Est autem *lux* increata vel creata. Quæ *increata* est, Deus est: Ὁ Θεὸς φῶς ἐστι, 1 Joh. i. 5; et φῶς οἰκεῖ ἀπρόσιτον, 1 Tim. vi. 16; Λόγος etiam, seu Filius Dei æternus, uti ζωή sic et φῶς dicitur, Joh. i. 4, 5. Lux autem hæc divina increata, quæ in Deo est, et quæ Deus esse absolute dicitur, essentiale est divinæ sapientiæ, sanctitatis, intelligentiæ, simplicitatis, bonitatis, et nativum ἀπαύγασμα, seu splendor, quo Deus summe perfectus, ab omnibus ignorantiæ, mutationis, injustitiæ tenebris remotissimus, gloriose est αὐτάρκης.

Sect. 3. Porro: lux Deus esse dicitur respectu ad creaturas habito, quatenus nimirum iis omnibus, omnis lucis fons atque auctor ipse solus est, atque semper exstitit. "Jehova lux mea," Ps. xxvii. 1; Ὁ λόγος est lux hominum," Joh. i. 4; "Lux mundi," Joh. viii. 12, seu omnis veræ lucis fons et origo. Ut respectu gloriosæ suæ essentiæ, ipse lucem inhabitat, ita respectu nostri, lux cum eo habitat, Dan. ii. 22, indeque emanat secundum beneplacitum voluntatis suæ. Deo etiam alio sensu lucem tribui in Scripturis apparet; nempe non quatenus essentialis est naturæ divinæ proprietas, et infinita ejus splendescens majestas, neque quatenus creaturas luce perfundit, sed quà est perfectionum divinarum effulgentia et fulgor, quæ in notitiam et conceptum rationalem cadunt. "Hac luce se amicit Deus, tanquam panno," Ps. civ. 2; "Et splendor ejus tanquam lux est," Hab. iii. 4. Ita olim visionibus apparuit Ezekieli, i. 27, 28; Danieli, vii. 9, 10, 11, aliisque; neque hoc a gloriâ Dei, seu magnificâ excellentiarum Dei æstimatione, differt.

Sect. 4. Lumen *creatum* est vel naturale, sensibile, et *proprium*, seu *metaphoricum*. De lumine naturali, quo res visibiles in sensatam notitiam inferuntur, nobis nihil dicendum est.

Sect. 5. Lumen *metaphoricum* duplex est,—conditionis et personæ.

Lumen *conditionis* est celebris cujuscunque status cum famâ et gloriâ. Sic gloria ecclesiæ et res ejus prosperæ lux ecclesiæ nuncupantur, Isa. lx. 1, 3; gloria cœlestis "sors est sanctorum in luce," Col. i. 12; et impii in æternum non sunt fruituri luce, Ps. xlix. 19.

Sect. 6. Lumen *reale* et *personæ* est vel internum et subjectivum, vel externum et objectivum. Lumen hoc, quod ab objecto ita vocatur, prout respicit subjectum lucis internæ capax, nihil aliud est quàm ipsa veritas, cujuscunque tandem generis. *Sermo propheticus* est "lucerna splendens in obscuro loco," 2 Pet. i. 19; mittit Deus lucem et veritatem, Ps. xliii. 3, 4; seu splendescentem et illuminantem suam veritatem, nam "lucerna præceptum est, et doctrina lux," Prov. vi. 23.

Sect. 7. Lumen *internum* subjecti, vel mentem et intellectum respicit, vel voluntatem et affectus. Sensu posteriori "lux sata est justo, et rectis animo lætitia," Ps. xcvii. 11; hoc est gaudium quo doloribus eorum subveniatur. "Qui lucem non habet?" Isa. l. 10; is est, cui pax, gaudium, et consolatio deest. Cum adversus Hamanem successum obtinuerint Judæi, lucem et lætitiam (gaudium et gloriam) eos assecutos fuisse dicit Scriptura, Esth. viii. 16. Luctus et dolores tenebras amant.

Sect. 8. Lux autem, quæ proprie *mentem* respicit, generaliter considerata, est *vis ratiocinativa, seu facultas illa intelligendi quâ omnis creatura rationalis prædita est.* Εἰ οὖν τὸ φῶς τὸ ἐν σοὶ σκότος ἐστί, τὸ σκότος πόσον; inquit Servator, Matt. vi. 23. Lux ista est ὄψις διανοίας, ut veterum alicui placuerit, seu ὄμμα τῆς ψυχῆς, ut alteri, et ὀφθαλμὸς διανοίας. Mentem aliquorum tenebris obscuratam esse scribit apostolus, Eph. iv. 18; hoc est, cœcitate et ignorantiâ laborat eorum mens, seu intelligendi facultas;—eorum scilicet respectu, de quibus verba facit. Commune quidem hoc lumen omnibus est, sed non in omnibus æquale. Unus alii anteit sapientiâ: hic ingenio pollet, ille fungus, fatuus est; unus subtilissimâ ingenii acie præditus, alius omni rationis usu et exercitio destituitur.

Sect. 9. Lux autem hæc seu intelligendi facultas,—respectu objecti seu rerum cognoscendarum et intelligendarum,—in eam quæ est mere naturalis, quâ res naturales in naturâ suâ absolute consideratæ, cum relatione ad finem suum proximum percipiuntur; eamque quæ circa res *civiles* quæ ad vitam hanc in mundo inter alios degendam spectant, versatur; atque illam, quæ *res spirituales*, omniaque alia in ordine ad finem supernaturalem, spiritualem, et ultimum discernit,—dispescitur. De posteriore tantùm agendum. Lumen autem hoc *internum spirituale*, seu facultus intelligendi πνευματικὰ πνευματικῶς, in ordine ad finem ultimum creaturæ, pro vario ejus statu, varium fuit, atque etiamnum est.

Sect. 10. Cùm Deus hominem integrum seu perfectum (statum illum in quo, et finem ob quem factus est quod attinet), atque in ima-

gine suâ creaverit, in confesso est, eum ex gratiosâ Creatoris dispensatione, eo lumine, eâ scientiâ, seu sciendi et intelligendi facultate instructum fuisse, unde potis erat, modo salutari, omnia ea apprehendere, atque rite intelligere, quæ ei scitu vel intellectu necessaria ullo modo erant, ut Deo secundum voluntatem ejus dicto esset obediens, atque ita tandem ad ejus fruitionem perveniret. De lapsu primorum parentum, peccati in mundum ingressu, statûs innocentiæ, atque fœderalis cum Deo acceptionis amissione, de inimicitiis inter Deum hominemque constitutis, utque homo lucis hujus primogeniæ jacturâ sit multatus, nunc non est disserendi locus.

Sect 11. In statu ideo, quem vocant, *peccati*, atque amissionis gratiæ, omnibus hominibus mentis hoc lumen præstrinxit cæcitas, atque insuper *tenebris* sunt offusi, ita ut tum intus, tum extra, finem suum ultimum ac Dei gloriam quod attinet, meræ sint *tenebræ*, neque enim aut ipsi sunt capaces eorum quæ Deus revelavit, ita ut ea modo salutari seu spirituali intelligerent, neque ea revelatio voluntatis divinæ, quam in statu innocentiæ habuerunt, sufficiens erat iis jam in peccato constitutis, ad Deum rite cognoscendum atque colendum. Primo respectu, ipsæ tenebræ vocantur, Joh. i. 5; Eph. v. 8. Mens et intellectus eorum obscurari dicitur, Eph. iv. 18; ipsosque res spirituales percipere non posse, affirmatur, 1 Cor. ii. 14; imo, eousque *mortuos, cæcos, surdos, fatuos* esse, ut neque scire possint aut intelligere res divinas, eo modo qui decet, ut Dei in gloriam aut ipsorum in salutem cedat, ubique pronuntiat Spiritus Sanctus. Secundo respectu, eos ambulare, sedere, esse in tenebris, nec scire quo vadunt, asseritur. Utroque autem respectu Christus lux hominum est; nam cùm nemo unquam Patrem viderit, hoc est, consilium aut voluntatem ejus de salvandis peccatoribus perspectam habuerit, unigenitus ille Filius, qui est in sinu Patris, ille nobis exposuit, Joh. i. 18. Πολυμερῶς autem et πολυτρόπως, eum hoc fecisse constat, variisque gradibus veritatem latentem prius in sinu Patris, in lucem hominum produxisse, usque ad perfectum diem. Primò enim per Spiritum suum in prophetis, 1 Pet. i. 11, qui adventum suum in carne antecesserunt, suo ordine ac tempore quisque a seculo usque, Luc. i. 70, dubiâ quasi luce, tanquam lucescente in diem sole, Patrem exposuit. Deinde, in *personâ suâ* evangelium annuntiavit, pacem prædicans, iis qui prope, atque iis qui longe erant. Tandem exorto justitiæ sole, cum curatione in alis ipsius; Spiritum suum Sanctum in apostolos suos, aliosque discipulos effudit, quo idonei redderentur præcones novi testamenti, et totum Dei consilium revelarent, ad præbendum lucem notitiæ ipsius ad salutem omnium qui ei obedire vellent. Ita "populus positus in tenebris vidit lucem magnam; positis in regione et umbra mortis lux exorta est," Matt. iv. 16. "Vita et immortalitas in lucem productæ sunt per evangelium," 2 Tim. i. 10.

Hujus itaque expositionis Patris, seu revelationis voluntatis ejus de obedientiâ atque salute peccatorum, respectu, fatemur Christum lucem esse mundi, omniumque adeo hominum; non tantùm quia absque eo, nulla divina veritas revelabatur unquam, sed quia lux illa Scripturâ sacrâ fulgens, sufficiens est ad perfundendum omnes homines luce salutari, ad quos per Dei providentiam pervenerit. Sed de hac luce superiùs actum est.

Sect. 12. Cum verò ea sit mentis humanæ cæcitas, atque ita intellectus omnium tenebris sit offusus, ut quamvis eos undique circumfulgeat verbi divini *lux*, nihil omnino πνευματικῶς seu salutariter percipere possint, Joh. i. 5. Jesus Christus *vera lux* et vita hominum, vi Spiritus sui omnipotentis efficaci et verticordiâ, mortuos in peccatis excitat, cæcis aperit oculos, mentem dat ad cognoscendum verum illum, e potestate tenebrarum in admirabilem lucem suam transfert, novâ divinâ spirituali luce eos perfundit, quâ possint scire atque percipere res spirituales modo spirituali, ad Dei gloriam atque sui salutem.

Sect. 13. Christum verò non *omnes et singulos*, sed *quosvis* tantùm, hoc est *electos*, luce hâc divinâ perfundere atque salutariter illuminare, ita certum est ex innumeris Scripturæ testimoniis et omnium seculorum experientiâ, ut cæcus sit oportet, et omni spirituali intelligentiâ destitutus, qui contrarium vel unquam somniaverit.

Sect. 14. Lucis quidem *scintillulas* quasdam istius quam in statu innocentiæ e lege creationis suæ obtinuit primus homo, in posteris ejus adhuc *splendescere* fatemur. Non tantùm enim multæ κοιναὶ ἔννοιαι, et veritatis principia in intellectu fixa hærent, quorum vi res aliquas divinas percipere possint homines, atque inter bonum et malum morale discernere, sed et συνειδήσεως ope, sibi etiam prospicere de officiis multis, respectu habito ad judicium Dei cui se subesse cognoscunt. Porro: lumen hoc adultis omnibus, per considerationem operum Dei tum creationis, tum providentiæ, ἀΐδιον αυτοῦ δύναμιν καὶ θειότητα manifestantium, aliquibus vero per verbi prædicationem, *augeri* ac *stabiliri* dicimus. Quousque verò lumen hoc ad obedientiam Deo præstandum, animos hominum dirigat, stimulet, impellat, utque per illud ἀναπολογήτοι fiant, nihil attinet hic loci subtilius disputare.

Sect. 15. *Lux* vero hæc *nictans*, neque e perniciosissimis tenebris emergens, illa est, quam tantopere prædicant nostrates fanatici, illamque nescio quem Deum, aut κέρας Ἀμαλθείας, Deo quopiam melius, statuunt; nam,—

1. Negant lumen hoc naturale esse, aut ita dici debere; sed a Christo et Spiritu Christi esse, imo *Christum ipsum esse*, qui ita omnibus universum hominibus adsit.

2. *Aiunt salutare* esse, ejus nempe generis et efficaciæ, ut ei in omnibus attendere debeat, quisquis Deo placere, aut secundum voluntatem ejus obedire ei, velit.

3. *Sufficiens ad salutem*, atque ejusdem cum verbo Dei scripto auctoritatis, ita ut qui ei, prout decet, attendat, atque ei se morigerum et dicto obedientem præstet (quod facit quisquis officium suum facit, atque omnes sub pœnâ æternæ damnationis facere tenentur), nullo alio *lumine*, neque *interno* illuminante et dirigente, neque *externo* voluntatem divinam revelante, opus habeat; hoc est, neque Spiritu intus illuminante, neque Scripturâ extra docente.

4. Denique lumen hoc *Christum esse*, qui olim in prophetis, apostolis, aliisque verbi divini scriptoribus fuit; ita ut vi ejus non minus infallibiliter voluntatem Dei ipsi exponere possint, quam olim scriptores θεόπνευστοι.

Sect. 16. Hæc vero τερατολογιῶν fanaticorum *de luce interna* summa est; hanc in tenebris, hanc in luce hominum magnifice jactitant, strenue vociferantes, atque diris omnibus devoventes, quos eâdem insaniâ iiscum non laborare sentiunt. Antea verò quam sophismata quibus sententiam suam stabilire satagunt, discutienda suscipimus, necesse est ut thesin nostram, vanissimo huic figmento oppositam, paucis subjungamus et defendamus; ea verò hisce propositionibus continetur.

Sect. 17. 1. *Lumen internum* omnibus commune, aliquali principiorum veritatis notitiâ, et vi conscientiæ consistens, *naturale* est, atque ita dicendum; hoc est, naturæ humanæ a primâ creatione *inditum* fuit, atque etiamnum ab ipsis naturæ principiis fluit: itaque lumen hoc a Christo non esse mediatore, quà est novi fœderis mediator, affirmamus, multo minus esse ipsum Christum.

2. *Lumen* hoc utcunque ei attendatur, non est ullo respectu *salutare*, sed in rebus omnibus divinis, finem ultimum quod attinet, meræ tenebræ et cæcitas.

3. Ideoque ad salutem sufficiens non est, neque subjective, ita ut vi ejus quis ea quæ sunt ad salutem necessaria aliunde revelata πνευματικῶς percipiat; neque objective, hoc est, ea omnia quæ sunt ad salutem necessaria revelare non potest.

4. Christus nullâ sub consideratione *lumen salutare* omnibus et singulis hominibus indulsit.

5. Nullius *luminis interni*, cujuscunque tandem, quamvis sit salutare, is usus aut finis est, ut ei tanquam *duci* viæ nostræ, et *regulæ*, attendere debeamus, sed in hunc solùm finem gratiose a Deo conceditur, ut vi ejus, istam regulam et mentem Domini in eâ revelatam, modo salutari percipere possimus.

Hasce vero propositiones, uno aut altero argumento sigillatim probabimus.

Sect. 18. *Primam* propositionem quod attinet argumenta nostra sic se habent:—

(1.) Quod *naturæ rationali*, ejusque participibus, ad gloriam Dei per obedientiæ moralis præstationem manifestandam creatis, vi legis creationis indi debuit, atque actualiter inditum fuit, neque unquam est amissum, id iis est naturale: id enim a naturâ suâ, posito hoc quòd Deus obedientiam ex iis exegerit, habuerunt. Hanc verò lucis hujus esse conditionem nemo, opinor, negabit. Fuisse primitus homini inditam, status primi hominis, de quo abunde a pluribus actum est, probat. Non fuisse amissam actualiter et respectu eventûs, quicquid sit de merito, experientia docet.

(2.) Id quod fluit a *principiis naturæ* necessariò et infallibiliter, nisi in operatione suâ ex aliquo accidente ipsa impediatur, illud omnibus ejus naturæ participibus est naturale, hoc enim quod est a principiis naturæ, naturale dicitur. Lumen autem hoc est nativa, propria, et inseparabilis mentis et conscientiæ vis, et *efficacia;* oculus, acies mentis est. Συντήρησιν vocant Græci; quæ habitus est naturalis, quo intellectus hominis aptus natus est ad assensum præbendum principiis operationum moralium; συνείδησις est, seu necessarium hominis de se judicium habitui illi conforme. Itaque si lumen hoc non sit naturale, neque intellectus, neque mens, neque conscientia homini est naturalis.

Sect. 19. 2. Non esse salutare, cùm sit naturale, nimis est manifestum; quid enim naturâ sumus? "Filii iræ," Eph. ii. 3; "Tenebræ," cap. v. 8, Joh. i. 5; "Mortui in peccatis," [Eph. ii. 1.] Quid mens nostra? "Inimicitia adversus Deum," Rom. viii. 7; "Caro," Gal. v. 16; "Obscurata vanitate," Eph. iv. 18. Ita ut vi ejus res salutares percipere non possumus, quia spiritualiter dijudicantur, 1 Cor. ii. 14. Nihil aliud sumus nisi caro, Joh. iii. 6. In eâ autem carne nihil boni habitat, Rom. vii. 18; neque quicquid aliud agit, aut agere potest, nisi concupiscere adversus Spiritum, Gal. v. 17. Lumine ideo hoc non obstante, cùm apparet omnes homines mortuos, cæcos, surdos esse, mentem et intellectum habere obscuratum, esse ipsas tenebras, meram cæcitatem, ita ut opus habeant novo spiritu, novâ vitâ, mente, intellectu, novâ denique luce spirituali, quæ mentes et corda eorum irradiet, ut salutariter intelligant, cognoscant, percipiant τὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ, et Dei voluntati obedientiam rite præstent, lumen illud non esse salutare liquidò constat.

Sect. 20. 3. Eodem argumento probatur non esse lumen hoc ad salutem sufficiens, nempe quia non est salutare; sufficientiam quidem habet ad ἀναπολογησίαν, ad salutem non item, quia πνευματικὰ πνευματικῶς cognoscere vi ejus nemo potest. Deinde Deus nihil agit frustra, præsertim in rebus maximis novi fœderis, per sanguinem Filii sui acquisitis. Lumen verò hoc, si esset ad salutem *subjective suffi-*

ciens, quid quæso opus esset *illuminatione Spiritûs Sancti*, quid mentis renovatione, quid novi intellectûs donatione, quid omnipotenti et efficaci cordium irradiatione cognitione Dei in facie Jesu Christi? quid vanitatis amotione, tenebrarum, et cæcitatis curatione, oculorum apertione? quid denique evangelio? cum unum hoc lumen internum omnibus commune, omnium vicem supplere possit facillime.

Porro: cum sit istiusmodi principium directivum intus splendescens, videamus an meliùs et rectiùs se gerat, respectu revelationis eorum quæ cognosci debeant; nam hujus etiam respectu sufficientiam ejus jactitant fanatici, atque ejus gratiâ verbum Dei scriptum pro nihilo ducunt: contrarium probant,—

(1.) Universalis omnium per omnia secula a creatione mundi in hunc usque diem *experientia:* quis enim unquam lucis hujus ductu ad veram Dei cognitionem pervenerit? qui post homines natos, eâ optime usi sunt, atque eximiis insuper dotibus super vulgus hominum ornati fuerunt, ad unum omnes "vani facti sunt in ratiocinationibus suis, et obtenebratum est cor eorum insipiens," Rom. i. 21.

(2.) Tota ista gratiæ, bonitatis, et sapientiæ divinæ οἰκονομία, quâ Deus πολυμερῶς καὶ πολυτρόπως, in prophetis et Filio suo locutus, voluntatem suam hominibus revelavit; quam qui maximi, et prorsus inæstimabilis beneficii loco non habet, ille et ingratus est et maledictus, Ps. cxlvii. 19, 20.

(3.) Omnia ista testimonia quibus, superiori disputatione, *necessitatem* atque *perfectionem* sacræ Scripturæ probavimus; quæ hic repetere opus non est.

Sect. 21. 4. Lumen hoc non *esse ipsum in nobis Christum*, qui est via, vita, et veritas, lux et salus, cùm neque sit *salutare*, neque *ad salutem sufficiens*, hominum neminem esse cui dubium sit libenter arbitrarer: τερατολογοῦσι quidem fanatici, neque prodigium ullum confidentius asserunt, quàm lucem hanc ipsum esse Christum. Sit ideo vel persona Christi θεανθρώπου, vel Spiritus Christi, vel aliquid aliud quod mystice et relative Christus dici possit. Non esse *personam Christi*, si modò *personam habeant*, et ipsi sint homines, opinor, agnoscent. Neque Spiritus Christi esse potest, cum sit quid omnibus commune; at quidam saltem sunt, Πνεῦμα μὴ ἔχοντες, Judæ 19. Porro, "ubi Spiritus ille Domini est, ibi est libertas," 2 Cor. iii. 17. At hominum genus, maximam partem, peccato adhuc servire constat. Deinde quidam sunt in carne, quidam in Spiritu, Rom. viii. 9. In iis vero tantùm habitat Spiritus, qui sunt in Spiritu. Nulla autem est promissio Spiritus, nullus fructus, nullum privilegium, cujus per Spiritum participes facti sumus, nulla per Spiritum regenerationis, sanctificationis, adoptionis mentio est, quæ huic figmento non vehementer reclamat. Ecclesia quidem mystice Christus dicitur, 1 Cor. xii. 12, cùm sit corpus ejus, quatenus scilicet unionem habet cum capite;

at lumen hoc fanaticorum non esse ecclesiam, suo loco videbimus. Sed Christus fanaticorum imaginarius est et fictitius, non Filius Dei incarnatus, Θεάνθρωπος, sed qualitas, nescio quæ, divina, seu anima mundi, omnibus mista, quæ τὸ πᾶν sit, atque vere nihil. Hoc verò illorum πρῶτον ψεῦδος, cùm ad disputationem de personâ Christi deventum est, penitus destruetur.

Sect. 22. 5. Omissis iis quæ contra Arminianos, Socinianos, aliosque *gratiæ universalis* assertores alibi disputavimus, ne in plurimas res nos simul ingeramus, unico argumento, Christum lumen salutare omnibus et singulis non infundere probamus; illud vero ita se habet. Christus neminem luce salutari perfundit, nisi per Spiritum et verbum suum. Ut ita, atque non aliter ageret, maxima est novi fœderis promissio, Esa. lix. 21, atque ipsius Christi, Joh. xiv. 15, 16. Quicquid est verbi Dei, aut revelationis mentis Domini, huic propositioni testimonium perhibet. "Siquis enim Spiritum Christi non habet, non est ejus," Rom. viii. 9. At Christum Spiritum suum Sanctum, *promissum fœderis*, omnibus et singulis non largiri antea probatum est. De verbo idem testatur experientia.

Sect. 23. 6. Ultimæ nostræ propositionis, de usu atque fine luminis cujuscunque divini, nobis per Christum gratiose indulti, veritatem satis superque demonstravimus in disputatione de perfectione Scripturæ. Strictim addimus:—

(1.) Si cujusque lumen privatum sit regula Deo obedientiam præstandi, tum tot regulas habemus quot homines; at unicus est κανών divinus, Gal. vi. 16; Phil. iii. 16; Esa. viii. 20. At ita plane incerta essent omnia in rebus divinis, hoc tantùm excepto, quod princeps tenebrarum vi hujus incertitudinis in rem suam compendium faceret.

(2.) Is est internæ lucis seu illuminationis nostræ finis, ob quem Deus eam nobis promisit, atque cujus gratiâ sancti homines eam a Deo indies augeri petunt: eum vero esse, ut voluntatem et mentem Domini in Scripturis revelatam, rite, salutariter et spiritualiter intelligamus, infinitis allatis testimoniis facile esset probare.

(3.) *Sacram Scripturam* hanc *regulam* esse abunde antea demonstratum est.

Sect. 24. Videamus jam porro quid contra garriunt fanatici, utque operam dent, quâ cum ratione aliquâ insanire videantur: nihil autem hic novi adportant; vetera sunt, Arminiana sunt, trita et millies profligata quæ adducunt.

1. Nihil crebrius in ore habent, quam verba illa de Christo: Joh. i. 9, "Ille est lux vera quæ illuminat omnem hominem veniens in mundum." Non alias vociferatio horridior quàm cùm in locum hunc deventum est. Hic miros sibi fingunt triumphos, atque adversariis nulla non faciunt convicia. De Christo, inquiunt, loquitur Scriptura, "Ille ergo lux est," "Christus lux est:" deinde non hunc vel illum

hominem, sed omnem hominem in mundum venientem, illuminat; hoc est omnes et singulos; nec aliquid clarius affirmari poterat.

Sect. 25. *Resp.* Scripturam sacram interpretari debere, adversariis extorsimus. De sensu hujus loci, seu potius *unicæ voculæ* in hoc loco, jam controvertitur. De tota sententia quid statuendum sit, paucissimis absolvam:—

1. Christus *lux est;* eodem nempe sensu, quo Deum lucem esse demonstravimus. Lux est respectu *essentialis suæ majestatis*, sanctitatis, et gloriæ; quatenus etiam omnis lucis fons est, auctor atque causa, lux est,—hoc est, et essentialiter et efficienter.

2. Christus dicitur *lux hominum*, non lux illa quæ est in hominibus. Causa omnis lucis est, non omnis lux; non illa *accidentalis* et corrupta de quâ loquimur. Ita sol est *lux mundi;* imo discipulos suos *lucem mundi*, seu hominum in mundo degentium esse affirmat, Matt. v. 14. Anne aliqui homines *lux interna* aliorum omnium esse possint? Lux sunt quia suo more lucem dant et exhibent. Lux ita Christus esse dicitur, atque homines illuminare, non quasi ille nihil aliud esset quam lux illa interior cujus est particeps omne humanum genus, aut quasi ipse in persona sua lux illa esset, aliter quàm *efficienter*, sed quia lumen largitur iis omnibus qui illud assequuntur. Ita sol suo loco atque ordine est lux mundi, atque ita fuerunt discipuli Christi.

3. Non dicitur Christum illuminare "omnem hominem venientem in mundum," sed quod ipse "veniens in mundum omnem hominem illuminat." Is nempe est eorum verborum sensus, Ἦν τὸ φῶς τὸ ἀληθινὸν, ὃ φωτίζει πάντα ἄνθρωπον, ἐρχόμενον εἰς τὸν κόσμον: hoc agit lux in mundum veniens. Ad maximam ideo partem humani generis, quæ scilicet ante adventum Christi in mundum fato functa fuerit, non pertinet hæc assertio.

4. Hic ergo horum verborum sensus est: Cum omnes homines essent *meræ tenebræ*, atque cœlestium inanes, Filius Dei, æternus λόγος, φῶς æternum, in mundum veniens, per ἐνσάρκωσιν vitam et immortalitem, a jactis mundi fundamentis antea *umbraculis* coopertas, aut *tenebris* penitus delitescentes, in lucem produxit, perque evangelium innotescere fecit; atque insuper Spiritum Sanctum vi divina armatum emisit, ad quosvis homines ex iis qui naturâ tenebræ erant illuminandos, atque ita lux eorum factus est. Apparet itaque,—

(1.) Lucem et illuminationem quarum hic loci mentio facta est, *spirituales* esse, atque ad renovationem gratiæ; non naturales, atque ita ad creationem pertinere: quo sensu enim homines *tenebræ* dicuntur, eo etiam illuminari; aliter æquivoca esset apostoli oratio. At homines spiritualiter fuisse tenebras, non oculis naturaliter captos, de quibus loquitur Spiritus Sanctus, extra controversiam est.

(2.) Hac illuminatione non obstante, manent aliqui in tenebris:

"Lux enim luxit in tenebris, tenebræ autem eam non comprehenderunt," Joh. i. 5. Illuminatio ideo hæc, neque est *naturalis*, neque omnibus *communis*, neque aliquid aliud quod homines habere possint, dum tenebræ sunt: statum diversum, atque tenebrarum amotionem ponit.

(3.) Christus non alio modo quemquam hominum gratiâ suâ, seu luce hac spirituali donat, nisi per verbum et Spiritum suum; nemo ita hujus lucis particeps esse potest, nisi sit genitus ex Spiritu, atque verbi seu evangelii sit salutariter particeps.

Respondemus ideo per "omnem hominem," non omnes et singulos qui unquam fuerunt, sunt, aut futuri sint, intelligi debere, sed quosvis tantùm, seu eos *omnes et singulos* quos Christus per verbum et Spiritum suum salutari suâ gratiâ, et luce spirituali donare gratiose velit; hoc est, syncategorema istud "omnis," non absolute, sed relate ad electos dicitur; prout aliis locis innumeris usurpatur, Col. i. 6, etc.

Sect. 26. Urgent porro testimonium ab apostolo Gentilibus datum, Rom. ii. 14, 15, "Gentes quæ legem non habent, naturâ quæ legis sunt faciunt, ipsi legem non habentes, sibi ipsis sunt lex: ut qui ostendunt opus legis scriptum in cordibus suis, unà testimonium reddente ipsorum conscientiâ, et cogitationibus sese mutuò accusantibus, aut etiam defendentibus." "Sibi lex sunt," ideoque lege scripta non opus habent; opus legis inscriptum in cordibus habent, unà cum conscientiâ boni et mali indice: et quid pluribus opus est? Hisce attendant, ut salvi evadant.

Resp. 1. Negamus eos lege scripta opus non habere, qui sibi lex sunt; non enim hoc absolute dicitur, sed aliquorum operum et actionum respectu tantùm.

2. Concessimus antea *reliquias* nonnullas lucis primævæ adhuc esse in omnibus superstites, sed *salutares* eas esse, spirituales, ad salutem sufficientes, id verò pernegamus: ita,—

3. Nihil non naturale, nihil spirituale, nihil specialiter a Christo mediatore emanans, aut ab eo communicatum, imo nihil nisi quod *sine Christo*, seorsim ab eo, omni salutari ejus cognitione destituti habeant homines, hic ab apostolo memoratur. Imo non alium in finem hæc in memoriam revocat apostolus, nisi ut ostenderet eos qui lumine hoc tantùm instructi erant, atque ei attendebant, ad unum omnes destitutos fuisse gloriâ Dei, neque ad salutarem ejus cognitionem unquam pervenisse; quod figmentum fanaticorum penitus evertit, atque illos ipsos, quos quasi encomio hoc ornat apostolus, ubique mortuos, cæcos, sub potestate tenebrarum captivos, pronuntiat.

4. Nulla cum hic sit mentio lucis, nulla Christi, sed hominum a Christo penitus abalienatorum, difficile nimis erit fanaticis thesin

suam hinc extorquere; nempe Christum esse lucem quandam omnibus communem.

5. Fatemur quidem homnes omines aliquo sensu sibi ipsis legem esse, quatenus nimirum habitum intellectualem, quo assentiri possunt, atque assentiuntur, principiis operationum moralium, atque judicium practicum, quo se super iis quæ fecerunt, condemnant vel excusant, retinent; at vero *habitum* illum spiritualem esse, sufficienter eos dirigentem in cognitione Dei, atque obedientiâ ei ex voluntate ejus præstandâ, hoc pernegamus.

Sect. 27. Cùm Deum non "longe abesse ab unoquoque nostrum," ita ut "omnes quærere Dominum," si forte palpando eum invenirent, debeant, affirmet apostolus, Act. xvii. 27, nescio quo stupore ex eo sæpius litigantes audivi, sed quid sibi *vellent* haud facile fuit intelligere. Nempe Deo omnia *plena sunt;* operaque ejus, tum creationis, tum providentiæ, immensam ejus deitatem, æternam potentiam, et creaturarum curam, ita luculenter ostendunt ut omnes ubique homines eum ulterius investigare debeant: sed quid hoc ad fanaticorum delirium, de quo jam actum est?

POEMA.

[Prefatory Note.—Among the addresses presented to Cromwell when he succeeded in concluding a peace with the Dutch in 1654, the University of Oxford joined in the tribute of congratulation by publishing a small pamphlet of poetical effusions, entitled, "Musarum Oxoniensium 'Ελαιοφορία," etc. The first of these was from the pen of Dr Owen, and is the only specimen of his muse. Prefixed to the work was a dedication, commemorating the services of Cromwell to the University. The dedication and the poem follow.—Ed.]

SERENISSIMO OLIVERO, REIPUB. ANG., SCOT., ET HIBER., DOMINO PROTECTORI, ET ACAD. OXON. CANCELL.

Quòd serò admodùm gratulabunda videatur (suo more) tibi accedere academia tua Oxoniensis, ex stupore est ingentis beneficii, ex quo rerum potitus es, suscepti, unde non nisi iteratis gaudiis excitari potuit. Expergefacta tandem, undique mutuò sibi gratantium plausibus, pacemque reboantibus terrarum mariumque vocibus, festinanter, et vix forsan composite decurrens, coram Celsitudine vestrâ devoluta, vota, quæ dulci somno soluta conceperat, effundit. Ad littus appulsi reliquam sentiunt aliquamdiu a jactatione sali vertiginem; nec, nisi refecti, rectà incedunt. Nobis, haud ita pridem, apud ignaros morum quibus hic vivimus, res erat. Lubrica inde et infida statio. More autem hominum evenit, ut pronis auribus calumnia excipiatur, laudi rara fides. Hinc modò gentis gloria et deliciæ fuimus, mox pæne ludibrium. Nec frustra sane oderunt literas, qui posteritatis conscientiam reformidant. Dei immortalis beneficio, suo gradu, per te, sistitur academia. Nonnihil temporis admirationi dicant stupenda; haud aliis hâc tempestate stetit gentis togatæ salus. Sævis tandem erepta periculis subito calore, et festinandi quâdam libidine, in vota hæc erumpit. Nemini ea gravia fore sperat, nisi cui perennare bellum cordi est, donec desertas urbes teneant antris ejectæ feræ, et antra vicissim occupent, pulsi urbibus, homines. Neque enim illud genus hominum attendunt musæ, quod rebus gerendis cùm sit vehementer impar, vehementer tamen affectat rerum imperia. Inde vero extra tela positi videamur, quòd tute nostri patrocinium proxime suscipere non dedignaris: neque alio a teipso monitore apud Celsitudinem vestram nobis opus est. Intercessoribus plerumque infida spes, præsertim in aulis principum, ubi rara absentium memoria, nisi opprimendis. *Pacis* ideo laudes, apud teipsum, rebus bellicis omni nostrâ laude majorem, plurimis *victoriis quæsitæ*, et quaquà patet orbis Christianus æternùm celebrandæ, academiam tuam canorâ voce resonantem, benigne (hoc est tuo more) ut accipias, humillime precatur,

Serenissimæ Celsitudini tuæ

Devotissimus cliens,

Et

In celeberrima Academia tua

Procancellarius,

Jo. Owen.

AD PROTECTOREM.

Pacifica Augusti quem non fecere poetam?
Sanctior, ingenium et musa mihi, genius:
Concolor haud cygnis, vano nec percitus œstro,
Ex humili subitus vate poeta cano.
Quin magis ut placeam numero, numerisque refertus
Advolo: nempe omnis musa chelysque tua est.
Quòd nisi consiliis academia fulta fuisset
Cæsaris, auspiciis gensque togata tuis;
Excideras Auguste tibi, victoria noctem
Senserat, haud pacis gloria tanta foret.
Has tibi pro musis grates academia mittit,
Qui pax una foris diceris, una domi:
Nomine utroque tuas laudes hæc pagina gestit
Tollere, qui pacis nomen et omen habes.
Accipias facilis, meritò quos reddit honores,
Heroi invicto, pacis amica cohors.

Jo. Owen,
Acad. Procan.

ORATIONES V.

CLARISSIMI ET DOCTISSIMI VIRI, JOANNIS OWEN, S.T.P.

IN CELEBERRIMA OXONIENSI ACADEMIA HABITÆ, DUM PROCANCELLARII MUNUS PER QUINQUENNIUM ILLIC ADMINISTRAVIT.

HIS ALIA ORATIO ACCEDIT,

EJUSDEM ACADEMIÆ NOMINE AD RICHARDUM CROMWELLUM HABITA, CUM CANCELLARII OFFICIUM ANNO 1658 SUSCEPIT.

PREFATORY NOTE.

These Orations are perhaps the only memorials of Owen's connection with the University of Oxford. Even in the judgment of his enemies, during his brief connection with it, he rendered it no mean service; so that, in answer to the calumnies of Vernon, he could say, "I do not believe there is any person of learning, ingenuity, or modesty, who had relation in those days to that place, but will grant at least, that, notwithstanding some differences from them about things of very small importance, I was not altogether useless to the interest of learning, morality, peace, and the preservation of the place itself." Besides those who matriculated, 26 persons received the degree of Doctor, 337 that of Master of Arts, and 697 that of Bachelor of Arts. The salaries of the professors were secured, important offices maintained, the rights of the University defended, its funds increased tenfold, and various reforms effected. Clarendon distinctly admits the improvement which was effected at Oxford during the time that Owen was vice-chancellor.

The first of these Orations was delivered on the occasion of his entrance on the duties of the vice-chancellorship. The second, third, and fourth, were the annual orations delivered at the academic comitia; in which, according to the statutes, the events of the preceding year, and the benefits which had been conferred on the University in the course of it, were specified and commemorated by the vice-chancellor. The fifth, remarkable for its animation and dignity of tone, was delivered when he resigned the office of vice-chancellor. The sixth is an address to Richard Cromwell, on his installation into the office of chancellor. These Orations first appeared in the folio volume entitled, "A Complete Collection of the Sermons of the Reverend and Learned John Owen, D.D.," etc., and published 1721.—Ed.

ORATIONES V.

ORATIO I.[1]

Eò tandem devenisse fata academiæ, ut, post tot veneranda nomina, verenda capita, artium ac scientiarum promos condos, et dictatores, is chorum duceret, qui pæne agmen claudit, vos vere dolere plusquam persentisco, academici. Neque sane mihi admodum arridet rerum hæc nostrarum qualiscunque dispositio, quâ ad desideratissimam matrem, longo post intervallo, reditûs quasi præludia operosæ difficilisque provinciæ administratione agere cogor. At nullius infortunii remedia sunt querelæ. Viros graves et honestos in quocunque casu positos dedecent gemitus. Erecti animi est prementi oneri fortius obniti. "Ita," enim, ut cum comico loquar, "est vita hominum, quasi cùm ludas tesseris; si illud, quod maxime opus est jactu, non cadit; illud, quod cecidit forte, id arte ut corrigas," Terent. Adelph. iv. 7, 21. Cunctis pæne, quorum provectior ætas, diuturniore rerum usu subactius ingenium, multo pulvere scholastico exsudati doctorum tituli, magnam, nec incassum, sui expectationem dederunt, navim academicam heu! longùm nimis procellis agitatam deserentibus; ex illius, cujus imperio refragari nobis haud fas est, propensâ in me voluntate et iniquâ æstimatione, cui nequicquam renisæ sunt intensissimæ obtestationes, hujusce verò senatus annuente suffragio, evocatus, quo vix est ineptior alter, ad gubernaculum accedo. In quæ tempora, quos hominum mores, qualia judiciorum divortia, grassantibus ubique ob studia partium dissidiis atque calumniis, quos animorum motus acerbiores et παραπικράσματα, affectus denique quo fastu, quâ ærugine obsessos, inciderunt fasces nostri academici, et scio, et doleo. Nec solùm nos seculi genio distrahimur, sed et indies alia conspectior incedit fundi literarii calamitas. Spretâ nimirum sacrosanctâ legum auctoritate, superiorum reverentiâ, vigili malevolorum invidiâ, contemptis pæne moribundæ matris academiæ lachrymis ac singultibus, cum æterno gentis togatæ nominis dispendio, nec sine summo totius περιπάτου discrimine, detestandâ audaciâ, et licentiâ plane Epicureâ, extra omnes modestiæ ac pietatis cancellos, heu! nimia studiosorum portio vagatur. Egone ideo idoneus, qui huic

[1] Hæc oratio habita est anno 1652, cum procancellarii munus primùm est ingressus.

nodo, cui frustra pacatissimis temporibus insudarunt tot tantique heroes, nutanti rerum omnium conditione cuneum admoverem? Οὐχ οὕτως τετύφωμαι, academici. Si hominis ita inepte sibi adblandientis partes mihi sumerem, imo si vel levicula hujusmodi animum subiret cogitatio, totus ipse mihi displicerem. Non ita remotus domo, aut procul a meipso dego; non ita lamiarum instar disposui ocellos, quin quàm sit doctrinæ, prudentiæ, gravitatis, sapientiæ mihi curta supellex, probe noverim. Lucullum vel gregarii militis officii rudem, peritum nullo negotio evadentem imperatorem, ita ut quem πολέμων ἄπειρον dimisit urbs, totius rei militaris ἔμπειρον acceperit exercitus, tanquam naturæ ostentum celebravit antiquitas. Bono animo este, academici! prodigia nulla fero: qui ex latebris ruralis secessûs, armorum strepitu, evangelii causâ in ultimas hujus insulæ nec non transmarinas oras excursionibus, aulæ tumultu, rei academicæ administrandæ imperitus, recessi, imperitus etiam huc accedo.

Quid ergo malum, inquies, hoc est dementiæ? Cur provinciam hanc, cui administrandæ, nedum ornandæ, non sis idoneus, suscepisti? Pessime in te, in academiam, in senatum hunc venerandum consuluisti. Bona verba, auditores! summorum virorum judicio votis, imperio, precibus, obnoxio non penitus deficit aut spes, aut animus. Ἀνδραγαθημάτων qualiumcunque haud ipsi sumus scaturigines. Ὁ ἐπιχορηγῶν σπέρμα τῷ σπείροντι, et qui "ex ore infantium fundit fortitudinem," defectus omnes, quos vel foras retuli, vel intus sensi, gratiose supplere et vires administrare potis est. Mihi ideo propriis viribus, ac παῤῥησίᾳ, et succedaneo adminiculo, favore academico, quod sciam aut meruerim, destituto, hoc tamen restat, illi ut me totus dedam, "qui dat omnibus benigne, nec exprobrat." Perennem ille auxiliorum fontem constituit Christum; qui nulli non pio conamini εὔκαιρον suppeditat βοήθειαν, nostra nisi obstat ὀλιγοπιστία: inde lumen, inde vires, inde spiritus mihi expectandi, imo orandi sunt. Illius ideo præsentiæ gratiose promissæ innixus, pro statu temporum, et occasione rerum, quam, divinâ ita providentiâ disponente, nacti sumus, unicâ conscientiæ integritate aliorum adjumentorum et ornamentorum omnium vices obeunte, nec propendente, nec dependente genio, negotio huic me accingo.

Si modo bonorum obsequi studiis, inservire commodis, opem ferre egenis, et quibus est res angusta domi; si in extricandis immeritò perplexis, impeditis, aut turbatis, operam insumere mihi liceat; si vel in confinio et proximâ parte virtutis versantibus mansueti ulla animi officia præstare possim;—pacis, famæ, studiorum, quorum dispendio, nihil usus circuitione, sciens videnque compendiose lito, haud ita pœnitenda forsan erit jactura. At si Bibuli consulatus segnis ac vilis, si Sisyphi labor, volvendo semper eodem revolventem negotio-

lorum acervum frustraneus ac inutilis, mihi contingerent; si in dirimendis de lana caprina litibus, si in terrorem miseris mortalibus et vitiorum ægris incutiendo, vel pœnam infligendo, vel in ejusmodi solùm ingratis peragendis sudandum sit;—ne infelici adjudicarer Caucaso, damnatorias tabellas quâvis prece, vel quocunque pretio redemptas velim.

Non quòd in reprimendis vitiis, repurgandis sordibus, ne sentibus, spinis, tribulisque obsita horreret academia, conatus satis laudabiles exseri non possunt. Imo, vos omnes, qui conscientiæ propriæ, qui famæ publicæ, qui perenni florentissimæ academiæ saluti, qui reipublicæ hujusce, νεοτεύκτου licet, sed θεοτεύκτου, utilitati, vel micâ bonæ animæ litatis; vos, inquam, omnes, vestramque opem, consilium, vires, diligentiam, ne flaccescat gubernatorum reverentia, nutet superiorum dignitas, evanescat antiqua studiosorum gravitas, industria, compositi mores, ne demum omnium bonorum, malis omnibus despecta, jaceat auctoritas, appello. Me verò quod attinet, munusque hoc recens impositum, si qui sint ignavi, ebriosi, ludiones, nugatores, circulatores, superiorum contemptores, legirupæ, noctivagi, noti juventutis corruptores, bonorum osores, cultûs divini neglectores, vel alia ejusmodi academiæ carcinomata et ulcera, neque me illorum mores, neque illos meam hanc qualemcunque προστασίαν ferre posse spes est. In hâc verò parte provinciæ nostræ ornandâ, si quid durius, si quid, quod tamen fieri non oportet, inclementius, in quemcunque constitutum fuerit, id omne temporum necessitati, et conservandæ misere fluctuanti reipublicæ literariæ acceptum ferendum esse æqui rerum arbitri facile agnoscent. Nec erit forsan, cur ob nostram tenuitatem despectui sit facinorosorum et delicatulorum turbæ academiæ auctoritas. Etenim ut bonis omnibus omnimodo prodesse statutum est, sic malis haud cedere itidem indubium. At parcius ista. Quæ agenda sunt quidem, sed non sine ullius boni, aut mitis ingenii, quâdam ægritudine peragi queunt, quoad fieri potest, deprecanda et evitanda esse consentient omnes, quibus salit aliquid "lævæ sub parte mamillæ."

Majora itaque,—et præclaris aliorum, hoc ipso seculo, omne genus inceptis (quibus paria præterlapsæ ætates facinora non ediderunt), aliquâ ex parte respondentia,—in orbe nostro tentanda esse arbitramur. An solis academicis, Anglorum nomine celebri famâ per totum orbem diffuso, libet esse ingloriis? Consulta patrum, tropæa militum, incrementa gloriæ rei civilis ac militaris, quæ dederunt, quibus est commissa, senatores ac duces, horret Europa. Absit, academici! ut peculiare nostrum depositum, religionis ac literarum honos, quasi omnino seculo impares essemus, solùm vilescat. Dum in omni laudabili conatu alii haud contemnendos faciunt progressus, vix, aut ne vix quidem, nos ad antiqua revertimur? Imo, quid nisi nostra segnities,

et aliud agendo consumptæ vires, ut superiorum temporum, uti aiunt, a nonnullis tantopere desideraretur, in causa est? Eminuere, fateor, tum temporis, nonnulli linguarum peritiâ, eloquentiæ laude, scientiarum lumine, veterum scriniorum monumenta scrutandi diligentiâ, et ruspandis antiquitatis ruderibus clari; quibus omnibus et singulis, quo minus debitus honor et gloria, cultus et reverentia nominis constent, et sint perennes, non sum adeo vecordis animæ, nec tam extra anni solisque vias positus, ut ullo modo interpellem. At, pro pudor! Quale studiosorum vulgus! Quanta orbis literati pars tenebris offusa! Ponite senile supercilium, pingue otium, aliarum ambitionum inanes titulos, micantibus undique literarum præmiis; per multos enim annos, qui seriò rem agebant, apparuere rari "nantes in gurgite vasto." Eò verò jam redierunt res academiæ, ut nisi pietatem, fidem, mores compositos, modestiam, cum summa in omni studiorum genere diligentiâ adhibeamus, quin cum perenni dedecore, de dignitate, statu et conditione hâc honestâ nobis periclitandum sit, non est ambigendum. Hæc ergo Rhodus, hic saltus noster. Quicquid consilio, prudentiâ, illibato virtutis exemplo, quicquid denique summorum virorum auctoritate,—tantillo scilicet temporis spatio, eoque tantis rerum ac animorum motibus agitato, quod ex bonarum artium et literarum, explosis belli terriculamentis, παλιγγενησίᾳ excucurrit,—præstari potuerit, id omne antecessorum nostrorum laudum cumulo lubens addico. At quibus omnia ex voto successerunt, quorum sanctioribus inceptis undequaque responderunt eventus, numero vix sunt totidem, quot Thebarum portæ. In magnis voluisse sat est; nec nostram industriam, si qua est, præcluserunt molimina aliorum præclare gesta; multo minus succedentium famæ, si qui sint, obesse potuerunt in administranda hac provincia imbecilli nostri conatus.

ORATIO II.[1]

Bonum factum, procuratores! Neque enim animam agit academia, ut opus habeat testamentum nuncupare, aut ut legatorum dispositione divitias suas in alumnos dispertire teneatur. Hucusque ergo, academici, quamvis, pro dolor! evasimus, dicendum est tamen, *evasimus*. Viximus, dum ipsum hoc vixisse nonnihil, imo magnum fuit; ævo scilicet seculi graves, et ipsius mundi mortalitate tantùm non oppressi. Ostentent alii tropæa, hostium spolia, flosculorum sertis redimita capita, summæ pacis, et placidissimi recessûs fructus uberiores; nos cicatrices, pulverem, et sudorem, erectas ad cœlum

[1] Hæc oratio anno 1654, in comitiis academicis, habita fuisse videtur, cum procancellarii officium iterum administravit.

manus, non penitus indigna Deo hominibusque colluctantia insignia circumferimus. Non enim umbratilem causam egimus, non de finibus regundis, de quibus tot annos bella incruenta, et pæne ludicra, intulerunt imbelles finitimi; sed de tota possessione, sacro antiquæ pietatis deposito, præsentis spe ac semine, dictu nefas! nobis contentio fuit. Prostratos cœnopolas, mimas, balatrones, devictos cerevisiarios, noctivagos, scurras, aliasque hominum quisquilias supplices in scenam productas, dispansa gentis togatæ pomœria, instaurata epomidum et epitogiorum ephippia, honestis nominibus celebrata, nolite exspectare. Hæc illorum gloria, hoc decus, quibus mollissimis temporibus, et longo otio deductis, tot tantaque moliri placuit. Hoc unice nobis in votis fuit, cum officii ratio postularet, ut publice aliquid vobis edisseremus, nec tantum superesset dicendum, *fuimus* academici.

Tantum verò cum hoc sit, tamque insigne privilegium, nondum periisse, non nisi Dei immortalis beneficio illud par est deberi. Ei ideo εὐεργέτῃ optimo, sospitatori unico, salutis fonti, qui disjectis undique ac demersis, cœli ruinâ et violentiâ, majoribus, imo prætoriis navibus, portuosam cymbulæ nostræ exhibuit providentiam, quicquid apud nos pium aut utile restat, quicquid meliori notâ et virtutis nomine inter mortales dignum censetur, in ipso limine dicemus. Qui nihil divinum, nihil ope mortali grandius, in declinantis rei literariæ subsidium et fulcimentum venire sentit, illum rerum divinarum pariter ac humanarum socordiâ, et negligentiâ supinâ laborare, cùm res ipsa oculis et prope manibus teneatur, non est ambigendum. Rubum ardentem, nec consumptum, stupuit olim magnus nomotheta. Præclarum et antiquum qui spectaret ædificium, disjectis undique pedamentis et adminiculis, in ipso pæne aëre pendulum, mole suâ sibi ipsi ruinam, aliis perniciem minitabundum, contra vim tamen procellarum, ventorum, et turbinum victrices et triumphales attollens summitates; velut immotam rupem, cui toties horrifico fragore nequicquam sese illiserint nimbus et hyems; occultam illam vim et admirabilem, quæ tantæ moli sustinendæ, tot oppugnationibus propellendis par esset, venerabundus suspiceret. Gratiosam igitur Dei O. M. providentiam recolite, academici, et perenni literariæ diuturnitati quotquot bene vultis, auditores, quæ gymnasia, adeoque ipsam academiam, communem nostram, quà literati sumus, matrem, adhuc sartam tectam conservavit.

Neque tamen hæc ideo a nobis dicuntur, quasi fautores nullos, nullos advocatos invenisset grandæva mater academia, qui, ne, inter tumultuosi seculi dedecora, literarum lapsus et ruina numeraretur, strenue præcaverunt. Habet etiam adhuc Deus O. M. qui honorem suum, habet academia, qui salutem suam pro virili tueri satagunt; viros scilicet summo honore constitutos, et nisi mortalium ingratissimi

audire vellemus, a nobis in æternum nominandos. Hi sunt, qui tumultuantis plebeculæ, aliorum scilicet perpaucorum nebulonum veneno perfusæ, compescuerunt murmura, et imbelles contempsere minas. Et cùm eo usque audaciæ proruperit quorundam hominum, dicam, an jumentorum, stupor et barbaries, ut in ipso senatu libellis supplicibus vociferationes, seu potius imprecationes nonnullorum e fæce seculi, de tollendis academiis rudere ausi sint; non sine indignatione summâ, spiritu heroico et plane divino, honoratissimis ignorantiæ patronis, patriæ excerebratoribus, os vile obstruxerunt, parati omne nostrum periculum subire suo. Nec defuisse istiusmodi viros aut conatus testor, celeberrimam toto orbe bibliothecam, irritis inimicorum domi forasque augusto illi sacrario avide inhiantium votis, intactam; et si non libris doctioribus, at librario doctissimo auctam et ornatam. Ipsam testor academiam, fatali pæne literarum interstitio emergentem, viris undequaque doctissimis, de religione et literatura optime meritis, recens refertam. Hoc unum condonate, quod me indignum, inutilem gregi vestro ascribere voluerunt; hanc unam labem abstergite, cætera fulgent.

Iisdem succenturiatus processit magnum nomen nobis dicendum, auditores! Honoratissimus Cancellarius. Hic est, quem toties accepimus profitentem, se nolle honesto illo nomine diutius ornari, quàm dignum tandem aliquid eo nomine efficiendi spes non minima effulgeret. Qui pietate et ingenii cultu, in subjugandis hostibus vel barbarissimis, plus retulit sub Deo suo opis et subsidii, quàm ut, se vivo et rerum pæne clavum tenente, pietatem et ingenii culturam omnem pessundatas et conculcatas, triumphantibus illum victis et conjuratis hostibus, ab impietate et barbarie intueri possit. Illum, qui feros et erraticos domuit Hiberniæ Nomadas; qui mores, virtutes, pudorem Scotorum monticolarum perspexerit; qui

Πολλῶν ἀνθρώπων ἴδεν ἄστεα, καὶ νόον ἔγνω,[1]

posse tandem ipsam deperire barbariem, inhonesta est, et homine sano indigna cogitatio. Irato prorsus aversoque Deo res nostræ agitari viderentur, si primi, si soli sub ejus auspiciis pereamus; qui non tantum omni bello, sed et singulis prœliis, quibus toties providentiæ discrimen subiit, victor evasit. Inauspicatò sane togatam manum copiis suis adjunxisse censendus esset, si eâ parte primum marcesceret triumphales laurus. Haud illi deerit procul omni dubio in re nostrâ procurandâ divina illa indulgentia, quæ reliquis omnibus inceptis ei ita semper prœsto adfuit, uti Θεὸς ἀπὸ μηχανῆς, quod dicitur; ut illud ethnici poetæ ad imperatorem Christianum decantare liceat,—

"O nimium dilecte Deo, cui militat æther,
Et conjurati veniunt in classica venti!"[2]

[1] Hom. Odyss. i. 3.

[2] Claud. iii. cons. Honor. 96

Hucusque ideo, eo duce, victore Deo, ut libera et optimarum artium gloria celebris, non ut injux [inlex?] et efferata evadat patria, contendimus. Quisquamne hominum adeo inverecunde stolidus, et mentis inops censendus est, ut gentem non ineptam, immensis laboribus, vigiliis, votis, lacrymis, suspiriis, tanto sanguinis, nummorum, possessionum dispendio, tot annos sudasse, ut sub desideratissimo reipublicæ titulo asinorum clausum, vel jumentorum mandram conderet, putare posse videatur? Si qui verò, ut erit forsan unus et alter, ad bombardarum tonitru, tanquam ad cataractas Nili, ita obsurduerunt, ut rationis, ejus nimirum quâ homines sumus, nihil possint aut audire, aut percipere; quin tandem, imo brevi sese explosos et pessimo fœtore, suorum tormentorum instar, ejectos sentiant, nullus dubito. Imo, ausim dicere rempublicam nostram aut literarum fore fautricem, aut nullam; nisi funditus delere gentem (et religionem nostram) forsan rebus prosperis nimis fidentem, vagam, et tumidam, sanguine et cineribus iterum aspergere, et non indecoro pulvere sordidam reddere constituit Deus O. M. non omnis morietur academia.

Macti ideo este ingenio et virtutis gloriâ, probata juvenum corona, flos patriæ, gentis honos, gregis Christi spes non minima, feretis protinus hic etiam voti et consilii nostri pretium et *βραξεῖον*: nec segregata prorsus omnis spes est, quin ex vobis tandem emergant, quibus meritò

"doctior orbis
Submissis tradat fascibus imperium."

Vos etiam, doctores literatissimi, quoniam purpuræ vestræ radiis ferundis etiam vulgi, utcunque ignobilis et indocti, nunc temporis sufficit oculorum acies, quin virtutum et scientiarum splendore, laboribus et vigiliis ecclesiæ et academiæ causâ susceptis, antiquam et debitam venerationem etiam oculatissimis extorquere progrediamini, nemo nisi invidiâ stupuit, aut fascinavit pietatis odium, ibit inficias. *Θέατρον ἐγενήθημεν τῷ κόσμῳ καὶ ἀγγέλοις καὶ ἀνθρώποις*, 1 Cor. iv. 9, et actorum nudâ virtute stamus; nec pomposos titulos, ulteriores honoris gradus, opima beneficia, principum aut magnatum favores, fugacis ævi blandimenta, affectamus, sed pro vita animaque magnæ matris academiæ contendimus.

Duram quis forsan exclamabit sortem et onerosam! et, "O terque quaterque beatos," quibus quotannis in scenam prodire, et choragio nescio quo phaleratis, mutas pæne sustinuisse personas satis erat pro dignitate et honore; quibus ampliores redditus, titulorum veneranda gravitas, et adulatoriis quibusdam delinimentis facillime aucupatus principum favor, dederunt malignum spernere vulgus!

Ast, apage sis, ignava vota, et indigna suspiria! Natos nos potius in exemplar cogitemus, nec minimo ducamus honori, quòd nos ami-

corum inimicorumque sub oculis tanto pignore certare voluit pater clementissimus, quòd aliquâ saltem rerum difficultate quid possemus experiri velit. Quod aliis ideo calamitas videtur, nobis sit virtutis occasio. Hoc ideo tantùm, missis curis et querelis, metu et dolore ad hominum vulgus demandatis, nobis incumbit, ut vel scientiarum et virtutum nostra industria fructibus floreat, vel composite et decenter alienâ culpâ in cineres suos dilabatur academia. Sed quorsum hæc?

> "Prudens futuri temporis exitum
> Caliginosa nocte premit Deus;
> Ridetque si mortalis ultra
> Fas trepidat. Quod adest memento
> Componere æquus." [1]

Quod officii ratio postulat, quod beneficia Dei O. M. flagitant, quod bonorum omnium vota expetunt, quod aliorum casus et ruina (quos perdendos dementavit divina Nemesis), docent,—pietatem, religionem, virtutem, scientiam, diligenter colamus; cæterùm rerum omnium exitus Θεοῦ ἐν γούνασι κεῖται. Quid denuo faciemus, dabit Deus; quid hucusque fecerimus, paucis accipite, academici.

Cum vitiis, quæ ampliori proventu inter mortales indies succrescunt, nobis et antecessoribus nostris commune fuit certamen. Dilabantem amnem novis semper ex fontibus minus forsan lucidis, imo turbidis aquarum fluctibus, subinde auctum et adimpletum omnibus vanitatis bullulis, vitiorum limo immunem quis potest præstare? Nempe socordium et impiorum parentum delicta, ineptiam, stultitiam, negligentiam pædagogorum, paucis exceptis, ignavi pæne ubique pecoris, immerita luit academia. Ad spurcitiem, domi avide ingurgitatam, hic resorbendam advolant nonnulli; et tamen quos huc vitiorum gravidos, et fœdis domesticorum exemplis dehonestatos mittunt, ut extemplo fiant philosophi, et illico frugi evadant, exspectant stulti parentes.

> Ὡς ἀργαλέον πρᾶγμ' ἐστὶν
> Δοῦλον γενέσθαι παραφρονοῦντος δεσπότου.[2]

Duram sane provinciam! Integros et sanos tantùm summâ cum artis gloriâ dimittunt, quibus commissa est corporum sanatio: omnes seu artis defectus, seu artificum lapsus, longa nocte tegunt vespillones. At incuratos animorum morbos, et turgidos vitiorum inflatus, ubique, non sine summo inter imperitos nostro dedecore, circumferunt immedicabiles nebulones.

Huic autem malo remedium adhibendo, ut hanc saltem bene merentibus gratiam rependam, non defuerunt, imo profuerunt plurimum, cùm hujus, tum superioris anni procuratores; quorum nimirum inculpatæ probitati, invictæ patientiæ, prudentiæ insigni, bonarum

[1] Horat. Carm. iii. xxix. 29–33. [2] Aristoph. Plut. i. 1, 1.

literarum promovendi studio singulari, industriæ vero pæne stupendæ, aliquid saltem pacis et quietis, si non multum famæ et bonorum morum, debere academiam est manifestum. Nec sine numine fuit, ut, deflexo paulum tramite, ad munus procuratorium vir ille promoveretur, qui ad vias rectas et regulares non sine summa diligentia et virtute non paucos reduceret. Porro in administrandâ re reliquâ academicâ, collegiorum et aularum præfectos, laude illâ, "intelligentes tempora, ut nosceret academia quid sibi faciendum esset," defraudandos non esse, si non credet ingratum seculum, fortassean dicet posteritas. Imo illorum ope et consilio, quamvis non decus aliquod aut nitorem assecuto, tamen sine insigni ullâ togatæ gentis jacturâ, fasces deponere mihi ipsi contingat. Nec omnino sane inerti otio contabuimus, quamvis huc tantùm rediit votorum summa, ut eo fruamur. Cætera de nobis fascibusque nostris, quod procul dubio præstat, taceo; neque enim unquam altius spiravi, quam ne commodioris hominis, peritioris rectoris, vigilantioris præfecti, prudentioris moderatoris, vices difficillimis temporibus suppleri, nimium lugeret academia.

Interea sciant amici atque inimici, imo exteri et posteri, quotquot honeste cupiunt rei literariæ, etiam qui cum eâ nullum commercium volunt, neque ferias agere academiam, neque intra antecessorum septa (quasi doctum esse nihil aliud esset, quam doctos legisse, atque eorum sensus quamvis reconditos eruisse) sese continere; sed progressus, Deo hominibusque testibus, in dilatandis scientiarum pomœriis, in promovendâ, unà cum pietate et religione, re literariâ quotidie ponere.

Testor theologiam, artium reliquarum dominam et magistram, cui ut prompte ancillentur prope est res nostra unica, non turbidam illam ex scholasticorum lacunis depromptam, nec communem illam tantùm et disciplinabilem, a quamplurimis bonis sane viris, nec ineptis, in multifariis compendiolis traditam; sed liberam, puram, defæcatam, ex ipsorum fontium fontibus, adjuvante, imo totum opus perficiente, Spiritu et vi Dei omnipotentis, haustam; adhibitisque omnibus veræ philosophiæ et scientiarum adminiculis, qui ei vel adjumento, vel ornamento esse possint, indies efflorescentem. Intima videmus sacrosanctæ veritatis penetralia reserata, abditosque vitalis paginæ sensus erutos et propinatos. *Hinc lucem et pocula sacra.* Conciones ad populum non phaleratas illas, et ineptis verborum crepitaculis, ad aurem vani et imperiti vulgi tinnientes; sed pietatem, φιλοπονίαν, αἰσθητήρια in sacris γεγυμνασμένα spirantes, frequentissimas: exercitia quædam recens instituta, nonnulla postliminio restituta, recuperatam aliquatenus disciplinæ gravitatem, exsulantem et triumphatam reductam pietatem, fas esset celebrare. Disputationes etiam theologicas redivivas memorarem, nisi absentium aliquorum negli-

gentia, præsentium verò quorundam socordia fecisset, ut ex incepto illo, honesto sane, et conamine laudabili, academiæ ratiocinio, quàm academicorum rationi, hactenus melius consultum fuisset. Absit tamen ut hinc tandem proventûs ipsos sulcos oneraturi exspectationi renuntiarem. Non enim tantùm messem, quod aiunt, in herba habemus, summæ nimirum spei ad frugem et fructum juventutis; sed et est in procinctu veteranorum haud contemnenda manus, quæ non tantùm amicæ veritatis velitationi, prout pro more fit in academia, parata est; sed quæ Latiali Vejovi bruta fulmina e manibus excutere, et reliquas extraneorum copias civitati magni regis, Dei O. M. δεινῶς imminentes, minitantes dira, profligare et dispalare novit.

Et sane ad veternum nobis excutiendum, nunquam post natum in orbe Christianum nomen, donis, quibus veritatis divinæ cultores liberaliter instruxit pater clementissimus, magis opus fuit. Quam enim, Deus bone! detestanda turma, quam fœda hæreticorum, fanaticorum, et enthusiastarum colluvies sponsam Christi sub ipsis sponsi sanctissimis oculis pæne rapit, stupratque? In eam scilicet puram, castam, undique "turba ruunt luxuriosa, proci." Cum igitur,

> "Ut jugulent homines, surgunt de nocte latrones:
> Ut te ipsum serves, non expergisceris?" [1]

Et quod ad cumulum addit, satis nequiter proventum est: quo enim quisque ab omni solida doctrina imparatior est, eo majori cum supercilio, et confidentius de gravissimis quæstionibus judicium sibi arrogat. Proveniunt oratores novi, stulti, adolescentuli, qui nec eruditi sunt, nec se non esse eruditos sentiunt.

Ἀνδρίζεσθε ergo, academici, nec amœni recessûs sopore perfusi, dulcedine exitio vicinâ, præsertim cum ὑπὸ παντὶ λίθῳ σκορπίος ὑποδύεται, sinite ut ineptos, indoctos, βωμολόχους, vaniloquos, plus contra veritatem, quàm pro veritate vos posse, sentiat Christianus orbis. Victorias quas reportarunt, quos egerunt triumphos Athenarum nostrarum Miltiades, Juellus, Raynoldus, Twissus, aliique, recolite, mentemque et industriam Themistoclis induite, neque nobis vivis despectum Dei dominium, contemptam gratiam, conculcatum fœdus sempiternum, impune ferant vel inscite blaterantes, vel elatiori cothurno rhetoricantes novatores. Undique circumstant observatores, qui mollitiem virtuti, errores veritati, tenebras luci, tumultus paci, quovis pretio a vobis præferri vellent, et ut præferantur expetunt, et exspectant.

> "Hoc Ithacus velit, hoc magno mercentur Atridæ." [2]

Sunt qui literarum imperium se solos obtinuisse autumant; et quia cæteros mortales fastuose præ se contemnunt, vos istiusmodi esse, qui

[1] Hor. Ep. i. 2. 32. [2] Virg. Æn. ii. 104.

facile et meritò contemni possint, efflictim cupiunt. Sunt etiam qui vitiorum et ἀκαρπίας nostræ obtentu academiarum ruinæ avidissime inhiant, et alterâ parte urgent, punguntque. Unâ autem virtute utrosque circumveniamus, ut non sine summo dedecore illos fastûs et περιαυτολογίας, hos invidiæ et ignorantiæ pudeat, pœniteatque.

Ad sospitatorem pertinet industria nostra; ipsum Christum habemus agonothetam. Nostris vigiliis, studiis, laboribus, innititur veritatis gloria, religionis honos, artium et scientiarum splendor, ipsiusque demum non minima reipublicæ salus et felicitas. Ignaviam,—animalium ratione gaudentium labem et opprobrium,—senescentis seculi pestem pæne unicam,—ignorantiæ, tenebrarum, sordium, et vitiorum omnium proxenetam,—literarum et literatorum contemptûs prodromum certissimum,—diligenter, imo animose excutite, juvenes dilectissimi, germana matris proles, insurgentis seculi quoquo verget pars nobilis futura. Hæc illa Circe est, quæ nonnullius spei adolescentulos, luxuriæ blanditiis pessime incantatos, fœdissimis inquinatos sordibus, et in porcorum haram et volutabrum pellectos quotidie deturpat. Invigilate ideo, mementote vos sacramento teneri, imo in arenam descendisse; frustra fugam, latebras, recessus meditamini; nequicquam hominum præjudicia, temporum iniquitatem, magnatum supercilia erga gentem togatam, patriæ ingratitudinem, quæ ossibus ejus vix pepercit, causamini. Aut dimicandum vobis est fortiter, aut quales quales artifices estis, pereundum turpiter. Placet etiam nobis otium, sed magis officium; placet amica studiis solitudo, sed magis studiosis, siqua est, benefica contentio. Eamus unà igitur, erectis animis, comitantibus vigiliis, studiis, precibus, inimicorum quorumcunque tandem, qui male volunt luci et veritati, vices dolentes, quò fata academiæ, et omni casu benignior divina providentia, vocant. Mens serena, suâ sorte contenta, mundi contemptrix, nihil nisi quod vile, sordidum, inhonestum, animâ Christianâ, generoso et libero pectore indignum, horrescens, nobiscum eat. Hæreat in funambulis, præstigiatorum acetabulis; stupeat Babylonios, agyrtas, astrologos, malignum et imperitum vulgus; stupeat, dum respublica tributum imponat, quod pendeant astrologi, quod olim, teste Suida,[1] factum est Alexandriæ, nomine βλακεννόμιον, quia solum stulti ad eos accedunt: βλάξ enim apud eos idem ac fatuus et amens fuit. Minas, arma intentent atrocis sævitiæ et feritatis homunciones; scientiam, veritatem, virtutem ipsam rideant, dicteriis excipiant, ὅσα οὐκ οἴδασι βλασφημοῦντες, siderati nebulones; ne grave rediret superstitionis et tenebrarum seculum timeant meticulosi; Spartam nos, quam nacti sumus, ornemus, seriò militemus, in veritatis castra irruamus, cœlum ipsum virtute petamus: nil desperandum, vexillum attollente Hon. Cancell., Christo duce, et auspice Christo.

[1] In voce Βλάξ.

ORATIO III.[1]

Delassatas artium omnium et scientiarum vires, et defatigatam ipsam oratoriam denuo sollicitare, academici, nec opus est, nec animus. Quid possit facundia, ut in omni literaturâ viget valetque, ii, quos et muneris ratio, et efflorescentis ingenii fervor, alacriores et magis oneri idoneos reddiderunt, evidenti testimonio ante aures oculosque auditorum posuerunt. Elegantiarum omnium, quod reliquum est, vices supplebit unica æqui ac recti conscientia, quâ etiam tripudiare Musas vetat vicinus fraterni sanguinis clamor. Si quid de laboribus et angustiis academiæ dicendum restat, ne ferias agere perpetuas videatur, id mihi negotii dari, ut ea enarrem, maxime arridet. Nempe eâ apud nos, auditores, stat lege res literaria, ut gravissimas totius anni curas unius vel alterius dieculæ lætitiâ compensatas habeamus. Neque illos forsan, quibus res divinas, pariter ac eas quæ apud humanum genus inter primas ponuntur, ornandi cura incumbit, palæstræ isti hilarioribus pro more elegantiis crebrius interspersæ diutius immorari deceat. Non quòd solenniorum academiæ comitiorum honori, quorum, Deo ita gratiose disponente, triplicatâ jam vice lubens saltem pars aliqua fui, quidquam detractum iri velim; sed quòd, asperiores recessus sanctiores quas colimus Musas quærere, profiteri æquum est. Prout ideo benevolo erga nos almæ matris animo, quo nobis operosum hoc, quodcunque sit, studiorum nostrorum levamen sacrum esse voluit, gratulari liceat; ita gravitatis ejus et prudentiæ, quibus hæc bonorum negotia, malorum otiis promovendis nimis opportuna, incitatis passibus peragi jussit, infra laudem id omne est, quod dicere possumus. Nimirum lubrica virtutum statio est, quibus in confinio vitiorum positis, proclivis ad deteriora lapsus. Ea est, pro dolor! humani ingenii pravitas. Non enim tantùm, dum vos pulverem inter et sudorem, industriam in scholasticis hisce exercitiis defigitis, habent quod ignaviæ, quod luxuriæ suæ prætexant improbi; sed et inane gloriolæ aucupium, futurum superbiæ et desidiæ fomitem, hujusmodi inceptis ad captandos sæpius quàm par est eruditorum plausus destinatis, minime malorum suggestui aliquoties adhærere compertum est. Sufficiat ideo nonnullis hucusque vela ventis explicata porrexisse, aliis in margine ambulasse; ne ingruat turbo, ne dilabantur ripæ, jam contrahenda vela, jam referendi pedes. Nostri autem rerumque nostrarum, cùm temporis occasio, et auditorum reverentia, rationem aliquam efflagitare videantur, eam, moræ cùm simus jam omnes impatientes, strictim et quam fieri possit paucissimis absolvam.

[1] Hæc oratio habita est anno 1655, in solennibus academiæ comitiis, cum procancellarii munere jam tertiò functus est.

Quoniam vero eos, qui fecerunt, proxime excepisse, qui præclara eorum facinora celebrarunt, semper æstimati sunt, ne res academiæ, per se satis amplæ et magnificæ, vero minores appareant, alicui, qui quæ sentit polite et copiose possit eloqui, et velit, provinciam hanc delegatam cuperem. Sed prout mihi, me juri et legibus almæ matris subducere, religio foret; ita supra bonum atque honestum de vestro candore anxium esse et sollicitum, pæne esset flagitium.

Qualem vero se gessit academia, quæ tulit fecitque, quorum gratiâ aut odio flagravit; quibus fautoribus usa dignitatem aut pristinam sustinuit, aut amissam recuperavit; quo luctu, quibus casibus eam exercuit summus rerum omnium arbiter, fusius exponentem haud feret temporis angustia. Pauca ideo rerum capita summatim sunt delibanda.

Ne verò exspectatione elati despicatui haberent referenda auditores, sciant adhuc plura nobis fuisse de salute, quàm de gloria certamina. Ut scientiarum pomœria dilataremus, cum tot annos Annibal fuerit ad portas, nemo nisi iniquus et sortis humanæ ignarus exspectaret. Quibus nos nondum periisse magnum non est, iis qui perierunt instruendos amandamus; pluris sane constitit unius anni salus, quàm multorum pridem gloria et honor. Quanto labore, quâ industria, quibus vigiliis et molestiis, quo temporis, studiorum, fortunæ, amicorum dispendio, quo in ambiguis consilio, in extremis animo, res nostræ hactenus securitate septæ fuerunt, neminem spero posthac experturum. Magistratûs nostri in ipsa salutis discrimina fortunarumque communium incidisse honor sit, vel dedecus perpetuum.

Hinc vidimus armatas Musas, et Palladem cum hasta; neque quicquam famæ, aut gravitatis apud bonos eâ re decoxit academia. Imo quod se suâque prudentiâ dignissimum est fecit. Etenim in publicos hostes omnis homo miles est. Neque artes ullas profitemur, quæ naturam dediscere cogant. Extrema exspectare, nihil ausos, malorum est, vel mulierum. Unico pacis amore ducti classicum cecinimus, neque cuiquam mortalium periculum ingerere, sed propriæ saluti tempestive consulere in votis fuit. Hunc animum qui criminantur, ut omnis juris, humani pariter ac divini, nostrarumque rerum conditionis ignaros se ostendunt, ita eorum scommata et convicia facile contemnimus. An ingenii cultus, quo nihil melius neque amplius in natura mortalium est, socordes et torpescentes redderet, inter sacrum et saxum positos? Sane dum ipsum hoc vixisse peccatum non sit, nec vituperationi opportuna sui tutela esse posse videtur. Cùm verò ab iis, qui nihil egregium aut laude dignum aggredi aut ausi sint, aut possint, aliquod candoris vel grati animi indicium exspectare, extremæ stultitiæ sit, ne nulli omnino videantur, quia præterea nihil sunt, lubenter eis maledicere permittamus. Sed tamen vix occasione hâc arreptâ me retineo, quin in

totam ingratorum manum, quorum vitio nihil non mali inest, invehar. Id tantùm nitar, ut hominibus bono publico natis, mederi aliorum incommodis solitis, auctor sim, ut quemcunque boni et magnifici animi fructum, iis, qui cùm servili pæne sint conditione, nihil generosum aut honestum sapiant, erogaverint, nisi frustra niti neque aliud se satagendo nisi odium quærere cordi sit, eam omnem humanitatem non in homines insumptam, reputent. Sed pessimum illud genus hominum, quod diligentius metuit quàm meminit, quod cum pæne nihil unquam boni fecerit, tamen beneficia pro debitis exigit, utrùm plures sint qui criminis arguunt, an qui ejus vestigiis insistunt, incertum est. Quoniam verò in humanum genus, egenum plerumque et opis indigum, qui ingrati animi testimonium ediderunt, peccare videantur, eos tacito bonorum omnium judicio, eique apud ipsos, hoc est malos, tribunali, ubi nemo nocens absolvetur, remitto. Quodcunque conatur, præmii securum agit generosum pectus, et ipsa sibi satis mercedis est mens recti conscia. Interea haud vulgari lætitiâ perfunditur academia, quòd nemo tandem gentem suam togatam destructam velit, nisi qui ipsam rempublicam funditus pessundatam cupiat, cùm non ita pridem ab ipsâ maxime metuit respublica. Ita est rerum vicissitudo. Quæ autem tumultuante plebeculâ, ferocientibus militibus, nutante senatu, strenue undique calumniantibus sycophantis, omni casu major meliorque providentia immunem ruinâ salvamque præstitit academiam; ne bonorum omnium amore jam flagrantem florentemque desereret, summâ contentione interpellanda est.

Vulnus interea, quamvis pharmaco tempestive adhibito sanatum, quod tulimus, dissimulandum esse dolor pietasque vetant. Nempe principis facultatis inter primarios professores ob multijugem scientiam et raram eruditionem pæne principem amisimus:—illum, inquam, cui (ea est inanis seculi vanitas et ignavia) nihil unquam nisi ipsæ literæ fuere opprobrio. Quæ autem post summi viri fata, candidissimi pectoris quondam hospitium, invaserunt lites, odia, studiorumque partium inanes luctas, ne pudenda retegantur et recrudescant vulnera, prætereo. Equidem ut dignitatis et auctoritatis tuendæ gratiâ, qui gradum magistratûs obtinerent in academia, illud honoris et præmii haberent, quod optari possint, cùm ipsius rei necessitas efflagitare videtur, tum summâ a majoribus prudentiâ constitutum est. At nudam προστασίαν, et quemcunque dignitatis locum, per se clara esse aut magnifica, aliudve amplius, quod vere sit venerabile, præter eorum qui ea sustinent virtutem, homines leviculi tantùm opinantur. Hic pes figendus: tantum veræ laudis a magistratu adepto apud æquos rerum æstimatores reportabis, quantum virtutis et diligentiæ in illum attuleris. Proinde sordidam reddere, quam ambis dignitatem, suillinum est; ipsa verò ut te indignum

evehat, fieri non potest. Cùm vero apud nos præfecturæ gradus ea habeant ex fundatorum munificentiâ annexa bona, quæ ignavorum etiam animos titillare, et sui desiderio rapere apta sint; quod vix ullos ad dignitatis fastigium evectos annumerat, nisi quos inter alios aliquo modo eminere ipsa invidia fatebitur, academiæ impense gratulandum est. Cladem autem, quam tanto orbata lumine horruit theologia, doctissimi successoris modestiâ, eloquentiâ, candore, et doctrinâ propulsatam gaudet, prædicatque.

Variis interim hic vivitur moribus, quia maxima apud nos est ingeniorum varietas. Nonnulli, ventri penitus dediti atque somno, ætatem per inertiam et socordiam trahunt, suntque potius, quam vivunt; in re congerendâ alii plus æquo sunt solliciti; aliarumque mixtarum artium non insolentes, habet, habuitque semper academia, quorum piget pudetque. Qui frigide, ideoque frustra ambierunt Musas, et repulsam passi vel penitus sordescunt, vel insaniunt, in corporis gaudiis pæne tandem evanuere. Ex sceleratâ vero paucorum licentiâ, et depravatis moribus, de ipsâ pronunciare academiâ, illorum tantùm est, qui vel assurgente aliorum virtute minores et invidi, vel cæco partium studio abrepti, de infamiâ nostrâ, quam de probitate suâ, magis sunt solliciti. Cœnum, lutum, eluviem habent amœnissimæ urbes, nec quid aliud magis expositum, aut in oculos viatorum prius incurrit; at ineptus esset, qui omnem urbem, ubi lutum est, Lutetiam diceret. Nec candidiores, nec sanctiores animas magnam partem, quam nunc amplectitur, unquam aluit academia. Per diversoria, trivia, plateas, œnopolia, ubi nonnullæ forsan occurrunt studiosorum larvæ, per triduum oberrantium hospitum censuris non stamus. Collegia, bibliothecas, musæa, scholas, oratoria, templa, typographias appellamus. Qui ex iis diligentiæ, pietatis, bonarum literarum, virtutum omnium nullum specimen, fructum nullum percipere potest, non tam male lippus est, aut in sole caligat, quàm hostis ex professo, cujus de rebus nostris definire non est.

Quot vero hucusque habuit inimicos academia, tot habuit et triumphos: neque famam nostram vexarunt ulli sine certissimo suæ dispendio. Non autem Vulcanium scutum, non murum aliquem aheneum adepti, non amuletis nescio quibus instructi, sed puri æterni numinis favoris præsidiis septi, omnium propulsavimus injurias. Quoties nudi, egeni, ope omni humanâ destituti, petulantissimorum ingeniorum conviciis cruentati, in sinu summi optimi patris recumbentes, rei nostræ conficiendæ curam ei detulimus; toties non tantùm securi e vadis emersimus, sed et victores omnia secunda et felicia sumus experti. Qui jacentes ad spem erexit, erectos summâ spe explevit, beneficiis, honoribus auxit, cumulavit; qui efflorescere, et nitorem hunc qualem qualem assequi dedit, ille mihi semper Deus erit.

Neque tamen adeo ingrati sumus, ut quæ eximie de nobis meruerunt optimi quique inter mortales literarum patroni, aut aspernari, aut oblivisci audeamus. Imo hinc memoriæ immortalis, et in omne ævum ab invidiâ oblivionis vindicandi decoris, qui beneficentiâ ullâ academiam demereri statuerunt, sunt securi; quòd cum iis, qui ingrati animi vitium et pestem non tantùm penitus sciunt, sed æternum exsecrantur, rem se habere, facile intelligere possint.

Primò autem mihi celebratus ultimâ oratione, jam celebrandus hic venit summus sub Deo rerum nostrarum arbiter. Sed quid ego de tanto viro? Cùm duæ artes sint, in quibus viri principes studium ponere debeant, militaris nempe et civilis, quibus omnis stat publica virtus, illeque communem hominum fortunam egressus esse meritò æstimandus sit, qui alterutram feliciter, civium suorum bono administraverit; qui utramque verò mediocriter procuravit, vix celebretur; hic nostro saltem seculo solus est, qui tum hanc, tum illam ita expoliverit, ut quam maxime ornaverit haud facile sit definire; utrumque sane, supra quod dici potest, feliciter et processu usque ad invidiam fauste excoluerit.

> "Res gerere, et captos ostendere civibus hostes,
> Attingit solium Jovis, et cœlestia tentat;"[1]

ut canit poeta. Atqui procul omni dubio in republica bene legitimeque administranda tanto major gloria est, eâ quam splendidissimi effundunt triumphi, quanto ingenii bona, virtutes pacis, religionis honos, virium ostentationi, cædi, et sanguini antestant. Ille vero tantus ac talis, cæteris omnibus major, hoc solo seipso minor esse voluit, ut secundi ordinis titulum inter suos pergat numerare, quo lubens primitus susceptum nostri patrocinium feliciter usque propugnet. Nec satis habuit, nominis invicti umbrâ discrimen academiæ tot annos jam defendisse; sed insuper munificentiâ et largitione gratissimâ, celeberrimum toto orbe librorum thesaurum, grande illud non academiæ tantùm, sed et gentis nostræ decus, bibliothecam Bodleianam auxit et locupletavit. Felicem Bodleii animam! quæ tot tantosque virtutis suæ æmulos, tum famæ auctores invenerit. Dum innumeros, qui id sibi negotii solum crediderunt dari, ut laute baccharentur, nepotes longâ nocte premit, æternumque pressura est oblivio; tu nominis tui gloriosam memoriam usque adeo propagasti, ut neque ulla annorum series, aut fuga temporum ei tenebras offundat. Felix Bodlei! non omnis morieris; dum reges, principes, victores, quidquid uspiam antiquæ virtutis, aut veræ eruditionis monumentum inveniri possit, in tuo sacrario reponere certatim gestiunt, suisque imaginibus penetralia tua decorare non dedignantur. Hîc princeps, illic comes, inde præsul, longo demum ordine, variis hono-

[1] Hor. Ep. i. 17, 33.

rum tabulis insigniti, viri laudatissimi fecerunt, ut jam totius orbis ore consono celebretur Bodleius. Adsit jam modò numen propitium, quin ad invidendos scientiarum et virtutis apices, summumque in orbe literario dignitatis fastigium ascendat academia, causa nulla est cur dubitemus.

Cùm itaque per se, suos, aliosque ita cumulatissime nobis prospexit benignissimus pater, quid nos interea, academici? An per ignaviam et socordiam ætatem agere, genio [ac] vitiis indulgere, torpescere, animo esse remisso, et suavia in præsentia quæ sunt, prima habere, deinde emori, priusquam quid sit vivere sciamus? Absit sane. Imo quicquid præclarum et egregium, quicquid apud mortales laude dignum haberi debet, illud omne a nobis jam meritissime exspectari videtur. Nihil vulgare, nihil non summâ pietate et diligentiâ excoctum, cùm bonorum omnium vita, tum Dei immortalis beneficia efflagitant: quod invidis oculi doleant, quod horreat Roma, quod nolit impia turba, id simus, id assequi conemur. Vanam, nudam, sterilem religionis professionem, histrionico, cui renuntiavimus, numinis cultu nihilo meliorem, quantocius amoliamur. Nil viris gravibus, et scenæ servire nesciis, et qui in aliquâ modestiæ famâ esse velint, indignius, quàm ex merâ togâ ambire laudem et honorem crepantes, id omne, quod veræ laudis et honoris quasi palatium est, susque deque habere, persuasissimi simus. Intelligat denuo, quàm cordatis omnibus et contemptui et ludibrio sit, proletaria ista togatorum turba. Non sumus ut olim in Velabro[1] olearii, ubi mutuam laudem malis moribus invicem præstare mos erat. In militiæ disciplinam adducimur, ubi cuique statio quam agit, pro virili tuenda est, aut deserenda turpiter. Præterierunt fatuorum halcyonia; neque superbire ex titulis, aut in imperitum vulgus ex ephippiis ferocire ultra licet. Unicum si excipias studium partium, severe judicat, nec amplius hominum larvas miratur populus.

Macti ideo virtute vestra, doctores literatissimi! sacrum theologiæ depositum, veritatis χειμήλιον, religionis honorem, veræ sanctimoniæ laudem, doctrinæ famam, cuncta a plerisque deserta, nequiter et turpiter conculcata, tanquam Spartam vestram, quam cœpistis, ornare pergite. Sycophantarum latratibus invidorum, et temporum mutationibus, exacerbatorum morsibus, hostium incursionibus, hactenus obstitit virtus vestra et industria. Candorem, numinis reverentiam et cultum, morum gravitatem, cæterasque animi et ingenii dotes, quas hucusque in vobis suspexerit academia, indies excolite magis, donec triumphatâ ignorantiâ, invidiâ, omnique detersâ ærugine, tanquam in consummatissimum virtutum omnium emporium oculi ani-

[1] *Velabrum*, vicus Romæ olim celebris; in quo erant tabernæ olearium, qui solebant, quò carius venderant, de pretio olei inter se conspirare, ne alter altero vilius distraheret.—Facciolati et Forcellini Lexicon.—Ed.

mique, tum nostratium, tum exterorum in academiâ conversi sint. Quòd a seculi peste et supplicio, errorum teterrimorum, qui ubique pæne grassantur, tabe et sanie integros et sanos custodivit filios alma mater, vestræ in concionando sedulitati, exhortando fervori, disputando quà opus est acumini, virtutum exemplo, sub clementissimi patris curâ et tutelâ acceptum ferre se libenter testatur. Quamplurimi autem hic in theologia vere studiosi, sacri ministerii candidati, in hujus laudis partem assumi meritissime postulant. Hosce nempe vigore summo lacertos, olim ecclesiam et scholas, rostra et cathedras amplexuros monet academia. Quibus utrùm modestiam, doctrinam, ingenii acumen, an animi submissionem magis gratuler, hæreo.

Vestro, doctores, eorumque in ære quantum sit respublica, nisi vos multo majori debitorum mole Christo et ecclesiæ devinctos esse haberem confitentes, in memoriam libentissime revocarem. At Christi servis, cœli candidatis, utcunque inter mortales exceptis, tantis cùm sint beneficiis pignerati, quibus in æternum non erunt solvendo, melior quàm vobis sors contigerit haud exspectanda, vix optanda videtur. Merces est obedientia nostra, et ipsum opus ministerii præmium satis amplum. Ne vos teneat philosophorum immensa laudum cupido, multo minus hodiernæ apud pontificios idolomaniæ illecebræ, venter et ambitio, aliave fugacis ævi blandimenta; quæ futura sunt, imo quæ bonis adsunt, divini amoris pignora attentius perpendite. Hæc animos in obsequium rapere, in officio peragendo vires renovare et augescere possunt, et factum dabunt.

Vosque, lectissima juvenum corona, academiæ, patriæ, ecclesiæ, non minor spes quam illi gloria! quoniam vobis neque exempla, neque præcepta desunt, quibus ad proficiendum in omni virtutum genere incitari possitis, quæ a vobis meritò sperantur, attendite. In speculâ sunt omnis ordinis homines: quemadmodum se unusquisque vestrum gerat, observant. Malorum interim et ignavorum corrumpendi artibus vos nimis esse opportunos, cogitate. Neque enim laus est, ibi esse probum, ubi nemo est, qui aut possit, aut conetur corrumpere. Fucos, quoad possumus, depellimus a præsepibus nostris: cæterùm cordatis omnibus ignavorum exitu ad diligentiam acrior stimulus vix adhibetur. Qui stolidorum et improborum hominum catervas vagas et inutiles, extrema fere aut timentes, aut ferentes, vel flagitiis omnibus coopertas, sibi in œnopoliis, popinis, angulisque fœdissimis et spurcissimis plaudentes, strenuis et sapientibus omnibus satis spretas et neglectas, contemplari velint, vix socordiam, tripudia, et choreas, quibus juventutis florem bonis artibus ereptum discant, imitabuntur.

Sed ulterius detinendi non estis, auditores. Ex invidorum oculis jam jam evanescentis magistratûs nostri, cujus tamen adhuc neque piget neque pudet, vel acta referendo, vel confitendo omissa, ullamve reddendo rationem, invitis vobis, ipse non coactus, satietatem im-

ponere nolo. Floreat academia, vigeat inter studiosos concordia, industria, religio, numinis reverentia, et insurgentis cujuscunque virtutis æmulatio; exsulent studia partium, cæcus sui amor, avaritia, ignavia, quæcunque ingenuos animos, generosa pectora, mentes Christianas minus decent! Quòd dispendio pacis, famæ, studiorum, vestris studiis obsequens, inserviens commodis, hucusque litavi, me mei haud pœnitebit.

Sed et adhuc lugendi jure donandi estis, academici! neque enim hîc gradum sistit fatum, aut dolor. Quale literarum decus, quod morum exemplar nuperrime nobis eripuit veneranda providentia, enarrare volentem cohibet mœrens animus, inclususque dolor. Illum, inquam, quem candor, et, justitiæ soror, incorrupta fides, nudaque veritas, bonis omnibus charum; quem in rebus agendis prudentia et industria literatis utilem, omnibusque acceptum reddiderunt; quem ipse amicum habui summâ necessitudine conjunctissimum, pro dolor! amisimus. Nisi publica obstarent ecclesiæ fata, et effusus reclamaret martyrum sanguis, unde privato luctui indulgere vetat pietas et pudor, eruditi capitis desiderio modum ponere nimis esset difficile. Procuratorem summâ bonorum omnium exspectatione munus subeuntem, ereptum fato deflevit in vesperiis fraterna facundia. Sed, apage sis, inanes gemitus, et nequicquam ingeminata vota! An mortis nostræ tenebris, affectionum vitiis, studiorum involucris, laborum tædio, æmulorum odio, curarum anxietate, rerum omnium incertitudine et instabilitate æternùm solutos, deplorandos censeamus? Absit, academici! Quæ nos urgent et premunt, quæ utrinque nos male habent, ex alto despiciunt felices animæ. Dum pietati, virtuti, laboribus, quod reliquum est perbrevis ævi, dicamus, magnis exemplis aliquo modo digna molimur; Deo curæ erit nostri rerumque omnium exitus.

ORATIO IV.[1]

Ea est muneris nostri ratio, academici! ut cùm deliciarum omne genus satias tenuerit auditores, in ipsa dimissione, cui jam inhiat erudita cavea, paulisper a me detinendi sitis. Elatos spe secessûs, et ad censuram peragendam gestientes animos, cùm nostrorum hominum, tum hospitum gratissimorum videre videor. Quid cuique sapuit, quid nauseam peperit, ut quisque nostrum vel cordate, vel saltem minus inepte partes suas egerit, prout feret sors aut occasio, iis, qui semper auditores vexatos esse dedignantur, libido est exponere. Usque enim adeo in locum præcipitem hic nos committimus, ut æquis atque iniquis pariter nostri potestatem faciamus. Eâ enim

[1] In comitiis academicis habita est hæc oratio, anno 1657, cum jam continuâ serie quintùm fuerat procancellarius.

sub lege et conditione, illiberali satis, rem hisce comitiis literariam gerimus, ut quæ nos pro more et honore academiæ, atque officio quod nobis incumbit, præstare conemur, mox fabula fiant, atque per ora vulgi traducta cachinni sæpius censurâ excipiantur. Neque enim ullo consilio regi potest mos iste pessimus, qui in se neque consilium, neque modum habet. Ita voluerunt, ita jusserunt antecessores, quorum hic solùm auctoritate nitimur, et imperium ferimus, ut profana, sacra; levia, seria; procacia, atque rerum gravissima uno nisu effunderet ingenio varia, atque animo dispar soboles academica. Sed nequicquam coit male sarta gratia. Optima quæque statim signa relinquere, et oblivione sibi consulere, coguntur. Ita enim quæ suavia sunt in præsentia, quamvis ægritudinem mox conciliatura, prima habet juvenilis studiosorum fervor; et vix aliquem ipsa virtus, aut eruditio, locum tutari possit, ita tumultuantur, clamant, pugnant concalescens turba, de iis quibus nihil opus est ut audiantur, ut obliviscantur plurimum. Pudet dicere, quâ celebritate, si modo celebre id dici possit, quod dictu turpe est, ubivis volitant sarcasmorum et dicteriorum ineptiæ, cùm rerum vere memorabilum ipsa vestigia obterit oblivio, et æterno premuntur silentio. Neque sane iniquius ulla concertatio comparari potest, quam ut medios inter tumultus et strepitus, dum γελοίων avidus insurgit loci temporisque genius, cum lepore et facetiis contenderent virtus et eloquium. Imo quia urit, quia secat, liceat, auditores, inveterato huic atque adhuc gliscenti hujus loci dieique malo paulo altius ingemiscere. Atque hoc libentius agam, quoniam quicquid sit illud doloris, aut bilis, quod cuiquam indignabunda conciliare possit oratio, ῥήμασι βυσσίνοις lenire, atque iis quæ magis ad palatum sapiunt, veluti condire, priusquam ad finem vergat, animus est. Præterita recordanti subit istorum temporum miseratio, quibus, quo quis ad bonis inhumane convıciandum accesserit audacior, quo ad modestiæ limites transiliendos alacrior, eo magis famæ et gloriæ se reportaturum speraverit. Manserunt etiam hisce comitiis, morientis uti speramus, licentiæ vestigia. Sed graviora tulimus: neque enim unquam celeberrimum hunc conventum ad finem perducere potuimus, quin vel oratorum alicui silentium imponere, vel quod multo gravius est, contumelias pati, necesse habuimus. Delicatis ingeniis, si quæ sint, age, evellantur vitiorum fibræ.

Est etiam unde sororiæ academiæ vel curam et diligentiam desiderare, vel vices dolere cogimur; nempe quod impuros nebulones, moriones eruditos, non tantùm alios, quos non nisi Aristophanis æmulis in scenam producere fas esset, dicteriis petulantissime agitare; sed et quia magis aperte dicendum est, mendaciis atque calumniis in innocentium hominum famam involare, vel volens permisit, vel invita est perpessa.

Satis diu jam, ni fallor, serram hanc invicem se proscindendi con-

viciis reciprocavit utriusque academiæ proles; neque enim dentatas istius hominum generis, quod quid sit pudere nescit, quas vocant, facetias, aliter dici posse, aut debere censeo. Contendimus utique quis jocose magis, aut magis salse, si modò consuetudini insulsissimæ quid salis inesse dicendum sit, alios populo deridendos præbeat. Putidum certamen, et personatis indignum histrionibus. Veterem comœdiam, γελωτοποιόν, cordatorum hominum famæ dicaciter insultantem, uti obtrivit Macedonum contumeliarum impatiens potentia; ita ubivis fastidivit, contempsit, explosit tandem ethnicismus. Eam jam deperimus scilicet, et vulgari scenâ ejectam, postiliminio in academiarum comitia reducere satagimus. Egregiam verò laudem! mimas, histriones, balatrones publicos, evax, tandem pæne prævertimus! Etenim dum huic sententiæ, seu insaniæ potius non renuntiamus, dum istiusmodi nos agitant intemperiæ, si quis mox ganeonibus per popinas, tabernas, lustra, decantanda deprompserit, ille sapit solus, reliqui volitant velut umbra. Utinam sane tandem per eos, quorum honori parco (ut neminem enim offenderet oratio nostra, nisi qui se ita voluntarius obtulerit, ut in eum non incurrere non possim, statui),—utinam, inquam, liceret inveteratæ huic consuetudini obviam ire; utinam juventuti academicæ liceret esse piæ, sobriæ, modestæ; et ne, qui sunt ex malorum morum quasi colluvione nati, bipedum, imo, quod sæpius accidit, quadrupedum impudentissimi, in ullo pretio apud nos diutius esse viderentur.

Harum vero ineptiarum non ita pridem pertæsus, ausus est non nemo, quâ erat inscitiâ, ordinem hunc rerum nostrarum, quem semper vetitum, condemnatum semper, semperque retentum videret, convellere. Voluit nempe ut a comitiis academicis, gravissimorum virorum frequentissimo undique concursu celeberrimis, exsularent scommata, dicteria, mendacia; ut in omni doctrinæ genere exercitiorum atque disputationum uberiorem haberemus proventum; conviciorum, maledictorum, ineptissimorum jocorum famem; ut inertium hominum et helluonum, qui nihil aliud norunt, nisi vivere per dedecus, et præ risu quotidie emori, qui solennibus nostris se affatim ingerunt, nulla ratio in posterum haberetur. Criminis verò hujus inauditi, audaciæ, furoris, sceleris auctorem velitis, ut ei in oculos involetis, aut saltem ejus in famam? Atqui eccum ipsum:—

> "Me, me, adsum, qui feci, in me convertite ferrum,
> O *juvenes*, mea fraus omnis." [1]

Imo quæ et quanta jamdudum ab hominibus odio, amore, studio partium incitatis, aliisque, qui nihil otiosâ vitâ, plenâ et confertâ voluptatibus, præstabilius esse ducunt, ob ipsam hanc causam, quòdque in ipsorum verba, antiquas quod attinet ineptias, jurare ausus non sum, sim perpessus, quidque rumoribus super hâc re ubivis

[1] Virg. Æn. ix. 427.

inique sit dispersum, hominem neminem arbitror esse, qui ignorat. Neque sane conatus istiusmodi destinans mea me fefellit exspectatio. Etenim an ego ea, quibus hâc rerum conditione invigilaveram, ut vulgò cum candore exciperentur, vel senserim, vel speraverim? Non tam eram rudis, non tam ignarus rerum, tam omnis (Deo gratias) prudentiæ expers, ut animum meum lactando in vanam spem illicerem. Aliquid vidi, aliquid audivi, aliquid legendo et quærendo cognovi; contra inveterata præjudicia bono publico invigilantem, nisi conviciorum plaustris onustum, et tantùm non oppressum, inveni neminem. Neque hæc ideo a me dicuntur, quasi ex obscurorum quorundam hominum et nugacissimorum ineptiis et stultitiâ, aliorumve ingratâ credulitate aut invidiâ, anxietatem exhaurirem; cùm non tantùm conscientiâ propriâ, sed et studiorum et factorum apud eruditos et malarum artium insolentes saltem veniâ, dicteriorum scenæ ac vulgi conviciorum sim securus.

Sin autem acrius hîc egi, quàm mea fert consuetudo, aut ratio vitæ, quâ omnibus morem gerere, omnes perferre et pati, quoad fieri potest, in animum induxi; peto a vobis, academici! ut tantum orationi meæ concedatis, quantum justæ indignationi, si modo indignationem parerent convicia et contumeliæ, concedendum putetis. Usque vero, per me licet, fruantur in posterum maledicendi voluptate, qui nec recta sibi consulere, nec bene consultis uti norunt. Quantas itaque turbas, quos clamores, in rejiciendis nugis, quisquiliis, eruditionis verò et scientiarum omne genus exercitiis inducendis, stabiliendis, excitaverit, quos provocaverit nonnullorum industria, de quâ quicquid dixerim minus esset, ne invidiâ et partium furore perciti literiones aliqui nimium contabescerent, ulterius non prosequar. Optimi autem conatûs atque pulcherrimi conscientiâ recti, ea in præsentia voluisse, quibus posteri si qui sint fruentur, sat habeant, quibus curæ et cordi est aut purioris religionis honos, aut severioris eruditionis et scientiarum progressus: alienæ virtuti invideant necesse est, qui propriam non habent.

Quoniam verò ex iis, quæ non fecit, calumniarum satis tulerit academia; videamus porro, num ex iis, quæ fecit, gloriam ullam aut laudem apud æquos rerum æstimatores sit adepta. Annus jam decimus agitur, ex quo communi patriæ incendio erepta academia, et securius altiusque radices egerit, et liberius progerminare cœperit. Quibus vero rerum adversarum anfractibus involuta, quibus impedita molestiis, atque periculis exposita, "occulto velut arbor ævo," hucusque succreverit, et sæpius antehac exposui, neque amplius in memoriam revocare opus est. Non defuisse, qui a gentis togatæ, extremum pæne discrimen sæpius adeuntis, partibus steterint, frequentissima, quam hodierno die conspeximus, studiosorum concio testimonio esse potest. Quid enim? an privatorum copia erat hostium præpotentium

ferociæ, avaritiæ, audaciæ modum ponere? vel minas intonantibus, et verborum fulmina, frena injicere? Imo qui nihil divinum, nihil ope mortali grandius in declinantis rei literariæ subsidium et fulcimentum venisse sentit; illum rerum divinarum et humanarum pariter socordiâ, et negligentiâ supinâ laborare certum est. Si quid autem vel a nostrum quopiam prudenter et consulte est susceptum, vel duce et auspice Christo perfectum feliciter, quo academiarum aut saluti, aut honori, aut commodis consultum fuerit; id sane sine summo seculi dedecore, quemcunque tandem vultum aut supercilium induerint calumniatores, ei vitio verti non potest. Quo verò quisque vir melior est, eo libentius laude atque famâ caret, factorum sensu atque conscientiâ contentus. Neque ii solùm forsan academici dicendi sunt, qui cùm illis alibi nihil opus esset, intra muros academicos se tutò retinuerint; ipsius autem academiæ aut incolumitatem propugnare, aut honorem augere, nec velint, nec valeant. Ita demum optime præesse videantur ergastularii. Sed et præsto nobis fuere potentiorum subsidia, quæ grato animo semper recolimus, et quorum virtuti et favori optima quæque accepta ferimus. Eorum verò, cùm rerum gestarum gloriâ immortalitati consecrantur, in laudes spatiari, aut recensere beneficia, temporis cancelli, quibus arctamur, nos prohibent. Providentiæ interea et bonitatis divinæ gloriam, in amplissimis quos ex iis intra breve tempus fructibus percepimus, libet contemplari.

Quæ anno abhinc decimo, aut eo plus minus, pæne deserta jacuit academia, quos jam, propitii in Christo numinis favore freta, atque irrigata cœlitus, doctissimos oratores, subtiles philosophos, disceptatores acerrimos, egregios mathematicos, pios, acres, vehementes verbi divini præcones, felices criticos e grege suo in gremium ab ipsa pueritia exceptos, fotos, educatos, ostendere non possit? Quos ego hic nunc prius laudem? vos doctores, aliosque collegiorum et aularum præfectos, eruditos, pios, qui recta consilia, egregia exempla dedistis: an juventutem ipsam, quæ vestris vestigiis inhærere, consiliis obtemperare voluit? Si ea demum sit civitatis cujuscunque ultima calamitas, atque hinc solùm misera esse videatur, cùm neque qui prudenter reipublicæ consulere possint, neque qui recte cogitatis acquiescere velint, in eâ sint; quidni ea felix dicenda sit, ubi multi bene præcipiunt, atque plurimi sunt, qui cordate obtemperant? Uti enim vim atque virtutem ductorum sensim debilitat, atque animis languorem incutit, discipulorum segnities aut pervicacia; ita juniorum industriæ necesse est ut iter intercludatur, ubi nemo est, qui cohortatione suâ et exemplo animum iis accendat. Quid autem jam possit vita in literis posita, exemplis atque præceptis instituta et munita, quasi in speculo conspiciendum præbet academia. Quod gaudeant boni, quod invidis oculi doleant, quod suo splendore aliis caliginem inducat; ejus jam unice desiderio per aliquot annos flagrarunt literarum et

disciplinæ nostræ alumni; imo eo usque progressi sunt eorum nonnulli, ut quemadmodum apud antecessores non habuerint exempla, ita an apud posteros inventuri sint æmulos, vereor. Quid ego singulos commemorem? theologos, ὀρθοδοξίας retinentissimos, quibus scilicet antiquius fuerit veritati divinæ, eâ, quâ decet, animi submissione inservire, quam pravarum opinionum portentis, aut veterum philosophorum quisquiliis, inauspicatò denuo erutis, nominis celebritatem aliquam assequi, atque enitescere? Atque utinam sane tam libenter aliqui nobilitate nominis quali quali carere potuissent, quàm ecclesia aut pii omnes eorum lucubrationibus carere possent. Sed postquam famæ libido quenquam invaserit, neque eam explendi nisi veritatis periculo spes ulla est, omnem per errorum anfractus vagandi licentiam præfidenter sibi sumit, atque mori mavult, quam non per fas aut nefas eminere. Quid egregios mathematicos, quibus, cum neque a priscis feliciter inventa accurate docere, neque aliorum inventis addere, satis fuerit, ipsi etiam communem virorum doctorum sortem prætergressi, nova, mira, stupenda, ex intimis naturæ rerum penetralibus eruta, ignota priscis, admiranda posteris, non sine tum ipsorum, tum academiæ laude et famâ, tam dilucide et ornate in lucem eruditorum extraxerunt, ut, ea studia quod attinet, quicquid uspiam est doctiorum et candidiorum animarum, iis ultro palmam deferre paratum sit? Alios libentissime adoreâ afficerem, nisi me, qui in hoc dicendi genere neque promptus sum, neque paratus, laudandorum multitudo, et meritorum splendor ac decus obruerit. Imo intelligo quàm scrupuloso difficilique in loco versor, quàm invidiæ atque obtrectationibus opportuno; dum aliquibus laudationum nihil satis est, aliis quicquid nonnihil est nimium. Aliquorum ideo cedamus modestiæ, aliorum audaciæ; parcamus personis, res ipsæ recenseantur. Igitur magnum quid aggredior, quòd cum omnes pæne ævo seculi graves simus, atque sub ipsius mundi mortalitate gemat humanum genus, licentiâ et intemperantiâ ubivis fere dominantibus, academicorum mores non vereor commemorare. Præceps sane et perversum malevolorum judicium, quinquatribus Palladis, aut Musarum hisce feriis innixum, dum advenarum turbæ mista paulo licentius vagatur juventus academica, declinare cogimur. Si quid hic secius quam oportet accidere videatur, in eos cudatur faba, qui ne interciderentur peccandi lenocinia et occasiones, summâ ope nisi sunt; quæ nunc extra septa hæc publicitus aguntur, ego vix ea nostra voco: pacata tempora studiorum atque studiosorum recessus appellamus: nisi illic plurimos optimarum legum vigorem ingenuis moribus exprimentes; paucos tantùm ad præscriptum honestos et sobrios; quisquilias, nebulones, sceleribus inquinatos, nisi aut nullos, aut paucissimos, inveniet æquus rerum arbiter, causam non dicimus, quin summâ infamiâ flagremus. Age, hic in jus ambulemus. Diem nobis dicat,

cuicunque vel ex irâ, vel ex invidiâ volupe est. Pro tribunali nos libentissime sistimus. In novum discrimen adducimur. Non fecimus, non cogitavimus, falsi testes, ficta crimina: quæ voces ad judices dici solent, adhibemus. Hîc seriò triumphamus; hîc habent, quod gratiæ imputent divinæ grati animi; neque hoc opis est nostræ.

Neque multorum in academiâ, aut ipsius academiæ erga exteros, religionis ergo, et bonarum literarum gratiâ peregrinantes, pietatem oblivione sepelire fas esse judicamus. Quot verò egregios juvenes, multarum ecclesiarum spem atque segetem, quinquennio jam proxime elapso sustinuit, aluit, fovit quorundam liberalitas, consultius silere puto, quàm leviculam arrogantiæ suspicionem apud quemvis mortalium dicendo subire. Verbo dicam: non tantùm ἀδάπανος nobis bibliothecarum usus, ac mortuorum indulgentia eos excepit (quis enim non esset sine sumptibus liberalis, sine dispendio munificus? si modò hoc esset liberalem esse et munificum) sed in dimensorum consortium, in aularum instructum cautione divinâ secura pietas eos admisit. Neque tamen in hac re aliquid reperio, quamobrem laudaremur. Officium nostrum fecimus, atque utinam fecerimus. Eorum, quæ fidei nostræ concredidit antiquorum munificentia, non proprietarios, non ex asse heredes, sed condos promos fidos et frugi, quà ex illorum liberalitate quàm plurimorum bonorum inopiæ ac rebus angustis subveniretur, nos esse voluerunt. Cum itaque cumulatissime nobis prospexerit divina providentia, an nobis vivere, genio indulgere, ætatem voluptatibus agere, licebit, neglectis, spretis iis, quibus cùm sit res angusta domi, tamen ingenii cultûs gratiâ, quo nihil melius, neque amplius in naturâ mortalium est, per infinita rerum discrimina e regionibus remotissimis in celeberrimum hoc literarum emporium tendunt? Absit, academici! imo nihil Christianis, nihil pietatis et purioris religionis cultoribus, nihil viris doctis, nihil aliorum munificentiæ alumnis indignius, quàm deo Lucrio inhiare, aut eo frui, quod revera est alienum, nimium esse tenacibus. Verùm enimvero quicquid nos peregrinorum causâ fecimus, id maxime nostrâ etiam causâ fecisse videri possumus. Cum enim vitâ plerumque sint innocentes, proposito sancti, insolentes malarum artium, pietatis, industriæ, diligentiæ, ac grati animi egregia specimina inter nos ediderunt. Hinc etiam per exteras oras latius diffusa effulgent academiæ decus et honor. Hinc laudem suam a malevolorum et invidorum hominum calumniis prorsus vendicavit; ut fugitivis, atque ob scelera fugatis, qui infeste nobis adversantur, et os ferreum perfricantes ubivis in academiam invehunt, vix auris, nedum fides apud probos, et partium studiis vacuos, uspiam adhibeatur. Omnium jam libris et linguis prædicatur Oxonium, ita ut postquam deleverit adversariorum convicia, atque de invidorum calumniis triumphum egerit, ne celebritati suæ minor cedat, jam solùm in votis habeat.

Non defuere interea, quibus vel propriâ malitiâ ductis, vel aliorum libidini morem gerentibus, dum quas ipsi meruere, pœnas dederunt, non sine summâ infamiâ, nec minore scelere, volupe fuerit non tantùm tranquillam academiæ conditionem sollicitare, sugillare gloriam, antiquos ritus evertere, sed et colubrinis molaribus ipsam matrem depascere, atque illotis pedibus conculcare. Manent adhuc ubivis, et sunt superstites Cuthæorum posteri, qui dum votis fruitur felicibus academia, se genuinam ejus esse prolem plenis buccinis crepant; at ubi in arctum coguntur gentis togatæ copiæ, atque urgentur angustiis, animo statim gladiatorio ad eam viam affectant, et unà cum iis, qui novercali odio prosequuntur literatos, devoratâ (quam prius simulabant) modestiâ, palam congrediuntur; quippe qui id solùm in votis habere videantur, ne non nostris periculis delectentur malevoli, ipsi opimæ invidiæ et odii victimæ. Hos consulunt in tenebris, hos publice adsciscunt patronos, contumaces academiæ alumni, dum grandævam matrem, longo retro tempore summæ libertatis jure gaudentem, extraneum ferre imperium, atque æmulorum sub ditione captivam detinere, volunt. Si ex horum hominum votis cecidisset eventus, si ex animi sententiâ nacti fuissent calumniatores successum, nisi multi unà Flaminii clamassent, ἐλευθέρα ἔστω Ἑλλάς, neque suo jure, neque favore principum, neque antecessorum industriâ aut virtute, neque antiquâ disciplinâ ulterius fruitura esset academia. Et sane usque adeo hostium extraneorum sustulimus impetum, arma retudimus, tot reipublicæ μεταμορφώσεις superavimus, et tot publicis enatavimus periculis; ut non nisi a domesticis, a nostratibus, si qui tandem futuri sint, qui ad perdendam rem literariam sobrie sunt accessuri, nobis cavendum sit. Sed nolo Babylonios tentare modos.

"Prudens futuri temporis exitum
Caliginosa nocte premit Deus."[1]

Quænam autem negotiorum moles nostrorum nonnullis incubuit, dum consiliis aliquorum pravis et præcipitibus mederi, adversari aliorum nequitiæ, obviamque ire periculis undique ingruentibus, necesse habuerunt, cùm in summa rerum omnium discrimina inciderimus, qui negotio huic nostro in posterum sunt præficiendi, dicent. Sine causâ ideo, at forsan non sine culpâ, ut non tantùm quâ elegantiâ, sed et quo lepore, quibusque facetiis essent præditi ostenderent, id maxime nobis vitio vertere quidam voluerunt, sine quo neque ipsi tuti, neque nos probi et honesti esse potuimus.

Sed ut modum tandem orationi constituamus, necesse est. Hucusque ideo, auditores, ope divinâ freti, non tantùm ex periculis evasimus, sed infestissimos quosque hostes vicimus; saltem victi, prostrati, loco pulsi non sumus. Vicit pietas, ingenuus candor, morum integritas, atque omnia recta tentandi audax industria, ne-

[1] Hor. Carm. iii. 29, 29.

que sub jugum nos misit utcunque corrupti seculi genius. Numerosam fama et celebritas, bene moratam disciplina, doctam industria peperit almæ matris sobolem. Quam concepit in re religionis sententiarum divortium, fovit studium partium, incendit ira et vindicta, gravem et pæne insuperabilem usque adhuc pertulimus invidiam; neque tamen adeo abjecto sumus animo, aut demisso, ut non eadem quæ prius, imo majora tentare spes sit, et votum. Adsis modo propitius tu, Pater optime! laborum omnium nostrorum auctor atque præmium, sit tibi curæ atque cordi pusilli gregis incolumitas; tuque, Jesu Christe! tuorum omnium perfugium atque salus; tuque etiam sanctissime, atque infinitè potens, beate Spiritus! erige virtute tua ineffabili ad omnem pietatem et industriam academicorum omnium animos! Ita demum ea seges, quæ adhuc pæne in herba latet, et votis et exspectationi bonorum omnium amplissime respondebit; quod faxis pro infinitâ tuâ gratiâ, Domine Jesu! Amen.[1]

ORATIO V.[2]

Quod semper in votis habui, academici! ut quamvis indignissimus, non tamen ultimus audirem academiæ procancellarius; cùm id mihi hujus diei felicitas propediem expediet, venerando huic senatui, totique academiæ non possum non impense gratulari. Et quidni sane tot procellis agitato, tot negotiorum fluctibus pæne obruto, tot undique contrariis ventorum ictibus oppugnato, in portum jam tandem naviganti sibi etiam gratulari liceat? Etenim quorum præsagitione quâdam, studiis depulsus, laborum atque itinerum tædio contritus, rerumque alienarum satur, succumbentem animum toties refeci, otium et quietem tantùm non assecutus esse videor. Quanti autem mihi fuerit fasces deponere academicos, quàm immani ambitione id dudum sum conatus, quâ tandem maximorum virorum sententiam pæne inverecundiâ expugnavi, neque vestra nosse interest, neque mea repetere refert. Quod ideo non ante decursum totum quinquennium illuxerit vobis mihique dies hic exspectatissimus, e rerum est quam patimur conditione. Sidera supremo motori proxime remota, eoque

[1] Ne quis in celeberrimæ Oxoniensis academiæ institutis minus versatus orationis hujus argumenti similitudinem cum ea duarum proxime præcedentium, in occasione haud dissimili, vitio vertat, rei istius causam ex Parecbolis Statutorum percipiat, quarum, Tit. vii. sect. 1, § 18, cui inscriptio est, "De conclusione comitiorum," hic adscripsimus: "Peractis exercitiis, et doctoribus in quâlibet facultate creatis, consuevit viccancellarius, monitu procuratorum, comitia concludere solenni oratione; in quâ res gestæ superioris anni, beneficia præsertim universitati collata, et alia, quæ ad honorem academiæ faciunt, prout ipsi videbitur, commemorare in more positum est."

[2] Habita est hæc oratio ad academicos, anno 1657, cùm, alio procancellario electo, munus illud jam depositurus fuit.

alterius seu arbitrio, seu necessitate rapidissime agitata, progressus suâpte naturâ lentissimos, sed placidos, et ab inferiorum turbâ securos, sortita esse accepimus. Ex quo supremo gentis nostræ motori propius accesserit academia, utut raptu rerum omnium cœlesti, quo populus agitamur, suo orbe placidissime secura velocius circumvolvatur; motu tamen sibi peculiari et proprio ut lente procederet, necesse habuit. Superato itaque tandem, quamvis in longum producto discrimine, sedes ubi fata quietas ostendunt, libens desideo. Nec hinc solùm, quòd evasi, gloriari licet, cùm et hoc nonnihil, imo magnum sit; sed, rate licet quassatâ, quod nec naufragus, nec prædonum licentiæ expositus, ad littus appello. En navem vestram academiam fluctibus plusquam decumanis jactatam, sospitem tamen et illæsam, etiam quod fidem pæne omnem superat, fortiùs solito juncturis omnibus compactam, dum tonat lævum, atque malacia est, periti naucleri curæ illico committendam! Hoc tantùm mihi restat, ut composite moriar. Salva res est, salva academia, salvæ literæ: sit salva pietas, et jam mori libet. Moriar itaque, academici! idque ne morerer, officio pæne simul, et fato functus. Eruditos vero gemitus, aut doctos morientis singultus nolite exspectare. Qui conscientiâ niti vivus didicit, elegantiâ moribundus haud opus habet.

Neque magistratum nostrum celebraturus adsum, quem tamen æque suscepisse pudet, ac jam deposuisse dolet; a quo utroque tantùm absum, ut ab omni indecoro aut inhonesto longius abesse nollem. Verùm enimvero nisi paulo iniquius comparatum esse existimassem, ut qui magistratum deponerent, suarum laudum essent præcones, et res suas gestas aliorumque vitia narrarent, nonnulla forsan, eaque nec penitus ingloria, quæ primus, quæ solus in magistratu gessi, celebrare possem. Sed non tantùm ab ea consuetudine longissime abhorret ratio, atque voluntas nostra; sed ut inde divertant eorum omnium mores, quibus cordi est magna vivere potius quàm loqui, et cuicunque tandem benefacere, quàm a pluribus laudari, necesse est. Munus autem, quod honoris loco (quem a votis, quàm a meritis, si fieri possit, longius abesse vellem) non accepi, haud laborum tædio contritus abdico. Et suscepti, et continuati, et jam tandem depositi ratio ad vestra commoda referebatur. Quia me aliquo modo rebus vestris subsidio, vel adjumento esse potuisse judicarunt alii, magistratum inivi; quia commodiori homine ac peritiori, meo judicio, vobis opus est, illo libenter abeo. Et jam serenâ mente privatus fio, neque ab irâ eorum, quos sciens volensque injuriâ affeci, metuens; neque gratias eorum, quos demereri statui, exspectans: nam prioris ordinis nullos plane esse audacter pronuntio; posterioris aliquos fuisse, meminisse me haud decet.

De rebus autem vestris, quæ pro more dicenda habeo, paucis accipite. Annus jam quintus esse desiit, ex quo academiæ moderamen,

indigno licet, mihi commissum fuit. Quis fuerit, eò temporis atque abinde, gentis togatæ status, quæ rerum nostrarum conditio, nemo homo est nostratium, ut opinor, qui ignoret. Per primum biennium vulgi fuimus et vulgaris fabula. De discrimine nostro, fortunisque communibus, ex astrologorum hemerologiis et chartis Mercurialibus disceptatum est inter lippos et tonsores. Neque quisquam hominum erat adeo infeliciter stupidus, ut de fatis nostris aut timere, aut sperare ei non contigerit. Nempe sic voluit summus rerum arbiter, quo minoris pretii apud mortales esset quicquid est mortale: neque, imperiorum venustatem et summa totius mundi decora invadente marcore, ut florem illibatum sola gereret academia, forsan æquum erat. Causam interea nostram, cui vel periculum facessere nefas erat, aleæ subjectam ancipiti, qui pro virili propugnare ausi sunt, oppidò fuere pauci. Imo eò deventum erat dementiæ, ut e partibus gentis togatæ stetisse, violatæ religionis et pietatis nomine censeretur. Omne autem illud, quod apud viros graves male audit, atque est vere flagitiosum, perquam liberaliter quotidie in vos impegere malevoli. Qui in rem nostram paulo æquius essent animati, ita tamen rerum suarum sategerunt, ut precibus obtusi, et quotidianis pæne conviciis fatigati, nihil aliud quàm verba dare, moras nectere, et quæ pie de conclamatis dici solent, proferre sustinuerint. Rebus itaque omnibus turbatis, et inter sacrum et saxum positis, ope omni humanâ destitutis, non ἀπὸ μηχανῆς miraculum, sed cœlitus prospexit pater clementissimus; postquam quò tandem evaderent audacia, rabies, et ignorantia nonnullorum, a quibus meliora exspectare fas erat, liquidò nimis constitisset, omnia eorum consilia, conatus omnes dicto citius ita dissipavit summus ille rerum omnium arbiter, ut rebus suis vix, aut ægre consulerent, qui nudiustertius nostris avidissime inhiabant. Præter ingens dedecus, et in omne ævum duraturam insaniam pravi illius incepti adversus academias, quod irato prorsus aversoque Deo nequicquam inierunt malesani homunciones, nihil prorsus reliquum est. Quamdiu autem erunt, qui, oratione fusâ, facta et consulta fortium et sapientum, cum improborum ignominiâ, sempiternis monumentis prodere possint, conatûs illius eos forsan pœnitebit. Atque hic finis fuit, hunc terminum obtinuit prima magistratûs nostri solennior periodus.

Vos autem, academici!

> "Cyclopea saxa
> Experti revocate animos, mœstumque timorem
> Mittite: forsan et hæc olim meminisse juvabit." [1]

Nonnullorum forsan, dum ex scrupulis, quos nobis injecerunt malevoli, animi dubii fuimus, ea ratio, quâ par erat uti, habita non fuit. Sed ut eorum, quæ non jussi fecimus; sic etiam illorum, quæ ob

[1] Virg. Æn. i. 205.

culpam alienam omittere non potuimus, accuratam reddere rationem nullo jure tenemur. Qui curis æger, pluribusque diversi generis negotiis intentus, omnia non tantùm curat, et disponit sapienter, sed et feliciter perficit, is mihi communem mortalium sortem excedere videtur; quod de meipso sentire esset impium, prædicare inverecundum. Si genio indulgens, si socordiâ torpescens, si in re conquirenda sollicitus, si ævi illecebris astrictus, malisve artibus quibuscunque tandem addictus, in rem vestram peccavi, quin summo dedecore e gremio matris ejiciar in æternum, causam non dico. Imo illum, qui ut exercitia pietatis, et in omni genere artium et scientiarum antiquitus prudenter instituta rite et sedulò peragerentur curavit; qui in utroque genere nova aliqua ad summam omnium utilitatem, et non levem academiæ laudem, ut instituerentur auctor fuit; qui nulli sumptui, nullis laboribus, quibus res literaria vel sufflaminari depressa, vel aliunde adjuta promoveri potuerit, parcendum statuit; vestro fretum genio et fato, quod ultra etiam bonorum omnium calculis approbaretur, saltem aggredi voluisse, non difficilis est conjectura. Sed verbo dicam: more plane divino evenit, ut salutem omnem, laudabilemque omnem progressum soli Deo accepta referremus. Illum rerum nostrarum conficiendarum in se curam suscepisse vel cæci conspiciant. Quoniam vero grates persolvere dignas non opis est nostræ, ne mortalium ingratissimi habeamur, utinam saltem tandem aliquando, quibus sumus pignorati beneficiis, supra cæteros mortales seriò perpenderemus. Heu! pudet, quoties mores nostros, imo multorum ignaviam, superbiam, vanitatem, et proterviam, etiam nonnullorum erubescenda crimina ad calculos revoco. Hæccine, inquam, fieri flagitia? Hi mores nos decent? hæc studia? Ubi pudor? ubi pietas? Unde grati animi indicia accersam? Ingenue agam, metuo aliquoties ut apud nos substet divina præsentia. Expergiscimini tandem, quibuscunque aut Dei gloria, aut pietatis honos, aut literarum salus cordi est. Expergiscimini, inquam, et alium nacti coryphæum, ne beneficiis cœlitus onusta, vitiis obruta pereat academia, defigite industriam. Non ego jam animos verborum lenociniis lactare, aut dicendi faces admovere contendo: nugæ et Siculæ gerræ. Dei causam ago, licet indignissimus: sarta tecta maneat altissimi gloria: ne erga εὐεργέτην optimum maximum insolescat eruditorum natio, quæ apud facundiæ ædituos inter prima ponuntur, susque deque habenda duxi. Liceret ideo altâ voce almæ matris fortunæ ingemiscere; nisi junior quorundam indomitam stultitiam, socordiam, et superbiam, imo magistrorum nonnullorum deplorandum religionis contemptum et pervicaciam, aliorum in cœlestibus cæcitatem et ignorantiam referre puderet: nam quæ plorare jubet pietas, dicere vetat pudor et verecundia. Neque sane usque adeo mentis oculos perstrinxit dolor, aut indignatio, quin plurimos omni virtutum genere excultissimos et

quotidie videre, et sine fine laudare possem. Habet, Deo gratias, academia, qui inter literatos primas obtinent, quorum illibata pietas laudis nostræ beneficio haudquaquam indiget; sed nisi coram, et in os amicos celebrare moribus nostris nimis esset absonum, celeberrimos doctissimosque viros pæne innumeros adoreâ libentissime afficerem. Nollem autem silentium nostrum illorum laudibus et honori fraudi esse, qui in sustinendis academiæ negotiis, propulsandis periculis, in bene legitimeque ejusdem regimine promovendo, enixiorem posuerunt operam. Me quod attinet, qui sine illorum ope aut consilio oneri imposito penitus impar fuissem, imo nullus, immortales unà omnibus gratias habeo, et quæcunque vel strenue vel prudenter malarum artium insolentibus gessisse videar, iis omnia libentissime meritoque accepta fero.

Nec sine grata memoria memorandi sunt, quos, per decursum jam magistratûs stadium, *συνέργους* habui procuratorum nonnullos. Imo ausim spondere, quòd ad referendas gratias, quantum quantum in me est, neminem promptiorem vel paratiorem aut offenderint, aut forsan sint inventuri. Ipse verò, quæ a quibusdam invidiâ et livore percitis, aliisque studio partium abreptis, simultatem mecum ultro ambientibus, indigna passus sum, conquererer; nisi dignitatem illam, quam propter contabuerunt, depositurus ansam omnem contendendi et obloquendi iis præripere statuissem. Id tamen dicam, quia dicendum est, nisi animo, uti spero, Christiano nonulla dissimulare decrevissem, quæ meritò egregie et palam contemnere, etiam ulcisci potui, eorumque injuriis et contumeliis tenebras dare, quorum amicitiâ mihi nihil unquam opus fuit: non adeo forsan pacem et commune otium alia meriti colerent. Favete linguis, academici! quod nonnulli dominium indigitarunt, ego duram servitutem, et periculosæ opus plenum aleæ et exspectavi, et sum expertus; ut nisi vestro candore, fide, et sapientiâ fretus, eorumque, quæ ad academiæ emolumentum faciunt, studiosissimus, id oneris, cui ferendo impar sum, nunquam sustulissem; imo ut statim a suscepto munere, ne diutius fatali huic curarum Caucaso illigarer, non illico summâ vi contenderim, quòd aliorum imperium ferre coactus sim, non quòd ipse imperare vellem, in causâ fuit. Sed post multas alias, easque varii generis, cùm religiosas, tum civiles, peracta tandem etiam est et hæc vitæ nostræ scena; quâ quòd non scenæ, sed sub Deo vestris commodis servire animus erat, conscientia, et conscientiâ infinite major Deus testis est. An decenter, scite, et *καλῶς*, an spectatoribus tripudia injiciens partes meas egisse videar, perinde curo, ac eorum facta qui nunquam nati sunt. Quæ in Dei Opt. Max. gloriam, patriæ salutem, utilitatem academiæ consului, vel gessi, ei curæ erunt, qui nos miseros homunciones ope suâ sublevat, gratiâ instruit, favore protegit, ut investigabili plane sapientiâ consilia omnia sua

sancta exsequatur. Ut autem in demandatâ provinciâ tuendâ sceleris alicujus me esse conscium etiam atque etiam pernego; ita omnis culpæ me esse expertem, nullâque reprehensione dignum, stultissimus essem, si opinarer. Id verò seriò triumpho, quòd non capularis senex, aut silicernium, rude sum donatus, et quòd minus saltem inter eos, qui ad res seculi et negotia publica spectant, ultimum vitæ actum peregisse videor. Quod annum vitæ agens alterum supra quadragesimum non infimum locum in castris, in curia, in academia tenui, imo summum, qui meæ sortis et conditionis homini in nostra republica contingere potest; quodque in omnibus me ita gessi, ut neque pudeat neque pigeat gessisse, id gratiæ et misericordiæ divinæ in solidum imputandum est. Etenim

> "quicquid sum ego, quamvis
> Infra Lucilî censum ingeniumque, tamen me
> Cum magnis vixisse invita fatebitur usque
> Invidia." [1]

Dumque communi hac luce frui dabitur, vitæ anteactæ suavissima recordatio non minimum erit angustiarum levamen; illis enim placuisse, qui nobis universis et populo placent, aliquam laudem esse duco. Ut itaque per aliquot annorum spatium eorum, qui in patria nostra consiliis et armis facile principes erant, etiam illius viri, quem nos ut maximum, ita consultissimum, et post homines natos fortissimum novimus, consuetudine et commercio uti mihi contigit: ita summa necessitudinis jura cum pluribus in orbe literario dictatoribus, in illustrissima hac academia, inire datum est. Habet autem quodcunque genus hominum, quod admirer; habet etiam, quod meritò displiceat: de quo omnia bona dicere possimus, aut qui in omnibus contemni debeat, nemo est. Homines sumus; qui secum, aut partium, quas impensius colit, assertoribus sapientiam et pietatem natas esse, et morituras sentit, ille solus reliquis omnibus postponi meruit.

Jam valete, academici! . . . . . nominum in universitatis matriculam inscriptis; . . . . . ad doctoratum admissis; ad gradum autem magistri, ...; baccalaurei,[2] . . . .; amissis per multos annos professorum stipendiis, recuperatis, solutis; nonnullis muneribus haud contemnendis sublevatis; juribus et privilegiis academiæ contra quosvis malevolorum conatus propugnatis; ærario decuplo aucto; pluribus ex omni ordine in academia ad diversa honorum, et beneficiorum genera promotis; exercitiis novis inductis et stabilitis; veteribus rite peractis; morum reformatione sedulo tentatâ, profligatis quibusdam rabulis nequicquam ringentibus; laboribus innumeris; sumptibus prodige impensis, cùm sæpius morti proximus vestri causâ odi hos artus, fragilemque hunc corporis usum mentem deserturum; spretis vulgi conviciis, et superatâ aliorum invidiâ; vos plurimum salvere et valere

[1] Hor. Sat. ii. 1, 74.

[2] Ad has lacunas supplendas, vide notam editoris hisce orationibus præfixam.—Ed.

jubeo. Mihi gratulor successorem, qui me hoc onere expedire possit; vobis talem, qui quicquid in rem vestram peccavit nostra incuria, in integrum restituere potis est.

Tibi autem, vir doctissime! honorem neque proprio labore, nec votis adeptum, adeptum tamen, unà cum universâ hâc eruditorum caveâ gratulor. Quemcunque velis antecessorem animo revolve, unius virtutem, alterius eruditionem, tertii gratiam, meum, qui nihil amplius sum, quinquennium tibi ex animo precor. Macte virtute tua, vir ornatissime! Sub auspiciis tuis floreat academia, cùmque sis egregius aliis artibus, ne sis mollis ægritudinem aut invidiam pati, cætera omnia levia erunt. Dura autem est conditio spectatæ virtutis: magna inde exspectantur; vix ab eâ grata sunt, quibus stuporem injicerent incognita. Præstantissima etiam aromata fœdare contendunt muscæ et vespæ. Nemo unquam fuit virtute et eruditione insignis, quem non statim exceperit invidia. Sed quò me duceret orationis filum nescius, hic incidendum curavi. Ego antiquos labores, notas vigilias, omissa studia repeto: vos, academici! vivite, et valete!

ORATIO

AD V. A. RICHARDUM CROMWELLUM.[1]

Minora illa sceptra, vir amplissime! quæ manibus, quibus ipsam pæne librat Europam, portasse magnus parens vester non erubuit, insurgentis gloriæ et decoris non contemnenda omina, ad pedes tuos provolvit academia Oxoniensis. Si tibi ingentiori spiritu se gerere, quàm pro conditione, si fastu quodam intumescere videbitur gens togata, quod non minoris patroni in clientela et fide esse voluerit; id nimio ejus favori, qui amplexu suo eam, tanquam sortis immemorem, ad amplissima quæque aspirare jussit, imputandum est. Ejus vero jam in laudes spatiari, aut recensere beneficia, cum omnes optima omnia ei accepta ferre gestiunt, atque ipse factorum gloriâ immortali sit consecratus, haud opus est. Viri itaque omnium, quos extulit seculum hocce heroum ferax, prudentissimi et fortissimi elogia consultò prætereo. Quocunque tandem vergat res Anglicana, ibit in seculum, fuisse principem, cui cordi fuerunt et insulæ gloria, et religionis honos. Postquam autem vir ille maximus ad solium pæne evexerat musas, atque ipsas tantùm non regnantes coluit orbis Britannicus; cùm unius tantùm dominationis patiens respublica, litera-

[1] Cùm hæc oratio inter auctoris schedulas suâ manu exarata inveniretur, superioribus hic adjungere visum est. De tempore autem et occasione illius supra diximus, in orationum inscriptione.

rium et Platonicum imperium ferre nequiverit, ut proximâ tamen esset in conditione, atque non nisi sub spe imperii, aut saltem meritò serviret, laudabili et tutâ ambitione laborare, suavissima pristini honoris recordatio coegit academiam.

Habes ideo, vir amplissime, per innumera rerum discrimina, multo labore, multis studiis, vigiliis, precibus, hucusque conservatam pietatis, literarum, modestiæ, temperantiæ causam, quâ nihil melius, neque amplius est in natura mortalium, tutelam obnixe ambientem, salutare orantem patrocinium; illam ut suscipias, amplectaris, foveas curâ atque indulgentiâ illius tantùm cogitationibus minoribus et secundis, a quo es secundus, bonorum ubivis omnium et votum est, et exspectatio. Κειμήλιον verò hoc, atque ingens antiquæ pietatis et munificentiæ depositum, quamvis tibi, viro in amplissimo dignitatis fastigio posito, honori esse non posse videatur; ne pudori sit aut vituperio, et propitius quem hactenus in Christo numinis favor nactus est, et doctioris orbis cultus et reverentia effecerunt. Quæ vero et quanta ab hominibus, irâ, odio, studio partium incitatis, per annos aliquot jam proxime elapsos passa sit academia; quibus rerum anfractibus involuta, periculis exposita, hucusque succreverit; quâ contentione et studio causa pietatis, religionis, et severioris disciplinæ cum iis congressa, qui nihil otiosâ vitâ, et plenâ, et confertâ voluptatibus præstabilius esse ducunt, firmata sit; quidque ei ope omni mortali grandius in subsidium et fulcimentum venisse constet, silere mallem; quàm molestæ querimoniæ suspicionem apud quemvis mortalium subire. Ex diuturnâ perturbatione, per te forsan, vir amplissime, lucem et portum intuebitur academia. Habet vices hasce conditio mortalium: ex adversis secunda; ex secundis adversa nascuntur.

Floreant ideo sub tuis auspiciis cùm ipsa academia, tum quæque in eâ patrocinio tuo, bonorumve laude digna sunt. Floreat doctissima atque optimæ spei numerosa juventus, germana matris academiæ proles, insurgentis seculi quoquo vergat pars nobilis futura. Floreat pietas, ingenuus candor, et, justitiæ soror, incorrupta fides, morum integritas, atque, omnia recta tentandi audax, industria et prudentia. Hisce salvis, ibimus, ibimus libentissime, quò fata academiæ et omni casu benignior divina providentia nos vocent.

INDICES.

I. INDEX TO THE LIFE OF OWEN.

II. INDEX TO THE NOTES BY THE EDITOR.

III. INDEX TO THE WORKS OF OWEN, ACCORDING TO THE ARRANGEMENT OF THE VOLUMES IN THE PRESENT EDITION.

IV. INDEX TO THE WORKS OF OWEN IN THEIR ALPHABETICAL ORDER.

V. INDEX TO PRINCIPAL SUBJECTS AND OCCASIONAL TOPICS.

VI. INDEX TO THE PRINCIPAL WORDS AND PHRASES IN OTHER LANGUAGES CITED OR EXPLAINED:—

I. HEBREW, CHALDEE, OR RABBINICAL.

II. GREEK.

III. LATIN.

VII. INDEX TO PASSAGES OF SCRIPTURE EXPLAINED.

VIII. INDEX OF REFERENCES TO AUTHORS, OPINIONS, COUNCILS, AND SAYINGS.

INDICES.

I.—INDEX TO THE LIFE OF OWEN,

CONTAINED IN VOL. I.

Page

Abney family, Certain members of the, united to Owen's church, Leadenhall Street . . 90
Act of Uniformity, its results . . . 79
Alleine, Joseph, author of "Alarm to the Unconverted," at Oxford 66
All-Saints parish, Owen and Chillingworth first educated in 23
Alsop, Vincent, a Nonconformist minister, his witty remark on schism 73
Anderson, Rev. Alexander, pastor of a Baptist church, Colchester 33
Anglesea, Earl of, a powerful friend of Owen 91
—— Countess of, a member of Owen's church, Leadenhall Street 91
Aristotle, Influence of, on theology . . 57
Arminian doctrine, Owen's statement of and answer to 32
Arnold, Nicholas, a continental writer, his remarks on Biddle's catechisms . . 62
Asty, Independent minister, London, his Memoirs of Owen inaccurate and scanty . 21
—— Owen's letter to 119

Bancroft, Bishop, admitted Owen to orders 29
Barlow, Bishop, of Lincoln, Owen's tutor in mathematics and philosophy . . . 23, 92
Bates, Dr, quoted in reference to Rev. David Clarkson 96
Baxter, Richard, his character of himself . 21
—— at Ludlow Castle, or village of Wroxeter 25
—— finds entertainment in the writings of Thomas Aquinas, Anselm, and Duns Scotus 25
—— his controversies with Owen . . 38, 93
—— the chosen associate of Sir Matthew Hale 48
—— his spirit expressed in tender words . 54
—— opposes Owen 56
—— his attempts at union with Independents 84
—— his sufferings 91
—— Character of, as a preacher . . . 105
—— and Owen compared 110
—— Owen's letter to 119
Bendish, Mrs, Cromwell's grand-daughter . 91
Berkley, Lord, Owen's friend 91
Biddle, John, the father of English Socinianism, and author of catechisms . . . 62
Binning, Hugh, a Scottish minister, confounds Owen in discussion 45
Boyd, Zachary, thunders against the Lord-General in Glasgow Cathedral . . . 45
Boyle, Hon. Robert, fled to Oxford . . 65
Bunyan, John, Owen's influence in behalf of, and character of his preaching . . 92
—— Extract from, "Pilgrim's Progress" . 100
Burgess, Daniel, his opinion of Owen's treatise "On Communion with God" . . . 73
Burnet, Bishop, his false accusation against Owen in reference to the Protector . . 71

Page

Burnet, Bishop, his reference to the controversy between Marvell and Parker . . 89
—— his sketch of the character of Mr R. Ferguson 96

Calamy, Edmund, senior, minister in Aldermanbury chapel 30
—— his fame instrumental in leading Owen to peace 31
Calamy, E., junior, Memorials of Howe by . 21
—— his testimony concerning Owen . 65
Cane, J. V., a Franciscan friar, author of "Fiat Lux" 79
—— Owen's controversy with . . . 80
Caryl, Joseph, and Owen, ministers to the Commander-General 44
—— his death 90
Cawdrey, Daniel, his accusation against Owen 58
—— his reply to Owen "On schism" . . 74
Cecil, his opinion of Owen's "Discourse on the Holy Spirit" 94
Chalmers', Dr, "Theological Institutes" referred to 74
—— his opinion of the controversy between Owen and Walton 75
—— his remarks on Owen's treatise "On Indwelling Sin" 84
—— his recommendation of Owen's "Exposition" 86
Charles II., his character 94
—— converses with Owen 91
Charnock, Stephen, his "Divine Attributes" 65
Cheynel, Francis, his remarks on Biddle's catechisms 62
Clarendon, Lord, Description of Laud by . 26
—— caricatures Puritans 48
—— intercourse between him and Owen . 80
—— his attempts regarding government 81, 82
—— his fall 83
Clarkson, David, Owen's colleague in Leadenhall Street 96
—— his funeral sermon on Dr Owen . . 104
Claypole, Lady, Cromwell's favourite daughter, the death of 70
Cloppenburg, a continental writer, his remarks on Biddle's catechisms 62
Coggeshall, Owen's ministry there . . 35
Conant, Dr, a Presbyterian, and rector of Exeter College, succeeds Owen as vice-chancellor 67
Conventicle Act 82
Cowper quoted 64
Cox, Dr, one of Owen's physicians . . 103
Craig, Rev. J., Avonbridge, Scotland, translated part of Owen's "Theologoumena" . . 78
Cromwell, Oliver, Owen's first interview with 42
—— his character 43
—— Extract from Carlyle's 43

Page

Cromwell, Oliver, chancellor of Oxford - 46
—— his death and character 71
Cromwell, Richard, succeeds his father as chancellor of Oxford 67
—— his fall 76

Dodwell's description of Owen . . . 48
Dormer, Sir Robert, of Ascot, invites Owen to be his chaplain and tutor to his eldest son 29
D'Oyley, Thomas, Esq. of Chiselhampton, Owen married to his widow 95
Dury, Mr, opposed to the admission of Jews into England to settle and trade . . 62

Erasmus, prayer of 112

Fairfax, Lord, leader of the Parliament's forces 39
Ferguson, Robert, one of Owen's assistants in Leadenhall Street 96
Fire in London, Great advantage taken of the, by Owen and others 83
Fleetwood, Charles, Esq., friend of Owen—Owen's letter to, from his deathbed . . 103
—— Letters to 118
Fordham in Essex, the scene of Owen's early pastorate 33
Foster's Essay on the application of the epithet "Romantic" referred to 73
Fuller, the historian, recommended by Howe for ordination 61
Fuller, Andrew, his saying of himself . . 104

Gilbert, Rev. Thomas, of Oxford, friend of Owen 23
—— Epitaph on Owen by 23
Godfrey, Sir Edmund, a justice of the peace 102
Goodwin, John, an Arminian writer . 56, 109
Goodwin, Thomas, D.D., head of Magdalen College 52
—— Owen's friend 54
—— associated with Owen 65

Hall, Bishop, entered Cambridge at the age of fifteen 23
Hall, Robert, his disparagement of Owen's "Exposition" 86
Halyburton, his argument for the divine authority, etc., of Scripture 74
Hammond, Dr, Owen's discussion with . 57
—— his reply to Owen "On schism" . . 74
Harrison, Mr, his conference with Owen and others 53
Hartopp, Lady, Owen's letter to 116
—— Sir John, a particular friend of Owen 21
Henry, Philip, Owen compared to, in mourning over university sins 24
—— Character of 48
—— Memoir of, by his son 52
—— at Oxford University 66
Howe, John, entered Oxford College at the age of seventeen 23
—— at Whitehall 44
—— Character of 48, 105
—— "On Union among Protestants," and "On the Carnality of Religious Contentions," referred to 54
Hudibras quoted 39, 60
Hume, David, caricatures Puritans . . 48
Hyde, Sir Edward, his interview with Owen 79

Indulgence by Charles II. 90
Ireton, Henry, Lord-Deputy of Ireland, and Cromwell's son-in-law, his funeral sermon preached by Owen 46
Israel, Manasseh Ben, a learned Jew from Amsterdam, asks permission for Jews to settle and trade in England 61

Page

Jamieson, Dr, of Edinburgh, his work on the Holy Spirit 94
Jessey, Mr, Baptist minister, his conference with Owen and others 53

Ken, Bishop of Bath and Wells, at Oxford 66
Kennet, Bishop, a high Royalist and partisan 60
—— his opinion of the Protector . . . 71
King, Sir Edmund, one of Owen's physicians 103

Laud, Archbishop, chancellor of Oxford, privy councillor, principal adviser of Charles, and intimate associate of Strafford . . . 26
Laudean policy, Owen's description of . 32
Levellers, The defeat of the 42
Locke, John, classed with Jeremy Taylor, Milton, Vane, and Owen 41
—— the founder of the greatest school of English metaphysics, at Oxford . . . 65
Lockyer, a divine who officiated at the inauguration of the Protector 67
Lovelace, Lord, of Hurly, Owen chaplain to 29
—— Owen leaves the family of 29

Manton, Dr, a divine who officiated at the inauguration of the Protector 67
—— his false charge against Owen regarding Richard Cromwell's fall 77
Maretz, a continental writer, his remarks on Biddle's catechisms 62
Marshall, Mr, Presbyterian minister, his conference with Owen and others . . . 53
Marvell, Andrew, under-secretary to and friend of Milton, his review of Parker . . . 89
Mather, Cotton, quoted 21
Milton classed with Jeremy Taylor, Vane, Locke, and Owen 41
—— quoted 55, 112
Monk, General, a favourer of Charles Stuart, Owen's remonstrance with and opposition to 77
Moscorovius, a Socinian, classed with Biddle and Smalcius 63
Moulin, Peter du, Owen's letter to . . 114

Nicolas, Sir Edward, one of the principal secretaries of state 80
Nye, Mr, Independent minister, his conference with Owen and others 53

Orme, value of his Life of Owen . . . 22
Orrery, Earl of, Owen's friend . . . 91
Owen, Lewis, vice-chamberlain, North Wales, and high sheriff, county of Merioneth, murdered by outlaws in the woods of Monthrey 22
Owen, Humphrey, married Susan, grand-daughter of Lewis Owen, issue fifteen sons, youngest of these Henry Owen 22
Owen, Henry, father of Dr Owen, educated at Oxford, became vicar of Stadham, Oxfordshire 22
Owen, John, born at Stadham, 1616 . . 22
—— entered Queen's College at the age of twelve 23
—— resists Laud's statutes 28
—— self-exiled from Oxford for conscience' sake 28
—— removes to London, and resides in Charter-House Yard 29
—— removes to Fordham in Essex, becomes pastor there 33
—— married to a lady of the name of Rooke 33
—— preached before Parliament April 29, 1646 34
—— thanks of the House conveyed to, by Mr Jenner and Sir P. Wentworth . . . 35
—— removed to Coggeshall, Earl of Warwick patron 35
—— church at Coggeshall, decidedly Congregational 37
—— joined Cromwell at Berwick, preached there 44

Page

Owen, John, preaches in St Giles', Edinburgh 45
—— in Glasgow with Cromwell . . . 45
—— returns to Essex 46
—— nominated vice-chancellor of Oxford University by Cromwell 46
—— his toleration of Episcopalians . . 51
—— engaged in a conference in London on Christian union 53
—— diplomated doctor of divinity . . 54
—— Dr, elected by the University to sit in Parliament 55
—— resigns the presidency of Oxford . . 67
—— charged with taking part in the fall of Richard Cromwell 76
—— official connection with Oxford finally severed 78
—— invitation to the first Congregational church of Boston, New England . . 81
—— Anecdote of, while on a visit to Oxford, in his last days 83
—— his own opinion of his "Exposition of the Epistle to the Hebrews" 85
—— his expression when he finished the "Exposition" 86
—— death of his first wife, her character, and epitaph by Gilbert 95
—— married a widow lady of the name of Michel 95
—— his opinion of Presbyterianism as exercised in Scotland 98
—— Letter of, from Woburn to his flock . 101
—— removes to Kensington for country air 102
—— takes up his abode at Ealing . . 102
—— his death and burial, 1683 . . . 104
—— Character of 105
—— compared with other Puritans . . 111
—— Epitaph on the monument of, in Bunhill-fields 113
Owen, Martyn, cousin of Dr Owen . . 95
Owen, Mrs, first wife of the Doctor . . 33
Owen, Mrs, his second wife 95

Parker, Bishop, his character . . . 88
—— Owen's reply to 88
Payne, Rev. William, Dissenting minister at Saffron Waldon, Essex 103
Penn, William, founder of Pennsylvania, at Oxford 65
Pinner's Hall, Weekly lecture at . . 90
Plague, The, means of enlarging the liberty of the Puritan preachers 82
Pocock, Dr, professor of Arabic in Oxford 61, 65
Polhill, Mrs, Owen's letter to . . . 117
Poole, Matthew, the commentator, his remarks on Biddle's catechisms 62

Quakers, Act against 79
—— Severities against 87

Racovian Catechism, the confession of foreign Socinians 62
Reynolds, Dr, Owen settled in the deanery of Christ Church, in room of 46
Ricaut, Sir Paul, his testimony regarding Cromwell 62
Ridley and Latimer in Elizabeth's days . 27
Russell, Thomas, M.A., his edition of Owen referred to 108
Rutherford, Samuel, of St Andrews . . 55
Rye House plot, Owen falsely charged with being involved in 102

Savoy Declaration of Faith 68–70
Scotland, Owen's journey to 44
—— His labours in 45

Page

Sherlock, Dr, his controversy with Owen . 72
Shields, Alexander, author of "Hind let Loose," one of Owen's assistants at Leadenhall Street 96
Sibbs, author of "Bruised Reed" . . . 25
Simon Magus, Socinianism traced to the days of 63
Smalcius, a Socinian, classed with Biddle . 63
South, Dr, the pulpit satirist, at Oxford . 66
Southampton, Earl of, declaration concerning Nonconformists' oath 82
Stephen, Sir James, quoted 109
Stillingfleet, Dr, espouses the cause of Nonconformists 88
—— his controversy with Owen 97
Sylvester, Edward, private academy at Oxford, Owen taught by 23

Taylor, Bishop Jeremy, classed with Milton, Vane, Locke, and Owen . . . 41
—— his "Holy Living" faulty 64
Thurloe, Cromwell's secretary, Owen wrote to 61
Tillotson, Archbishop, his mistaken impressions regarding Owen 71, 72
—— espouses the cause of Nonconformists 88
Toleration, Owen's efforts in the cause of . 41
Trevor, Sir John, Owen's friend . . . 91
Triers, The committee of 59, 60
Twisse, Dr, of Newbury, prolocutor of the Westminster Assembly 55

Vaughan's sentiments concerning Bates and Owen 111
—— compares modern Pantheists with the Bhuddists 63
Vitringa's Commentary on Isaiah, compared with Owen on the Hebrews . . . 86

Walton, Brian, author or editor of the London "Biblia Polyglotta," Owen's hasty opinions of 74
—— his controversy with Owen 75
Ward, Dr Seth, astronomer at Oxford . . 65
Warwick, Earl of, Owen's "Eshcol" dedicated to 37
Watts, Isaac, found shelter in the Abney family 90
Wharton, Lord, Owen's friend . . . 91
—— his house at Woburn an asylum to persecuted ministers 100
Whitby, Daniel, annotator on the New Testament, at Oxford 65
Whitehall, Charles I. beheaded before the gates of 39
Wilberforce, his views of Owen's "Discourse on the Holy Spirit" 94
Willoughby, Lord, Owen's friend . . . 91
Wilkins, Bishop of Chester, espouses the cause of Nonconformists 87
Wilson, Dr Thomas, a celebrated performer on the flute, and the favourite preceptor in the same art of Charles I. 24
—— Owen received lessons in music from . 24
—— Owen appointed him professor of music in the university 24
Witherspoon, Dr, first of Scotland, afterwards pastor and president of Jersey College, America 58, 59
Witsius, Owen superior to 38
Wood, Anthony, his caricature of Owen . 48
—— his accusation against Owen . . 58
—— referred to 65
Wren, Christopher, the architect, at Oxford 65

York, Duke of, converses with Owen . . 91
—— The Romanism of 97

II.—INDEX TO THE NOTES BY THE EDITOR.

NOTE.—In compliance with the request of some subscribers, the following Index to the Notes of the Editor has been given; and he is indebted for the preparation of it to a friend. Mr Edmondston, his coadjutor in revising the sheets as they came from the press, undertook the trouble of preparing the Indices of Words, Texts, and Authors. The General Index is chiefly an adaptation from the old Indices to the works of Owen, dropping much superfluous matter, which distracted the eye of the reader rather than guided him to any useful matter, and adhering as much as possible to the language of Owen, but arranged on better principles, and with very considerable additions of matter that was deemed really important.

Accommodation, committee of, by whom and when appointed, x. 5.
Act, Five-mile, or Conventicle, vi. 154. Conventicle, renewed in 1670, xiii. 576. Test, when Parliament passed the, xiv. 482.
Alexander, William Lindsay, D.D., of Edinburgh, ix. 518. Extract from his preface to Owen's Sacramental Discourses, ix. 518.
Alsop, Vincent, wit and acumen of, in a treatise against Sherlock, ii. 276. "Melius Inquirendum" of, in answer to Dr Goodman, vii. 74. Withdrew from Pinner's Hall lectures, viii. 474. Witty and humorous work of, against Dr Stillingfleet, xiii. 304.
Alva, John de, servant in the Jesuit College of Clermont, character of, xiv. 449.
Ambrose admitted Augustine into the church at Milan, when, iii. 337.
America, North, Scottish Covenanters crowded into vessels bound for, ix. 367. Missionaries sent to, by the Church of Geneva, in 1556, xv. 72.
Amsterdam, Presbytery of, opposed the appointment of Arminius as professor, x. 3.
Amyraut, a scholar of Cameron at Saumur, x. 140. Supported in the atonement controversy by Daillé and Blondell, x. 140. Opposed by Rivet, Spanheim, and Des Marets, x. 140. Theory of, in regard to the atonement, x. 140.
Analysis of Owen's work on "The Person of Christ," i. 2. On "Communion with God," ii. 2. Of "Pneumatologia," iii. 3. Of "Causes, Ways, and Means," etc., iv. 118. Of "The Work of the Spirit in Prayer," iv. 236. Of "The Spirit as a Comforter," iv. 352. Of "Spiritual gifts," iv. 352. Of "Justification by Faith," v. 4*. Of "The Nature and Causes of Apostasy," vii. 2. Of "Spiritual Mindedness," vii. 262. Of "The Dominion of Sin and Grace," vii. 500. Of "The Death of Death in the Death of Christ," x. 142. Of "The Perseverance of the Saints," xi. 4. Of "The State and Fate of Protestantism," xiv. 530. Of "Discourse concerning Evangelical Love," etc., xv. 58. Of "The Divine Original," etc. xvi. 296. Of "Exercitationes adversus Fanaticos," xvi. 424.
"*Anglicani*, Jus Divinum Ministerii," etc., by whom and when published, xiii. 174.
Annesley, Samuel, LL.D., preface by, to the "Morning Exercises," viii. 474.
Anselm, Archbishop of Canterbury, where born, extent of his works, v. 16.
Antinomian, opinions of Dr Crisp held to be, viii. 474.
Antinomianism during the time of the Commonwealth, v. 2.
Antitrinitarians, certain reformers of Transylvania became, ii. 393. Of Poland, their synodical resolution and subsequent conduct, ii. 393.
Aquino, anciently Aquinum, a city in the kingdom of Naples, xiv. 261.
Arianism, certain Presbyterian Dissenters committed to, i. 2.
Arimathea, Joseph of, said by some to have been the first Christian missionary who reached this country, xiv. 95.
Aristobulus, said by some to have first introduced Christianity into Britain, xiv. 95.
Aristotle, quotation from, explained, x. 262.
Armada, Spanish, in 1588, x. 6, xiv. 511.
Arminius, his history and opinions, x. 3.
Articles, Thirty-nine, of the Church of England, were not Arminian, x. 4.
Astley, a general in the interest of Charles I., remark of, to his victors, viii. 2.
Asty, information regarding Owen by, viii. 2. His explanation of Owen's preaching on the death of Charles I., viii. 128. His opinion concerning the date of Sermon IV. vol. viii., viii. 208. Life of Owen by, xiii. 576.
Augustine, his vicious youth, conversion, and admission to the church, iii. 337. His "Confessions,"—the character of that work, iii. 337. His advocacy of the doctrine of grace in opposition to Pelagian error, v. 2. And Pelagius, the questions which produced encounters between, x. 2. Quoted by Owen in support of his views on the atonement, x. 140.
Augustine, the Roman abbot, when he reached our island, xiv. 101.

Baillie, Robert, principal of Glasgow University, work of, against J. Goodwin, xi. 4.
Balcanquhal, Dr, deputy from Scotland to Synod of Dort, x. 3.
Banians, who they were, and what they believed, vii. 109.
Barclay's famous "Apology for the True Christian Divinity," iv. 4.
Barlow, Bishop, his view of Baxter's "Aphorisms," v. 3*.
Baronius, a Romish writer, quotation from, xiv. 99.
Barret, Mr, of Nottingham, his work against Stillingfleet, xiii. 304. Second "Attempt to Vindicate the Principles of Nonconformists," etc., by, xiii. 304.
Barrett, William, fellow of Gonville and Caius College, Cambridge, xi. 86.
Bartholomew Act, D. Burgess, senior, ejected under the, 1662, ix. 2.
Basle, F. Socinus devoted himself to theological studies at, ii. 392.
Bates, Dr, one of the six weekly lecturers at Pinner's Hall, 1672, viii. 474. Withdrew from Pinner's Hall in company with others, viii. 474.
Bauny, Father, Jesuit, maxim of, xiv. 449.
Baxter, his attempt at reconciliation among certain parties, v. 3*. His "Aphorisms on Justification," v. 3*. And Bull, a host of opponents to, v. 3*. Sir

Charles Wolsley a supporter of, v. 3*. Propositions from the works of, burned at Oxford, viii. 128. One of the six weekly lecturers at Pinner's Hall, 1672, viii. 474. His "Christian Directory" alluded to, ix. 358. Exception taken by, to some of Owen's views on redemption, x. 141. Owen's answer, and character of discussions between them, x. 141. Owen's reply to the animadversions of, on the "Death of Death," etc., x. 430. Unjustly accused Owen of Antinomianism, x. 430. Work published by, against Mr Blacke, 1656, x. 430. Spirit of pugnacity in the conduct of, towards Owen, x. 430. Subsequent acknowledgment of imprudence and incautiousness, x. 430. Dissented from the views of Owen on divine justice, x. 482. "Answer to Dr Stillingfleet's Charge of Separation," by, xiii. 304. "Second True Defence of the mere Nonconformists," by, xiii. 304. "Theses" of, sent to Owen, as the basis of union, xv. 446.

Bellarmine, Cardinal, his writing against the doctrine of justification by grace, v. 2, 3*. His character as a controversialist, given by Bayle, v. 11. His history and works, v. 11.

Bengelii Gnomon, quoted in reference to 2 Cor. iii. 18, i. 222.

Berwick, Owen's first sermon on Isa. lvi. 7, preached at, viii. 282.

"*Bibliotheca* Fratrum Polonorum," tracts of F. Socinus collected into two volumes of, ii. 393. J. Crell's works occupy four volumes of, ii. 410.

Bickersteth, a remark of, v. 3*.

Biddle, John, the father of English Socinianism, his history and opinions, xii. 3.

Blake, Admiral, his victorious career against Spain, viii. 398.

Blanc, Ludovicus le, a theologian, his works, v. 67.

Blandrata, a leader of Antitrinitarians in Transylvania, ii. 393.

Blondell, a supporter of Amyraut in the atonement controversy, x. 140. Pronounced much of the Ignatian Epistles to be spurious, xi. 75.

Bogue and Bennett, remarks on Owen's pulpit eloquence by, viii. 2.

Bolsec, a bitter opponent of Calvin, viii. 206.

"*Book* of Sports," referred to, vii. 2.

Bossuet, remark of, concerning Hugo Grotius, xii. 4.

Bradbury, Rev. Thomas, Independent Church, New Court, Carey Street, ix. 518.

Bramhall, Bishop, "Vindication of the Episcopal Clergy" by, xiii. 344.

Brenius, Dan., works of, where to be found, v. 296.

Britain, whether indebted to Rome or Palestine for the gospel, xiv. 95. Alarm lest Popery should be established in, xiv. 482.

Brooks, Thomas, character of, as a preacher, ix. 341.

Bruder's edition of the "Confessions" of Augustine, iii. 337.

Buchanan, propositions from the works of, burned at Oxford, viii. 128.

Bull, Bishop, works of, on the Trinity, i. 2. His "Apostolical Harmony," and its design, v. 3*. His view of faith, v. 3*.

Burder, Rev. G., a good abridgment of Owen's "Pneumatologia" by, iii. 3.

Burgess, Daniel, senior, ejected from Collinburn, Wiltshire, ix. 2.

Burgess, Daniel, junior, preface to the first of Owen's posthumous sermons by, ix. 2. His character as a preacher, and when he died, ix. 2.

Burnet, Bishop, his testimony in favour of Henry Ireton, viii. 342. Statements of, against John Goodwin, xi. 2, 3. "History of His Own Times," quotation from, xiv. 254.

Byfield, Richard, ejected from Long Ditton, county of Surrey, x. 148. His writings and sufferings, x. 148.

Cæcilian, Archdeacon, elected bishop at Carthage, A.D. 311, xv. 369.

Calamy, referred to, vol. viii. p. vii.

Calixtines, adherents of Huss and Jacobellus, their creed, viii. 263.

Calvin, "Institutes" of, Owen's "Christologia" compared with, i. 2. Tendered an admonition to Lælius Socinus, ii. 392. Reproached for the death of Servetus, ii. 393. Whether he held the possibility of forgiveness without an atonement, x. 482. Pronounced much of the Ignatian Epistles to be spurious, xi. 75.

Cameron, professor of divinity at Saumur, x. 140.

Camfield, Benjamin, rector of Whitby in Derbyshire, xv. 446. His attack upon the "Independents' Catechism," xv. 446.

Campbell, Dr, author of "Lectures on Ecclesiastical History," on the indelible character, ix. 461.

Cane, John Vincent, author of "Fiat Lux," a Franciscan friar, xiv. 2. Character of his work entitled "Fiat Lux," xiv. 2.

Canne published in defence of the execution of Charles I., xi. 2.

Canterbury, effects of the elevation of Laud to the see of, x. 4.

Cappell, practice of, in making innovations on the text of Scripture, objected to by Owen, xvi. 346.

Carleton, Dr, one of four English deputies to Synod of Dort, x. 3.

Carlyle quoted in reference to the death of Henry Ireton, viii. 342.

Carnotensis, Arnoldus, abbot of the Benedictine monastery of Bonneval, x. 422.

Carolina, Scottish Covenanters sold as slaves in, ix. 367.

Caryl, Joseph, author of "Exposition of the Book of Job," born 1602, ix. 256. His character and works, ix. 256, 257. Union between his congregation and that of Owen, ix. 257.

Case, Mr, his church in Milk Street, London, viii. 474. Edited a volume of the "Morning Exercises," viii. 474.

Cassius, Dion, an epitome of, written by Xiphilin, ii. 446.

Casuistical lecture, origin of the name, and what it was, viii. 474.

Casuistry,—the science and doctrine of conscience, ix. 358. Use made by the Jesuits of, ix. 358. List of the authors on, under three divisions, by Mayer, ix. 358. The science of, once extensively cultivated in England, ix. 358.

Catechism on the Lord's Prayer, etc., designed by Owen, but never executed, i. 464. Racovian, generally said to have been compiled by Smalcius, x. 561.

Catholic, Roman, authors alluded to by Dr Owen, v. 2.

Cave's "Lives of the Fathers" referred to, xiii. 364.

Cawdrey, Mr Daniel, Presbyterian minister at Great Billing, Northamptonshire, xiii. 208. Pamphlet against Owen by, xiii. 208. Another work against Owen by, xiii. 278.

Cecil, Lord Burleigh, prime minister of Elizabeth, alluded to, xiii. 391.

Cecil's opinion of Owen's "Pneumatologia," iii. 3.

Celsus, the earliest author who is known to have written against Christianity, xiv. 15.

Centuriators, Magdeburg, pronounced much of the Ignatian Epistles to be spurious, xi. 75.

Chalcedon, the fourth œcumenical council held at, A.D. 451, i. 227.

Chalmers, Dr, his opinion of Owen's treatise on

"Indwelling Sin," vi. 154. On "Spiritual Mindedness," vii. 262. "On the Divine Original," etc. xvi. 296. Train of reasoning by, similar to Owen's, xvi. 296. Censure of Owen by, xvi. 345.
Charles I., decapitation of, a day of humiliation in connection with, viii. 128.
Charles II., the licentious reign of, vii. 2. Government of, began to abate its severity against Dissent in 1672, viii. 474. Declaration of, abetting Papists, xiv. 254.
Charnock, Stephen, senior proctor, Oxford University, during the Protectorate, ix. 337. His works and death, ix. 337.
Chatham, ships of war destroyed by the Dutch fleet at, ix. 11.
Chauncey, Isaac, M.A. and M.D., pastor of Bury Street congregation, London, v. 404. Preface to Owen's "Evidences of the Faith of God's Elect," by, v. 402. Character and works of, v. 404. Preface to Owen's treatise "On the Dominion of Sin and Grace," by, vii. 500. Initials of, vii. 503.
Cheynel, Francis, work of, in reply to Biddle, xii. 4.
Chiersey, council held at, in A.D. 853, x. 424. Five canons of, condemned by council at Valence, x. 424. Excerpt from the fourth canon of council at, x. 424.
Childeric III., last of the Merovingian race of French kings, viii. 265.
"*Christologia*," Owen's title to the treatise on "The Person of Christ," i. 2.
Chrysostom, works of, referred to, xiii. 11.
Church of Rome, reference to the, in Owen's treatise on "The Causes, Ways, and Means," etc., iv. 118; presumptuous claim of the, as to interpretation of Scripture denied, iv. 118; mental prayer of the, Owen's discussions on, iv. 236.
Circumcelliones, fanatics in North Africa, viii. 55.
Clagett, Dr, preacher to the Honourable Society of Gray's Inn, and one of his Majesty's chaplains in ordinary, his attempts to confute Owen's work on the Spirit, iii. 3.
Clarendon, Lord, his commendation of the state of Oxford University under Owen, vi. 2. Appointed Lord Chancellor by Charles II., etc., xiv. 8. Sent for Owen, and commended his "Vindication of Animadversions," xiv. 174.
Clarke, Dr S., in 1712, published Arian views, i. 2.
Clarkson, David, Owen's colleague in London, treatise of, referred to, v. 300. Character and works of, v. 300.
Clerc, Le, Egyptian origin of the Urim and Thummim propounded by, xv. 247.
Coggeshall, Owen's "Communion with God" probably preached at, ii. 2.
Colchester, the town of, besieged and obliged to surrender to the royal forces, viii. 72.
Coleman, Edward, a Roman Catholic emissary, ix. 13.
Collins, Mr, one of the six weekly lecturers at Pinner's Hall, 1672, viii. 474.
Commons, Owen frequently called to preach before the House of, vol. viii. p. ix.
Communion controversy, history of, ii. 276.
Concomitance, Romish doctrine of, xiv. 147.
"*Confession*, Savoy," whence so called, xiii. 314; its doctrine, xiii. 314.
Conquest, Norman, date of the, viii. 265.
Constitutions, Clementine, opposed by Owen, xi. 75.
Controversy, Quinquarticular, Owen's intention to discuss all the points in the, xi. 3.
Conventicles, seditious, act against, the source of heavy sufferings, xiii. 576. Owen's protest against, xiii. 576.
Convocation, Dr S. Clarke summoned before the, i. 2.
Cooke, Mrs, of Stoke Newington, grand-daughter of Sir J. Hartopp, vol. viii. p. viii. (Pref.), ix. 408.
Cotton, Mr John, an eminent Congregationalist of New England, xiii. 278. Influence of his work on the views of Owen, xiii. 278.
Council, the fourth œcumenical, terms regarding the hypostatical union adopted by, i. 227.
Covenanters, many of the Scottish, banished, ix. 397.
Covetus, Jacobus, Parisiensis theologus, notice of, ii. 368.
Crell, John, a Socinian writer, not to be confounded with Samuel Crell, ii. 410.
Cressey, Hugh Paulin de, a noted controversialist in defence of Popery, iv. 247.
Cripplegate church, lectures delivered at, viii. 474.
Crisp, Dr, disputes in regard to the soundness of some opinions of, viii. 474.
Cromwell, Oliver, military genius of, vi. 88. Owen first introduced to, in what connection, viii. 244. Correspondence between Presbyterian ministers and, viii. 282. The death of, viii. 454. Body of, gibbeted after the Restoration, and buried at Tyburn, viii. 342. Vigorous measures of, to restore discipline in 1647, ix. 197. Reconciliation between Sir J. Evelyn and R. Byfield effected by, x. 148.
Cromwell, Richard, in his father's place, but unable to fill it, viii. 454.
Cureton, Mr, three epistles in Syriac purporting to be by Ignatius, published by, xi. 75. Discovery of a Syriac version of the Epistle to Polycarp by, xi. 76.
Cyprian, a treatise, "De Cœnâ Domini," ascribed to, but questionably, ii. 8. Letter to Cœcilius, "De Sacramento Dominici Calicis," ii. 8.

Daillé, a supporter of Amyraut in the atonement controversy, x. 140. Learned work by, upon the Epistles of Ignatius, xi. 75.
Damascenus, Johannes, when he flourished, where he died, his writings, etc., xiv. 236.
Danson, Thomas, author of several works against the Quakers, ii. 276. "The Friendly Debate between Satan and Sherlock" by, ii. 276.
Davenant, professor of divinity in Cambridge, afterwards bishop of Salisbury, x. 19. His "Animadversions" on Hoard's treatise, "God's Love to Mankind," x. 19. One of four English deputies to Synod of Dort, x. 3.
David, Francis, reasoned with by Faustus Socinus, ii. 393. Cast into prison, where he died, ii. 393.
Davidson, Dr, author of "Introduction to the New Testament," referred to, xiv. 96, xvi. 346, 418, 419.
Davis, Mr Richard, pastor of a church in Rowel, Northamptonshire, vi. 324. Statement of Owen to, explanatory of the occasion of the "Exposition of Psalm cxxx.," vi. 324.
Desborough, Colonel, member of Owen's congregation, brother-in-law to Oliver Cromwell, and one of the heroes of the Commonwealth, died 10th September 1680, ix. 341. Refused to sit on the trial of Charles I., and opposed Cromwell when he sought to become king, ix. 341.
Deynock, an abbot of Bangor, saying of, xiv. 102.
Dickson, David, professor of divinity in Glasgow and Edinburgh, ix. 358. Latin work entitled, "Therapeutica Sacra," by, ix. 358.
Didymus, professor of theology in Alexandria, Owen copiously quotes from, iii. 28. Blind, yet distinguished as an author, iii. 28. His treatise on the Holy Spirit translated by Jerome into Latin, iii. 28.
Diognetus, extract from the epistle to, adduced by Owen, v. 2.
Dissent, severe measures against, vol. viii. p. viii. (Pref.)
Docetæ, views of, regarding the body of Christ, i. 329.
Doddridge, his opinion of some of Owen's works, vii. 2.

Donatus, a bishop at Carthage, xv. 369.
Donatists, influence of, upon certain fanatics, viii. 55.
Dort, Synod of, English and Scottish deputies to, x. 4. Sanction given to, by these British divines, x. 4. Condemned the doctrine of a universal atonement, x. 140. Object of the article on the death of Christ emitted by, x. 140.
Dublin, Owen appointed to adjust the affairs of Trinity College, viii. 244.
Dunbar, battle of, results of the, viii. 282.
Dundas, commandant of Edinburgh Castle, viii. 282.
Dutch, naval war with the, in 1665, viii. 366, ix. 11.
Dwight, Timothy, contended for the office of ruling elder, xvi. 2.

Ecebolius, a sophist of Constantinople, his character, xiii. 447.
Edwards, President, train of reasoning by, similar to Owen's, xvi. 296.
Eichhorn, view of, concerning the Hebrew points, xvi. 346.
Eleutherius, epistle of, view of Owen concerning the, xiv. 397.
Eliot, "the apostle of the Indians," success of his labours, xv. 72.
Elys, Edmund, son of a clergyman in Devonshire, xvi. 2; his reply to Owen's "True Nature of a Gospel Church," xvi. 2.
Emett, Dorothy, conversion of, ascribed to Owen's preaching in Dublin, vol. viii. p. viii.
Episcopius, leader of the Remonstrants on the death of Arminius, x. 3.
Eshcol, when and under what circumstances published, xiii. 52; its design, xiii. 52.
Essex, the army of the Earl of, viii. 474.
Estius, writer of "Summa Theologiæ," and certain commentaries, v. 348.
Estwick, Nicolas, work of, in reply to Biddle, xii. 4.
Ethelfrid, king of Northumberland, carnage by, xiv. 102.
Eugubium, a small town about eighty miles from Rome, xv. 300.
Eusebius, specific allusion to the Epistles of Ignatius by, xi. 75. Quoted regarding the introduction of Christianity into Britain, xiv. 96.
Eutyches, a presbyter and abbot at Constantinople, his history and opinions, i. 229.
Evelyn, Sir John, patron of Long Ditton, county of Surrey, x. 148.
Everard, a disbanded soldier at Cobham, self-styled prophet, etc., ix. 197.
Exclusion bill, stormy discussions about the, viii. 594.
Expurgatorius, Index, work of Bellarmine placed in the, v. 11.
Ezra, Aben, his opinion apparently adopted by Owen, iii. 96.

Fairfax, Lord, general of the Parliamentary army, viii. 72.
Felix, bishop of Aptunga, ordained Cæcilian, xv. 369.
Ferguson, Robert, his work against Sherlock, ii. 276.
Firmin, Giles, a Nonconformist divine and physician, xiii. 208.
Flamsteed and Halley, observations on the comet of 1680–81, by, ix. 11.
Fordham, in Essex, Owen's labours in, i. 464, viii. 2. By whom conferred upon Owen, x. 4.
France, church of, articles of synod in Holland embodied in standards of the, x. 3.
Friends, Owen's frequent allusion to the views of the, in his work on the Spirit, iv. 4. The essential principle of their system, what it is, iv. 4. Their views concerning the Scriptures, iv. 4.

Gale, Theophilus, author of "The Court of the Gentiles," ix. 337.
Geneva, church of, articles of general synod in Holland acquiesced in by, x. 3.
Gesenius, view of, concerning the Hebrew points, xvi. 346.
Gib, Rev. Adam, superintended an edition of Owen's "Death of Death," etc., x. 141. His edition of Owen's "Death of Death," etc., referred to, x. 407.
Gibbon, his "Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire" quoted, xiv. 235.
Gibson, Bishop, author of "Preservative against Popery," xiv. 482.
Gieseler, referred to concerning "Utraquists," viii. 264.
Gilbert, Thomas, combated Owen's views maintained in the "Diatriba," x. 482. An admirer of Owen, and employed to write his epitaph, x. 482.
Gildas, a writer of the sixth century, referred to, xiv. 97.
Glastonbury, Somersetshire, first Christian church in Britain said to be erected at, xiv. 95.
Godfrey, Sir Edmondsbury, information by Titus Oates lodged before, ix. 13. Murdered in a field near London, ix. 13.
Goffe, Colonel, Caryl in Scotland with, and Major-General Whalley, ix. 256.
Gomar, a professor in the University of Leyden, x. 3. Opposed the appointment of Arminius, x. 3. Dispute between Arminius and, on predestination, x. 3.
Gomarists, dispute between Arminians and, in Holland, x. 140.
Goodman, Dr, rector of Hadham, his "Inquiry," etc., vii. 74.
Goodwin, John, an able advocate of Arminianism, history and character of, x. 4. Owen wrote his treatise on "Perseverance" against, xi. 2.
Goodwin, Thomas, president of Magdalene College, died in 1679, ix. 337. Character of, by Anthony Wood, ix. 337.
Gottschalc, a monk of Orbais, advocated the doctrines of Augustine, x. 2. His death in prison, x. 2. Dispute between Hincmar and, x. 140, 424.
Gower, Stanley, a puritan divine, and member of Westminster Assembly, x. 147.
Grimshawe, Mr, an active clergyman of the church of England, v. 4*. Converted by Owen's work on "Justification," v. 4*.
Grotius, Hugo, allusion to by Owen, x. 268. His treatise entitled, "Defensio Fidei Catholicæ," etc., x. 268. Distinguished reputation of, in legal science, x. 268. His history and creed, xii. 4. Works of, specially his "Annotations," xii. 4.
Guericke, referred to concerning Utraquists, viii. 264.

Hadrian, the emperor, referred to by Owen, i. 280.
Hagenbach, strange assertion of, in his "History of Doctrines," x. 141.
Hale, Judge, disapproval of Dr Patrick's work, "A Friendly Debate," etc., by, xiii. 358.
Hall, Dr, one of four English deputies to Synod of Dort, x. 3.
Hallet, a Presbyterian dissenter, openly committed to Arianism, i. 2.
Halley, comet of, 1680–81, ix. 11. And Flamsteed, observations on the comet made by, ix. 11.
Halyburton, Professor, work on "Natural and Revealed Religion," by, xvi. 296.
Hamilton, Mr, translation of Owen's "Diatriba," by, x. 482.

Hammond, Dr Henry, initials of, xi. 27. Owen assails the reasonings of, in support of episcopacy, xi. 75. Wrote in defence of the Ignatian Epistles, etc., xi. 75. Referred to, xiii. 126. "Vindication," etc., of, referred to, xiii. 175. Controversy of, with Owen respecting the orthodoxy of Grotius, xiii. 208.
Hartopp, Sir John, Bart., Dr Owen's friend, vii. 500. Use made of a manuscript which belonged to, vii. 500. Alluded to, vol. viii. p. vii. Manuscripts of, vol. viii. p. viii. Sermon on the death of, by Dr Isaac Watts, ix. 18. Wrote certain discourses of Owen in short-hand, ix. 408.
Hayward, "Cases of Conscience" by, ix. 358.
Heath, author of "Flagellum," his testimony concerning Ireton, viii. 342.
Henry, Matthew, his funeral sermon on the death of Daniel Burgess, ix. 2.
Henry, Philip, greatly benefited by Owen's preaching, vi. 2.
Henrys, families of the, genial influences in, vii. 2.
Hervey, Mr, his expression of admiration for Owen's work on "The Glory of Christ," i. 274.
Hickman, Henry, pastor of an English congregation at Leyden, ii. 276. Work of, entitled "Speculum Sherlockianum, etc.," ii. 276.
Hill, Dr, opinion of, on Davenant's "Animadversions," x. 19.
Hoard, a treatise written by, x. 19.
Hobart, Sir Henry, Lord Chief-Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, xiii. 330.
Holland, influence of Arminian controversy in, on British theology, x. 3.
Homerton, London, academical institution at, v. 404.
Hook, Richard, D.D., vicar of Halifax, work of, in defence of Stillingfleet, xiii. 304.
Hooker, Thomas, an Independent, contended for the office of ruling elder, xvi. 2.
Hopton, a general in the interest of Charles I., viii. 2.
Horne, Rev. T. H., referred to, vol. viii. p. vii.
Horne, Mr, minister at Lynn in Norfolk, x. 141. His reply to Owen on the "Death of Christ," x. 141.
Horsley, Bishop, quotation from one of his charges, v. 2.
Hosemann, German name of Andrew Osiander, v. 11.
Hosius, Stanislaus, a Roman Catholic author, his works, v. 40.
Holchkis, Thomas, rector of Staunton, a supporter of Sherlock, ii. 276.
Howe, John, letter of, to Dr Stillingfleet, xiii. 304. Withdrew from Pinner's Hall lectures, viii. 474.
Hume and Milton unite in praising Lord Fairfax, viii. 72. Testimony of, in favour of Henry Ireton, viii. 342.
Humfrey, Mr John, author of "Peaceable Disquisitions," iii. 3, v. 3*.
Humphrey, "Answer to Dr Stillingfleet's Book," etc., by, xiii. 304.
Hupfeld settled the question regarding Hebrew points, in 1830, xvi. 346.

Ignatius, Epistles of, Owen impugns the integrity of the, xi. 75. Diversity of views regarding the, xi. 76.
Independent ministers, five, edited folio volume of Owen's Sermons, vol. viii. p. vii.
Independents, improperly blamed for consenting to the death of Charles I., viii. 128. Catechism, what, xv. 446. Attacks upon, xv. 446.
Indies, West, Scottish Covenanters crowded into vessels bound for the, ix. 367.
Indwelling scheme, the nature of, i. 2.
Ireland, sermon preached by Owen after his return from, viii. 208. Scheme for landing a French army in, ix. 13.
Irenæus, specific allusion to the Epistles of Ignatius by, xi. 75.
Ireton, Henry, son of German Ireton of Attenton, Nottinghamshire, his history and character, viii. 342.
Irish massacre of 1641, referred to by Owen, viii. 232.

Jamaica, Scottish Covenanters sold as slaves in, ix. 367.
Jansen, the piety of, x. 3.
Jansenists and Jesuits, Owen alludes to disputes between, xiv. 239.
Jeanes, Henry, rector of Chedsey, work against J. Goodwin by, xi. 4.
Jenkyn, Mr, one of six weekly lecturers at Pinner's Hall, 1672, viii. 474.
Jerome translated into Latin a treatise of Didymus on the Holy Spirit, iii. 28. Quoted regarding the introduction of Christianity into Britain, xiv. 96. Ad Evang., expression borrowed from, xv. 300.
Jesuits, use made of casuistry by the, ix. 358. Pelagian leanings of, and favour to the system of Molina, x. 3.
Jonathan, author of a Targum, when he lived, xiv. 135.
Junius, an eminent theologian in the University of Leyden, x. 3.

Kendall, Dr George, rector of Blisland, near Bodmin in Cornwall, xi. 4. His work in reply to John Goodwin, xi. 4.
Kennicott referred to, ix. 410, 411.
"*Kingdom*, Christ's," etc., a sermon preached by Owen to Parliament, viii. 366. Character of the sermon, viii. 366.
Knox, propositions from the works of, burned at Oxford University, viii. 128.

Lamb, Thomas, a Baptist minister, work of, against J. Goodwin, xi. 4.
Larroque, anonymous reply by, to Pearson, bishop of Chester, in 1674, xi. 75.
Lasitius, Joannes, large work of, on the Bohemian Brethren, xiii. 288.
Laud, convocation of the English church under, and the oath "Et cetera," xiv. 522.
Leigh, Mr, appointed to preach before the House of Commons, vol. viii. p. ix.
L'Estrange, Sir Roger, work of, in defence of Stillingfleet, xiii. 304.
Letters, Provincial, by Blaise Pascal, when published in this country, xiv. 191.
Levellers, defeat of, at Burford, when, ix. 197. Their views, and extent of the mutiny and insurrection by, ix. 198.
Levita, Elias, a learned Jew, who wrote in 1520, xvi. 346.
Lexicon, Dr Robinson's, referred to, i. 222.
Leyden, University of, Arminius called to the vacant chair of Junius in, x. 3.
Lisle, Sir George, royalist officer, execution of, viii. 72.
Lob, Mr, the "Modest and Peaceable Inquiry," by, xiii. 304.
Lombard, Peter, bishop of Paris, where born, and when died, i. 224. Why called "Magister Sententiarum," i. 224. System of divinity by, appeared in 1172, i. 224.
London, Owen frequently summoned to, for consultation and preaching, vi. 2. The coffee-houses

of, vii. 256. Owen's congregation in, after the Restoration, vol. viii. p. viii. Plague in, extent of its mortality, ix. 10. Great fire in, in 1666, ix. 11. Leadenhall Street, Caryl's congregation in, for some years before his death, ix. 257. Number of communicants in Caryl's church in, ix. 257. Lord Mayor, etc., of, commanded to suppress conventicles, xiii. 576.
Long, Mr, of Exeter, work of, in defence of Stillingfleet, xiii. 304.
Louis XIV., disputes of, with the papal court, xiv. 538.
Lubbertus, a learned protestant divine, born in Friesland, and lived 1556–1625, x. 595. Wrote several works, his best said to be "De Papâ Romanâ," x. 595.
Lucas, Sir Charles, royalist officer, execution of, viii. 72.
Lucian, "Philopatris," a small piece ascribed to, viii. 641.
Lucius, British prince of the name of, his usefulness, xiv. 98. Dominions and character of, xiv. 98.
Ludlow, his "Memoir" quoted regarding Henry Ireton, viii. 342.
Luther, how emancipated from the thraldom of popish error, v. 2. Charge against, concerning the sale of indulgences examined, xiv. 105.

Macaulay, Mr, quotation from his "History of England," vii. 2. Quotation from, in reference to the opposition to the Duke of York, viii. 594.
Maccovius, or Makowski, several works by, x. 471. Said to have been the first among the reformed that restored the scholastic treatment of theology, x. 471.
Magnus, St, near London Bridge, Caryl appointed to the charge of, ix. 256. Caryl ejected from, in 1662, ix. 256.
Mainwaring, Major, conversion of, ascribed to Owen's preaching in Dublin, vol. viii. p. viii.
Majorinus, a bishop at Carthage, xv. 369.
Manton, Dr, one of the six weekly lecturers at Pinner's Hall, viii. 474.
Marcion, the founder of the sect called "The Docetæ," i. 329. His general principles, ii. 382.
Marets, Des, an opponent of Amyraut in the atonement controversy, x. 140.
Marsham, Sir John, his "Canon Chronicus Ægyptiacus" referred to, xv. 247.
Martyr, Justin, Epistle to Diognetus commonly printed among the works of, v. 2.
Marvell, his famous "Rehearsal Transprosed," when published, xiii. 344.
Mather, Cotton, an Independent, contended for the office of ruling elder, xvi. 2.
Mather, Nathaniel, preface to Owen's work "Of the Spirit as a Comforter," by, iii. 2. Son of Richard, and pastor of Lime Street congregation, London, iv. 354. Preface to Owen's "Discourse of Spiritual Gifts," by, xv. 250.
Mather, Richard, an eminent puritan divine of Lancashire, iv. 354.
Mather, Mr Samuel, antagonist of Cane, who wrote in reply to "Fiat Lux," xiv. 2.
Maurice, head of the house of Orange, seized upon the government of the States of Holland; by what means, x. 3.
Mayer, a German theologian of the Lutheran church, ix. 358. List of the authors on casuistry by, in his "Bibliotheca Biblia," ix. 358.
M'Crie, the late Dr, his opinion of Owen's "Christologia," i. 2. His "History of the Reformation of Italy" referred to, ii. 392. His opinion of Owen's sermon on the decapitation of Charles I., viii. 128.
Mede, Joseph, Owen refers to a work by, vii. 160.
Menâge, witty epigram concerning Hugo Grotius by, xii. 4.
Merovingian race of French kings, the last of the, viii. 265.
Metaphrastes, Simon, a writer of the tenth century, xiv. 96.
Michaelis referred to, ix. 410.
Miletius, a deposed bishop, certain bishops and presbyters ordained by, ix. 461.
Milner embodied Augustine's "Confessions" in his "History of the Church," iii. 337.
Milton and Hume unite in praising Lord Fairfax, viii. 72. Proceedings against, and J. Goodwin conjointly, why, xi. 2.
Mishna, Owen's reference to, xiii. 467.
Molina, Louis, lectures on "The Concord of Grace and Free-will" by, x. 3.
Molinism, what it was, and how assailed, x. 3.
Montanus, impious heresy of, xiv. 99.
More, or Moore, Thomas, author of "The Universality of God's Free Grace," x. 140. Late a weaver at Wilts, near Wisbitch, according to Thomas Whitefield, x. 141. Referred to by Owen, x. 149.
Mortlake, in Surrey, David Clarkson ejected from, v. 300.
Moscorovius, Jerome, and others, revised the first Racovian Catechism, xii. 4.
Moulin, Louis Du, professor of history at Oxford, xiv. 530.

Nantes, edict of, confirmation of, secured by Protestants, x. 6.
Naseby, battle of, viii. 342.
Neal, the reader referred to, viii. 428. His "History of the Puritans" referred to, viii. 474. Representation of the Earl of Warwick by, x. 145.
Neander referred to, xiv. 96.
Neonomians, a certain party called, viii. 474.
Nestorius born at Germanica, in Syria, i. 230.
Newton, on what basis he proved the orbit of comets, ix. 11.
Nice, council of, its decree concerning certain bishops and presbyters, ix. 461.
Nicholas, Sir Edward, one of the Secretaries of State, xiv. 174.
Noble, his "Memoirs of the Cromwell Family" quoted regarding Ireton, viii. 342.
Nonconformists, penal laws against, suspended, viii. 474. A tract in defence of, by Owen, vii. 262.
Nonconformity, stringent measures of government against, vi. 154.
Nottingham, Lord Ch., work of Sir H. Hobart, revised and corrected by, xiii. 330.
Novatianus, or Novatus, bishop of Rome, xv. 368.
Novatians, the principles held by, xv. 369.

Oates, Titus, was thought to have discovered the Popish Plot, ix. 13.
Oleaster, a Portuguese Dominican, his Commentaries, ii. 443.
Omer, St, Jesuit college of, Titus Oates entered, ix. 13.
Onkelos lived about B.C. 60, xiv. 135.
Origen, specific allusion to the Epistles of Ignatius by, xi. 75.
Orme, Mr, quotation from, v. 4*. Valuable Memoir of Owen by, viii. 2. His list of Owen's works referred to, vol. viii. p. vii. A remark of, regarding the effect of Owen's preaching, vol. viii. p. viii. Objection by, to the warlike tone of certain discourses of Owen, viii. 72. An insinuation against Owen repelled by, viii. 72. Opinion of, regarding Owen's preaching on the decapitation of Charles I., viii. 128. Opinion of, regarding the date of

Sermon IV. vol. viii., viii. 203. Opinion of, on Owen's sermon on Ezek. xvii. 24, viii. 312. Remarks by, in reference to Thomas Moore, x. 141. Opinion of Mr Horne, minister at Lynn, in Norfolk, by, x. 141. Opinion of Owen's "Diatriba" given by, x. 482. Supposition of, regarding an unpublished document of Owen, xiii. 2. Ascribes Owen's "Word of Advice," etc., to the year 1667, or before it, xiii. 576. His remark on Owen's "Discourse concerning Liturgies," etc., xv. 2. His views of Presbyterianism, xvi. 2. His charge against Owen concerning Walton's Polyglott, xvi. 345.

Osiander, Andrew, born in Franconia, preacher at Nuremberg, and professor of theology in the University of Königsberg, v. 11.

Ostorodius, a Polish Socinian, x. 3.

Overbury, Sir Thomas, junior, supposed to be the "person of honour" to whom Owen addressed his letter on "Indulgence and Toleration Considered," xiii. 518.

Oxford, Charles I. left, in disguise, viii. 2. Parliament met at, on account of the plague in London, xiv. 522. Oath imposed on Nonconformists by Parliament at, xiv. 522.

Palmer's "Nonconformists' Memorial" referred to, viii. 474.

Parker, Samuel, assaults on the doctrines of grace, etc., by, iii. 2. Rebuked in severe yet calm terms by Owen, iii. 2. "Discourse of Ecclesiastical Polity, etc.," by, xiii. 344. Author of "Defence and Continuation of the Ecclesiastical Polity," iii. 121.

Parliament, Owen frequently summoned to preach before, vi. 2. Long, patriotism of the, vi. 88. Owen a favourite with, vol. viii. p. ix. Owen's sermon from Heb. xii. 27 preached before, viii. 244. Summoned by Cromwell to meet at Westminster, 1656, viii. 398. Owen preached before, from Isa. xiv. 32, viii. 398. Agreed to support the Protector in the war against Spain, viii. 398. Owen preached before, October 30, 1656, viii. 428. Convened January 27, 1659, viii. 454. Owen called to preach before, February 4, 1659, viii. 454. Met at Oxford in March 1681, viii. 594.

Parliamentary forces, a species of communism in the, ix. 197.

Pascal, sarcasm of, against the casuistical system of the Jesuits, ix. 358. The genuis of, x. 3. "Provincial Letters" by, published in this country in 1657, xiv. 191.

Patrick, Dr Simon, bishop of Chichester and Ely, work of, referred to, xiii. 358. Paraphrase and critical commentaries on the books of the Old Testament, by, xiii. 358.

"*Patrum* Bibliotheca," reference to by Owen, xv. 20.

Paul, Gregory, first Racovian Catechism ascribed to, xii. 4.

Paul, the apostle, the Christian church first planted in Britain by, xiv. 96.

Pawson, Mr John, sermon of, against J. Goodwin, xi. 4.

Payne, Mr, had charge of the original publication of Owen's "Meditations," i. 274.

Pearson, bishop of Chester, author of "Vindiciæ Epistolarum S. Ignatii," xi. 75.

Pepin, deposed Childeric III., and succeeded to the crown of France, viii. 265.

Perrinchief, Richard, works of, in answer to Dr Owen, xiii. 542.

Petavius, a learned Jesuit, said prayers for the repose of the soul of Grotius, xii. 4.

Peter, whether he ever visited Britain, xiv. 96.

Pezold, Christopher, printed at Amsterdam the best edition of the Racovian Catechism, xii. 4.

Pierce, a presbyterian minister, openly committed to Arianism, i. 2.

Pighi, two writers of the name of, born at Campen, Overyssel, v. 12.

Pike, "Cases of Conscience," by, ix. 358.

Pinner's Hall, in Old Broad Street, London, weekly lectures in, viii. 474.

Piscator, a learned professor of divinity at Herborn, author of several works, x. 603.

Polhill, Edward, "Answer to the Discourse of Mr William Sherlock" by, ii. 276.

Polycarp, specific allusion to the Epistles of Ignatius by, xi. 75. Epistle to, Syriac version of, how discovered, xi. 76.

Poole, Matthew, author of the "Synopsis Criticorum," ix. 337. Work of, in reply to Biddle, xii. 4.

Popery, lectures against, delivered at Southwark, viii. 474.

Popish recusants, penal laws against, suspended, viii. 474. Plot, Titus Oates was thought to have discovered the, ix. 13.

Powell, Rev. Vavasor, publications of, referred to, viii. 428.

Prayer, Book of Common, resumed in the royal chapel on the Restoration, xv. 2. Ordained to be read in the House of Peers, xv. 2. Conference between bishops and Presbyterians to revise the, xv. 2.

Presbyterian government, Owen's views of, xv. 446, xvi. 2.

Presbyterians and Independents, weekly lectures by, viii. 474.

Prideaux, Dr, regius professor of divinity at Oxford in 1615, xi. 626.

Prosper, quoted by Owen in support of his views on the atonement, x. 140.

Prynne and Edwards, enemies of John Goodwin, xi. 3.

Puritans, exaggerated ascription of austerity to the, vii. 2. True character of the decorum of the, vii. 2.

Quaker, a, reviewed certain opinions of Owen, xiii. 508.

Quakers, mysticism of, and when they first came into notoriety, iii. 2. And Romanists, in what they agree, iv. 118. Baxter engaged in a dispute with, xiii. 508. Their doctrine of the inward light refuted by Owen, xvi. 282, 424.

Rainbow, Dr, bishop of Carlisle, xiii. 576.

Rakau, a town in Poland, whence the name of "Racovian Catechism," ii. 393, xii. 4.

Reformers, justification by faith the uniform doctrine of the first, v. 2.

Regale, what it was, xiv. 538. Disputes about the, xiv. 538.

Regenuolscius, author of "Systema Historico-Chronologicum," etc., xiii. 288.

Remigius, president of the council at Valence in A.D. 855, x. 424.

Remonstrants, why the followers of Arminius were called, x. 3.

Resbury, Richard, vicar of Oundle, writing of, against J. Goodwin, xi. 4.

Rheims, an English New Testament printed at, in 1582, xiv. 201. Edition of New Testament highly objectionable, xiv. 201.

Richardson, John, of Cambridge, his "Prælectiones Ecclesiasticæ" referred to, xiv. 398.

Rivet, an opponent of Amyraut in the atonement controversy, x. 140.

Rogers, John, his singular work, "The Heavenly Nymph," vol. viii. p. viii.

Rollè, Samuel, a Nonconformist, his writings against Sherlock, ii. 276.

Romanus, Clemens, opinion of, regarding the apostle Paul quoted, xiv. 96.
Rome, church of, the "indelible character" a dogma of the, ix. 461; its view of ordination, ix. 461. Peter's residence in, present state of the controversy in regard to, xiv. 286. Substance of the ancient testimony regarding, xiv. 287. The authority of Scripture in regard to the question, xiv. 288.
Rota, the, an important ecclesiastical court at Rome, xv. 275.
Royalists, gallant defence of Colchester by, viii. 72.
Rule, Mr Gilbert, "The Rational Defence of Nonconformity" by, xiii. 304.
Rumford, thanksgiving for deliverance at, viii. 72.
Rupert, Prince, defeated Ireton at the battle of Naseby, viii. 342.
Rutherford, Samuel, the eminent Scotch divine, referred to, x. 347.

Salter's Hall, lecture established at, viii. 474.
Samosatenus, Paulus, bishop of Antioch, his character and heresies, ii. 398.
Sanderson, bishop of Lincoln, two works on casuistry by, ix. 358.
Sandius, first Racovian Catechism ascribed to Gregory Paul by, xii. 4.
Sarpi, Paul, "History of the Council of Trent" by, viii. 142, xiv. 392, xv. 121. "Treatise of Beneficiary Matters" by, xiii. 331.
Saumaise, De, pronounced much of the Ignatian Epistles to be spurious, xi. 75.
Saumur, divines of, their sentiments regarding the atonement, x. 140.
Savoy, conference at the, in 1658, and Confession of Faith, ix. 256.
Saxon invasion, character and fruits of the, xiv. 101.
Schlichtingius, Jonas, a Socinian author, his works, ii. 349, v. 48.
Schomann, George, a confession of faith prepared by, xii. 4.
Schultens, the Dutch critic, referred to, ii. 72. View of, concerning the Hebrew points, xvi. 346.
Scot, Sir Edward, "Duty of Pastors," etc., dedicated to, xiii. 2.
Sententiarii, who they were, v. 12.
Septuagint, alluded to by Owen, xiv. 135.
Sermons, Dr Owen's, the most complete collection of, vol. viii. p. vii. Posthumous, where contained, vol. viii. p. viii.
Sherlock, William, rector of St George, Botolph Lane, controversies with Owen, ii. 276. Works of, on the Trinity, i. 2. Works in defence of Dr Stillingfleet, by, xiii. 304.
Simonis, an eminent critic, iii. 96.
Simson, Mr John, appointed to preach before the House of Commons, vol. viii. p. ix.
Smalcius, Valentine, generally said to be the compiler of the Racovian Catechism, x. 561. And others revised the first Racovian Catechism, xii. 4.
Smith, Dr Pye, his "Scripture Testimony to the Messiah" referred to, iv. 118, v. 404, ix. 410.
Socinus, Lælius, uncle of Faustus Socinus, his history, ii. 392.
Socinus, Faustus, the nephew, his life and character, ii. 392, v. 2.
Socinianism, origin of, disputed, ii. 392. When introduced into England, xii. 3.
South, Dr, work of, on the Trinity, i. 2.
"*Southwark*, Morning Exercises against Popery, at," by Owen, vol. viii. p. vii.
Spain, the inveterate enemy of England, and of English Protestantism, viii. 398.
Spanheim, to whom he ascribes the origin of the Arminian controversy in Holland, x. 3. An opponent of Amyraut in the atonement controversy, x. 140.
Spelman, the learned antiquarian, opinion of, regarding the Epistle of Eleutherius, xiv. 398.
Spencer, Dr, celebrated work of, when published, xv. 246.
Sprigge, Mr Joshua, his history, x. 425.
Staphylus, a violent enemy of the Reformation, viii. 206.
Stapleton, a celebrated Roman Catholic divine, born in Sussex, viii. 206.
Statorius, Peter, junior, joined with F. Socinus to revise first Racovian Catechism, xii. 4.
"*Statute*, Bloody," the character of the, xiii. 408.
Stillingfleet, Dr, dean of St Paul's, reply to, by Hugh Paulin de Cressey, iv. 247. Sermon by, before the Lord Mayor of London, xiii. 304. A legend repudiated and exposed as a monkish fiction by, xiv. 95.
"*Summa*, Theologica," meaning of, v. 12.

Tacitus, curious incident recorded by, xiv. 97.
Targum, alluded to by Owen in reference to Job vi. 20, ii. 225.
Targums, the principal, whose they are, xiv. 135.
Taylor, Jeremy, the "Ductor Dubitantium" of, ix. 358. Owen's great contemporary, xiii. 542.
Telescopes not invented till the close of the sixteenth century, i. 376.
Tertullian, devotes five books to the refutation of the errors of Marcion, ii. 382. Quoted regarding the introduction of the gospel into Britain, xiv. 97.
Testard, a scholar of Cameron at Saumur, x. 140.
"*Testimony*, Solemn, against Toleration," etc., by General Assembly of the Church of Scotland, viii. 164.
Tetzel, pretext for which a commission to sell indulgences was given to, xiv. 105.
Texts and words in Scripture explained:—Gen. iv. 1, ii. 124. 2 Sam. xxiii. 5, ix. 410. 2 Chron. xxix. 33, x. 368. Job xxii. 24, ii. 77; xxvi. 13, iii. 96. Ps. xviii. 4, iii. 181; lxxvi. 5, ix. 202. Cant. v. 11, ii. 71; v. 14, ii. 77. Amos iv. 13, iii. 49. Matt. i. 19, x. 564. Acts xx. 28, ii. 416. Rom. iii. 26, x. 564; xii. 6, iv. 198. 2 Cor. iii. 18, i. 222. Heb. ii. 18, ix. 391; iv. 14, i. 248; x. 20, ix. 564, 2 Pet. i. 4, iii. 578. 1 John i. 9, x. 564.
Theodoret quoted regarding the introduction of Christianity into Britain, xiv. 96.
"*Theologica* Summa," meaning of, v. 12.
Theophilus of Antioch, specific allusion to the Epistles of Ignatius by, xi. 75.
"*Theron* and Aspasio," Hervey's, quoted, i. 274.
Thorndike, Herbert, one of Walton's assistants in the preparation of his "Polyglott," xiii. 12.
Thou, Jaeques-Auguste de, one of the presidents of *Parlement de Paris*, viii. 612. His history, description of St Bartholomew's Day in, viii. 612.
Tillemont, opinion of, concerning the Epistle to Diognetus, v. 2.
Tillotson on natural religion, iv. 4.
Todd, Mr, his charge against Owen, xvi. 345.
Toplady, insinuations against Venner and J. Goodwin by, xi. 2.
Toulmin, estimate of John Biddle by, xii. 3.
Transylvania, divisions among the reformers of, ii. 393. Prince of, his cruel intolerance, ii. 393.
Trent, council of, influence of the Jesuits in, x. 3.
Triers, commission of, Caryl acted on the, ix. 256.
Trinity, controversy on the subject of the, in England, i. 2. The Second Person of the, treatise of Owen relating to, i. 464.
Troughton, Mr John, of Bicester, "An Apology for the Nonconformists," etc. by, xiii. 304.

Twells, Dr, in his biography of Pococke, accuses Owen, xvi. 345.
Twisse, Dr William, prolocutor of the Westminster Assembly, x. 482.

Ulenbergius, Casparus, author of a Romanist catechism, v. 16.
Uniformity, Act for, liturgy ratified by the, xv. 2.
Unigenitus, the bull, lasting triumph for Jesuitism secured by, x. 3.
Ussher, an edition of the Epistles of Ignatius by, in 1644, xi. 75. Conjecture of, concerning a Syrian manuscript of the Ignatian Epistles, xi. 76.

Valence, council held at, in A.D. 855, x. 424.
Vanini, John Baptist, a weak enthusiast, Owen probably alludes to, xiv. 75.
Vasquez, a Roman Catholic writer, works published at Leyden, when, v. 11.
Vatablus, a celebrated Hebrew scholar, born in Picardy, ii. 443. His notes on the Old Testament, ii. 443.
Vedelius brought out a Genevan edition of the Ignatian Epistles, xi. 75.
Venner, styled by Toplady the leader of the Fifth-monarchy Men, xi. 2.
Vernon, Rev. George, Owen's defence of his character from the charges of, xiii. 518.
Vicentine "colleges," Socinians trace the origin of their peculiar tenets to, ii. 392.
Vicenza, religious meetings held at, by Lælius Socinus and others, ii. 392.
Vincent, Rev. Nathaniel, A.M., editor of "The Morning Exercise against Popery," etc., viii. 474.
Voidovius, a Polish Socinian, x. 3.
Volkelius, John, and others revised the first Racovian Catechism, xii. 4.
Vossii, G. J., "Responsio ad Herm. Ravenspergeri," etc., refuted by Owen, x. 590.
Vossius, an edition of the Epistles of Ignatius by, in 1646, xi. 75.

Wales, spiritual destitution in, portrayed by Owen, viii. 2. Owen's special interest for the religious welfare of, viii. 428. Act passed by Parliament in favour of, 1649, viii. 428.
Wall, Mr Thomas, "More Work for the Dean," by, xiii. 304.
Walton, Brian, Owen's controversial writings against, iv. 214. Editor of the "London Polyglott," Owen's controversy with, xvi. 282, 345.
Walton-upon-Thames, disturbance in the parish church of, ix. 107.
Ward, Dr, one of four English deputies to Synod of Dort, x. 3.
Warwick, Earl of, how represented by Neal, x. 145. Admiral of the parliamentary fleet, x. 145. Owen received the presentation to Coggeshall from, x. 145.
Watts, Dr Isaac, Owen's successor in London, i. 2, v. 404, ix. 18.
Westminster, Racovian Catechism burnt at, xii. 4.
Whalley, Major-General, and Colonel Goffe, Caryl in Scotland with, ix. 256.
Whiston expelled from Oxford for his Arianism in 1710, i. 2.
Whitaker pronounced much of the Ignatian Epistles to be spurious, xi. 75.
Whitby, Dr, "Examen Variantium Lectionum," by, xvi. 346.
Whitefield, Thomas, "minister of the gospel at Great Yarmouth," ix. 141. His reply to Thomas Moore, ix. 141.
Whitehall, Book of Common Prayer in the royal chapel at, xv. 2.
Whitelocke, Sir Bulstrode, "Memorials" of, referred to, viii. 366. Lord Clarendon sent for Owen by, xiv. 174.
Wilberforce, Mr, his "Practical View" referred to in commendation of Owen "On Mortification," vi. 2.
Wilkins, Dr, bishop of Chester, xiii. 576.
Willet on Daniel, referred to, ix. 396.
Williams, Dr, work by, in refutation of Crisp's views, viii. 474.
Williams, Mr Joseph, of Kidderminster, curious fact in the life of, v. 4*.
Winer's "Idioms of the Greek Language" referred to, x. 564.
Winter, Rev. Richard, B.D., a minister in London, ix. 518.
Wodrow the historian, statement of, regarding Owen and Presbyterianism, xvi. 2.
Wolsley, Sir Charles, Bart., v. 3*. His "Justification Evangelical," v. 3*. His remark referring to Dr Owen, v. 3*.
Wood, Anthony, observations by, on Owen as a pulpit orator referred to, vol. viii. p. viii. (Pref.), ix. 256.
Worcester, battle of, Owen preached on day of thanksgiving for, viii. 312.
Words and phrases peculiar in themselves or as used by Owen, and explained by the editor:—"Abode," viii. 595; "all and some," xiii. 201; "archimandrite," i. 299; "ardelio," xiii. 284; "cates," iii. 186; "chemarims," viii. 381; "Christians," xiii. 23; "communion," ii. 2; "curst," xiii. 341; "ela," xiv. 169; "elicit," iii. 284; "En herbam!" x. 254; "euctical," ix. 456; "forisfacio," v. 37; "iconolatry," viii. 267; "imperate," iii. 284; "importance," ix. 32; "inconsutilous," xiii. 19; "lestrical," xiv. 235; "lurry," xiii. 357; "mass," xiv. 113; "misprision," x. 154; "notarjecon," xvi. 397; "objected," iii. 247; "Orleans gloss," viii. 168; "Papalins," xiii. 142; "Peshito," xvi. 412; "procatarctical," v. 207; "prolepsis," x. 517; "resentment," iii. 597; "Solifidians," ix. 25; "St," xiv. 328; "stochastic," xiv. 6; "synaxis," xiv. 150; "Tarshish," ii. 77; "temura," xvi. 397; "to prevail one's self," vii. 6; "Uphaz," ii. 71; "vocales," xvi. 398; "welt," x. 72, etc.
Wycliffe Society, Clarkson's miscellaneous works in one of the volumes of the, v. 300.

Xiphilin, a monk of Constantinople, ii. 446.

York, James, Duke of, opposition to his accession to the throne, viii. 594. Marriage with the Princess of Modena condemned, xiv. 482

Zachary, Pope, crown of France transferred to Pepin by the sanction of, viii. 265.
Zebedee, James the son of, said by some to have been the first to introduce Christianity into our island, xiv. 95.
Zelotes, Simon, Bishop Taylor and Dr Cave believe that he must have been in Britain, xiv. 95.
Zurich, Lælius Socinus settled and died in, ii. 392.

III.—INDEX TO THE WORKS OF OWEN,

ACCORDING TO THE ARRANGEMENT OF THE VOLUMES IN THE PRESENT EDITION.

I. DOCTRINAL DIVISION.

Vol.		Date.
I.	**1. Treatises relating chiefly to the Person and Work of Christ.**	
	Χριστολογία, or a Declaration of the Glorious Mystery of the Person of Christ,	1679
	Meditations and Discourses on the Glory of Christ, etc.,	1684
	Meditations and Discourses concerning the Glory of Christ Applied, etc.,	1691
	Two Short Catechisms, wherein the Doctrines of Christ are Explained, etc.,	1645
II.	**2. Treatises relating to all the Persons of the Trinity.**	
	Of Communion with God the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, each Person distinctly, etc.,	1657
	A Vindication of some Passages in a Discourse concerning Communion with God,	1674
	A Brief Declaration and Vindication of the Doctrine of the Trinity,	1669
III.	**3. Treatise relating to the Holy Spirit.**	
	Πνευματολογία, or a Discourse on the Holy Spirit, etc.,	1674
IV.	**4. Treatises relating to the Holy Spirit, continued.**	
	The Reason of Faith, etc.,	1677
	Σύνεσις Πνευματική, or the Causes, Ways, and Means of Understanding the Mind of God, as Revealed in his Word,	1678
	A Discourse of the Work of the Holy Spirit in Prayer, etc.,	1682
	Two Discourses, of the Holy Spirit as a Comforter, and as the Author of Spiritual Gifts,	1693
V.	**5. Treatises relating to Justification and Faith.**	
	The Doctrine of Justification by Faith through the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ, etc.,	1677
	Gospel Grounds and Evidences of the Faith of God's Elect, etc.,	1695

II. PRACTICAL DIVISION.

VI.	**1. Treatises on Experimental Religion.**	
	Of the Mortification of Sin in Believers; the Necessity, Nature, and Means of it,	1656
	Of Temptation; the Nature and Power of it, etc.,	1658
	The Nature, Power, Deceit, and Prevalency of Indwelling Sin, etc.,	1668
	A Practical Exposition on Psalm cxxx., etc.,	1688
VII.	**2. Treatises on Experimental Religion, continued.**	
	The Nature of Apostasy from the Profession of the Gospel, etc.,	1676
	Φρόνημα τοῦ Πνεύματος, or the Grace and Duty of being Spiritually Minded,	1681
	Of the Dominion of Sin and Grace, etc.,	1688
VIII.	**3. Sermons Published during the Lifetime of Owen.**	
	Sixteen Sermons,	1646-1681
IX.	**4. Posthumous Sermons.**	
	One Sermon,	1690
	Thirty Sermons, Fourteen Discourses on Cases of Conscience,	1721
	Thirteen Sermons,	1756
	Twenty-five Sacramental Discourses,	1760

III. CONTROVERSIAL DIVISION.

X.	**1. Arminian Controversy.**	
	Θεομαχία Αὐτεξουσιαστική, or a Display of Arminianism, etc.,	1642
	Salus Electorum, Sanguis Jesu; or the Death of Death in the Death of Christ, etc.,	1647
	Of the Death of Christ, the Price he Paid, etc. [in Reply to Baxter],	1650
	De Divinâ Justitiâ Diatriba, etc.,	1653

Vol.		Date.
XI.	**2. Arminian Controversy, continued.**	
	The Doctrine of the Saints' Perseverance Explained and Confirmed, etc.,	1654
XII.	**3. Socinian Controversy.**	
	Vindiciæ Evangelicæ; or the Mystery of the Gospel Vindicated, etc.,	1655
	Of the Death of Christ [Appendix to the above, in Reply to Baxter],	1655
	Review of the Annotations of Grotius,	1656
XIII.	**4. Rights and Duties of Dissent.**	
	The Duty of Pastors and People Distinguished, etc.,	1643
	Eshcol; or Rules of Direction for the Walking of the Saints in Fellowship,	1647
	Of Schism, etc.,	1657
	Review of the True Nature of Schism, etc. [in reply to Cawdrey],	1657
	Answer to a late Treatise of Cawdrey about the Nature of Schism,	1658
	A Brief Vindication of the Nonconformists from the charge of Schism, etc.,	1680
	Truth and Innocence Vindicated, etc. [in reply to Parker],	1669
	Two Questions concerning the Power of the Supreme Magistrate about Religion, etc.,	1659
	Indulgence and Toleration Considered, etc.,	1667
	A Peace-offering, in an Apology and Humble Plea for Indulgence and Liberty, etc.,	1667
	Grounds and Reasons of Desire for Liberty,	1667
	Present Distresses on Nonconformists,	1667
	The State of the Kingdom,	1721
	Advice to the Citizens of London,	1721
XIV.	**5. Popish Controversy.**	
	Animadversions on a Treatise entitled "Fiat Lux," etc.,	1662
	A Vindication of the "Animadversions on 'Fiat Lux,'"	1664
	The Church of Rome no Safe Guide, etc.,	1679
	Some Considerations about Union among Protestants, etc.,	1680
	A Brief and Impartial Account of the Nature of the Protestant Religion, etc.,	1682
XV.	**6. Church Government.**	
	A Discourse concerning Liturgies, and their Imposition,	1662
	A Discourse concerning Evangelical Love, Church-Peace, and Unity, etc.,	1672
	An Inquiry into the Original, Nature, etc., of Evangelical Churches,	1681
	A Brief Instruction in the Worship of God, and Discipline of the Churches of the New Testament,	1667
XVI.	**7. Church Government, continued.**	
	True Nature of a Gospel Church,	1689
	A Letter concerning the Matter of the Present Excommunications,	1667?
	A Discourse concerning the Administration of Church Censures,	?
	An Answer to Two Questions, with Twelve Arguments against any Conformity, etc.,	1720
	Of Marrying after Divorce in Case of Adultery,	1721
	Of Infant Baptism and Dipping,	1721
	Reflections on a Slanderous Libel against Dr Owen, in a Letter to Sir Thomas Overbury,	1670
	MISCELLANEOUS:—	
	The Divine Original of the Scriptures,	1659
	Vindication of the Hebrew and Greek Texts,	1659
	Pro Sacris Scripturis Exercitationes adversus Fanaticos,	1658
	Poema,	1654
	Orationes VI.,	1721

IV. HISTORICAL DIVISION.*

XVII.	**Treatise relating to the History of Theology.**	
	Θεολογούμενα Παντοδαπὰ, sive de Natura, Ortu, Progressu, et Studio Veræ Theologiæ,	1661

V. EXEGETICAL DIVISION.†

XVIII.–XXIV.		
	Exposition of the Epistle to the Hebrews, 7 vols.,	1668–1684

* In order to furnish a complete view of the author's works, a reference to this important treatise is here inserted, although not embraced in the Miscellaneous Works, as originally announced for publication in this edition. It forms the 17th volume of the entire works of our author. It may be added, that his "Primer for Children" has never been recovered. His "Exercitations on the Sabbath" appear in the place which Owen intended them to occupy,—among the Preliminary Dissertations prefixed to his "Exposition of the Epistle to the Hebrews."

† A reference to this department of the author's works is necessary to complete a general view of them. The volumes under this division are vols. xviii.–xxiv. in the complete edition of his works.

IV.—INDEX TO THE WORKS OF OWEN,

IN THEIR ALPHABETICAL ORDER.

TITLES OF THE WORKS.		NOTES AND OPINIONS RESPECTING THEM.	
	Vol. and page.	Vol. and page.	Vol. and page
Advice to the Citizens of London,	XIII. 587	....	XIII. 576
Animadversions on "Fiat Lux,"	XIV. 3	I. LXXIX.	XIV. 2
Animadversions, Vindication of	XIV. 175	I. LXXX.	XIV. 174
Annotations of Grotius, Review of the	XII. 619	....	XII. 618
Apostasy, Nature of	VII. 3	....	VII. 2
Arminianism, Display of	X. 5	I. XXXI.	X. 2
Baptism, On Infant	XVI. 258	....	XVI. 240
Catechisms on the Doctrine of Christ,	I. 465	I. XXXIV.	I. 464
Causes, etc., of Understanding the Mind of God, etc.	IV. 119	....	IV. 118
Churches, Evangelical, Inquiry into	XV. 189	I. XCVII.	XV. 188
Churches, Instruction in Discipline of	XV. 447	....	XV. 446
Church, True Nature of a Gospel	XVI. 3	....	XVI. 2
Church Censures,	XVI. 223	....	XVI. 210
Church of Rome no Safe Guide,	XIV. 483	....	XIV. 482
Comforter, Work of the Holy Spirit as a	IV. 353	....	IV. 352
Communion with God,	II. 3	I. LXXII.	II. 2
Communion with God, Vindication of	II. 277	....	II. 276
Conformity to Worship not of Divine Institution, Twelve Arguments against	XVI. 248	....	XVI. 240
Death of Death in Death of Christ,	X. 145	I. XXXVII.	X. 140
Death of Christ, its Satisfaction and Merit,	X. 431	....	X. 430
Death of Christ, and Justification,	XII. 591	....	....
Distresses on Nonconformists Examined,	XIII. 579	....	XIII. 576
Dominion of Sin and Grace,	VII. 501	....	VII. 500
Eshcol, or Rules for Church Fellowship,	XIII. 53	I. XXXVII.	XIII. 52
Evangelical Love, On	XV. 59	I. XCIII.	XV. 58
Excommunications, Letter concerning	XVI. 211	....	XVI. 210
Exercitationes adversus Fanaticos,	XVI. 425	....	XVI. 424
Exposition of the Epistle to the Hebrews,	XVIII. to XXIV.	I. IX. and LXXXIV.	....
Exposition of Psalm cxxx.	VI. 325	I. IX.	VI. 324
Glory of Christ, Discourses on the	I. 275	....	I. 274
Glory of Christ Applied	I. 418	....	....
Gospel Grounds of the Faith of God's Elect,	V. 404	....	V. 402
Indwelling Sin, Of	VI. 155	I. LXXXIV.	VI. 154
Indulgence and Toleration Considered,	XIII. 519	....	XIII. 518
Justice, On Divine	X. 483	I. LIV.	X. 482
Justification by Faith, On	V. 3	I. XCVI.	V. 2
Liberty, Grounds and Reasons of Desire for	XIII. 577	....	XIII. 576
Liturgies, Discourse concerning	XV. 3	....	XV. 2
Marriage after Divorce, On	XVI. 254	....	XVI. 240
Mortification of Sin, On the	VI. 3	I. LXIV.	VI. 2
Mystery of the Gospel Vindicated,	XII. 5	I. LXII.	XII. 3
Orationes VI.	XVI. 481	....	XVI. 480
Original of the Scriptures, The Divine	XVI. 297	I. LXXIV.	XVI. 282, 296
Pastors and People, Duty of	XIII. 3	I. XXXIII.	XIII. 2
Peace-offering, or Plea for Indulgence	XIII. 543	....	XIII. 542
Perseverance of the Saints, Doctrine of the	XI. 5	I. LVI.	XI. 2
Person of Christ, Glorious Mystery of the	I. 3	I. XCIX.	I. 2
Poema,	XVI. 477	....	XVI. 477
Power of the Magistrate in Religion,	XIII. 509	....	XIII. 508
Prayer, On the Work of the Holy Spirit in	IV. 237	....	IV. 236
Reason of Faith,	IV. 5	....	IV. 4
Reflections on a Libel,	XVI. 271	....	XVI. 270
Schism, Of	XIII. 91	I. LXXIII.	XIII. 90
Schism, Review of the True Nature of	XIII. 209	I. LXXIV.	XIII. 208
Schism, Answer to a late Treatise about	XIII. 279	I. LXXIV.	XIII. 278
Sermons,	VIII. 3, etc.	....	VIII. 2, 72, 128, 208, 244, 282, 312, 342, 366, 398, 428, 454, 474, 594
Sermons, Posthumous	IX. 3, etc.	....	IX. 2, 18, 358, 408, 518
Spirit, On the Holy	III. 5	I. XCIV.	III. 2
Spiritual Gifts, On the Holy Spirit as the Author of	IV. 420	....	IV. 352
Spiritual Mindedness, On	VII. 263	I. XCIX.	VII. 262
State and Fate of Protestantism,	XIV. 531	....	XIV. 530
State of the Kingdom,	XIII. 583	....	XIII. 576
Temptation, On	VI. 89	I. LXXVI.	VI. 88
Theologoumena,	XVII.	I. X. and LXXVIII.	....
Trinity, Doctrine of the	II. 387	I. XCIII.	II. 366
Truth and Innocence Vindicated,	XIII. 345	I. LXXXVIII.	XIII. 344
Union among Protestants,	XIV. 519	I. LIV.	XIV. 518
Vindication of the Nonconformists,	XIII. 305	....	XIII. 304
Vindication of Greek and Hebrew Texts,	XVI. 345	I. LXXIV.	XVI. 345

LIST OF OWEN'S PREFACES TO WORKS OF OTHER AUTHORS.

A Collection of the Works of Dr Thomas Taylor, ... 1653
Justification without Conditions. By W. Eyre, minister of the gospel, and pastor of a church in the city of New Sarum. 8vo. [This preface was omitted in the second edition,] . . 1653
The Private Christian's Non Ultra; or, a Plea for the Layman's Interpreting the Scriptures. By Philolaoclerus, ... 1656
A Defence of Mr John Cotton from the Imputation of Self-contradiction, charged on him by Mr Dan. Cawdrey. 12mo, ... 1658
The True Idea of Jansenism, both Historic and Dogmatic. By Theophilus Gale. 12mo, . 1669
Clavis Cantici; or, an Exposition of the Song of Solomon. By James Durham, late minister at Glasgow. 4to. [Wood ascribes this preface to Owen, but it is anonymous, and not in Owen's style], ... 1669
An Introduction to the Holy Scriptures, etc. By Henry Lukin. 12mo, ... 1669
The Freeness of the Grace and Love of God to Believers. By W. Bridge, ... 1671
Sermons on the whole Epistle of St Paul to the Colossians. By Mr Daillè. Translated into English by F. S. With Dr Thomas Goodwin's and Dr John Owen's Epistles Recommendatory. Folio, 1672
New and Useful Concordance to the Holy Bible. By Vavasor Powell, ... 1673
The Divine Will Considered in its Eternal Decrees and Holy Execution of them. By Edward Polhill. 8vo. 1673
The Nature and Principles of Love as the End of the Commandment, declared in some of the last Sermons of Mr Joseph Caryl, with an Epistle prefixed by John Owen, D.D. 12mo, . 1673
Scudder's Christian's Daily Walk, ... 1674
The Difference between the Old and New Covenant Stated and Explained. By Samuel Petto, minister of the gospel. 12mo, ... 1674
The Surest and Safest Way of Thriving. By Thomas Gouge, ... 1674
The Best Treasure; or, the Way to be made Truly Rich. By Bartholomew Ashwood, . 167–
The Law Unsealed; or, a Practical Exposition of the Ten Commandments. By James Durham, late minister of the gospel at Glasgow. 8vo, Edinburgh, ... 1676
The Ark of the Covenant Opened; or, a Treatise of the Covenant of Redemption between God and Christ as the Foundation of the Covenant of Grace, etc. By a minister of the New Testament. 4to. [The author was Patrick Gillespie, one of the ministers and principal of the University of Glasgow], ... 1677
A Practical Discourse of God's Sovereignty, with other material points, etc. By Elisha Coles, 1678
The Glory of Free Grace Displayed. By Stephen Lob. 12mo, ... 1680
The Holy Bible, with Annotations and Parallel Scriptures, etc. By Samuel Clark. Folio, . 1690
Ness's Antidote to Arminianism. [The preface was given, but not published in the work], . ——

V.—INDEX TO PRINCIPAL SUBJECTS AND OCCASIONAL TOPICS.

Aaron confessing the iniquities of Israel, ix. 597. Resemblance of Christ's office to that of, xii. 398. Sons of, properly priests, xii. 400. Enjoined to teach the people, xiii. 15.
Abasement in the remembrance of the defilement of sin, a necessary duty, iii. 459. How promoted, vii. 380. Constant, vii. 532.
Abba, Father, the words explained, iv. 268.
Abel and Cain, their offerings, iii. 294.
Abhorrence for sin, vi. 374. Self, vi. 540. Of sin in others, necessity of, ix. 324.
Abiding of the Holy Spirit with believers, ii. 232. Consolation, ii. 251. In Christ, iv. 146. Of indwelling sin, vi. 10, 166. In prayer, vi. 126. Of the love of God, vi. 334. With God, vi. 421. Sense of heavenly things, how attained, vii. 319. With God, what it is, viii. 444. In Christ, in spite of opposition, an evidence of true faith, ix. 362. With Christ, the way to recover from decays of grace, ix. 370. In communion with those from whom we first receive religion, xiv. 21, 211.
Ability and power lost by man through sin, i. 184. Of Christ, for his work, i. 228. Of man to discern the will of God, iii. 102. No, in sinners to purge themselves from natural pollution, iii. 433. To comply with the commands of God, mistakes about, iii. 618. For duty not in ourselves, iii. 619. Of assent upon testimony, iv. 102. To interpret Scripture, iv. 121. Scripture not to be read in dependence upon our natural, iv. 193. For prayer, how obtained, iv. 260. Use of, in prayer, iv. 306. Of speech, iv. 459. For the ministry, whence obtained, ix. 442. For the administration of Christ's institutions, xv. 10. No, in man to come to the knowledge of God, xvi. 468.
Abraham, justification of, v. 162. Issue of temptation with, vi. 103.
Absence of Christ, impatience of the, ii. 126. Bodily, of Christ supplied by the Spirit, iii. 193. Of God from the soul, vi. 619.
Absolute, perfection of God, ii. 90. Authority possessed by God, iii. 609. Power of God, what he can do by it, v. 369. Judgments, viii. 616. The purposes of God are, xi. 142. And supreme head of the church, Christ the, xiv. 363.
Absolution from sin, ii. 176, x. 470.
Abstinence from known sin, v. 78. From things which Christ has not appointed, part of a Christian profession, ix. 542.
Abuse of spiritual gifts, iii. 16. And deceit, under pretence of the work of the Holy Spirit, iii. 29. Of the best duties possible, iii. 455. Of eternal love, iii. 597. Of the faculties of the soul, iv. 83. Of learning, iv. 216. Of the doctrine of justification, v. 5. Of gospel grace, effect of, vi. 218 Of the patience of God, vi. 448.
Abyss of providence unsearchable, xiv. 70.
Accents and vowels, Hebrew, iv. 218, xvi. 386.
Acceptance of obedience, the rule of, iii. 471. Of Christ in his work, iv. 356. With God, nature of, v. 30. Many have found, vi. 443. Gracious, of the satisfaction of Christ, x. 441.
Acceptation with God, grace of, ii. 169.
Access to God in worship, i. 270. Advantage under the new testament in, iii. 130. Boldness in our, iv. 293. Procured by the blood of Christ, ix. 55. The glory and beauty of gospel worship, ix. 65. By the Spirit, ix. 69.
Accidental adjuncts of prophecy, iii. 138. Heightenings of lust, vi. 29. Form, what it is, xii. 289.
Accommodation of religion, evil effects of, v. 46.
Accomplishment of Scripture, when improperly expected, viii. 647. Of the purpose of God, ix. 418. Of the promises certain, xi. 166.
Account of the Protestant religion, xiv. 531.
Accursed, Christ blasphemously, by the Jews, iii. 17. The death of Christ was, xii. 486.
Accuser, Satan an, iv. 360.
Acknowledgment of sin, vi. 362.
Achor, the valley of, xi. 278.
Acquaintance with the love of Christ, ii. 62. Necessary to walking with God, ii. 108. With Christ, ii. 286. With the pollution of sin necessary, iii. 450. With the word of God, how acquired, iv. 200. With the work of God, a qualification for the ministry, iv. 511. With the success of sin necessary, vi. 31. Special, with spiritual things, how acquired, vii. 321, 332.
Acquiescency of the heart in God, v. 101.
Acquiescing in God in Christ, ix. 599.
Acquisition of the gospel ministry, iv. 489.
Acquitment from sin, v. 9, vi. 406.
Act of the Spirit in forming the human nature of Christ different from that of the Son in assuming it, iii. 165. Of believing, the work of God, iii. 320. Every gracious, of the will wrought by the Holy Spirit, iii. 535. Of testimony to the Scriptures, iv. 26, 37.
Actings, eminent, of grace, i. 117. Of Christ in our communion with him, ii. 197. Of faith in receiving the Holy Ghost, ii. 231. Of the Holy Spirit in believers, ii. 233, 234. Internal, of the Trinity, where one person is the object of the love of another, natural and necessary to the being of God, iii. 66. Of one divine person towards another, external, iii. 67. Of the person of the Son of God towards the human nature, voluntary, iii. 161. Of the Holy Spirit, not ascribed to him exclusively, iii. 162. Of mind, rational, iv. 83. Of the offices of Christ, all from God, v. 121. First, of sin to be resisted, vi. 62. Of grace, vigorous, vi. 566. Of faith, special, vii. 283.
Actions, symbolical, iii. 138. All, to be tried by the word of God, iii. 469. Mixed, xi. 518.
Active obedience of Christ, ii. 155.
Activity of indwelling sin, vi. 11. Of the will in believers to do good, vi. 161.
Acts of the Trinity, how undivided, iii. 162. Of spiritual life, iii. 285. No vital, under the power of spiritual death, iii. 291. All, of natural life from God, iii. 530. Of God in imputing guilt to Christ, v. 200. Of mercy, the proper work of God, viii. 83. Of the will, what they are, x. 120. Of God towards sinners, antecedent and consequent to the satisfaction of Christ, x. 451. First and second, how connected, x. 558. And habits distinguished, x. 579. Of grace, all, have a respect to Christ, x. 615. Of grace, concatenation of, xi. 151.
Actual sins, how they spring from original, iii. 338, 339. Twofold event of men falling into, iii. 342. How we are strengthened against, iii. 438.

And habitual grace, iii. 529. Supplies of grace necessary to the mortification of sin, iii. 553. Assistance of grace necessary to obedience, iii. 622. Opposition to good, vi. 194. Reconciliation procured by Christ, x. 97. Exercise of the mind about spiritual and heavenly things, vii. 270. Sin, its cause and spring, vii. 411.

Adam, how poor in himself, i. 208. Mental state of, when created, ii. 112. How he had the Spirit of God in the state of innocence, iii. 102. Had many things revealed to him, iii. 128. Supernatural life of, iii. 284. How God dealt with, v. 76. And Christ compared, v. 323, x. 391. Issue of temptation with, vi. 103. State of, before the fall, x. 82. A type of Christ, x. 353. Man not in that state by Christ which was lost by, x. 399.

Adaptation of the gospel to all nations, viii. 20.

Addition, no, can be made to God, i. 368, vi. 482.

Additions, of, to divine institutions, xv. 467.

Addresses to Christ, how to make, ix. 376.

Adduction of sacrifices, iii. 177.

Adherence of defilement and guilt to our nature, i. 199. And assimilation, effects of love, iii. 564. To corrupt traditions, iv. 180. To spiritual things, vii. 482. Faith of, ix. 600.

Adhering to ministers, xiii. 61.

Adjuncts of divine inspiration, iii. 138.

Adjuvant cause of the sufferings of Christ, ix. 526.

Administration of grace not equal at all times, iii. 620. Of the kingdom of Christ, iv. 357. Of ordinances, authority for, iv. 444. Of forgiveness, vi. 406. Of the new covenant after the coming of Christ in the flesh, x. 298. Of holy things before the law, xiii. 7. Of discipline, xv. 514. Of church-censures, xvi. 223.

Admiration of the glory of Christ, i. 320. An effect of love, iii. 586. Of the perfections of God, vi. 66. Of what is incomprehensible, vii. 372.

Admission of things into the mind, effect of inordinate, i. 461. Of Christ, ix. 575. Of persons to the Lord's supper, xv. 169. Into church fellowship, xv. 525.

Admonition, brotherly, xiii. 84, xv. 517.

Admonitions, end and use of, xi. 585.

Adoption, pledge of, ii. 186. Nature of, ii. 207. Privileges of, ii. 211. Spirit of, iv. 265.

Adoration of Christ, i. 107. Of images, xiv. 426.

Adorning our profession, iv. 436.

Adrian, verses of, on his death-bed, i. 280, ii. 86, x. 520. Choked by a fly, viii. 93.

Advantage of contemplating the mystery of the person of Christ, i. 221. And privilege in the participation of the gift of the Spirit, iii. 110. Of the new testament in our access to God, iii. 190. Of duties vitiated in their performance, iii. 295. Of spiritual experience, great, iii. 390. Our highest, promoted by submission to the authority of God, iii. 616. Taken by temptation, vi. 98. From sin, sometimes there is none, vi. 204. Sin takes, of former prevalency, vi. 207. Proposed, of sin, vi. 256. Of the kingdom of Christ, viii. 315. Of faith in a time of public calamity, ix. 491.

Adversaries and assertors of the doctrine of the saints' perseverance compared, xi. 481.

Advice to the citizens of London, xiii. 587.

Advocate, work and office of an, iv. 288. The Holy Spirit an, iv. 360, x. 385.

Affection, natural, perverted by sin, vi. 305. Inordinate, to the world, vii. 273.

Affections excited by conviction, iii. 239. Fixed by grace on spiritual things, iii. 240. How depraved and sanctified, iii. 335. When renewed, work readily, iii. 403. The, how engaged to God, iii. 496. Corrupt, seductive power of, iv. 177, 178. And graces, excitation of, iv. 268. Entanglement of, by sin, vi. 109, 199. Alienated from God, vi. 183. The, how to be kept, vi. 249. Towards lawful things, vi. 579. Engagement of natural, in prayer, vii. 290. Spiritual, vii. 395. Influence of the, vii. 396. The sails of the soul, viii. 80. With what, we were engaged to God, ix. 427. And passions, how attributed to God, xii. 109.

Afflations, new, not necessary for understanding the Scriptures, iv. 125.

Afflatus of the Holy Spirit, iii. 148, iv. 59. No sudden, to be expected, iv. 518.

Affliction and trouble, increase of, with age, i. 433. Compassion of Christ to his people in, ii. 145. No promise against, ix. 413.

Afflictions, comfort under, ii. 259. The means of convictions, iii. 347. How they purge away sin, iii. 447. How sanctified and made useful, iii. 447. Sent to mortify sin, vi. 137. The means of preventing sin, vi. 278. Permitted by the covenant, vi. 338. Produce disquietude, vi. 575. Continued, how to be regarded, vi. 581. Believers to grow better by, vi. 583. Consistent with the special presence of God, viii. 439. When the bounds of, are exceeded, it is a calamitous season, ix. 492.

Affrightments and allurements of temptation, vi. 100.

Age, increase of trouble with, i. 433. Horoscope of, xiii. 5.

Agent in the work of redemption, x. 163.

Aggravation of the guilt of sin, vi. 51, vii. 509.

Aggravations of the defilement of sin, iii. 432. In the sins of believers, vi. 344. Of sin, how to be considered, vi. 557. Of death, xii. 485. Of the evil of schism, xiii. 91.

Agony of Christ in the garden, ix. 533.

Agree, things wherein Christians, should be considered, xiv. 316.

Agreement necessary to walking with God, ii. 106, ix. 87. Of spiritual gifts and saving graces, iv. 425. Of universal and particular justice, x. 573.

Aids of grace, the end for which they are granted, vii. 547.

Aim of man different from that of God, viii. 160.

Aiming at the highest degree of spiritual mindedness necessary, vii. 274.

Alacrity against sin, vi. 32. In our entrance into sufferings, vii. 350.

Alienation of the minds of men from the gospel, iii. 277. From the life of God, iii. 256. Between God and man, x. 262.

All men, Christ nowhere said to die for, x. 245, 349. Why the elect are called, x. 299. The word, how used in the Scriptures, x. 307.

Allegories and types of Scripture, on, iv. 197.

Alleviation of afflictions, where to be found, i. 278. Of guilt, false, vi. 260.

Alliance between Christ and the church, i. 87. Of words in Scripture, iv. 215.

Alpha and Omega, a title of Christ, ii. 393.

Alteration in the state of the church, xv. 202. No further, under the gospel in the worship of God, xv. 452.

Ambition of the clergy, xv. 198.

Amendment, one end of punishment, xii. 437.

Ampliation of prayer, iv. 316.

Amplitude, spiritual, of divine truths, how restrained, v. 10.

Amyraldus, his opinion of the nature of a church, xiii. 138.

Anabaptism, xiii. 184.

Analogy or proportion of faith, iv. 198. Of the eternal purposes of God, x. 456. Definition of, x. 498.

Anathema, Jesus how called, iii. 17.

Ancients, their opinions on the subject of imputation, v. 61, 175. Testimonies of the, on the extent of the atonement, x. 422. Their authority, xi. 24.

Angels, ministry of, i. 89. Their adhesion to Christ by love, i. 147. Glory of God manifested to the, i. 264. The sinning, i. 370, vi. 430. The sons of God, ii. 209. The host of God, iii. 95. About the body of Christ, when dead, iii. 181. The love of Christ passes the comprehension of, ix. 610. And devils, how they agree and differ, xii. 487. The only beings that had no hand directly in the death of Christ, xii. 487.
Anger of God, how it should be regarded, viii. 82. In what sense attributed to God, x. 451, xii. 113, 533. Definition of, x. 542.
Animadversions on Fiat Lux, xiv. 11.
Animosities, how best prevented, viii. 118.
Anniversary sacrifice, Jewish, how typical, xii. 447.
Annotations of Grotius, review of, xii. 619.
Anointed, how Christ was, iv. 392, ix. 291. Ones, believers are God's, ix. 291.
Anointing, use and design of, i. 85. Of believers by the Spirit, ii. 246. At the inauguration of governors, what it signified, iii. 148. Of the Holy Spirit, iv. 145, 390. With oil, iv. 465. Fits men for the service of God, ix. 292. Of Christians gives God a peculiar interest in them, ix. 292. Of Christ, x. 165.
Anselm, his directions for the visitation of the sick, v. 16.
Answer to Stillingfleet on Separation, xv. 375.
Answerable practice, importance of, vi. 301. Answerableness between the heart of a believer and the truth, vi. 456.
Antecedent love of God, ii. 29. Acts of God towards sinners, x. 451.
Antecedents and consequents to be observed in reading the Scriptures, iv. 201.
Anthropomorphites, their notion of God, xii. 99.
Antichrist, the spirit of, what, iii. 63. Destruction of, viii. 618. Contest with, ix. 401. The season for his destruction determined by God, ix. 505. In the temple, xiii. 154. Some writers deny that the Pope is, xiv. 547.
Antichristian errors dangerous, viii. 25. The promoters of them, how qualified for that work, viii. 29.
Antiquity of the sacred writings, iv. 21. Of liturgies, xv. 25.
Anti-spirit, against whom set up, iii. 36.
Apostasies, causes of total, vi. 309.
Apostasy under the old testament, i. 125. Nature of man's, from God, i. 181. Greatness of our, from God, i. 190. Of the church in several ages, with respect to the persons of the Trinity, iii. 43. Of Christian churches in the rejection of the Spirit and his work, iii. 44. From beginnings of conversion, how brought on, iii. 353. Due sense of, necessary, v. 20. Door of, vi. 15. Beginning of, vi. 184. From the profession of the gospel, vii. 11. Wickedness of, vii. 354. Causes of, vii. 79, 90. Of the church of Rome, xiv. 221. From pure religion predicted, xiv. 534. Predictions of, fulfilled in the church of Rome, xiv. 534. In the church, xv. 476.
Apostates from the gospel, the guilt of, x. 365.
Apostles, commission of the, iv. 439. The followers of the, iv. 458. How Christ taught the church by the, v. 59. How Christ spake by the, after his ascension, v. 60. Worship of God as conducted by the, xv. 16.
Apparel, vanity in, vii. 207.
Appealing to God as the searcher of the heart, vii. 287.
Appearance and condition of believers, mean, ii. 5. Of good, the will chooses the, vi. 254. Of Christ in the presence of God, xi. 366.
Appearances of Christ in the likeness of human nature, i. 89. Personal, of Christ under the old testament, i. 349. Of the Holy Spirit under a visible sign, iii. 74. Of persons in divine visions, iii. 137. Of God in a way of grace to be improved, vi. 573. Extraordinary, for his people, viii. 124. For his people, tokens of his special presence, viii. 443.
Appellations or titles of the Holy Spirit in Scripture, iii. 54, xi. 334.
Appetite, loss of spiritual, i. 450. The will is a rational, vi. 254. Intellectual, x. 427.
Application to the promises for relief, ii. 129. Of the blood of Christ for the cleansing of sin, iii. 423. To the blood of Christ for the cleansing of sin, iii. 441, 457, 463. Of the death of Christ to subdue sin, iii. 562. Of mercy to the soul, vi. 407. Ignorance of the way of making, to Christ, vii. 173. To Christ for aids of grace, vii. 548. Of the soul to spiritual objects, vii. 482. Special, of Christ, ix. 600. And impetration, difference between, x. 222, xii. 424. Of the death of Christ to the soul, xi. 393. Of the grace of Christ, how to be made, xv. 53.
Appointment of Christ to death, x. 607.
Apprehending Christ, v. 111.
Apprehension of eternal danger from the law, before conversion, iii. 359. Assent of the mind on its first, of things, iv. 82. Of the evil of temptation to be cherished, vi. 123.
Apprehensions of divine operations to be tried by the word of God, iii. 225.
Approach to God, way of, ii. 121.
Approaches to glory consist in growing holiness, iii. 583. How enjoyed, vii. 497. Of calamities, use of faith in the, ix. 491.
Approaching to God in duty, vii. 293, 434. Judgments, warnings of, viii. 602.
Approbation, God's love of, ii. 21. Saints', of the righteousness of Christ, ii. 187. Of divine things, how produced, iv. 397. Of the way of salvation, v. 100, 411. Of the gospel by faith, v. 422. Self, often unfounded, viii. 633.
Appropriation, the use of a seal in, ii. 243.
Approving of and delighting in the sins of others, iii. 454.
Approximations to God, vii. 433.
Aquinas, his relation concerning a corpse, viii. 23.
Arausican council, a decree of, iii. 245. Testimony of the, to the necessity of grace, iv. 113.
Arguments in prayer for the further communications of the Spirit, iii. 411. Weak, for holiness prejudicial to it, iii. 567. External, for the truth of the Scriptures, iv. 45. Against universal redemption, x. 173, 182, 193, 214, 215, 225, 236. Twelve, to prove the preservation of the Scriptures, xvi. 358.
Arian heresy, whence it sprang, i. 13. Its prevalence, i. 39. Persecutions, violent, viii. 65, 178. Its early abettors, xii. 13.
Aristotle, his character of virtue, iii. 502. Mint of, v. 56. His terms and distinctions, vii. 125.
Ark of the tabernacle, what it was, viii. 293. Of the covenant, called the "glory" of God, viii. 460. Christ the, ix. 495, x. 284.
Arminianism, display of, x. 11. Progress of, xi. 16. In regard to the perseverance of the saints, xi. 86. Embraced by Romanizing bishops, xi. 493. Opposed by Puritan divines, xi. 498.
Arrows of conviction, vi. 270. Divine, fixed in the soul, pain of, vi. 337.
Articles of faith, xiv. 315. Of the church of England, xv. 356.
Artificial union, employed by some to set forth the mystery of Christ's person, i. 230. Science, iv. 157. Disposition of truth not found in the Scriptures, iv. 189. Skill in teaching, evil of, v 10.
Artist, good, a simile from a, viii. 18.

Arts and sciences, use of, in the interpretation of Scripture, iv. 126.
Ascension of Christ into heaven, i. 247-249.
Ascription of divine properties to God, i. 110. Of glory to God, vi. 483.
Ashamed of the gospel, what it is to be, ix. 221. Of what men ought not to be, in the gospel, ix. 224. Why we should not be, of the gospel, ix. 230.
Asleep in security, who are, i. 446.
Ass's head, worship of an, xiv. 476.
Assault the soul, sin does, vi. 198.
Assaults of our spiritual enemies, how managed, vi. 108.
Assemblies of bishops and councils, i. 10. We should pray for the presence of Christ in our, ix. 457.
Assembly of saints and angels in heaven, i. 257.
Assent to truth, iii. 232. To the Scriptures, iv. 46. Ways of, iv. 82. Upon testimony, faith an, v. 72, 81. Sincere, to divine revelation, v. 99. Upon light and conviction, xi. 641.
Assignation of honour to Christ, its principle and spring, i. 119.
Assimilation, love of, i. 154. To Christ, iii. 564. To heavenly and spiritual things, vii. 445.
Assistance of Christ, what, is afforded in prayer, ii. 121. Actual, imparted to believers, ii. 206. In duty, iii. 499. Internal, of the Spirit of God necessary to every act of obedience, iii. 530. Of the Holy Spirit for understanding the Scriptures, necessity of, iv. 161. In prayer promised, iv. 240. Full and speedy, from Christ, vi. 83. Of God against indwelling sin, vi. 285. Whence derived, viii. 153.
Assistances, deceitful, leaning on, vi. 147.
Assisting, special grace, vi. 276.
Assumption of human nature by Christ, i. 16, 224. The only immediate act of the person of the Son towards the human nature, iii. 160. Caution against false, of grace, vi. 49.
Assurance accompanying divine revelations, iii. 133. Of success and final preservation, an encouragement to duty, iii. 601. Of the end, an encouragement to the use of the means, iii. 603. Of the truth of the Scriptures, iv. 47, 100, 149. How given, iv. 405. Of faith, vi. 413, 548. Nature of gospel, vi. 548. By what lost, vii. 460. That sin shal[1] not have dominion over believers, vii. 542. Foundation of, xi. 83. Of the love of God, xi. 410. Of a call to the ministry, xiii. 31.
Assured knowledge that the Scripture is the word of God, how to be obtained, xvi. 306.
Athanasius falsely accused by the Arians, viii. 65.
Atheism, secret, of the heart, vi. 441. Abounding of, vii. 368. To be renounced, viii. 6. The sin of, viii. 612. Transcendent, what, x. 14.
Atheistical thoughts, presumption as to God, vi. 393. Influence of, vii. 352
Atheists, generally the most abandoned of mankind, x. 496.
Athenians would not admit strange objects of worship, xiii. 525.
Atonement, the, how pleaded by Christ in heaven, i. 254. For sin not required of us, iii. 377. False ways of making, the ground of superstition, iii. 378. Extent of, x. 236.
Attempts, vain, for the mortification of sin, iii. 544.
Attendance on the word of God, iii. 230.
Attention, how awakened to the gospel, iv. 484. To particular actions necessary, vi. 217.
Attractive, how the sufferings of Christ are, ix. 595. Power of the love of Christ, ix. 608.
Attributes of God, i. 471; goodness, i. 59; wisdom, i. 178-223. As revealed in salvation, i. 191. Of God's being, i. 471. In the acts of his will, i. 472. Some, only known through Christ, ii. 81. Some, only known fully through Christ, ii. 83. All-sufficiency of, ii. 90, viii. 123. Saving knowledge of, in Christ only, ii. 91. How laid out in our behalf, ii. 93.
Augmentation, the love of God not capable of, ii. 30. Of grace, ii. 201.
Augustine, manner of conversion explained in the instance of, iii. 337.
Auricular confession, its accommodation to sinful inclinations, iii. 435.
Austin, his testimony to the Scriptures, iv. 112.
Author of all good, the Holy Spirit is the, iii. 157. Of sanctification, God is the, iii. 367. Of all gracious actings, the Spirit is the, iii. 534. Of the covenant, God is the, ix. 416. And the finisher of grace, God is the, x. 103.
Authoritative instruction of any church not necessary for understanding the Scriptures, iv. 125. Blessing the congregation not, ix. 456.
Authority of Christ to send the Holy Spirit, i. 95, ii. 229. God communicates grace by way of original, ii. 16. The giving of the Spirit by the Father denotes, iii. 107. Of God to be always considered in his commands, iii. 609. Sense of, to be carried into all our transactions, iii. 615. Of the church as to the Scriptures, iv. 30. How communicated to Christ, iv. 402. And right of preaching, iv. 442. In the church, iv. 484, xv. 236. Ministerial, iv. 513, ix. 454, xv. 499. Of God gives efficacy to the word, v. 287. The law has the, of God, vi. 391. Among men, when such as God will own, ix. 210. Opposition to righteous, rendered fruitless, ix. 212. Experimental, sense of, ix. 502. Of Christ, respect of faith to, ix. 621. Of the ancients, xi. 24. Of the magistrate over the conscience denied and refuted, xiii. 369, 409. Royal, in matters ecclesiastical, xiv. 378. The, needful for appointing forms of worship, xv. 43. Of the Scriptures, xvi. 297.
Autographs of Scripture lost, xvi. 353.
Aversation of the mind from God, vi. 182, vii. 412. And fear of suffering, vii. 324.
Awe, religious, excited by the word of God, iv. 98. Of the judgments of God, how duly impressed on the mind, ix. 413.

Baal, the prophets of, iii. 30.
Babylon, or Babel, Romish, her utter destruction, viii. 267. Persecution for religion first arose there, ix. 4. The origin of apostasy from the worship of God to idolatry, ix. 3. Its idolatry in graven images, ix. 4. The name, why transferred to the church of Rome, ix. 4.
Backsliders, recovery of, an act of sovereign grace, i. 454.
Backsliding, issue of, vii. 236.
Bagdad, martyr at, xiii. 148.
Balaam, how a prophet and a sorcerer, iii. 140, 141.
Balance, our own righteousness weighed in the, ii. 188.
Balancing eternal things with present sufferings, vii. 348.
Banishment of ministers from corporations, xiii. 585.
Banqueting-house, what, ii. 44.
Baptism, i. 491, vi. 465. Into the name of Christ, i. 129. Of Christ, the time of his being anointed to his prophetical office, iii. 171, 172. Not regeneration, iii. 216. How it expresses our sanctification, iii. 424. Washes not away sin, iii. 434. Infant, xvi. 258. Two passages of Irenæus on, explained, xvi. 263.
Baptized into the name of Christ, iii. 73. Into the name of the Holy Spirit, iii. 74. All that are, not regenerate, iii. 217.
Barchochab, the false Messiah, xvi. 377.

Barrenness in the knowledge of God, i. 78. Signal, vi. 343. Under the gospel to be guarded against, viii. 33. A sore judgment, ix. 185. How God proceeds in giving men up to it, ix. 187.
Basilius, his testimony to the Scriptures, iv. 112.
Basis of gospel obedience, xi. 400.
Bearing the cross, vii. 349. Of sin by Christ, x. 212, 280, 286. Each other's infirmities, xiii. 70.
Beast, worshipping the, xiii. 136.
Beasts, sinners compared to wild, vi. 320.
Beauty of the person of Christ, i. 159. And comely order of things, i. 370. And glory of Christ, ii. 74. Of the soul, its conformity to God, iii. 429. Of heavenly truth, why not discerned, iv. 176. Of spiritual things must be pressed on the mind, vi. 188. Of spiritual things, vii. 103, xi. 345. Of spiritual things must be apprehended, vii. 475. Of Zion, viii. 282. Of gospel worship, ix. 53; on what it depends, xv. 468.
Beginning and end of the spirit of prophecy, iii. 128. Of holiness small like seed, iii. 388. Of good, not from ourselves, iii. 531. And progress of the church of God, iv. 220. Of justification, v. 31. Of sinful aversation to be prevented, vi. 186. Of spiritual declension, vi. 231. Of the covenant, ix. 417. How Christ was in the, xii. 217. Of great evils to be resisted, xiii. 80.
Being, all, in God, i. 368. Of God, the foundation of religion, iii. 64; little known of it, vi. 66. Of God, think much of the, vii. 367.
Belial, who are designated by that word, ix. 411.
Belief of the gospel, how prevented by sin, vi. 306.
Believers, privileges of, i. 489. Their estimation of Christ, ii. 136. Alone receive the Spirit, iii. 108. Often unacquainted with the nature of holiness, and their interest in it, iii. 373. The only object of sanctification, iii. 406. Their testimony to the Scriptures, iv. 34. In spiritual distresses, vi. 344. God's house, viii. 286. God's consecrated portion, ix. 290. How begotten of God, xii. 241.
Believing in Christ, i. 127. Gives an interest in forgiveness, vi. 507. Justification before, x. 449. State and right of those for whom Christ died, before, x. 465.
Bellarmine, his definition of justification, v. 32.
Benefit and use of the word preached, iii. 389. Of trials, vi. 636.
Benefits received from Christ should induce us to love him, i. 163. Of Christ's offices, to whom they belong, i. 484. Of spiritual thoughts, vii. 363.
Benevolence, love of, i. 155.
Benignity and charity the great resemblances of God, iii. 586. Of gift of healings, iv. 464.
Bent, habitual, against sin, ii. 143.
Bequest of the Spirit by Christ, iii. 156.
Bernard, his account of trust in God, v. 103.
Beza, his manuscript copy of the New Testament, an account of, xvi. 365.
Biblia Polyglotta of London, great usefulness of the, xvi. 348. Opinions prejudicial to the authority of Scripture in its Prolegomena, xvi. 367. Of the translations in it, xvi. 408.
Bilson, Bishop, his opinion on church government, xiii. 407.
Binding of Satan by the power of Christ, xi. 307.
Births, two, implied in regeneration, xi. 553.
Bishop of Rome, whether Peter was, xiv. 292.
Bishops and presbyters, of, iv. 448, xvi. 42. And deacons, xi. 41.
Blasphemous imaginations insinuated by Satan, vii. 369.
Blasphemy of the Jews against the name of Jesus, iii. 17. Against the Holy Ghost, iii. 89, vii. 51. Of, viii. 166.
Blessedness of the angelical state, i. 148. Of God, i. 325.
Blessing God for the privilege of the Spirit, iv. 315. A man's self, vi. 45. The congregation, how it is best done, ix. 456.
Blessings, all, forfeited by sin, iv. 409.
Blindness, natural, of men, iii. 244. Of many about the nature of sin, iii. 545. Of mind, iv. 57. Of heart, vii. 534.
Blood of Christ, eyeing the, ii. 204. Of Christ, purifying virtue of, iii. 436; how it cleanseth from sin, iii. 438. In sacrifice both offered and sprinkled, iii. 440. Of the sacrifice of Christ always efficacious, iii. 440. And cross of Christ, how brought to remembrance, vi. 371. Its value, viii. 20, x. 89. What is meant by drinking the, ix. 620. How the church is purchased with the, xii. 262.
Blossoms in the spring, our thoughts are like, vii. 275.
Boasting and despondency prevented by the same means, iii. 394. And glorying in sin, iii. 454.
Body and soul, union of, i. 229. The glorification of, i. 383. State of, at the resurrection, i. 412. Of Christ, how formed of the substance of the Virgin, iii. 164. The, how depraved, iii. 418. How sanctified, iii. 420. Of Christ, the mystical, iii. 518, x. 598, xi. 339, 544. The metaphorical meaning of the word, vi. 7. Bringing the, into subjection, vi. 61. The church a spiritual, ix. 448. Effect of original sin on the, x. 79. How Christ suffered in his, xii. 490.
Boldness, what, is necessary for walking with God, ii. 110. In approaching God, ii. 122. With God, a privilege of adoption, ii. 221. In our access to God, iv. 293. In the faith, iv. 461. And holy confidence, iv. 512. As to temptation, vi. 124. In sinning, viii. 612.
Bonaventure, his account of science and faith, iv. 101.
Bondage, deliverance from, ii. 166. Frame of spirit, vi. 219. Gendered by the law, vii. 549.
Books of the Old Testament, their character, iv. 107.
Born of God, what it is to be, xi. 563.
Bought by Christ, in what sense we are, x. 362.
Bounty, the love of God a love of, ii. 28. Of Christ to his people, ii. 152. Of God, iii. 109. Expressed in pouring forth the Spirit, iii. 115.
Bow of God, what it is, and how made naked, viii. 112. When made naked, viii. 115.
Branches of supplication, iv. 258. Of original corruption, how they exert themselves, vi. 343.
Breach made by sin, how repaired, i. 373. Made by temptation to be restored, vi. 137. Of peace and friendship with God, xii. 531.
Breaches and differences between God and man, how healed, xi. 232.
Breath of the mouth of God, the Spirit how called, iii. 60. Of life, how God breathed into man, iii. 100.
Brethren of the church, iv. 467.
Britain, inhabitants of, their sacrifices, x. 528. From whence Christian religion came into, xiv. 19, 206, 327.
Brotherly forgiveness required, vi. 494. Want of, ix. 498. Love, xiii. 62.
Bruising Christ's heel, what it is, ix. 316.
Building and foundation work not to be mixed, vi. 564.
Burden, sin the greatest, ii. 260. Of the Lord, whence that name was given to prophecies, iii. 137. And danger of government, iii. 149. The decay of spiritual affection is a, to believers, vii. 458. To the soul, when sin is a, vii. 523.
Burdens, participating in those of others, xiii. 72.
Burning bush, the meaning of, i. 311.
Business, a frequent hinderance to religion, i. 430. And trade, how it should be governed by the au-

thority of God, iii. 615. Proper, how we are diverted from, vi. 36. And society, when to be avoided, vii. 386. Spiritual mindedness to be carried into, vii. 390.
Buxtorf, character of his writings, xvi. 288.
By-opinion, evil fruit of one, ix. 460.

Cabalistical Jews, iv. 217.
Cæcilianus, ordination of, xiii. 158.
Cain and Abel, offerings of, iii. 294.
Calamity, use of faith in, time of public, ix. 490.
Call, what it is to, Jesus Lord, iii. 17. To an office, iv. 439. Of pastors in the church, xvi. 54.
Calling, of effectual, i. 486, xi. 157. To the office of the ministry, xiii. 29.
Callings, worldly, thoughts about, vii. 302. The sins of our, viii. 651.
Calls of providence to be observed, vii. 308. And promises to backsliders, vii. 466.
Canaan's everlasting mountains, how scattered, viii. 94.
Candlestick of the gospel, removal of the, vii. 142. In the tabernacle, what it signified, viii. 295. The church compared to a, xv. 482.
Canon of Scripture complete, iv. 62.
Canonical books of Scripture, none ever lost, iv. 233. Submission required, xv. 160.
Canons of councils about forms of church administrations, xv. 25.
Capacity in the mind, a twofold, with respect to spiritual things, iii. 261.
Captivity of the soul led by sin, vi. 202. Deliverance from, xii. 513.
Care of us, how God evidences his, iii. 626. Of God over his written word, iv. 232. Christ's pastoral, ix. 271. Of the flock committed to ministers, xv. 166.
Careless security, causes of, i. 405. Influence of, vii. 135. Under the word, vii. 540.
Carnal, nothing, in the worship of heaven, i. 256. Mind in all mankind by nature, iii. 288. Confidence, effect of, iv. 179. Boldness, effect of, v. 439. Men, the power of sin over, vi. 159. Wisdom a help to sin, vi. 302. Interest prevailing in religion, vii. 179. Mindedness, what it is, vii. 272. Boldness, vii. 365. Fear, viii. 105, 146. Administration of ordinances, evil of, ix. 448. Weapons not to be used in religion, xiv. 226.
Carnificina Rabbinorum, what so called, xii. 455.
Carthage, church of, vii. 13.
Cases of mortification, vi. 24. Of conscience resolved, ix. 358.
Catechism, the Lesser, i. 467. The Greater, i. 470. Racovian, considered, x. 561, xii. 205. Mr Biddle's preface to his, xii. 59. Mr Biddle's, examined, xii. 85. A, proposed for Socinians, xii. 588. The Independents', or a brief instruction in the worship of God, xv. 445.
Catholic church, xiii. 124. Nature of, xv. 77.
Causes of quarrel taken away by Christ, ii. 169 Of the purification of sin, iii. 436. Ways, and means of understanding the mind of God in his word, iv. 117. Of spiritual ignorance, iv. 174. Of faith, v. 74. Of apostasy, vii. 60. Of deliverance from sin, vii. 552. How they produce their effects, x. 24. Of divisions and schisms, xv. 104.
Celsus, objections of, to Christianity, xiv. 15.
Censures, church, how to be regulated, viii. 68, xiii. 539. Administration of, xvi. 223
Century, state of churches to the end of the second, xv. 277.
Ceremonial law, v. 30.
Ceremonies, of religious, iv. 244. Distinction between words and, as signs, xiii. 451. Mosaical, under the gospel, xv. 145. Of, appointed by the church, xv. 163.
Certainty in hearkening to the articulate and external voice of God, produced by the Spirit, iii. 135. Moral, iv. 49. Various degrees of, iv. 83.
Cessation of vital acts, iii. 291. Of spiritual gifts, iv. 474.
Chaldee paraphrast on Isa. liii., xvi. 387.
Chambers, secret, where Christ is not, what intended by, iii. 186. Of imagery in the church of Rome, viii. 547, 553.
Change and transformation of the soul by the power of faith, i. 221. No, in the divine nature, when Christ assumed the human, i. 327. In the course of our thoughts, vii. 299. Habitual, of the affections, vii. 413. Of affections, vii. 518. The, wrought in men by grace, xi. 95. And mutability ascribed to the affections, xii. 110.
Changes, providential, an argument for universal holiness, ix. 131. Of Providence to be expected, ix. 414.
Characters of divine truth on all divine inspirations, iii. 133. Of God in the Scriptures, iv. 91.
Chariots of salvation, God can make any of his creatures, viii. 111.
Charity, gospel, ix. 256. The rule of judgment, x. 310. How far to be extended, x. 360. How men are esteemed for their, x. 364. Exhortation to, xiii. 503. And faith of Catholics, xiv. 349.
Charles the Fifth, death of, v. 32. Issue of his persecutions, viii. 181.
Chastisement, when judicially forborne by God, iv. 417.
Chastity, spiritual, ii. 146.
Checks and rebukes to sin, vi. 238.
Cheeks, how metaphorically ascribed to Christ, ii. 75.
Cherem, nature of, x. 535.
Cherubims, their typical design, i. 310.
Childhood, the vanity of, iii. 340.
Children, natural love of parents to their, vi. 304. Obedience of, to their parents, xi. 477.
Choice of that which is good for its excellency, vi. 160. Of the service of God, vi. 422. Of God in election, xii. 554.
Christ, person of, i. 3–272, 478, ii. 413. Sonship of, how understood by the ancient church, i. 13–17. Offices of, as prophet, i. 87; as king, i. 96; and as priest, i. 99. The object of divine honour, i. 104. When to be invoked, i. 113. The object of faith, i. 126. Hypostatical union in, i. 223. The life and centre of the glory of heaven, i. 235, vii. 344. His glory, how beheld, i. 287, 375; by faith and by sight, i. 241. Personal excellencies of, i. 323, ii. 59, ix. 140. His glory under the old testament, i. 348. His intimate conjunction with the church, i. 352. Communication of, to believers, i. 360. Recapitulation of all things in, i. 367. Incarnation of, i. 478. How he gives himself to his people, ii. 56. Grace of, boundless, ii. 61. Love of, in what it consists, ii. 118. Values his people in comparison of others, how, ii. 136. Obedience of, ii. 155. A common and public person, ii. 177. God revealed through the person of, ii. 297. Divinity of, ii. 382, xii. 205. Satisfaction of, ii. 419. Is the Lord, what it includes to say, iii. 19. Not the Son of the Holy Ghost, iii. 164. Raised from the dead by the Holy Spirit, iii. 181. How he is our life, iii. 292. Not defiled by sin, iii. 464. How he is made unto us sanctification, iii. 506. The exemplary cause of our holiness, iii. 509. A head of influence to the church, iii. 514. Not proposed in the law, nor his grace communicated by it, vii. 551. The want of him the greatest loss, viii. 35. Scriptural representations of, viii. 36. The name of God in him, viii. 154. How many ways he may be provoked, viii. 154.

His relation to the church as his house, viii. 291. The owner of the church, viii. 297. The builder of the church, viii. 300. The watchman of the church, viii. 302. The indweller of the church, viii. 303. His presence lost by grieving the Spirit, viii. 306. The avenger of the enemies of his church, viii. 308. The presence of, the glory of a people, viii. 460. In our hearts, fits us for the work of God in the world, viii. 467. A hiding-place, ix. 50. Our high priest, his dignity and glory, ix. 64. Priesthood of, the comfort of believers, ix. 66. Coming in providential alterations, an argument for holiness, ix. 138. Authority of, ix. 139, 141. His kindness to and care of his people, ix. 141. Pleads with men in providential events, ix. 142. Coming in his providential kingdom, a lesser day of judgment, ix. 142. Judges the profession of hypocrites, ix. 142. In judgment blinds and hardens wicked men, ix. 143. Exercises judgment among the saints, ix. 145. Pleads with his own people, ix. 146. His coming in the world witnessed to by the holiness of his people, ix. 178. Kingdom of, saints bear witness unto, nature of, ix. 178. The King of his church, ix. 315. Evidences of closing with, ix. 362. His person, how to be addressed in worship, ix. 373. Absolutely, as God incarnate, the immediate and ultimate object of faith and prayer, ix. 374 Death of, immediate object of faith, ix. 603. Undertakes the work of redemption, x. 174. And Adam compared, x. 229. The judge of all, x. 402. Mediation of, xi. 288. Intercession of, xi. 365. Satisfaction of, xii. 419, 619. Headship of, xiv. 361. Liberty conferred by, xv. 4. In what sense the Word, xvi. 429. Not the internal light of the Quakers, xvi. 469, 470.

Christians, the temple of God, ix. 285. How dedicated, or made holy, ix. 287.

Church, built on Christ, i. 33. Opposed by persecution, i. 36; and by heresies, i. 37. Christ undertook the care of the, i. 88. Militant and triumphant, communion of, i. 259, 268. Twilight of the, i. 293. Intimate conjunction of Christ with the, i. 352. Of the, i. 484. Jewish, first fell by idolatry, iii. 43. Head of the, first respected in the new creation, iii. 159. The work of the Holy Spirit towards the, iii. 188. Testimony of the, to the Scriptures, iv. 30. The believing and the professing, iv. 427. Divisions in the, iv. 477. Presence of Christ with, iv. 499; of the Holy Spirit in the, iv. 501. Government of the, iv. 514. Ordinances, vi. 465. Primitive, its conduct with regard to offenders, vii. 13. Government, viii. 49, xv. 187; an essay for the practice of, viii. 43. Of Christ, what it is, viii. 286. How related to Christ, viii. 297. Testimony of the, neither the only nor the chief reason of belief, viii. 497. Its beauty, viii. 569. A bloody image of, in the church of Rome, viii. 571. Its rule and discipline, viii. 571. Catholic, what, viii. 574, xiii. 136. Danger and solitariness of the, an argument for the help of God, ix. 284. Visible, ever preserved in the world, ix. 311, xiii. 125. Fellowship, rules of, xiii. 55. Of Rome no church of Christ, xiii. 115. Departure from a, when blamable, xiii. 120. Several acceptations of the word, xiii. 124. Visible, xiii. 125. Catholic, xiii. 136. Of England, xiii. 181. Falsely asserted, that, being before the Scriptures, it gives them authority, xiv. 299. Of Rome no safe guide, xiv. 488. Of a national, xiv. 520. Definition of a, xv. 480. Constitution of a, xv. 486. Duty of the, to ministers, xv. 502. True nature of a gospel, xvi. 11.

Churches, how at first founded by the Holy Ghost, iii. 21. Gathering the, iv. 442. Their communion in primitive times a means of discountenancing heretics, viii. 171. God's dealings with sinful, viii. 600. Why instituted by Christ, ix. 262. When filled with love, beautiful and glorious, ix. 268. Particular, when in danger, ix. 313. Causes and means of their protection, ix. 315. Where first planted, xv. 203. Congregational, alone suited to the ends of Christ, xv. 302. What sort of, the disciples of Christ should join, xv. 334. Duty of, to each other, xv. 528. The communion of, xvi. 183.

Circuits of the Jewish priests, xiii. 17.

Circumcision with Christ, ii. 179. Of the heart, iii. 324, 476. Initial seal of the covenant, xvi. 259.

Circumscription of God to places, xii. 96.

Circumspection, neglect of, vi. 247.

Citizens of London, advice to, xiii. 587.

Clemens Alexandrinus, his testimony to the Scriptures, iv. 111.

Clemens, epistle of, its antiquity, xi. 27.

Clergy, of the Protestant, xiv. 542. Ambition of the, xv. 198.

Cloud, the sign of the presence of God in the temple, ix. 289. Metaphorically applied to the case of converts, ix. 293.

Cogitative faculty, the, vii. 520.

Cognation and alliance of words in Scripture, iv. 215.

Coins, Judaical, xvi. 390.

Collation of graces on the believer, ii. 203. Of the Spirit on believers, ii. 228, iv. 394. Of the Spirit on Christ, iii. 173. Of grace by God, vi. 71. Of gifts on Christ, xii. 214.

Colonizing, a simile from, vi. 112.

Comfort derived from the words of Christ, ii. 237. Of spiritual life depends on mortification of sin, vi. 21. Of a promise, when we may take the, vi. 77. How withheld from Christ in his agony, ix. 533. Of uprightness, xi. 84.

Comforter, the Holy Spirit a, ii. 225, iii. 409, iv. 355, 379. Properties of his office as, iv. 368. To whom, iv. 379.

Comforts of the Holy Ghost, ii. 259. Earthly, imperfection of, ix. 412.

Coming to Christ, twofold, i. 396. Of Christ in the flesh, the first and principal promise of the Old Testament, iii. 23. Of the Spirit, iii. 118. To Christ by faith, v. 293. Of Christ, how to prepare for it, ix. 398.

Command, respect to the, the formal reason of obedience, iii. 605. Why love is called a new, ix. 264. And decree of God, how connected, x. 48.

Commands of God, how possible to us, iii. 262. Of God, our duty in regard to the, iii. 384. Consistent with promises, iii. 384, xi. 586. Of the covenant, what they respect, iii. 492, 606. Of duty, when not grievous, iii. 508. Divine, positive, iii. 523. Of God, holiness necessary from the, iii. 604. Obedience to, proportioned to our ability, iii. 616. Of holiness, just and equal, iii. 624. For holiness, why multiplied, iii. 626. Not declarative of God's will, but our duty, x. 300. Of God, in what sense revealed and explained by Christ, xii. 360. Of keeping and obeying them, xii. 564.

Comminations conditional, how fulfilled, x. 366. And threatenings conditional, xi. 646.

Commission of the apostles, iv. 439.

Committing our souls to Christ in death, i. 280. Ourselves wholly to God for protection from sin, vi. 175.

Common-prayer, lawfulness of joining in worship by the, xvi. 248.

Communication, mutual, of the natures of Christ, i. 232, 233. Of Christ to believers, i. 360. Mutual, of good, ii. 9. Of spiritual things from Christ by the Spirit, iii. 196. Of holiness by the inter-ces-

sion of Christ, iii. 506. Spiritual, frequency of, xiii. 69.
Communications, how made in glory, i. 414. In a way of grace through Christ, iii. 515.
Communicative property of God, his goodness is the, i. 179. Love of God, i. 334.
Communion of the natures of Christ, i. 232, 233. Of the church militant and triumphant, i. 259, 268. Of saints, i. 492, ix. 266. With God, ii. 5. Distinctly with Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, ii. 9. With the Holy Spirit, ii. 222. By the gospel, iii. 199. How not obstructed by sin, iii. 465. Holiness necessary to our, with God, iii. 573. With God, neglect of, vi. 182, 298. And consolations of the Holy Ghost, vi. 372. With Christ, vii. 344. With Christ in his death, vii. 528. Value of, viii. 36. Of, in the church of Rome, xiv. 143, 476. Rule of, established by Christ, xv. 143. In parochial assemblies, xv. 344. Of churches, xvi. 183.
Commutation with Christ, how made, ii. 193. Between Christ and believers, v. 34.
Commutative justice of God, x. 501.
Compact between the Father and the Son, xi. 299, xii. 496.
Companies and societies, how they should be governed by the authority of God, iii. 616.
Compassion and pity of Christ, i. 166, i. 335; boundless, ii. 61; to men, iii. 177. And kindness to others, the fruit of election, iii. 600. For the souls of men, viii. 655. To the souls of men, necessary in ministers, ix. 455.
Compensation in other duties sometimes the plea of neglect, vi. 230. For sacrifices, God gives us a, vii. 329.
Complacency of soul in beholding the glory of Christ, i. 292. Love of, i. 155, ii. 25. Of mind in spiritual things, vii. 270. Of soul, from whence it arises, vii. 283. In and after duty, what it proves, vii. 292.
Complaints in prayer of sin derided by men, but acceptable with God, iii. 558. All our time not to be spent in, vi. 566.
Compliances, sinful, viii. 144.
Complication of temptations, vi. 99.
Composing of Scripture the work of the Spirit, iv. 187. The Spirit not promised for the, of prayers for others, iv. 339. Prayers lawful, iv. 347.
Composition cannot be made with sin, vi. 11, 177.
Composure of mind, holy, i. 337.
Comprehension of the mind of God by Christ, i. 91. What, the prophets had of divine revelations, iii. 131. Of grace and mercy, iv. 284. Of the harmony of grace, how attained, v. 51.
Compromise of religion for worldly interest, vii. 179.
Compunction for sin, v. 74.
Computations, chronological, uncertainty of, iv. 199, 221. Difficulty and hazard of making, ix. 510.
Concatenation of graces, iii. 392. Of the acts of grace, xi. 151.
Conceit, self, evil of, iv. 183.
Conception of Christ, how ascribed to the Holy Ghost, ii. 65, iii. 166. In the womb instantaneous, iii. 165. Of sin in the heart, vi. 215, 251.
Conceptions, first, of sin, to be resisted, vi. 62.
Concernments, greatness of spiritual, iv. 415.
Concomitant liberty, x. 586.
Concupiscence strengthens by age, iii. 342. Inordinate, of corrupt nature, x. 85.
Concurrence of the Spirit with our exertions, vi. 75. Of God with second causes, x. 24. Of Scripture rules in a call to the work of the ministry, xiii. 35.
Condemnation, self, for sin, vi. 547.
Condemnatory judgment of men, a rule for, xi. 93.
Condescension and love of Christ in becoming a mediator, i. 323. Of the Holy Spirit, ii. 263, iv. 358, 368. Of God to be admired, vi. 523. Of God in his covenant, ix. 428. Of Christ in assuming our nature, ix. 610.
Condition, the sad, of those who contemn the Spirit, ii. 255; who have not the Spirit, ii. 273. Of all unregenerate persons, the same, iii. 215. In this world, our, proves the necessity of holiness, iii. 641. And state of the church regarded in Scripture, iv. 189. Meaning and use of the word, v. 114. Of life, temptations from, vi. 120. Spiritual, Christ only judge of our, vi. 542. An afflicted, how made comfortable, viii. 102. Of the new covenant not said to be required, but absolutely promised, x. 236, 255. Of promises and intentions of doing good, x. 243. Of faith, none to be assigned, x. 254. A necessity upon a, as it respects the punishment of sin, x. 607.
Conditions of justification, what are not, v. 78. Prescription of, x. 104. God's promises do not depend on any, in believers, xi. 237. Of communion with the church of England unscriptural, xv. 143.
Condonation of pardon, vi. 407. Gracious, x. 444.
Confession of sin, affectionate, i. 456. Of sin, ix. 597.
Confessions of faith, the ancient and constant practice of the church, viii. 203. Of faith, subscription to, xiii. 514.
Confidence, what, is necessary for walking with God, ii. 110. And boldness, some have, in their condition, iii. 453. Carnal, effect of, iv. 179. Of acceptance, iv. 294. In God, v. 101. Influence of groundless, vii. 135. Vain, vii. 137. In God in the day of evil, viii. 93. Vain, to be guarded against, viii. 645. Sinful, xv. 104.
Confirmation of the moral law by Christ, i. 136. Episcopal, its nature, viii. 587. Of faith, ix. 527.
Conflict against sin, i. 461. Between corruptions and convictions, iii. 354. Spiritual success of, iii. 646. Of sin and conscience, vii. 101. Spiritual, continual, vii. 171. With sin, vii. 530. With sin, continuance of, vii. 556.
Confluence of trouble on Christ in his ministry, iii. 175.
Conformity to Christ, i. 169, iii. 188. To the world, iii. 254, vi. 147, viii. 651. To God, the beauty of the soul, iii. 429. To God, the honour of the soul, iii. 430. To God, its nature, iii. 478. To the death of Christ, wherein it consists, iii. 561. To God our only glory, iii. 572. To Christ, endeavours for, vi. 85. To the world, evil of, ix. 512. To the death of Christ, ix. 579. To God, how produced, xi. 381. In parochial assemblies, xv. 344.
Confusion among men, from whence it proceeds, i. 297. Of worldly things, vii. 369.
Congregation, blessing the, how it is best done, ix. 456. Of the great, among the Jews, xvi. 404.
Congregational churches, constitution of, xv. 302.
Congregations, particular, xiii. 53.
Conjectural emendation of Scripture, iv. 218.
Conjugal relation of Christ to his church, ii. 54.
Conjunction of Christ with the church, i. 352. Natural, i. 355. Mystical, i. 356. Federal, i. 357.
Connection of justification and holiness, v. 53. Between sin and destruction, vi. 54.
Conquest of sin, guard against the, vi. 186. What is included in it, vi. 315.
Conquests, occasional, of sin no mortification, vi. 26. Made by Christ on behalf of his people, vi. 145.
Conscience, distress of, we should invoke Christ in, i. 113. How the gospel is applied to the, ii. 210. Must be awakened, iii. 239, 342. Under the dominion of God, iv. 96. Relief of, under conviction, v. 7. When falsely quieted, vi. 37. Load-

ing, with guilt, vi. 56. Christ speaks peace to, vi. 71. Reflex acts of, vi. 233. Sins wasting, vi. 344. Voice of, as to the guilt of sin, vi. 387. The, and the law of God, unison of, vi. 390. Contentment with present spiritual attainments inconsistent with, vii. 452. Awakened, seeking peace in external duties, ix. 86. Cases of, resolved, ix. 358. Interveniency of, by special sins, ix. 557. Liberty of, xiii. 543. Persecution for, xiv. 226.

Consciences, fear of wounding, vi. 107. Of mankind bear testimony to the justice of God, x. 519. Of men, forcing of, xiii. 438.

Consecration of persons by anointing, iv. 391.

Consent between the will of God and the will of Christ, i. 231. Of the will to spiritual things, how produced, iii. 494. Of the fathers, its proper use, iv. 227. Of the will, faith includes, v. 101. Of the will to sin twofold, vi. 252, vii. 512. The soul gives its, to the tenor of the law, vi. 390. Of mankind, universal, as to the justice of God, x. 517. To sin in unregenerate men, full and whole, xi. 512.

Consequences of the withdrawment of Christ, i. 392. Of the miraculous conception of Christ, iii. 167. Falsely charged on the doctrine of the gospel, iii. 577.

Consequents and antecedents to be observed in reading the Scriptures, iv. 201.

Consideration of grace, the true spring of all spiritual diligence, iii. 395. Of the nature and end of sin subservient to mortification, iii. 565. Rational, iv. 83. And observation of ourselves in reference to prayer, iv. 320. Of God, necessary to right views of justification, v. 13. When particularly useful, vi. 595. Due, of God, ix. 548. Faculty of, xi. 108.

Considerations, general, on justification, v. 7. Preserving, vi. 144.

Consistency of truth with itself, i. 83. Between effectual grace and our own endeavours, iii. 94.

Consolation from fellowship with Christ, ii. 45. Of believers, its adjuncts, ii. 249. Nature of, ii. 250. From the continuance of grace, iii. 375. To whom it belongs, iii. 409. Administered by the word of God, iv. 99. Guilt destructive of, vi. 341. To be expected only from God, vi. 422. To believers by the convictions of the word, x. 385; not marred, but promoted by the doctrine of their perseverance, xi. 578.

Consonancy of things revealed with themselves, iv. 85.

Consonants of the Hebrew language, xvi. 394.

Constancy of the view of Christ in heaven, i. 378. Of the love of God, ii. 30, xi. 396. In holy duties a necessary consequent of a principle of grace, iii. 486. The necessity of, in obedience, iii. 500. In reading of the Scriptures, iv. 201. In the mortification of sin necessary, vi. 21. And resolution in actions, vi. 171. In keeping the soul in a universally holy frame, vi. 185. In prayer, vi. 358. Of God, xi. 280.

Constantine, edict of, for toleration, viii. 185. The emperor, a saying of, xiii. 473.

Constitution of spiritual life, i. 437. No excuse for sin, iii. 422. Sin in the, vi. 60. Divine, sin punished according to the, x. 591.

Constitutions, gospel, in case of heresy, viii. 202. Apostles', a counterfeit, xi. 32.

Constraint, when to be put on the mind, vii. 386.

Consuming fire, God is a, x. 553, 603.

Contemperation of the holiness of God, iii. 571.

Contemplation of the glory of God in heaven, i. 222. Heavenly, the mind must be fitted for, i. 336. An effect of love, iii. 585. Quiet repose of, in prayer, iv. 328. Of heaven a duty, vii. 341.

Contemplative power of the mind, iii. 280. Prayer, what so called, iv. 334.

Contempt cast on God by sin, i. 184. And reproach of the Spirit of God, ii. 254, viii. 613. Of regeneration, iii. 242. Of the gospel, iii. 265. Of the world from the consideration of electing love, iii. 600. Of danger, vi. 209. Of the things of the gospel, vii. 232. Of gospel light, its influence, vii. 354. Of worldly things, when proper, vii. 397. Of the love of God, vii. 451. Who cast, on Christ, vii. 553. Of the people in churches, xv. 104.

Contention, fruitless, people sometimes given up to, viii. 155. How best prevented, xiv. 313.

Contentment, gracious, vi. 76. With our lot, viii. 94. Worldly, not to be unduly valued, ix. 414.

Contentments, worldly, how rendered undesirable, vi. 290.

Contest in the world about Christ, how managed by both parties, iii. 184. Of heaven and earth, object of, vii. 395.

Contests about religion, xiv. 48.

Contingency in actions, viii. 13. The nature of, x. 22. Two sorts of, xii. 128. Future, how known to God, xii. 130.

Continuance and carrying on of the oblation of Christ, ii. 168. Of ordinary gifts of the Spirit, iv. 486. In waiting on God necessary, vi. 616. In prayer, effect of, vii. 295. Of sufferings, vii. 350. In sin, effect of, vii. 511. Of the gospel with a people, viii. 23. Of the ministry in the church, how provided for, ix. 432. In saintship, xi. 99. Of the love and favour of God a security for perseverance, xi. 120. In fellowship, xi. 599.

Continuation of the work of the Holy Ghost in the church, iii. 154. Of justification, v. 143. Of a church-state, on what it depends, xv. 248, 327.

Contract, how an earnest secures its fulfilment, iv. 408.

Contradiction, no, between the light of nature and the word of God, xiii. 466.

Contradictions of the heart of man, vi. 173. Popish, xiv. 110.

Contrariety to God, sin stands in, vi. 399.

Contrivances, sinful, vi. 22. For persecution, viii. 148.

Control which sin exercises over the gospel, vi. 309. How God does, great actions, viii. 117.

Controversy about justification, v. 3. State of, respecting saints' perseverance, xi. 77. Between God and sinners, how terminated, xi. 398.

Conventicles, of the bill against, xiii. 583.

Conversation of others, observation of, iii. 347. Of ministers to be observed, xiii. 56.

Conversion, when improperly ascribed to ourselves, iii. 225. Rendered difficult from sinful habits, iii. 298. Not an act of our own will, iii. 308. The work of God, iii. 320. Things preparatory to, iii. 328. Manner of, explained in the instance of Augustine, iii. 337. Work of the Spirit in, iii. 389. By the power of the word, iv. 94. Of the world by the apostles, iv. 442. How necessary for the unregenerate, vi. 35. Of souls to be laboured for, ix. 460. How men are prepared for, x. 123. To God, x. 129. Preaching to, xv. 104.

Conveyances, executive, of God's immutable purposes, i. 441. Of grace, what are, xi. 231.

Conviction of sin by the Spirit, ii. 95. Of sin, antecedaneous to conversion, iii. 233, v. 74. Nature of, iii. 350, iv. 96, vi. 270. Of the defilement of sin necessary to its purification, iii. 442. Of sin, how made effectual, iv. 365. Relief of conscience under, v. 7. Concomitants of, v. 74. Effects of, v. 77. Without conversion, vi. 38. Of sin, its design, vii. 299. State of, vii. 446. Necessary to faith, ix. 359.

Convictions of sin, how lost, iii. 234. How used and abused, iii. 348, 415. The power of, how they evidence duty, iii. 486. Of unbelievers by two ways, iv. 130. Danger of breaking off from, vi. 345. From the power of the word of God, vii. 29. Force put on the mind by, vii. 280. Sharp, influence of, vii. 291. When improperly satisfied, vii. 426. Loss of, vii. 511.
Co-operation, our, with grace, x. 130.
Copies, first, of original Scriptures, xvi. 353.
Copy of the law preserved in the synagogue, xvi. 354.
Corinth, church of, xiii. 181.
Corporeal, no, presence of Christ in the supper, ix. 572.
Corporeity, or figure of God, xii. 101.
Corpse, the relation of Aquinas concerning a, viii. 23.
Correctio Scribarum, the, xvi. 401.
Correction for sin, vi. 52. For instruction, what it is, xii. 437.
Corrective justice of God, x. 517.
Corrupt affections, seductive power of, iv. 177, 178. Reasonings, sin takes advantage from, vi. 230. Churches, separation from, xv. 77. Translations of Scripture, xvi. 406.
Corrupted nature of man, i. 477. Common notions of good and evil remaining in, iii. 345. Reason debases the glorious mysteries of the gospel, iii. 371. Reason, how the gospel is unsuited to, vii. 127.
Corruption of mind, iii. 242. Of the mind expressed by darkness, iii. 248. In infancy, iii. 338. Of the text of Scripture, iv. 217. Provocation of, vi. 133. Of the simplicity of the gospel, vi. 293. Must not be allowed to be predominant, vii. 387. What must be done in case of its prevalency, ix. 390. Of nature, x. 68. Of church discipline, xv. 104.
Councils, assemblies of, i. 10. General, xiii. 143.
Counsels of God, the person of Christ the foundation of, i. 54. Of the wise, why so frequently confounded, ii. 115.
Course and custom of sin, how produced, iii. 224. And purpose of the soul opposed by sin, vi. 196. In sin to be avoided, vii. 230.
Courts, human, the management of punishment in, from divine appointment, x. 607. Of review, xvi. 195.
Covenant, old, commands of, iii. 606. Of grace and that of works, difference between the, v. 275, x. 236. The new, an evidence of forgiveness with God, vi. 470; its rise and tenor, viii. 435. Everlasting, the support of believers under distress, ix. 409. Nature of the first, vi. 472. New, ordered in all things, ix. 418. Confirmation of the new, by Christ, ix. 418, x. 90. Between the Father and the Son, x. 168. New, with whom made, x. 236. Old, how weak, x. 237. The new, secures perseverance, xi. 205.
Coveting spiritual gifts, iii. 16.
Covetous men, thoughts of, vii. 277.
Creation, meditation on, useful, i. 307. Work of, i. 474. Ascribed to Christ, ii. 393. Ascribed to the Holy Spirit, ii. 402. Work of the Spirit in the old, iii. 52. Of man, iii. 99. How effected by the Holy Spirit, iii. 125. New, the work whereby God designed to glorify himself, iii. 157; assigned distinctly to each person in the Trinity, iii. 93, 157. Of the body of Christ out of the substance of the Virgin compared with the creation of the first man out of the earth, iii. 163. Old and new, compared, iii. 207. And providence, how God is known by, iv. 87. Law of, vi. 430. Conversion, a new, x. 136.
Creature, new, what it is, iii. 220. Supported and preserved by the Spirit, iii. 531.
Creatures above and below, why called God's host, iii. 96. Senseless, the wrath of God on, viii. 109. Inanimate, serve the design of God in delivering his people, viii. 110. Intelligent, how distinguished, xii. 487.
Credibility, motives of, in the Scriptures, iv. 20.
Creditor, how God is a, xii. 514.
Criteria in the books of the Old Testament, iv. 107.
Critical observations on Scripture, iv. 216. Their use and abuse, xvi. 353.
Crookedness of sin, iii. 427.
Cross of Christ, the doctrine of the, does not encourage licentiousness, v. 375. How brought into the heart, vi. 19. Must be kept in view, vi. 250. Power of the, vii. 398. Signing with the, viii. 587. Reveals the justice of God, x. 547. Christ to be loved for his death on the, x. 622.
Crucifixion of the flesh, iii. 540. Of sin, vi. 30.
Cunning and craft of indwelling sin, xi. 106.
Cup, the, sacrilegiously taken from the people, ix. 524.
Curiosity, profane, iv. 217. Curiosity of mind, vain, vii. 134.
Curse, death a, to the wicked, i. 411. Of God, nature of, i. 477, x. 173, 280. Of sin, not removed by human learning, ii. 114.
Cushan, tents of, viii. 98.
Customariness draws off the mind from right performance of duty, vi. 237.
Cyril of Alexandria, his excesses, i. 11.
Cyrus, how anointed of God, iii. 103, 149.

Damianus, preaching of, xiv. 99.
Damnation for original sin, whether any under, x. 77.
Danger of mistakes about regeneration, iii. 228. Of mortifying sin without faith, vi. 33. Of indwelling sin, vi. 52. Contempt of, vi. 209. Of sin, vi. 314. Of concealment of sin, vii. 327. Of worldly things, vii. 403. Of offences, ix. 352.
Daniel, his excellent qualifications, viii. 345.
Darkening of the mind by temptation, vi. 109.
Darkness, universal, with regard to God, i. 297. A natural, in all men, i. 401. And blindness, the state of nature, iii. 244. Spiritual, nature of, iii. 246, iv. 97. Objective and subjective, iii. 247. Spiritual, works by enmity, iii. 437. Of mind, iv. 58. Of the mind gives advantage to temptation, vi. 258. Day of, lay not up sad provision for, vi. 583. Spiritual, a cause of apostasy, vii. 102.
David, family of, what promises were made to it, iv. 255.
Dawnings and first-fruits of perfection in grace, ii. 9.
Days, evil, as to Christian profession, xi. 79.
Days-man, Christ fitted to be a, ii. 69.
Deacons, call of, ix. 434; and bishops, xi. 41. Nature of the office of, xv. 506, xvi. 143. Deacons' wives, xvi. 150. Have no right to preach, xvi. 151.
Dead, of Christ in the state of the, iii. 180. In sin, men said to be, iii. 286. Works, what they are, and whence so called, iii. 291. Resurrection of Christ from the, xii. 560.
Deadness to ordinances, ix. 512.
Dealings of God against sin, danger of withstanding, vi. 48. Of God with his people, vii. 400.
Death, invoking Christ at the time of, i. 118. How it may be encountered cheerfully, i. 280. Of sin in us, ii. 99. And life, natural and spiritual, compared, iii. 282. Spiritual, nature of, iii. 283. Natural, in what it consists, iii. 284. Of Christ, application of it to us, iii. 560. Applied to the mortification of sin, iii. 561. Of Christ, causes of the, v. 188. Putting sin to, vi. 8. Temptation leads to, vi. 215. Our liability to, vii. 378. How it is subdued by Christ, ix. 489. Of Christ, how carried about with us, ix. 619. The punish-

ment of sin, x. 79. Of Christ, x. 87. 425; effect of it, vi. 490; to whom it is revealed, x. 238. Of Christ, causes, ends, and fruits of, x. 157, 200. Of Christ, and Spirit of grace, causes of faith, x. 252. How tasted by Christ, x. 349. Unto sin and in sin, x. 351. Whether every one is bound to believe that the death of Christ is for him, x. 404. Testimonies that the death of Christ was for believers, xi. 56.
Debasing spiritual things, vii. 473.
Debt of sin, how discharged, i. 209. Sin a, xii. 514. Right of, x. 567.
Debts, how sins are, x. 574.
Decay, recovery from, i. 432. In grace and holiness, iii. 404. Spiritual, vi. 282. Of holiness, causes of, vii. 196. Spiritual, to be guarded against, vii. 354. In spiritual affections, vii. 456. Of the principle of grace, how recovered from, ix. 368. In churches, ix. 510. In religion, how discernible, xv. 198.
Deceit, self, vi. 505. Of the heart, we should be sensible of, vii. 246. Of sin, vii. 507.
Deceitfulness of the heart, vi. 172. Of sin, vi. 211.
Deceits about holiness, iii. 478. Of Satan, who are exposed to, as it respects the Scriptures, iv. 62.
Decii, religion of the, x. 528.
Declarative truth, its objects, i. 82.
Declaratory tenders of gospel righteousness, ii. 175.
Declension in religion displeasing to Christ, vii. 459. Grieving to the Holy Spirit, vii. 459. Of religion, use of faith in a season of, ix. 510. How it offends and scandalizes the world, ix. 513.
Declensions, gradual, in grace, i. 444. Habitual, of professors, vi. 281.
Decline of the vigour of the affections, vi. 221.
Decree of God requires holiness, iii. 592. Determinate, as to divine judgments, viii. 619. Of God, what it is, ix. 252. A difference between those things which are necessary by a, and those which are so from the divine nature, x. 607.
Decrees of God, i. 473, x. 14. Why denied, x. 12. Immutable, xi. 137.
Decretory judgments, viii. 616.
Dedication to God, iii. 370, ix. 237. Of persons to God by anointing, iv. 391.
Deep things of God, how searched by the Spirit, iii. 80. Truth lies, iv. 182. Some parts of Scripture are, iv. 194. Apprehension of the evil of sin, vi. 369. The mystery of forgiveness is, vi. 410. Sense of the evil of sin, vi. 548. Sorrow for sin, vi. 549. Sense of the indwelling power of sin, vi. 550.
Defect in grace, influence of a sense of, i. 118.
Defection of churches, in what it originates, iii. 43. From pure religion predicted, xiv. 534.
Defects in reformation of life, iii. 240.
Defence of the truth, to whom committed, i. 6. How sin puts forth its deceit in its own, vi. 229.
Defensative about church government, viii. 43.
Defilement of our best duties, ii. 171. Of sin, iii. 422. Nature of, iii. 426.
Deformity of soul by sin, v. 21.
Degeneracy in church discipline, xv. 123.
Degenerate Christians, their conduct, vii. 353.
Degree, a good, what it is, xvi. 148.
Degrees of the manifestation of the glory of Christ, i. 387. Of the prophetic spirit, iii. 134. Of grace and holiness, iii. 204, vii. 448. Of the habit of holiness, iii. 476. Of assent to evidence, iv. 50. Of knowledge, iv. 147. Of temptation, vi. 118. Of the deceit of sin, vi. 215. Of the power and prevalency of sin, vii. 238. Of spiritual mindedness, vii. 272. Various, of punishment, x. 607. Honorary, the origin of, xvi. 97.
Deity of Christ, testimonies to, xii. 204. Of the Holy Ghost, xii. 333.
Delay in mortifying sin dangerous, vii. 463. Of punishment, x. 607.
Deliberation, sins of, xi. 539.
Delight, ineffable, between the Father and the Son, i. 56. When the affections cleave to Christ with, i. 403. Of fellowship with Christ, ii. 44. Of Christ in believers ii. 117. In the love of Christ, ii. 118. In spiritual things, iii. 238. In sin, aggravation of, iii. 454. An effect of love, iii. 586. In God, iv. 290. In ordinances, decline of, vi. 283. In obedience, vi. 551, ix. 564. And pleasure from tasting the word, vii. 30. In thoughts of God, vii. 362. In religious duties, vii. 423. Delight in God proved by our walking with him, ix. 99. And diligence in ordinances, want of, ix. 511. In Christ, who, ix. 537.
Deliverance from spiritual decays, i. 452. From corrupt affections, iv. 184. When properly valued, iv. 464. From sin, desire of, vi. 59. Extent of our, vi. 646. From sin must not be dubious, vii. 556. Of Essex county and committee, viii. 77. Appointed season of, viii. 84. Of the people of God, how wrought, viii. 116. Often beyond the view of sense and reason, viii. 121.
Deliverances means of conviction, iii. 347. No difficulties, no, viii. 18.
Delusion of presumption, i. 420. Who are exposed to, as it respects the Scriptures, iv. 62.
Demerit of sin proportionably punished, i. 186. Of man, viii. 20.
Demiourgos of the world, x. 32.
Departure of Christ from his disciples, ii. 224. Of the Spirit of God from Saul, iii. 57; from some persons, iii. 119; from a people, iv. 418. Blamable, from a church, xiii. 120. From the church of Rome, clamour about, xiv. 33.
Dependence, mutual, i. 361. Of all things on God, immediate, i. 369. On grace and providence compared, iii. 529. Of one doctrine upon another, iv. 188. On God, viii. 80.
Depositum of the new creature, iii. 482.
Depravation of mind, iii. 242. Of the mind by sin, in what it consists, iii. 248. Of nature discovered by conversion, iii. 328. Of the mind, how removed, iii. 332. Of nature to be acknowledged in prayer, iv. 279. Of nature universal, v. 26. Of reason, vii. 127.
Depravity of the affections, vii. 411.
Depths on account of sin, what they are, vi. 332.
Desertion, Christ to be invoked in seasons of, i. 113. Spiritual, its nature, iii. 121. Penal, caused the agony of Christ, ix. 534, 587.
Designation of the apostles, iv. 442.
Desire of union and enjoyment the first vital act of love, i. 152. Of deliverance from sin, iii. 546.
Desires, holy, satisfied only in heaven, i. 244. Of heaven, what they ought to be, iii. 583. Of sincere, to pray, iv. 344. Of the heart acceptable to God, vi. 51. Earnest, for spiritual things, vii. 392. In God, falsely said not to be fulfilled, x. 25.
Despair, xii. 493.
Despite to the Holy Spirit, ii. 254.
Despondency, no ground for, vi. 269. From conviction of sin, vi. 376. How removed, vii. 443. Refreshment under, vii. 464. Deliverance from, vii. 496.
Despotism, no, in the church, ix. 433.
Destruction of Satan and his interest by Christ, i. 216. Of sin necessary, iii. 463. Eternal, danger of, vi. 54. Of a sinful people, sealing the, viii. 155. Inevitable, of a nation, when at hand how known, ix. 273.
Determinate cause of contingent things, xii. 130.
Determination of the will as a free principle by grace, iii. 334. Of God, how formed, xi. 142.
Detestation of sin, when particularly necessary, vi.

71. Of sin must be cherished, vi. 227. Of sin connected with pardon, vi. 397. Of the gospel, avowal of, vii. 234. Of lust, vii. 524.
Devil, how man put himself into the power of the, i. 187. Destroyed, i. 216. Sin of man worse than that of the, i. 425.
Devils and angels, faith of, v. 82. How they agree and differ, xii. 487.
Devoted to God, what things were, x. 534.
Devotion, natural, iv. 345. Of Catholics falsely said to transcend that of Protestants, xiv. 43, 321.
Die, to, cheerfully and comfortably, i. 283. Daily to, what it is, ix. 337. For another, what it means in Scripture, x. 288.
Died for us, how Christ, ii. 445; not for reprobates, x. 245.
Difference of the glory of the body of Christ and those of saints in heaven, i. 245. Of beholding the glory of Christ by faith and by sight, i. 374. Between receiving doctrines notionally and really, iii. 260. Between the life of Adam in innocency and the life of grace in Christ, iii. 286. In sins, iii. 293. In duties, iii. 294. Of regeneration and sanctification, iii. 387. Moral, among men, iii. 415. Between a spiritual life and a life of moral virtue, iii. 467, 473. About free-will stated, iii. 495. In religion before the entrance of sin, and afterwards, iii. 526. Between believers and unregenerate men, iv. 388. Of the church under the old and new testament, iv. 421. Between spiritual gifts and saving grace, iv. 425. Between occasional impressions on the affections and the spiritual renovation of them, vii. 417. Immutable, of things in themselves, x. 559. Of persons to be avoided, xiii. 80.
Differences in operations and effects of the same Spirit, iii. 59. In disposition previous to regeneration, iii. 214. In degrees of graces, iii. 388. In the church, why permitted, iv. 440. In manner of stating the doctrine of justification, v. 62. In religion, their nature and continuance, xiv. 486, 487.
Difficulties overcome by the obedience of Christ, i. 340. Of faith, iii. 458. In duties, iii. 500. About faith, how solved, v. 87. And discouragements, effects of, vi. 243. No, no deliverances, viii. 18. Of the ministry great, ix. 451.
Difficulty and necessity of mortification, iii. 546. Of sinning, vi. 272. And obscurity of spiritual things, vii. 285. Times of, how to be regarded, vii. 375.
Diffusion of the substance of God through the creation, alleged, xii. 98.
Dignity of the human nature of Christ, i. 228. Of human nature, holiness is the, iii. 581. Of professors, in what it consists, iii. 581. Ecclesiastical, use of, iv. 186. Of the person of Christ, ix. 479.
Dijudication of spirits, iv. 471.
Dilemma to Universalists, x. 234, 237, 240, 249, 254, 273, 288.
Ditigence in study of Scripture necessary, i. 314. In duty, how promoted, iii. 394. Required in the exercise of grace, iii. 405. In searching our hearts, iv. 181. Necessary in the acquisition of truth, iv. 182. In reading the Scriptures, iv. 306, 321. Spiritual, iv. 519. And watchfulness, how promoted by prayer, vi. 227. In waiting on God, vi. 612. Spiritual, necessary, vii. 385. In ordinances, want of, ix. 511.
Diocesan bishops, xi. 49. Churches, of, xv. 88. Not found in Scripture, xvi. 43.
Diogenes, sophism proposed to, xii. 60.
Dipping in baptism, xvi. 266.
Direction in duty from the Holy Spirit, iii. 554. In the proper course of living to God contained in Scripture, iv. 28. For mortification of sin, vi. 83.
Disability of man to atone for sin, ii. 97. For spiritual things, iii. 288, 290. For duty, vi. 337. For duty the effect of despondency, vi. 377. Of mind for holy thoughts, vii. 383.
Disappointment and defeat of Satan, i. 218. In expectation, iv. 414. And surprisal, ix. 411.
Disappointments, their use, vi. 265. Spiritual, danger from, vi. 571. As to the proper seasons of spiritual thoughts, vii. 306.
Discernment, spiritual, of the beauty and amiableness of grace, i. 173. Of the knowledge of Christ, ii. 74. Of spirits, an extraordinary gift of the Spirit, iii. 35, iv. 471. Of spiritual things, iii. 493, iv. 129. Of the excellency of spiritual things, ix. 473. Between the directions of the Spirit and the delusions of the world, xi. 362. Spiritual, xiii. 33.
Discharge of the mediatory office in heaven, i. 252. Of the mediatory office, glory of Christ in, i. 338. From the punishment of sin, v. 9. From sin in forgiveness, vi. 407.
Disciple, the constitution of a true, i. 169.
Disciplinary means of understanding the Scriptures, iv. 126. Means of interpreting the Scriptures, iv. 209. Knowledge, vii. 20. Knowledge of the Scriptures, xi. 344.
Discipline, of the church, vii. 191, xv. 445, 512, xvi. 151, 223. Neglect of church, xv. 104.
Disconsolation, from what it arises, iv. 376, vii. 321.
Discouragement to holiness, the mediation of Christ is not a, iii. 571.
Discouragements and difficulties, effect of, vi. 243. How removed, xi. 388.
Discourse, spiritual, advantage of, vii. 296.
Discoveries, gracious, of the glory of Christ, i. 114. Of the good-will of God, the promises are, xi. 229. Divine, Christ the medium of, xi. 230.
Discovery of the patience of God towards sinners, ii. 85. Of graces springing from election, iii. 505. Of sin by the law, vi. 313. Of forgiveness, not always connected with assurance, vi. 415.
Discrepancy in the glory of the church, as represented in Scripture and exemplified by professors, accounted for, i. 441.
Discursive faculty, operations of the, iv. 85.
Diseases, healing of, by Christ, meaning of, iv. 464, ix. 183. And distempers, spiritual, importance of knowing, iv. 511. Spiritual, a loose profession contracts, vii. 358.
Dislike, self, on account of sin, vi. 374.
Dismission to rest the lot of every good man, viii. 353.
Disobedience of Adam, i. 208.
Disorder of the government of God by sin, i. 185. Occasioned by sin, how rectified, i. 196. Of the mind through trouble, i. 279. Of the affections, cure of, vii. 494.
Disparity between God and men, ii. 8, xii. 104.
Dispensation of the Spirit not confined to the first ages of the church, iii. 44. Of the Spirit in general declared, iii. 105. His general, unto the new creation, iii. 152. Necessity of, for the foundation of the church, iii. 192. Of providence, how used by God, vi. 210. Difference of divine, as to the righteous and the wicked, vi. 265. Of God, what is the rule of the, viii. 10. Of God, how we should answer the, viii 82. Of providence dark and difficult, ix. 392. Of grace, x. 470. What, and of what kind, as to the punishment of sin, x. 592. Outward, of good things, xi. 133. Of providence assigned to Christ, xii. 278.
Display of Arminianism, x. 1.
Displeasure of God, sense of, vi. 620. A deep sense of the, necessary, vi. 548.
Displicency and sorrow for sin, v. 77.
Disposition, new, in regeneration, iii. 221. Natu-

rally depraved, iii. 255. None to a spiritual life, naturally, iii. 295. Supernatural, of living to God, iii. 469. Of the soul to duties of holiness, from an inward principle, iii. 483. A gracious, expressed by fear, love, and delight, iii. 483. Natural, more sedate in some than in others, iii. 643. Of indwelling sin, to be weakened, vi. 32. Of the heart, by what it may be judged, vii. 275.

Dispositions to regeneration, of what sort, iii. 229. Of the mind towards God, iii. 255. Gracious, how to be exercised, ix. 556.

Disputation, subtlety of, iv. 71.

Disquietment of temptation, i. 404. Of mind, from whence it often proceeds, ii. 116. By the nature of law, vi. 315. Of mind, removal of, vii. 493.

Disquisitions about God by the light of nature, their success, iii. 273.

Disregard of God, degrees of, vii. 356.

Dissenters, of, viii. 203. Liberty of, xiii. 577.

Dissimulation of sin, vi. 25.

Distance between God and his creatures, i. 324. From God, our, meditation on, vi. 63. Between God and us, vi. 632.

Distempers of the soul, i. 403. Of nature, how cured, iii. 641.

Distinction between the divine and human natures of Christ, i. 223. In communion with each person of the Trinity, ii. 11. In operations ascribed to each person in the Trinity, iii. 66. In properties and acts of the divine and human natures in Christ, iii. 161. Of persons in the divine nature, the manifestation of, a great end in the work of the new creation, iii. 189. Between natural and moral impotency, iii. 266. Between grace and morality, iii. 524. Of times, seasons, and places, importance of, iv. 221. Between spiritual gifts and saving graces, iv. 425. Of a first and second justification, v. 137. Between impetration and application, x. 222, 232. Of persons by election, effect of, x. 243. Between will of God commanding and intending, x 344. Of the divine attributes, x. 574. Of persons in the Godhead, xii. 170.

Distinctions of grace, iii. 301. Necessary, with regard to justification, v. 30. In regard to justice, x. 498. Of necessity, x. 589. Of God's being in a place, xii. 93. Among intelligent creatures, xii. 487.

Distraction of mind, deliverance from, vii. 496.

Distress of conscience, we should invoke Christ in, i. 113. From conviction of sin, iii. 355. The everlasting covenant the support of believers under, ix. 409.

Distresses, outward, vi. 331. On Nonconformists, xiii. 579.

Distribution of spiritual gifts, iii. 20, 21.

Distributions of the Holy Spirit, ii. 234, iii. 122. Spiritual, iv. 424.

Distributive justice of God, xi. 296.

Distrust of God, vii. 521.

Disturbance of the government of God by sin, i. 185.

Diversion of sin not mortification, vi. 26. Of the thoughts of men designed to prevent sin, vi. 266. Of sin different from its conquest, vi. 318.

Diversities of spiritual gifts, iv. 424.

Diversity of gifts an occasion of differences in the churches, iii. 21.

Dividing as he will, the Holy Spirit, ii. 234. The word aright, iv. 510. The word of God with skill, ix. 455.

Divine things, knowledge of, by their operations and effects, iii. 33. Voluntary actings ascribed to the Holy Spirit in, iii. 69, 83. Persons succeeded not to each other in their operations, iii. 94. Nature in Christ acted not as his soul, iii. 169. Goodness, no true apprehension of, but in Christ, iii. 272. And infallible faith, iv. 15. Faith, in the Scriptures, iv. 46, 47. Institutions, whether any disused, xv. 465.

Division of the Holy Spirit falsely asserted, iii. 122. Falsely charged on Protestants, xiv. 33, 237.

Divisions and animosities, whence they arise, iv. 174, xv. 104. In the church, iv. 477. And contentions, how perpetuated, v. 10. A cause of offence, vii. 213. To be avoided, xiii. 76.

Divorce, marrying after, lawful, xvi. 254.

Doctrinal faith, of, i. 127.

Doctrine of the Trinity, ii. 377. Of the Spirit, the life of all saving truth, iii. 23, 44, 53. Of reformation of life variously handled and applied, iii. 234. Of Christ complete, iii. 633. Of Christ, our rule, iii. 649. Of justification by faith, v. 7. Of the gospel, mistaken view of, vi. 394. Of the gospel, apostasy from, vii. 60. Sound, why men grow weary of, vii. 70.

Doctrines of the word of God good, vii. 28. How to judge of their value, xi. 382. Of Scripture, nature of, xvi. 298.

Dominion of sin, how the Spirit destroys the, iii. 551. Of indwelling sin, vi. 163. Of sin and grace, vii. 505. Of God supreme, x. 35. Of Christ, x. 375. Not founded on grace, xiii. 455, 456. Over the faith of others forbidden, xv. 137.

Donatism, xiii. 253.

Door of apostasy, what, vi. 15.

Dort, synod of, vii. 75.

Doubts and fears not inconsistent with assurance, vi. 550.

Dove, under which shape the Holy Ghost appeared, iii. 74, 76–78.

Drawn into sin, when a man is, vi. 117. To Christ, how men are, ix. 595.

Dread and fear of eternal misery, iii. 358. Of mankind of what is grand, x. 521.

Dreams a mean of divine revelation, iii. 136.

Druids, how they treated malefactors, x. 529.

Duration of spiritual gifts, iv. 474.

Duties of persons intrusted with spiritual privileges, iii. 21. Required in order to conversion, iii. 229. Moral, how changed into evangelical obedience, iii. 279. Of unbelievers, how said to be sinful, iii. 293. Good, how vitiated, yet accepted, iii. 293. The same, how accepted and rejected as to different persons, iii. 294. Not accepted on account of persons, iii. 294. Of faith, repentance, and obedience, on what grounds obligatory, iii. 295. Good, of unregenerate men, how to be esteemed, iii. 296. Of morality to be encouraged, iii. 479. Special, of those who have received a principle of holiness, iii. 482. Evenness in religious, iii. 486. Internal and external, distinguished, iii. 528. Of believers and unbelievers, difference of, iii. 537. Required for the mortification of sin, iii. 554, 557. More clearly revealed by Christ than any other way, iii. 632. Of worship, why to be regarded, v. 78. Best, imperfection of, v. 439. Great, why God puts men on, vi. 94. Particular, opposed by sin, vi. 197. Principal, of the mind in obedience, vi. 217. Rendered acceptable by Christ, vi. 603. Best, weakness of, vii. 147. Religious, whether from grace or gifts, ix. 344. Special, what they require, ix. 557.

Duty, love to God a love of, ii. 28. On the part of saints to Christ, ii. 152. Things wrought in a way of grace prescribed in a way of, iii. 433. Not the measure of power, iii. 433. A holy heart inclined to all, iii. 485. And end to be considered in every act of obedience, iii. 503. Manner of, to be attended to, vi. 235. Of believers under divine warnings, ix. 403. Of a pastor, ix. 452.

Dwelling of the Spirit in believers, iv. 383, xi. 329; notwithstanding the remains of sin, iii. 551. Of God in believers, ix. 293.

Dying in a state of sin, consequence of, iii. 298. For Christ, vi. 553. Daily, Christian's work of, ix. 334. Of Christ, bearing about the, ix. 618. For us by commutation, x. 280.

Earnest, the Spirit an, ii. 243, iv. 407.
Earnestness of mind in prayer, iv. 268. Of prayer necessary to obtain wisdom, iv. 457. Of soul, vi. 349. And fervency in prayer, when not spiritual, vii. 290.
Earth, in the first creation, what it contained, iii. 98. Face of, by what means annually renewed, iii. 99. Lower parts of, what they are, iv. 489, ix. 440. Heaven and, the shaking of, viii. 247. Enjoyments of, security in, viii. 634. Comforts of, imperfection of the, ix. 412.
Earthly-mindedness, deliverance from, i. 222. What it is, vii. 272, 273. Evil of, ix. 498.
Ease and facility with which indwelling sin acts, vi. 167.
Easter, observation of, xv. 152.
Eat the flesh of Christ, what it is to, ix. 620.
Ecclesiastical dignity, use of, iv. 186. Helps in the interpretation of Scripture, iv. 226. Rulers, xii. 488. Power assigned by Papists and Protestants to kings, xiv. 378.
Economy of the Trinity, iii. 107.
Ecstasies, prophetical, iii. 138. Enthusiastical, not the work of the Spirit, iii. 224.
Edification, how promoted, i. 291, iii. 410. General, resulting from prayer, iv. 313. Of the church, how connected with spiritual gifts, iv. 421. Of the church, iv. 516. The end of all offices and gifts, ix. 453. Preaching to, xv. 115. How prevented, xv. 167.
Education prevents disorders and evils, iii. 643.
Effects of the presence of Christ, i. 392. Of conviction on the will, iii. 238, 355. Of natural vanity, found even among believers, iii. 254. Of divine love, iii. 585. Of the priestly acts of Christ, iii. 629. Of justifying faith, v. 72. Of indwelling sin, vi. 12. Of the law powerful, vi. 316. Of the word of God, good, vii. 29. Of God's power to be considered, vii. 372. Immediate, of the death of Christ, x. 459. Of divine anger, x. 513. Of sin over the creation, x. 618.
Efficacy of the offices of Christ, on what it depends, i. 20. Of truth, i. 80. Of the offices of Christ derived from his person, i. 85. Immediate, of the Spirit, ii. 17. Of every work of the Spirit, ii. 234, iii. 237. Given to all ordinances by the Holy Spirit, iii. 41. No, in second causes independent of first, iii. 103. Of the word of God, iii. 304. Of the blood of Christ, iii. 438. Of faith, iii. 458. Of the example of Christ, iii. 511. Of the death of Christ for the destruction of sin, iii. 561. Self-evidencing, of the Scriptures, iv. 89. Internal, of the word, iv. 364. Of grace, how opposed, v. 52. Of sin from its deceitfulness, vi. 215. Of the merit of Christ, by whom denied, x. 13. Of the merit of Christ, x. 87, 462. Of the Scriptures, xvi. 323.
Efficiency, real internal, of grace, iii. 317. Physical, of the Spirit, vi. 19.
Effusion of the Spirit, abundant, promised, iii. 153. Of the Holy Spirit to be prayed for, viii. 656. Of the blood of Christ, x. 97.
Effusions, eminent, of the Holy Spirit, sometimes accompanied with delusions of Satan, iii. 35.
Egress, first, of the divine properties, i. 334. And exercise of divine justice, x. 498.
Egyptian and Grecian learning, character of, iv. 23. Idolatry, xiii. 539.
Ejaculatory prayer, vii. 393.
Elders, ruling, in the church, xv. 504.
Elect, evidences of the faith of God's, v. 405. Christ died only for the, x. 245. The, whence called "the world," x. 299, 325. And reprobates mixed in the world, x. 313. The, how they are said to die and rise with Christ, x. 472.
Election the spring of true holiness, iii. 503, 591. Absolutely considered, no part of God's revealed will, iii. 595. Evidenced by conversion, iii. 596. Conclusions from doctrine of, iii. 603. Temporary, what it is, iv. 430. Of, xii. 551.
Elevation of the mind by the Holy Spirit, xi. 345.
Eli, the conduct of God towards, xi. 161.
Elias Levita, character of, xvi. 392.
Emanation of grace and power from Christ, i. 177. Of grace from God, ii. 10. Of the Holy Spirit from the Father and the Son, iii. 55.
Eminence of gospel knowledge, vi. 68.
Eminency of the graces of Christ, ii. 76. Of the gift of the ministry, iv. 488. Of station, evil effect of the sins of persons in, vii. 201. Of brotherly love, xiii. 63.
Emphasis of words and expressions of Scripture, iv. 214.
Empires, the four great, their rise, nature, and destruction, viii. 369.
Empty professors, how they differ from believers, ii. 38.
Encouragement to faith, i. 210. Of faith, i. 270. To come to God from the properties of his nature, i. 424. To holiness, electing love is an, iii. 601. To expect forgiveness, whence obtained, vi. 384. To duty, vi. 420. To obedience, whence derived, vi. 534. In waiting on God, vi. 617. Secret, conveyed by prayer, vii. 295. Of righteous zeal, viii. 133. Of the servants of God, viii. 152. In the worship of God, xv. 475.
Encroachment on the privileges of the people of God dangerous, viii. 94.
Encumbrances to obedience, how removed, iii. 496.
End and object of evangelical obedience, ii. 183. Of prophecy in the church, iii. 126. Of miraculous operations, iii. 146. Of God in the work of the old and new creation, iii. 189. Of afflictions, iii. 392. Of duties twofold, iii. 503. Of legal commands, iii. 606. Of prayer must be regarded, iv. 276, 285. Of duty, how to be regarded, vi. 236. Of all things, God is the, vi. 482. The proper, of divine institutions, vii. 433. Of the covenant, ix. 417. Of ordinances, God is the, ix. 550. Of the world, meaning of the expression, ix. 571. Of the death of Christ, why opposed, x. 159. The nature of an, x. 160; its relation to means, x. 160. Natural and moral, x. 161. Several kinds of, x. 162. Of the death of Christ, x. 163; supreme, of it, x. 201; intermediate and subservient, of it; x. 202; not his own good, x. 203; nor a liberty to the Father of showing mercy, x. 205; immediate, of it, x. 208. Of obedience, the glory of God, xi. 385.
Endeavour for mortification, when it proceeds from a corrupt principle, vi. 41.
Endeavours, giving over, ruinous, i. 423. After reformation, iii. 354. To understand the mind of God necessary, iv. 12.
Endowment of Christ for the discharge of his work, ix. 482.
Endowments, ministerial, iv. 495. The work of the Spirit, ix. 441.
Ends, principal, of God in creation, i. 183. For which the Holy Spirit is promised, iii. 408. For which holiness is required, iii. 472. Of the gospel ministry, iv. 497. And purposes why forgiveness was revealed, vi. 514. Proper, of judging the state of others, vi. 591. Of the death of Christ, xii. 411.
Enemies of Christ, their destruction by his ascension, i. 249. Spiritual, how they manage their assaults, vi. 108. How they manage an opposition, vi.

189. Of God, his dealing with them observable, viii. 102. Of the people of God, why they tremble, viii. 106, 408. Of God, how they promote his glory, ix. 206; how defeated in their attempts, ix. 212. Of the Christian, xi. 106.
Enemy with whom we contend should be known, vi. 31. Sin an internal, vi. 162.
Enforcements to obedience from the authority of God, iii. 611. Of the divine commands, iii. 626.
Engagement, what God will do on account of his, viii. 151.
Engagements of God to his people always made good, viii. 113.
England, the day of visitation of, viii. 6. Progress of the gospel in, viii. 26. Happiness of, in enjoying the gospel, viii. 39. Church of, xiii. 181, xv. 344. From whence religion came into, xiv. 19, 206, 327.
Englishmen, civil rights of, xiii. 532.
Enjoyment of God, eternal, how man is brought to the, i. 183. Of Christ in his ordinances, i. 268. Of God, no, without purification from sin, iii. 432. Everlasting, of God, holiness necessary to, iii. 574.
Enjoyments, spiritual, season of, vi. 129.
Enlargement of mind in prayer, iv. 288. In duty, effect of, vii. 294.
Enlightenment, what it is, vii. 18.
Enmity of the carnal mind against God, ii. 107, iii. 273, vi. 176, x. 127. Against God is constant. vi. 181. To spiritual things, effect of, vii. 82. Of God against every sin, x. 619. Of God against sinners, xii. 532.
Enormities, of, which disturb peace, viii. 164.
Enormous sins, preservation from, vi. 339.
Entanglement of temptation, iii. 362, vi. 98.
Entanglements of the people of God, xi. 277.
Entering into temptation, what it is, vi. 96. Into covenant with God, ix. 425.
Enthusiasm, its effects, iii. 32.
Enthusiastical raptures, regeneration doth not consist in, iii. 224. Impressions, none in conversion, iii. 318.
Enticement of the mind by sin, vi. 215, 245, xi. 557.
Entrance of Christ into heaven, i. 253. Of sin, effect of, i. 370. Into glory, i. 493. Of Christianity into the world, v. 66. Into temptation, what it is, vi. 96. Meeting temptation at its, vi. 135.
Entrances of sin to be guarded against, iv. 418. Of religion, improperly dwelling in them, vii. 454.
Enunciations connected with the person of Christ, i. 235.
Envy of wicked men against the people of God, their own torment, viii. 105.
Episcopacy, not sanctioned by the cases of Timothy and Titus, iv. 449. Not supported by the Ignatian Epistles, xi. 46.
Epistle of Grotius to Crellius, xii. 638. Of the churches at Vienne and Lyons, xv. 296.
Equality and constancy of the love of God, ii. 30. In God's commands, iii. 625. In God's respect to duties, vii. 296. Of Christ with God, xii. 285.
Equity of the law and the ability of man, iii. 294. Of God, how vindicated, viii. 136. Of divine dealings, viii. 628.
Equivalent satisfaction, x. 438.
Erecting, first, of the church, what was extraordinary in it, iv. 492. And building the church, ix. 487.
Error, how God keeps his people from, vi. 75. And mistakes about truth, vi. 258. Reign of, vii. 138. Of the Jews about preaching the gospel, x. 350.
Errors and heresies, i. 37. Preservation from antichristian, iv. 146. Adherence to inveterate, iv. 180. Toleration of, viii. 53, 58. Forbearance of, viii. 170.
Eruption of indwelling sin, vi. 26.
Eruptions of sin in believers, vi. 279. Signal, how to be regarded, vi. 557.
Eshcol, xiii. 55.
Espousals of the Virgin with Joseph, iii. 166. Of Christ and the church, ix. 465.
Essay, a country, on church government, viii. 49.
Essence of faith, in what it consists, i. 295. Of God, ultimate vision of the, i. 385. And form of holiness, iii. 473. Of faith, v. 411. Of spiritual mindedness, vii. 272. Of Christ, xii. 207.
Essex county and committee, deliverance of, viii. 77.
Establishment of saints, how promoted, xi. 81.
Estate of Christ, the twofold, i. 483.
Estimation of Christ by believers, ii. 136. Of ministers, xiii. 58.
Eternal generation of Christ, i. 13, xii. 73. The love of God is, ii. 33. The love of Christ is, ii. 62. Love a powerful motive to holiness, iii. 597. Designation of persons, vi. 404. Things, the proper objects of spiritual thoughts, vii. 317. Blessedness, in what it will consist, vii. 481. Acts of the will of God, x. 275; no change made by them in any thing, x. 276; all men, notwithstanding them, in the same condition before actual reconciliation, x. 277.
Eternity ascribed to the Holy Spirit, iii. 91. Of God, vi. 622. Of the decrees of God, x. 14.
Ethico-physical, what is, xi. 567.
Ethiopian translation of the New Testament, xvi. 418.
Eucharistical, the Lord's supper is, ix. 527.
Euctical or declarative blessing of the congregation, ix. 456.
Europe, balance of power in, xiv. 538.
Eutyches, error of, with regard to the person of Christ, i. 11, 327.
Evangelical, what proves faith to be, i. 134. Holiness distinguished from all pretences, iii. 501. Truth consistent with holiness, iii. 577. And legal sense of sin distinguished, vi. 369. Repentance, vii. 174. Peace and love, xv. 57. Churches, nature of, xv. 187. Institutions, what are, xv. 478.
Evangelists, who they were, iv. 445. Their writings do not contain the whole of Christian instruction, v. 59. Their testimonies to justification by faith, v. 299.
Events of things as connected with prayer, iv. 314. Future, depend on God, vii. 37. All, ordered by God, for his own praise, viii. 117. All, result in the glory of God, viii. 117.
Everlasting covenant, the support of believers under distress, ix. 409. Redemption, xi. 298.
Evidences of spiritual decays, i. 447. Of divine inspiration, iii. 133. Of interest in Christ, no unholy person can have, iii. 631. Of revelation satisfactory to those who received it, iv. 8. Of adoption, iv. 406. Of believers to the world, by God's sealing, iv. 406. Of the faith of God's elect, v. 405. Of interest in the covenant, loss of, vi. 54. Of forgiveness in God, vi. 427. Of the divine authority of the Scriptures, ignorance of, vii. 158. Of the gospel, effect of losing, vii. 231. Of spiritual-mindedness, vii. 282, 298. Of interest in Christ, vii. 341. Subordinate, value of, vii. 501. Of dominion of sin, vii. 517. Of approaching judgments, viii. 622. That we have received Christ, ix. 362. Internal, of the truth of the Scriptures, xvi. 307.
Evil spirits and their operations, iii. 57. Spirit, how it wrought in Saul, iii. 142. Frame of nature, how cured, iii. 437. And perverse men, why they cannot understand the Scriptures, iv. 198. Good and, knowledge of, v. 423. Propensity to, natural to man, vi. 190. Actual pressing after,

vi. 194. Of sin, a deep sense of the, necessary, vi. 548. Thoughts, vii. 305. What things are, vii. 332. Origin of, x. 86.
Evils of the fall of man, xii. 145.
Exaltation of the wisdom of God in the person of Christ, i. 75. Of Christ, i. 235, 483, ii 69, 191, iv. 489, x. 204. Glory of Christ in his, i. 342. Of the human nature of Christ, iv. 356. Of grace, the abuse of, vi. 254.
Examination, self, vi. 538, 544. When specially necessary, ix. 561. Of Stillingfleet's book on Separation, xv. 193.
Example of Christ, on following the, i. 169. Of Christ a mean of our holiness, iii. 509. Of Christ, meditation on, iv. 458. Of Christ, our duty to be conformed to the, ix. 483.
Examples of praying persons, iv. 304. How sometimes temptations to sin, vi. 111. Evil, their influence, vi. 297. Of suffering believers, how to be used, ix. 503.
Excellencies, divine, proper and adequate objects of love, i. 151. Of Christ, ii. 60. Real, the occasion of false pretences, iii. 29. Meditation on God's, iv. 322. Of God, gracious, vi. 486. Innate, of Scripture, xvi. 337.
Excellency, highest, of created nature, is holiness, iii. 579. And beauty of spiritual things, the mind must be possessed with the, vi. 188. Of Christ, ix. 462. Of the work of Christ, ix. 480. Of grace in pardoning sin, x. 621.
Excitation of graces and affections, iii. 389, iv. 268.
Excommunication, of, xi. 541, xvi. 151, 211.
Exemplary cause of holiness, Christ is the, iii. 509. Conduct, when particularly required, viii. 657. Conversation of ministers, xiii. 57.
Exequation of two substances, xii. 209.
Exercise of faith, the ground of, iii. 205. Of diligence promoted by the difficult parts of Scripture, iv. 197. Of Christian graces, iv. 208. Of gifts, the means of improving them, iv. 299. Of grace necessary, iv. 517. Of faith in prayer, v. 92. Faith will endeavour to keep itself in, in ordinances, v. 436. And success of grace, vi. 13. Of graces, how promoted, vii. 283, 556. Of gifts, the means of spiritual thoughts, vii. 284. Of spiritual graces, effect of, vii. 293 Of grace in duties, vii. 514.
Exhibition and tender of Christ in the gospel, ix. 564. Of Christ in the sacrament of the supper, ix. 573, 584, 589.
Exhortations to strangers to Christ, i. 419. Respect duty, not ability, iii. 289. To the duty of watchfulness, vi. 149. Of Scripture, their use and design, xi. 438.
Exinanition of Christ, ii. 134.
Expectation, disappointment in, iv. 414. Of relief from Christ, vi. 80. Of assistance from Christ, vi. 614. In waiting on God, vi. 614. How to be kept alive, ix. 562.
Experience and faith, i. 397. Of the power of the truth, iii. 390. Of the defilement of sin, iii. 425. Outward profession without, dangerous, iv. 66. To be regulated by Scripture, iv. 238. Similarity of, in different persons, iv. 326. Best confronts sophistry, v. 52. Of justifying faith, v. 83. Of the law of sin in us different from general knowledge of it, vi. 159. Of believers as to forgiveness, vi. 452. When we should recur to it, vii. 370. Of benefit by ordinances, vii. 441. Of the workings of God, a great encouragement to faith, viii. 229. Of spiritual gifts, ix. 450. Of the power of the death of Christ, ix. 618.
Experiences of God, to gather up, a duty, vi. 45
Experiment in the keeping of revelation, xvi. 334.
Experimental religion necessary in a minister, ix. 455.
Expiation of sin, xii. 420.
Expiatory sacrifices confirmed the promise of Christ's incarnation, i. 121; unfolded the doctrine of imputation, v. 34.
Expositors of Scripture, why they so frequently fail of success, iv. 205.
Expostulations declarative of our duty, not of God's desires, x. 401.
Expressions in prayer, spiritual and full, ii. 123.
Expulsion of spiritual darkness from the mind, iv. 172. Of the gospel from a people, viii. 24.
Extent of redemption, vi. 646, x. 208.
Extenuation of sin, danger of, v. 23. Of sin, vi. 99, 246.
Eye of Christ, how we lay under the, in our misery, i. 335. The Father as love, we should, ii. 32. Of Christ, we are always under the, vi. 151.
Eyeing the Lord Jesus, ii. 203, 204.
Eyes, metaphorical, of Christ, ii. 73. Opening the, iv. 162. The lust of the, vi. 246. Wilfully closed against the light, vii. 354.

Faculties of the soul perfected in glory, i. 405. Of the mind affected by sin, vii. 519.
Faculty, new, in heaven for beholding the glory of Christ, i. 380. How prayer is a spiritual, iv. 271. Of prediction, iv. 469.
Faint, when men, under afflictions, ii. 260. When the people of God are ready to, viii. 140.
Faith, i. 485, xii. 561. Of the church under the old testament in the person of Christ, i. 100. The principle and spring of assigning honour to him, i. 120. Person of Christ, object of, i. 129. Glory of Christ seen by, i. 374. How it acts in receiving the Holy Ghost, ii. 231. And obedience, how to be regulated, iii. 118. Actually wrought by grace, iii. 320. Instrumentality of, in sanctification, iii. 323. And love, the springs of holiness, how increased, iii. 389. What, is required to please God, iii. 413. Gives an interest in the blood of Christ, iii. 443. Working by prayer for victory over sin, iii. 445. How it promotes conformity to God, iii. 584. Without holiness vain, iii. 628. The reason of, iv. 7. In prayer, iv. 203, v. 92. Of miracles, iv. 461. Of men when they come to die, v. 33. Justifying, v. 70, 93, ix. 21. Historical, v. 72. Causes of, v. 74. The instrumental cause of justification, v. 108. Justification by it alone, v. 290. How expressed in Scripture, v. 291. And works, the doctrine of, v. 384. Of God's elect, evidences of, v. 405. To be specially exercised on the death of Christ, vi. 83. Acting, on the promises, vi. 125. In prayer, countermines the deceit of sin, vi. 227. Its connection with forgiveness, vi. 410. And spiritual sense distinguished, vi. 561. Necessity of, for the enjoyment of ordinances, vii. 436. Assimilation to spiritual things, the work of, vii. 445. Strengthened by the remembrance of former mercies, viii. 87. Encouraged to great services by observing the glorious appearances of God, viii. 89. Encouraged by past and promised mercies, viii. 100. Makes the most afflicted state comfortable, viii. 101. In the promises of God and their accomplishment inseparable, viii. 227. Carnal policy an enemy to it, viii. 233. How exercised in the Lord's supper, viii. 561. True, but weak, gives safety, though not comfort, ix. 28. A means of humble walking with God, ix. 120. How it acts under distress, ix. 239. The grounds of, ix. 242. The supports of, ix. 247. Necessary to be acted on the nature and properties of God, ix. 247. A constant exercise of it necessary to dying daily, ix. 337. How it resigns the departing soul to God, ix 339. What weakens, as to prayer, ix. 379. Use of, in a time of public calamity, ix. 490. The exercise of, by Christ, ix. 530. Cause of, x. 100.

The purchase of the death of Christ, x. 234. The promise of the covenant, x. 237. How procured by Christ, absolutely or conditionally, x. 243. Indispensably necessary to salvation, x. 253 Objective, x. 254. Whether procured for all by the death of Christ, x. 255. The command of, published to all, x. 298. The several acts of, x. 314. An evidence of saintship, xi. 94. How strengthened, xi. 394. Unity of, wherein it consists, xiv. 257. And charity of Roman Catholics, xiv. 349.

Faithfulness of God to be pleaded in prayer, iii. 411. Of God, vi. 82, xi. 244. Of God in his threatenings, viii. 608.

Fall, what man lost by the, i. 209. State of Adam before the, x. 82.

Falling from duties, iii. 622. Into temptation, vi. 97. Off from God, vi. 309. Away of believers, xi. 598. Away from the faith, xiii. 120.

Familiarity, undue, with God, vi. 396.

Families, paternal instruction of, xiii. 15.

Family of God, how re-collected, i. 371. Of God, believers introduced into it by adoption, ii. 207. Prayer, iv. 313.

Fancies, our own, how we are cheated by them, vi. 130.

Fancy and imagination, the prayers of some persons only the effect of, iv. 329. And imagination, influence of on the mind, vii. 472.

Fate and state of Protestant religion, xiv. 531.

Father, communion with the, ii. 11. The, how said to raise Christ from the dead, iii. 182. Eternal, Christ the, xii. 314.

Fathers, consent of the, its proper use, iv. 227. The ancient, their sentiments on justification, v. 36. Testimonies of the, as to the supreme authority of Scripture, xiii. 473.

Fault, the saying of Gregory about the happy, ii. 89, viii. 35.

Favour, free, of Christ, ii. 47. Of God, continuance of, xi. 235.

Fear excited in sinners by a knowledge of their state, i. 210. Of not being received by Christ groundless, i. 423. And dread attending conviction of sin, iii. 358. Inseparable from guilt, iii. 428. Of sin, a fruit of faith, iii. 461. Of man, cure of, iii. 612. Of punishment for sin, v. 77. Of punishment ineffectual, vi. 47. Of being rejected of God, vi. 336. Casting out, vi. 552. Of the anger of God, how it should work, viii. 82. Of God, what it is to have our hearts hardened from it, ix. 299. Of eternal death and destruction twofold, xi. 468. How ascribed to God, xii. 113.

Fearlessness of danger, vi. 209.

Fears, fictitious, of men, x. 521. Perplexing, anxious, xi. 388.

Fellow-feeling, how expressed, ii. 141.

Fellowship with Jesus Christ, ii. 40. Church, rules of, xiii. 55.

Few real Christians in the world, ix. 478.

Fiat Lux, animadversions on, xiv. 1.

Fighting against sin the way to mortify it, vi. 30.

Figments of sin, vi. 191.

Figurative language of Scripture, iii. 70.

Figure, not a naked, of Christ in the ordinance of the supper, ix. 563. Of God not visible, xii. 98.

Filiation, a personal adjunct, iii. 165. Of Christ, xii. 184.

Filth of sin, how purged, iii. 436.

Finger of God, the Holy Spirit is the, iii. 97.

Finisher and author of grace, God is the, x. 102.

Finishing of sin, xi. 560.

Fire, emblem of the Spirit, iii. 76. On the altar, what it signified, iii. 76. And water the means of all typical cleansing, iii. 423. God is a consuming, x. 553, 603. Of hell, meaning of, xii. 147. The, that is not quenched, xii. 492.

Firmness, how communicated to the new creation, i. 374.

First-born, Christ the, i. 64, xii. 266.

First-fruits and dawnings of perfection, ii. 9. Spiritual, iv. 411.

Fitness of Christ to save, ii. 51. Of Christ to suffer and bear sin, ii. 67. Of Christ for his work, ii. 159.

Fixation of mind in prayer, iv. 329.

Fixing the soul to the object of delight, i. 461. The minds of sinners, iii. 350. Of the imagination, iv. 466.

Flesh, freedom from clogs of the, in glory, i. 405. Deeds of the, must be mortified, vi. 8. When temptations arise from the, vi. 95. Weariness of the, vii. 173. Weakness of the, xi. 419. Prevalency of the, xi. 519.

Flock, state of the, should be known to ministers, ix. 456.

Fœdus, origin of the word, xii. 499.

Followers of Christ, who ought to be, iv. 458.

Following the example of Christ, i. 169. After holiness, ii. 152. God, how we are prepared for, viii. 90.

Folly of human wisdom, ii. 116. God leavens the counsels of his enemies with, viii. 116.

Food, provision of spiritual, i. 441. Spiritual, of the soul, vii. 283.

Foolishness, to whom spiritual things are, iii. 262, 263.

Forbearance of God, ii. 85, x. 461. And patience of God, how to be considered, vi. 58. Mutual, viii. 57.

Force, no, in the operations of the Spirit, iii. 225. Used by our enemies, vi. 189. Inward, thoughts arising from, vii. 279, 280. And deceit of sin, vii. 507. Suppressing opinions by fruitless, viii. 180. Used against the conscience, xiii. 527. In religion, of, xiv. 544.

Foreknowledge of God, x. 22, xi. 153, xii. 115.

Foreseen faith, predestination not for, x. 64.

Foretaste of future blessedness, i. 415. Of everlasting vengeance, when given, iv. 417.

Foretelling future events, xii. 134.

Foreview, divine, of the portion of believers, viii. 94.

Forfeiture, second, how the heavenly inheritance is secured against, i. 213.

Forgetfulness of God, vii. 352.

Forgiveness, freedom of, ii. 427. Of sin, its discovery great, holy, and mysterious, vi. 386. Evidences of, with God, vi. 427. Brotherly, required, vi. 494. Of sin, whether there could be, without satisfaction, x. 586. Of sin, xii. 347.

Form, internal and external, of the church, ix. 447. Of a servant, Christ appeared in the, xii. 237. Of prayer, whether prescribed by Christ, xii. 577.

Formal reason of holiness, iii. 473. Object of faith in the word of God, iv. 16. Dispositions to justification, what are not, v. 79. Cause of justification, v. 205. Cause of a particular church, xvi. 25.

Formality in duty, danger of, vi. 121. In religion, its cause, vi. 293. Habitual, vii. 539.

Formation of the new nature, i. 366. Of the host of heaven and earth the work of the Spirit, iii. 96. Of the body of Christ in the womb, iii. 162.

Former mercies to be remembered, viii. 87.

Forms of prayer, iv. 239, 338, xv. 21. In religion, various, ix. 170.

Fornication, spiritual, ii. 150.

Fortitude, perseverance a part of, xi. 20.

Fortuitous event of things, iv. 86.

Foundation of church-order, i. 33, iii. 18, 192. Of our communion with the Holy Ghost, ii. 222. Of all religion is the nature of God, iii. 64. Of the ministry in the church, iii. 191, ix. 431. Of the church in the promise of the Spirit, iii. 192. Of moral differences among men, iii. 415. Of consolation, vi. 439. Of gospel preaching, vi. 523. And building work not to be mixed together, vi. 564. Of the house of God, viii. 291. Of the doctrine of the saints' perseverance, fivefold, xi. 120. Of divine predictions, xi. 223. Of the promises immutable, xi. 231.

Fountain of grace, Christ an endless, ii. 68. Of purchased grace, ii. 154, 155. Of life, God the, iii. 292. And spring of holiness, iii. 503. Of grace, internal, when our thoughts issue from, vii. 292. And spring of all glory, the love of Christ, ix. 609. Of sin in all persons, lust the, xi. 511.

Frame, evil, of nature, how cured, iii. 437. Of believers under the actings of indwelling sin, vi. 160. Holy, constantly keeping the soul in a, vi. 185. Of the mind for obedience, proper, vi. 217. Of the heart to be attended to, vii. 248. Of soul, watchful, how preserved, vii. 295.

Framer of the world, God the, x. 32.

Frames and disposition of the soul, iv. 274. Unspiritual, falling into, vii. 538.

Fraud used by our enemies, vi. 189.

Free, the love of God is, ii. 33. From sin, Christ is, ii. 63. The Holy Spirit, as given to believers, ii. 228. The operation of the Spirit is, ii. 238. Pardon, ii. 427. Spiritual gifts, in what sense, iv. 422. Acknowledgment of sin, vi. 372. Mercy, a vision of, viii. 5. Agents, how they work, x. 24, 43. Grace effectual for conversion, x. 395. Grace enervated and overthrown by a general ransom, x. 411. Divine justice supposed by Twisse and Rutherford to be, x. 607, 608. And gracious, the promises are, xi. 227. Actions of men foretold by God, xii. 134.

Free-will, nature of, iii. 494, x. 114. Opposed to free grace, viii. 301.

Freedom of believers, ii. 211. And bounty in the gift of the Spirit, iii. 108. And liberty, spiritual, vii. 165. From evil in heaven, vii. 332. Spiritual, instrumental cause of, vii. 554. Of effectual grace, viii. 31. Of pardon, x. 446. Of the love of God, xi. 395.

Frequency of holy acts and duties, iii. 498. In reading the Scriptures, iv. 200. In exercise of prayer, iv. 323. Of meditation, vi. 225. Of spiritual communication, xiii. 69.

Friends, the union of, how applied to the person of Christ, i. 231. Christ makes his people his, ii. 119.

Friendship, love of, i. 155. Of Satan, what it is, vi. 135. Between God and man, xii. 531.

Fruitfulness of the love of God, ii. 30, xi. 397. Of the love of Christ, ii. 63. Our obligation to, iv. 178. For the good of others, why expected, iv. 435, 436. And tendency of sin, vi. 11.

Fruition of God, the everlasting, ii. 93.

Fruitless and barren knowledge of God, its cause, i. 78.

Fruitlessness, spiritual, cause of, vi. 343.

Fruits of the Spirit, ii. 199. Of sin, iii. 542. Of election, iii. 596. Spiritual first, iv. 411. Good, from whence they proceed, iv. 428. Of the Spirit, why we are made to abound in them, vi. 19. Of divine love, peculiar, vi. 241. Of assurance, vi. 414. Of the love of Christ, ix. 611. And effects of the death of Christ, x. 212. Of election, all purchased by Christ, x. 256. Of the death of Christ, all spiritual good things are, xi. 302. Of the death of Christ, causes, ends, and, xii. 411.

Frustration, whether the purposes of God are liable to, x. 43, 133.

Fuel to our lusts, what is, vi. 110.

Fulness of revelation, why necessary, i. 94. Of Christ, ii. 17, x. 167. Of Christ to save, ii. 51. Of grace in Christ, ii 66. Of God, communications made from, to believers, iii. 516; how communicated, iii. 521. Of the heart with love to Christ, effect of, ix. 475. Of divine gifts, x. 168.

Functions, the true, of the magistrate, xiii. 496.

Fundamental act of faith, i. 427. Principles to be attended to in the trial of spirits, iii. 34. Maxim in justification, v. 24. Truth, forgiveness a, vi. 442.

Furtherance of devotion, certain rites and ceremonies pleaded as, xv. 467.

Future blessings, how to be expected, viii. 87. Things foreseen by God, xii. 126.

Futurition of things, the divine purpose the only foundation of, xi. 142.

Gainsayers, how refuted, iv. 362.

Galileans, sacrificed by Pilate, viii. 601.

Garrison, believers kept as in a, vi. 134.

Gates of hell, what are the, i. 35.

Gathering the churches, iv. 442. Into church-order, iv. 496.

Gauls, sacrifices of the, x. 527.

Genealogies of Scripture, iv. 199.

General notions of the love of Christ, we must not be satisfied with, i. 337. Mercy, no hope in, ii. 103. Regard to duty not sufficient, vi. 236. Grace, x. 134. Expressions in Scripture, end and aim of, x. 298. Councils, xiii. 143.

Generation, eternal, of Christ, i. 13, xii. 73, 213.

Gentiles, calling of the, iv. 440. State of the, v. 25.

Geography, use of, in the interpretation of Scripture, iv. 219.

Germans, the sacrifices of the, x. 526.

Ghost, how Christ gave up the, iii. 177. Of Tiresias, v. 67.

Gift of prophecy, iii. 128; whether ever conferred on wicked men, iii. 139; falsely pretended to, and abused, iii. 142; not sanctifying, iii. 141. Of prayer, iv. 298. And grace of prayer, iv. 308; for what ends bestowed, iv. 325. Of Christ, the ministry is the, ix. 431. The heavenly, xi. 649.

Gifts, spiritual, iii. 15, 232, iv. 307, 420. For civil government, whence derived, iii. 147. For the office of mediator collated on Christ, iii. 171. For edification, iii. 410. How to be prayed for, iii. 411. When improperly used, iii. 501. Weakened by desuetude, iv. 323. Spiritual, the Holy Spirit an advocate in and by the communication of, iv. 364; not to be bought, iv. 423; extraordinary, iv. 474. Of the Spirit, ordinary, iv. 486. Neglect of improving, vi. 346. May be exercised without grace, vii. 284. Spiritual, are servants, not rulers, vii. 296. Spiritual, how imparted, ix. 432.

Girding on his sword, what meant by Christ's, ix. 485.

Giving and receiving, communion in, ii. 22. And receiving how related, iii. 106. Of the Spirit, what it includes, iii. 107. Up a people to their own sinful ways, how done, viii. 156.

Glances, our sight of Christ, as by, i. 377. Of the heart at sin, xi. 557.

Glass, present sight of Christ in a, i. 375. Of life, xiii. 5.

Glorification of the human nature of Christ, i. 238. Inseparable connection betwen calling, justification, and, xi. 171.

Glorified body of Christ the pattern of ours, iii. 183. God is, by worship, vi. 461.

Glorify God, what it is to, iii. 65; by worship, the way to, vii. 444.

Glorious, the work of the ministry, ix. 451.

Glory of God, manifested in Christ, i. 51, 73. Of truth is its light and power, i. 80. Of Christ, gracious discoveries of the, i. 114. Actual, how rendered to God in the works of creation, i. 183. In heaven, i. 241. Of Christ, beholding the, i. 288; as the representative of God to the church, i. 293; in the mystery of his person, i. 309; how represented in Scripture, i. 315; as Mediator, i. 322; in his conjunction with the church, i. 352; in communication of himself to believers, i. 360. Entrance into, i. 493. The, of holiness, iii. 376. Approaches to, consist in growing holiness, iii. 582. Of the church, the true, iv. 475. Of a party, danger of being the, vi. 120. Of God to be regarded in duty, vi. 236. Of God, what it is, ix. 31. Grace and, merited for us by Christ, x. 93. Of divine justice, how revealed, x. 618. Spiritual, of believers, xi. 117.

Glorying in sin abominable, iii. 454. In ourselves forbidden, viii. 25. In the love of God, xi. 59.

Gnostics, doctrine of the, i. 38.

Goat, scape, typical, v. 34, ix. 597.

God, of, i. 471; his works, i. 473; his providence, i. 475; his law, i. 476. The author of sanctification, iii. 369. How he made Christ to be sin, v. 348. Enmity of the carnal mind against, vi. 178. Proper consideration of, vi. 217, 222. We must meditate of, with God, vi. 225. The proper object of spiritual thoughts, vii. 351. His end in sending the gospel to some nations, viii. 15. Gives glorious manifestations of himself to his secret ones, viii. 89. His glory engaged for the protection of his servants, viii. 152. How he may be said to give men up to sin, viii. 155. His name and nature, ix. 39. His mercifulness, ix. 40. His goodness, the ground of faith, ix. 42. His sovereignty in providence, ix. 116. Will help his people in distress, ix. 253. Himself is in the covenant, ix. 424. In Christ to be unconditionally accepted, ix. 427. In Christ the immediate object of worship, ix. 548. How considered in the satisfaction made by Christ, in respect of us, x. 266. How he is our creditor, x. 270. How he exercises his supreme dominion, x. 272. Nature of, xii. 86.

Godhead of Christ essential to his office as prophet, i. 87; as king, i. 96; as priest, i. 99.

Godliness, how promoted, xi. 382. Not promoted by the doctrine of the defectibility of the saints, xi. 609.

Godly, sorrow, how produced, v. 452. The, why involved in public judgments, vi. 631. Persons, an objection against them answered, viii. 468.

Gods, private, forbidden by the Roman law, xiii. 524.

Goël, or next of kin, Christ our, i. 87.

Gold, the peculiar properties of, ascribed to Christ, ii. 71.

Good, all things were created, i. 61. Pleasure, God's love of, ii. 21. The perfections of God all manifested in doing us, ii. 91. Works, necessity of, ii. 315. All, in us wrought by the Holy Spirit, iii. 27. How the Holy Spirit is, iii. 58. All, ascribed to the Holy Spirit, iii. 83. Spirit of God overruling Satan, iii. 142. Man, who is a, iii. 587. And evil, knowledge of, v. 423. When the word of God does, to the soul, vi. 78. Believers would do, notwithstanding indwelling sin, vi. 160. The object of the will in believers, vi. 253. We cannot judge what is, for us, vi. 635. Word of God, vii. 26. Signs, viii. 18. Matter to believers, the things of Christ, ix. 472. The, of punitory justice, a debt to the universe, x. 612. Of others one end of punishment, xii. 438. How God is, to all, xii. 552. Works, merit of, xiv. 200.

Goodness of God, a communicative principle, i. 59. Divine, proper object of love, i. 151. Of God as discovered by the light of nature, iii. 272. Of the nature of God, infinite, vi. 399. And severity of God, viii. 593, 597. An all-sufficiency of, in God, ix. 431.

Gospel, the ministration of the Spirit, iii. 26. How abused and despised, iii. 265. Its influence on the lusts and desires of men, iii. 277. Things which are peculiarly its own, iii. 278. More clearly discovers what is known by the light of nature, iii. 278. What it superadds to moral duties, iii. 278. Sent to men in pursuance of the decree of election, iii. 595. Precepts, nature of, iii. 607, 608. Why called the "ministration of the Spirit," iv. 502. Grounds of faith, v. 401. The sovereignty of God in sending it, viii. 19; in the continuance of it in any place, viii. 23; in the reformation of its doctrines and worship, viii. 24. What men may do towards its expulsion, viii. 24. Its efficacy in conversion, viii. 31. Danger of losing it, viii. 31. Want of it the greatest loss, viii. 33. Happiness of enjoying it, viii. 39. Consequences of abusing it, viii. 39. Favours not civil penalties against heretics, viii. 202. To be preached in all the world, viii. 390. Embracing of the, the safety of a nation, viii. 390. Represents Christ as the object of faith, viii. 552. Duty of Christians to propagate it, viii. 576. Worship, its beauty and glory, ix. 56. What those do who are not satisfied with it, ix. 60. Opposed to outward splendour under the law, ix. 67. Stains the glory of outward pomp in worship, ix. 68. Worship, how performed in and by the Spirit, ix. 69. Worship of the new testament, ix. 79. Why not successful in some places, ix. 181. Removal of it, ix. 187. Season, what it is, ix. 195. The nature of it, ix. 222. The power of God, ix. 235. Charity, nature of, ix. 256. Charity, how exercised, ix. 261. How and upon what grounds preached to all, x. 297, 383. Promises, what, xi. 227. Institutions of the, remarks concerning, xv. 8. Church-state as appointed by Christ, xv. 261.

Gospellers, who they were, iv. 445.

Governing the world, the providence of God, x. 30.

Government of the church, iv. 514, viii. 49. Of the Spirit renounced, vi. 208. Rights of the divine, x. 567. Church, xv. 489.

Governor, supreme, of the Jewish polity, God the, x. 592.

Grace, of union, as it respects the person of Christ, i. 227. A necessary preparation for glory, i. 288. How to obtain fresh supplies of, i 432. Fellowship with Christ in, ii. 47. Of Christ boundless, ii. 61. Purchased, of communion with Christ in, ii. 154; causality of, ii. 155. Habitual, nature of, ii. 199. Of Christ, acquaintance with the, ii. 263. How acted and exercised by Christ, iii. 169. Spirit of, iii. 201. Common work of, iii. 236, xi. 640. Not a moral persuasion only, iii. 311. How efficient in conversion, iii. 311, 315. Victorious and irresistible, iii. 317, 319, x. 134. Produced by a creating act, iii. 323. And nature opposed, iii. 368. Dependent on continual influences from God, iii. 393. Originally all in Christ, iii. 414. And duty reconciled, iii. 433. Excited by afflictions, iii. 448. And sin, how they oppose each other, iii 489. Delivers the soul from spiritual encumbrances, iii 496. How communicated from Christ, iii. 521. Administration of, not always equal, iii. 620. Spirit of, iv. 256. And gift of prayer, iv. 308. And works, how opposed, v. 24. Covenant of, v. 276. Preventing, vi. 93. Renewing, vi. 94. To be cherished and improved, vi. 592. Thankfulness for, a principal duty of be-

lievers in this world, vi. 592. Sin and, dominion of, vii. 505-560. The decay of its principle, how recovered from, ix. 368. How we should apply to Christ to strengthen it, ix. 376. How resident in Christ, ix. 482. And glory merited for us by Christ, x. 93. Cause of, x. 100. Common, x. 134. Universal, xii. 551. Distinction between moral virtue and, xiii. 411.

Graces perfected in heaven, i. 412. Not absolutely in our own power, iii. 367. Of holiness improved into perfection, iii. 375. How increased and strengthened, iii. 389. Concatenation of, iii. 392. In which believers resemble God, iii. 584, 586. Spiritual, how different from gifts, iv. 420. Improved by the mortification of sin, vi. 23. Of believers, how related to Christ, vi. 585. Exercise of, in worship, vii. 434. Acted and exercised in the oblation of Christ, xii. 556.

Grandeur of the gospel ministry, iv. 488. Worldly, trust in, a source of corruption in the church, xv. 128.

Grant of Christ to those who believe, ix. 617.

Gratitude and obedience from the pardoned due to God, x. 622.

Gravity in ministers, iv. 512.

Greatness of some duties, vi. 94. Of the power of sin, vi. 205. Of the mystery of forgiveness, vi. 412. Of pardoning mercy, vi. 498. Of God seen in the everlasting covenant, ix. 428.

Greek tongue, why the books of the New Testament were written in the, iv. 212. And Hebrew text, purity of, xvi. 345. Once a general language, xvi. 363.

Greeks and Jews, the two classes to whom the gospel was preached, iv. 40.

Grief for sin, iii. 233.

Grieve the Spirit, how we may, ii. 149. We must not, the Holy Spirit, ii. 264, iv. 373, 413; when we do, vii. 459; consequences if we do, viii. 306.

Groaning under present infirmities, i. 384.

Grotius, annotations of, reviewed, xii. 617. Digression on his interpretation of Isaiah liii., xii. 455. Lections out of, considered, xvi. 419.

Ground and pillar of the truth, the church is the, iv. 30.

Grounds of ancient and present Pelagianism, v. 22. Of evangelical holiness, v. 380. Of men's delight in divine worship, vii. 423. Of believers' assurance, xi. 81. Of the saints' perseverance, xi. 109. Of obligation to moral duties, xiii. 438. Of desire for liberty, xiii. 577. Of nonconformity, xv. 141.

Growth in grace, means of, i. 118. And increase of spiritual life, i. 438. In grace and wisdom, how ascribed to Christ, iii. 170. Of the new creature, iii. 214. In holiness enjoined and required, iii. 387. In holiness, compared to that of plants and trees, iii. 396. In holiness secret and indiscernible, iii. 396. In holiness an object of faith, iii. 401. And increase of spiritual graces, iii. 505, vi. 23. In holiness an advance towards glory, iii. 582. And progress in knowledge, how attained, iv. 206. Means of spiritual, vii. 284. In grace slow and imperceptible, vii. 449.

Guests, thoughts about spiritual things, compared to, vi. 297.

Guidance of hands of the penmen of Scripture, iii. 144. External, the Spirit leads into all truth not by, iv. 144. Of faith, vii. 445. Of the Holy Spirit, xi. 342.

Guide, the Holy Spirit our, iii. 533. Safe, the church of Rome no, xiv. 481.

Guides, false, in religion, mischief done by, iii. 353. In religion, defects of, vii. 182. Spiritual, when to be consulted, vii. 239. The soul, how faith, ix. 493.

Guilt, how to keep alive a sense of, ii. 193. Disquieting sense of, iii. 233. And filth of sin, how made known, iii. 428. Of sin, sense of, necessary, vi. 50. Sometimes prevented by death, vi. 263. Destructive of consolation, vi. 341. Of sin, how removed by Christ, xi. 290. Of sin, redemption from, xii. 519. Of schism, xv. 377.

Guilty, before God, all are, v. 26. The meaning of the word in Scripture, v. 197. Whether those ought to be called, for whom Christ made satisfaction, x. 599.

Gust and relish of spiritual things, vii. 270, 471.

Habit, supernatural, iii. 469. Of holiness necessary to every act, iii. 474. How preserved, iii. 475. Permanency of, iii. 487. Of grace infused, v. 310. Of grace in believers, xi. 97.

Habits, vicious, how best counteracted, i. 307. Intellectual, nature of, iii. 474. Acquired, in religion, iii. 474. Produce acts of their own kind, iii. 482. Vicious, how prevented, vii. 558. And acts distinguished, x. 579.

Habitual righteousness of Christ, ii. 156. And actual grace, ii. 199, 200, iii. 529. Pollution, inconsistent with holiness, iii. 431. Uncleanness equal in all, iii. 431. And actual righteousness, iii. 475. Grace necessary to obedience, iii. 621. Weakening of sin, vi. 23. Inclination of the will to good, vi. 161. Declensions of professors, vi. 281. Omission of duty, vii. 176. Formality, vii. 539.

Habitude of God towards man, x. 454.

Hamilton, Patrick, death of, viii. 181.

Hands and tongues of the prophets guided by the Holy Spirit, iii. 134. Laying on of, iv. 446.

Happiness, future state of, its nature, vii. 332. Of communion with God, viii. 36.

Happy fault, what so called, ii. 89, viii. 35.

Hardening, judicial, ix. 190; the reasons of it, ix. 305.

Hardness, judicial, of heart, vi. 48, vii. 42, ix. 190. Of heart, what it is, vii. 534.

Harmony of the divine attributes in Christ, ii. 92. Between grace and the command, iii. 625. Of divine revelations, iv. 86. Of the mystery of grace, v. 49. Of Scripture an evidence of its divine origin, xvi. 342.

Hatred of truth, iv. 183. Of good men, vii. 233. Of the power of godliness, viii. 29. Of sin, God manifests his, in punishing it, x. 550. To sin, God's, x. 522, 618. How ascribed to God, xii. 114.

Head of the church, Christ the, i. 362, vi. 586, viii. 566, xiv. 365, xv. 478. Of the new creation, work of the Spirit with respect to the, iii. 159. Of influence, Christ is a, iii. 514. Of all spiritual supplies, Christ the, vi. 286. Ass's, worship of an, xiv. 477.

Heating, spiritual, i. 400. Of backsliding, i. 457. Gift of, iv. 453, 462.

Hearing the word of God with delight, vii. 30. Prayer, God, viii. 608.

Heart, the practical principle of operation, iii. 252. Depravity of the, iii. 326. New, what it is, iii. 326, 476. Stony, taken away, iii. 327. Circumcision of the, iii. 476. Acquiescency of the, in God, v. 101. The, not to be trusted in, vi. 105. Mortification of, to temptation, vi. 143. The seat of indwelling sin, vi. 169. Of man unsearchable, vi. 171. Deceitful, vi. 172. Contradictions of, vi. 173. A well-tuned, viii. 81. Filled with love to ordinances, ix. 552.

Heartlessness to duty, vi. 243.

Hearts, searching our own, iv. 305. Of sinful men hard and senseless, viii. 109.

Heathen pleas, xiv. 14.

Heaven, state of Christ in, i. 235; the continued

exercise of his mediatory office in, i. 252. Views of, a test of character, i. 245. Right notions of, vii. 332. Sensual views of, vii. 336. Subjective glory of, vii. 339. Compared with death and hell, vii. 342. Who will be excluded from, viii. 37. Why God is said to be in, xii. 90.
Heavenly gift, what it is, vii. 22.
Heavens created and adorned by the Spirit, iii. 95. And earth, what is meant by them sometimes in Scripture, viii. 253–255, ix. 133. And earth to be destroyed by fire, ix. 133.
Hebraisms of Scripture, iv. 215.
Hebrew and Greek text, purity of, xvi. 345. Points or vowels, xvi. 370.
Hebrews, Epistle to the, design of, i. 85.
Hedge against worldly affections, vii. 409.
Hegesippus, his account of the primitive churches, vii. 67. Testimony of, xiii. 149.
Height of the mystery of the gospel, difficult to keep up to the, v. 46.
Heir of all, Christ the, i. 215.
Heirs of righteousness, believers are, ii. 218.
Helt, gates of, i. 35. Coming out of heaven, what, vi. 280. A twofold fear of, xi. 392. Fear of, its influence, xi. 479. Fire, meaning of, xii. 147.
Help in duty from the Holy Spirit, iii. 554. And relief from Christ, vii. 247. And relief, when to be sought from God, vii. 393. Spiritual, who most want it, viii. 33. From men not to be expected, ix. 425.
Helps, ecclesiastical, in the interpretation of Scripture, iv. 226.
Hereditary corruption, x. 73.
Heresies and errors, Satan's attempt to destroy the church by, i. 37. Why they should not be tolerated, viii. 58. Such as disturb the state not to be tolerated, viii. 59.
Heresy, hard to know what it is, viii. 60, xiv. 28.
Heretics, generally persecutors when in power, viii. 64.
Heritage, God's people are his, ix. 281–283.
Heroes, of, xiv. 476.
Hidden man of the heart, frame of, xi. 85.
Hide himself from us, why Christ does, i. 390.
High-priest, ascent of the Jewish, typical, i. 249.
Hinderances, God lays, in the way of sinners, vi. 210. To consolation removed, vi. 555.
Hindering, not, sin makes us partakers of its guilt, viii. 614.
Hinge, every thing in Christian religion turns on the, of the work of the Holy Spirit, iii. 29.
Historical books of Scripture written by inspiration, iii. 143. Faith, v. 72.
History, use of, in the interpretation of Scripture, iv. 219.
Holiness of God how represented in creation, i. 182. Of communion with Christ in, ii. 197. Principle and fruits of, iii. 27. Nature of, iii. 366, 386. Only by gospel grace, iii. 370. How it passeth over into eternity, iii. 374. Glorious in this life, iii. 376. Commanded in a way of duty, promised in a way of grace, iii. 384. Increase of, iii. 387, 388. Growth of, not discerned, iii. 400. Pleases God, iii. 413. Not obstructed but promoted by free justification, iii. 416, 417. Of God, sin opposed to, iii. 427. Of God, its nature, iii. 427, vi. 623, xi. 88. All evangelical, derived from Christ, iii. 514. Of God, as manifested in Christ, binds us to be holy, iii. 570. Not absolutely of the same use under the old and the new covenant, iii. 572. Necessary to the future enjoyment of God, iii. 574. The highest excellency of our nature, iii. 579. Election a cause of and motive to, iii. 591. The design of God in election, iii. 592. Universal, necessity of, iii. 607, 609, ix. 165. Perfecting, duty of, vi. 14. How it may degenerate into self-righteousness, vi. 609. Of the gospel, apostasy from the, vii. 159. Must be our main design and business, ix. 166. Motives to, ix. 172. The way to peace and rest, ix. 173. The means of saving a nation, ix. 177. Its tendency to promote the glory of Christ, ix. 178. Of God seen in the everlasting covenant by his condescension, ix. 428.
Holy Ghost, the power of the Most High, iii. 163.
Holy Spirit, import of the name, iii. 55.
Honesty, moral, not holiness, iii. 415. Its importance, vi. 274.
Honour due to the person of Christ, i. 103. And worship, the person of Christ the object of, i. 104. How conferred on believers, ii. 184. Of the soul, conformity to God is the, iii. 430. And praise, love of, iv. 180. Worldly, love of, vi. 106. Of gospel grace, what is contrary to it, vii. 452. Of God, how engaged for his people, viii. 152.
Hope of general mercy groundless, ii. 103. Work of the Spirit in us, ii. 253. Grounds of, for sinners, vi. 365. For eternity, what it should rest upon, vi. 537. Of glory, vi. 552. Exercise of, vii. 321. Of being with Christ in heaven, vii. 344.
Hopelessness of self-righteousness, ii. 103.
Hopes of heaven, how destroyed, vi. 311.
Hoping in God, vi. 644.
Horeb, nature of the law given at, v. 285.
Hornet among the Canaanites, what meant by it, viii. 91.
Horoscope of age, xiii. 5.
Horror and distress of sinners, by what occasioned, v. 14.
Host of heaven and earth, what, iii. 95, 96.
Hour of temptation, vi. 99.
House of God, its nature and privileges, ii. 217; decked with the spoils of enemies, viii. 110; whereof it consists, viii. 286; properties or chief qualities of it, viii. 288; its glory, viii. 289.
Houses of wine, what, ii. 44.
Human nature of Christ, by whom opposed, i. 39; its glorification, i. 238, 344; purity of, iii. 168; work of the Spirit in and on the, iii. 175; its exaltation, iv. 356. Nature exalted by Christ, i. 276. Faith, what, iv. 51. Sacrifices, x. 525.
Humanity, Christ is desirable and worthy our acceptation, as to his, ii. 63.
Humble walking with God, iii. 462, ix. 84–130; the life and substance of religion, ix. 125; makes us conformable to Christ, ix. 126.
Humbling peace, God's peace is, vi. 77.
Humiliation of Christ, i. 484. Constant, the effect of godly sorrow, v. 453. Evangelical, what is the life of, vi. 379. Of the church, viii. 84. True, its nature, viii. 637.
Humility in the believer a result of God's electing love, iii. 598. Safety of, iv. 176.
Hurt and ruin of sin, vii. 512.
Husband and wife, union of, illustrates union between Christ and his church, xi. 340.
Husbandman, simile from conduct of a, ix. 457.
Hymn to the Virgin Mary, xiv. 218.
Hypocrisy, a sign of, vi. 602, vii. 461.
Hypocrite, light of the, i. 438.
Hypocrites, great number of, vi. 297. Profession of, how judged, viii. 324, ix. 142. How hardened, viii. 330. Who are, xi. 641. How treated of God, xiii. 135.
Hypostalical union of the natures of Christ, i. 40, 223.

Ideas and representations, false, of Christ, i. 141.
Idiotisms of Scripture, iv. 215.
Idolatry, origin of, i. 70. Of the papal church, i. 393. The first apostasy, iii. 43. Cure of, by the captivity, iii. 43. Nature of, viii. 165. Spiritual, xiii. 135. Remarkable definition of, xiv. 214.

Ignatius, a remarkable saying of, ii. 137.
Ignominious, the death of Christ was, xii. 436.
Ignorance of the nature of God, i. 296. Taken for simple nescience, how ascribed to the human nature of Christ, iii. 170. Of the true nature of holiness, iii. 480. Of divine things, causes and reasons of, iv. 174. In prayer, how taken away, iv. 271. Of indwelling sin dangerous, vi. 167, 183. Of the will of God, vi. 258. Sins of, vii. 50. A cause of apostasy, vii. 102. Of our spiritual wants, viii. 37. And disability in ministers, xv. 173.
Illapses of the Spirit, ii. 10.
Illumination, previous to conversion, wrought on men's souls by the word, iii. 228, 231. Distinguished from mere natural knowledge, iii. 231. Of the mind, iv. 7, vii. 518. Of believers, xi. 646. By the word, xvi. 320.
Illyricus, a saying of, xiii. 361.
Image of God, Christ is the, i. 63, 74, 294, xii. 322; its transforming power, i. 75; in Christ, represented to us in the gospel, i. 171; in what it consists, iii. 102, 430, 523; man created in the, iii. 417, x. 85, xii. 156; defaced by sin, iii. 418; in the soul, how repaired, iii. 469; wrought in us, evidence of, vii. 363.
Imagery in the church of Rome, its origin, viii. 553.
Images, and their worship, controversy about, viii. 179. Used as representations of Christ, viii. 552. Of, xiv. 123, 235, 426.
Image-worship, evil of, iii. 185.
Imagination, faith of miracles not a strong fixing of the, iv. 466. The, fixed upon evil objects, vi. 109. Corruption of the, vi. 191, vii. 520.
Imaginations, foolish, iii 254. Sinful, vi. 245. Of the heart evil, vii. 298. Improper, about the heavenly state, vii. 335.
Imitation of Christ necessary, iii. 512, ix. 437.
Immanent works of God, i. 473.
Immeasurable fulness of grace in Christ, ix. 480.
Immensity of God, vi. 622, vii. 372, xii. 93.
Immortality and glory, when not properly regarded, vii. 319. How ascribed to man in innocency, xii. 150. Way to a blessed, xii. 160.
Immutability of the decrees of God, x. 14.
Impatience in spiritual things, nature and evil of, vi. 426.
Imperfection of personal righteousness, v. 235.
Impetration, nature of, iii. 558, x. 223. And application, the distinction of, x. 222; the abuse of it opposed, x. 224, 232.
Implantation into Christ, i. 366. Of spiritual principles, iii. 551. Of spiritual habits and principles in the mind, iv. 185.
Importance of the doctrine of the Holy Spirit, iii. 26. Of the doctrine of sanctification, iii 369.
Importunity of sin, vi. 198. In prayer, vi. 357.
Imposition of names by a prophetical spirit, iii. 128. Of hands, iv. 465. Of the office of mediator, x. 164. Of liturgies, xv. 3, 33. Of terms of communion, xv. 156.
Impositions, arbitrary, in religion, iv. 245.
Impossibility of sinning in some cases, vi. 272. How the word is used in Scripture, x. 558. Moral, xi. 566.
Impotency of man through sin, ii. 97. Of the mind to receive spiritual things, iii. 259, 266, 288; how taken away, iii. 327, 493. For obedience, vi. 535.
Impression of signal mercies, losing the, iv. 415. The law makes no, on some men, vi. 317. Of God in his promises, vi. 640.
Impressions or characters of God in the Scriptures, iv. 91. From truth, readiness to receive, iv 105. Temporary, on the mind, vii 412. Divine, want of readiness to receive, vii. 535.
Improvement of, and growth in grace, i. 175. Wise and holy, of temptation, ii. 144. Of holiness, iv. 286. Of the ministry, ix. 436.
Impulse of actual grace, ii. 143. Sinful, vi. 257.
Imputation of righteousness, v. 9. The nature of, v. 162.
Inability, distinction between natural and moral, iii. 266.
Inadvertency in duty, vi. 236, 242. As it regards sin, vi. 253.
Inbeing, mutual, between Christ and believers, i. 367.
Incapacities, all, removed from us in heaven, i. 381.
Incarnation of Christ, i. 350, 478, xii. 283; why denied, v. 47.
Inclination of the mind to vanity, causes of, iv. 176. Of the mind to spiritual things, vii. 270. To persevere, when wrought in believers, xi. 444.
Inclinations, no preparatory, in unregenerate men, iii. 296. Holy, in a gracious soul, iii. 491. Sinful, to be watched against, iii. 545. Gracious, how wrought in believers, iv. 259.
Incomprehensibility of God, i. 65.
Inconformity to God, iii. 427, 578.
Inconveniencies of sinning, vi. 273.
Incorporation of temptation with lust, vi. 113. Into Christ, ix. 541. Of spiritual food, ix. 574. Of Christ in us, ix. 591.
Increase of trouble with age, i. 433. Of glory to God by redemption, ii. 89. Of sin in advancing life, iii. 339. Of holiness, iii. 387. And growth of spiritual graces, iii. 505. Of faith, vii. 319. Of riches, inordinate desire of, vii. 331. Of faith and love, ix. 481. And continuance of the church, xv. 524.
Incursion of actual sin, v. 236. Of vain thoughts to be guarded against, vii. 385, 386.
Indelible character, ix. 461.
Independency of the will of God, xi. 147.
Independentism, of, xiii. 253.
Indications of divine displeasure, how we should be affected by them, vii. 536.
Indifference to the things of religion, vii. 136. To ordinances, ix. 512.
Indignation of God against sin, ii. 84. Of God against compliance with Antichristianism, ix. 508.
Indiscriminate admission to the Lord's table not to be allowed, xv. 172.
Inditing a good matter, meaning of the expression, ix. 472.
Inducement, moral, xi. 507.
Indulgence of inordinate affections, i. 402. Of sin prevents progress in holiness, iii. 404. Unto one sin, effect of, vii. 179. Of private lust, evil effect of, vii. 253. Of sin dangerous, vii. 462. In religious opinions, xiii. 345. And toleration considered, xiii. 519.
Industry necessary in the use of means, iv. 168. In business commendable, vii. 389.
Indwelling of the Holy Spirit, ii. 232, xi. 125, 329. Sin, nature of, iii. 541; always abides, vi. 10; its nature, deceit, prevalency, and prevention, vi. 153-322; influence of, vi. 342; makes use of every occasion, vi. 167; facility with which it acts, vi. 167.
Infant baptism, xvi. 258.
Infants, effects of sin in, iii. 338. Corruption of, x. 70. How far innocent and guilty, xi. 554. To be baptized, xvi. 258.
Infallibility of revelation, i. 94. As to the event of the operation of the Holy Spirit, iii. 317. Of divine faith, iv. 15. Of the effect of grace, x. 133. Of the pope, xiv. 233. Of the church, xiv. 300.
Infection of national vices to be guarded against, vii. 256.

Infinity of the mercy of God, x. 581. Of God, xii. 105.
Infirmities, how Christ was subject to our, iii. 167. Bearing with each other's, xiii. 70.
Infirmity, sins of, xi. 516.
Influence of the power of Christ in believers, i. 99. Of the obedience of Christ, ii. 158. Actual, for the performance of every spiritual duty, ii. 172. Christ is a head of, iii. 514. How given to truth in the soul, iv. 200.
Influences, comforting, how restrained from Christ in his agony, ix. 533.
Information, false, effect of, vii. 473.
Infusion of divine life, in regeneration, iii. 469. Of a gracious ability to understand the truth, iv. 167. Of gifts, extraordinary, not to be expected, iv. 518. Of the habit of grace, xi. 97.
Ingenuity, filial, iv. 268.
Ingenuousness in the acknowledgment of sin, vi. 372, 373.
Ingratitude the highest sin against God, i. 165. Of rejecting Christ, i. 425.
Inhabitation, how the idea of, has been applied to the person of Christ, i. 231. Of the Spirit, ii. 232, iii. 549, iv. 383, xi. 329. Of God in Christians, ix. 289.
Inherent righteousness, nature of, iii. 218, 527. Sin, x. 70. Holiness, xi. 118.
Inheritance over all things lost in Adam, i. 209; recovered in Christ, i. 213. The heavenly, how secured against a second forfeiture, i. 213. Heavenly, title to, ii. 218. The heavenly, forfeited by sin, iv. 409. Of the people of God known by him, viii. 94; dangerous to encroach upon it, viii. 94.
Iniquity cleaves to our holy things, i. 258. Mystery of, vii. 71.
Initial communion with God, ii. 9. Deliverance from sin, iii. 460. Knowledge of divine things, iv. 147. Justification, v. 139. Redemption, vi. 646.
Initiation into covenant with God, iii. 72.
Innate principles of our nature, God known by, iv. 84. Conception of the rectitude of God, x. 517. Light of nature, God reveals himself by, xvi. 310.
Innocence and holiness of Christ, ii. 50. State of Adam in, iii. 284. State of, the law given to man in, vii. 543. And guilt of infants, xi. 554. And truth vindicated, xiii. 343.
Insition into Christ, i. 366.
Inspection of the heart and conduct by Christ, i. 98. Of spiritual things, iv. 129.
Inspiration the original of prophecy, iii. 129. The nature of, iii. 131. Of the prophets, iii. 132. Adjuncts of, iii. 134. Of the Scriptures, iv. 35. Immediate, iv. 150.
Instability, freedom from, in glory, i. 405. In holy duties, iii. 254. Of mind, vii. 382.
Instated in new relations, how believers are, ix. 466.
Institution of God, preaching an, iii. 306. Of the church a cause of thanksgiving, ix. 528. Of the Lord's supper, ix. 583, 616.
Institutions of worship under the law, i. 135. Of the law could not purge away sin, iii. 433 Of worship, delight in, vii. 450. Of Christ, chief things to be aimed at in observing, xv. 455. Of the new testament not ceased, xv. 465; why to be observed, xv. 471. Of the gospel, the principal, xv. 477.
Instruction, one end of preaching, iii. 303. Mutual, necessary as to the things of God, iv. 13. Of Adam, vocal, xiii. 9. In the worship of God, xv. 445.
Instrument, the gospel an, in the hand of God, iv. 43.
Instrumental cause of purification, iii. 446; of justification, v. 108; of spiritual freedom, vii. 554.
Instrumentality of the word, iii. 235.
Instruments provided for the work of God, iii. 16. God never wants, to execute his anger, viii. 92. Mean and low, used by God for great purposes, viii. 328. Musical, who first used them in the worship of God, ix. 463.
Insufficiency of human learning, ii. 111. Of moral certainty, iv. 47. Sense of our own, iv. 456. Of legal obedience, v. 25. To manage spiritual thoughts, vii. 383.
Integrity and uprightness, importance of, vi. 142. Of the Hebrew and Greek text, xvi. 345. Of the Scriptures, xvi. 353.
Intellective knowledge of God, x. 23.
Intelligence, simple, belongs to God, xii. 127.
Intension of mind in the exercise of grace, i. 448; in attendance on the means of grace, iii. 230; in the exercise of prayer, iv. 295.
Intention of Christ at his death, according to the Universalists, vain and fruitless, x 238.
Intentions, whether divine, can be frustrated, x. 43.
Intercession of Christ, ii. 198, iv. 357, xi. 365; a cause of our holiness, iii. 506, 631. Of the Spirit, iv. 288. Of Christ secures the covenant, ix. 419; wherein it consists, x. 176; its nature, x. 184; how represented by the high priest entering into the holiest place, x. 183; how distinguished before and after his incarnation, x 184, 185; proved to be of equal compass with his oblation, x. 186; vindicated from objections, x. 187.
Intercision of faith, how attempted, xi. 86. Of Christianity, whether Judaism was an, xiii. 7.
Intercourse of love between Christ and the church, i. 159. With God, holiness necessary to our, iii. 573. Of soul with God, iv. 328.
Interest, mutual, between Christ and his people, i. 354. In Christ, necessity of, i. 421. In God, our first, how lost, ii. 6. Of faith, obedience, and worship, in principles of truth, iii. 64. In sanctification not always known, iii. 373. In the blood of Christ, how obtained, iii. 457. In election evidenced by holiness, iii. 593. In Christ, how obtained, iv. 410. Regeneration not previous to, in forgiveness, vi. 597. Of God's people dear to him, viii. 412. In Christ, the general work of faith, ix. 496. In the promises, xi. 233.
Intermission, there must not be any in opposing sin, vi. 174.
Internal conformity to Christ, i. 169. Works of God, i. 473. Actings of the Trinity, iii. 66. Acts of holiness, iii. 528. Wants, iv. 273. Manner of duty, vi. 235. Liberty, vii. 550. Form of God's work of sending the Spirit, ix. 447. Grace, x. 135. Court of God, x. 613. Evidence of the truth of the Scriptures, xvi. 307. Light, of, xvi. 466.
Interpositions between us and Christ, i. 377.
Interpretation, false assertion of the church of Rome on, iv. 121. Of Scripture, constant supplication necessary for the right, iv. 204. Of tongues, iv. 472. Of severe providences, viii. 604. Of Scripture, who is qualified and authorized for the, xiv. 40. Of Scripture, xvi. 437.
Interpreter, duty of a faithful, iv. 204.
Intimations of the love of Christ, how obtained, i. 398. Of the love of God, signal, vi. 557. Of Providence, ix. 555.
Introduction of spiritual light into the mind, iv. 172. Of grace by Christ, v. 44.
Intuitive notions of the divine essence not possible, i. 65. The view of Christ in heaven will be, i. 378. Knowledge of God, x. 23, xi. 142.
Invisible life, how given to the church, iv. 428. State, the soul enters by death, ix. 531.

Invitations, condescension of Christ in his, i. 422.
Invocation of God, i. 22. Of Christ, i. 110.
Iota, and tittle, every, of Scripture, sacred, iv. 213.
Irregularity, evil effects of, ii. 115. In the exercise of grace, iii. 400. Of our natures the cause of shame, iii. 452. Of the affections, iv. 279.
Irresistibility of the power of God, why denied, x. 12. Of grace, x. 134.
Isaac, sacrifice of, x. 531.
Israel of God, who are the, vi. 643. Their appellations and distributions, ix. 131. Or the Jews, types of the church, in their deliverances and ordinances, x. 257.
Issue of the death of Christ, x. 457.
Issues of entering into temptation, vi. 102.

James and Paul, no contradiction between, on the subject of justification, v. 384.
Jealousy and unbelief distinguished, vi. 558. Sacrifice of, ix. 566. How ascribed to God, xii. 114.
Jehovah, import of the name, ix. 246. Christ called, xii. 250.
Jephthah, pagan account of the sacrifice of, x. 531.
Jeroboam, how he was hardened, viii. 331.
Jesuits, trick of the, i. 431.
Jews and Greeks, the two classes to whom the gospel was preached, iv. 40. Dispersion of, consequences of, iv. 212. Of their conversion and restoration, iv. 440. Apostle Paul's consideration of the state of the, v. 25. Offended by the mean appearance of Christ, viii. 331. Opinion of Arminians as to salvation of ancient, x. 109. Administration of divine ordinances among the, xiii. 10. Objections of the, against Christ, xiv. 77, 356.
John Baptist, why superior to the prophets, iv. 426.
Joseph of Arimathea, said to have brought the gospel into Britain, xiv. 95.
Joy, spiritual, ii. 252. Connected with the love of Christ, ix. 465.
Judah, how ruling with God, viii. 93.
Judah, Rabbi, author of the Mishna, the text of the Talmud, xvi. 378.
Judge, the, before whom we are to appear, to be duly considered, v. 13. God is, of all, vi. 630. We must not, xv. 136.
Judging self, v. 452. Self, for sin, vi. 375. The state of others, how far we may do it, vi. 591. Of doctrines, the rule for, xi. 608, 611.
Judgment, how committed to Christ, i. 138. Conviction of, ii. 105. How the world is convinced of, iv. 367. None able to stand before God in, v. 18. Final, on what grounds it will proceed, v. 160. Of the law on sinners, vi. 315. Final, as yet future, vi. 632. Of sin, making a proper, vii. 177. Of spiritual barrenness, ix. 179. A spiritual, the gift of God, xvi. 327.
Judgments, amazing, iii. 346. Spiritual, why inflicted, iv. 417. Executed by Christ in the world, iv. 433. Extraordinary outward, vii. 40. Of God, why brought upon a church, vii. 460. How mercies become, viii. 38. On persecutors, viii. 186. Why brought on churches, viii. 600. When inevitable, viii. 616. How we may be prepared for them, ix. 398. How to be considered when they fall promiscuously on men, ix. 492. Of God on men, x. 545.
Judicial hardness of heart, vi. 48, vii. 534. Actings of God as to his own people, vi. 262. Hardness of heart and blindness of mind, vii. 144.
Julian the apostate, his conduct, vii. 48.
Justice of God, clearly revealed in Christ, ii. 83. Of divine, ix. 521, x. 481. And truth of God, how maintained, x. 464. Different kinds of, x. 497. Of God in the punishment of sin, xii. 433.
Justiciaries, self, Romanists, xiii. 135.
Justification, i. 487, v. 7, xii. 561, 591. Calumny against, refut d, iii. 416. Not for our obedience, iii. 608. Abuse of, v. 5. First and second, v. 31, 137. Who are capable subjects of, v. 82. Instru mental cause of, v. 108. Notion and signification of the word in Scripture, v. 123. Continuation of, v. 143. Complete, v. 143. Formal cause of, v. 205. By faith, v. 290. The life of, vii. 488. Wherein it consists, x. 276. Before believing, x. 449.

Keys of the kingdom of heaven, iv. 441. Power of the, xvi. 63.
Killing of sin, what it is, iii. 544.
Kindness and benignity an evidence of holiness, iii. 586. Required towards believers, iii. 588. Towards God, how the heart may be kept full of, v. 418. Of Christ as our High Priest, vi. 81. And love of God, a check to sin, vi. 240. Acts of, God is more willing to do, than to punish, x. 594.
Kingdom of Satan erected on darkness, i. 297. Of Christ, nature of, ii. 72; to what it is compared, viii. 5; how carried on, viii. 320, 376; glorious things belonging to it, viii. 334; wherein it consists, viii. 371; within us, viii. 374.
Kingly office of Christ, i. 96, 480. Power of Christ, end of, iii. 637. Power of Christ glorious, ix. 475.
Kings, their sins punished on the people, viii. 136. Equity of God towards them, viii. 136. How enslaved by the church of Rome, xiii. 167. Ecclesiastical power committed to, xiv. 378.
Knowledge of the withdrawment of Christ, how it may be obtained, i. 392. Self, importance of, ii. 94, vi. 131. Of divine things, by their operations and effects, iii. 38. Of our sanctification, iii. 400. The word of, iv. 459. Of the word of Christ, vi. 139. Of indwelling sin, important, vi. 168. Should be followed by practice, vi. 301. Of God, how obtained, vi. 428. Of our state, whether attainable, vi. 588. Requisite for the ministry, ix. 456. Of God, intuitive and intellective, x. 23. And possession of deliverance, x. 475. Conceit of our own, a cause of divisions, xv. 138.

Labour, necessary in the work of the ministry, vii. 189.
Lamentations a part of prayer, iv. 258.
Land, cultivation of, emblematical, vii. 281. When filled with sin, ix. 7. Signs and evidences of it, ix. 9. When not forsaken of God, ix. 12. What to be done that reformation may be obtained in this, ix. 16.
Language of Scripture, xvi. 434.
Languages, original, of the Scriptures, study of, iv. 210.
Latin service, of the, xiv. 128, 457.
Law, worship under the, represented the glory of Christ, i. 348. Of God, i. 476. Knowledge of sin by the, ii. 95. Of ceremonial ordinances, believers freed from, ii. 212. And light of nature, iii. 278. Written in the heart, iii. 328. The, its instrumentality in conversion, iii. 351. The, expresses the authority and holiness of God, iii. 428. And rule of the acceptance of obedience, iii. 471. Power of the, as to duties, iii. 606. The inward spiritual nature of, declared by Christ, iii. 632. The, expounded and vindicated by Christ, iii. 632. Of nature, prayer a duty of, iv. 341. The, given as a rule of obedience, v. 26. Moral and ceremonial, v. 30. And gospel, order and use of, v. 75. Indwelling sin a, vi. 157. Sin an impelling, vi 165. Concreated with man, vi. 165. Going to, frequent effect of, vi. 295. Of nature in man, sin offers violence to, vi. 303. The, discovers sin, vi. 313. Voice of, as to guilt, vi. 339. Gives no strength against sin, vii. 542. How fulfilled, xi. 295.

Lawful things, when they become dangerous, vi. 223. Callings and occasions, thoughts about, vii. 302. Things must be done lawfully, xiii. 43. In the worship of God, what is, xiii. 480.
Lawfulness of forms of prayer, iv. 347.
Lawgiver, whether Christ is a, i. 135. God is a sovereign, iii. 610. Of the church, Christ is the, ix. 502.
Laws, human, why so little respected, iii. 613. For the establishment of religion, iv. 243. Of Christ, by whom executed, iv. 444.
Laying on of hands, iv. 446.
Lazarus, in what state his soul was when separate, ix. 337.
Learning and literature, why rejected of God, ii. 80. Particular end of, ii. 111. Unsanctified, effect of, iv. 180. Use of, in the interpretation of Scripture, iv 216. Temptations connected with, vi. 119. False repute of, viii. 29.
Leaving a people to their own ways, why God does, iv. 417.
Lections, various, of Scripture, xvi. 290, 358, 362.
Lectum and Scriptum, xvi. 401.
Legacy of Christ to his disciples, iii. 25.
Legal death, what it is, iii. 283. Righteousness, when sought, iii. 302. Purifications, typical, iii. 424. Institutions, their use and end, iii. 456 Perfection, iii. 471. Commands not motives to holiness, iii. 605. Justification, iii. 606. Contendings against sin, vi. 48. And evangelical sense of sin distinguished, vi. 369.
Leprosy, spiritual, iii. 449.
Letter of the Scripture not profitable without the Spirit, iii. 42. A single, of Scripture material, iv. 213. Of the law, saying of the Jews about a, xvi. 355.
Leviathan, what, viii. 87.
Libel on Dr Owen, reflections on, xvi. 269.
Liberality and justice different, x. 596.
Liberty, spiritual, ii. 211. And ability in the renewed will, iii. 494. Of speech in prayer, iv. 293. And power, the word of, vi. 139, 140. Spiritual, improperly extended, vi. 220. And freedom, spiritual, vii. 165. None given by the law, vii. 549. Of second causes not prejudiced by the counsel of God, viii. 11. How defined by the Stoics, viii. 57. Of the will, x. 117. Concomitant, x. 589. False notions of believers as to, xi. 546. Of conscience, xiii. 439, 541. Of dissenters, xiii. 577. Christian, in regard to worship, xv. 150.
Library, Bodleian, eloquent allusion to, xvi 496.
Licentiousness of life, the effect of self-righteousness, vii. 154. Not encouraged by the doctrine of the cross, xii. 546.
Life, spiritual, faith the spring of, i. 132. What the present, is, i. 278. Christ valued more than, ii. 137. All, from God, iii. 255. Of God, alienation from, iii. 256. And death, natural and spiritual, compared, iii. 282. Spiritual, what it is, iii. 284, 478. How Christ is our, iii. 286, 291. Spiritual, derived from Christ, iii. 514. Of Adam in innocency, iii. 530. And salvation, to whom proposed by the gospel, iii. 595. Of Christ, our example, iii. 649. Condition of, temptations from, vi. 120. Urgent occasions of, sin takes advantage from, vi. 230. The foundation of all power, vi. 261. Shortened by God to prevent the commission of sin, vi. 263. And peace, the fruit of spiritual-mindedness, vii. 271. Of man, why shortened. vii. 402. Spiritual, produced by heavenly-mindedness, vii. 489. Of man, contingencies in, x. 35.
Life-giving power of the Father, ii. 17.
Lifting up the eyes and hands to God, i. 107.
Light of truth, i. 80. Of faith, why given to us, i. 305. Spiritual, how wisely distributed. i. 409. Of the morning and evening, how they differ, i. 438. Of the just and the hypocrite, i. 438. Within, the, examined, iii. 36. Of nature, certain things contrary to, iii. 139. Spiritual, attainable by the gospel, iii. 247. How communicated to the mind, iii. 333. Of nature, inbred, iii. 470. Of nature, some things clear by the, iii. 635. Of nature, obscure and partial, iii. 635. Natural, inbred principles of, iv. 82. Scripture, iv. 326. What natural, men have, v. 422. Of faith, as to spiritual things, vii. 447. Of the word, monitory, viii. 624. Of the gospel breaking out under providential changes, ix. 155. Of the gospel, why under it God permits much sin, ix. 156. Given to restrain men, xi. 108. Prophetical, nature of, xiii. 29. How it manifests itself, xvi. 319. Internal, of, xvi. 466.
Lights, two, in the church, xiii. 12.
Likeness to God, in what it consists, iii. 478.
Liking of God, how produced, vi. 419.
Limitation of the act of faith, ix. 525.
Literature, particular end of, ii. 111.
Liturgies, introduction of, iv. 243. Imposition of, xv. 3. Antiquity of, disproved, xv. 25.
Liturgy, consent required to it, xv. 158.
Lives, three sorts of, vi. 74. Of believers, eruptions of sin in, vi. 279.
Living to God in holiness, iii. 469. Unto God, direction for, found in Scripture, iv. 28. Fulness of spiritual things in believers, vii. 278. As we pray, vii. 295. By faith in a time of trouble, ix. 493.
Loadstone and needle, a simile from, i. 385.
Local motion in the sending of the Spirit, no, iii. 111. Mutations in visions, the nature of them, iii. 139. Mutation as to sin, vii. 240.
Long-suffering of God towards sinners, ii. 85. Of God towards believers, its end, vi. 262. Of God, an evidence of forgiveness with him, vi. 448.
Looking to Christ, i. 460, vii. 527. On Christ, iii. 511. Faith expressed by, v. 292.
Lord of all things below, man made, i. 209. Calling Jesus, iii. 17. How Christ is, xii. 173.
Loss of power to render acceptable obedience, by sin, i. 192. Of the vigour and life of grace, i. 442. Of spiritual appetite, i. 450. Of conviction, effect of, iii. 353. Or suspension of spiritual gifts, iv. 434. Of peace and strength, vi. 53. Of the love and smiles of Christ feared, vi. 145. Of the sense of the love of God, vi. 333. Of grace, xi. 119. Punishment of, xii. 492, 494.
Lost, by what our first interest in God was, ii. 6.
Louis XII. of France, his remarkable saying of those whom he had ordered to be slain, viii. 180.
Love and grace, their influence in the counsels of God, i. 60. Of Christ, graciously revealed, i. 115. Necessary to produce obedience, i. 139. False, its signs, i. 141. Of God, Christ the object of, i. 145. Angels upheld by, i. 147. To God, nature of, i. 150; as the love of assimilation, i. 154; of complacency, i. 155; of friendship, i. 155. Motives to, i. 161. Of the graces of Christ, on the part of believers, i. 174. Represented by Christ, i. 300. Glory of Christ in his, i. 332. Of Christ, distinct conceptions of, necessary. i. 337. Of approbation, ii. 21. Of good pleasure, ii. 21. Of rest and complacency, ii. 25. Acquaintance with the, of the Father, ii. 262. The first grace acted by Christ in offering himself, iii. 177. To Christ must be pure and unmixed, iii. 187. How implanted in the soul, iii. 335. To Christ, influence of, iii. 563. Produces a firm adherence unto Christ, iii. 564. Produces conformity to God, iii. 585. To the brethren, how promoted, iii. 588. A motive to holiness, iii. 597, 601. Of sin, effects of, iv. 183 Unspeakable, of the Holy Spirit, iv. 370. Of sin, when the heart is entangled with, vi. 45. Of worldly

honour, vi. 106. And kindness of God, a check to sin, vi. 240. Of the world, vi. 579; evil of, vii. 133. To spiritual things because God is in them, vii. 421. In mercies realized by faith, viii. 100. Of God to his people, seen in the ruin of their enemies, viii. 103. Christian, the bond of perfection, ix. 258; what it is, ix. 259; how to be exercised, ix. 261. Why called a new commandment, ix. 264. The communion of saints lies in, ix. 266. The glory of a church, ix. 268. Its hinderances, ix. 270. To the person of Christ, growing, ix. 363. Between Christ and believers, none like it, ix. 467. To Christ inexpressible, ix. 469. Brotherly, want of, ix. 498. Pleaded to overthrow satisfaction, x. 274. The eternal, into what state the elect are put by it, x. 275. Unchangeable, x. 276. The cause of sending Christ, x. 321. How promoted, xi. 395. Its nature, xii. 534. To sinners, xii. 556. Brotherly, xiii. 62. And peace, of evangelical, xv. 59.

Loveliness of Christ, ii. 77, xi. 398.

Lowliness of mind necessary in order to learn the mind of God, iv. 179.

Lucius of Britain, the first potentate on the earth that owned the gospel, viii. 26.

Lukewarmness, evil of, ix. 498.

Lust, power of, iv. 66. To be brought to the gospel for conviction, vi. 58. How the flesh is said to, against the Spirit, vi. 189. When habitually prevalent, ix. 381. Whether consistent with the truth of grace, ix. 386. The fountain of sin, xi. 511.

Lustrations of the heathen, iii. 429.

Lusts of the mind, iii. 274, 547. Sensual, why men are given up to, vii. 43. Of men disquiet their minds, viii. 380. Of men, unmortified fruits of, xiv. 50.

Luther, his boldness and resolution, iv. 462.

Lutherans, their sentiments as to justification, v. 84.

Macedonian heresy about the Holy Spirit, iii. 68.

Macedonians, the spiritual assistance they required, viii. 9.

Made sin, how Christ was, v. 35, 347.

Madness of indwelling sin, vi. 206.

Magistracy, its use in the world, vi. 269. How supported by God, viii. 149.

Magistrates, duty of, about religion, viii. 41, 163, 187, 193, 631, 640, xiii. 374, 509, xiv. 378, xv. 42. Their duty and power to propagate the gospel, viii. 386. Promises to the church respecting, viii. 387. How useful to the church, viii. 389. Rules for determining their duty and power as to religion, viii. 394. Power over their subjects, x. 567. Alleged power of the, over the conscience, more than is ascribed to Christ, xiii. 377. Their power in matters of morality, xiii. 409.

Maintenance, public, of ministers, viii. 191, xiii. 59, 515.

Majesty of God, meditation on, vi. 63, 624.

Malefactors, how treated by the Druids, x. 529.

Malice, sins of, xi. 538.

Malignity of final unbelief, i. 211.

Man, a mere, not qualified to be a Saviour, i. 201. His nature capable of relation to God, i. 277. A good, is a common good, ii. 318, iv. 435. Creation of, iii. 99, xii. 140. How a middle creature, iii. 100. The perfection of the inferior creation, iii. 101. The new, what, iii. 220, 419. How God discovers unto, what is in him, vi. 93.

Management of things for his own glory, the wisdom of God in, ii. 88. The deceitful, of indwelling sin, vi. 214.

Manifestation of the glory of God, i. 262. Of the glory of Christ, i. 343; our present inability to bear the full, i. 380.

Manifestations of the love of God, ii. 30. Of God, when made to his people, viii. 89.

Manuscript copies of the New Testament, various readings of, xvi. 362.

Marginal readings in the Hebrew Bible, xvi. 401.

Marrow of divine promises, i. 397.

Marrying after divorce, xvi. 254.

Martyr at Bagdad, story of, xiii. 136.

Martyrs, sufferings of the, iv. 36. How they are to sit on thrones of judgment, viii. 65.

Mary, of the Virgin, xiv. 120, 426.

Masoretes, Tiberian, supposed by some to have been the authors of the Hebrew points, xvi. 375.

Mass, of the popish, viii. 564, xiv. 113, 411.

Matter of holiness, in what it consists, iii. 469. Of prayer, how supplied by the Spirit, iv. 271. Of duty must be full and complete, vi. 234. Of holy thoughts, how provided, vii. 387. Of the covenant, ix. 417. Of the satisfaction of Christ, x. 446. And subject of the promises, Christ is the, xi. 228.

Mauricius, the Cappadocian, saying of, x. 521.

Means for the recovery of fallen man, iii. 16. Due, to be used for obtaining the knowledge of Christ, iii. 185; false, rejected, iii. 186. Of regeneration, various, iii. 213. Of moral suasion, iii. 302. For understanding the mind of God in Scripture, iv. 199. Of grace, subduction of, from a people, iv. 417. Of obtaining the knowledge of forgiveness, vi. 509. Use of, in waiting on God, vi. 618. Of spiritual growth, vii. 284. And ways, outward, whereby spiritual affections are expressed, vii. 468. The nature of them, and how they conduce to the end, x. 160. Used in the work of redemption, x. 179.

Measure, the Spirit not given to Christ by, iii. 172. And degree of conviction, no certain, iii. 361. And rule of obedience, iii. 469. And rule of holiness in the word, iii. 507. Of spiritual affections, vii. 469. Of work, how it depends on the measure of gifts, ix. 449.

Measuring spiritual things by carnal, evil of, xii. 237.

Mediation of Christ the only procuring cause of holiness, iii. 506. Of Christ confined to his offices, iii. 629. And intercession of Christ, meditation on, iv. 322. Of Christ, a check to sin, vi. 241. Of Christ, x. 189, xi. 288, xii. 346.

Mediator, Christ as a, in heaven, i. 235, 252. Glory of Christ as, i. 338. All grace comes through Christ as, iii. 514. What Christ did as, x. 196. For whom Christ died as, x. 249.

Meditation on the mediation of Christ, i. 164. On Christ and his glory, i. 316. How faith is exercised in, ii. 197. On the word of God necessary, iv. 191. On God's glorious excellencies, iv. 322. On the mediation and intercession of Christ, iv. 322. On the example of Christ, iv. 458. Usefulness of, vi. 63. Efficacy of, vi. 224. Solemn and stated, vii. 384. When specially necessary, ix. 558, 569.

Medium of the promises, Christ the, xi. 230.

Meetings of Christians, of private, xiii. 47.

Meetness for heaven, how promoted, i. 291. To receive the influential assistance of the Spirit in prayer, iv. 308.

Melchior Canus, quotation from, iv. 114.

Member of the church, the duty of each, iv. 517.

Memorial of the deliverance of Essex, viii. 77.

Mercies, signal, losing the impression of, iv. 415. Great, sin committed against, vi. 280. Common, judgments to men that want the gospel, viii. 38. Consequence of abusing them, viii. 39. The church's, have their appointed season, viii. 84.

Mercy, false views of, vi. 395. Stores of, inexhaustible, vi. 647. Unchangeable and free, vision of,

viii. 5. The proper work of God, viii. 83. No encouragement in what is called the general, ix. 39, 44. Of God, sparing, x. 561. Infinite, x. 574.
Merit not required of us, iii. 379. Inconsistent with grace, iii. 380. Destructive of holiness, iii. 575. Of Christ, efficacy of, x. 87. Wherein it consists, x. 206. The same with impetration, x. 225. Of Christ procured whatever is bestowed on us, x. 253, 286. The importance and original of the word, x. 287. Of Christ, its efficacy, x. 462. Of good works, xiv. 200, 201.
Merits, ecclesiastical, the storehouse of the pope, viii. 584.
Messengers of the nations, how answered, viii. 419.
Mestrezat, his definition of faith, v. 75.
Metaphorical expressions of the glory of Christ, i. 351. The sacrifice of Christ falsely said to be, ii. 429. Expressions about justification, v. 12.
Metaphors of Scripture, iii. 80, 111.
Meteors, when created, iii. 97.
Method of the work of the Spirit in regeneration, iii. 225 Of divine revelations to be believed, iii. 595. How and why not observed in Scripture, iv. 188.
Metropolitical churches, xiii. 108.
Militant and triumphant church, communion of, i. 259, 268. The church, what meant by, i. 485.
Mind and will of God fully comprehended by Christ, i. 91. The, will be free from all darkness in heaven, i. 381. How saints communicate their, to Christ, ii. 121. Depravity of, iii. 248, 250. Spiritual impotency of, iii. 249, 288. The, affected with darkness, iii. 280. The carnal, iii. 288. The leading, conducting faculty of the soul, iii. 330. Must be renewed, iii. 420. Disorder of, by sin, iii. 642. Of man, its state by nature, iv. 55. Of God in his word, causes, ways, and means of understanding the, iv. 117. Intension and fervency of, in prayer, iv. 324. Fixation of, in prayer, iv. 329. How darkened by temptation, vi. 109. Of man, its original state, vi. 173. Carnal, enmity of, against God, vi. 176. Wandering from God in duty, vi. 184. Vanity of, a cause of apostasy, vii. 123. Spirituality of, vii. 267. How we may be said to put God in, of his covenant, ix. 423.
Minded, to be spiritually, what, iii. 484.
Minding of the Spirit, vii. 268.
Minister the Spirit, how God is said to, iii. 112.
Ministerial proposal of the Scriptures, iv. 80. Performance of prayer, iv. 313. Gifts and graces, iv. 491. Endowments the work of the Spirit, ix. 442.
Ministers, how called by the Holy Ghost, iii. 86. Duty of, to spread the gospel, viii. 40. Public maintenance of, viii. 191. The duty of, viii. 632. Should preach to their own hearts, ix. 455. What rule they should follow, x. 300. Ignorance and disability of, xv. 173.
Ministration of the Spirit, iii. 26, 112; the gospel is the, iv. 501.
Ministrations, spiritual, iv. 424. There are only two, ix. 445.
Ministry of angels, i. 89. Of holy men, i. 90. Of the gospel, how the ministry of the Spirit, iii. 153. Of angels about the dead body of Christ, iii. 181. The foundation of the, iii. 191. Of the word, its use in conversion, iii. 303. Of parents and patriarchs, iv. 10. How made effectual, iv. 190. Its use in the church of God, iv. 228. A gift of Christ, iv. 487, ix. 431. What gifts are necessary for the, iv. 498. Personal, of Christ on earth, v. 58. Loss of reverence for the, vii. 540. Of the word monitory, viii. 625. Of the word, how Christ pleads with his people by it, ix. 147. Of the popish indelible character of, ix. 461. How it represents Christ to the soul, ix. 539. How made efficacious, xi. 401.
Miracle of the gift of tongues, iv. 212.
Miracles of the Old Testament, iii. 145; effects of the power of the Holy Ghost, iii. 145. Of Christ, how wrought, iii. 174. In testimony of the Scriptures, iv. 36. For the confirmation of the gospel, iv. 447. Gift of, iv. 453, 465, xiii. 33. Faith of, iv. 461. Prove the deity of Christ, xii. 174. The testimony they give to the Scriptures, xvi. 330.
Miscarriages, we should be humbled for, ii. 272. Under signal enjoyments of divine love, vi. 345. The remembrance of past, often the cause of affliction, vi. 577. Of professors, how to be regarded, vii. 256. Of churches, xv. 104.
Miseries of sinners, ii. 166, iii. 449, 641, vi. 205, 268. Of resisting conviction, vii. 516. What, are the fruit of sin, x. 618. Of a sinful state, xii. 518.
Missal, the Roman, progressively composed, iv. 241.
Mission of Christ proves the necessity of holiness, iii 628. Of the Holy Spirit, iv. 143, 359. Of Christ into the world, vi. 403.
Mistakes about religion a cause of apostasy, vii. 208. Of transcribers of the sacred writings, xvi. 355.
Mixture, no, of properties in the two natures of Christ, i. 234. Of revelation and philosophy, art of, v. 10.
Moab, king of, his sacrifice, x. 536.
Moderation of the passions, v. 448. With regard to the world, vii. 387. Of Romanists and Protestants compared, xiv. 243. And unity, proposals for, xiv. 310.
Mohammedanism, its opposition to the person of Christ, i. 41.
Monastic life useless, ix. 171.
Monuments and testimonies, foreign, applied to the interpretation of Scripture, iv. 222.
Moralists, their manner of teaching compared with that of Christ, iii. 636.
Morality taught by the gospel, iii. 211. Improved by grace, iii. 218.
Morrow, taking thought for the, vii. 303.
Mortification of sin, its nature, iii. 538. Progressive, iii. 545. Manner of the Spirit in, iii. 551. Of sin a duty, vi. 5, vii. 526. Vanity of popish, vi. 39. Must be unintermitted, vi. 174. Neglect of, vii. 316. To the world, when necessary, vii. 387, 407. Of sin in the Romish church, viii. 589. Principal means of, xi. 392.
Moses the first person who committed divine revelations to writing, iii. 143. The sight he had of God, vi. 64. How he was a deliverer, xii. 511.
Motion, no local, in sending the Spirit, iii. 111.
Motions of the Holy Spirit, regularity of, xi. 363.
Motive to obedience, love the, ii. 215. To holiness, election a, iii. 591.
Motives to the love of Christ, i. 161. To religious worship taken from what God is to us, iii. 65. Of the word of God, iii. 307. How influenced by faith, iii. 446. To the purification of sin, iii. 446. In the example of Christ, iii. 512. Of credibility in the Scriptures, iv. 20. To believing, their nature, vi. 307. To obedience, whence derived, vi. 534. Against sin not supplied by the law, vii. 550. To obedience, xi. 387.
Mountains, everlasting, how scattered, viii. 94
Mourning for the sins of others, v. 444. On account of the declension of religion, vii. 243 For sin, vii. 527, viii. 614. For the sins of a nation, a duty and privilege, ix. 366. Occasioned by the withdrawment of God, ix. 515.
Multiplication of tongues part of the curse on man, ii. 112. Of the commands of God, reason of, iii. 626. Of churches, xiii. 173.

Multiplicity of thoughts in the mind, vii. 299.
Music, instruments of, who first used them in the worship of God, ix. 463.
Mutations, local, revelations to the prophets accompanied with, iii. 139.
Mutual love of the Father and the Son, i. 144. Communication of the natures of Christ, i. 232, 233. Interest between Christ and his people, i. 354. Communication of good, ii. 8. Instruction necessary as to the things of God, iv. 13. Forbearance, viii. 57. Love between Christ and his church, ix. 465. Love among believers, how testified, xv. 461.
Myrrh, the word of Christ compared to, ii. 76.
Mysteriousness of the reception of Christ, ix. 621.
Mystery of the person of Christ, i. 29. Of the gospel, why objected to, iii. 277. Of holiness, iii. 372. Of Scripture, iv. 194. Of the gospel, vii. 60.
Mystical account of the love of Christ in the Old Testament, i. 349. Conjunction between Christ and the church, i. 356. Body of Christ, the church, iii. 207, 366, 518, x. 598. Person, Christ and the church one, v. 175.

Name of Christ to be invoked, i. 113. New, given to believers, ii. 210. Of the Spirit, its signification, iii. 47. Of the Spirit, how peculiar to the third person in the Trinity, iii. 54. Of God, denoting his being and authority, proper to each person in the Trinity, iii. 73. And authority of God, the Scripture speaks in the, iv. 26. Of the Holy Spirit, iv. 359. Of spiritual gifts, import of, iv. 422. Of God an evidence of forgiveness, vi. 478. Of God the support of faith, ix. 38. Sake, God's regard to his own, xi. 256. Of God plural, xii. 142. And credit, how Christ suffered in his, xii. 491. Of Christ, praying in, xii. 577. Of God, sanctification of, xv. 456.
Names of things, suitable to their nature, imposed by Adam, ii. 112. And titles, false appropriation of, vii. 196. Of the officers of the church, their double signification, ix. 452. Of God given to Christ, xii. 248.
Nation, how its preservation may be secured, viii. 464. Its prosperity promoted by the gospel, viii. 464. Its opposition to the people of God, provoking, ix. 294.
Nations, all, the inheritance of Christ, viii. 21. God's dealing with sinful, viii. 597. Not acquainted with the gospel, x. 239.
Nature, the, that sinned, the same used in our recovery, i. 197. Human, assumed by Christ, i. 224; exalted in Christ, i. 276. Human, of Christ glorified, i. 345. Of man corrupted, i. 477. Knowledge of, possessed by Adam, ii. 112. Of God the foundation of all religion, iii. 64. Of prophecy, iii. 128. Human, of Christ, purity of, iii. 168. Divine, of Christ, acted not as his soul, iii 169. Divine, iii. 221. Of the common work of the Spirit, iii. 226. Of holiness incomprehensible, iii. 372. Depraved, not able to recover itself, iii. 382. Of decays in holiness, iii. 404. Inbred light of, iii. 470. Of God the fountain of holiness, iii. 515, 568. Light of, iii. 635. Of spiritual gifts, iv. 423. Of sin, by what light discovered, vi. 356. Of God, forgiveness expected from the, vi. 408. Preternatural operations of, monitory, viii. 623. Corruption of, x. 68. Of God, xii. 86.
Nearness to God, i. 52. Of indwelling sin, xi. 105.
Necessary and useful things, how distinguished, iv. 147. Things plainly revealed, iv. 195. Causes, x. 24.
Necessities of saints to be relieved, xiii. 74.
Necessity of righteousness, conviction of, ii. 187. Of holiness, iii. 566, 590, 604, 628. Fatal, iv. 86. Of an interest in Christ, ignorance of, vii. 146. Of spiritual gifts, ix. 449. Distinctions of, x. 536. Conditional, x. 586.
Needle and loadstone, a simile from the, i. 385.
Neglect of making religion our principal business, i. 451. Of duty ruinous, iii. 295. Of the spirit of prayer, iv. 318. Of the gospel, how God revenges it, vi. 110. Of mortification of sin, vii. 526. Of the duty of prayer, vii. 531. In churches as to duty a cause of division, xv. 104.
Negligence in duty does not result from the work of the Holy Spirit, iii. 203. Consequences of, vi. 13. And sloth, spiritual, vi. 291. In religion, how produced, vi. 296. Of churches and professors, vii. 64.
Neighbours, evil, who they are, ix. 295.
Nemesius, his testimony to the Scriptures, iv. 112.
Nero, his speech before death, x. 523.
Nescience of the human nature of Christ, iii. 170.
Nestorian heresy, the, i. 11, 40.
Nicolaitanes, doctrine of, to be hated, viii. 58; what they taught, viii. 59.
Night with a believer, when it is, ii. 128. Visions and dreams of the, iii. 136. The darkest, through the want of the gospel, viii. 35.
Noah, a preacher of righteousness, ix. 133.
Nocturnal visions and dreams, iii. 136.
Nonconformists, vindication of, xiii. 305. Distresses on, xiii. 579.
Nonconformity, reasons of, xv. 141.
Non-punishment of sin contrary to the glory of God's justice, x. 554.
Non-toleration, viii. 58.
Notions, false, of truth, not to be rested in, vii. 113.
Nourishment, spiritual, ix. 574.
Novatians, the severities of the, vii. 14.
Novel opinions, we are not to be inclined to, ix. 459.
Novelty of Hebrew points denied, xvi. 388.

Oath of God an evidence of forgiveness, vi. 475; an encouragement to faith, ix. 41; secures the covenant, ix. 419. Of canonical obedience, xv. 164.
Oaths of the tribes, what, viii. 112. And blasphemous execrations, ruinous to any nation, viii. 612.
Obduration, judicial, viii. 619.
Obedience to Christ, its nature and causes, i. 134. A state of, how glorified, i. 211. Of Christ to the law, i. 338. Insufficiency of, for salvation, ii. 99. Of Christ, ii. 135, 156, iii. 177. Of Christ for us, does not supersede our obedience, ii. 180. How connected with comfort, ii. 261. Nature of, ii. 314, v. 240. Without merit, iii. 379. Rule and measure of, iii. 469. Facility in, iii. 498. With respect to rewards not servile, iii. 614. Sinless and perfect, not attainable, iii. 621. Practical, iv. 206. Of Christ, imputation of, v. 251. Not obstructed but promoted by free justification, v. 372. Mortification, an act of, vi. 20. Universal, necessary, vi. 40. The enmity of the mind to, vi. 224. What is necessary to, vi. 533. What renders it acceptable to God, vi. 533. Delight in, an evidence that we have chosen Christ, ix. 364. Of Christ in his death, ix. 534. Of Christ, how pleasing to God, x. 267. Gospel, nature of, xi. 383. Perfection of, how attainable, xii 564.
Objections against the progressive nature of holiness answered, iii. 399. Against the necessity of holiness from the decree of election removed, iii. 594. To imputed righteousness, v. 54. To justification answered, v. 210. Of the Jews against Christ, xiv. 77, 356.
Objects of the life of innocency and the life of grace in Christ different, iii. 286. How proposed for the increase of graces, iii. 389. Of sin sometimes removed by God, vi. 266.
Oblation of Christ, i. 481. How Christ sanctified

himself to be an, iii. 176. Of Christ voluntary and meritorious, iii. 179.
Obligation to holiness under the gospel, iii. 607. Of believing the Scriptures, whence it arises, iv. 109. Of obedience, v. 240. And satisfaction of Christ the same, x. 446.
Obligations to live to God, xi. 390.
Obscurity falsely charged on the Scriptures, iv. 175. And difficulty of spiritual things, vii. 285. Of Scripture, how asserted by the church of Rome, xiv. 38. Of God, xiv. 58.
Observation and consideration of ourselves in reference to prayer, iv. 320. Of men's ways to be attended to in public prayer, iv. 326.
Obsignation in the supper, Christ is present by way of, ix. 574.
Obstacles, all removed by effectual grace, iii. 318.
Obstinacy of the heart by nature, iii. 327, vii. 534. In sin, effect of, iv. 416.
Obstructions to the growth of holiness, iii. 400. Of knowledge, iv. 180.
Occasions of decays in grace, iii. 404. Particular, for prayer, iv. 204. Of sin, watching against, vi. 61. Of temptation, how to be regarded, vii. 373. Proper, not to be intrenched on, ix. 556.
Occurrences, providential, how to be regarded, ix. 555.
Ocean, the love of Christ an unfathomable, ix. 468.
Offence, readiness to take, xv. 104.
Offences, how we are secured from, vii. 490. The evil and danger of, ix. 352. The seasons of, ix. 353. Taken only, and not given, ix. 353. Given, and also taken, ix. 353.
Offer of Christ, how made to all, x. 300, 312; the intention of God in the, x. 300, 383.
Offering of Christ, how acceptable to God, iii. 180.
Office, what constitutes an, iv. 355. In the church, the appointment of Christ, ix. 436.
Officers, church, iv. 492, xv. 489, xvi. 42.
Offices of Christ, i. 480; efficacy of, from his person, i. 85; end and design of, iii. 629. Extraordinary, iv. 438.
Oil and fuel to our lusts, what gives, vi. 110. Of the sanctuary not to be imitated, ix. 288.
Olive branches, emblematical use of, iv. 257.
Omission, sins of, iii. 485. Of duty, danger of, vi. 121, 244. Of any one duty, evangelical holiness will not admit of the, vii. 176. Of duties, particular cause of, xv. 165.
Omnipotence of God, vii. 377. Of Christ, ix. 486.
Omnipresence and omniscience of God, vii. 373, 376. Of God, xii. 92, 96.
Opening of the heavens, what it signifies, iii. 75. Of the eyes, the act of God, iv. 130. The eyes of the sinner, v. 79.
Operation, powerful, of things, xvi. 323. First, of the light of glory, i. 412. Of enmity against God, vi. 182. Of grace in the soul, vii. 549. Necessity of, in God, x. 595.
Operations, continual, of God in Christ in the souls of them that are glorified, i. 413. Divine, ascribed to the Holy Spirit, iii. 83. Of the Holy Spirit on the human nature of Christ, iii. 160, 162. Natural, of our souls, regenerating grace suited to, iii. 318. Of the Holy Spirit, spring of, iv. 388. Personal, of the Holy Ghost, xi. 335.
Opinion of Arminians about the end of the death of Christ, x. 205, 222.
Opinions, hurtful and noxious, about the Holy Spirit, iii. 37. Numerous, about justification, v. 11. Influence of corrupt, vi. 294. Suppressing, by force fruitless, viii. 180. Novel, how to be treated, ix. 459.
Opportunities for serving God, neglect of, vi. 346.
Opportunity, an occasion of temptation, vii. 374.
Opposition to the church, i. 5, 6; as built upon the person of Christ, i. 35. To all sin necessary, i. 174. To the work of the Holy Spirit, iii. 28, 38. To the church of God suppressed by the Holy Spirit, iii. 104. No, between the commands and grace of God, iii. 204. Between sin and grace, iii. 542. Between grace and works, v. 24. To temptation, how prevented, vi. 113. Of indwelling sin to good, vi. 161. Of the mind to God, vi. 182. Of God to sinners, vi. 265. To holiness, vi. 601. To the ways of God vain and foolish, viii. 152. To those engaged in the work of God vain and foolish, viii. 153. To the doctrine of the Trinity, by whom carried on, xii. 12.
Oppositions, whence to be expected, vi. 421.
Oppression a detestable crime, viii. 148.
Optic glass, sight by an, i. 376.
Order of the holy persons in the Trinity in their operations, i. 219. Of divine communications glorious, i. 363. And beauty of the graces of Christ, ii. 75. Of subsistence of the persons in the Trinity, iii. 91. Outward, of the church useless without the Holy Spirit, iii. 193. Of the mind in its first creation, iii. 251. Of the gospel inverted by prejudice, iii. 279. Of the acts of sanctification, iii. 468. Of the church, how connected with spiritual gifts, iv. 421. Church, gathering into, iv. 496. And precedence of regeneration, vi. 597. How God compels to, a disobedient creature, x. 592. In divine worship, preservation of, xv. 467.
Ordinance of God for the recovery of man, Christ is the, v. 89.
Ordinances, enjoyment of Christ in, i. 268. Of the old and new testament different, iv. 421. Authority for the administration of, iv. 444. Delight in, decline of, vi. 283. Of worship, vi. 465. Duty of attendance on, vii. 255. Of God, who want the, viii. 37. God's regard to his, ix. 200. Administration of, xv. 327. Liberation from, not to be expected, xv. 454.
Ordination of Cæcilianus, xiii. 158. From the church of Rome of no value, xiii. 172. Succession in, right and lawful, xiii. 219.
Origen, character of his writings, iv. 228. His answer to Celsus, xiv. 15.
Origin of all spiritual gifts, Christ is the, iv. 422. Of evil, x. 86.
Original of expiatory sacrifices, i. 122. Authority of the Father, ii. 16. Sin, ii. 64, vi. 155, x. 68. Text, necessity of searching the, iii. 50. Of all things, iii. 98. Sin, denial of, iii. 223, x. 13, xii. 164. Righteousness of man, iii. 471, x. 85. And authority of the Scriptures, iv. 93. Of churches, xv. 223, 230. Divine, of the Scriptures, xvi. 297. Copy of the Pentateuch, xvi. 353.
Ornaments of churches, iv. 245.
Orphans, how believers are like, iv. 361.
Outbalance of outward evils by inward peace, i. 399.

Pagan writers, the evidences they give to the justice of God, x. 518.
Pageant, who make religion a, i. 167.
Pageantry in the worship of God a substitute for its spiritual glory, viii. 558.
Pains of death, how loosed towards Christ, iii. 181.
Papists, their doctrine that Christ is the rock, i. 31. Do not keep the unity of the faith, xiii. 168.
Paraclete, the name of the Holy Spirit, ii. 225, iv. 360.
Paran, what it is, viii. 86.
Paraphrast, Chaldee, xvi. 337, 403.
Pardon, none for the sin against the Holy Ghost, iii. 28. Cause of, v. 8. Of sin, x. 269. Nature of, x. 444.
Parents, obedience of children to, xi. 477.

Parishes, church government in, viii. 49.
Parochial churches, some allowed to be true churches, xiii. 328; many things in, that need reformation, xiii. 328. Assemblies, of conformity and communion in, xv. 344.
Partakers of the benefits of the death of Christ, how we are made, iii. 442. Of the Holy Ghost, who are, vii. 25.
Partiality of many in religion, i. 427. In speaking peace to ourselves mischievous, vi. 76.
Participation of gifts, how obtained, iv. 518. Of good, how we are debarred from, vii. 555. Of Christ, ix. 620. Of the divine nature, xi. 337.
Particular churches, of the communion of, xvi. 183.
Passion of Christ represented in his last supper, ix. 541. And sufferings of Christ incomprehensible, ix. 611.
Passions, disorder of the, through sin, iii. 555. Moderation of the, v. 448. And affections, how attributed to God, xii. 108.
Pastor, the duty of a, ix. 453. Of a church, qualifications of a, xv. 493.
Pastors and people, duty of, xiii. 7. And teachers, xvi. 74, 97.
Patience in sufferings, i. 176. Of God towards sinners, ii. 85. And forbearance of God, how to be considered, vi. 58. Keeping the word of Christ's, vi. 138. Of God an evidence of forgiveness, vi. 448. Faith works by, ix. 504. Of Christ under his sufferings, ix. 536.
Patriarchal churches, xv. 89.
Patriarchs, how they obtained salvation, x. 109. Before the law, administration of holy things among the, xiii. 7.
Pattern, Christ is our, iii. 510, ix. 483. And exemplary cause of our predestination, Christ was, v. 180. Of spiritual affections, Christ is the, vii. 467.
Peace, how obtained by believers, ii. 184. Origin of, ii. 251. How God sanctifies us as the God of, iii. 368. With God preserved by sanctification, iii. 369. Of believers never quite overthrown, iii. 645. Loss of, vi. 53. We must not falsely speak, to ourselves, vi. 70. Two sorts of sins that impeach, vi. 557. Of conscience, how lost, vii. 452. The fruit of spiritual-mindedness, vii. 490. False, vii. 559. Ecclesiastical, viii. 53. Sacrifices that made, x. 523. And love, of evangelical, xv. 59.
Pelagianism, iii. 212, 220, 221, 300, 308, 310–313.
Penalties, of civil, in religion, xiii. 529.
Penalty inflicted on Christ for sin, ii. 84, 96. Of sin, on enduring the, x. 440.
Penmen of the Scripture, whether all holy, iii. 140. Not left solely to the use of their own natural abilities, iii. 145. How they were influenced, xvi. 298.
People, God's, their works transacted for them in heaven before undertaken, viii. 97. Sinful, given up of God to oppose their deliverers, viii. 155. How they may know they are not forsaken, ix. 12, 13. What is required of them in such a case, ix. 15. Of God, why so called, ix. 280. Pastors and, duty of, xiii. 7. Contempt of, in churches, xv. 127.
Perception, spiritual, i. 400.
Perfect, God is absolutely, vi. 482.
Perfection not to be presumed upon, iii. 405. Legal, iii. 471, 606. Sinless, not attainable in this life, iii. 621. Boasting in, how it arises, v. 22. Of grace in heaven, vii. 339. Of our present state, what conduces to it, vii. 480. In walking with God, ix. 96. Of God absolute, xii. 95. Of obedience, how attainable, xii. 564. Of Scripture, xiv. 274, xvi. 357, 452.
Perfections of God, how displayed in the person of Christ, i. 69.
Performance of duty, the mere, not sufficient, vi. 236, 237.
Performances, pride of our own, to be renounced, viii. 6.
Perilous times, what are, viii. 91, ix. 322.
Permanency in obedience, iii. 487. In the knowledge of the truth how obtained, iv. 394.
Permission of sin, i. 61.
Permutation, sweet, i. 358. Of sin and righteousness, v. 40.
Perpetuity of particular churches, xiii. 125.
Persecution, invoking Christ in seasons of, i. 116. Of erring persons vain and fruitless, iii. 37. Origin of, iv. 245. Season of, vii. 138. A cause of apostasy, vii. 203. Arian, very cruel, viii. 64. Popish, barbarous, viii. 65. Contrivances for, viii. 148. Its bad effects, viii. 181. Judgment of the fathers against, viii. 183. Use of faith in a time of, ix. 498.
Persecutors, their fatal end, viii. 186.
Perseverance in waiting on God, vi. 616. History of the doctrine of, xi. 19. Of the saints, xi. 77. Proved from the divine nature, xi. 120; the divine purposes, xi. 140; the covenant of grace, xi. 204; the promises, xi. 225; the mediation of Christ, xi. 288; the indwelling of the Spirit, xi. 329; the intercession of Christ, xi. 365. Objections refuted, xi. 406, 425, 499, 508, 578, 606.
Person of Christ, views respecting it by the fathers, i. 6; opposition to, by heretics, i. 38; the basis and glory of the Christian religion, i. 44; the foundation of the divine counsels, i. 54; the representative of God, i. 65; the repository of sacred truth, i. 79. Efficacy of Christ's office derived from his, i. 85; faith of old testament church in it, i. 100; honour due to it, i. 103; divine wisdom manifest in it, i. 178. Of Christ the fountain of grace, iii. 519. Of Christ as the Son of God, iii. 519, i. 478, ii. 413, xii. 169. Of the Spirit, iii. 53. Of the Father, the fountain of the Trinity, iii. 60. Of a believer, the whole, the subject of sanctification, iii. 417. Of Christ the centre of spiritual affections, vii. 473; the object of love, ix. 612. How Christ suffered in his, xii. 490.
Personality of the Holy Spirit, iii. 67, xi. 334; evidenced by properties assigned to him, iii. 69.
Persons, no difference of, to be made in church affairs, xiii. 80.
Perspicuity in illumination, iii. 232. And clearness of Scripture, iv. 193.
Persuasion not conversion, iii. 313. Undeceiving, of truth, how obtained, iv. 127. Whether grace is a soft, sweet, x. 130. Working by moral, on the will, xi. 451.
Pestilence, God's most destructive weapon, viii. 91.
Peter, his confession of Christ, i. 29. Improperly called "The prince of the apostles," xiv. 283. Whether he ever preached at Rome, xiv. 286.
Petitions offered in prayer, iii. 559. About church government, viii. 46.
Phantasm or appearance only, the human nature of Christ not a, i. 329.
Pharaoh, how hardened by God, viii. 331.
Philosophers, ancient, ignorant of God, i. 296. Why they rejected the gospel, iii. 263. Their views of a future state, vii. 336. Their vice, vii. 420.
Phœnicians, sacrifices of the, x. 527.
Phraseology of Scripture, iv. 216.
Pictures and images of Christ, i. 159.
Piety, Roman, boasted of, iv. 41.
Pighius, Albertus, his sentiments on justification, v. 33.
Pillar of cloud and fire, a pledge of God's presence, viii. 441. For protection, viii. 442.
Pity of Christ, i. 166, 335, ii. 140. And compassion, for those who are in error, iv. 177.

Place, the, whither Christ ascended, i. 248. Proper, of holiness, in the new covenant, ii. 319. Of God in heaven, xii. 95.
Places of worship to be provided by the magistrate, viii. 192.
Plague, a comparison from the, vi. 303.
Plato, his remark on the names of things, ii. 112.
Plea for a general ransom, x. 391.
Pleas for holiness by unholy persons dangerous, iii. 567. For moral virtue examined, iii. 576. And arguments for the conviction of gainsayers suggested by the Holy Spirit, iv. 362. Secret, of the heart for sin, vi. 44, 260. Heathen, xiv. 14.
Pleasure of God the Father, what flows from it, i. 364. Love of good, ii. 21. Of receiving the gospel, vi. 308. Good, of God, in sending the gospel to a people, viii. 19. Good, of God, xi. 258.
Pleasures of sin, evil influence of, vi. 165.
Pledge of the love of God to our nature, i. 277. Of adoption, ii. 186. The Spirit a, iv. 407.
Pledges of the love of God to be kept alive, ix. 562.
Poema ad Protectorem, xvi. 477, 478.
Points, the Hebrew, xvi. 370; importance of them, xvi. 373; not a novel invention, xvi. 375, 388.
Poison of religion, what has been the, v. 10.
Pole star to steer our course by, what it is, viii. 417.
Policy, carnal, an enemy to faith, viii. 234. Of indwelling sin, xi. 106. Persecuting, injurious to trade, xiii. 368.
Polity of the church, xvi. 30, 130.
Pollution of actual transgressions, how taken away, ii. 171. Of sin, iii. 424; nature of, iii. 426, 427. Habitual, inconsistent with holiness, iii. 432.
Polycarpus, martyrdom of, xv. 201.
Polyglott of Paris, xvi. 286. Of Complutum, xvi. 286. Of London, its great usefulness, xvi. 349; the various readings in, xvi. 358; the versions in, xvi. 406.
Poor in experience, who are, ix. 561.
Pope, the, his tyrannical usurpations, viii. 265. The pretended head of the church, viii. 567. His storehouse, viii. 584. Character of the, xiv. 42, 319. Of the, xiv. 162.
Popery, use of faith if it should return, ix. 505. Unalterable, xiv. 24. Of, xiv. 170. Of the return of, xiv. 524.
Popish contradictions, xiv. 110.
Portion of believers, divine foreview of, viii. 94. Consecrated, to God, how believers are a, ix. 290.
Possession of the will by sin, x. 73. And knowledge of deliverance, x. 475.
Pouring out of the Spirit, ii. 230, iii. 113, iv. 255.
Poverty of the apostles, iv. 481.
Power of truth, i. 80. Of Satan over the world unjustly obtained, i. 217. All, given to Christ, i. 236. Of Christ engaged for his people, i. 331. Of fulfilling the law vainly arrogated by man, ii. 99. And pleasure of obedience, how lost, ii. 266. Ascribed to the Holy Spirit, iii. 82. Of our own natural abilities, certain things in the, iii. 229. Of the word, the effect of the power of the Spirit, iii. 235. Of the mind with respect to spiritual things, iii. 257, 281. Of spiritual darkness, iii. 269. For obedience in the state of innocency, iii. 285. In natural men beyond what they use, iii. 290. Of the faculties of nature as corrupted, iii. 295. Of the word on the soul, iii. 304, 305. Spiritual, in the habit of holiness, iii. 491; its nature, iii. 493. Of believers derived from the Holy Spirit, iii. 529, 619. Of God as connected with his authority, iii. 611. Infinite, of the Holy Spirit, iv. 375. Apostolical, iv. 443. Of apostles over the church, whether limited, iv. 444. Of the church to appoint ministers, iv. 494. Of grace, vi. 219. To commit sin taken away by God, vi. 263. Of the Spirit necessary to the efficacy of the law, vi. 317. Indwelling of sin, deep sense of, vi. 550. Of sin in us, vii. 507. Of the gospel, viii. 17. Love and abuse of, viii. 29. How God convinces his enemies of his, viii. 124. Secures the accomplishment of God's promise, viii. 224. Human, defeated, ix. 197. Of the gospel, ix. 217. Of God a ground of faith, ix. 251. To call ministers to their office, ix. 433. Of Satan, a profession against, in the supper, ix. 543. To suffer for Christ, doctrinal, moral, and spiritual, ix. 581. Of believing, whether in ourselves, x. 123. Of indwelling sin, xi. 106. Of Satan, xii. 518. For the dispensing of the word, xiii. 55. Of magistrates in religion, xiii. 509. Ecclesiastical, committed to kings, xiv. 378. Balance of, in Europe, xiv. 538. Of religion, loss of, xiv. 548. No legislative, in the church, xv. 245. Scripture is the, of God, xvi. 323.
Powers of the world to come, tasting of the, ii. 246. And operations of second causes, the, iii. 103. Of the new world, what they are, iv. 433. Of the world to come, what they are, iv. 478, vii. 32.
Practice of moral virtue not holiness, iii. 524. Answerable, importance of, vi. 301. Of the apostles as to church communion, xv. 148.
Praises and prayer, how directed to the Father, ii. 12. Of God, joint celebration of, vi. 484.
Prayer and praise, how directed to the Father, ii. 12. For the Spirit prescribed as our duty, iii. 155. When grace answers, iii. 312. How connected with the promise of holiness, iii. 385. How wrought in us by the Spirit, iii. 398, 439. For light to discern the nature of sin, iii. 451. And faith, iii. 458, iv. 203, v. 92. How it weakens sin, iii. 560. To accompany reading the Scriptures, iv. 201. Work of the Holy Spirit in, iv. 235. Manner of, iv. 287. Nature of, iv. 297. Vocal, iv. 298. Gift of, iv. 298, xiii. 46. Acceptable, what is necessary to, iv. 299. External, duty of, iv. 301. Of mental, iv. 328. Forms of, iv. 338. For the Holy Spirit, iv. 386. A part of divine worship, iv. 513. Private, the efficacy of, vi. 224. Importunate and constant, vi. 357. For pardon, vi. 468. Conducive to spiritual-mindedness, vii. 284. When, not a means of spiritual growth, vii. 288. Continual, vii. 529. How connected with the promises, viii. 85. Its force owned by the adversaries of the people of God, viii. 465. What weakens our faith as to the answer of, ix. 379. Necessary for Zion in difficult times, ix. 402. For the churches, importance of, ix. 456. For all men, x. 393. Of, xii. 577. For ministers, xiii. 58. The Lord's, xv. 13. Book of Common, lawfulness of using, xv. 32. An institution of Christ, xv. 510.
Prayers of the wicked and of believers, difference of, iii. 200. In the Old Testament dictated by the Spirit of prophecy, iv. 263. To be suited to a congregation, ix. 458.
Preachers of the gospel, their warrant for pressing duties on men, iii. 295. With what they are intrusted, x. 393.
Preaching of the word, how holy men of old were qualified for, iii. 150. The work of, the care of the Holy Spirit, iii. 248. First, of the gospel, its success, iv. 38. Of the word, its efficacy, iv. 482; its influence, vii. 282. Effect of, vii. 544. Ends of, xv. 115.
Precepts of the law, not clearly understood before the coming of Christ, iii. 631. Or commands of God to be regarded in prayer, iv. 284.
Predestination, by whom denied, x 13. How corrupted by the Arminians, x. 53. Augustine's definition of, x. 58. Not on the ground of foreseen faith, x. 64.
Predetermination of second causes, x. 35.

Prediction of future events, iii. 129. Faculty of, iv. 469.
Predominancy of lust, to what owing, vi. 42; degrees of, vii. 360.
Pre-eminence of the nature of man, i. 282. Of men is their conformity to God, iii. 572. Of our nature, in what it consists, iii. 579. Of persons, holiness is the, iii. 581. Conferred on a people by the gospel, viii. 38. Of the things of Christ, ix. 472.
Pre-eternity of Christ, xii. 215, 236.
Pre-existence of Christ, xii. 283; by whom denied, i. 38.
Preface, Mr Biddle's, to his Catechism, xii. 55.
Preference of religion above all other objects, v. 449.
Prefigurations of Christ, i. 101.
Prejudices against spiritual things, iii. 275. Power of, iv. 169. How removed from unbelievers anciently, iv. 468. Against the doctrine of justification, v. 55. In favour of men's own sect and party very prevailing, viii. 418.
Preparation for glory, examination of our, i. 244. For heavenly contemplations, i. 337. For recovery from decays in grace, i. 457. For the work of Christ, ii. 203. Of mind for assenting to the truth, iv. 88. For spiritual gifts by humility, iv. 519. For spiritual things, vii. 392. For temporal judgments, ix. 398. Great and glorious, made for the office of the ministry, ix. 438. Necessary for worship, ix. 545. For conversion, x. 123.
Prepossession of mind against the truth, iv. 181, 193. Of glory by faith, vii. 325.
Prerogative of God to give grace to whom he pleases, vi. 70.
Presbyterian church, of the, xiv. 522.
Presbyters and bishops, iv. 448. In the church, xi. 41.
Prescience or foreknowledge of God, how questioned by Arminians, x. 12, 22, xii. 115.
Prescription of the Liturgy, xv. 47.
Presence of Christ with his disciples, the use of, iii. 24; what it is, iii. 194. Of Christ with the church, iv. 499, ix. 442. Of the Holy Spirit secured to the church, iv. 501. Of God with his people, viii. 433, 460; in worship, ix. 548. Of God, xii. 91.
Preservation of believers by Christ, i. 215. Of the new creation, i. 364. Of all things by the Holy Spirit, iii. 103. Of the creation by Providence, iii. 103. In holiness by the Spirit, iii. 397. Of the Bible, iv. 23. A use of sealing, iv. 400. Of the church, iv. 503, ix. 487. From temptation, vi. 124. How we may know to whom we owe our, vi. 269. Of the soul from sin, vii. 530. Of the truth and doctrine of the gospel important, ix. 458. Of the people of God in a time of danger, ix. 509. Of believers by God, xi. 263. Of church unity, xiii. 66.
Preservative from sin, consideration a, vi. 218.
President of the church, who was the, xv. 204.
Presumptions, delusion of, i. 420. False, of forgiveness, vi. 393. Some die in, ix. 531.
Pretence, false, of love to Christ, i. 140. False, to holiness, iii. 372.
Pretenders to the Spirit, iii. 31; rules for trying them, iii. 32.
Prevalency of the word, iii. 306. Of any error, how best guarded against, iv. 203. Of the flesh, xi. 518.
Price, the death of Christ is a, ii. 165, xii. 419. Accepted by divine justice, x. 259, 281. Of redemption as it was a, xii. 508.
Pride and envy of Satan, i. 310. The poison of the age, iii. 599. And carnal confidence, effect of, iv. 179. Fever of, v. 23. One cause of apostasy, vii. 123. Spiritual, effect of, vii. 294. And self-exaltation, vii. 316. And self-elation, vii. 520. Of our own performances to be renounced, viii. 6. A cause of schisms, xv. 138.
Priest, signification of the name, xiii. 20.
Priesthood of Christ, i. 99, 481, iii. 629, x. 282, xi. 290, xii. 397. Of all Christians, xiii. 19.
Priests, Jewish, circuits of, xiii. 17.
Prince of the apostles, Peter not, xiii. 161.
Princes in all lands, who were, iv. 441.
Principle of spiritual life antecedent to moral reformation, iii. 222. Of operation, the heart is the, iii. 252. Of spiritual life, iii. 283. Of obedience, how wrought in us, iii. 325, 329. Of eternal life in holiness, iii. 376. Of holiness, iii. 396, 469, 475, 480, 484. Of opposition to indwelling sin, vi. 12. A law is an operative effective, vi. 158. Of duty must be regarded, vi. 235. Of grace planted in the soul, vi. 347. The, acting in spiritual affections, vii. 411. Of gospel obedience, xi. 385.
Principles of spiritual service, ii. 213. False, admit of reserves for sin, iii. 485. Search into our, vii. 286. Of church fellowship, xiii. 53. Contended for in "Fiat Lux," xiv. 17. Of brotherly love, xv. 461.
Priscillianus, why put to death, viii. 181.
Prisoners, how sinners are, xii. 513.
Privation of spiritual life, iii. 287.
Privilege, greatest in this life, to behold the glory of Christ, i. 306. Of those who receive the Holy Spirit, iii. 110. Of one above another, as to holiness, iii. 581. To be delivered from sin, vii. 552.
Privileges of believers, i. 489, ii. 207. Not to be trusted in, vii. 249, viii. 33, 645.
Procession of the Spirit, ii. 226, iii. 61, 116, 118.
Prodigies, mankind dread, x. 521.
Profaneness of life, apostasy into, vii. 182. And scoffing, conceptions supposed to lead to, vii. 291. The ruin of a nation, viii. 467.
Profession of religion previous to admission to church fellowship, iii. 365. Sometimes becomes a snare, vi. 120. Long continued in, failings of, vi. 279. An unfruitful, vii. 539. What is a good and acceptable profession, ix. 476. Visible, of Christ, ix. 542, 584.
Professors, empty, how they differ from believers, ii. 38. Dignity of, iii. 581. False, their vexation to the church of God, ix. 274. Unholiness of, not to be charged on religion, xi. 493.
Profligacy of the children of professors accounted for, vii. 353.
Profluency of speech, iv. 459.
Progress of nature to rest and blessedness, i. 383. Of light, i. 439. Of Christ as to his human faculties, iii. 169. Of believers opposed by sin, iii. 404. Gradual, of the mortification of sin, iii. 545. Slow, in knowledge, why many make, iv. 160. Of sin, how stopped, vi. 267. Of apostasy, vii. 227. Of religion, xiv. 393.
Projection of the covenant was in the wisdom and love of God, ix. 418.
Prolegomena of Walton's Biblia Polyglotta examined, xvi. 347.
Promise, the first, considered, i. 121; all the promises confirmed by, i. 124; a revelation of forgiveness, vi. 433. How prayer should be regulated by the, ii. 123. Of the Holy Ghost, to whom made, iii. 25, 154. Of the presence of Christ, iii. 193. Comfort of a, when we may take the, vi. 77. What is included in every, vi. 141.
Promiser in the covenant, who is the, xii. 501.
Promises of sanctification, iii. 382. Of God, when duly respected, iii. 385. How to be mixed with faith, iii. 457. How they promote holiness, iii. 626. Special, annexed to special duties, iii. 627. How to be used in prayer, iv. 275. On what their ac-

complishment depends, iv. 373. On the first appearance of things, from the deceitfulness of the heart, vi. 174. And purposes of great diligence often proceed from the deceit of sin, vi. 230. The nature and use of, vi. 637. Of God will be made good, viii. 113, 212; the just measure of his people's wants, viii. 114. Of God, their stability and truth, viii. 221. God never is forgetful of his, viii. 228. Of God suited to overcome doubts and establish faith, ix. 45; their suitableness expressed by apt similitudes, ix. 49; the church's safety, ix. 316; they are in the covenant, ix. 424. How Christ is represented in the, ix. 541. Of spiritual and temporal things considered, xi. 217. The stability of the, xi. 225. Particular, illustrated, xi. 248. Conditional, xi. 457. Of God, use of, xi. 480. And exhortations, xi. 502.

Promptness and alacrity against sin, vi. 32. To join with temptation, vi. 193.

Proneness to apostasy, vii. 3, 4.

Propagation of the gospel, first, iv. 38. By whom effected, iv. 480.

Propensity to evil natural to man, vi. 190.

Properties of God, represented in Christ, ii. 91, iii. 570. Divine, ascribed to the Holy Spirit, iii. 91. Of a habit, grace has the, iii. 482. Of the nature of God, consideration of, gives assurance of forgiveness, vi. 482. Of the covenant, ix. 416. Of God, what they are, xii. 93.

Property of his nature, how God is bound to manifest any, x. 595.

Prophecies unfulfilled, of, iv. 196. Particular, truth of Scripture dependent on, iv. 221.

Prophecy, the gift of, iii. 29, iv. 469. An eminent gift of the Holy Ghost, iii. 126. Beginning and end of, iii. 128.

Prophet of the church, Christ the, i. 87, 483, iii. 631, xiii. 348. Signification of the name, iii. 130.

Prophets, of Baal, who they were, iii. 30. True, how they inquired into their own prophecies, iii. 127; their tongues and hands guided by the Spirit, iii. 134; how they proposed divine revelations, iv. 79. Of, mentioned in the New Testament, iv. 450. Their peculiar work in declaring the kingdom of the Messiah, viii. 367.

Propitiation of Christ, forgiveness from the, vi. 404. What it is, x. 333.

Proportion of duty and strength, iii. 616. Or analogy of faith, iv. 198. Of spiritual to other thoughts should be ascertained, vii. 301.

Proposal of the gospel, v 99.

Propositions, conditional, nature of, iii. 363, vi. 6.

Prospect of God on a throne of grace, iv. 291.

Prosperity, danger of, vi. 127. God's presence the spring of, viii. 431. When an evidence of God's favour and presence with a people, viii. 439.

Prostration of soul before God, adoration is, i. 107.

Protection, righteous zeal encouraged by divine, viii. 133. Of religion the duty of the magistrate, viii. 189.

Protector, dedication to the, viii. 283, x. 484, xi. 5, xvi. 477. Poem addressed to the, xvi. 478.

Protestant religion, public securities necessary for, xiv. 526; an account of the, xiv. 529; martyrs to, more numerous than those under Pagan persecutions, xiv. 536; political weakness of, xiv. 539; causes in which the ruin of, may originate, xiv. 541.

Protestants, pleas of, xiv. 82. Of union among, xiv. 517.

Providence of God, i. 475. Of God in preserving the Scriptures, iv. 23. How God is known by, iv. 87. Dispensations of, how to be improved, vi. 59. Obstructs the power of sinning, vi. 261. Calls of, to be observed, vii 308. Steady in its conduct through all contingencies, viii. 6. Its variety in dispensing the outward means of salvation, viii. 14. Irresistible in propagating the gospel, viii. 16. Advantages arising from its intricate dispensations, viii. 18. Of God towards his people, the worst of men sometimes fare the better for it, viii. 116. Its actings not suited to the reasonings and expectations of men, viii. 327. What hinders our apprehension of the mind of God in it, viii. 411. Of God, its unsearchableness, ix. 112; its dispensations towards his people, when trying, ix. 115. Sovereignty and goodness of, ix. 116. Changes in, an argument for holiness, ix. 131. Of God in governing the world, x. 30. Common, x. 33. Independence of, claimed by Arminians, x. 118. Of God, his justice seen in, x. 541. All-ruling and disposing, assigned to Christ, xii. 273. Abyss of, unsearchable, xiv. 70.

Providences, severe, interpretation of, viii. 604.

Provision of spiritual food, i. 442. Of spiritual strength, iii. 620. In the Scripture for every condition of man, iv. 191. Laid up in Christ, how to be used, vi. 79. Plentiful, in the covenant for carrying on believers unto perfection, vi. 284; against sin, absolute, vi. 338; for pardon and comfort, vi. 338.

Provocations to sin, vi. 98. The best way of treating, ix. 457.

Prudence in the management of civil affairs, ii. 115.

Puccius, history of, xii. 28.

Punctuation, Hebrew, xvi. 286.

Punishment of sin, i. 481. Of sin inflicted on Christ, ii. 167. Of sin, fear of, ineffectual, vi. 47. A check to sin, vi. 239. Of error and heresy, viii. 64. Of our sin in Adam, x. 78. How it is a satisfaction for the debt of sin, x. 259, 266. Not opposite to mercy, x. 574. Whether it can be dispensed with, x. 592. Whether it can be inflicted by God on an innocent person, x. 592. Of sin certain, xi. 295. Suffered by Christ, xii. 485. Of the Jews for their corruption, xvi. 376.

Punishments and rewards, eternal, iii. 612. The sanction of a law, vi. 164.

Purchase of pardon, vi. 405. Of Christ, with fruits of his death, x. 225, 233, 259; whether absolute or conditional, x. 240; how completed, x. 477.

Purgatory, a dangerous doctrine, iii. 435. For what substituted, viii. 583. A mere fiction, ix. 338. Of, xiv. 157.

Purging of sin from the soul, iii. 432, 445. Away the filth of sin, iii. 436, 465. Ourselves from corrupt affections, iv. 184.

Purification from sin, iii. 422, 454, 456, 465, 630. Typical, iii. 423.

Purity of Christ, ii. 73. Of the soul and body of Christ, iii. 169. Internal, xi. 89. Of the Hebrew and Greek texts, xvi. 345.

Purpose and course of the soul opposed by sin, vi. 196. Of God's grace, acts of, vi. 402. Of God in sending or withholding the gospel, viii. 14.

Purposes of sin, why deserted, vi. 271. Of God, eternity of, x. 15. Of God steadfast and immutable, xi. 140 Of God not proved to be conditional from conditional threatenings, xi. 168.

Purveyors of the soul, thoughts are, vi. 22. For Satan, things of the world are, vi. 296.

Putting of the Spirit in or upon men, iii. 112.

Quakers, errors of, iii. 66, 556, xvi. 427.

Qualifications necessary for knowing the will of God, how ingenerated, i. 96. For receiving gospel gifts, iii. 411. For receiving the Lord's supper, xv. 169. Of pastors, xvi. 74.

Quarrel, causes of, taken away by Christ, ii. 169. How Christ revenges the, of his people on their enemies, viii. 308.

Queen of heaven, what, and why so called, iii. 96.
Questioning the promises of God, vi. 560.
Questions, numerous, proposed by the schoolmen, as to unity of faith, xiv. 261.
Quickening, spiritual, an act of almighty power, iii. 329, xi. 341.
Quietness of conscience, when false, vi. 37. In waiting on God, vi. 611.

Rabbinical Bibles, xvi. 359.
Rage against the Spirit of God, iii. 42. And predominancy of lust, to what owing, vi. 42. Of indwelling sin, vi. 206.
Rahab, Egypt why called, viii. 87.
Raised, the dead will be, by the power of Christ, ix. 490.
Ransom, Christ our, xii. 419. Redemption as a price or, xii. 508.
Raptures and ecstasies in the church of Rome, i. 142. In prayer, iv. 332.
Rate of faith, high, when enjoyed, vi. 290.
Ratification of pardon, vi. 406.
Ratiocination, evil of framing rules of, regarding Scripture, iv. 224.
Readiness to die, i. 281. Of Christ to be a Saviour, i. 335. Of Christ to receive sinners, i. 424. To obedience, iii. 496, 529. To receive impressions from truth, iv. 205. To part with all for Christ, v. 450. To join with temptation, vi. 193. Of Christ to succour his people, vi. 288. Of Christ to his work, ix. 535. To take offence, xv. 104.
Reading the Scriptures, duty of, iv. 199, 306, 321.
Readings, various, of Scripture, xvi. 362.
Re-admission of offenders into church communion, vii. 13.
Reality of the vision of heaven, i. 378. Of divine things, spiritual sense of, iv. 64.
Reason, its proper province in religion, ii. 411. Corrupt, its effects, iii. 371. Weakness of, iii. 634. Of faith in the Scriptures, iv. 7. Work of, how faith would become, iv. 54. Some doctrines above our, iv. 54, vii. 127. How God is known in the exercise of, iv. 84. Human, obscured, v. 45. Cannot of itself discern the mystery of grace, v. 50. Use of, xiv. 73, 356.
Reasoning, methods of, in Scripture, skill in, needful, iv. 223.
Reasonings, corrupt, sin takes advantage from, vi. 230.
Reasons proving the Scriptures to be the word of God, iv. 20.
Rebellion against grace, vi. 195. Against the light of the mind, vii. 412.
Rebels, who are light's, xvi. 320.
Rebukes and checks to sin, vi. 238.
Recapitulation of all things in Christ, i. 147, 367.
Receiving supplies of spiritual strength, i. 459. And giving, communion in, ii. 22. The love of God, ii. 34. Christ, the nature of it, ii. 58, v. 111. The Holy Spirit, ii. 231, iii. 108. Spiritual things in a spiritual manner, iii. 106, 260. The Spirit antecedent to faith, iii. 409. How faith is, v. 291. Sinners into love and favour, God's, x. 453. The atonement, xi. 304.
Recessions from the truth, cause of, vii. 145.
Recognition of the death of Christ, ix. 530. Of Christ, ix. 574, 584.
Re-collection of the family of God, i. 371. Of all things in Christ, i. 373.
Recompense to God, what is required in consequence of the disobedience of man, i. 208. Of reward, relief obtained from the prospect of, ix. 504. Of evil by God, xii. 439.
Reconciliation, potential and conditionate, x. 94. Twofold, x. 261, 262, 263. All men in the same condition before actual, x. 277. To God, xii. 531. To the church of Rome, danger of, xiv. 545.
Recovery of man suited to the holy perfections of the divine nature, i. 188. From sin, man would not attempt his own, i. 193. Of fallen man, its peculiar objects, i. 210. To communion with God, vi. 59. Of lost pledges of divine love to be sought, vi. 594. From backsliding difficult, vii. 463. From evil, one end of punishment, xii. 437.
Rectitude, original, of human nature, iii. 102, 427. And perfection of nature, how attained, v. 432. And holiness of the law proves the guilt of sin, vi. 57. Of the nature of God, x. 498. Of divine government, x. 503.
Rector and governor of all, God is the, ii. 424.
Redemption plenteous, vi. 642, 644. Nature of, vi. 644, x. 259. Spiritual, excellency of, x. 259. Spiritual and civil, wherein they agree and differ, x. 260. Why in, we are not delivered from God, but brought nigh to him, x. 260. Universal, where many perish, a contradiction, x. 261. Effectual, the merit of Christ exalted by, x. 270. As a price, xii. 508.
Reflection on the honour of God, sin is a, i. 181.
Reflections of the glory of God on his works, sources of our knowledge, i. 67.
Reformation not regeneration, iii. 217, 234, 240. The occasion of the, v. 4. The doctrine of justification a leading point in the, v. 64. Of the worship of God, how carried on in this nation, viii. 16. Of the gospel, corrupted with error, viii. 24. Of sinful churches, viii. 604. From sin, viii. 639. The only way to save a nation, ix. 177. Glory of the, xiii. 354. The, vilified and abused, xiv. 48. Of the, xiv. 104.
Reformers, conduct of the, as it regarded the Scriptures, iv. 68. Character of the, xiv. 32, xv. 206.
Refreshing pledges of the love of God, how obtained, vii. 439.
Refreshment, spiritual, how obtained from Christ, i. 397. Great, in godly sorrow, vii. 294.
Refreshments and comforts of believers, viii. 101.
Refuge, fleeing to Christ for, v. 294.
Regardlessness of God, by what evidenced, v. 440. Of divine warnings, viii. 643.
Regeneration under the old testament, iii. 207, 210. Nature of, iii. 210, 213. Not moral reformation, iii. 217. Productive of reformation, iii. 218, 219. Doth not consist in enthusiastical raptures, iii. 224. Nature, causes, and means of, iii. 297. A work of God, iii. 336. Grace of, whence it proceeds, vi. 585. Absurdity of its repetition, xi. 549.
Regulation of our thoughts about Christ, i 223.
Reign of sin, xi. 513.
Reiteration, none in regeneration, xi. 551.
Rejection of Christ by the Jews, iii. 44. Final, of sinners, by what produced, iii. 432.
Relapses into sin, vi. 74. We must beware of, viii. 146.
Relation of truth to Christ, i. 82. Of our nature to God secured by Christ, i. 276. To God, i. 354. Conjugal, of Christ to his church, ii. 54. Gracious, to God, v. 45. Of obedience to reward and sin to punishment not the same, x. 549. To Christ, how believers hold it, xi. 549.
Relations, how believers are brought into new, iv. 404.
Relaxation of the law, v. 248, x. 440.
Reliance on the blood of Christ, iii. 445.
Relief for an awakened conscience, i. 53. Of conscience under conviction, v. 7. Expectation of, from Christ, vi. 80. Seeking, from God, vi. 350. For believers under distress, ix. 414.
Reliefs of the papal church, vanity of, iii. 434. Against sin, false, vi. 246.
Religion, pretences of false, to mystery, i. 49. In-

fluence of false, vii. 109. Pretended, how to be dealt with, viii. 197. Practical, happiness of, xiv. 311.
Relinquishment of profession, cause of, vi. 309. Of sin, viii. 654.
Relish and sense of spiritual things, vii. 392, 471.
Reluctancy of corrupt nature to spiritual duties, vii. 151.
Remainders of corruption in believers, iii. 488.
Remains of great and good men, why they should be preserved, ix. 520.
Remedies against apostasy, vii. 1.
Remediless sin under the gospel is that which is against the Holy Ghost, iii. 28.
Remedy against sin, iii. 443. Against religious differences, iv. 248. Against temptation to be known, vii. 316. Of religious differences, falsely proposed by Papists, xiv. 35.
Remembrance, how the Holy Spirit brings the things of Christ to our, ii. 236. Of sin, v. 450. Of trouble for sin, vi. 356. Of former things, vii. 464. Of mercies received, viii. 87. Of former mercies, its end and use, viii. 87. Of the covenant, how God is put in, ix. 423. Of the sufferings of Christ, ix. 566.
Remission of watchfulness dangerous, vi. 244. Without satisfaction, not possible, x. 564. Of sin, xii. 347.
Removal of the candlestick of the gospel, vii. 142. Of the habit of grace, xi. 98.
Renewal of covenant engagements, i. 456. Of grace, iii. 403. Of communications of grace, vi. 276. Of the law at Sinai, vii. 543. Of sanctifying grace, xi. 350.
Renitency or contrary actings of the will, vi. 204. Of the will against sin, xi. 559.
Renovation of nature, iii. 219. Of the mind, iii. 332, vii. 381. Of the will, iii. 334. Effects of, iii. 437, 644. Of covenant with God, ix. 496.
Renunciation of God, causes of, vi. 312. Of help from all created things, ix. 425. Of right, whether it may be done, x. 586.
Repair our spiritual decays, how God will, i. 456. The glory of God by suffering, how Christ did, ix. 568.
Reparation made by redemption, i. 371. Of nature, iii. 418. Of the image of God in man, iii. 478, ix. 483. To the justice of God by the death of Christ, x. 466.
Repentance not regeneration, iii. 216. State of, evidence of faith from, v. 442. God's appointment of, an evidence of forgiveness, vi. 437. What God requires unto, viii. 636. How ascribed to God, xii. 112.
Repetition of regeneration, absurdity of, xi. 549.
Repining against God, xii. 493.
Repositories of truth, vii. 187.
Repository of sacred truth, the person of Christ, i. 79. Of grace, Christ the, i. 362. The word of God a sacred, iv. 129. Of all graces, the affections are, vii. 471.
Representation of the nature of God in the person of Christ, i. 294. Of new objects to the human nature of Christ, iii. 170. Of doctrine to be made in the deportment of ministers, vii. 190. Of Christ in the church, ix. 437. Of the death of Christ in the Lord's supper, ix. 529, 573. Of Christ to the soul, how made, ix. 538.
Representations of God, why interdicted, i. 76. Of the glory of Christ, how made to the church, i. 315. Of the glory of Christ under the old testament, i. 348.
Representative of God, Christ the, i. 60.
Repressing and overcoming convictions, vii. 515.
Reproach of sin, i. 212. Cast on Christ by the Jews, xvi. 380.
Reproaches, use of faith under, ix. 498.
Reprobate, who is a, xi. 635.
Reprobation, xii. 555. Decree of, i. 473, 474.
Reproof, its nature and kinds, viii. 478. Parental, its neglect the cause of the ruin of children, viii. 483. The matter of it, viii. 485. When it is false, viii. 485. Our duty in receiving, viii. 488.
Reproofs, how they may be duly received, viii. 481. Why to be received as a privilege, viii. 488. Mutual, the prime dictate of the law of nature, viii. 488; God's command for them, viii. 489. The advantage of them, viii. 490. How we may improve them, viii. 490.
Reprover, his qualifications, viii. 481.
Repugnancy to conversion taken away by grace, iii. 324. To sin, what it proves, vii. 515.
Reputation, some graces not in, vii. 180. For devotion, effect of, vii. 428. And glory of religion, how lost, vii. 452.
Repute of learning, false, viii. 29.
Reserve of known sins, effect of, vii. 533.
Reserves, evil of sinful, iii. 485. In religion, folly of, vii. 240. Secret, when improper, viii. 649.
Residue of the Spirit is with God, ix. 514.
Resignation of our souls to Christ in death, i. 280. To the will of God, iii. 599, vii. 310. Of soul to God, vi. 418.
Resolution and constancy in actions, vi. 171. In sin, stubborn, vi. 211.
Resolutions, why ineffectual, vi. 319. Against sin, vii. 519.
Respect to the commands of God, iii. 384. To the law of God in repentance, vi. 370. To the love of God in repentance, vi. 371. Of faith to the authority of Christ, ix. 621.
Resplendency of justice and mercy in Christ, i. 359.
Rest and satisfaction in beholding the glory of Christ, i. 292. And blessedness, progress of nature to, i. 383. And complacency, love of, ii. 25. And peace, why sought, iv. 380. In sin, the believer does not, v. 431. Obtained from God by prayer, vii. 294. Of dismissed saints, viii. 359.
Resting in love, God, ii. 25. Improperly in means, iii. 234. In duties to be avoided, iii. 478. In the covenant of God, ix. 420.
Restitution of all things, i. 61.
Restoration of man, what is requisite to it, i. 195. Of the authority of the law by Christ, iii. 632. To church fellowship after its forfeiture, xi. 542.
Restraining grace, vi. 270, xi. 348.
Restraint of the law, temporary, vi. 317.
Restraints of natural corruption, iii. 643.
Resurrection of Christ, iii. 181, x. 182, 352, xii. 561. Of believers, how distinguished from that of others, x. 352. Of the dead, xii. 581. From the dead, a miracle, xvi. 317.
Retaliation for crimes, x. 515.
Retirements and solitudes, v. 455, vii. 375.
Retiring into ourselves, vii. 206.
Retreat, a safe and sweet, for believers, ii. 37. To God in distress, ix. 424.
Retrieve from decays of grace, what alone will, i. 396.
Return to obedience, man could not of himself, i. 192. Of love to God, ii. 24.
Returns of Satan to be watched against, vi. 294.
Revalescency of the churches, vii. 72.
Revelation, pretences to divine, Satan's design in them, iii. 31. The rule and measure of all religion, iii. 65, 469. Supernatural, the objective cause and means of illumination, iv. 7. Immediate, not to be expected, iv. 59.
Revelations, outward manner of, iii. 134. Divine, different kinds of, viii. 7.
Revenge, how God does, the neglect of the gospel,

vi. 110. Taken on three sorts of persons, when Christ sets up his kingdom, viii. 323.
Reverence and godly fear, how ingenerated, iv. 322. Necessity of, vii. 365. For the ministry, loss of, vii. 540. Of God, a means of walking humbly with him, ix. 120.
Reverential fear of God, how produced, ix. 493. Estimation of ministers, xiii. 58.
Revival of the soul, whence obtained, i. 395.
Revivification of all things, i. 61.
Revolting from principles of religion, viii. 145.
Rewards and punishments, how connected with obedience, iii. 613. And punishments, the sanction of a law, vi. 164. In religion, xi. 411. Bestowed on the saints of bounty, not of justice, xi. 503.
Riddle, Christ known as in a, i. 376.
Right to temporal things, what, believers have, ii. 219. And authority of preaching, iv. 443. The gospel has a, to be preached in all nations, viii. 390. Of those for whom Christ died, before believing, x. 465. How God vindicates his, x. 601. Of God, its nature, x. 603. And title to the kingdom of God twofold, xi. 542. Observation of worship, xv. 471.
Righteous judgment of God, what, x. 597.
Righteousness of God exalted in the forgiveness of sin, i. 358. Conviction of, ii. 101, iv. 366. Actual, by Christ, ii. 104. For justification not required of us, iii. 378. Of God, iv. 44, vi. 629. Imputed, v. 9, 162; not opposed to free justification, v. 53. Of Christ, passive, v. 54. Personal, nature and use of, v. 152. Of God, ignorance of, vii. 153. Self, vii. 427. Keeping to the paths of, viii. 148. Self, dangerous, ix. 168; makes men weary in religious duties, ix. 170. Original, x. 82. Cause of, x. 100. Justifying, xii. 562. Legal, and ceremonies contended for together, xv. 7.
Rights of God as a governor, x. 567.
Rigour of the law, liberty from the, ii. 212. Of the law, now softened by the gospel, iii. 607. In the execution of the law, x. 461. In church discipline, when useless, xiii. 534.
Ringleaders of heresies, who have been the, iv. 180.
Rise and spring of spiritual thoughts, vii. 296.
Rites, imposition of, condemned by the fathers, xiv. 225. And ceremonies, the church has no power to institute, xv. 467.
River, indwelling sin like a, vi. 191.
Rock, upon what, the church is built, i. 32, ix. 513. Of presumption, vii. 502. A type of Christ, viii. 120. God the saints', ix. 237.
Romans, how they boasted of their religion, iv. 40. Sanguinary games of the, x. 530.
Rome, injurious conduct of church of, as it respects the Scriptures, iv. 67; schismatical, xiii. 114; religion asserted to be received from, xiv. 18, 206, 327; no safe guide, xiv. 481; its treatment of the Scriptures, xvi. 283.
Root or principle of indwelling sin, iii. 541.
Rugiani, account of the, x. 537.
Ruin of Satan and his kingdom, on what it depends, i. 310. Eternal, the effect of sinning against the Holy Ghost, iii. 28. Of body and soul, how to be avoided, vi. 308. Of the enemies of God, what is seen in it, viii. 103. When sin is ripe for, viii. 138. What tends to, viii. 626. Of churches, how hastened, ix. 513. Of churches, causes of, xv. 175.
Rule and power of Christ as a king, i. 98. Of self-judging, i. 405. And measure of obedience, iii. 469. And measure of holiness, what, iii. 507. Of duty, gospel, iii. 635. Directive, a law is a, vi. 158. Of duty must be universally regarded, vi. 234. Of the law, vi. 366. Of the word, when to be attended to, vii. 408. Of spiritual affections, vii. 468. In the soul, sin has no right to, vii. 509. Of sin to be cast off, vii. 509. Golden, to be observed in toleration, viii. 62. Of grace in the soul, xi. 514. Of church communion fixed by Christ xv. 143.
Rulers, civil, wisdom and prudence of, why rejected of God, ii. 80. Prudence of, ii. 115. Of the church, evil effect of their secular pomp, vii. 210. Their duty in propagating the gospel, viii. 386. Civil and ecclesiastical, xii. 488. Civil, conspired in the death of Christ, xii. 488.
Rules for obtaining gospel peace and comfort, vi. 542. Of our own, evil of reducing the conduct of God to, viii. 142. For the interpretation of Scripture, x. 378.
Ruling affection, love the, i. 150. Power of Christ, i. 480. Faculty of the soul, the mind is the, iii. 250. Elders in the church, xv. 504, xvi. 106.
Ruminating on the things of the gospel, ix. 451.

Sacerdotal office of Christ, how to be regarded, i. 99, v. 117. Act of Christ, the first, iii. 177.
Sacrament of the Lord's supper designed for communion with Christ, viii. 560; the actings of faith in it, viii. 562.
Sacramental tender of Christ, ix. 565.
Sacraments of the new covenant, i. 490.
Sacrifice, the death of Christ a, ii. 159, xii. 421. Of Christ, its object, iii. 440. Of Christ, perpetual virtue of, iii. 440.
Sacrifices, expiatory, i. 121. Of the law, inefficacy of, ii. 98. End of, ii. 167. How connected with the oblation of Christ, iii. 441. Institution of, its design, vi. 435. Their origin and nature, x. 523. Propitiatory, x. 523. Human, x. 525.
Safety in fellowship with Christ, ii. 45. From temptation, means of, vi. 105. Of the way of salvation, vi. 530.
Saints, the communion of, i. 492. Love to, the effects of, vi. 146. Their failings, vi. 279. Their privileges, dangerous for any to encroach on, viii. 94. How purged, viii. 324. Dismissed to rest, viii. 359. Filled with perplexity about providence, viii. 377. Their access to God in one spirit, ix. 76. How Christ pleads with them, ix. 145. Their communion with Christ in providential changes, ix. 151. How different from the men of the world, ix. 160. Their usefulness in the world, ix. 282. Who are, xi. 88. Of, in the Romish church, xiv. 151.
Salt of the covenant of grace, perseverance is the, xi. 78.
Salvation, what things accompany, vii. 17. Effected instrumentally by the gospel, viii. 15. Not attainable without knowledge and faith, x. 108. How obtained by the ancient people of God, x. 109. By Christ, xii. 345.
Samaritan letters, xvi. 388. Pentateuch, the, xvi. 413.
Sanctification, nature of, i. 487, ii. 170, iii. 366, 369, 370, v. 130. Of the human nature of Christ in the womb, iii. 168. God the author of, iii. 367. Founded on the atonement, iii. 369. Evangelical holiness the fruit of, iii. 372. And holiness promised, iii. 382. A progressive work, iii. 386, 387, 409. And regeneration, how they differ, iii. 387. Positive work of the Spirit in, iii. 468. How Christ is made to his people, iii. 506. Necessity of, iii. 575. Universality of, vii. 418. The life of, vii. 488. A proper fruit and effect of the death of Christ, x. 249.
Sanctuary, Christ a, i. 331.
Satan, how conquered and destroyed by Christ, i. 23, 197, 216, ix. 488, xi. 304. Adoption of saints denounced to, ii. 210. Delusions of, iv. 185, vii. 43, 142. When temptations come from, only, vi. 95.

Agency of, in afflictions, vi. 580. The head of the first apostasy, vii. 139. Delivering up to the power of, vii. 143. Exertions of, against the truth, x. 491. Power of, xii. 518.
Satisfaction to divine justice, man could not make, i. 194. Of holy desires only in heaven, i. 244. Of Christ, ii. 419, xii. 419. Of Christ a motive to holiness, iii. 571. Of this life outweighed by trouble, iv. 381. Spiritual, v. 435. Undue, in worldly things, vii. 331. In a state of sin, vii. 525. The necessity of, ix. 252. Of Christ for the travail of his soul, ix. 576. Of Christ incompatible with the general ransom, x. 88, 273. Of Christ not for all, x. 247. Of Christ, a triple difference observed, x. 248. How made by Christ for them who were saved before his sufferings, x. 248. The word, not in the Latin or English Bible, x. 265. Christ in his, paid the very sum that was required of us, x. 267. Of Christ, arguments for, x. 279. Of Christ the ground of consolation, x. 283. A twofold, x. 438.
Saul, how he prophesied, iii. 142.
Savour, sweet, of the graces of Christ, ii. 75. Of spiritual things, vii. 483.
Scandal of the cross, how taken away, iv. 485. And offence, what is required of those who have given, v. 444. Sins which occasion, dangerous, vi. 347. Of sin, how to be considered, vi. 557. Freedom from, evil of resting in, ix. 498.
Scandalous sins, how to be treated, xv. 177.
Scape-goat, typical, v. 34, ix. 597.
Sceptics in religion, origin of, vii. 106.
Schism, nature of, xiii. 91, xiv. 29, 212, xv. 364.
Scholastical learning, insufficiency of, iv. 182.
Schoolmen, the, their character, xiv. 49, 323.
Science, faith more certain than, iv. 101.
Sciences and arts, use of, in the interpretation of Scripture, iv. 126.
Scoffing at spiritual things, iii. 264.
Scope and end of the Scriptures to be considered, iv. 509.
Scriptum and Lectum, xvi. 401.
Scripture, authority of, viii. 497. Sufficiency of, pleaded, xiv. 37, 243, 274. Intelligible, xiv. 276.
Scriptures, of the, i. 470, iv. 7. A collection of sacred writings, iv. 11. The only external means of divine revelation, iv. 12. Internal testimony of the Holy Spirit to the, iv. 61. Characters or impressions of God in the, iv. 91. The, not written in a systematical manner, iv. 188. Some things hard to be understood in the, iv. 196. The, not to be kept in an unknown language, iv. 211. Some things common to the, with other writings, iv. 230. Diligent reading of the, iv. 306, 321. Reason of faith in the, iv. 7. Keeping them from the people, xiv. 504. Who disparage the, xvi. 285. Not of private interpretation, xvi. 303. Internal evidence of the truth of the, xvi. 318.
Scruples not caused by the doctrine of effectual redemption, x. 409.
Sea, a comparison from the, vi. 289.
Seal, the Spirit a, ii. 242, iv. 399.
Sealing, the nature and end of, to confirm, ii. 242. The commission of the apostles, iv. 441. The destruction of a sinful people, viii. 155. The covenant, our, ix. 575. Of the Holy Spirit, xi. 323.
Searching for the cause of the absence of Christ, ii. 128. The whole Scripture necessary, iv. 192. Our own hearts, iv. 305. Into ourselves, when necessary, vii. 309. The heart, viii. 650.
Season for doing good, vi. 161. Appointed, of deliverance, viii. 84.
Seasons of entering into temptation to be watched, vi. 127. Proper, for spiritual thoughts, vii. 305.
Secrecy an occasion of temptation, vii. 374.
Secrets, Christ reveals his, to his people, ii. 119.
Sects in religion, inconveniencies of, xiii. 458.
Security of the new creation, i. 374. Of believers in Christ, ii. 190. The use of sealing, iv. 400. Or false peace, vi. 107. Of perseverance, not to be perverted, vi. 148. Careless, influence of, vii. 135. Sinful, vii. 537. In sinning, viii. 612. In ourselves, how prevented by afflictions, ix. 413. Of the people of God, xi. 285. Of the protestant religion, xiv. 525.
Sedition sometimes improperly charged on men, viii. 66. When falsely charged, xiii. 570.
Seducer, the case of the, viii. 168.
Seducers, of, xi. 601. Preservation from, xiii. 76. How men become an easy prey to, xiv. 493.
Seduction to be guarded against, vi. 294.
Seductions, pernicious, preservation from, iv. 147.
Sedulity necessary in ministers, vii. 189.
Seed of the woman and seed of the serpent compared, ix. 316. Of the woman, who, x. 290. Of the serpent, who, x. 291. Of God in believers, xi. 570.
Seers, prophets so called, iii. 130.
Selah, what meant by, viii. 86.
Self-annihilations of Romanists, vanity of, i. 142.
Self-denial and patience in sufferings, i. 176. Maceration, furious, to which Satan is consigned, i. 218. Sufficiency of God, i. 324. Emptying of Christ, i. 324. Knowledge, ii. 94. Abasement, iii. 459, v. 15, ix. 551. Credibility, nature of, iv. 64. Evidencing efficacy of the Scriptures, iv. 88. Confidence, iv. 180. Conceit, evil of, iv. 183. Judging, v. 74, 452. Displicency and abasement, v. 435. Abasement promoted by meditation, vi. 63. Confidence, danger of, vi. 130 Knowledge, importance of, vi. 131. Fulness, evil of, vi. 147. Endeavours to subdue sin fruitless, vi. 319. Condemnation, why necessary, vi. 362. Righteousness, the fruit of, vi. 378. Examination, impartial and severe, vii. 286. Pleasing in duty, vii. 294. Deceivings, ground of, vii. 311. Righteousness, vii. 427. Seeking, viii. 148. Justification, its evil, viii. 633. Renunciation, ix. 469. Sufficiency of the will, x. 118. Slaughter, what, xiii. 24.
Selfish men unlike God, iii. 587. Frame of spirit displeasing to God, vi. 426. How faith and love may be preserved from being, ix. 478.
Selfishness, how connected with duty, vi. 601.
Self-justiciaries, xiii. 124.
Sending of the Holy Spirit by Christ, ii. 199, iii. 190. Jesus Christ, a proof of the necessity of holiness, iii. 628. Christ to die for sin, an evidence of forgiveness, vi. 487. Of the Son by the Father, x. 163, 166, 171.
Sense, abiding, of our want of grace, i. 117. Of sin, how impressed on the mind, iii. 351. True, of the commands declared by Christ, iii. 632. Spiritual, of the reality of divine things, iv. 64. And judgment, spiritual, iv. 152. Of our true condition necessary to be acquired, iv. 176. Of God's relation to us as a Father, iv. 292. Of our apostasy from God, v. 20. Of the guilt of sin, why necessary, v. 23. Of sin, clear and abiding, necessary, vi. 50. Vigorous, of pardoning mercy, vi. 290. Of the love of God, vi. 334. The deep, we should have of spiritual concerns, vi. 355. Spiritual, and faith distinguished, vi. 561. Spiritual, its discerning power, vii. 288. Of divine love, how communicated to the soul, vii. 437. Of indications of divine displeasure, want of a, vii. 536. And reason, deliverances often beyond, viii. 121. Punishment of, xii. 494.
Senselessness under guilt, vii. 537. Under the word, vii. 540.
Sensibility of the love of Christ, i. 167. Of sin necessary, vi. 221. Of the power of sin, vii. 515.
Sensuality of life, vii. 182, 521.

Sentence of the law on sinners, vi. 315. Of the law, severity of, vi. 367. Of the law against sin, xii. 532.
Separation of persons and things to the service of God, iii. 370. Of the body and blood of Christ, ix. 526. Between God and man by sin, xii. 531. From the world, xiii. 67. From a church, on what accounts justifiable, xiii. 199. From corrupt churches, xv. 77; when allowed to be just, xv. 425.
Septuagint, its character and history, xvi. 416.
Serpent, tradition of the Jews about the, iv. 463.
Serpent's head, what it is, ix. 316.
Servant, Christ appeared in the form of a, xii. 287.
Servants of God, ready to faint under dark providences, viii. 140. Of God often cut off before the accomplishment of the great things about which they have been employed, viii. 356.
Service of God, man made for the, i. 206. Of Christ, how valued, i. 267. Of Christ in heaven, i. 267. Spiritual, principles of, ii. 213. Latin, of the, xiv. 128, 457.
Sesostris, king of Egypt, his law about idle persons, viii. 197.
Settle men in the truth, Scripture sufficient to, xiv. 243.
Seventy, the ministry of the, temporary, iv. 445.
Severities of mortification, when necessary, i. 452.
Severity of God, why it must be insisted on, vii. 40. And goodness of God, viii. 593. And anger of God, what, x. 572. Against dissenters, xiii. 533. Of God, signal instances of, xv. 476.
Shaking of the heavens and earth, viii. 247, 256.
Shame and sorrow for sin, iii. 359. Inseparable from sin, iii. 428. Casting off, iii. 431. And reproach, worldly, vi. 107. Open, putting Christ to, vii. 49.
Shape and visible figure of God, xii. 98.
Shedding abroad the love of God in the heart, ii. 240.
Sheep, why the people of God are called, ix. 281.
Shelter from storms, viii. 18.
Shigionoth, what it means, viii. 79.
Ship, similitude of a, xii. 81.
Shower of rain, a simile, vii. 282.
Showing forth the death of Christ, ix. 538.
Sick, directions of Anselm for visitation of the, v. 16.
Sickness, what sinners will do in, vii. 544.
Sighs and tears, occasion of, v. 453.
Sight in heaven, beholding the glory of Christ by, i. 374. Present, of Christ obscure, i. 375. Bodily, of Christ a privilege, i. 383. And faith, i. 389. Of God which Moses had, vi. 64. Present, of God obscure, vi. 65. Heaven a state of, vii. 337.
Sign, visible, of the Holy Ghost, iii. 74.
Signification, great, depending on a single letter, iii. 145. Double, of the names of the officers of the church, ix. 452.
Signs and wonders no infallible testimony of prophecy, iii. 35. Miraculous works called, iii. 146. Of the Holy Spirit, iii. 147. And tokens of regeneration, iii. 216.
Silent, the peculiar use of the word in Scripture, ii. 25.
Siloam, fall of the tower in, viii. 601.
Simony, the nature of, iv. 423.
Simple intelligence belongs to God, xii. 127.
Simplicity of believing, iv. 71. Of the gospel, corruption of, vi. 293. Of the gospel, danger of rejecting, vii. 221.
Sin, permission of, i. 61. And apostasy from God, its nature, i. 181. Disorder introduced by, i. 185. First, horrible nature of the, i. 190. Of the devil, in what it consists, i. 425. Known, effect of indulging in, i. 449. Confessions of, i. 456. Original, ii. 64, x. 68. Knowledge of, ii. 94. Desert of, manifested in the cross, ii. 96. How transferred to Christ, ii. 194. Against the Holy Ghost remediless, ii. 229, iii. 28. Original, denial of, iii. 223. Allowance of, iii. 240. Early operation of, in man, iii. 338. Cleansing ourselves from, our duty, iii. 424. Cleansing from, to be prayed for, iii. 425. Compared to things that defile, iii. 425. Cleansing from, in profession and reality, iii. 438. Our duty to be affected with a sense of, iii. 452, ix. 570. Glorying in, iii. 454. Cleansing from, not effected in our own strength, iii. 454. Removal of encumbrances of, iii. 469. And grace cannot rule together, iii. 489. Mortification of, iii. 538, vi. 5. An abiding principle, iii. 541. How imputed to Christ, v. 175. Its hardening influence, vi. 15, 37, 52. Contending against, when vain, vi. 37. One, frequently the punishment of another, vi. 42. Legal contending against, vi. 47. Condemning power of, vi. 57. Weakened by grace, vi. 124. However violent in its actings, must not conquer, vi. 186. Bringing forth of, vi. 216, xi. 559. Proper consideration of, vi. 217. Contending against, must be severe, vi. 220. Relief of the soul against its destructive nature, vi. 221. The working of, by deceit, vi. 245. Extenuations of, vi. 246. When conceived may be variously obstructed, vi. 260. Why not acted when conceived in the heart, vi. 261. How God restrains it in the world, vi. 267. Unprofitableness of, vi. 273. Nature of, pernicious, vi. 314. The first, greatness of, vi. 433. How men are hardened in, vi. 631. And prayer, their influence on each other, vii. 289. Freedom from, in heaven, vii. 333. Approach to unpardonable, vii. 512. Reserve of known, vii. 533. Unaffectedness with the guilt of, vii. 535. Destruction of condemning power of, vii. 545. How to be dealt with, vii. 559. And grace, dominion of, vii. 505–560. Preventive of good, viii. 20. The cause of judgments, viii. 136. When ripe for ruin, viii. 138. The cause of disquietness to believers, viii. 359. When abounding in church and nation, viii. 611. When habitually prevalent, ix. 381. How regarded in the covenant, ix. 419. How subdued by Christ, ix. 489. Flagitious and open, ix. 497. Of our first parents, what it was, xii. 145.
Sincerity, in duty, iii. 471. The best evidence of, vi. 24. Of the affections, vii. 482.
Singing of psalms, ix. 465.
Single acts of obedience, holiness doth not consist in, iii. 473.
Sinner, convinced, state of, v. 98.
Sinners, their extremities make them see their need of Christ, viii. 120. The promises made to, xi. 229.
Sins, splendid, what, iii. 293. When duties are said to be, iii. 293. Under or after great afflictions, aggravation of, vi. 345. What, endanger the removal of the gospel, viii. 32. Mortal and venial, a false distinction, viii. 584. Of others, mourning for, viii. 654. Of others, how far we are concerned in them, ix. 365. Which have procured judgments, we should examine what share we have had in them, ix. 497. Of churches and professors, ix. 498. In what sense debts, x. 574.
Skill in the original text necessary to the exposition of Scripture, iii. 50. In dividing the word, iv. 510, ix. 455.
Slaves and children, difference between, ii. 214.
Sleep of present satisfaction, how God awakens his people from, ix. 413.
Sloth in holy duties, i. 448, iii. 578. Spiritual, how overcome, iii. 497. Spiritual, effect of, iv. 181. Indwelling sin works by, vi. 291.
Slow progress in knowledge, why many make, iv. 160. Of heart to believe, vi. 69.

Slumber of grace, evil of, vi. 128.
Small things, God does not despise, vi. 602.
Sober-mindedness, iv. 266.
Society and business, when to be avoided, vii. 386. Wicked, evil of, vii. 512. Civil, fundamental law of, xiii. 556.
Socinus, history of, xii. 20.
Socinians, their hostility to the person of Christ, i. 41.
Socrates, his character falsely spoken of, iii. 647. Case of, xiii. 359.
Solicitation, perplexing, of lust, vii. 359. To sin, how resisted, vii. 485. To particular sins, vii. 516.
Solicitations occasioned by the withdrawment of Christ, ii. 128. About the world, how to be regulated, v. 449. To sin, vi. 98, 99. Prevalent, vi. 244. Frequent, vi. 257.
Solifidians, who are, v. 73.
Solitudes and retirements, v. 455, vii. 375.
Son, purchased treasury of the, ii. 17. Spirit of the, iii. 60. Of the Holy Ghost, Christ not the, iii. 164. Of God, Christ is the, xii. 169.
Song, excellency of Solomon's, i. 157. Of loves, ix. 464.
Songs, God often calls his people to, viii. 79.
Sophism proposed to Diogenes, xii. 60.
Sophistry, how best opposed, ix. 460.
Sorrow, godly, how produced, v. 452. Deep, for sin, vi. 549.
Sorrows of the church, how limited, viii. 85.
Sottishness and folly of sin, i. 429.
Soul and body, union of, i. 229, xii. 211. The human, of Christ in glory, its state, i. 246. Spirituality of the, i. 282. Free from all imperfection in heaven, i. 411. Of man, origin of, iii. 100. And body, how sanctified, iii. 420. Intercourse of, with God, iv. 328. How Christ suffered in his, xii. 491.
Souls, holiness the honour of our, iii. 430. Of men, compassion for, viii. 655.
Soundness in the faith, xv. 526.
Sounds of letters, xvi. 395.
Sovereignty of God a check to sin, vi. 238. Of the will of God, vi. 408, x. 455. Of God, vi. 626, ix. 521. Of God, submission to the, vii. 157.
Speaking with tongues, iv. 472. Peace to ourselves falsely, vi. 70.
Speech, gift of, necessary for ministers, iv. 512.
Spirit, immediate efficacy of the, ii. 17. Communion with the, ii. 222. False, character of the, ii. 256. Holy, how both Lord and God, iii. 20. The only author of good, iii. 27. False pretences to the name and work of the, iii. 29. Known by his operations, iii. 38. Dispensation of, not confined to the first ages of the church, iii. 44. Import of the name, iii. 47. False notions about the, iii. 53. So called from his immaterial substance, iii. 54. Called by way of eminency, "The Holy Spirit," iii. 55. So called from his work, iii. 56, 57. Called "The good Spirit," iii. 58. In what sense called "The Spirit of God," iii. 59. How called "The Spirit of the Son," iii. 60. Of antichrist, what it is, iii. 63. The, an eternal, infinite, intelligent person, iii. 67. His own subsistence, iii. 77. Never appeared in the person of a man, iii. 78. The author of the ministry in the church, iii. 85. Not a quality or virtue of the divine nature, iii. 89. Moving on the face of the waters, iii. 97. Given of God, iii. 106. Motion in sending the, what it means, iii. 110. Compared to fire and water, iii. 115. Acting upon the prophets, iii. 132. Gift of, not to any peculiar sort of persons, but to all believers, iii. 154. And his graces to be prayed for, iii. 155. The legacy of Christ, iii. 156. How he supplies the bodily presence of Christ, iii. 193. How he glorifies Christ, iii. 196. Works by ordinary means, iii. 225. Of God, things of, what they are, iii. 259. The author of regeneration, iii. 299. Physical work of, iii. 307, 316, vi. 19. His operations cannot be resisted, iii. 317. What it is to be acted upon by, iii. 534. The immediate efficient cause of mortification, iii. 547. Of the Son, meaning of the words, iv. 265. Inhabitation of, a check to sin, vi. 241. Immediate testimony of, as to our state, not to be expected, vi. 594. His operations in purging the saints, ix. 146. Concurrence of, and actings in the work of redemption, x. 178. Common gifts and graces of, xi. 90. His continuance with believers, xi. 308. His deity, graces, and operations, xii. 333.
Spirits, why false prophets are called, iii. 33. How to be tried, iii. 33. Discerning of, iv. 471.
Spirituality in religious duties, ix. 372.
Spiritualness, we must maintain a humbling sense of our aversation to, vi. 187.
Splendid sins, what, iii. 293.
Splendour of the glory of Christ too great for our present condition, i. 290.
Spoiling of Satan by Christ, i. 217.
Spoils of enemies hung up in the house of God, viii. 290.
Sponsor, Christ a proper, x. 246, 354.
Sprigge, animadversions on an erroneous work of, x. 425.
Spring in autumn, i. 436. And fountain of spiritual life, iii. 291. And fountain of holiness, iii. 503. Of comfort to believers, iv. 376. Of spiritual thoughts, vii. 484.
Springs of obedience, vi. 161.
Stability in believing, on what it depends, iv. 395. Of the love of God, xi. 131.
Staggering at the promise of God, viii. 217, 238.
Stalking-horse, God will not have the gospel made a, viii. 32.
Standards and measures, church, iv. 477.
Stapleton, "De Principiis Fidei," extract from, iv. 114.
State and condition to which man is restored by Christ, i. 203. Present, of Christ in heaven, i. 235. Of a convinced sinner, v. 98. When falsely considered good, vi. 37. Of the flock should be known to ministers, ix. 456. Of Adam before the fall, x. 82. Of those for whom Christ died before believing, x. 465. Of the wicked at the last day, xii. 581. Of the kingdom with respect to the bill against conventicles, xiii. 583. Of the protestant religion, xiv. 531.
States, two, of sin and grace, iii. 490. And conditions of the church regarded in Scripture, iv. 189.
Stations and places, duties of, viii. 656.
Steadfastness in believing, i. 221, ix. 27. Of mind, vi. 232. Gives glory to God, ix. 32. Of the purposes of God, xi. 141.
Stewards of worldly things, men are, vii. 406.
Stifling gifts with vice to be avoided, iv. 458.
Stillingfleet, Dr, animadversions on his sermon, xiii. 303.
Stirring up his people to search diligently after him, Christ's, i. 391. Of spiritual graces, iii. 505, xi. 347. To sin, innate corruption, vi. 198. The soul, neglect of, vi. 291.
Stoics, their definition of liberty, viii. 57.
Stopping the mouths of enemies, ii. 185.
Story of religion, xiv. 94, 393.
Stout-heartedness to be avoided, viii. 641.
Stoutness of sinful hearts, viii. 109.
Straits and difficulties, outward, iv. 273. Time of great, viii. 40.
Strangers, in Scripture, how understood, ix. 131.
Streams of grace, iii. 403. Of refreshment, from the mercy of God, vi. 402.

Strength, nothing to be attempted in our own, i. 454. For walking with God necessary, ii. 109. Bodily, obtained from the Holy Spirit, iii. 150. Supernatural, not imparted by moral suasion, iii. 309. Spiritual aids and supplies of, how obtained, vii. 529, 546. Of God's people, how proved, viii. 19. Of faith, the, ix. 19. An all-sufficiency of, in God, ix. 430.
Strife and debate, evil of, vi. 147.
Studying divinity, effect of doing so improperly, iv. 183.
Style, variety of, in Scripture, iii. 144. And manner of the sacred writers, iv. 33.
Suasion, moral, iii. 301, 302, 309.
Subduction of the means of grace from a people, iv. 417.
Subjection, bringing the body into, vi. 61. Due to bishops, xiii. 181. To Christ, how professed, xv. 459.
Subject-matter of a gospel church, xvi. 11. Of Scripture, xvi. 434.
Submission to the will of God by Christ, iii. 178. To the will of God, how promoted, iii. 599. To the sovereignty of God, want of, a spring of apostasy, vii. 157. Of Christ in his sufferings, ix. 536. Canonical, required, xv. 160.
Subordination of one church to another not provable, xiii. 141.
Subscription to a confession of faith, whether the magistrate may compel, xiii. 514.
Subserviency of the human will to the providence of God, x. 120.
Subsistence, personal, of the human and divine natures of Christ, i. 225. Of spiritual things in the heart, vii. 320. Of the human nature of Christ, xii. 210. To what faith gives, xii. 289.
Substitution of persons, ii. 446. Of Jesus Christ, ix. 569; in respect of guilt, x. 598.
Subtlety of disputation, iv. 72.
Success of the spiritual conflict, iii. 646. Of the doctrine of the Scriptures, iv. 38. Of prayer, God glorified by, iv. 286. An evidence of the power of sin, vi. 202. Of the word, duty of praying for, ix. 457.
Successes of sin, vi. 205.
Successors of the apostles, iv. 443. Of Peter, no, xiv. 294.
Succour from Christ, vi. 83. Peculiar, against indwelling sin, vi. 288.
Suffering patiently for Christ, iii. 648. For Christ, how to be endured, ix. 581. Conformity to Christ in, ix. 581. To the glory of Christ, ix. 581.
Sufferings and glory of Christ, how connected, i. 343. Of Christ, ii. 97, x. 172; how he was supported under, iii. 174. Of the martyrs, iv. 36. Great, why God brings them on his people, vi. 94. Our, on account of our sins, vi. 634. How to be prepared for, vii. 323. Improper frame under, vii. 349. For religion, viii. 598. Of Christ, extremity of, ix. 534; how they answer the law of God, ix. 567. Of Christ, remembrance of, ix. 567. Of Christ in his soul, privative and positive, ix. 587. Of Christ prove the justice of God, x. 547. Of Christians under the Roman emperors, xiii. 565.
Sufficiency for obedience from God, iii. 532. Of divine revelation, iv. 8. Of knowledge to be obtained from the Scriptures, iv. 196. Self, of God to be considered, vi. 482, ix. 429; seen in the covenant, ix. 428. Of the death of Christ, x. 296. Of Scripture pleaded for, xiv. 37, 243.
Suffrage of the people in the choice of a minister, xv. 495.
Suggestions of Satan, power of, iv. 169. Of the Holy Ghost, iv. 362.
Suitableness of spiritual things, iii. 261. Of the operations of the Holy Spirit to our condition, iii. 318. Between the mind and duty, whence derived, iii. 498. Of every thing in creation, v. 50. Of holiness, how acknowledged, v. 428. Of actions to the heart, vi. 171. Of temptation, vi. 193. Of mind to spiritual things, vii. 470.
Sun, moon, and stars, the host of heaven, iii. 95.
Supererogation, works of, iii. 380.
Superficiary knowledge of divine things, i. 220.
Superstition, in devotion, iii. 481. Gradual progress of, iv. 241. Reign of, vii. 138. Effect of, vii. 429. How produced, vii. 472.
Supper, Lord's, i. 491, vi. 467; commemorative, ix. 527; a federal ordinance, ix. 528; time of preparation for, ix. 555; when and to whom to be administered, xv. 512.
Supplication, the Spirit of, ii. 249, iv. 257. When specially necessary, ix. 562.
Supplies of spiritual life, how obtained, i. 367. Of grace, all from Christ, i. 458. Of grace, when given, ii. 144. And assistances of grace, why imparted, iii. 553. Of the Spirit, how to be obtained, iv. 204. Of grace, how communicated, iv. 517, vii. 437. Of grace to subdue indwelling sin, vi. 286. What, are received from Christ by faith, ix. 503.
Supportment from communion with Christ, ii. 45. Derived from forgiveness, vi. 416. From the Holy Spirit, xi. 346.
Supposition of a state of grace liable to abuse, iii. 406.
Supremacy, papal, nature of, xiv. 229.
Suretiship of Christ, nature of, v. 175.
Surety, for whom Christ was a, x. 288, 358.
Surprisal into sin, i. 442, v. 443. And disappointment, ix. 411.
Surprisals, unexpected, of indwelling sin, vi. 191. The deceit of sin operates by, vi. 243. Of sin, xi. 559.
Susception of the office of mediator by Christ, i. 323.
Suspending of the rigorous execution of the law, x. 461.
Sustentation of all things by God, x. 34.
Symbol in actions, how enjoined the prophets, iii. 138.
Symptoms of lust to be considered, vi. 43.
Synagogues, a copy of the Scriptures without points preserved in the, xvi. 391.
Synod of Dort, vii. 74, 75.
Syriac ritual of baptism, iii. 75. Translation of the Scriptures, xvi. 412.
System, the Scriptures not composed as a, iv. 188.

Tabernacle and temple of old, wisdom of God in the institutions of the, i. 260.
Table of the Lord, provisions of, ix. 570.
Taint of sin and liableness to guilt, how avoided by the Redeemer, i. 199.
Talents, what, are given to ministers, iv. 504. Variously given, ix. 448.
Talmuds, the Jewish, xvi. 379.
Taste of the love of Christ in the heart, i. 338. Of the excellency of the gospel lost, vii. 231. Experimental, of religion, viii. 549. How we are said to, spiritual things, xi. 650.
Tasting the powers of the world to come, ii. 246. Of the heavenly gift, vii. 24.
Teacher, the Holy Spirit a, ii. 247.
Teachers, ordinary, iv. 447, xvi. 97. False, their mischievous influence, vii. 143. Public in religion, defects in, vii. 182. Several ways of being called to the office of, xiii. 29. False, the cause of divisions, xv. 139. Principal duties of, xv. 499.
Teaching of the Holy Spirit, iii. 83, iv. 148, 395; to pray, iii. 398. Of Christ, advantages of, iii. 634.

Internal, of the Holy Ghost, iv. 144. Supposes a man capable of instruction, iv. 167. Of God, in what it consists, iv. 167. Officers of the church, iv. 492, ix. 453.
Teman, what meant by it, viii. 86.
Tempers of men, various and different, iii. 643. Quiet and sedate, iii. 643.
Tempest of the wrath of God, Christ alone a covert from, ix. 50.
Temple-work of Christ in heaven, i. 253. Heaven a glorious, i. 256. Of God, a believer the, ix. 255, xi. 335.
Temptation, acquaintance with the nature of, a qualification for the ministry, iv. 511. Its nature and power, vi. 91. In what sense by God, vi. 93. Hour of, who are kept from the, vi. 102. To enter into, the great danger of any soul, vi. 123. Provision against approach of, vi. 133. Early discovery of, important, vi. 134. Aim of, to be discovered, vi. 135. How to fortify the heart against, vi. 144. Readiness to join with, vi. 193. Times of, how sin argues in, vi. 220. Power and prevalency of, vi. 343. Distinguishing the time of, vii. 357. Difference between that of God and man, viii. 168.
Temptations of Satan interrupt the work of faith, i. 404. Pity of Christ to his people in, ii. 141. Falling under the power of, iii. 342. How they hinder and promote the growth of holiness, iii. 402. Relief from, iv. 65. When they come from Satan singly, vi. 95. Allurements of, vi. 100. Public, vi. 110. Of Christ, vi. 115. Special, why they should be considered, vii. 312. Of Satan, how repelled, vii. 371.
Tempting the Spirit, what it is, iii. 87.
Tendency unto living to God, what, iii. 296. Of temptation to be considered, vi. 135.
Tender of Christ in the ordinance of the supper, ix. 564.
Tenderness of Christ towards his church, ii. 73. Of spirit, vi. 124. Of conscience, vi. 284. Of heart, vii. 559.
Tenders of gospel righteousness, ii. 175.
Terms used by the ancient church to describe the hypostatical union, i. 227. Of peace, vi. 517. Upon which we enter into covenant with God, ix. 426. Used to express the punishment of sin, x. 449. Of communion, imposition of, xv. 158.
Terror of God, how made known to his own people, vi. 631. The, which accompanies death, ix. 531.
Tertullian's remarkable saying with respect to the Scriptures, viii. 331.
Testimonies to the excellency of the Scriptures from the fathers, iv. 111. Of the ancients, x. 422.
Testimony of the Spirit to Christ, iii. 185. Of the church to the Scriptures, iv. 30. Faith built on, iv. 53. Of the Spirit to the truth, iv. 391. Of adoption, iv. 404. Faith an assent upon, v. 72. Of conscience, vii. 293, xi. 83. Against abounding atheism required of us, vii. 368. Of the church not the only nor chief reason for believing Scripture to be the word of God, viii. 497. The nature of, xvi. 325. To the Scriptures, xvi. 325.
Text, original, of Scripture, necessity of skill in, iii. 50. Abuse of, iv. 217. Hebrew and Greek, integrity of, xvi. 347.
Thankfulness for grace received, vi. 592. In remembrance of mercies, viii. 87. For the ministry, ix. 426.
Thanksgiving to Christ, i. 320. Communion with the Spirit in, ii. 271.
Themistius, a quotation from, vii. 191. His counsel to the Emperor Valens, viii. 186.
Theodosius the emperor, a declaration of, vii. 250.
Things represented in vision to the prophets, iii. 137. Against the light of nature not enjoined the prophets, iii. 139. Of the Spirit of God, iii. 259. Spiritual, to whom they are foolishness, iii. 278. Of Christ, what they are, iv. 359.
Thirst, spiritual, ix. 49, xi. 353.
Thoughtfulness about the state of the soul, vi. 356.
Thoughts about Christ, regulation of, i. 223. Our, should be fixed on the person of Christ, i. 312. Frequent, of Christ, i. 403. Of heavenly things, how excited, iv. 200. The purveyors of the soul, vi. 22. Vain, vi. 246. Powerless, of spiritual things, vi. 292. Hard, of God, how engendered, vi. 377; how removed, xi. 390. And meditations, spiritual, vii. 275. Evil, injection of, vii. 524.
Thrasilaus, story of, xiii. 168.
Threatenings, and the punishment of sin appointed, x. 618. Of God, nature of, xi. 168. Design of God in them, xi. 467. And comminations conditional, xi. 646.
Three in one, God has revealed himself as, iii. 66. Sorts of lives, vi. 74.
Thriving of grace at the end of life, i. 433.
Throne of Satan in the mind, what it is, iv. 180. Of grace, God seen on a, iv. 291. Of sin in the affections, vii. 524.
Tigranes, son of the king of Armenia, story of, x. 622.
Time of death appointed by God, i. 283. A, of affliction and calamity, effect of on the mind, vi. 27. Some portion of, to be specially devoted to spiritual thoughts, vii. 391. Of public calamity, use of faith in, ix. 490. The, when the Lord's supper should be observed, ix. 554.
Times of great distresses in conscience, we should invoke Christ in, i. 113. Perilous, ix. 320.
Tiresias, ghost of, v. 67.
Tithes, payment of, xiii. 515.
Title, what, the children of God enjoy, ii. 215. Especial name and, of God evidence forgiveness, vi. 478. Right and, to the kingdom of God, xi. 542.
Tittle and iota of Scripture, every, sacred, iv. 213.
Tokens, infallible, of being moved by the Holy Ghost, iii. 133.
Toleration of errors, viii. 53. In religion, viii. 55, 163, 170, 172. And indulgence considered, xiii. 519.
Tongue, worshipping God in an unknown, xiv. 504.
Tongues, multiplication of, part of the curse on man, ii. 112. Fiery, what they signified, iii. 76. And hands of the prophets guided by the Holy Ghost, iii. 134. Speaking with, iv. 472. Gift of, xiii. 46.
Touching Christ, the means of deriving virtue from him, iii. 562.
Touchstone of love, i. 168. Of holiness, what it is, iii. 508. Of gospel light, vi. 219.
Trade, a metaphor from, applied to religion, vii. 385. Persecution injurious to, xiii. 368.
Tradition, oral, insufficiency of, iv. 10. Its proper use in the interpretation of Scripture, iv. 226. Scripture not received by tradition, xvi. 329.
Traditions of the Jews, xvi. 300. Authority of, xvi. 329.
Transaction of things in heaven by Christ, i. 254.
Transcribers of the sacred writings, xvi. 355.
Transformation of the affections, vii. 448.
Transgression of the law, sin is the, v. 202.
Translation of punishment by divine dispensation, i. 353. Of believers into the family of God, ii. 207. Out of darkness into light, iv. 163. Of punishment to Christ, x. 564.
Translations of Scripture, weakness of, iv. 214; use of, xvi. 406. Of the New Testament, xvi. 418.

Transposition of letters in Scripture, xvi. 291.
Transubstantiation, xiv. 411; why invented, viii. 563.
Travail of the soul of Christ, ix. 576.
Treacheries of the heart of man, vi. 174.
Treasure, good, of the heart, vii. 275, 279.
Treasures of wrath, when poured out, viii. 134.
Treasury of grace, Christ the, i. 362. Purchased, of the Son, ii. 16.
Treaty of the gospel, its object, i. 211.
Tree and branches, union of, an illustration of the union between Christ and believers, xi. 340.
Trees, believers compared to, iii. 395. High and green, what they signify, viii. 319. Low and dry, what meant by, viii. 319.
Trembling of heart, viii. 82.
Trial of prophets and prophecy, iii. 34. What circumstances men are placed in for their, vii. 358.
Trials, great, permitted to prevent sin, vi. 263. And temptations, why they should be considered, vii. 312.
Trifling with temptation, vi. 99.
Trinity, order of the holy persons in the, in their operations, i. 219. Of the, i. 472. The doctrine of the, vindicated, ii. 377. How spiritual gifts are derived from each person in, iii. 20. Doctrine of, the foundation of all religion, iii. 66. The, revealed in the new creation, iii. 158. The peculiar work of each person of the, in redemption, iii. 159. Doctrine of, why denied, v. 47.
Trouble, every man exposed to, iv. 380. Depths of, vi. 332. Sin is a cause of, to believers, xi. 558.
Troubles and distresses, lightness of, i. 279. Different sorts of, iii. 244. Which render consolation necessary, iii. 411. Preservation from, vii. 491.
Trust of the believer's whole inheritance reposed in Christ, i. 214. In God, how Christ exercised, iii. 179. In God, what necessary to, iv. 158. Especial, part of an office, iv. 355. In God, v. 101, viii. 447. Not to be put in the heart, vi. 105. In worldly grandeur, xv. 104.
Truth, sacred, the person of Christ the repository of, i. 79. What renders it useless, i. 84. Power of, i. 307. God is the spring and fountain of, iii. 5. A grace of the Spirit, and an evidence of holiness, iii. 589. Spirit of, iv. 142. How it is lost in words, v. 10. First deposited in the person of Christ, vi. 456. Assurance of its certainty, vi. 458. Repositories of, vii. 187. Suffering for the, viii. 65. Of God makes good his promises, viii. 114, 221. Of God engaged to protect righteous zeal, viii. 151 We are not to be ashamed of the, ix. 225. What graces peculiarly respect, in a perilous time, ix. 328. It is incumbent on pastors to preserve the, ix. 458. Love of, why necessary, ix. 459. How it may be lost, ix. 459. How it is to be received, xi. 380. And innocence vindicated, xiii. 343.
Tumult of the soul from conviction, iii. 357.
Tumultuating of indwelling sin, vi. 603. Of lust, xi. 535.
Turning from the way of righteousness, vi. 311.
Twilight in the church, i. 298.
Twisse, his sentiments on the justice of God, x. 584.
Types of Christ, expiatory sacrifices were, i. 121. And allegories of Scripture, iv. 197. Of the oblation of Christ, xi. 366.

Ubiquity of God, xii. 91.
Umpire, Christ an, ii. 69.
Unable, we are at present, to bear the full manifestation of the glory of Christ, i. 380.
Unacquaintedness with our mercies, a sin, ii. 32. With God, our, vi. 63.
Unaffectedness with the sins of others, vii. 536.
Unbelief, final, its malignity, i. 211. Formal nature of, i. 295. Its opposition to the Holy Spirit, ii. 14. Guilt of, iii. 322. And faith, as connected with prayer, iv. 277. Nature and effect of, v. 96. Language of, vi. 525. And jealousy distinguished, vi. 558. The cause of staggering at the promises, viii. 215. Excludes from an interest in the promise, viii. 227. The sinfulness of, viii. 238. Danger of, x. 396. Final, not regarded in the satisfaction of Christ, x. 453.
Uncertainty of mere moral precepts, iii. 635. Of worldly things, v. 448, vii. 402.
Unchangeableness of God, the security of his promises, viii. 229. Of God, xi. 120.
Uncleanness, habitual, iii. 431. Abounding of, viii. 613.
Unction of Christ to his prophetical office, iii. 171. Of the Holy Spirit, iv. 145, 389. A way of dedication to God, ix. 288.
Unctions in the Judaical church, the use of, ii. 246.
Understanding of Christ, the human, i. 93. Ascribed to the Holy Spirit, iii. 78. The directive faculty of the soul, iii. 252. The depravation of, iii. 252, 330. How given by Christ, iii. 331. The mind of God in his word, causes, ways, and means of, iv. 117. The giving of us an, iv. 164. In the mysteries of the gospel given to ministers by the Spirit, iv. 509. Right, of forgiveness, vi. 424.
Undervaluing of duties, the evil of, iii. 479. Of danger from temptation, vi. 112.
Unframing the soul, how it is done, vi. 292.
Unholiness of professors not to be charged on religion, xi. 493.
Uniformity, enforcement of, xiii. 96.
Union, hypostatical, of the, i. 40, 223, iii. 160. Between angels and the church by love, i. 147. Of soul and body intimate, i. 282. The foundation of communion, ii. 8. With Christ, iii. 464, 478, 516. Among Christian churches, iv. 248, xiii. 136, xvi. 183. To Christ, iv. 385, ix. 447, xi. 336, xiii. 22. Between the oblation and intercession of Christ, x. 181. And peace in religion, xiv. 30. Returnal unto Rome no means of, xiv. 237. Among Protestants, xiv. 519.
Unity of God, ii. 381. Of the decrees of God, x. 55. Of the promises, xi. 227. Church, preservation of, xiii. 66. Of faith, in what it consists, xiv. 257. And moderation, proposals for, xiv. 310.
Universality the best evidence of sanctification, iii. 421. Of obedience, iii. 471. Of holy duties, iii. 485. In the actings of indwelling sin, vi. 604. Objective, in spiritual things, vii. 420. Of indwelling sin, xi. 105. Of efficient causes in the death of Christ, xii. 487. Of professors, in what sense a church, xiii. 136.
Universe, the good of the, consulted in the dispensations of God, i. 186.
Unkindness, how we may be guilty of, towards God, iv. 414. Towards God, sense of, vi. 334.
Unreadiness to receive instruction, iii. 256. To obedience, how overcome, iii. 497. Of grace for exercise, vii. 497. To prayer, vii. 530.
Unspiritedness for duty, vi. 337.
Unstableness of mind, effect of, viii. 382.
Unweariedness in the spiritual conflict necessary, vii. 387.
Unwillingness of men to turn to God, iv. 165. Spiritual, vi. 243. For duty, vii. 531.
Uprightness of soul, vii. 406. Comfort of, xi. 84.
Urgency of temptation, restless, vi. 100. Of sin, vi. 198.
Urging occasions of life, sin takes advantage from, vi. 230.
Usages, civil, how they may be connected with religion, xiii. 472.
Use of spiritual gifts, iii. 16. Of promises, exhor-

tations, and threatenings, iii. 203. Of means, why required, iii. 593. Of prayer, iv. 251. Of faith in justification, v. 107. And abuse of worldly things, vii. 404. Of faith in a time of public calamity, ix. 490; under reproaches and persecutions, ix. 498; if Popery should return, ix. 505; in a time of general declension, ix. 510. Of reason, xiv. 73, 356.
Usefulness of believers, how promoted, ii. 185. In the world, on what it depends, iii. 583. Of mortification, vi. 21. In our generation, by what prevented, vi. 56. Of spiritual gifts, vii. 288.
Uselessness of men in their profession, causes of, i. 451. Of professors a cause of offence, vii. 215.
Utterance in prayer a peculiar gift of the Spirit, iv. 311. The gift of, necessary for ministers, iv. 512.

Vain thoughts, vi. 246. Confidences, carnal security works by, vii. 137. And unprofitable thoughts, vii. 304. Curiosity, vii. 365. Confidences to be guarded against, viii. 645.
Valuation of the means of cleansing from sin, iii. 460. Of what is known, vi. 140. Of mercy, vi. 424. Of the pledges of divine love, vii. 493. Of the ministry, ix. 436.
Value of believers by Christ, ii. 133. Of the blood of Christ, x. 89. Of the death of Christ, x. 231; how the foundation of gospel dispensation, x. 231. Of satisfaction, whence it arises, x. 441.
Vaninus, the atheist, xii. 495.
Vanity of our endeavours for salvation, ii. 98. Of pleas and pretences against the personality of the Holy Ghost, iii. 71. Of the mind, iii. 251. Of the world, iii. 253. Of papal inventions for the purification of sin, iii. 434. And darkness of mind, effect of, iv. 176. Of the world, how we should be affected by the, v. 445. Of mind a cause of apostasy, vii. 123; how removed, vii. 486.
Variableness improperly charged on the decrees of God, x. 16.
Variation in assurance, vi. 551.
Variety of duties required for the mortification of sin, iii. 558. Great, in the dispensation of the means of grace, viii. 11, 13. Of experience, xi. 81. Of ancient liturgies, xv. 25.
Vehicles of grace, what are, iii. 290.
Veil of natural darkness, iv. 130. Double, on the eye and heart, iv. 132.
Veiled, manifestation of the glory of Christ after it had been, i. 343.
Vengeance, how God executes, on the enemies of his people, ii. 146. On antichristian states, viii. 263.
Venturing on sin presumptuously, vi. 117.
Veracity of God the formal object of faith, iv. 18. And truth of God in his promises, vi. 640.
Verbal testimony to the Scriptures, iv. 37.
Verses of Adrian on his death-bed, i. 280, x. 520.
Vexing the Holy Spirit, iv. 416.
Viator, how Christ was, v. 259.
Vicar of Christ, the Holy Spirit so called, iii. 193. Christ has no, but the Spirit, ix. 444.
Vices, national, not watching against, dangerous, vii. 205.
Vicissitudes, none in the heavenly state, i. 407.
Victor, bishop of Rome, his conduct, xv. 216.
View, present, of Christ reflexive, i. 375. By faith of the blood of Christ, iii. 444. Of sin under suffering useful, iii. 447. Of the state of nature necessary, iii. 449.
Vigour and acting of grace, cause of, i. 392. And comfort of spiritual life, on what they depend, vi. 21. Of the affections must be excited, vi. 251.
Vileness of sin must be impressed on the mind, vi. 227.
Vindication of the righteousness of God in the punishment of sin, i. 186. Of the treatise on communion with God, ii. 277. Of the doctrine of the Trinity, ii. 377. Of the law by Christ, iii. 632. Of Nonconformists, xiii. 305. Of the animadversions on Fiat Lux, xiv. 183.
Vindicatory justice of God, x. 512, 600.
Vindictive justice of God clearly revealed in Christ, ii. 83. Justice of God, how satisfied, xi. 293. Justice of God, xii. 111.
Vine and branches, their mutual relation, iii. 520.
Violence or force not offered to the will by grace, iii. 319. The, sin offers to the nature of man, vi. 303.
Virgin Mary, how the mother of Christ, iii. 166. Of the, xiv. 120, 426. Hymn to the, xiv. 218.
Virtue, seminal, how imparted to creation, iii. 98. Moral, not holiness, iii. 372; insufficiency of, iii. 480; its nature, iii. 524, 576. And grace, distinction between, xiii. 411.
Virtues, moral, origin of, i. 149. And endowments, moral, for civil government, from the Holy Spirit, iii. 149. Their worth, iii. 302. In Christ to be imitated, iii. 513. Human, emanate from God, vi. 497.
Visibility of the church, xiv. 368.
Vision of God in heaven, i. 51, 242. Heavenly, of the glory of Christ, i. 288. Of Christ in heaven, perpetual, i. 409. Of unchangeable free mercy, viii. 5. Prescience of, x. 23. How it belongs to God, xii. 127.
Visions, prophetical, of the glory of Christ, i. 350. Prophetical, iii. 136. And representations of things various, iii. 137. How God revealed himself by, viii. 7. Heavenly, viii. 8.
Visitation of the sick, direction of Anselm for the, v. 16.
Visitations of God to the soul, i. 400.
Vivification by grace, iii. 329.
Vocation, divine, i. 486. Gift and grace of, xi. 123.
Voice of Christ, hearkening to the, ii. 194. Of conscience as to the guilt of sin, vi. 387. Of God in providence, vii. 309. Of God, what it is, xvi. 318.
Voices, articulate, in divine revelations, iii. 135.
Voluntariness of the obedience of Christ, i. 339. In the actings of the Holy Spirit, ii. 238, iii. 71. In sins, iii. 71, x. 73. Of the sufferings of Christ, iii. 177.
Vow, a way of dedication to God, ix. 290.
Vowels and accents, Hebrew, iv. 218, xvi. 386. And consonants, xvi. 395.
Vows, why ineffectual, vi. 319.
Vulgate, the, xvi. 415.

Waiting upon God, vi. 75, 418, 609, viii. 85. Continuance in, necessary unto peace, vi. 553.
Waldo, conversion of, iii. 347.
Walking with God, ii. 106, vi. 201, ix. 87. Humbly before God, iii. 462. And ways, observation of our, iv. 326. With men, vi. 201. In church-fellowship, rules of, xiii. 55.
Wandering from the truth, iv. 176.
Wanderings, how the soul gathers itself from, ii. 26.
Want of Christ, what is necessary to convince men of their, vii. 146. Of readiness to receive divine impressions, vii. 535. Of the gospel, the greatest of all wants, viii. 33. What those, who want the gospel, viii. 35.
Wants, our own, revealed to us, ii. 122. Of the people of God, ii. 206. How we are ignorant of our own, iv. 272. All our, provided for in God, ix. 430.
Warfare between grace and sin, iii. 543.
Warning against apostasy, vii. 135. Of judgments, how given, viii. 623.

Warnings, divine, why slighted, iii. 348. Sins after, danger of, vi. 346. Providential, how to be regarded, vii. 376. Of approaching judgments given, viii. 602. Of God not to be contemned, viii. 641. Of Providence, how best answered, ix. 403.
Wars against us, sin, vi. 195.
Wasting of sin in the root and principle, iii. 463. Conscience, sins, vi. 344.
Watchfulness against sin, iii. 461, vi. 61, vii. 537. Against temptation, vi. 100. Necessary, vi. 162, vii. 245. Against sin, perpetual, vi. 175. Christian, its object, xi. 556. Over each other, xiii. 83.
Watchmen, spiritual, their duty, ii. 131.
Water and fire, the means of typical cleansing, iii. 423. In the stream, a simile from, viii. 17. Holy, popish, viii. 588. An emblem of the Spirit, xi. 353.
Waters of the sanctuary, what, ix. 180.
Way, there must be a, for walking with God, ii. 109. Of approach to God, ii. 121. The, in which the blood of Christ cleanseth from sin, iii. 439, 443. When our, is not acceptable to God, what he does, vi. 263. Of salvation of God's own choosing, vi. 526. No other, of salvation, vi. 528. Of salvation free and open, vi. 529. Of salvation is safe, vi. 530. Of attaining and enjoying faith and grace, x. 468.
Ways whereby grace is increased, iii. 392. Such as the Lord will blast, viii. 148. Various, of special revelations, xvi. 298.
Weak and imperfect, our present sight of Christ is, i. 389. Grace, preservation of, iii. 393. And ineffectual attempts of the soul to recover itself to duty, vi. 243.
Weakening sin, how it is done, iii. 544, vi. 28, 228. Of prejudices, iv. 485. Of the soul by sin, vii. 228, 377.
Weakness of spiritual graces, iii. 579. Of reason, iii. 634, vii. 127. Our spiritual, to be considered, vi. 104. Of our best duties, vii. 147. Of faith, viii. 141. Of the inward man, how to be treated, ix. 556. Of the flesh, xi. 419.
Weanedness from the world necessary to faith, v. 446.
Weaning the affections from earthly things, vii. 326.
Weapons, gospel, to be used against sin, vi. 47. Carnal, not to be used in religion, xiv. 226.
Weariness of the flesh, sin takes advantage of the, vi. 229. In waiting on God, the cause of, vi. 377. Of the flesh, vii. 173. In duty, relief against, vii. 496.
Well of living water, the Spirit is a, vii. 278.
Well-being of the church, on what it depends, vii. 185.
Whitaker, his opinion about peace and toleration, viii. 204.
Wickliffites and Lollards, martyrs in England, viii. 263.
Wilderness, Christ not to be sought in the, iii. 186. State of the people of God, xi. 277.
Wilkins on a universal character, xvi. 395.
Will and condescension of the Holy Spirit, ii. 227. A, ascribed to the Holy Spirit, iii. 80. And pleasure of the Holy Spirit, iii. 201. Change of, necessary, iii. 238. And affections, how under the power of the mind, iii. 281. Of God the rule of obedience, iii. 294, 469. State of the, in conversion, iii. 319. The, a vital faculty, iii. 334. Depravation of, iii. 334. A free principle, iii. 334. Freedom of, to spiritual things, who possess, iii. 494. Every gracious act of the, wrought by the Holy Spirit, iii. 536. Consent of the, included in faith, v. 101. Main cause of, worship, vi. 18. Prevailing, in believers to do good, vi. 160. Renitency of the, vi. 204, 252. The principle of obedience and disobedience, vi. 252. Perverted by corrupt reasoning, vi. 256. And counsel of God, the rule of his dispensations, viii. 10. Worship and tyranny inseparable, viii. 137. Sovereign, of God the fountain of special grace, ix. 44. And purpose of God, whether it may be resisted, x. 43. Of God, distinction between the secret and revealed, x. 45. Of God, how made known, x. 46. Free, x. 114. Of God always active and affirmative, x. 241. Good, of Christ necessary to his oblation, x. 247. Of God, distinctions about, x. 344. Of God to have all saved, x. 381. Of punishing in God, x. 541. And necessity, whether they are opposite, x. 602. Its operations, xi. 143. Of man, how God acts upon it by grace, xi. 442.
Willingness to die, i. 281. Of Christ to receive sinners, i. 424. In obedience, ii. 215. To undertake the work of the ministry, xv. 494.
Wills of unregenerate men, what they are, iii. 274. And affections, how wrought upon by the word, iii. 305.
Wind, the word metaphorically used, iii. 51.
Wings, prayer the, of a righteous man, viii. 78.
Wisdom and goodness of God displayed in the person of Christ, i. 44, 178. Of God, his directive excellency, i. 180. Infinite, a glorious property of God, i. 299. Treasured up in Christ, ii. 79. And grace, Christ full of, ii. 189. How ascribed to the Holy Spirit, iii. 78. And power of the Holy Spirit in the preservation of grace, iii. 397. Of God in his commands, iii. 616. Spirit of, iv. 140. Spiritual, iv. 173. Word of, iv. 454. Spiritual, nature of, v. 49. Required to guide our hearts and ways before God, vi. 162. Of faith, vi. 219. Carnal, a help to sin, vi. 302. Of God to be submitted to, vi. 628. Of faith, in what it consists, vii. 151. Of spiritual things, vii. 478. Of God in the variety of his dispensations, viii. 18. To know the times and the mind of God in our generation, viii. 269. Bad effects of the want of, viii. 271. Wherein it consists with respect to divine dispensations, viii. 348. Christ is, xii. 243. Gift of, xiii. 46.
Wishart, George, death of, viii. 181.
Withdrawment of Christ from our sight, i. 390; solicitude occasioned by, ii. 128.
Withering of spiritual graces, iii. 579.
Witness which each person of the Trinity bears in the gospel, ii. 10. How the Spirit bears, with our spirits, ii. 241. Of the Spirit to Christ, iii. 183, 205. And seal of forgiveness, vi. 414.
Witnesses of Christ, their blood shed by vain pretences, viii. 97.
Wolves, grievous, in the church, vii. 69.
Word, why given, i. 90. The instrumentality of the, iii. 235, 302. Its persuasive efficacy, iii. 304. And Spirit, how they accompany each other, iii. 470. Of Christ the rule of holiness, iii. 507. Care of God over his, iv. 232. Of Christ's patience, keeping, vi. 137. Of grace and mercy, vi. 139. Of holiness and purity, vi. 139. Of consolation, vi. 140. Of liberty and power, vi. 140. How we must meditate on the, vi. 225. Its power against indwelling sin, vi. 284. Judgment of our state by the, vi. 545. Good, vii. 26; what meant by tasting the, vii. 27. Magnified above all his name, vii. 353. Preached, why unprofitable, ix. 188. Of Christ, how kept, ix. 537. The, how it represents Christ to the soul, ix. 538. Christ is the, xii. 321. Of God, the Scripture is the, xvi 427.
Words, suggestion of, to the penmen of Scripture iii. 144. Of the Scripture, sacred, iv. 213. Seasonable, for Protestants, ix. 3.
Work of the Spirit on the human nature of Christ, iii. 180. Of Christ carried on by the Spirit, iii. 195. Of illumination short of conversion, iii. 238.

Of the Spirit in regeneration, iii. 307. Of the Spirit in sanctification, iii. 387, 496. Of holiness secret and mysterious, iii. 401. Of grace variously carried on, iii. 404. Of the ministry, what it is, iv. 497. Of the Lord in our generation, how known, viii. 274.

Workings of the Spirit of God in and upon worldly men, iii. 103.

Works of God, i. 473; knowledge of, ii. 80. Good, necessity of, ii. 182, 315. Ascribed to the Holy Spirit, iii. 92. Dead, what, iii. 291. Acceptable, the fruit of the Spirit, iii. 328. And grace, how opposed, v. 24. Distinctions concerning, in justification, v. 30. Covenant of, v. 275. Exclusion of, from justification, v. 278. And faith, the doctrine of the apostle James concerning, v. 384. The essential properties of God revealed by his, vi. 429. And labours of the people of God, how transacted for them in heaven, viii. 97. Previous, of God give insight into his work in our days, viii. 273. Of Satan destroyed by Christ, xi. 307. What, are excluded from salvation, xii. 573. Merit of good, xiv. 200. How God reveals himself by his, xvi. 309.

World to come, tasting the powers of the, ii. 246. Contempt of the, iii. 600. Our condition in this, proves the necessity of holiness, iii. 641. State of the, at the first preaching of the gospel, iv. 42. New, powers of the, iv. 433. How used as an object of temptation, vi. 95. Condition of men in the, a source of temptation, vi. 221. Things of the, purveyors for Satan, vi. 296. To come, powers of the, what, vii. 32. Inordinate affection to the, vii. 273. Trust in grandeur of the, vii. 401, xv. 104. Love of the, how we are cured from, vii. 495. Old, how God dealt with the, viii. 605. Conformity to the, viii. 651. How professors mingle with it, ix. 329. How it is subdued by Christ, ix. 488. Its opposition, how despised, ix. 501. God the framer and governor of the, x. 32. Proper use of the term, x. 303, 325, 335. Separation from the, xiii. 67.

Worm, the, that never dies, xii. 492.

Worship and honour, the person of Christ the object of, i. 104. In heaven not merely mental, i. 256. Of the law, represented the glory of Christ, i. 348. Reason and cause of, ii. 268. The foundation of, iii. 64. First institutions of, what they regarded, iii. 432. Of God, iv. 513, xv. 447. Origin of false, v. 437. Institution of, an evidence of forgiveness, vi. 461. Evil effects of pompous, vii. 210. Evangelical, apostasy from, vii. 217. Consequences of false, viii. 137. Of the old testament divinely appointed, ix. 80; no way comparable with that of the new testament, ix. 81; spiritual beauty of, ix. 82. Preparation necessary for, ix. 545. Ascribed and due to Christ, xii. 371. Extraordinary cases concerning, xiii. 28. Whatever prescribed in, should be observed, xiii. 464. Divine revelation the sole rule of, xiii. 465. Not to be regulated by inbred light of reason, xiii. 466. Of God, what requisite to the, xiii. 468. Of images, xiv. 426, 505. Of the ass's head, xiv. 476. In an unknown tongue improper, xiv. 504. By the apostles, xv. 16. External, xv. 450. Comeliness of gospel, xv. 468.

Wrangling science, who make the Scriptures a, iv. 180. Captious, in what it consists, v. 11.

Wrath of God, Christ lying under the, i. 341; effects of lying under the, x. 277; Christ underwent the, x. 283. All men by nature the children of, xv. 485.

Wretched, sin makes men, vi. 205.

Writers, the sacred, their knowledge of facts and doctrines, iv. 32.

Writing of the Scriptures, iii. 143.

Writings, sacred, their uniform importance, v. 59. Of the apostles, nature of, xv. 484.

Yoke of the Spirit renounced, vi. 203. Of sin, shaking it off, vii. 544.

Young, natural love of the, vi. 304.

Zeal of Christ, iii. 178. False, the cause of cruel persecutions, viii. 96. Righteous, encouraged, viii. 133. For the glory of God, viii. 655. For Christ, ix. 438. For the glory of God necessary in ministers, ix. 456.

Zion, the branch of the Lord the beauty of, viii. 285. God's work in founding, viii. 401, 412. The object of envy and fear, viii. 407. God's care of all the dwelling-places of, viii. 420. Glorified with the spoils of her oppressors, ix. 202. Her beauty and strength, ix. 307. Worthy of observation, ix. 308. Her protection, ix. 310. Her bulwarks, ix. 315.

Zoar of many professors, what is the, vii. 273.

VI.—INDEX TO THE PRINCIPAL WORDS AND PHRASES IN OTHER LANGUAGES CITED OR EXPLAINED.

N.B.—In this Index, as in the Index of Texts, the letters *f* or *ff* denote that the remarks on the word or text extend to the *page* or *pages following* the one mentioned.

I.—HEBREW, CHALDEE, OR RABBINICAL.

אֲדֹנָי, ix. 342.
אָהַב, אָבָה, ii. 26.
אֶחְיֶה, xii. 260.
אִישׁ אָוֶן, vi. 499.
אִישׁ תָּם, ix. 96.
אֱלֹהִים, iii. 147.
אָמוֹן, ii. 118.
אֵמֶר, xvi. 432.
אנשי כנסת הגדולה, xvi. 369, 371, 394, 403.
אֶעֱרָךְ לְךָ, vi. 614.
אַף, viii. 108.
אֵפוֹד, xiv. 441.
אֲרָמִית, xiv. 470, *ff.*
אָשָׁם, v. 34, 197, 200, 348, x. 281, xii. 446, 478, 479, 543, 627, 628.
אֶשֶׁת חַיִל, xiii. 411.
אַתָּה הוּא, i. 368.
אֶת, ii. 124.

בְּדַעְתּוֹ, xii. 482.
בֵּית אֱלֹהִים, xiv. 441.
בְּמֹתָיו, xii. 477.
בְּנֵי אַתָּה, xii. 242.
בְּקֶרֶב שָׁנִים, viii. 84.
בְּרָא, xii. 631, 632.
בְּרִית, xi. 218, xii. 499.
בְּרִנָּה, ii. 25.
בְּשִׂמְחָה, ii. 25.
בָּשַׂר, iv. 288.
בַּת קוֹל, xvi. 297.

גִּבּוֹר, ix. 485.
גְּבוּרוֹת, vii. 32.
גּוֹאֵל, xii. 510.
גָּזַר, xii. 476.
גַּל־עֵינַי, iv. 8, 130.

דָּבָר, iv. 454, xii. 633, *f*, xvi. 432.
דבר, xvi. 291.
דּוּם, vi. 611.
דּוֹר, דּוֹרוֹ, xii. 475.
דַּכְּאוֹ, xii. 478.
דָּם לוֹ, v. 197.
דְּמוּת, xii. 100.

הָבוּ לָכֶם, xvi. 56.
הַבְלֵי־שָׁוְא, iii. 251.
הָיֹה הָיָה, xvi. 299.
הָלַם, viii. 477.
הַמְנַחֵם, iv. 360.
הִפְנִיעַ, xii. 444.
הִצְטַדָּק, v. 125.
הִשְׁתַּחֲוָה, i. 107.
הִשְׁתַּחֲוֹת, xiv. 455.

זֶבַח, xiv. 119, 421.
זִין, xii. 289, 291.

חֲבִירָה, xii. 470.
חֶבְלֵי־מָוֶת, iii. 181.
חִטֵּא, x. 267.
חָטָא, xii. 479.
חַטָּאִים, v. 171, 199, 202.
חַטָּאת, v. 34, 348, *f*, x. 172, xii. 446.
חִידוֹת, i. 376.
חַיִל, xiii. 411, *f.*
חֵן, iv. 256, *f.*
חִנָּם, v. 311.
חֶסֶד, viii. 477, xii. 526.
חֶסֶד וֶאֱמֶת, vi. 641.
חָסָה, xii. 243.
חָפֵץ, xii. 478.
חֻקִּים, v. 286.
חָרָה, viii. 108.
חֵרֶם, x. 535.
חָשַׁב, v. 165.

טָבַל, xii. 459, xvi. 266.
יָגִיל, ii. 25.
יָחַל, vi. 607, 641.
יַחֲרִישׁ בְּאַהֲבָתוֹ, ii. 25.
יַחְשְׁבֶהָ, v. 162.
יָכַח, viii. 478, *f.*
יָעַד יְהוָה, xiv. 215.
יַצְדִּיק, xii. 480, 482.
יָצַק, iii. 114.
יֵשְׂבַּע, xii. 481.
יֵשׁוּ, iii. 17.
יָשִׂישׂ, ii. 25.
יַשְׂכִּיל, xii. 459.
יָשָׁר, ix. 96.

כָּאֲרוּ, xvi. 361.
כָּבוֹד, ix. 31.
כּוּלָם, x. 309.
כֻּלָּנוּ, xii. 471.
כָּמוֹךָ, xii. 349.
כְּמָרִים, viii. 381.
כֹּפֶר, ii. 442, xii. 420, *f.*
כִּפֶּר, xii. 421.
כַּבֹּרֶת, ix. 35, x. 333.
כָּרָה, xii. 429.

לְדָוִד, xvi. 298.
לַמְנַצֵּחַ, ix. 463.
לְכַרְבֵּה, xii. 316.
לָקַח, iv. 489, xii. 475.
לְתֻמּוֹ, ix. 96.

מִדָּה, xiii. 412.
מוּסַר, xii. 469.
מוֹצָאֹתָיו, xii. 238.
מַטֵּה עֹז, xvi. 323.
מִכְתָּב, xvi. 300.
מִלָּה, xii. 633.
מֶלֶךְ הַכָּבוֹד, xii. 327.
מִן, xii. 468.
מִסָּה, xiv. 113, 411.
מַסֵּכָה, xiv. 441.

מעלותינו, xii. 468.
מעגל נפשו, xii. 481.
מעמקים, vi. 330, *f.*
מעצר, xii. 474.
מפשעינו, xii. 468.
מציין, i. 377.
מקום, xii. 97.
מקדם, xii. 238.
מרדי־אור, xvi. 320.
מרחפת, iii. 97, xii. 336.
משפת, v. 328.
משפתים, v. 286.
מתנות, iv. 422, *f.*

נבא, נביא, iii. 130.
נבע, iii. 113.
נגש, xii. 472.
נגש, xii. 472.
נטריקון, xvi. 397, n.
נענה, xii. 473.
נפלאות, iv. 128, 135, vii. 32.
נקב, viii. 166.
נשא, ii. 453, x. 266, xii. 451.
נשא עון, xii. 452.
נתן, iii. 112.

סבל, ii. 453, xii. 454, 622, *f.*
סלח, vi. 380.
אלוה סליחות, vi. 478.

עבדא דשרבתא, xiii. 412.
עביד, xiv. 455.
עוה, xii. 468.
עולם, xii. 238, *f.*
עד and עולם, viii. 94, xii. 320.
עון, ii. 453, v. 205, vi. 642, xii. 445.
עזאזל, ii. 443.
עטור סופרים, xvi. 301, 360.
עליו, xii. 469.
על יד, xii. 277
עצב, iv. 413.
עצר, xii. 474.
ערב, v. 181.
ערבון, ii. 244, iv. 407, v. 182.

פגע, xii. 444, 471, 483.
פדה, ii. 442, x. 363, xii. 419, *ff.*
פדות, פדיון, vi. 642.
פדין, xii. 419, *ff.*
פז, ii. 71, n.
פלא, xii. 319.
פלמוני, ix. 396, and n.
פני, xii. 102.
פניו, xii. 102.
פנים אל־פנים, xii. 350.
פסל, xiv. 441, 455.
פרקליטא, iv. 360.
פשיטא, xvi. 412.
פשע, xii. 468.
פתה, xiv. 443.
פתיחה, xiv. 124.
פתיחים, xiv. 442.
פתחה, xiv. 443.
פתח־דבריך, iv. 14.

צבא השמים, iii. 95, *f.*
צדק, v. 125, 128.
צדקה, xii. 526.
צדק עלמים, v. 308.
צלם, vi. 635, xii. 100.

קדושים, vi. 453.
קנני, xii. 632.
קדם, xii. 240.
קהל, xv. 269, *f.*
קוה, vi. 606.
קוה קויתי, vi. 613.
קרי וכתיב, xvi. 301, 351, 401, *ff.*

ראת, xii. 481.
רב, רבא, רבי, xvi. 99.
רוח, iii. 47, *ff.*
רוח אדני יהוה עלי, xii. 356.
רוח חן, iv. 256.
רוח נדיבה, iv. 267.
רשע, vi. 499.

דברי שאגתי, v. 36.
שבט, ix. 278.
שגה, viii. 79.
שום, iii. 112.
שטרים, iii. 147.
שיח, iii. 51.
שלח אצבע, xvi. 61.
שב אני, xii. 632.
שממה, xii. 460.
שמן ראש, viii. 478.
שמר, vi. 359.
שיר המעלות, i. 250.

תאר, xii. 100, 291.
תבנית, xii. 289, 291.
תורה, iv. 128, v. 286.
תושיה, viii. 348, n.
תחנונים, iv. 257, 258.
תלוי, xii. 467.
תמונה, xii. 101, xii. 289, 291, xiv. 455.
תמורה, xvi. 397, n.
תמים, ix. 96.
תקון סופרים, xvi. 301, 360.
תרפים, xiv. 441.
תרשיש, ii. 77, n.
תשבוחתה, xiii. 412.
תשובה, vii. 38.

II.—GREEK.

ἀββᾶ, iv. 267, *f.*
ἀγαλλιᾶν, ii. 25.
ἀγαπᾶν, ii. 26.
ἀγάπη, ix. 256.
ἀγάπη τοῦ πατρός, ii. 12.
ἁγιάζω, ἁγιασμός, x. 367.
ἁγνισμός, v. 349.
ἀγοράζω, x. 363.
ἀδικέω, xv. 271.
ἀδόκιμος, xi. 418, *f*, 635, *f.*
ἀδύνατον, vii. 11.
αἰνίγματα, ἐν αἰνίγματι, i. 375, *f*, vi. 65.
αἵρεσις, xiii. 109, xiv. 220.
αἰτία, v. 114.
αἰών, xii. 239, 271, *f.*
ἄκακος, ix. 96.
ἀκαταστασία, viii. 382.
ἀκκίπτα, xi. 33.
ἀλλὰ μενοῦνγε καί, v. 368.
ἄλλαγμα, xii. 420, *f.*
ἀλλοίωσις, i. 235.
ἁμαρτάνω εἰς, xv. 271.
ἁμαρτία, v. 348, 349, viii. 158, x. 172, 267.
ἀνά, xi. 551, *f.*
ἀναβέβηκεν, xii. 358.
ἀναγέννησις, xi. 551.
ἀναζωπυρεῖν τὸ χάρισμα, iv. 320.
ἀνάθεμα, xii. 447.
ἀνακαινισμός, vii. 38.
ἀνακεφαλαίωσις, i. 62.
ἀναλῦσαι, ix. 349.
ἀναπολόγητος, v. 7.
ἀνασκευαστικός, xiv. 363.
ἀνάστασις, xi. 552.
ἀνάψυξις, i. 61.
ἄνδρες ἑλλόγιμοι, xv. 371.
ἀνείλετε, xii. 485.
ἀνελήφθη ἐν δόξῃ, xii. 295, *ff*, 299.
ἀνενεγκεῖν ἁμαρτίας, xii. 621, *f.*
ἀνήνεγκε, x. 212, 266.
ἀντάλλαγμα, xii. 420.
ἀντί, x. 280, 289, xii. 530, 549.
ἀντίλυτρον, xii. 419, 421, 509, 524, 527, 530, 543.
ἀντιστρατεύεσθαι, vi. 195.
ἀντίψυχος, v. 203, xii. 549.
ἀνυπόστατον, xii. 197, 386.
ἀνυπόστατος, ii. 329, 333.
ἄνωθεν, xi. 552.
ἀξία, v. 114.
ἀπαρχὴ τοῦ Πνεύματος, iv. 411.
ἀπέθανε ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν, xii. 549.
ἄπειρος, xii. 96.
ἀπεκτείνατε, xii. 485.
ἀπερίγραπτος, xii. 96.
ἄπιστος, xvi. 6.
ἀποκάλυψις, iv. 134.
ἀποκαραδοκία, i. 386, vi. 607.
ἀποκαταλλάσσειν, xii. 535.
ἀποκατάστασις πάντων, i. 61.
ἀπολύτρωσις, x. 259, xii. 509, 518.
ἀπολύτρωσις παραβάσεων, xii. 520, 527, 543.
ἀποπομπαῖος, ii. 443, x. 267, xii. 447.
ἀποσαρώματα, xii. 420.
ἀποστασίᾳ, xiv. 220.
ἀποτελεῖν, xi. 560.
ἀποτέλεσμα, ii. 51, 433, v. 255, xii. 431.
ἀποτομία, vii. 40.
ἄρας, αἴρω, xi. 548.
ἀρετή, xiii. 412.
ἁρπαγμὸν ἡγεῖσθαι, xii. 291.
ἀββᾶ, ii. 244, iv. 407.
ἄρτιος, ix. 96.
αὐταυτος, xii. 392.
αὐτόθεος, xii. 392.
ἀφαιρεῖν ἁμαρτίας, xii. 501, *f.*
ἄφεσις ἁμαρτιῶν, v. 267.

βάπτω, βαπτίζω, xvi. 266.
βασιλεύειν, vi. 163.
βαστάζω, xii. 454.
βλάξ, βλακεννόμιον, xvi. 491.
βοηθέω, ix. 391 and n.

γενέσθαι, xii. 235.
γινώσκω, xi. 154.
γνώσεως (λόγος), iv. 459, *f.*
γραφή, γραφαί, xvi. 300.

δάνειον, xii. 514.
δελεαζόμενος, xi. 555, *ff.*
δεσπόσιτα, xi. 33.
δεσπότωρ, xi. 33.
δεσπόσυνοι, iii. 25.
δεσπότης, x. 362, *f*, xii. 257.
δημιουργός, xvi. 432, *f.*
διαθήκη, xii. 499.
διαιρεῖν, ii. 234, 238.
διαίρεσις τῆς ἑνότητος, xiii. 123, 244.
διακονία τοῦ πνεύματος, iii. 26.
διακονίαι, iv. 424.
διάκονοι, xiii. 20.
διακρίνομαι, viii. 217.
διάνοια, iii. 252, vii. 269.
διὰ πίστεως, v. 110, 111.
δι' αὐτοῦ, xii. 220, *f.*
διδάσκαλος, xvi. 99.
δι' ἑνὸς δικαιώματος, x. 282.
δι' ἐσόπτρου, ἐν αἰνίγματι, i. 375, vi. 65.
δίκαιος, x. 564, n.
δικαιοσύνη, xii. 526, 625.
δικαιούμενοι δωρεάν, xii. 524.
δικαιόω, v. 125, 128, xii. 480, 482.
δικαίωμα, v. 271, 274, 328, 329, 332, 333.
διχοστασία, xiii. 108.
διώκω, v. 339.
δοκιμασία, xii. 442.
δόματα, iv. 422, *f.*
δόξα, ix. 31, xii. 291.
δραστικὴ τῆς φύσεως κίνησις, ii. 51.
δυνάμεις, iii. 122, vii. 32.
δύναμις, xii. 308, xiii. 55, xvi. 433.
δυσερμήνευτα, iv. 194, 196.
δυσνόητα, iv. 194, *f.*
δωρεά, v. 328, vii. 22.
δωρεὰ τῆς δικαιοσύνης, v. 329.
δωρεάν, xii. 524, *f.*
δωρεὰν τῇ αὐτοῦ χάριτι, v. 310, *ff.*
δώρημα, v. 328, *f*, vii. 22.

ἐὰν ὑποστείληται, xi. 655, 657.
ἐγγύη, ii. 442.
ἐγγυητής, v. 181, 184.
ἔγγυος, v. 181, 182, 184, x. 281.
ἐγένετο, xii. 225, *ff.*
ἐγώ εἰμι, xii. 234.
ἐθεμελίωσας, xii. 277.
εἶδος, xii. 102.
εἶδος πονηροῦ, vi. 194.
εἰ δυνατόν, xi. 200, *f.*
εἰκών, xii. 291, 422.
εἰς, xi. 327.
εἰς ἀθέτησιν ἁμαρτίας, xii. 629.
εἰς αὐτόν, xii. 266, 270.
ἐκβάλλει, iii. 174, *f.*
ἐκεῖνος, xii. 264.
ἐκένωσε ἑαυτόν, xii. 287, 292.
ἐκκλησία, xv. 270.
ἐκ πίστεως, v. 110, *f.*
ἐκπορεύεσθαι, xii. 74.
ἐκπορεύομαι and ἔρχομαι, iii. 116–118.

ἐκπόρευσις φυσικὴ καὶ οἰκονομική, ii. 226, *f.*
ἐλέγχω, iv. 364.
ἔλεος, ii. 190, xii. 526.
ἔλευσις, xii. 74.
ἐλογίσθη, v. 162.
ἐμβάπτω, ἐμβαπτίζω, xvi. 267.
ἐμπεριχώρησις, xii. 73.
ἐμπλῆσαι (νόμον), v. 273.
ἔμφυτος, xii. 635.
ἐν for διὰ, xii. 509, xvi. 297.
ἐν for εἰς, xii. 296, 302.
ἐναλλαγή, i. 235.
ἐνανθρώπησις, xii. 74.
ἐνδιάθετος, xii. 321, xiii. 465, xvi. 430. See λόγος.
ἐν δυναμει, xii. 190, 192.
ἐνέργεια, ἐνέργημα, ἐνεργητικόν, ὁ ἐνεργῶν, xi. 51.
ἐνεργεῖν, ii. 234, 238.
ἐνεργήματα, iv. 424, v. 255.
ἐνίστημι, ix. 322.
ἐν μορφῇ Θεοῦ, xii. 286.
ἐν ὁμοιώματι ἀνθρώπων, xii. 287.
ἐν ὁμοιώματι σαρκός, xii. 293, *f.*
ἔνοχος, v. 197.
ἐνσάρκωσις, xii. 74.
ἐνσωμάτωσις, xii. 74.
ἐντός, xvi. 465.
ἐν τῷ κρυπτῷ, ἐν τῷ φανερῷ, xi. 212.
ἐν τῷ Τίῳ, xvi. 305.
ἐν χώραις, xv. 300.
ἐν ᾧ, ἐφ' ᾧ, xii. 168.
ἐξελκόμενος, xi. 555, *ff.*
ἐξεμπλάριον, xi. 33.
ἐξ ἔνος, i. 199.
ἐξήγησις cum ἀναλύσει, xvi. 446.
ἐξιλασμός, v. 349.
ἐξουσία, xii. 308, xiii. 55.
ἐπαρχία, xiii. 105.
ἐπί for ἐν, v. 325.
ἐπὶ γῆς, xii. 405.
ἐπίγνωσις, xi. 665.
ἐπίγνωσις τῆς ἀληθείας, xi. 647.
ἐπιδημία δεσποτική, xii. 74.
ἐπιλαμβάνεσθαι, ii. 133, 300, *f.*
ἐπιλαμβάνεται, xii. 300, 503.
ἐπιλαμβάνομαι, v. 111.
ἐπιλύσεως ἰδίας, ii. 236.
ἐπιμένειν, ἐπιμονή, xi. 19.
ἐπὶ πολὺ ποιεῖται, xv. 24.
ἐπίσκοποι κατὰ χώρας, xv. 300.
ἐπισκοποῦντες, xvi. 45, 47.
ἐπιστομίζειν, iv. 364.
ἐπιτελεῖν, xi. 560.
ἐπιτίμησον αὐτῷ, xv. 272.
ἐπιτιμία, xvi. 172.
ἐπιφάνειαι, i. 68.
ἐπιφάνεια τῆς δόξης, xii. 258.
ἐπιφάνεια τοῦ Χριστοῦ, xii. 74.
ἐποίησε, xii. 273.
ἐπουράνιος, vii. 22.
ἔρχομαι, iii. 118.
ἐρχόμενον, xi. 194, *f.*
ἐρχόμενος, xii. 259, *ff.*
ἐσχάται ἡμέραι, ix. 322.
ἑτεροζυγοῦντες, xvi. 6.
εὐαρεστεῖται, x. 287.
εὑρίσκω ἄρα τὸν νόμον, vi. 159.
ἐφανερώθη ἐν σαρκί, xii. 294, 297, *f.*

ἠγοράσθητε τιμῆς, xii. 530.
ἡγούμενοι, xvi. 45.
ἦν, xii. 227.
ἠνέχθη, xvi. 304.

Θανατοῦτε, vi. 8.
Θεία φύσις, xi. 337, xiii. 129.
Θείας κοινωνοὶ φύσεως, xi. 337.
Θειότης, Θεότης, xii. 323.
Θεοτόκος, xv. 27.
Θῦμα, Θυμίαμα, Θυσία, Θυσίασμα, Θύω, xiv. 119.

ἰδίας ἐπιλύσεως, xvi. 303.
ἴδιος, xii. 185.
ἱκετηρίας, iv. 257.
ἱκετηρίους Ψαλμούς, iv. 258.
ἱλάσκεσθαι, xii. 535.
ἱλάσκεσθαι τὰς ἁμαρτίας, x. 282, 334, xii. 626.
ἱλασμός, v. 349, vi. 380, *f*, x. 177, 334, xii. 535.
ἱλαστήριον, ix. 36, x. 282, 333, *f.*
ἴσα, xii. 291, *f.*
ἱστάναι (νόμον), v. 273.

κάθαρμα, καθαρμός, xii. 420.
καθ' ὁμωνυμίαν, i. 232.
καινὴ κτίσις, xi. 337, xiii. 129.
καλόν, vii. 27.
καρδία, iii. 252.
καρπός, iv. 428.
καρτερίω, καρτερία, xi. 19.
καρτερικός, xi. 20.
καταλαμβάνω, v. 111.
καταλλαγή, x. 262, 282, xii. 416, 543.
καταλλαγὴν ἐλάβομεν, xii. 536.
καταλλάσσειν, xii. 535.
καταλύσαι, v. 273.
κατὰ παράστασιν, i. 231.
κατάρα, xii. 625.
καταργῆσαι, v. 273.
καταρτισμός, iv. 496.
κατασκευαστικός, xiv. 363.
κατάστασις, v. 114.
κατὰ σχίσιν, i. 231.
κατὰ ταυτοβουλίαν, i. 231.
κατ' ἀξίαν, i. 231.
καταφυγόντες, ix. 32.
κατεργάζεσθαι τὸ καλόν, vi 196.
κατηχοῦντες, xvi. 103.
κατοπτριζόμενοι, i. 221, 222.
καύχημα, καύχησις, v. 312.
κένωσις, i. 324, xii. 74.
κοινωνία ἰδιωμάτων, ii. 51.
κολασία, κόλασις, xii. 438.
κοπιῶ, ix. 454, xvi. 121.
κόσμος, iii. 96, x. 303, *ff*, 335, *ff.*
κράζον, iv. 268.
κρίμα, v. 328, 332.
κυριεύειν, vi. 163.
κύριος, x. 363, xii. 324.
κύριος δόξης, xii. 327.

λαμβάνω, v. 111.
λειτουργέω, λειτουργία, xiv. 119, 419, *ff.*
λειτουργῆσαι, xvi. 103.
λειτουργούντων, xiv. 118.
λέξις, xii. 633.
λόγος, iv. 311, 512.
λόγος γνώσεως, iv. 459, *f.*
λόγος ἔμφυτος, xvi. 434.
λόγος ἐνδιάθετος, xii. 633, 634, xvi. 429, *ff.*
λόγος ἐνυπόστατος, xvi. 429, 435.
λόγος οὐσιώδης, i. 74, xii. 633, 634, xvi. 429, 435.
λόγος προφητικός, xvi. 303, 434.
λόγος προφορικός, i. 74, xii. 633, 634, xvi. 429, *ff*, 435, *f.*
λόγος σοφίας, iv. 454, *f.*
λόγος ὑποστατικός, xii. 633, 634, xvi. 429, *ff.*
λύτρον, ii. 442, x. 259, 280, *f*, xii. 419, *ff*, 509, 521, 527, 530, 543, 627.
λυτρώσασθαι, xii. 419.
λύτρωσις, x. 259, xii. 509, 543.
λυτρωτής, xii. 419, 511.

μαρτυρία, xii. 442.
μάταια, iii. 251.
μεθοδεία, μέθοδος, xiv. 12.
μένει, xi. 571, 576.
μερισμοί, iii. 121, *f*, iv. 424.

μέρος, vi. 65.
μετάθεσις, viii. 257.
μεταμορφούμεθα, i. 222.
μετάνοια, vii. 38.
μετάφρασις, xvi. 446.
μέτοικος, xiii. 105.
μορφή, xii. 289, *ff.*
μώλωψ, xii. 470.

νή, ix. 335, *f.*
νίπτω, xvi. 266.
νουθεσία, xii. 437, 442.
νοῦς, iii. 250.

οἰκονομία, xii. 74.
οἰκουμένη, x. 335.
ὁ λόγος, xii. 216.
ὁμιλία, xii. 74.
ὁμοίωμα, xii. 291.
ὁμοούσιος, xii. 67, xv. 27.
ὀπτασία, viii. 8.
ὅραμα, viii. 8.
ὁρίζω, xii. 191, *f.*
ὅση δύναμις, xv. 24, 296.
οὐκ εὐδόκησε, ii. 25.
οὐ μὴ ἐκβάλω ἔξω, xi. 195.
οὐσιωδῶς, ii. 12.
οὗτος, xii. 256, *f.*
ὀφειλήματα, xii. 514.
ὀφειλόμενον, xii. 514.
ὀφείλω, v. 197.
ὁ ὢν ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ, xii. 358.

παιδαγωγοί, xvi. 103.
παιδεία, xii. 442.
παλιγγενεσία, xi. 551.
πανήγυρις, xvi. 3.
παράδειγμα, xii. 442.
παραδειγματίζω, vii. 49.
παράκλητος, ii. 225, iv. 360, *ff.*
παρακοή, v. 333, *f.*
παρακύψαι, ix. 610, n.
παραλαμβάνω, v. 111.
παραπίπτω, vii. 34, *f.*
παράπτωμα, v. 275, 327, 333.
παραπτώματα, xii. 514.
παρασυναγωγή, xiii. 109.
παρέδωκεν, xii. 408.
παρηκολουθηκότι ἄνωθεν, ii. 236.
παροικία, xiii. 104, *f*, 107.
πάροικοι, παροικέω, xiii. 105.
παρουσία, xii. 74.
παροχή, πάροχος, xiii. 105.
παῤῥησία, iv. 293, 311, 512.
πᾶς, x. 308, *ff*, 337.
περὶ ἁμαρτίας, xii. 446.
περικάθαρμα, xii. 420, *f.*
περισσεία χάριτος, v. 329, 330.
περιχώρησις, xii. 74.
πίστω, vii. 35.
πίστει, v. 109–111.
πλήρης Πνεύματος ἁγίου, xii. 356.
πληροφορηθείς, viii. 214.
πληῶσαι (νόμον), v. 273.
πνεῦμα, iii. 47, xii. 298, *f.*
Πνεῦμα δυνάμεως, iv. 266.
Πνεῦμα σωφρονισμοῦ, iv. 266.
πνευματικά, iii. 15, *f*, iv. 423.
πνευματικός, iii. 257.
ποιεῖν ἁμαρτίαν,—καλόν, vi. 160.
πορφυρογένητος, xii. 317.
προγινώσκω, πρόγνωσις, xi. 154.
προεγνωσμένος, v. 179.
προέθετο, xii. 528, *f.*
προϊστώς, προεστῶτες, xv. 204, 295, xvi. 105, 115, 123.
προΐστημι, xvi. 115, 123.
πρόνοια τῆς σαρκός, vi. 198.
προσαγωγή, ix. 58.
πρόσκαιροι, xi. 659.
προσκαρτερέω, προσκαρτέρησις, xi. 19.
προσκυνέω, i. 107.
προστασία, xvi. 115.
πρόσφατος, ix. 564, n.
πρόσωπον, xii. 68, 102.
προφορικός, xii. 321, xiii. 465. See λόγος.
πρὸ χρόνων αἰωνίων, xii. 239, 244, 246.
πρωτόκτιστος, xii. 266.
πρωτότοκος, xii. 200, 266, 312.
πταίω, vii. 35.

ῥῆμα, vii. 27, xii. 633.
ῥυόμενος, xii. 510.
ῥύσις, xii. 527.

σάρξ, xii. 298.
σημεῖα, iii. 122.
σημεῖα (ἀργά), v. 116.
σκανδαλίζω, xv. 271.
σκελοκοπία, xii. 486.
σκιά, xii. 422.
σοφίας λόγος, iv. 454, *f.*
στάσις, xiii. 108.
στεναγμοῖς ἀλαλήτοις, iv. 288.
στενάζειν, iv. 288.
στρατιὰ οὐράνιος, iii. 95, *f.*
συγκατάβασις, i. 324, xii. 74.
συγκατάθεσις, xvi. 6.
συγκεκλεισμένος ὑφ' ἁμαρτίαν, v. 7, 8.
συγκεκραμένος, vi. 76.
συμπαθῆσαι, ii. 141.
συμπολῖται, xiii. 105.
συναγωγή, xv. 270.
συναντιλαμβάνεται, iv. 288.
συνείδησις, συντήρησις, xvi. 471.
σύνεσις, vii. 269.
συνήκεν, v. 114.
σχήματι εὑρεθεὶς ὡς ἄνθρωπος, xii. 287.
σχίζω, xiii. 100.
σχίσμα, xiii. 100, *ff*, 109.
σωματικὸν εἶδος, iii. 75.
σωματικῶς, x. 168.

ταμεῖα, iii. 186.
τάξις, xvi. 7.
τὰ πρὸς τὸν Θεόν, xii. 398.
τελεῖν, xi. 560.
τέλειος, ix. 96.
τελειῶσαι, ix. 95.
τελείωσις, ix. 95, xv. 232, *f*, 333.
τέρατα, iii. 122.
τιθέναι ψυχήν, xii. 483, *f.*
τιμωρία, xii. 439.
τριάς Platonicorum, xvi. 431.
τρόπος ἀντιδόσεως, i. 235.
τύχη, v. 114.
τῶν φώτων ἡμέραι, vii. 18.

ὑπακοή, v. 271, 274, 333, *f.*
ὑπάρχων, xii. 285.
ὑπέρ, x. 289, xii. 550.
ὑπερεντυγχάνει, iv. 288.
ὑπηρέται, xiii. 20.
ὑπόδικος, v. 197.
ὑπόδικος τῷ Θεῷ, v. 7, 9, 118, 199, 200, 260, x. 277.
ὑπομένειν, ὑπομονή, xi. 19.
ὑπὸ νόμον, v. 255, *f*, 259, 272.
ὑπόστασις, iv. 461, xii. 68, xvi. 433.
ὑποστατικῶς, ii. 12.
ὑποστολή, xi. 657, *f*; ἐὰν ὑποστείληται, ib.
ὑστερήματα, ii. 145.
ὑστεροῦνται, xii. 518.

φαίνει, xi. 344.
φανέρωσις, iv. 424.
φανέρωσις δι' ἀνθρωπότητος, xii. 74.
φέρων, xii. 279.
φιλανθρωπία, ii. 190.
φρόνημα τοῦ πνεύματος, vii. 267, 269.
φρόνησις, vii. 269.
φωτίζω, φωτίζομαι, vii. 18, *f*, x. 646.
φωτισμός, vii. 18, *f*, x. 367.

χαρίζεσθαι, vi. 502.
χάρις, ii. 190, iv. 256, *f*, v. 329, vi. 381.
χάρις ἑνώσεως, ii. 337, v. 180.
χάρισμα, v. 327, *ff*, 332.
χαρίσματα, ii. 228, iv. 423.
χαρίσματα ἰαμάτων, iv. 462.
χειροθεσία, χειροτονία, xvi. 61.
χειροτονέω, xvi. 61, *f*.
χορηγέω, iii. 112.
χρηστότης, ii. 190.
χρίσμα, iv. 390.
ψυχικὸς ἄνθρωπος, iii. 251.
ὠδῖνες θανάτου, iii. 181.
ὡς ἐμί, xii. 349.

III.—LATIN.

adoro, i. 107.
Angelus Jehovæ, xii. 254.
apostasia, xiv. 221.
Asinungulus, xiv. 479.
Astaphæum, xiv. 113.
attinctivè, xii. 93.
auferre peccata, xii. 627.

beneplaciti, et amicitiæ (amor), ii. 21.

causa sine qua non, v. 115.
conditio, v. 114.
conservativè, xii. 93.

dulia, xiv. 440.

ethico-physica (impotentia), xi. 443.
evangelium nigrum, xiv. 352.

ferre peccata, xii. 627.
fidejussor, v. 184, 187.

immensivè, xii. 93.
impletivè, xii. 93.
imputare, v. 166.
innovatio obligationis, xii. 448.

justificationes, v. 286.
justifico, justificatio, v. 124.
justitia operum, v. 208.

latria, xiv. 440.
liberatio a jugo peccati, xii. 627.

manifestativè, xii. 93.
Masora, Massoreth, xvi. 332.
morosa cogitatio, xi. 539.
morosa delectatio, xi. 557.

nostri causa, nostra vice, nostro loco, xii. 627.

offerre seipsum in cœlo, xii. 627.
offerre seipsum in cruce, xii. 628.
Onochoetes, xiv. 478.
Onochœrites, xiv. 479.
Ononychites, xiv. 478, 479.

Paldabaoth, xiv. 113.
parochia, parœcia, xiii. 105.
peccatum originans,—originatum, xii. 166.
perseverantia, xi. 19.
persevero, xi. 19.
persona, xii. 68.
pertinacia, xi. 19.
piaculum, v. 319; xii. 447.
pignus, iv. 407.
præs, v. 187.
prosopolepsia, xi. 423.

reatus, v. 198.
reatus culpæ,—pœnæ, v. 199.
redemptio a reatu peccati, xii. 627.
repletivè, xii. 93.
reus, v. 197.
reus alienæ culpæ, v. 201.

scindo, xiii. 100.
sigilla appensa, xi. 323.
solutio tantidem, solutio ejusdem, x. 437, et ib. sæpius.
sponsor, v. 184, 187.
subire pœnas simpliciter, xii. 627.
subire pœnas nobis debitas, xii. 627.
subjectum capax justificationis, v. 74, 119.
substantia, xii. 68.
superdulia, xiv. 440.
superexcedenter, xii. 93.

theologia atramentaria, xiv. 352.

vas, v. 187.
vinculum Trinitatis, xi. 333.
vindicta noxæ, xii. 442.

VII.—INDEX TO PASSAGES OF SCRIPTURE EXPLAINED.

The asterisk prefixed to some texts indicates that they form the subjects of sermons.

Chap.	Genesis.	Vol.
i. 2,	..	iii. 97.
i. 3,	..	i. 57.
ii. 7,	..	iii. 98.
iii. 15,	v. 120; ix. 316, 448; x. 290; xi. 305, *ff.*	
iv. 4,	..	vi. 464.
vi. 3,	..	ix. 147.
vi. 5,	vi. 169, *ff*; vii. 276.	
viii. 21,	..	vi. 170, *ff.*
xv. 1, 2,	..	ix. 414, 426.
xv. 17,	..	vi. 581.
xvii. 1,	ii. 93; ix. 93-95, 416; xi. 402.	
xvii. 7,	..	xi. 205, *ff.*
xviii. 25,	..	x. 514.
xxviii. 3, 4,	..	ix. 421.
xxxii. 9-12,	..	ix. 422, *f*, 423.
xliii. 9,	..	v. 170, 182.
xliv. 16,	..	v. 127.
xliv. 32,	..	v. 170.

	Exodus.	
iii. 2-6,	..	i. 311.
iii. 14,	..	i. 368.
vi. 3,	..	vi. 479.
xx. 4, 5,	..	xv. 37, *ff.*
xx. 5,	..	i. 354.
xxiii. 7,	..	v. 127.
xxiii. 20, 21,	..	i. 138.
xxxiii. 19 (18-23),	i. 59, 66; vi. 481; ix. 31.	
xxxiii. 22,	..	ii. 81.
xxxiv. 5-7,	..	x. 513.
xxxiv. 6,	..	ix. 31.

	Leviticus.	
x. 1-3,	..	xv. 38, *ff.*
*xvi. 21,	..	ix. 507.
xvi. 21, 22,	..	v. 34.

	Numbers.	
xiv. 33,	..	i. 354, 355.

	Deuteronomy.	
iv. 2,	..	xv. 37, *ff.*
vi. 4,	..	ii. 381.
xii. 32,	..	xv. 37, *ff.*
xiii. 1-3,	..	iii. 35.
xxi. 1-9,	..	v. 34.
xxv. 1,	..	v. 126.
xxix. 29,	..	x. 298.
xxxi. 16-18,	..	xii. 134.
xxxiii. 16,	..	i. 311.

	Joshua.	
i. 5,	..	xl. 249, *ff.*
xxii. 10, etc.	..	xv. 38, *ff.*
xxii. 11,	..	xvi. 225.
xxiv. 19,	..	x. 513.

Chap.	Judges.	Vol.
viii. 24, etc.	..	xv. 38, *ff.*
xi. 30, 31, 34, 39,		x. 533, *ff.*
xiv. 6,	..	iii. 150.

	1 Samuel.	
ii. 30,	..	xi. 162, *ff.*
xii. 22,	xi. 252, *ff*, 255, *ff.*	
xvi. 14,	..	iii. 119.
xvi. 14, 15,	..	iii. 57.
xviii. 10,	..	iii. 57.
xix. 9,	..	iii. 57.

	2 Samuel.	
vii. 18, 19,	..	ix. 412.
xv. 4,	..	v. 126.
xv. 25, 26,	vi. 408; ix. 117.	
xxi. 9, 14,	..	i. 354.
xxiii. 3, 4,	..	ix. 409, *f.*
xxiii. 4-6,	..	ix. 410, n.
*xxiii. 5,	..	ix. 409, 420.
xxiii. 6, 7,	..	ix. 411.
xxiv. 15-17,	..	i. 354.

	1 Kings.	
i. 21,	.. v. 171, 199, 202.	
viii. 27,	..	xii. 93, *f.*
viii. 31, 32,	..	v. 127.
xiii. 2,	..	xii. 135.
xxi. 29,	..	i. 354.
xxii. 6, 19-23,	..	iii. 30.
xxii. 23,	..	xii. 135.
xxii. 34,	..	ix. 96.

	2 Kings.	
iii. 26, 27,	..	x. 537.
xvi. 11, 12,	..	xv. 38, *ff.*

	1 Chronicles.	
iv. 10,	..	vi. 203.
vii. 21-23,	..	ix. 412.
xv. 13,	..	xv. 38, *ff.*

	2 Chronicles.	
*xv. 2,	..	viii. 431.
xxxvi. 15,	..	ix. 148.

	Nehemiah.	
ix. 17,	..	vi. 478.

	Job.	
v. 1,	..	vi. 453.
vii. 17, 18,	..	vi. 580.
ix. 11,	..	ix. 139.
x. 4,	..	ix. 100.
xi. 7-13,	..	ix. 113.
xiii. 15,	..	vi. 418.
xiii. 23-27,	..	vi. 577.
xiii. 26,	..	vi. 556.
xix. 25,	..	xii. 508, *ff.*
xxiii. 4,	..	vi. 184.

Chap.		Vol.
xxvi. 13,	..	iii. 96.
xxvii. 5,	..	v. 127.
xxviii. 12 to end,		i. 212.
xxix. 18,	..	ix. 412.
xxxii. 8,	..	iv. 172.
xxxiii. 8-11,	..	ix. 116.
xxxiii. 8-13,	..	vi. 626, *f.*
xxxiii. 22, 23,	..	vi. 545.
xxxiii. 24,	..	vi. 405.
xxxiv. 18, 19,	..	vi. 627.
xxxiv. 18, 19, 31-33,		ix. 116.
xxxv. 6-8,	..	ix. 429.
xl. 3-5,	..	v. 15, 16.
xlii. 4-6,	v. 15, 16; vi. 621.	

	Psalms.	
ii. 1-6,	..	ix. 315.
v. 3,	..	vi. 614.
v. 4-6,	..	x. 514.
viii. 1, 3-6,	..	i. 313.
xi. 4, 5,	..	ix. 98.
xiv. 6,	..	ix. 149.
xvi. 2,	..	ix. 429.
xvi. 8-11,	..	ix. 339.
xvii. 15,	..	i. 406.
xviii. 11,	..	ix. 114.
xviii. 23,	..	vi. 131, *f.*
xix. 1-3,	..	iv. 84.
xix. 12, 13,	vi. 203; ix. 301, *f*, 386.	
xxiii. 4-6,	..	xi. 258.
xxv. 21,	..	vi. 142.
xxxi. 9-14,	..	ix. 422.
xxxi. 10-15,	..	ix. 415.
xxxii. 3,	..	vi. 373.
xxxii. 3-5,	..	vi. 581.
xxxii. 8,	..	ix. 98, 99.
xxxiii. 9-11,	..	xi. 145.
xxxiv. 5,	..	i. 459.
xxxiv. 15,	..	ix. 98.
xxxvi. 7-9,	..	vii. 293.
xxxvii. 4,	..	ix. 100.
xxxviii. 1-10,	..	i. 443.
xxxix. 6,	..	vi. 635.
xl. 6,	..	i. 207.
xl. 7, 8,	..	xii. 498, 505.
xl. 8,	..	xi. 383.
*xlv. 1-3,	..	ix. 462, 470.
xlv. 2,	..	ii. 48.
*xlv. 2,	..	ix. 476.
*xlv. 3,	..	ix. 484.
xlvii. 5,	..	i. 248.
xlvii. 9,	..	i. 251.
*xlviii. 12-14,	..	ix. 307.
li. 3,	..	vi. 31.
li. 11,	iii. 119; xi. 331.	
lv. 6,	..	ix. 171.
lix. 6,	..	vi. 268.
*lxi. 2,	..	ix. 237, 248.
lxiii. 3,	..	ii. 26.

Chap. *Vol.*

lxviii. 17, 18, i. 247, 350; iv. 488, *ff*; ix. 438, *f*; xii. 329, *f*.
lxviii. 18, .. iv. 422, *ff*.
lxix. 5, .. v. 217.
lxix. 6, .. vi. 146.
lxxi. 16, .. v. 298.
lxxii. 7, .. i. 434.
lxxiii. 1, 2, .. vi. 419.
* lxxvi. 5, .. ix. 197.
lxxvi. 10, 12, .. vi. 269.
lxxvii. 3, .. vi. 334.
lxxviii. 19, 20, .. vi. 558.
lxxx. 4, .. ix. 393.
lxxxii. 3, .. v. 127.
lxxxix. 15, .. i. 250.
lxxxix. 30-33, .. vi. 52.
lxxxix. 30-37, .. xi. 253.
xcii. 12-15, .. i. 434-437.
xcvii. 11, .. vi. 553, *f*.
xcix. 8, .. ix. 145, *f*.
civ. 30, .. iii. 99, *ff*.
cx. 2, .. xvi. 323.
cxix. 18, iv. 127, *ff*, 162, *f*.
cxix. 34, 144, .. iv. 172.
cxix. 136, .. ix. 366.
cxxv. 1, 2, .. xi. 262, *ff*.
cxxx. whole psalm, vi. 327, *ff*.
cxxx. 3, 4, .. v. 100.
cxxxi. 1-3, .. ix. 119.
cxxxviii. 2, iv. 88; xvi. 311.
cxxxix. 7-19, .. ix. 98, 99.
* cxli. 5, .. viii. 476.
cxliii. 2, .. v. 225, *f*.

PROVERBS.

iii. 5, .. vi. 146.
iii. 13-15, .. ii. 138.
iv. 18, .. i. 438, *f*.
iv. 23, vi. 249, *f*; vii. 245, *ff*.
viii. 22, 23, 30, 31, i. 54, *ff*.
viii. 22-31, .. xii. 501.
viii. 23, ii. 390; xii. 243, *ff*.
viii. 30, .. ii. 33.
viii. 31, .. ii. 118.
ix. 1-5, .. ii. 46.
xvi. 4, .. i. 57.
xvii. 15, .. v. 126.
xix. 24, .. vi. 243.
xxii. 13, .. vi. 243.
xxiii. 31-35, .. vi. 257.
xxiv. 10, .. xi. 347.
xxvi. 14, .. vi. 243.
xxvi. 25, .. vi. 172.
xxvii. 17, .. ix. 464.
xxviii. 26, .. vi. 105, *ff*.
xxx. 6, .. xv. 38, *ff*.

ECCLESIASTES.

v. 1, .. vi. 182.
vii. 14, .. vi. 128.
ix. 3, vi. 169, *ff*, 189, 206, *ff*.
xii. 13, .. vi. 471.

SONG OF SONGS.

ii. i.-7, ii. 41, *ff*; v. 7, 125, 126.
ii. 3, .. ii. 125, *ff*.
ii. 8, 9, .. xii. 450.
ii. 9, .. i. 377.
iii. 1-3, .. vi. 353, 613.
iii. 1-4, .. i. 318.
iii. 1-5, .. ii. 128, *ff*.
iii. 11, .. ii. 55, *f*, 118.
iv. 9-16, .. ix. 100.
v. 2, i. 444; vi. 292, 346.
v. 2-8, .. vi. 570.

Chap. *Vol.*

v. 9, .. ii. 49, *ff*.
v. 10-16, .. ii. 71, *ff*.
v. 16, .. ii. 58.
viii. 6, ii. 126, 127; vi. 559, *f*.

ISAIAH.

iv., .. xi. 113, *ff*.
iv. 4, .. vi. 19; ix. 145.
* iv. 5, .. viii. 457.
v. 23, .. v. 127.
vi., .. i. 48.
vi. 1-5, .. i. 350.
vii. 14, .. ii. 415.
viii. 13, 14, .. xii. 328, 330, *f*.
viii. 14, .. i. 330, 331.
viii. 14, 15, .. i. 3.
ix. 6, i. 3, 226, 233; xii. 314, *ff*; xii. 500.
ix. 6, 7, .. i. 351.
xi. 2, 3, .. ii. 247.
xi. 6-9, .. vi. 320; ix. 124.
xiv. 24-27, .. xi. 148.
* xiv. 32, .. viii. 401.
xxv. 7, .. iv. 132.
xxviii. 16, .. i. 3.
xxxii. 2, .. ix. 50, *ff*.
xxxiv. 4, .. ix. 134.
xxxiv. 16, .. ix. 314.
xxxviii. 3, .. v. 229.
xl. 11, .. ii. 142.
xl. 27-31, .. xi. 126, *ff*.
xli. 2, .. ix. 120.
xli. 4, .. xii. 329, *f*.
xli. 21-24, .. xii. 136.
xlii. 1, .. i. 57.
xliii. 22, .. ix. 170.
xliii. 22-26, .. ix. 46, 47.
xliii. 26, .. vi. 184.
xliv. 1-8, .. xi. 123, *ff*.
xliv. 3, 4, .. i. 440; iii. 395.
xliv. 6, 8, .. ii. 381.
xlv. 22, .. i. 460.
xlv. 22, 23, .. xii. 329, *f*.
xlv. 24, .. v. 297.
xlv. 25, .. v. 298.
xlvi. 9-11, .. xi. 144.
xlviii. 16, .. iii. 173.
xlix. 3, 6, .. i. 57.
xlix. 6-12, .. x. 170.
xlix. 15, 16, .. ix. 40.
l. 8, 9, .. v. 127.
li. 15, 16, .. ix. 134.
liii. vindicated, etc., xii. 455-485.
liii. 5, 6, v. 35, 144; x. 225, 266, 285.
liii. 6, i. 353; xii. 443, *ff*.
liii. 10, .. xii. 503.
liii. 10, 11, .. xii. 504.
liii. 10-12, .. x. 171.
liii. 11, v. 127; x. 214, *ff*, 225.
* liii. 11, .. ix. 576.
liii. 12, .. x. 194, *f*.
liv. 5, ii. 54; xi. 273, *f*.
liv. 7-10, .. xi. 267, *ff*.
lv. 7-9, vi. 499, *f*; ix. 40.
* lvi. 7, .. viii. 285.
lvii. 15, .. ix. 428.
lvii. 15-19, iv. 372-376; vi. 71.
lvii. 17, .. vi. 53.
lvii. 17, 18, .. ix. 47, *f*.
lvii. 20, .. vii. 276.
lix. 21, .. xi. 310, *ff*, 331.
lxi. 1, .. iii. 172.
lxi. 2, 3, .. i. 250.
lxii. 5, .. ii. 118.

Chap. *Vol.*

lxiii. 1-3, .. ix, 125, *f*.
lxiii. 10, iv. 416, *f*; ix. 147.
* lxiii. 17, .. ix. 296.
lxiv. 6, .. v. 229.
lxv. 17, .. ix. 135.
lxvi. 1, .. xii. 94.
lxvi. 21, 22, .. ix. 135.

JEREMIAH.

iii. 14, .. ix. 427.
* iii. 15, .. ix. 452.
iii. 22, 23, .. ix. 425.
v. 3, 4, .. iii. 614, *f*.
vii. 31, .. xv. 33, *ff*.
ix. 2, .. ix. 171.
* xv. 19, 20, .. viii. 133.
xvii. 9, 10, vi. 171, *ff*, 212, *f*.
xxiii. 6, v. 296, *ff*; xii. 249, *ff*.
xxiii. 26-29, .. xvi. 315, *f*.
xxxi. 3, .. xi. 179.
xxxi. 31, 32, vi. 470, *ff*; x. 236, *f*.
xxxi. 31-34, .. xi. 208, *ff*.
xxxi. 33, 34, .. xvi. 465.
xxxii. 38-40, .. xi. 208, *ff*.
xxxii. 40, .. vi. 338, *ff*.
xxxiii. 15, 16, .. xii. 250, *ff*.
li. 5, .. ix. 3, *ff*.

LAMENTATIONS.

iii. 18-22, .. vi. 417.
iii. 26, .. vi. 418.
iv. 7, .. ii. 50.
v. 7, .. i. 353.

EZEKIEL.

i. 3, .. xvi. 299.
* xvii. 24, .. viii. 315.
xviii. 23, 32, .. x. 386, *f*.
xviii. 24, 25, .. xi. 613, *ff*.
xxiv. 13, .. ix. 147.
xxxvi. 27, .. xi. 330.
xxxviii. 22, .. ix. 142.
* xlvii. 11, .. ix. 179, 190.

DANIEL.

vii. 9, .. ii. 49.
vii. 9, 10, 14, .. ix. 142.
* vii. 15, 16, .. viii. 367.
vii. 27, .. viii. 261.
ix. 18, .. v. 32.
ix. 24, iv. 392; v. 144; xi. 292, 398.
xii. 1-3, .. ix. 142.
xii. 1, 7, 10, 13, .. ix. 146.
xii. 3, .. v. 128.
xii. 10, ix. 142, 143, 144.
* xii. 13, .. viii. 345.

HOSEA.

ii. 14, .. ix. 426.
ii. 14 to end, .. xi. 273, *ff*.
ii. 19, 20, .. ii. 54.
v. 15, .. vi. 53.
x. 11, .. vi. 200.
xi. 12, .. ix. 312.
xiv. 1-8, .. i. 455, *ff*.
xiv. 2, .. vi. 184.
xiv. 3, .. ix. 425.
xiv. 5, 6, .. iii. 395, *f*.

JOEL.

iii. 2, .. ix. 142.

AMOS.

iv. 13, .. iii 49.
v. 18, .. ix. 149.

Chap. MICAH. *Vol.*
v. 2, .. i. 88.
vi. 6, 7, .. vi. 385, 524.
* vi. 8, ix. 84, 93, 102, 112, 121.
vii. 7, .. i. 460.
* vii. 14, .. ix. 271.

HABAKKUK.
i. 13, .. x. 513.
ii. 1, .. ix. 114.
* ii. 4, ix. 490, 505, 510.
* iii. 1–9, .. viii. 77.
iii. 16, .. ix. 175.
iii. 17, 18, .. ix. 415.

ZEPHANIAH.
iii. 17, .. i. 60.

ZECHARIAH.
iii. 9, .. ii. 73.
vi. 13, .. i. 56; xii. 500.
xii. 10, i. 460; ii. 249; iv. 254, *ff*, 287; xii. 329, *f*.
xiii. 7, .. xii. 501.

MALACHI.
i. 6, .. ii. 29.
i. 13, 14, .. xvi. 242.
iii. 1–3, ix. 146, 149, 166.
iii. 6, .. xi. 120.
iii. 16, .. ix. 166.
iii. 16, 17, .. ix. 395.
iv. 1, .. ix. 142.
iv. 1, 2, .. ix. 156.

MATTHEW.
i. 18, 20, .. iii. 163.
i. 20–23, .. ii. 415.
iii. 11, .. iii. 77.
iii. 16, .. iii. 74, *f*.
iii. 17, .. i. 57.
* iii. 17, .. ix. 612.
v. .. v. 299, *f*.
v. 16, .. ix. 123.
v. 17, .. i. 135; v. 299.
v. 18, .. iv. 213.
v. 21–45, .. xii. 361, *f*.
v. 44, 45, .. xv. 70.
vi. 6, .. vi. 300, *f*.
vi. 13, .. vi. 101.
vii. 1, 2, .. xv. 136.
vii. 23, .. x. 291.
vii. 25, .. ix. 50.
viii. 16, 17, .. iv. 464.
ix. 12, .. ix. 360.
ix. 12, 13, .. ix. 104.
xi. 4, 5, .. iv. 463.
xi. 12, .. vi. 567.
xi. 19, .. v. 129.
xi. 20, .. xvi. 465.
xi. 25, 26, .. x. 292.
xi. 28, .. ix. 361.
xi. 29, .. ix. 126.
xii. 29, .. xi. 307.
xii. 31, 32, .. iii. 88.
xii. 35, .. vii. 279.
xii. 37, .. v. 129.
xiii. 20, 21, .. xi. 658.
xiii. 45, .. ix. 469.
xv. 9, 13, .. xv. 38, *ff*.
xv. 19, .. vi. 169, *ff*.
xvi. 16, i. 29, *ff*; xii. 309.
xvi. 17, 18, .. i. 30, *ff*.
xvi. 18, i. 6, *ff*; xiii. 245.
xvi. 19, .. xv. 512, *ff*.
xvii. 2, .. ii. 49.
xvii. 5, .. i. 57.
* xviii. 7, .. ix. 352.
xviii. 11, .. ix. 104.
xviii. 15–20, xv. 177; xvi. 160, 167, *ff*.
xviii. 17, .. xv. 270, *ff*.
xviii. 17, 18, .. xvi. 65.
xviii. 18–20, .. xvi. 169.
xviii. 32–35, .. xi. 630.
xx. 28, .. x. 214, *ff*.
xxiii. 26, .. xvi. 465.
xxiv. 12, .. vi. 111.
xxiv. 24, .. xi. 196, *ff*.
xxiv. 26, .. iii. 186.
xxv. 14–30, iv. 504; ix. 448.
xxvi. 28, .. x. 214, *ff*.
xxvi. 41, vi. 91, *ff*, 123, *ff*.
xxvii. 3, .. vi. 438.
* xxviii. 17, .. ix. 569.
xxviii. 19, .. iii. 193; x. 297.
xxviii. 19, 20, .. xv. 144.
xxviii. 20, .. xv. 44.
* xxviii. 20, .. ix. 571.

MARK.
ii. 17, .. ix. 360.
vii. 7, 8, .. xv. 38, *ff*.
viii. 22–24, .. i. 383.
ix. 3, .. ii. 49.
ix. 22, etc., .. vi. 502.
x. 45, .. x. 214, *ff*.
xii. 33, .. v. 288; ix. 122.
xvi. 15, .. iii. 193; x. 297.

LUKE.
i. 35, .. iii. 163, *ff*.
ii. 10, .. vi. 519.
iii. 22, .. iii. 74, *f*.
iv. 13, .. vi. 295.
iv. 14, .. iii. 175.
vi. 37, .. xv. 136.
vi. 45, .. vi. 170, *ff*.
vii. 29, .. v. 129.
vii. 47, .. vi. 290.
viii. 13, .. vi. 102.
x. 9, .. iv. 463.
x. 29, .. v. 129.
xi. 13, .. iv. 386.
xi. 50, 51, .. i. 354.
xii. 8–10, .. iii. 88.
* xiii. 1–5, .. viii. 597.
xiv. 31, 32, .. vi. 521.
xvi. 15, .. v. 129.
xvi. 16, .. vi. 567.
xvi. 27–31, .. iv. 75.
* xvi. 29, .. viii. 497.
xvii. 21, .. xvi. 465.
xviii. 8, .. ix. 139, 140.
xviii. 9–14, .. v. 301, *ff*.
xviii. 14, .. v. 129.
xxi. 15, .. iv. 454, *f*, 480.
xxi. 25–36, .. ix. 138, *f*.
xxi. 34, .. ix. 173.
xxiii. 34, .. x. 195, *f*.
xxiii. 46, .. ix. 339.
xxiv. 45, .. iv. 132.

JOHN.
i. 1, .. i. 71; xii. 215, *ff*.
i. 1–3, .. ii. 389, *ff*.
i. 3, .. xii. 219.
i. 4, 5, .. xvi. 466.
i. 4, 9, .. i. 81.
i. 5, .. xvi. 469.
i. 9, x. 198, 340; xvi. 473, *f*.
i. 10, .. xii. 219, 222, *ff*.
i. 12, .. v. 304; xvi. 36.
i. 14, i. 46, 225, 232, 289; ii. 47, 381, 415; xii. 225, *ff*.
i. 14, 16, .. ii. 66; iii. 521.
i. 16, 17, .. ii. 47.
i. 18, i. 91; ii. 80, *ff*; x. 547.
i. 29, .. x. 341.
i. 32, .. iii. 74, *f*.
iii. 3–6, iii. 207, *ff*; vi. 595, *f*.
iii. 13, .. i. 92.
iii. 14–18, .. v. 305.
iii. 16, .. ii. 21.
iii. 17, .. x. 342.
iii. 34, .. iii. 172, *f*.
iv. 10, .. i. 439.
iv. 10, 12, .. vii. 278, *ff*.
iv. 14, .. iv. 338; xi. 352.
iv. 42, .. x. 342.
v. 17, 18, .. xii. 175.
v. 19, 20, .. iii. 198, *f*.
v. 22, 23, .. xii. 373, *f*.
v. 23, .. i. 105, *f*.
v. 37, .. i. 72.
vi. 27, ii. 262; iv. 401, *ff*.
vi. 37, .. xi. 194, *f*.
vi. 37–40, .. xi. 188, *ff*.
vi. 45, .. ii. 15; iv. 167, *f*.
vi. 51, .. x. 338, 342.
* vi. 53, .. ix. 620.
vi. 56, .. xi. 338.
viii. 12, .. xvi. 466.
viii. 58, .. i. 226; ii. 390.
ix. 39, .. ix. 104.
x. 11, 15, 16, 27, 28, x. 292.
x. 15, .. x. 217, *f*.
x. 26–36, .. xii. 198.
x. 27–29, .. xi. 283, *ff*.
x. 28, 29, .. ii. 139.
xii. 32, .. ii. 16.
* xii. 32, .. ix. 592, 594.
xii. 41, .. xii. 281.
xiii. 12–15, .. xv. 465, *f*.
xiv. 1, .. i. 128; ii. 13.
xiv. 6, i. 80; ii. 109, 121.
xiv. 10, .. i. 71.
xiv. 15, .. i. 139, *ff*.
xiv. 16, iv. 361, *ff*, 377; x. 385; xi. 315, *ff*.
xiv. 16, 17, .. xi. 309.
xiv. 17, .. iv. 387, *ff*.
xiv. 23, .. ii. 21.
xiv. 26, ii. 16, 236, *ff*, 252.
xiv. 30, .. xii. 487.
xv. 1, 2, .. v. 179.
xv. 1, 4, 5, .. iii. 520, 531.
xv. 2, .. vi. 10, *ff*.
xv. 4, .. ix. 376; xi. 351.
xv. 5, ix. 105, 109; xi. 340, 351.
xv. 8, .. ix. 122.
xv. 26, xi. 309; xii. 340.
xvi. 1–7, .. ii. 222, *ff*.
xvi. 7, .. xi. 309.
xvi. 7–11, .. x. 384, *f*.
xvi. 8–11, .. iv. 364, *ff*.
xvi. 13, iv. 142, *f*, 167, *f*; ix. 70; xi. 344, *ff*; xii. 340, *f*.
xvi. 13–15, .. iii. 195, *ff*.
xvi. 14, .. ii. 239, *f*.
xvi. 26, 27, .. ii. 20.
xvii. *scope*, .. xii. 506.
xvii. 3, .. v. 407.
xvii. 5, .. i. 55.
xvii. 6, .. ii. 177.
xvii. 10, .. xii. 313.
xvii. 11–15, 20, .. xi. 367, *ff*.
xvii. 11, 22, .. xii. 307, *f*.

Chap. Vol.
xvii. 17, .. xvi. 329.
xvii. 18, 19, 25, .. xv. 82.
xvii. 19, .. x. 210.
xvii. 20–23, .. xvi. 191.
xvii. 21, 22, .. xi. 338.
xvii. 21–23, .. x. 196.
xvii. 24, .. i. 237, 285, *ff.*
xx. 17, .. i. 249.
xx. 30, 31, .. iv. 76.
xxi. 15–17, .. xvi. 75, *ff.*

Acts.
i. 15, 23, .. ix. 434.
ii. 22, .. xii. 174.
ii. 38, 39, .. v. 105; vi. 466.
iii. 19, 21, .. i. 61
iii. 20, 22, .. xii. 349.
iii. 21, .. iv. 356, *f.*
v. 9, .. iii. 87.
vi. 1, 3, 5, 6, .. xv. 506, *f.*
vi. 1–5, .. ix. 434.
vi. 2, 3, 5, .. xv. 495.
vi. 4, .. xvi. 77.
vi. 15, .. i. 383.
vii. 51, .. ii. 267, 268.
vii. 55, 56, .. i. 383.
viii. 13, 20–23, .. xvi. 160, *f.*
ix. 31, .. ii. 250.
x. 38, .. xii. 174.
x. 44, .. iii. 118.
xi. 2, 3, .. xvi. 228.
xi. 15, .. iii. 118.
xiii. 2, 4, .. iii. 85.
xiii. 38, 39, .. v. 129.
xiv. 15–17, .. vi. 429.
xiv. 23, ix. 435; xv. 495; xvi. 56, 60, *ff.*
xv. xvi. 207, 208, 230, 231.
xv. 1–4, 6, 12, 22, 23, 30, xvi. 47.
xv. 9, .. iii. 446.
*xvi. 9, .. viii. 5.
xvii. 23–27, .. vi. 429.
xviii. 9–11, .. xv. 83.
xix. 6, .. iv. 452.
xx. 17, 18, .. xvi. 45.
xx. 28, ii. 416; xii. 261, *ff*; xvi. 75, *ff.*
xx. 29, 30, .. vii. 65, *ff.*
xxi. 9, .. iv. 452.
xxvii. 24, .. xi. 459.

Romans.
i. 3, .. i. 225.
i. 16, iv. 95, 104; xvi. 323, *f.*
*i. 16, .. ix. 217, 229.
i. 17, iv. 85; v. 24, *f*; vi. 410; viii. 227; ix. 169.
i. 18, .. x. 544, *ff.*
i. 19, iii. 24; v. 25, 26.
i. 20, .. iv. 87.
i. 28, .. vii. 84.
i. 32, v. 423; x. 515, 518.
ii. 13, .. v. 129.
ii. 14, 15, .. v. 422; vi. 273.
iii. 4, .. v. 129.
iii. 20, .. v. 423.
iii. 21, .. v. 308.
iii. 23–25, .. xii. 517.
iii. 24, 25, .. xii. 524, *ff.*
iii. 24–26, .. v. 309, *f.*
iii. 27, v. 312; vi. 526; ix. 120.
iii. 28, .. v. 313.
iii. 31, .. v. 313, 377, *ff.*
iv. 2, .. vi. 526.
iv. 3, 4, .. v. 314, *f.*
iv. 6–8, .. v. 320.
iv. 13–15, .. ix. 105.
*iv. 20, viii. 211; ix. 19.
iv. 22–24, .. v. 313, *ff.*
iv. 25, .. x. 225, *f.*
v. .. xi. 348.
v. 1, .. ii. 252; vi. 334.
v. 2, .. ii. 252.
v. 5, ii. 21, 240; xi. 333.
*v. 5, .. ix. 606.
v. 8, .. x. 324.
v. 12, .. v. 179.
v. 12–21, .. v. 321, *ff.*
v. 18, .. x. 225, *f.*
v. 18, 19, .. ii. 163; x. 353.
v. 21, .. xi. 514, *ff.*
vi. .. xi. 387.
vi. 1, 2, .. vi. 51, 116.
vi. 1, 15, .. v. 377, *ff.*
vi. 2–6, .. vi. 84.
vi. 3–6, .. ii. 100.
vi. 5, 6, 11, .. xi. 393.
vi. 6, .. vi. 30, *ff.*
vi. 14, ix. 108; vii. 505–560.
vi. 17, .. vi. 456.
vii. 1, .. vi. 163.
vii. 7, .. vi. 313, *f.*
vii. 12, .. vi. 472.
vii. 15–17, .. vi. 199.
vii. 17, 20, .. xi. 105, *ff.*
vii. 19–22, xi. 515, *f*, 525, *ff.*
vii. 21, .. vi. 157, *ff.*
vii. 23, vi. 189, 195, *ff*; 202, *ff*; vii. 238.
viii. 1–4, .. v. 338.
viii. 1–13, .. iii. 547, *ff.*
viii. 2–4, .. ii. 99.
viii. 3, 4, .. v. 35.
viii. 6, last clause, vii. 267–497.
viii. 7, iii. 271; v. 46; vi. 176, *ff.*
viii. 9, 11, iv. 387, *ff*; xi. 332.
viii. 10, .. ix. 349.
viii. 11, xi. 334, 335, 341.
viii. 13, vi. 5, *ff*, 33; xi. 392.
viii. 14, .. xi. 342, *f.*
viii. 14–17, .. iv. 410.
viii. 15, iv. 293; xi. 332.
viii. 16, ii. 241; iv. 293; xi. 335.
viii. 17, ii. 218, 245; v. 144.
viii. 23, .. i. 384; iv. 411.
viii. 26, 27, ii. 249; iv. 259, *f*, 271, *ff*; ix. 72, 121; xi. 346.
viii. 27, iii. 398, *f*; iv. 285.
viii. 28, .. vi. 636.
viii. 28–30, xi. 162, *ff*; xii. 554.
viii. 28, 35–39, .. xi. 149, *ff.*
viii. 30, .. v. 130, *f.*
viii. 32–34, .. x. 293.
viii. 33, 34, x. 225, *f*; xi. 370; xii. 518.
x. 3, vii. 153; ix. 169, 360.
x. 3, 4, .. v. 338, *ff.*
x. 5–9, .. v. 407.
x. 29, .. xi. 122.
xi. 6, .. v. 172.
xi. 16, 17, .. xi. 340.
xi. 32, .. xii. 515, *f.*
xii. 1, 2, .. xi. 384.
xii. 2, .. ix. 161.
xii. 4–8, iv. 505; ix. 448.
xii. 6, .. iv. 452.
xii. 6, 7, .. xvi. 42.
xii. 6–8, .. xvi. 38, 123, *ff.*
xii. 8, xv. 504, *f*, 512, *ff.*
xiii. 11–14, .. ix. 166.
xiii. 12, .. vi. 258.
xiii. 14, .. vi. 198.
xiv., xv., *scope*, xv. 150, *f.*
xiv. 3, 4, 10, .. xv. 136.
xiv. 7, .. ii. 252.
xiv. 9, 11, 12, .. x. 375.
xiv. 15, .. x. 360.
xiv. 22, .. xvi. 247.
xv. 13, .. ii. 251.
xv. 27, .. xvi. 229.
xvi. 25, 26, .. iv. 78.

1 Corinthians.
i. 9, .. ii. 40.
i. 11, .. xvi. 225.
i. 18, .. xvi. 323, *f.*
i. 24, i. 58; ii. 69, 79, *ff.*
i. 30, ii. 79, *ff*; v. 344, *ff.*
ii. 6, .. ix. 96.
ii. 8, .. xii. 326.
ii. 10–12, .. iii. 78, *f.*
ii. 12, vi. 546; xi. 332.
ii. 14, iii. 257, *ff*; v. 45, *ff.*
iii. 18, .. iv. 457.
v. 1, .. xvi. 225.
v. 1, 2, 5–7, .. xvi. 160, *f.*
v. 1–7, xvi. 160, *f*, 163, 172.
v. 4, .. xvi. 169.
vi. 11, .. v. 131, *f.*
vi. 20, .. xii. 419.
viii. 1, .. vi. 301.
viii. 6, i. 219; xii. 324, *ff.*
viii. 11, .. x. 361.
ix. 27, vi. 10, *ff*; xi. 418.
x. 12, 13, .. xi. 462.
x. 13, .. vi. 116, 277.
*x. 16, .. ix. 523, 529.
x. 17, .. xvi. 246.
x. 20, .. iii. 30.
x. 32, .. xvi. 228, 244.
xi. 3, .. xi. 339.
xi. 18, 20, 21, .. xiii. 101.
*xi. 23–26, .. ix. 582, 589.
*xi. 24, .. ix. 563.
*xi. 26, .. ix. 538, 615.
*xi. 28, .. ix. 544, 554.
xii. 1, .. iii. 15, *ff.*
xii. 3, .. vii. 51.
xii. 4–6, .. ii. 10.
xii. 4–7, 8, 11, .. ix. 75.
xii. 4–10, .. xvi. 38.
xii. 7–11, .. iv. 454, *ff.*
*xii. 11, .. ix. 441.
xii. 12, v. 179; xi. 339.
xii. 12–20, .. iv. 517.
xii. 12, 13, 25, 26, vi. 590.
xii. 13, .. xvi. 246.
xii. 28, iv. 439, *ff*; xv. 504, *f.*
xiii. 9, 10, 12, .. vii. 337.
xiii. 12, i. 375, *f*, 378; vi. 65.
xiv. 24, 25, .. iv. 93.
xiv. 26, .. xvi. 243.
xv. 10, .. iii. 535.
xv. 22, .. x. 352.
*xv. 31, ix. 334, 340, 346.

2 Corinthians.
i. 5, 6, .. ii. 250, *f.*
i. 12, .. v. 155.
i. 20, .. x. 251; xi. 230.
i. 21, ii. 246, *ff*; iv. 390, *ff.*
i. 22, ii. 243, *ff*; iv. 400, *f*, 407, *ff*; xi. 323, *ff.*
ii. 6, .. xvi. 161.
ii. 6–8, .. xvi. 163, 172.
ii. 16, .. iv. 457.
iii. 5, .. ix. 109.

Chap. Vol.
iii. 6, 8, iv. 392; ix. 445.
iii. 7–10, .. ix. 81, *f.*
iii. 7–11, .. xv. 468.
iii. 13, 14, 16–18, iv. 131, *f.*
iii. 17, .. iv. 293.
iii. 18, i. 51, 221, 413; vi. 64, 457.
iv. 2–4, .. xvi. 321.
iv. 4, i. 404, 405; iii. 30; xi. 306.
iv. 6, i. 73; iv. 168, *ff*; v. 411, 418, 433.
* iv. 10, .. ix. 618.
iv. 16–18, .. vii. 323.
v. 2, 4, 8, .. i. 384.
v. 5, .. iv. 407, *ff.*
v. 7, i. 374, *ff*; vi. 67, 561, *ff.*
v. 14, .. vi. 134, 241.
v. 14, 15, x. 350, *f*; xi. 393.
v. 16, .. i. 381.
v. 17, iii. 220, *ff*; vi. 596, *f.*
v. 18–21, .. xii. 536, *f.*
v. 21, v. 35, 347, *ff*; x. 211, 284, 294.
* v. 21, .. ix. 521.
vi. 3, .. xvi. 228.
vi. 8–10, .. ii. 38.
vi. 14, .. xvi. 6.
* vi. 16–18, .. ix. 285.
vii. 1, vi. 42, 240; vii. 176; xi. 271, *f*, 384, 402.
vii. 11, .. xvi. 229.
viii. 9, .. i. 208; ii. 134.
ix. 15, .. vii. 22.
x. 4–6, .. xv. 512, *ff.*
xi. 2, .. ii. 55.
xi. 2, 3, ii. 146, *ff*; vi. 293.
xi. 3, .. vii. 140.
xii. 7, 8, .. i. 114; vi. 129.
xii. 16, .. iv. 456.
xiii. 5, .. i. 405.
xiii. 14, .. ii. 46.

GALATIANS.

i. 4, .. x. 210.
ii. 11–14, .. xvi. 229.
ii. 16, .. v. 354, *f.*
ii. 18, .. xvi. 242.
ii. 20, i. 129; vi. 143, 145, 286.
* ii. 20, .. ix. 600.
ii. 21, .. ix. 105.
iii. 4, .. xvi. 242.
iii. 5, .. iii. 112.
iii. 13, 14, .. v. 35.
iii. 29, .. ii. 218.
iv. 4, .. i. 225.
iv. 4, 5, .. ii. 162.
iv. 4–6, .. x. 211.
iv. 6, ii. 249; iii. 60, *ff*; iv. 265; xi. 332.
v. 7–12, .. xvi. 164.
v. 16–25, .. iii. 552.
v. 17, vi. 161, *ff*, 178, 189, 253; ix. 381.
v. 19–21, .. v. 12.
v. 24, .. vi. 30, *f.*
vi. 1, .. vi. 118.
vi. 14, iii. 560, *f*; vi. 143, 250.
vi. 16, .. xv. 385.

EPHESIANS.

i. 4, i. 62; iii. 592, *ff.*
i. 4, 5, .. xii. 554.
i. 7, .. v. 144.
i. 8–10, .. i. 367, *ff.*
i. 9, 10, .. i. 54, 62, 265.
i. 13, ii. 242, *f*; iv. 400, *f.*

Chap. Vol.
i. 14, .. iv. 407, *ff.*
i. 17, .. ix. 71.
i. 17–19, .. iv. 133, *ff.*
i. 20–22, .. ii. 70.
ii. 1, .. iii. 282, *ff.*
ii. 2, .. xi. 306.
ii. 8, 9, .. ix. 120.
ii. 8–10, v. 356, *ff*; ix. 107.
ii. 10, .. v. 380.
ii. 12–16, .. xii. 538, *f.*
ii. 14, .. xi. 398.
ii. 15, .. vi. 177, *f.*
ii. 18, i. 113; ii. 10; xii. 387.
* ii. 18, .. ix. 53, 69.
ii. 19–22, i. 34; ix. 54, 55.
ii. 20, .. xvi. 307.
iii. 14, 15, .. ii. 12.
iii. 16–19, .. xi. 386.
* iii. 19, .. ix. 609.
iv. 3, 4, .. xv. 106.
iv. 7, 8, 11–13, .. xv. 10.
iv. 7–13, .. xv. 47.
iv. 7–16, . iv. 486, *ff.*
iv. 8, i. 247, 350; iv. 422, *f.*
* iv. 8, .. ix. 431.
iv. 9, .. ix. 440.
iv. 11, iv. 439, *ff*, 441, *f.*
iv. 11–15, vi. 284, *f*; xvi. 37, 38.
iv. 15, .. v. 179.
iv. 15, 16, iv. 517; xv. 107; xvi. 189.
iv. 17, 18, .. iii. 249, *ff.*
iv. 20–24, .. vii. 113.
iv. 21, .. vi. 456, *f.*
iv. 22–24, .. iii. 221, *f.*
iv. 30, ii. 148, *ff*, 230, 264, *ff*; iv. 373, *f*, 400, *ff*, 413, *ff*; vi. 55; xi. 521.
v. 2, .. xii. 408.
v. 8, .. iv. 171, *f.*
v. 11, .. vi. 258.
v. 13, .. xvi. 319.
v. 18, .. vii. 300.
v. 25–27, .. x. 210.
v. 25–32, .. i. 356; v. 179.
v. 31, 32, .. xi. 340.
vi. 18, .. iv. 297, *ff*; vi. 126.

PHILIPPIANS.

i. 1, .. xvi. 44.
i. 6, .. iii. 388, *ff.*
i. 23, .. ix. 349.
ii. 5, .. ix. 126.
ii. 5–8, .. i. 323–330.
ii. 6, .. xii. 285, *ff.*
ii. 6, 7, .. ii. 134, *f.*
ii. 6–8, i. 59, 207, 232.
ii. 9, .. ii. 70.
ii. 12, 13, .. xi. 464.
ii. 13, .. xi. 464.
iii. 7, 8, .. ii. 138.
iii. 7–9, .. ix. 104.
iii. 8, .. ix. 363.
iii. 8, 9, .. v. 297, 363, *ff.*
iii. 8–12, .. i. 4.
iii. 10, iii. 561; v. 419; xi. 393.
* iii. 10, .. ix. 579.
iii. 12–14, .. vi. 196, *f.*
iii. 21, .. i. 245.
iv. 6, .. iv. 294.
iv. 7, .. vi. 134.
iv. 11, .. ix. 119.

COLOSSIANS.

i. 6, .. xvi. 324.
i. 9, .. iv. 173.

Chap. Vol.
i. 9–11, .. v. 433.
i. 10, .. i. 265.
i. 13, iii. 270, *ff*; v. 434.
i. 13, 14, .. xii. 518.
i. 15, i. 70, *f*; xii. 311; xii. 322.
i. 15–18, .. i. 63, *f.*
i. 16, 17, .. xii. 265, *ff.*
i. 19, .. ii. 152.
i. 20, .. i. 370.
i. 21, .. iii. 271; x. 261.
i. 24, .. ii. 145.
i. 27, .. vii. 321.
ii. 2, .. v. 419; vi. 458.
ii. 3, .. ii. 80, *f*, 247.
ii. 9, .. xii. 323.
ii. 15, i. 248; ix. 439; xi. 305, *ff.*
ii. 19, iv. 517; v. 179; xi. 339; xvi. 189.
iii. 2, .. vi. 250.
iii. 3, iv. 388; vi. 286; ix. 382.
iii. 3, 4, .. iii. 522.
iii. 5, iii. 539, *ff*; vi. 9, *ff*, 33, 175, 200.
iii. 10, .. v. 433.
iii. 12, 13, .. iii. 598, *ff.*
* iii. 14, .. ix. 256, *ff.*
iii. 14, .. xiii. 111.

1 THESSALONIANS.

i. 5, .. xvi. 323, *f.*
ii. 13, .. iv. 94.
iv. 3, .. ii. 182.
v. 19, .. ii. 266, 267.
v. 22, .. vi. 194.
v. 23, .. iii. 367, *ff*, 420.

2 THESSALONIANS.

i. 1, .. xvi. 189.
i. 4, 5, .. ix. 124.
ii. 7, .. vii. 212.
ii. 10, .. vi. 212, *f.*
ii. 10–12, vii. 43, 85, 98, 140, 141, 142, 158, 213; ix. 324.
ii. 13, .. i. 63; ii. 316.
ii. 13, 14, .. xi. 203.
ii. 16, .. ii. 251.
iii. 7, .. xvi. 164.
iii. 17, 18, .. ii. 47.

1 TIMOTHY.

i. 1, .. x. 164.
i. 12–16, .. vi. 447.
i. 13–15, .. ix. 104.
i. 15, .. v. 419; x. 209.
i. 19, 20, .. xvi. 161, *f.*
ii. 4, .. x. 381.
ii. 4, 6, .. x. 343, *ff.*
ii. 13, 14, .. vi. 212, *f.*
iii. 1, .. ix. 123.
iii. 8–13, .. xv. 506, *f.*
iii. 13, .. xvi. 148, *ff.*
iii. 15, .. iv. 30.
iii. 16, i. 49, 247; ii. 416; xii. 294, *ff.*
iv. 1, 2, vii. 66, *ff*, 160, *ff.*
iv. 10, .. x. 190, *f.*
v. 17, xv. 504, *f*; xvi. 115, *ff.*
vi. 16, .. xvi. 466.

2 TIMOTHY.

i. 6, .. iv. 320, *ff.*
i. 12, .. ix. 338.
ii. 1, 2, vii. 66, *ff.*
ii. 15, .. iv. 510, *f.*

Chap. Vol.
ii. 19, iii. 593; xi. 179, ff.
*iii. 1, .. ix. 320, ff.
iii. 1–5, .. vii. 101, 160, ff.
iv. 1, 2, 4, .. vii. 93, ff.

TITUS.
i. 2, .. i. 56; ii. 178.
i. 3, .. x. 164.
i. 5–9, .. xvi. 44.
i. 16, .. vi. 454.
ii. 11, 12, .. xi. 387, 402.
ii. 13, .. xii. 257, ff.
ii. 14, .. iii. 630; x. 210.
iii. 3–5, .. xi. 124.
iii. 4–7, ii. 189, 190; v. 133.

PHILEMON.
ver. 18, v. 170, 182, 260.

HEBREWS.
i. 2, .. xii. 271, ff.
i. 3, i. 71, 73; v. 144; xii. 322; xii. 278, ff.
ii. 4, .. iii. 121.
ii. 9, .. x. 349.
ii. 10, 17, 18, .. xii. 404.
ii. 11, .. i. 355.
ii. 14, 15, i. 355, ff; x. 210.
ii. 16, .. xii. 299, ff.
ii. 17, 18, .. vi. 81.
ii. 18, .. vi. 288.
iii. 12, 13, .. vi. 52.
iii. 13, vi. 211, ff; ix. 166.
iv. 2, .. vi. 76, 113.
iv. 12, .. iv. 93.
iv. 14, .. i. 248.
iv. 14, 16, .. ix. 64.
iv. 15, .. ii. 141, ff.
iv. 15, 16, .. vi. 82, 136.
iv. 16, ii. 142, ff; ix. 109.
v. 6, 7, .. xii. 409.
v. 9, 10, .. xii. 407.
vi. 4, .. xi. 649, ff.
*vi. 4–6, .. vii. 11–51.
vi. 4–6, 9, .. xi. 465.
vi. 4–8, .. xi. 638, ff.
vi. 5, ii. 246; iv. 478, f.
vi. 17, 18, vi. 432; ix. 32.
vi. 18, .. ii. 251.
vi. 19, 20, .. i. 253.
vi. 20, .. ix. 63.
vii. 15, 16, .. xii. 405, f.
vii. 19, .. xii. 367, f.
vii. 22, .. v. 181.
vii. 25, .. xii. 407.
viii. 1, 2, .. xii. 405.
viii. 3, .. xii. 421.
viii. 4, .. xii. 405.
viii. 6, .. xii. 367, f.
viii. 8–12, vi. 470, ff; x. 236, f.
ix. 2, .. xi. 398.
ix. 8, .. ix. 55.
ix. 12, .. xii. 407, 410.
ix. 12–14, .. x. 211.
ix. 14, .. iii. 176, ff.
ix. 24, .. i. 253; x. 184.
ix. 28, .. xii. 407.
x. 1, .. i. 387.
x. 1–4, 10, 14, .. v. 146.
x. 1–7, .. xii. 421, ff.
x. 4, .. xii. 501.
x. 5, xii. 303, f, 429; xii. 502.
x. 7, 10, .. xii. 498.
x. 10, 14, .. v. 144.
x. 14, .. xi. 291.
x. 19–22, iii. 425; iv. 293, f; ix. 55.
x. 21, 22, .. ix. 64.
x. 23, 24, .. ix. 166.
x. 25, .. xvi. 139.
x. 26–29, .. xi. 638.
x. 29, .. x. 364.
x. 38, .. xi. 655.
xi. 1, .. i. 50.
xi. 4, .. vi. 464.
xi. 6, .. iii. 413.
xi. 26, .. ii. 137.
xi. 33, 34, .. ix. 109.
xii. 2, .. i. 460.
xii. 5, 6, ii. 259, f; vi. 579.
xii. 6, .. ix. 110.
xii. 15, .. ix. 386.
xii. 22–24, .. i. 255.
xii. 23, .. i. 405.
xii. 26–28, .. ix. 135, 138.
*xii. 27, .. viii. 247, ff.
xii. 28, 29, .. ix. 99.

JAMES.
i. 2, 12–14, vi. 115; vii. 272.
i. 5, .. iv. 457.
i. 9, 10, .. ix. 119.
i. 14, vi. 117, 214, ff, 260, ff.
i. 14, 15, .. xi. 510, ff.
i. 16–18, .. xi. 121.
i. 18, .. vi. 596.
i. 18, 19, .. xii. 419.
i. 23, 24, .. vi. 232, f.
*ii. 3, .. viii. 547, ff.
ii. 14 to end, .. v. 384, ff.
iv. 1, vi. 189, 195, ff, 200, 605.
iv. 15, .. xii. 130.
v. 2, .. xvi. 47.
v. 7–9, .. ix. 138, 139.
v. 14, 15, .. iv. 465.

1 PETER.
i. 8, .. vi. 333, f.
i. 10, 11, .. xvi. 298.
i. 14, 15, .. xi. 383.
i. 18, .. ix. 161.
i. 20, .. i. 56; v. 179, f.
i. 23, .. iv. 95; vi. 596.
ii. 2, 3, .. i. 442.
ii. 4, 5, .. ix. 55, f.
ii. 9, .. iv. 394.
ii. 11, .. vi. 198, ff, 605.
ii. 12, .. v. 155; ix. 123.
ii. 24, i. 353; v. 35, 144; x. 212, 266.
iii. 6–8, .. i. 3, f.
iii. 15, .. xvi. 228.
iii. 16, .. v. 155.
iii. 18, .. i. 353.
*iii. 18, .. ix. 566.
iii. 18–20, .. i. 90; ix. 147.
iv. 19, .. xi. 246.

2 PETER.
i. 3, 4, .. xi. 402.
i. 3–5, .. iii. 395.
i. 3–6, .. xi. 271, f.
i. 3–10, .. vi. 340.
i. 4, iii. 21; v. 430; xi. 337.
i. 4–10, .. i. 441.
i. 5–7, .. iii. 392.
i. 5–7, 10, 11, .. vi. 568, f.
i. 16–21, .. iv. 76.
i. 18–21, .. xvi. 317, f.
i. 19, iv. 97; xvi. 320, 467.
i. 20, 21, ii. 236; xvi. 300, ff.
i. 21, .. iii. 132.
ii. 1, vii. 65, ff; x. 362, ff.
ii. 9, .. vi. 116.
ii. 18–22, .. xi. 662.
ii. 19, .. vii. 238.
iii. 7, .. ix. 142.
iii. 9, vi. 262, 451; x. 348; xii. 559.
*iii. 11, ix. 131, 141, 157, 168, 399.
iii. 13, .. ix. 134, f.
iii. 16, .. ix. 175.

1 JOHN.
i. 1, 2, .. i. 56; iv. 360.
i. 3, .. ii. 5, f.
i. 5, .. xvi. 466.
i. 6, .. ii. 39.
ii. 1, .. vi. 339.
ii. 1, 2, vi. 255, f; x. 330, ff.
ii. 4, .. ii. 39.
ii. 7, 8, .. i. 136.
ii. 15, .. ix. 387.
ii. 16, ix. 161; vi. 113.
ii. 19, .. xi. 594.
ii. 20, 27, ii. 246, ff; iv. 144, ff, 167, f, 330, ff.
ii. 27, .. ii. 16.
iii. 1–3, .. vi. 240.
iii. 8, .. xi. 307.
iii. 8, 9, .. xi. 561, ff.
iii. 16, .. xii. 263, f.
iii. 24, .. iv. 405.
iv. 1–3, .. i. 9; iii. 32, f.
iv. 2, .. xii. 302.
iv. 3, .. iii. 63.
iv. 8, .. ii. 19.
iv. 8, 16, .. iv. 370.
iv. 9, .. ii. 82.
iv. 9, 10, .. x. 324.
iv. 10, .. xii. 556.
iv. 13, .. iv. 405.
iv. 14, .. x. 342.
v. 7, .. ii. 9, f.
v. 7, 8, .. v. 406.
v. 10, 11, .. i. 100.
v. 20, .. iv. 164, ff.

2 JOHN.
ver. 8, .. vi. 294.

JUDE.
ver. 10, applied to Socinians, i. 83.
ver. 22, 23, .. iv. 177.

REVELATION.
i. 6, .. iv. 394.
i. 8, .. xii. 259, ff.
i. 14, .. ii. 49; ix. 99.
ii. 2, 20, .. xv. 512, ff.
ii. 9, .. v. 544.
iii. 10, vi. 98, ff, 102, 138, ff.
iii. 17, .. vi. 544.
iii. 18, .. iv. 394.
iii. 20, .. ii. 40; vi. 138.
iv. 11, .. i. 57.
v. 6, .. i. 252.
v. 6–14, .. i. 108, ff.
vi. 14, .. ix. 134.
vi. 16, 17, .. ix. 139.
vii. 7, 9–12, 14, 15, ix. 507–509.
viii. 3, 4, .. i. 258.
ix. 3, .. vi. 17.
xiii. 8, .. x. 184.
xiii. 11, 16, .. ix. 507–509.
xiv. 6, 7, 10, .. ix. 507–509.
xvii., xviii., .. viii. 262.
xviii. 7, 8, 17, .. ix. 507–509.
xxi. 8, .. vi. 164.
xxi. 22, .. i. 407.
xxii. 11, .. v. 134.
xxii. 18, .. xv. 38, ff.

VIII.—INDEX OF REFERENCES TO AUTHORS, OPINIONS, COUNCILS, AND SAYINGS.

Several Works are referred to without the Authors' Names.

Abbot. ad Thom., xi. 31, 497.
Abelardus, ii. 375; xii. 28, 402.
Aben Ezra, xii. 457; xvi. 361, 392, 394, 399.
Aben Rost. (Rabbi), xii. 127.
Abrabanel, xii. 456; xvi. 388.
Acesius, vii. 14.
Acosta, x. 110, 526.
Acta Eccles. Min. Pol. Syn., xii. 17, 18.
Acts and Mon. Hist. Pap., viii. 263.
Ado, xiv. 396.
Adrian, x. 520.
Adrianus, Ferrariensis, xvi. 353.
Ælian, x. 519; xiii. 359.
Ælius Spartianus, viii. 186.
Ælurus, xv. 260.
Æschylus, viii. 109, 603; xii. 107, 126.
Agricola, xiv. 315.
Albertus Magnus, i. 23.
Albinus, i. 23; xiv. 237.
Albo, Joseph, Rabbi, xii. 316.
Alcinous, xii. 107.
Alcoran, xvi. 348.
Alcuinus, xv. 20.
Alexander (of Alexandria), i. 13; xiv. 165.
Alexander Alensis, i. 22; ii. 18.
Alschech, Rabbi, xii. 273.
Alstedius, xvi. 285.
Altare Christianum, viii. 29.
Altingius, ii. 369; xii. 28, 43, 67.
Alvarez, x. 52, 73, 86, 107; xi. 21, 71, 72; xii. 130.
Alvarus, xiv. 389.
Amama, xvi. 285, 289, 360.
Amatorius, xv. 20.
Ambrose, i. 13, 21, 26; iii. 16, 17, 50, 53, 73, 93, 111, 113, 117, 170, 208, 209; iv. 228; v. 348; viii. 5, 44, 80, 118; x. 423, 536; xi. 58; xii. 259, 297, 298; xiii. 7; xiv. 228, 457; xv. 26, 196, 198; xvi. 149.
Amelius, xvi. 432.
Amesius, iv. 353; viii. 167; x. 27, 409, 462, 498; xvi. 285.
Ammianus Marcellinus, vii. 211; xiii. 565; xv. 205.
Amsdorfius, xiii. 361.
Amyraldus, ii. 369; iv. 261; x. 148, 222, 229, 230; xii. 49; xiii 138, 195.
Anabaptists, xiii. 218, 268.
Andradius, xiv. 202, 265, 352, *f.*, 354; xvi. 285, 373.
Annotations on the Bible, viii. 168.
Anonymous, iv. 332; v. 98, 163, 188; xi. 170, 214, 287; xii. 138, 183, 592, 593, 594, 598, 601, 603, 604, 605, 606, 607, 609; xiii. 5, 93, 290, 291, 343, 348, 526; xiv. 52, 177, 191, 208, 295, 303, 306, 315, 318, 323, 324, 326, 328, 349, 410, 433; xv. 220; xvi. 440, 487.
Anselm, i. 23; v. 16; x. 466.
Anthorinus, xv. 260.
Anthropomorphites, x. 303, 369; xii. 99, 103.
"Antidot. Animæ," v. 17.
Antinomians, v. 73, 145.
Antiphanes, xii. 350.
Antitagma Coloniense, v. 68.
Antwerp Bible, xvi. 361.
Apion, viii. 177.
Apollinarius, i. 15.
Appianus, xii. 435.
Aquila, vii. 19; xii. 631; xvi. 357, 420.
Arabic version of New Testament, v. 134; xii. 297, 298.
Aratus, xii. 98.
Arethas, iii. 93.
Aretine, iv. 228.
Arians and Arianism, vii. 70; xii. 13, 632, 633.
Arias Montanus, viii. 257; xii. 251, 443, 472, 474; xvi. 285, 286, 290, 357, 362, 364, 369, 373, 402.
Aristides, xiii. 92.
Aristophanes, xii. 200, 420; xiii. 359; xiv. 16; xvi. 62, 488.
Aristotle, ii. 7, 8, 25, 28, 82, 94, 118, 343; v. 12, 56; viii. 111; x. 262, 497, 501, 503, 519, 541, 542; xi. 20; xii. 60, 64, 107, 112, 113, 139, 438, 521, 596, 620, 634; xiii. 281, 295, 412; xiv. 186, 195, 216, 220, 315, 329; xvi. 442.
Arius, i. 13; xi. 489; xii. 16, 67, 72.
Arminians, viii. 10; x. 6, and throughout the treatise; 222, and throughout the treatise; 585; xi. 78, 491, 496; xii. 574; xiii. 40.
Arminii Filii, x. 16, 125, 129.
Arminius, viii. 167; x. 7, 15, 16, 21, 22, 25, 27, 30, 39, 43, 50, 58, 61, 62, 66, 67, 77, 84, 87, 94, 99, 109, 113, 117, 118, 130, 131, 133, 205, 228, 250, 317, 345, 452, 498, 584, 585; xi. 86, 518; xiii. 8.
Arnobius, viii. 66, 176, 177; xi. 494; xiii. 563; xiv. 236, 437, 438.
Arnoldus, ii. 369; x. 95; xii. 7, 28, 371.
Arriaga, Rod. de, xii. 140.
Arrian, ii. 88.
Arrowsmith, xvi. 441.
"Articles of Church of England," x. 110.
Athanasius, i. 10; iii. 93, 161, 162, 306; v. 177; viii. 183; x. 423; xi. 24; xii. 171, 307, 389; xiv. 165, 227, 234, 384, 437, 478; xv. 354.
Atheists, xi. 492.
Athenagoras, vii. 68; xvi. 430.
Audæus, xvi. 106.
Augustine, i. 7, 10, 16, 21, 22, 23, 25, 27, 227, 228; ii. 6, 25, 26, 33, 81, 82, 88, 99, 114, 119; iii. 26, 54, 94, 117, 132, 137, 143, 212, 213, 221, 236, 241, 249, 258, 260, 262, 289, 297, 307, 311, 315, 316, 317, 319, 320, 321, 323, 326, 327, 331, 332, 334, 336, 337, and throughout the chapter, 420; iv. 41, 112, 228, 286, 330; v. 19, 22, 23, 36, 124, 176, 280, 289, 325, 347; vi. 331, 608, 643; vii. 69, 74, 75, 76, 425; viii. 9, 11, 13, 15, 19, 21, 31, 34, 44, 45, 61, 165, 167, 173, 183, 187, 248, 359, 486, 532; x. 7, 11, 23, 27, 28, 32, 36, 40, 48, 52, 58, 65, 66, 71, 73, 86, 103, 104, 106, 107, 116, 152, 205, 423, 432, 466, 488, 536, 560; xi. 19, 21, 60, 61, 62, 63, 64, 65, 66, 67, 72, 431, 494, 497, 558; xii. 12, 27, 82, 131, 142, 150, 202, 433, 435; xiii. 8, 11, 31, 91, 109, 128, 154, 201, 296, 414; xiv. 165, 176, 219, 236, 271, 292, 384, 399, 437; xv. 212, 417; xvi. 18, 64, 173, 369, 416.
Augustinus Triumphus, xiv. 389, 390.
Augustus, viii. 74; xii. 591.
Aus. Pop. xii. 593.
Averroes, viii. 166; xiv. 217.
Azarias, Rabbi, xvi. 384, 392, 393.
Azorius, xiv. 235, 416, 439, 447.

Bachid., xii. 610.
Bagus de Merit., xiv. 202.
Baijans or Bayans, xii. 560; xiii. 114.
Baillie, xi. 4.
Baldwinus, xii. 28.
Balsamon, xiv. 230.
Bannes, xiii. 126.
Bannes, Dominicus, xiv. 391.
Baptista Mantuanus, iv. 113; xiv. 272.
Baranzano, xii. 45.
Barclay, xiv. 390.
Barnes, xii. 104.
Baron, Robert (of Aberdeen), viii. 505, 516, 526.
Baronius, x. 409; xi. 26; xii. 28; xiv. 210, 231, 232, 235, 292, 332, 389, 390, 392, 396, 402, 447, 456; xv. 20, 21, 22, 260, 282; xvi. 454.
Bartholus, xii. 610.
Basil, i. 10, 23; ii. 140; iii. 22, 94, 108; iv. 112; xi. 24; xii. 69; xiii. 109; xiv. 165, 272; xv. 26.
Basilides, v. 389; xii. 12, 16; xiv. 223.
Basilius, Emperor, xiv. 403.
Baxter, ii. 369; x. 435–479; xii. 10, 593–614.
Becanus, viii. 180, 510, 516.
Becmannus, xii. 20, 289.
Beda, iv. 286; viii. 32; xiv. 332, 396, 468.
Bellarmine, ii. 321; iii. 170; iv. 114; v. 11, 32, 55, 56, 60, 68, 129, 138, 154, 169, 196, 201, 220, 231, 279, 296, 346, 351, 353, 370, 373, 390; viii. 37, 165, 167, 176, 178, 180, 182, 265, 516; x. 16, 62; xi. 25, 26, 73; xii. 9, 33, 42, 636; xiii. 127, 193, 414, 454, 473; xiv. 204, 216, 227, 233, 235, 256, 262, 292, 293, 226, 389, 390, 391, 392, 416, 439, 447; xv. 9, 15, 45; xvi. 14, 18, 57, 60, 61, 63, 71, 204, 285, 371, 372, 373, 417, 437, 438, 454.
Benedict, x. 103.
Benno, xiv. 231.
Bereschith Rab., xii. 255.
Bernard, ii. 162; iii. 240, 282, 289; iv. 281, 330; v. 37, 103, 236; viii. 126, 253; x. 111; xii. 28, 402; xiii. 125; xiv. 382.
Berno, xv. 20.
Bertius, x. 109, 114; xi. 78, 191.
Beza, ii. 19, 121, 141, 157, 165; iv. 229; vii. 11, *f*; viii. 61, 214; xi. 487, 655, 656; xii. 9, 18, 20, 21, 23, 24, 25, 35, 37, 41, 46, 98, 281, 289, 297, 636; xiii. 285, 286; xvi. 60, 289, 290, 362, 365, 396.
" Bibliotheca Patrum," xv. 20.
Biddle, xi. 3, 72; xii. 3, and throughout the treatise; 595, 601.
Biel, ii. 369; iii. 303.
Bielenscius, xii. 33; xiii. 128.
Bilson, viii. 137; xiii. 407, 492; xvi. 117.
Binius, xi. 26; xiv. 230.
Blandrata, xii. 17, 18, 37.
Blondellus, xi. 29, 33, 37, 40; xvi. 71.
Boethius, xii. 125.
Bolsec, viii. 178, 206.
Bolton, xi. 487.
Bonarus, xii. 44.
Bonaventure, iv. 101.
" Book of Common Prayer," xv. 32.
Boræus, x. 72, 81, 229.
Bradwardin, iv. 353; viii. 11; xi. 21, 22, 63, 68, 69, 70, 71.
Brenius, v. 296.
Brentius, xiv. 353.
Bricot, v. 12; xi. 70.
Brownists, xiii. 218.
Brulifer, xi. 70.
Bucanus, xiii. 262.
Bucerus, ii. 21; iv. 229; v. 231, 373; x. 42; xi. 489.
Budæus, v. 125; xi. 154; xii. 376, 420, 610; xiii. 105.
Bullinger, xii. 20.
Buxtorf, xii. 99, 468; xvi. 360, 361, 372, 380, 386, 392, 398, 415 455.
Buxtorf the elder, xvi. 288, 332, 358.
Buxtorf the younger, xvi. 289.

Cælestinus, xi. 60.
Cælestius, x. 107, 115.
Cæsar, x. 527, 528; xiii. 167, 369; xiv. 396.
Cajetan, x. 501, 505; xii. 71; xiii. 322; xiv. 218, 421; xvi. 285.
Calarbasus, xii. 16.
Calasius, ii. 25; xii. 451, 468.
Calovius, ii. 369.
Calvin, ii. 49, 136, 142; iv. 68, 115, 220; vi. 373; viii. 9, 175; x. 7, 275, 488; xi. 31, 487, 489, 497, 623, 636; xii. 18, 20, 67, 636, 637; xiii. 408; xv. 398; xvi. 20, 303.
Calvinists, xiii. 94.
Camerarius, xvi. 289, 362.
Cameron, ii. 369; viii. 509. 526, 529; x. 148, 222, 229, 488, 507; xvi. 289, 303, 362, 364.
Canonists, xiv 390.
" Canons of the Apostles," xv. 22.
" Canterburian self-conviction," viii. 28.
Canus, iv. 56; xvi. 285.
Capito, xvi. 288.
Capitolin. in Macrin., xii. 486.
Cappellus, x. 536; xvi. 288–292, 301, 302, 351, 355, 359, 362, 369, 407.
Carerius, xiv. 360.
Carpocrates, xiv. 436.
Cartwright, ii. 22; xii. 188.
Casaubon, x. 110; xi. 55; xvi. 289.
Casmannus, Otto, ii. 369.
Casparus Ulenbergius, v. 16.
Cassander, iii. 310.
Cassianus, xi. 67.
Castalio, xi. 431; xii. 25.
Castel. Edmund., xvi. 286.
Castrius, Leo, xvi. 285, 372.
" Catechism, Lesser" (Biddle's), xii. 89.
Cato, iv. 258; x. 538; xii. 106, 435, 587.
Catullus, xiii. 458; xiv. 195, 339, 349, 393, 339, 349, 393.
Catulus, xiv. 432.
Cawdrey, xiii. 219, and throughout the treatise; 230, and throughout the treatise.
Celsus, xii. 609; xiv. 15, 16, 176, 436, *f*; xvi. 98.
" Censu. Facult. Theolo. Leyd.," xii. 351.
Centuriators of Magdeburg, xi. 31; xv. 198; xvi. 431.
Cerdon, x. 151; xii. 12.
Cerinthus, ii. 374; xii. 13, 16, 72.
Chaldee Paraphrast, vi. 608; x. 496; xii. 463, 631, 632; xvi. 403, 414, 433.
Chamierus, viii. 499, 516, 532; xvi. 285, 348.
Charles V., v. 32.
Charles the Great, laws of, xiv. 384.
Chauncey, v. 404.
Chemnitius, v. 231, 373.
Chillingworth, xv. 491.
" Chronicon, Antioch." Joh. Male. MS., xiii. 100.
Chrysostom, i. 23, 66; iii. 16, 18, 31, 54, 56, 60, 69, 161, 171, 258, 269; iv. 228, 315, 318; v. 36, 178, 348, 353, 386; vi. 330, 360, 608; vii. 99; xi. 59, 175, 636; xii. 191, 591; xiii. 11, 100, 108, 473, 474; xiv. 165, 227, 281, 382, 399, 421, 437, 468; xv. 26, 199, 354; xvi. 59, 297, 417.
Church of England, v. 164, 174.
Church of Smyrna, epistle of, xiv. 435.
Churches of Vienne and Lyons, epistles of, xiv. 435; xv. 289, 290.
Cicero, ii. 8, 9, 87, 99, 140; iv. 40, 89; v. 23; vi. 33; viii. 57, 86, 176; x. 106, 503, 527; xi. 20, 95, 154; xii. 70, 98, 99, 107, 141, 586, 609; xiii. 213, 360, 371; xiv. 157, 216, 221, 236, 432, 454; xvi. 35, 62.
Cichovius, xii. 22, 183.

Clarkson, v. 300.
Clasenius, xii. 132.
Claudianus, xvi. 486.
Clemens Alexandr., i. 18, 19, 26; ii. 156; iv. 111; vii. 14, 68; x. 150, 529, 530; xi. 25, 26, 27, 32, 34; xii. 107; xiii. 343; xiv. 176, 221, 226, 227, 269, *f*, 436; xv. 354; xvi. 96, 390, 431.
Clemens of Rome, viii. 118, 171; x. 422; xi. 27, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 44, 45, 48; xiii. 104, 105, 106, 107, 109, 237, 286, 304; xv. 22, 203, 217, 282–289, 299, 313, 354, 366, 371, 438; xvi. 69, 95.
Cloppenburgh, xii. 6, 20, 334.
" Coal from the Altar," viii. 29.
Cocceius, xii. 503.
Cochlæus, xiv. 265; xvi. 288.
" Codex Can. African.," xv. 26.
Coke, Sir Edward, xiii. 185.
" Compend. Doct. Eccles. in Polon.," xii. 582.
" Compendiolum Relig." ab Ostorodio et Voidovio, xii. 182.
" Complutensian Bible," v. 134.
Conanus, xii. 609.
" Concio ad Cler.," Oxon. 1641, x. 17, 22.
" Confessio Fidei Christianæ, nom. Eccles in Polon.," xii. 183.
" Confession de Foi" (Socinian), xii. 87.
" Conjectura Cabalistica," xii. 57.
Conradus, xii. 24, 43.
Constant. Epist. Chr. Syriac., viii. 47.
Constantine l'Empereur, xii. 456, 457; xvi. 455.
Constantine the Great, xiii. 473; xiv. 221, 384; xv. 123.
Contarinus, v. 68.
Contzen, xv. 219.
Cornelius à Lapide, iv. 391; viii. 8, 10; xv. 13; xvi. 61, 277.
Cortesius, xiv. 293.
Corvinus, x. 15, 17, 21, 25, 27, 29, 37, 38, 39, 43, 49, 50, 52, 57, 58, 61, 67, 73, 77, 81, 82, 83, 84, 87, 94, 95, 99, 102, 109, 114, 117, 118, 131, 228, 229, 317, 535; xi. 488.
" Cosri, Liber," xvi. 401.
Costerus, xiv. 217, 439; xvi. 300, 454, 455.
Cotton, xi. 487; xiii. 223, 293; xv. 435, 436.
Councils and Synods :—
Afric. Cod. Can. Conc., xiv. 230.
Africa, Councils of, xiv. 402; xv. 26.
Alexandria, Synod of, xiii. 563.
Anglicanum Concilium, xiv. 226.
Antioch. Concil., xiv. 230.
Arles, Council of, xi. 67.
Arausic. Concilium, iii. 245, 249, 323; iv. 50, 113; x. 103.
Basil, Council of, xiv. 235.
Brixia, Council at, xiv. 404.
Brixia, Synod at, xiv. 233.
Byzacenæ, Synod. Epist., x. 115; xi. 61.
Carthage, first Council, xiv. 230.
Chalcedon, Council of, i. 11; viii. 191; xiv. 165, 168, 230, 231, 305; xvi. 94, 95, 444.
Chalcedonensis Con. Ac., xiii. 142.
Clarendon, Assembly at, xiv. 404.
Colon., Enchiridion Concil., xiii. 130.
Constance, Council of, xiv. 235, 255.
Constan., Can. Concil., xiii. 142; xiv. 230.
Constan., Symbolum Concilii., xii. 337.
Constantinop., Concilium, iii. 165.
Constantinople, Council of, i. 11.
Constantinople, fourth Council, xiv. 403.
Constantinople, Synod at, xiv. 236.
Diospolitan Synod, v. 19.
Dort, Synod of, x. 409; xi. 622.
Eliberis, Council of, xiv 236, 437.
Eph. Anath. Synod., xii. 388.
Ephesus, Council of, first, i. 11.
Ephesus, Council, Epistle of, xvi. 94.
Ephesus, Council of, second, i. 12; viii. 186; xvi. 207.
Ephesus, third œcumenical, xiv. 230, 305.
Frankfort, Council at, xiv. 237, 429, 432, 434, 438.
Gangræ, Council at, xv. 416.
General Council, second, i. 21.
General Council, sixth, xiv. 403.
Lateran, Council of, xiv. 218.
Mentz, Council at, xiv. 404.
Milevitan Council, xi. 62; xii. 150.
Milevitan Council, second, xiv. 230; xv. 26.
Morden. Act. Synod., xii. 19.
Nice, Council of, xiii. 143; xiv. 165, 229, 305; xvi. 94, 95, 207.
Nice, first Council of, xiv. 168.
Nice, second Council of, viii. 186; xiv. 235, 236, 403, 429, *f*, 434, 437, 444, 455.
Nicene Conventicle (second Council of Nice), xiv. 436.
Palestine, Synod of, xi. 60.
Papia, Council at, xiv. 404.
Pisa, Council of, xiv. 235.
Rome, Council at, xiv. 403.
Sardis, Council of, xiv. 226.
Sutrinum, Council at, xiv. 403.
Toledo, Council of, xiv. 227.
Trent, Council of, v. 68, 137, 138; xiii. 142; xiv. 154, 235, 237, 258, 352, 363, 416, 429, 433, 434, 437, 546; xvi. 207, 437.
Valentinum Concilium, x. 424.
Worms, Council at, xiv. 404.
Covetus, ii. 368; x. 570, 571; xii. 26, 510.
Crantzius, x. 537.
Crellius, ii. 361, 369, 410; iii. 19, 54, 59, 77, 173; v. 201; x. 505, 506, 564–569, 593; xii. 26, 27, 40, 50, 70, 88, 99, 108, 109, 117, 122, 126, 131, 155, 345, 402, 403, 412, 533, 598, 599, 601, 610, 625, 626, 627, 628, 629, 639.
Cressey, Hugh Paulin de, iv. 247, 328; xii. 26.
Culverwell, xi. 487.
Curcellæus, v. 108; vii. 74; xii. 49.
Cyprian, i. 17; ii. 8; iii. 25, 42, 67, 98, 122, 140, 157, 267; v. 134, 176; vii. 13; viii. 183; x. 422; xi. 58, 62; xii. 307; xiii. 99, 286; xiv. 229, 236, 402; xv. 22, 122, 212, 286, 354, 414, 436; xvi. 69, *f*.
Cyril, xii. 388; xvi. 431, 432.
Cyril of Alexandria, i. 11, 22, 23; v. 333.
Cyril of Jerusalem, viii. 25; x. 423; xii. 1 (page first); xv. 22.
Cyrillus, xiv. 437.

Daillé, xi. 24; xv. 400.
Damascenus, i. 23; iii. 160, 286; viii. 13; x. 36; xii. 76, 634; xiv. 236.
Daniel, viii. 178.
Dante, xvi. 328.
Davenant, iii. 218; v. 208, 368; x. 432; xi. 497.
David, Franciscus, xii. 31, 32, 34, 41, 47, 376.
Decius, Emperor, xv. 414.
De Dieu, xvi. 289, 362.
De Muis, Simeon, xvi. 397, 398.
Demophilus, xv. 260.
Demosthenes, xii. 603; xvi. 62.
" Dialog. de Justificatione," xii. 598, 599, 600.
Didymus, iii. 28, 37, 38, 48, 54, 58, 59, 68, 69, 113, 162, 170, 220; iv. 145, 255.
Diodati, xi. 636.
Diodorus Siculus, x. 526, 529, 530.
Diogenes, xii. 60.
Diogenes Laertius, viii. 57, 175; x. 152, 497.
Dion Cassius, viii. 174, 186; xii. 594; xiii. 192; xiv. 396; xvi. 377.
Dionys. De Div. Nom. 1, i. 66; viii. 171.
Dionysius of Alexandria, xv. 414, 435.
Dionysius, bishop of Corinth, xv. 290.

Dionysius Halicar., iv. 41; x. 530.
Dionysius Hierarch. Div. Nom., xv. 22.
Dioscurus, xv. 260.
Diphilus, ii. 95.
Ditmarus, x. 526.
Divines, English, at Synod of Dort, iii. 229.
Dodd, xi. 487.
Dominicans, xiii. 115.
Donatism, xv. 324.
Donatists, xiii. 158, 184; xv. 368, 369, 416, 417.
Donatus, xii. 438.
Dorchetus, xiii. 262.
Downham, Bishop, ii. 320; xvi. 117.
Drusius, vii. 19; viii. 112; xvi. 289, 362, 416, 417, 455.
Dryden, x. 524, tr., 526, 530, 540.
Du Moulin, x. 409.
Duns Scotus, x. 501, 587, 589.
Durandus, ii. 369; x. 46, 501, 550; xi. 22; xii. 130; xiii. 18; xiv. 439.
Durel, xvi. 278.

Ebion, xii. 13, 16, 72.
Ecebolius, xiii. 447.
Eckius, viii. 178; xvi. 455.
Edward, laws of, xiv. 377.
Edward VI., statutes, xiii. 390.
Eleutherius, viii. 26; xiv. 396.
Elias Levita, xvi. 288, 384, 392, 415.
Elizabeth, laws of, xiii. 391, 392, 591; xiv. 377.
Elmacinus, xiii. 147.
Empedocles, xii. 97.
Enjedinus, xii. 31, 142, 172, 289.
Ennius, xii. 593.
Ennodius, i. 17.
Ephodius, xvi. 399.
Ephraim Syrus, i. 14.
Epicharmus, xii. 525.
Epictetus, vi. 33; xii. 107; xiii. 281.
Epicureans, vii. 129.
Epimenides, xii. 45.
Epiphanius, i. 7, 22; ii. 382; iii. 132; vii. 69; viii. 45, 177; x. 150, 536; xii. 12, 13, 82, 99, 106, 337, 373; xiv. 223, 227, 236, 436, 437, 479; xv. 307, 308, 354, 415, 438, 442; xvi. 357.
Episcopius, iv. 145; v. 108, 319; vii. 74; x. 16, 21, 26, 30, 50, 52, 56, 61, 77, 104, 108, 122, 585; xii. 49, 85, 137, 183, 194, 612.
Epistol. ad Walach. (by Episcopius), x. 94, 124.
Eques. Polon. Vita Faust. Socin., xii. 20, 25, 26, 31, 35.
Erasmus, iii. 21; v. 323; vii. 11, *f*; viii. 44, 257; x. 422, 538; xi. 218, 431; xii. 9, 259, 281, 289, 297, 307, 376, 636; xiv. 118, 315, 421; xvi. 60, 284, 285, 287, 290, 362, 367.
Erasmus, Johannes, xii. 232.
Erastus, xvi. 108, 117.
Essenius, ii. 369; xii. 27, 345, 638.
Estius, v. 348.
"Ethiopic New Testament," vii. 12; xvi. 418.
Eudoxius, xv. 260.
Eugubinus de Prima Philos., xii. 70.
Eunomians, xiii. 565.
Euripides, ii. 28, 94, 446; x. 495, 496, 497, 518, 530, 532, 533, 536; xiv. 5.
Eusebius, i. 7, 14, 16, 19, 23; iii. 127; v. 177, 387; vii. 67; viii. 9, 17, 65, 110, 171, 185, 187, 194, 255, 274, 531; x. 112, 422, 530; xi. 24, 27, 28, 29, 33, 55; xii. 13, 82; xiii. 7, 43, 149; xiv. 175, 226, 234, 289, 290, 437, 447; xv. 22, 201, 203, 215, 216, 260, 282, 290, 296, 307, 308, 354, 367, 414, 435; xvi 377, 378, 389, 431, 432.
Eustathius, iv. 215; x. 527; xv. 415, *f*; xvi. 266.
Eutropius, viii. 187.
Eutyches Archimandrita, i. 11, 15, 229.
Evagrius, viii. 65; xii. 76.
Eyeres, xii. 596.
Eyre, xvi. 289.

Fagius, Paulus, xvi. 288, 455.
Familists, xi. 383; xii. 205.
Faustus, xi. 67.
Ferorariensis, x. 501.
Ferrarius, xvi. 285, 373.
Ferrius, x. 23; xii. 130.
Ferus (Johan.), iii. 244, 336.
Festus Hommius, x. 7.
Feuardentius, v. 196; xvi. 431.
"Fiat Lux," xiv. 11–172.
"Fides Divina," xvi. 289, 348. See also Ward.
Firmianus, x. 542.
Firmicus, xii. 107.
Flacius Illyricus, viii. 54; xiii. 361; xvi. 372.
Flodoardus, xiii. 150.
Florus, xi. 67; xii. 486.
Formalists, xi. 383.
Forsterus, xii. 477.
Francis, x. 531, 550.
Franken, xii. 31, 41, 376, 394, 395, 396.
Franzius, ii. 369; xii. 40, 252, 456.
Fulgentius, i. 15; iii. 220, 325; viii. 14; x. 432; xi. 61, 66, 431.
Fuller, xvi. 289, 362.
Funckius Com., viii. 17.

Gabriel, v. 12.
Galen, xi. 202.
Galgacus, xiv. 31.
Gelasius, xi. 61.
Gellius, Au., xii. 437.
Gemara, xvi. 284.
Genebrard, xii. 42; xvi. 361, 373, 380, 455.
Geoffrey of Monmouth, xiv. 396.
Gerardus, xvi. 285, 372, 455.
Gerhard, xiii. 286.
Gerson, xiv. 265, 439.
Gesteranus, in Syn. Conf., x. 84, 87.
Giffard, xii. 636.
Gildas, viii. 32; xiv. 100, 210, 332.
Gitichius, x. 506; xii. 27, 345.
Glassius, xvi. 285, 289, 360, 364, 372, 393.
Gnapheus, xv. 260.
Gnostics, v. 386, 389.
"God's Love to Mankind," x. 61.
Gomarus, xii. 289; xvi. 289, 455.
Goodman, Dr, vii. 74, *f*.
Goodwin, John, xi., throughout the vol.
Goodwin, Thomas, iii. 80; x. 494.
Gotteschalcus, xi. 67.
Gramond. Hist. Gal., xii. 23, 495.
Gratian, xi. 68.
Greenham, xi. 483, 487.
Gregorius Neo-Cæsariensis, xvi. 433.
Gregory, xiv. 105; xv. 26.
Gregory de Valentia, iv. 115; viii. 35, 96, 165; xiii. 414; xiv. 216, 447; xvi. 285, 372.
Gregory Nazianzen, i. 10, 15, 21; ii. 10, 18, 114; viii. 61; x. 7; xi. 24; xii. 66, 344, 380; xiii. 363; xvi. 95.
Gregory Nyssen, iii. 94; v. 36.
Gregory of Rome (Greg. the Great, Greg. I.), iii. 318; v. 236; viii. 184; x. 48; xi. 67; xiii. 9, 30; xiv. 236, 256; xv. 20, 28.
Gregory VII., Pope, xiv. 389, 390; xv. 241.
Gregory, the monk, xiv. 431.
Grevinchovius, x. 15, 17, 21, 50, 55, 56, 61, 67, 95, 96, 99, 100, 123, 124, 125, 129, 132.
Grotius, ii. 156, 361; iii. 34; v. 182, 183, 201, 211; viii. 112, 252; x. 268, 272, 351, 380, 425, 443, 444, 447, 448, 449, 450, 451, 569; xi. 65; xii. 27, 49, 111, 172, 176, 187, 188, 192, 196, 199, 204, 216, 230, 242, 245, 254, 259, 262, 268, 269, 277, 279, 281,

282, 292, 297, 304, 306, 308, 312, 313, 314, 345, 350, 376, 438, 458–485, 524, 527, 609, 619 to end of vol.; xiii. 541; xv. 13; xvi. 117, 118, 277, 289, 290, 303, 362, 388, 421, 433.

Hadrian, ii. 86; xiv. 203, 431, 433, 434.
Hakkadosh, Rab. Judah, xiv. 325, *f.*
Halensis, i. 23.
Hall, xi. 497; xiii. 292.
Hammond, ii. 348; v. 182, 183; xi. 27, 36–55; xii. 8, 10; xiii. 126, 175; xvi. 117.
Hanstelius, xvi. 285.
Hassret, xvi. 372.
Hegesippus, vii. 67; xi. 25; xiii. 149; xiv. 175.
Heinsius, xvi. 289, 362.
Helvicus, xvi. 455.
Henricus d'Erfordia, xiv. 396.
Heraldus, xi. 323.
Hermannus, xiv. 353.
Herodian, xvi. 120.
Herodotus, ii. 451; x. 529; xii. 420.
Hesiod, x. 518, 541; xiv. 186.
Hesychius, iv. 215; xvi. 303.
Heyl., Hist. of Presb., xv. 66.
Hilary, i. 7; ii. 20; iii. 26, 118, 432; xi. 66, 431; xii. 13, 397; xiii. 564; xv. 57, 214.
Hilcot, v. 12; xi. 70.
Hillel, Rabbi, xii. 316.
Hincmarus, xii. 297, 298.
Hippocrates, xii. 59, 126; xiv. 306.
"Hist. Eccles. Sclavon.," xii. 17.
"History of Reformation in Scotland," viii. 181.
Ho, v. 205.
Hoard, x. 19.
Hobart, Chief-Justice, xiii. 330, 538; xv. 434, *f.*
Homer, ii. 84, 280; iii. 136; viii. 6, 57, 112; x. 22, 50, 433, 498, 524, 529, 536; xii. 124, 521; xiii. 360, 414; xiv. 132, 192, 197, 220; xvi. 486.
Hooker, ii. 280, 320, 326, 348; xiii. 20.
Hooker (of New England), xiii. 248.
Hoornbeek, xii. 18, 20; xvi. 287, 455.
Horace, ii. 95, 116; iv. 175; v. 66; viii. 44, 53; x. 155, 477, n., 485, 501, 521, 528, 530, 531, 550; xi. 11, 14, 15, 87, 171, 176, 580; xii. 436, 594; xiii. 358, 386, 405; xiv. 8, 13, 37, 52, 72, 176, 183, 184, 193, 208, 211, 218, *f.* 244, 267, 283, 311, 317, 341, 346; xv. 200, 210, 364; xvi. 488, 490, 496, 506, 512.
Horne, xii. 10.
Hosius, v. 40; viii. 178; xiv. 353, 390; xvi. 454.
Hostiensis, xiv. 389.
Hotchkis, v. 42, 268.
Hottinger, xii. 76; xvi. 378.
Huberus, xii. 26.
Hugo de Victore, xiii. 130.
Hulsius, xii. 456, 457; xvi. 381.
Hunnius, xii. 637.
Huntlæus, Gordonius (Huntley the Jesuit), xvi. 285, 366, 372.
Hutterus, v. 134.

"Ignatii Vita," ii. 137.
Ignatius, i. 6; viii. 10, 64, 171, 183, 184; x. 112, 422, 433; xi. 28, 34, 35, 36, 41, 45, 47, 57; xiii. 563; xv. 22, 290, 291, 292; xvi. 69.
Illyricus. See Flacius.
"Imp. Sum. Pot. circa Sacra," xvi. 107.
"Institut., lib. iii. de Oblig. ex Consensu," xii. 498, 614.
Irenæus, i. 20, 23, 24, 25; v. 176, 386; vii. 68; viii. 10, 118, 171, 183; x. 150; xii. 12, 75, 82; xiii. 150; xiv. 226, 236, 402, 436; xv. 153, 282, 367; xvi. 263, *ff.*
Isidore, xiv. 228; xv. 26.
Isocrates, xiii. 412.
"Italian version of Scriptures," xvi. 116.

Jackson, ii. 348; v. 106; x. 17.
Jacobus a Porta, xii. 289.
Jacomb, v. 338.
James, King, xiii. 454; Statutes, xiii. 391.
James the younger, Liturgy ascribed to, xv. 27.
Jansenians, xii. 560; xiii. 115.
Jansenius, xiv. 315.
Jerome, i. 10, 17, 19, 27; ii. 93, 137; iii. 51, 53, 127, 130, 134, 136, 139, 140, 258, 267, 313; iv. 214, 228; v. 17, 22, 323, 387; vi. 330, 382, 608; viii. 530, 531, 533; x. 24, 32, 114, 152, 536; xi. 25, 26, 28, 33; xii. 13, 433; xiii. 92, 290, 474; xiv. 234, 437, 468; xv. 203; xvi. 98, 358, 369, 389, 395, 397, 405, 414, 416, 417, 418.
Jesuits, xii. 560; xiii. 115;—Letters, xv. 219.
Jewel, xi. 497.
Jews, v. 273, 285, 338, *ff*, vi. 351; vii. 85, 153, 206, 211, 250; xiv. 358.
Jobius, iii. 94, 190.
Johannes Isaac, xvi. 361, 371, 373, 387.
John, Patriarch, xiv. 431.
Jonathan, xvi. 360, 387.
Jornandes, x. 526.
Josephus, viii. 174, 177, 274; x. 68, 528, 536; xii. 366, 423; xiii. 11; xiv. 154; xvi. 354, 360, 389, 397, 416.
Josephus de Voisin, xvi. 278, 378, 392.
Judah Chiug, Rabbi, xvi. 375, 399.
Jul. Capitol., viii. 186.
Julian, Emperor, vii. 48.
Julianus, bishop of Eclanum, xi. 523.
Julius Petronellus, xii. 125.
Julius Pollux, iv. 215; xvi. 266.
Junius, xvi. 288, 455.
Junius, Franciscus, xi. 25; xii. 26, 217, 443, 472, 473, 474, 475, 478; xvi. 371.
Junius, Johannes, xii. 150, 289.
Justin, historian, xvi. 67.
Justin Martyr, ii. 114; iii. 55, 117, 122; iv. 213; v. 36, 50; vii. 68; viii. 23, 176, 603; xii. 199, 203, 381; xiii. 147, 150, 286, 563; xiv. 176, 236, 413, 435; xv. 22, 23, 203, 204, 293–296, 354, 371; xvi. 115, 362, 367, 377, 429, 430.
"Jus Divinum Ministerii [Evangelici] Anglicani," xiii. 174, 193, 197.
"Jus Gregor.," xii. 609.
"Justificatio Paulina," v. 163.
Justinian, i. 16; laws of, xiv. 384
Juvenal, ii. 95, 450; iii. 136; viii. 44, 56; x. 150; xi. 54, 248; xii. 133; xiii. 288, 293, 355, 539; xiv. 98, 122, 185, 193, 199, 242, 395, 472; xvi. 179.

Kendall, xi. 123.
Keslerus, xii. 51.
Kessæus, xii. 352.
Kimchi, viii. 478; xii. 242, 457, 459, 468; xvi. 399.

Lactantius, i. 13; ii. 95; vii. 68; viii. 54, 81, 184; x. 497, xi. 494; xii. 98, 106; xiii. 563; xiv. 215, 236, 437, 438; xv. 308.
Lætus, xii. 41.
Lampridius, xiv. 396, 456.
Lasitius, xiii. 288.
"Latin translation" (old), v. 36.
"Laws of the Twelve Tables," xii. 535
Le Blanc (Ludovicus), v. 67, 75, 130.
Le Jay, Michael, xvi. 286, 369.
Leo, i. 14, 16, 23; v. 176, 333; viii. 186; xi. 60; xii. 75; xv. 22.
Leontius, xiv. 455.
Leontius Byzantinus, iii. 161; xii. 67.
Levi Ben Gerson, iii. 146.
"Lex Julia," xvi. 255.
Lightfoot, xii. 365; xvi. 375, 379, 383.
Limborch, vii. 74.
Lindanus, xv. 20; xvi. 285, 371.

Lipman, xii. 457.
Lipsius, x. 110 ; xii. 486.
Lismaninus, xii. 17, 19.
"Liturgia Syriaca," xii. 291.
Livy, iv. 257, 258; v. 198; xii. 499, 535; xiv. 179, 180; xv. 198.
Lombard. See Peter.
Lotharius, laws of, xiv. 384.
Lubbertus, ii. 369; x. 488, 585, 595–602; xii. 26, 345 ; xvi. 285.
Lucan, viii. 55 ; x. 526, 528 ; xii. 97.
Lucas Brugensis, xvi. 366, 421.
Lucian, iii. 39 ; vi. 33 ; viii. 641, *f* ; xi. 154 ; xiii. 155, 292, 360, 474; xiv. 190, 194, 221, 325, 435 ; xvi. 274, 432.
Lucilius, xiv. 215.
Lucius, ii. 369; x. 506 ; xii. 27, 345 ; xv. 260.
Lucretius, v. 373 ; xiii. 380, 461.
Ludovic., Roman consul, xii. 610.
Ludovicus (son of Charles the Great), laws of, xiv. 384.
Ludovicus Vives, xvi. 285.
Luther, ii. 137, 320 ; v. 37, 67, 348 ; viii. 35, 44, 61, 67 ; x. 11 ; xiii. 302.
Lutherans, v. 84 ; viii. 25 ; x. 379 ; xiii. 94, 268.
Lyra, xii. 119.

M—— S——, x. 313.
Macarius, xi. 58.
2 Maccabees, ix. 12 ; xii. 291 ; xvi. 354.
Maccovius, x. 471, 488, 583, 586, 589, 593 ; xii. 28.
Macedonius, xii. 72 ; xv. 260.
Macrobius, ii. 167; xiv. 455.
Mæcenas, xiii 192.
Maimonides, iii. 146 ; v. 273 ; xii. 97, 103, 120, 316 ; xvi. 356, 378, 382, 432, 433, 453.
Major, xii. 130.
Major, Georgius, xiii. 361.
Malderus, xiv. 265.
Maldonate, iv. 401; viii. 251; xii. 187.
Manasseh Ben Israel, xii. 119, 456.
Manichees, vii. 69 ; xii. 12 ; xiii. 565.
Marca, xiv. 390.
"Marcellini Vita," xiv. 234.
Marcion, ii. 381; x. 151; xii. 12, 16.
Marcionites, vii. 69.
Marcus, xii. 12, 16.
Maresius, ii. 369 ; xii. 7, 20, 43.
Marsilius, xiii. 126.
Marsilius of Padua, xiv. 392.
Martial., xii. 471.
Martines de Ripalda, xii. 130.
Martinius, ii. 369.
Martinus, Raymundus, xii. 127, 316, 318, 337, 457; xvi. 381, 387, 455.
Martinus Turonensis, xiv. 228.
Martyr. See Peter.
Martyr, iv. 229.
Masius, xvi. 285, 373, 418.
Masora, xvi. 284, 332, 361.
Masoretes, xvi. 368.
Massilienses (church of Massilia), xi. 67.
Mauricius (Cappadox), x. 521.
Maxentius, i. 16.
Maximilian, Emperor, xiii. 499, 565.
Maximus Tyrius, xii. 125.
Mede, viii. 8 ; xvi. 117, 118, 289.
Meir, Rabbi, xiii. 412.
Meisnerus, ii. 369 ; xii. 382.
Melchior Canus, iv. 114; viii. 516 ; xiv. 325 ; xvi. 372.
Menander, xii. 591, 592 ; xiv. 238.
Mendoza, Alphonsus de, xii. 139.
Mendoza, Franciscus de, xii. 45.
Menochius, xii. 610.
Mercerus, ii. 32, 50, 126, 128, 157; xii. 245, 477; xvi. 360, 361.
Mersennus, x. 496, 538 ; xvi. 372.
Messiah Ben Joseph, xvi. 388.
Mestrezat, v. 75 ; xvi. 348.
Minutius, Felix, viii. 176, 177, 197 ; xii. 106 ; xiv. 437, 477.
Mishna, xiv. 326 ; xvi. 284.
Mohammed, ii. 391 ; vii. 205.
Mohammedans, vii. 120 ; xvi. 35.
Molinæus, x. 89, 488 ; xvi. 348.
Molinists, xii. 560 ; xiii. 115.
Monophysites, i. 15.
Monothelites, i. 15.
Montacutus, v. 176 ; viii. 17; xi. 30, 487.
More, x. 148, 152, 192, 198, 221, 222, 230, 247, 339, 340, 342, 347, 349, 354, 355, 356, 358, 415.
Morinus, xvi. 285, 286, 288, 289, 291, 292, 326, 351, 355, 356, 357, 362, 368, 369, 371, 372, 375, 394, 398, 399, 402, 404, 413, 420.
Mornæus, viii. 539.
Morton, xi. 497.
Moscorovius, x. 506 ; xii. 40, 59.
Mullerus, xvi. 455.
Munster, xvi. 115, 116, 288, 397, 417, 455.
Muscatus, xvi. 399.
Musculus, x. 488 ; xi. 489, 636 ; xv. 13 ; xvi. 277.

Nævius, xii. 616.
Naunius, xii. 486.
Navaret, xi. 490.
Nemesius, iv. 112.
Nestorius, i. 11, 12, 230.
Neuserus, xii. 43.
Nicephorus, viii. 26 ; xii. 69, 76.
Nicholas, Pope, xiii. 289.
Nicholas II., Pope, xiv. 390.
Nicostratus, ii. 115.
Niemojevius, xii. 39, 379, 402.
Nilus, xiv. 472.
Novatian, iii. 25, 27 ; vii. 13, *ff*.
Novatians, vii. 15, 16, 39 ; xv. 368, 417 ; xvi. 181.
Novatus, vii. 14.

Occam, iii. 309.
Ochinus, xii. 25, 262, 289, 402.
Œcumenius, iv. 228 ; v. 353 ; viii. 10, 252 ; xi. 67; xiv. 382, 421.
Oleaster, ii. 443.
Onkelos, xvi. 360.
Onuphrius Panvinus, xiv. 289, 293.
Optatus, xv. 417.
Origen, i. 6 ; ii. 10 ; iii. 123, 139, 141, 219 ; iv. 228, 235 ; v. 176, 323, 326, 386 ; vii. 14, 68, 69, 75 ; viii. 10, 26 ; xii. 106, 130, 387 ; xiii. 42, 286, 563 ; xiv. 15, 176, 177, 236, 290, 332, 435, 436, 437, 438, 479 ; xv. 22, 23, 297, 299 ; xvi. 69, 357, 369, 397, 414.
Orosius, x. 115 ; xi. 61 ; xvi. 378.
Orpheus, x. 518.
Osiander, i. 23 ; v. 11, 60, 61.
Ostorodius, x. 506 ; xii. 38, 40, 178, 239, 379, 412, 599.
Otho, ii. 446.
Ovid, x. 18, 154 ; xii. 121 ; xiii. 5 ; xiv. 380.

Pagninus, ii. 25 ; xii. 468 ; xvi. 287, 300, 361.
Palæologus, xii. 41, 376.
Paludamus, x. 501.
Pamelius, xv. 20.
Panormitanus, xiv. 389.
Pansa, xii. 106.
"Pap. Accom.," xiii. 123.
Papalins, xiii. 142.
Papinius, xiii. 414. See Statius.
Papists, or Romanists, or Church of Rome, v. 61, 62, 63, *ff*, 71, 80, 84, 103, 104, 134, 137, 140, 155, 165, 173, 174, 183, 205, 206, 208, 224, 283, 302, 351, 361, 362, 372, 454 ; vi. 16, 17, 18, 34, 39, 61, 72, 321,

350, *f*; vii. 14, 57, 85, *f*, 110, 118, *ff*, 152, 155, 165, *ff*, 175, 182, *f*, 192, 194, 198, *f*, 226, 300, 424, 473, 523, 550; viii. 25, 54, 167, 501, *f*, 512, 513, 524, *f*, 532, *ff*, 551, *ff*; ix. 25, 60, 86, 333, 373, 451, 524; x. 61, 381; xi. 46, 78, 306, 383, 388, 400, 521, 609; xii. 44, 574; xiii. 27, 40, 94, 99, 109, 110, 115, 117, 131, 138, 139, 149, 153, 156, 162, 169, 268, 375, 408; xiv. 24; xv. 131, 207; xvi. 14, 32, 285, 362, 367, 372, 420.
Paracelsus, xii. 206.
Paræus, ii. 369; viii. 252; x. 76, 488, 506; xi. 655; xii. 27.
"Parecbola Statutorum Acad. Oxon.," xvi. 507.
Parker, iii. 121, 213, 227, 243; xiii. 344.
Pasor, xi. 34.
Paterculus, xii. 50.
Paulus ad Edict, etc., xii. 610.
Paulus Diaconus, viii. 179.
Paulus Samosatenus, ii. 375, 398; xii. 13, 14, 16, 72; xv. 123, 260.
Pelagians and Pelagianism, iii. 308, 310; v. 20, 22, 64, 210, 289, 324, 325; vii. 70, 76, *ff*, 158, 169; x. 61, 275, 381, 432, 585; xi. 24, 60, 61, 78, 430.
Pelagius, v. 19, 289, 323; x. 7, 115, 131; xi. 16, 523, 554; xiv. 389; xv. 74.
Pemble, xii. 602, 614.
Pererius, xi. 26.
Perkins, x. 409; xi. 487, 490, 491.
Perron, Cardinal, xvi. 348.
"Persian New Testament," xvi. 418.
Persius, ii. 56, 112; x. 150; xi. 618; xiii. 393, 521; xiv. 166, 269, 323, 344, 345, 455, 457, 461.
Pesantius in Thom., x. 467, 498, 501.
Petavius, xii. 9.
Peter Lombard, i. 224, n.; x. 498; xi. 37.
Peter Martyr, viii. 19; x. 529, 536; xi. 175, 243, 489, 524.
Petilianus, xiv. 223.
Petrus Cluniacensis, xiv. 332.
Petrus Diaconus, i. 15.
Petrus Galatinus, i. 23; xii. 316, 318, 457, 497; xvi. 287, 301, 361, 372, 380, 381, 455.
Peuschelius, xii. 41.
Pharisees, v. 248, 285, 287, 289, 299, 302; vi. 425; vii. 155, 167, 428, *f*; xiv. 337.
Phavorinus, iv. 215; x. 542; xvi. 266.
Philastrius, vii. 69; xii. 12.
Philemon, ii. 95.
Philo, x. 14, 530, 531; xi. 56, 552; xii. 97, 106, 110, 632, 634; xvi. 149, 416, 432, 433.
Photinianism, vii. 75.
Photinians, xiii. 565.
Photinus, ii. 375, 398; xii. 13, 16, 72, 633, 634.
Pietro della Valle, xvi. 388.
Pighius, v. 12, 38, 68; xiv. 352; xvi. 204, 454.
Pindar, viii. 48.
Pineda, xvi. 285, 373.
Pintus, xvi. 372.
Piscator, ii. 159, 369; v. 334, *f*; viii. 13, 251; x. 409, 488, 585, 587, 593, 603-607.
Placæus, ii. 369; xvi. 432.
Platina, xiv. 390, 403, 404; xv. 201.
Plato, ii. 105, 112; x. 152, 454, n.; xii. 60, 102, 107, 124, 142, 157, 301, 508, 584; xiii. 359; xiv. 231; xvi. 432.
Platonici, xvi. 429, 431, 433.
Platonics, xii. 634.
Platonists, x. 519.
Plautus, x. 521, 524; xi. 154; xii. 62, 486, 604, 610, 616, 629; xiii. 348, 358, 459; xiv. 156, 190, 350.
Pliny, ii. 139, 167; v. 166; viii. 111; xvi. 395.
Pliny, younger, viii. 186; xii. 203; xiii. 571; xiv. 435; xv. 354.
Plotinus, ii. 80; iii. 129; iv. 320; x. 30.
Plutarch, viii. 9, 44, 45, 73; x. 497, 519, 528; xi. 154; xii. 98, 291, 436, 437, 521, 535; xiii. 31, 359; xiv. 221.
Pococke, xvi. 291, 349, 362, 410, 411.
Polandus, v. 17.
Polanus, xiii. 262; xvi. 372.
Polinburgh, vii. 74.
Pollux, Julius, iv. 215.
Polybius, xii. 499.
Polycarpus, viii. 183; xi. 36; xv. 223.
Polycrates, xv. 367.
Polydore Virgil, xiv. 219.
Ponz. de Lamiis, xii. 609.
Pope, x. 520, n.; 524, n., 529.
Popp. August. Port., x. 131.
Porchetus, xvi. 381
Porchetus de Sylvaticis, xvi. 455.
Porphyrius, ii. 49; x. 527, 530.
Posidonius, xii. 103, 107; xv. 123.
Possevinus, xii. 22, 42.
Postellus, xvi. 391.
Prelatists, xiii. 268.
Preston, xi. 487.
Prideaux, xi. 497, 618, 623; xii. 27; xvi. 288.
Proclus, ii. 24; xii. 202.
Procopius, x. 526; xiv. 207.
Prosperus, ii. 33; iii. 267, 293, 310, 313, 314, 315, 316, 336; v. 178; viii. 6, 14, 19, 79, 80, 99, 105, 266; x. 62, 103, 107, 112, 115, 119, 424, 432; xi. 60, 61, 62, 66, 67, 431; xiv. 228.
Pseudo-Clemens, xi. 35.
Ptolemæus, xii. 12.
Puccius, xii. 29.
Puritans, xi. 495, 496.
Pythagoras, xii. 45.

"Quæstiones ad Orthodoxos," xv. 22.
Quakers, ii. 399; iii. 66; xii. 12; xvi. 292, 427-476.
Quintilian, v. 198; xii. 620.
Quintus Curtius, x. 526.
Quodlibetarians, v. 12.

Rabanus, xv. 20.
Rabbins, v. 49.
"Racovian Catechism," x. 561; xii. 87, 155, (Interpr. Lect. Prefat.), xii. 205, 206, 379, 384, 412, 425, *f*, 542, 600.
Radulphus Cevallerius, xvi. 371.
Radulphus Tangrensis, xv. 20.
Ræmundus, xii. 32, 33.
Rainoldus, viii. 165.
Raphael de Torre, xiv. 438.
Ravenspergerus, xii. 27.
Raymundus, xvi. 287, 301.
"Redemption Redeemed," xi. 87.
Reformatists, xiii. 94.
Regenvolscius, xii. 18, 21, 23, 32, 33, 41; xiii. 288.
Remedia cont. Gravam. Natio. German., viii. 44.
Remonstrantium Apologia, x. 16, 17, 18, 21, 22, 25, 26, 30, 31, 35, 39, 43, 50, 55, 58, 61, 67, 70, 72, 73, 74, 75, 76, 78, 82, 87, 99, 100, 101, 102, 103, 104, 105, 107, 108, 109, 113, 118, 124, 129, 132; xii. 612.
Remonst. Coll. Hag., x. 50, 55, 57, 60, 67, 84, 96, 100, 104; xi. 78, 107. 216, 219.
Remonstran. Confessio, x. 25, 38, 39, 56.
Remonst. Decla. Sent. in Syn., x. 17, 26, 123, 125, 129, 132; xi. 82, 86, 103, 107, 154.
Remonst. Defens. Sent. in Act. Syn., x. 38, 50.
Remonst. Scrip. Syn., x. 26, 317; xi. 78, 86, 200, 201, 202.
Rem. Synod., x. 52, 96, 117, 125, 131, 317, 343; xi. 82, 91, 103, 107, 439.
Remonstrants, x. 366, 404; xi. 430, 495, 584; xiii. 47, 294.
Reuchlinus, xvi. 287, 380, 381.
Reynolds, x. 76; xi. 483, 487; xii. 636; xvi 285.
Reynoldus, xvi. 380, 455.
"Rhemish New Testament," vii. 12; x. 287; xiv. 201.

Rhetorfortis, x. 23.
Rivetus, ii. 369 ; x. 422, 428 ; xii. 111, 151 ; xvi. 285, 288, 348, 361, 455.
Rogers, xi. 487.
Rollocus, viii. 251.
Rome's Masterpicce, viii. 30.
Ronembergius, xii. 37.
"Rosch Haschana," xii. 129.
"Royal Favourite," viii. 30.
Ruben, Rabbi, xii. 237, 497.
Rufinus, viii. 65, 185 ; xiv. 293.
Rupertus, i. 23.
Rupertus Titiensis, xv. 20.
Rutherford, x. 154, 347, 409, 507, 539, 562, 607–618 ; xii. 602 ; xiii. 49.
Ruvio, xii. 139.

Saadias Gaon, xii. 242, 458 ; xvi. 411.
Sabellians, xii. 47.
Sabellicus, xiv. 332.
Salinarius, Abraham, ii. 369.
Sallust, ii. 105 ; iii. 58; xii. 434, 435, 436, 587.
Salmasius, xi. 29, 323, 486.
Salmeron, xvi. 372.
Salvian, viii. 61, 170, 182 ; xiv. 100, 270, 399.
"Samaritan Pentateuch," xvi. 413.
Sanctius, viii. 8, 10.
Santesius, xv. 20.
Saravia, xvi. 117.
Sarpius (Fra Paolo Sarpi), xiii. 330, 331 ; xiv. 392 ; xvi. 147.
Sarricius, xii. 22.
Saumur, Professors of, x. 488.
Sayrus, xii. 609.
Scaliger, viii. 16 ; x. 540 ; xii. 50, 61 ; xvi. 287, 289, 416.
Scaliger, Josephus, xvi. 455.
Scapula, xvi. 207.
Schickardus, xvi. 380.
Schioppius, xiv. 390.
Schlichtingius, ii. 349, 361 ; iii. 73, 79, 81, 82, 85, 173 ; v. 48, 108, 174, 182, 186 ; x. 506 ; xii. 40, 59, 87, 179, 182, 379, 382 ; xii. 412, 598, 599, 600.
Schlusselburgius, xii. 24, 42.
Schmidt, iii. 195.
Schol. in Sophoclem, xvi. 149.
Scholiasts, Greek, v. 348 ; xii. 175.
Schoolmen, x. 498, 500.
Scotus, i. 23 ; iii. 399 ; xii. 150.
Scultetus, x. 422 ; xvi. 117, 118.
Seder Olam, x. 531, n.
Seidelius, xii. 33, 551 ; xiii. 418.
Seneca, ii. 87, 94, 149, 447 ; iii. 36 ; v. 23, 166 ; vi. 33 ; viii. 108, 125, 126 ; x. 30, 150, 496, 497, 541, 542 ; xii. 97, 107, 128, 438.
Seneca (Tragedian), xii. 435, 455.
Sententiarists, v. 12.
Septuagint, vi. 380, 382, 608, 641 ; ix. 202 ; xii. 235, 461, 462, 468, 469, 472, 474, 475, 478, 479, 631, 632 ; xiv. 421 ; xvi. 61, 357, 416.
Sergius, xv. 260.
Servius, xii. 98, 435, 500.
Severus, xv. 260.
Sherlock, William, ii. 276.
Shobet Jehuda, xvi. 382.
Sibbs, xi. 487.
Sigibert, xi. 67 ; xiv. 403, 404.
Sigonius, xiv. 207, 404.
Silius, xiv. 455.
Simeon de Muis, xvi. 268, 288, 290, 361.
Simeon, Rabbi, xii. 457.
Simon Magus, ii. 374 ; v. 389 ; vi. 26 ; xii. 16.
"Six Articles," xiii. 408.
Sixtus Senensis, xiii. 11 ; xvi. 373.
Sleidan, viii. 66, 142, 151 ; x. 6.
Smalcius, v. 108 ; x. 506 ; xii. 6, 28, 38, 40, 41, 59, 87, 117, 131, 154, 155, 180, 182, 268, 353, 354, 357, 377, 379, 412, 598, 600, 628, 629.
Smiglecius, xii. 40, 354.
Soave, Pietro, xv. 121. See Sarpi.
Socinians, ii. 394, *ff*, 399, 401, 402 ; iii. 68 ; v. 49, 52, *ff*, 57. 64, 71, 89, 103, 108, 124, 138, 153, 164, 165, 174, 175 ; v. 182, 196, 207, 210, 213, 224, 252, 280, 283, 289, 337, 372 ; vii. 79, 130, *ff*, 158 ; ix. 25 ; x. 425, 523, 556, 561, 562, 563, 572, 579, 585, 599, 608 ; xi. 78, 161, 383, 609, 631 ; xii. 507, 574 ; xv. 335 ; xvi. 117.
Socinus, i. 353 ; ii. 368, 375, 392 ; v. 48, 55, 58, 60, 108, 153, 163, 201, 211, 215, 253, 254, 256, 259, 261, 270, 280, 314, 322, 344, 346, 373 ; x. 262, 265, 506, 507, 522, 567, 569–583 ; xi. 87, 139, 214, 218, 554 ; xii. 13, 15, 19, 21, 25, 26, 29, 30, and throughout the treatise ; 116, 182, 232, 252, 289, 335, 383, 384, 385, 402, 412, 510, 521, 527, 528, 551, 583, 597, 598, 599, 600, 621, 622, 625, 626, 628, 629 ; xvi. 388.
Socinus, Lælius, xii. 20, 262, 289.
Socrates, xiv. 210.
Socrates (Histor.), vii. 14 ; viii. 65, 66, 179, 185, 186, 193, 194 ; xii. 13, 67, 69, 76, 82, 106 ; xiii. 142, 324, 563, 565 ; xiv. 384 ; xv. 48, 148, 367, 414, 415, 416.
Solifidians, v. 73.
Solomon, Rabbi, xii. 337, 457 ; xvi. 360, 361.
Sophocles, xii. 82, 591, 592.
Sorbonnists, xiii. 115.
Sotus, x. 501.
Sozomen, viii. 65 ; xi. 26 ; xii. 67, 69, 106 ; xiii. 565 ; xiv. 234 ; xv. 216, 313, 416.
Spanheim, x. 409 ; xii. 130.
Spartianus, xiv. 396.
"Specimina" by the Leyden professors, xii. 612.
Sprigge, x. 425.
Squarcialupus, xii. 19, 36, 38.
Stalham, x. 154.
Staphylus, viii. 178, 206.
Stapleton, iv. 114, 115 ; viii. 206, 512, 515, 519 ; xvi. 457.
Statius, ii. 451 ; xi. 14 ; xiii. 414 ; xiv. 192, 256, 455.
Statorius, xii. 17, 37.
Statutes 2 and 3 Edward VI., xiii. 390.
Stegmannus, ii. 369 ; xii. 116.
Stephens, v. 134 ; xii. 281 ; xvi. 267, 290, 303, 362.
Stillingfleet, xiii. 306, 311, 312, 313, 316, 317, 318, 325, 329 ; xv. 189, 194, 200, 205, 217, 220, 377, and throughout the treatise.
Stobæus, xii. 102, 103, 106, 107, 126.
Stoics, vii. 129.
Strabo, viii. 175 ; xiv. 471.
Stubbes, xiii. 300.
Stuckius, xii. 402.
Suarez, v. 373 ; viii. 22 ; x. 464, 498, 501, *f*, 541, 542, 614 ; xi. 73 ; xii. 71 ; xiv. 201, 235, 447, 456.
Suave, Dr Paul, xiv. 392. See Sarpi.
Subcom. of Div., xiii. 198.
Suetonius, ii. 49 ; viii. 177, 186 ; x. 334, 496, 521, 524 ; xii. 435, 591 ; xiv. 396.
Suidas, xvi. 266, 267, 490.
Sulpicius Severus, viii. 44, 181 ; xiv. 227.
Summists, v. 12.
Sychet, xi. 70.
Sylvester a Pet. San. (Vita Bellarm.), xiv. 204.
Symmachus, xii. 631 ; xvi. 357.
"Syntagma Thesium, in Acad. Salmur.," viii. 520.
"Syriac New Testament," v. 134, 332 ; vii 11, *f*, 18 ; x. 380 ; xii. 218, 235, 281, 297, 298 ; xiii. 412 ; xiv. 421 ; xvi. 115, 116.

Tacitus, ii. 94 ; iii. 58 ; viii. 54, 177, 369 ; x. 526 ; xiii. 573 ; xiv. 31, 396, 455 ; xvi. 381.
Talmud, xvi. 379, 393.

Tanchum, Rabbi, xii. 317.
Targum, vi. 381.
Tarnovius, ii. 119, 369.
Tartaretus, ii. 369; xi. 70.
Tatian, iii. 134; vii. 68; xii. 12; xvi. 429, 431.
Taulerus, v. 37.
Terence, ii. 116, 648; v. 3; x 501; xi. 56; xii. 438, 486; xiii. 341; xiv. 107, 167, 188, 193, 194, 317; xvi. 481.
Tertullian, ii. 5, 7, 10, 114, 148, 199, 382; iii. 25, 26, 129; vi. 19; vii. 13, 14, 68, 127, 129; viii. 12, 26, 27, 35, 46, 47, 53, 78, 83, 85, 95, 96, 116, 126, 135, 140, 168, 174, 176, 184, 186, 187, 535; x. 150, 151, 154, 385, 433, 521, 539; xi. 28, 57, 494; xii. 12, 42, 62, 70, 95, 97, 133, 200, 609; xiii. 99, 151, 286, 303, 563; xiv. 216, 226, 234, 236, 316, 332, 413, 435, 436, 438, 448, 477, 478, 479; xv. 22, 23, 256, 267, 297, 308, 354; xvi. 67, 69, 115, 170, 336, 358, 378.
Testardus, x. 222, 230.
Themistius, vii. 191; viii. 186.
Theod. Dial. Ἀσυγχ., xii. 75.
Theodoretus, i. 23; iv. 228; v. 322; viii. 179, 196; x. 526, 529; xi. 33; xii. 69, 75, 99, 106, 113; xiv. 382, 436; xv. 313, 415, 416; xvi. 431.
Theodorus, Abbot, xiv. 432.
Theodorus of Myra, xiv. 434.
Theodosius, Bishop, xiv. 431.
Theodotion, xii. 631; xvi. 357.
Theodotus Byzantinus, xii. 72.
Theodotus Coriareus, ii. 375; xii. 13, 16.
Theognis, xii. 605.
Theophanes, viii. 64.
Theophilus, iii. 129; xvi. 431.
Theophrastus, viii. 10; x. 30.
Theophylact., iv. 228; v. 353; viii. 253; xii. 359; xiv. 297, 382.
Theorianus, i. 12.
Thomas Aquinas, i. 22; ii. 18, 24, 28, 158, 161, 369; v. 12; viii. 10, 23, 45, 105, 166, 167; x. 23, 24, 28, 31, 44, 45, 57, 73, 110, 275, 451, 454, 466, 477, 498, 501, 544; xi. 22, 70, 71, 72; xii. 71, 111, 130, 131; xiii. 18, 126, 127; xiv. 216, 235, 261, 439, 447; xvi. 432.
Thomson, xi. 78, 487.
Thuanus, v. 32; viii. 612; xiv. 202; xvi. 384.
Thucydides, ix. 323; xii. 291, *f*, 439; xiv. 221; xvi. 62.
Thyreus, xii. 22.
Thysius, ii. 369.
Tilenus, viii. 47, 167; x. 28.
Tindal, vii. 267; xvi. 61.
Tiresias, v. 67.
Tombs, xvi. 264.
Tostatus, iii. 142.
Tradelius, x. 506.
Trajan, xiv. 435; xv. 354.
Tremellius, viii. 257; xii. 298.
Trombet, xi. 70.
Turretinus, viii. 526.
Twelve Tables, laws of the, xii. 535.
Twisse, iv. 353; x. 23, 409, 488, 550, 551, 552, 553, 583-594, 595, 600, 601, 604, 608; xii. 602, 614.
" Tzemach David," xvi. 378.

Ulenbergius, v. 16.
Ulphilas, xiv. 468.
Ulpian, xii. 434.
Universalists, x. 205, 319, 325, 367, 414.
Ussher, ii. 338; xi. 31, 497; xvi. 289.

Valentinus, v. 389.
Valentinus Secundus, xii. 12.
Valerianus Magnus, xiii. 134, 482; xvi. 272, 438.
Vanini, xiv. 75, 267.
Vaninus (Atheist), xii. 495.
Varro, viii. 173; xi. 19, 20; xiii. 524.
Vaselius Groningen., xiv. 265.
Vasquez, v. 11, 60, 151, 166, 227, 373; viii. 22; x. 464; xii. 139; xiv. 235, 237, 439, 446, 447, 456.
Vatablus, ii. 443; xiv. 421; xvi. 60, 361.
Vechnerus, xii. 183.
Vedelius, xi. 30, 34.
Venator, x. 70, 81, 109, 114.
Victor of Rome, xiii. 563; xiv. 226.
Vienne and Lyons, churches of, Epistle to those of Asia, viii. 171.
Vincentius, viii. 44; xi. 67.
Vincentius Severinus, xiv. 265.
Virgil, ii. 105, 142, 165, 368, 446, 448; iii. 48, 84; iv. 257; v. 349; viii. 44, 55; x. 150, 154, 484, 524, 526, 530, 540; xi. 43, 173; xii. 97, 98, 402, 435, 500; xiii. 118, 216, 359, 361, 363, 383, 519, 537, 541; xiv. 169, 189, 198, 201, 209, 216, 220, 228, 232, 245, 256, 266, 311, 312, 313, 317, 325, 380, 386, 409; xvi. 431, 490, 501, 509.
Virunnius, xiv. 332.
Vives, xiv. 315; xvi. 285, 287.
Voetius, ii. 369; x. 496, 498, 507; xii. 9, 612; xvi. 361, 372.
Vogelius, xii. 41.
Voidovius, xii. 40, 178.
Volanus, xii. 19, 354.
Volkelius, x. 506, 565; xii. 40, 47, 85, 155, 182, 377, 379, 402, 403, 408, 412, 429, 598, 599, 628, 639.
Vorstius, x. 27, 29, 37, 43, 48, 351, 452, 603; xii. 88; xvi. 380.
Vossius, x. 443, 462, 488, 496, 497, 520, 540, 586, 590, 591; xi. 31, 65, 67; xii. 26, 27, 103.
Vulcat. in Avid. Cassio, xii. 486.
Vulgar (Vulgate), v. 134, 286; vi. 382, 608; vii. 12; x. 287, 334; xi. 19; xii. 254, 257, 279, 281, 296, 297, 420, 443, 459, 469, 472, 473, 474, 475, 481, 632; xiv. 415, 421; xvi. 115, 116.

Walæus, ii. 156, 369.
Walafridus Strabo, xv. 20.
Waldensis, viii. 178.
Walemburg, xiii. 164.
Wallis, xiii. 299.
Walton's Prolegomena, xvi. 302, 351, 352, 357, 372, 373, 384, 388, 400, 407, 412.
Ward, xvi. 334. See also pp. 289, 348, and "Fides Divina."
Weik, xii. 33.
Welsingius, x. 17, 21.
Whitaker, viii. 167, 205, 499; xi. 32, 483, 487; xv. 192; xvi. 285, 348, 372, 439, 455.
Whitgift, xiii. 20.
Wigelius, xii. 206.
Wilkins, xvi. 395.
Wilkinson, Dr Henry, xvi. 293.
" Wisdom, Book of," xii. 161, *f*.
Wolthius, xvi. 372.
Wower, xvi. 416.

Xenophanes, xii. 107.
Xenophon, ii. 113, 448; xii. 126, 521, 535; xiii. 359.
Ximenes, xvi. 369, 417.
Xiphilin, ii. 446.

Zanchius, ii. 20, 145; viii. 167; x. 7, 23, 24, 498; xi. 487; xii. 20, 21, 26, 187, 250, 262, 289; xiii. 5, 292.
Zarnovecius, xii. 26.
Zonaras, xiv. 230; xvi. 416.
Zuinglius, viii. 136; x. 110; xvi. 283.

END OF VOL. XVI.

WORKS OF JOHN CALVIN,

IN 51 VOLUMES, DEMY 8vo.

MESSRS CLARK beg respectfully to announce that the whole STOCK and COPYRIGHTS of the WORKS OF CALVIN, published by the Calvin Translation Society, are now their property, and that this valuable Series will be issued by them on the following very favourable terms :—

1. Complete Sets in 51 Volumes, Nine Guineas. (Original Subscription price about L.13.) The 'LETTERS,' edited by Dr BONNET, 2 vols., 10s. 6d. additional.
2. Complete Sets of Commentaries, 45 vols., L.7, 17s. 6d.
3. A *Selection* of Six Volumes (or more at the same proportion), for 21s., with the exception of the Institutes, 3 vols.
4. The INSTITUTES, 3 vols., 24s.
5. Any Separate Volume (except INSTITUTES), 6s.

THE CONTENTS OF THE SERIES ARE AS FOLLOW:—

	VOL.
Institutes of the Christian Religion,	3
Tracts on the Reformation,	3
Commentary on Genesis,	2
Harmony of the last Four Books of the Pentateuch,	4
Commentary on Joshua,	1
„ the Psalms,	5
„ Isaiah,	4
„ Jeremiah and Lamentations,	5
„ Ezekiel,	2
„ Daniel,	2
„ Hosea,	1
„ Joel, Amos, and Obadiah,	1
„ Jonah, Micah, and Nahum,	1
Commentary on Habakkuk, Zephaniah, and Haggai,	1
„ Zechariah and Malachi,	1
Harmony of the Synoptical Evangelists,	3
Commentary on John's Gospel,	2
„ Acts of the Apostles,	2
„ Romans,	1
„ Corinthians,	2
„ Galatians & Ephesians,	1
„ Philippians, Colossians, and Thessalonians,	1
„ Timothy, Titus, and Philemon,	1
„ Hebrews,	1
„ Peter, John, James, and Jude,	1

Amongst the Theological Works which were widely circulated in England and Scotland during the latter part of the Sixteenth century, Translations of many of the Writings of JOHN CALVIN had a distinguished place. Of his eminence as a DIVINE and COMMENTATOR ON THE HOLY SCRIPTURES, it is unnecessary here to speak, though few are now fully aware of the very high respect in which his Works were held by all the leading English Reformers and Ecclesiastical Writers from Cranmer to Hooker, and the extensive benefits resulting to the Church of Christ from his literary labours. At that time, doctrines which he never held were not attributed to him; nor were sentiments imputed to him which he never advocated. Bishop Horsley well advised to ascertain what is Calvinism and what is not.

Copious Tables and Indices are appended to each of the Commentaries, etc., to facilitate reference, and to render the whole Series more generally useful and acceptable to every class of readers.

'THE VENERABLE CALVIN.—I hold the memory of Calvin in high veneration; his works have a place in my library; and in the study of the Holy Scriptures he is one of the commentators I most frequently consult.'—*Bishop Horsley.*

'Calvin's Commentaries remain, after three centuries, unparalleled for force of mind, justness of expression, and practical views of Christianity.'—*Bishop of Calcutta* (*Wilson*).

'The Genevese Reformer (Calvin) surpassed Knox in the extent of his theological learning, and in the unrivalled solidity and clearness of his judgment.'—*M'Crie* (*Life of Knox*).

'A minister without this, is without one of the best Commentaries on the Scriptures, and a valuable body of divinity.'—*Bickersteth, Christian Student.*

JOHN ALBERT BENGEL'S

GNOMON OF THE NEW TESTAMENT.

Now first Translated into English.

WITH ORIGINAL NOTES, EXPLANATORY AND ILLUSTRATIVE.

The Translation is comprised in Five Large Volumes, Demy 8vo, of (on an average) fully 550 pages each.

SUBSCRIPTION, 31s. 6d., *or free by Post* 35s.

The very large demand for Bengel's Gnomon enables the Publishers still to supply it at the Subscription Price.

The whole work is issued under the Editorship of the Rev. ANDREW R. FAUSSET, M.A., Rector of St Cuthbert's, York, late University and Queen's Scholar, and Senior Classical and Gold Medalist, T.C.D.

For the convenience of such as may wish only a portion of the Commentary, the volumes are sold separately at 8s. 6d. each (except Vol. II. 10s. 6d.).

Vol. I.—INTRODUCTION, MATTHEW, MARK.
Vol. II.—LUKE, JOHN, ACTS.
Vol. III.—ROMANS, CORINTHIANS.
Vol. IV.—GALATIANS TO HEBREWS.
Vol. V.—JAMES, TO THE END.

'There are few devout students of the Bible who have not long held Bengel in the highest estimation, nay, revered and loved him. It was not, however, without some apprehension for his reputation with English readers that we saw the announcement of a translation of his work. We feared that his sentences, terse and condensed as they are, would necessarily lose much of their pointedness and force by being clothed in another garb. But we confess, gladly, to a surprise at the success the translators have achieved in preserving so much of the spirit of the original. We are bound to say that it is executed in the most scholarlike and able manner. The translation has the merit of being faithful and perspicuous. Its publication will, we are confident, do much to bring back readers to the *devout* study of the Bible, and at the same time prove one of the most valuable of exegetical aids. The "getting up" of those volumes, combined with their marvellous cheapness, cannot fail, we should hope, to command for them a large sale.'—*Eclectic Review.*

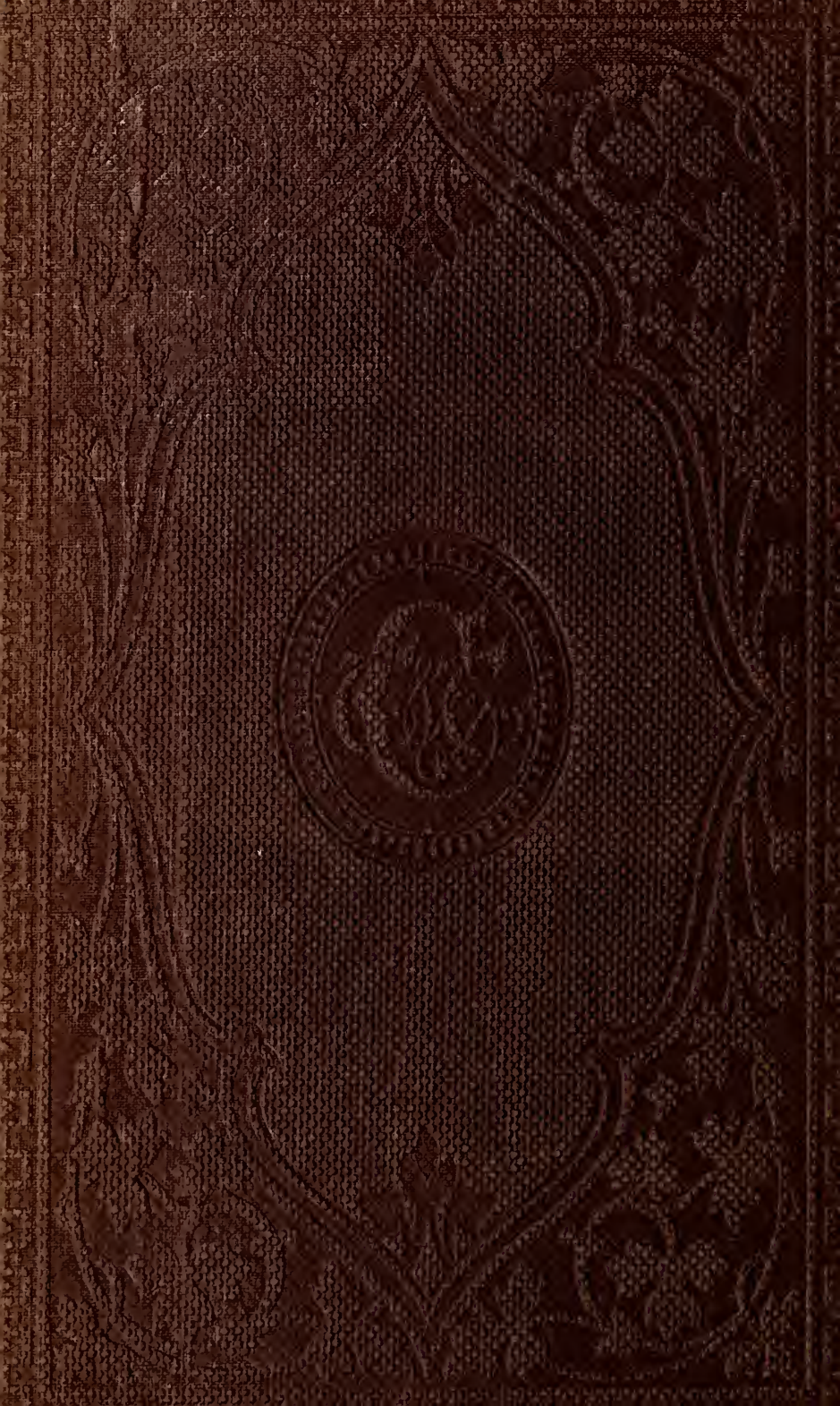
'We are heartily glad that this important work, of an English Translation of Bengel's "Gnomon," has not only been fairly started, but has been successfully completed. Bengel's "Gnomon" has always been held in the highest estimation by all competent judges, as presenting a very remarkable, probably unexampled, combination of learning, sagacity, critical tact, evangelical unction, and terseness and condensation of style. Its growing popularity in Germany is, like the popularity of Calvin's Commentary on the New Testament, as edited by Tholuck, one of the very best signs of the times. . . The enterprising publishers have secured, for this purpose, the services of several accomplished and thoroughly qualified scholars. Mr Fausset, of Trinity College, Dublin, acts as general editor and superintendent, and undertakes the translation of the Commentary upon the Gospels of Mark, Luke, John, and Acts of the Apostles. The Rev. James Bandinel of Wadham College, Oxford, has translated Bengel's General Preface, and his Commentary upon Matthew's Gospel. The Rev. Dr James Bryce, late of Aberdeen, has translated the portion upon the Epistles to the Romans and Corinthians, and has undertaken the rest of Paul's Epistles. The Rev. Dr Fletcher of Wimborne has executed the translation of the remainder of the work on the Catholic Epistles and the Apocalypse.'—*British and Foreign Evangelical Review.*

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY
Los Angeles
This book is DUE on the last date stamped below.

CLSI REC'D LD-URL
QL JAN 18 1982
APR 6 1982

'D LD-U ORION APR 07 '89
LD/URL
APR 21 1989

Form L9–Series 4939

3 1158 00720 4935

UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY
AA 000 800 300 6